

100 % answered prayer.PDF

7 great principles.pdf

Anagkazo.pdf

Beauty.pdf

Born Again.pdf

Catch The Anointing.pdf

Effective Living 1.pdf

Essentials of leadership.pdf

Forgiveness Made Easy.pdf

Fornication.pdf

Frugality.pdf

Lay People and the ministry.pdf

Leadership\_made\_easy.pdf

Loyalty And Disloyalty.pdf

Meaningful Time With God.pdf

Mega Church.pdf

Ministerial Ethics.pdf

Ministers Handbook.pdf

Name It Claim It Take It.pdf

No\_shame\_at\_all.pdf

Poison-Taming the Tongue.PDF

Principle of Leadership.PDF

Principles of success.pdf

Secrets\_of\_success.pdf

Seven Great Principles.pdf

Strange Woman.pdf

Strategies for Leadership.pdf

Strategies for prayer.pdf

Supernatural Power.pdf

[The\\_successful\\_leader.pdf](#)

[They Went to Hell.PDF](#)

[Transform Your Pastoral Ministry.PDF](#)

[Unbeatable\\_prosperity.pdf](#)

[Win the lost at any cost.pdf](#)

[aids to leadership.pdf](#)

[art of hearing.pdf](#)

[bearing fruit after your own kind.PDF](#)

[christians\\_going\\_to\\_hell.pdf](#)

[duality.pdf](#)

[how to become a leader.pdf](#)

[leaders and loyalty.pdf](#)

[leading difficult people.pdf](#)

[solomonic success.pdf](#)

[the beast of Prodigality.pdf](#)

**100%**  
**Answered**  
**Prayer-**  
***the Vital Steps***

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-596-06-5

**Copyright © 2002 Dag Heward-Mills**

1st Printing 2000

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.



## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to  
*Jasen Gannon &  
his dear wife, my sister Julia —*  
Thank you for all your hard work in  
making the books.

# ***Contents***

You Can Have 100% Answered Prayer .....	1
Praying to the Father .....	5
Abiding, Obeying and Bearing Fruit .....	9
The Failure-proof Keys:	
Faith and Persistence .....	13
Praying Amiss .....	22
All Kinds of Prayer .....	31

***For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to these addresses:***

***In Africa:***

Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa

***Rest of the world:***

Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ

***Website:***

[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)

***Parchment House***

## CHAPTER ONE

### YOU CAN HAVE 100% ANSWERED PRAYER

Prayer is a privilege that God has given to His children. We can talk to our heavenly father directly and receive answers. I realize from the attitudes of many Christians that they do not believe that God really answers prayer. But why pray if you will not get results? I believe that you can have one hundred percent results every time you pray.

Why pray if you will not receive an answer? Many people take prayer to be some kind of religious routine they must perform. God's Word guarantees us a hundred percent results every time we pray.

If you look closely at the scriptures which speak about prayer, you will discover that Jesus did not say that we might possibly (*perhaps, maybe, in the sweet by and by, all things being equal*) get an answer to our prayers. He said that we *would* get an answer.

I wrote this book for you! I want you to receive one hundred percent results every time you pray. If it is real, it is real! If it is not real, it is not real! If God exists, then He *can* answer your prayer.

Is God alive? Is He real? Can He hear? Is He deaf? I am sure you know the answers to these questions. God is alive and well and He wants to bless you. If my God were a piece of wood or a stone, I would not serve Him. We do not worship the sun, the moon or the rivers. We worship a Living God who has power to save and to deliver.

Elijah once challenged the false prophets of Baal. He told them, “There is no use in serving a god who is not available. Our God is either alive or He is dead.”

*...Elijah mocked them, and said, Cry aloud: for he is a god; either he is talking or he is pursuing [using the bathroom!], or he is in a journey, or peradventure he sleepeth, and must be awaked.*

*1 Kings 18:27*

## **The god Did Not Speak!**

Some years ago, a friend of mine went to a city about a hundred kilometers outside of Accra. He was accompanying his parents to their hometown. Whilst in the town he had the urge to urinate. Unfortunately, there was no appropriate toilet around so he went into an open space to relieve himself. As he was urinating, he heard screams and shouts from behind. Since he was already in the process, he had to finish. Then he turned round to face the anger of some local residents.

“What are you doing?” they exclaimed. “How can you do this?”

They went on, “You are urinating on our *god*!! Don’t you know that the stone on which you are urinating is a *god*?”

This young man apologized profusely but there was nothing he could do about it. He had already bathed their god in his urine! When I heard this story I thought to myself, “If you are a god, can you not say anything when people urinate on you? Can you not protest at the first sprinkle of urine?” If you are a god, at least say something when someone urinates on you!

What am I trying to say? If God is alive, then He must be able to respond to you. He has given us His Word and He has promised to answer our prayers every time.

*He shall call upon me, and I WILL answer him.*

*Psalm 91:15*

*Then shalt thou call, and the Lord SHALL answer...*

*Isaiah 58:9*

These scriptures tell us that God *will* answer us. God *shall* answer! How much more definite can it be? Either the Bible is true or it is not true. Either you believe it or you do not! Jesus said,

*“And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.”*

**Luke 11:9**

There is no word that expresses a stronger assertion than the word *shall*. I see God answering your prayers right now! By the time you finish reading this book, you will experience 100% answers to all your prayers.

You must know the rules of operation for every gadget you acquire. For instance, a car runs on fuel and not *Coca-Cola*. If you put *Coca-Cola* into your fuel tank, you will discover that your car will not work. If you put the right liquid into your fuel tank you will get one hundred percent results every time you drive your car.

God wants us to have one hundred percent results when we pray. I want to share with you some important steps which will help you to achieve one hundred percent results every time you pray. I have used these steps, and I believe that I receive virtually one hundred percent results every time I pray.

## CHAPTER TWO

### PRAYING TO THE FATHER

*And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.*

*John 16:23,24*

- ❑ ***The first step to one hundred percent answered prayer is to learn to pray yourself.***

Jesus taught *us* to pray to *our* heavenly father. Many people do not know how to pray themselves. They want somebody else to pray for them. They ask the pastor to pray for them. They kneel down before prophets and request special prayers. *There is nothing wrong with being prayed for. But God wants you to learn how to pray for yourself!*

There are some pastors who entrust themselves to prayer warriors. They depend on other people to pray for them. I cannot entrust something as important as prayer to other people. I pray for myself. I consider the prayer support of friends and prayer warriors as an extra bonus. If it



happens – fine! If it does not happen – fine! I am not depending on it anyway!

Your Christian life should not depend on another person's prayers. Jesus said, "*You* ask the Father." You are supposed to be able to pray yourself. Remember that the prayers of a righteous man avail much (James 5:16). You are the righteousness of God in Christ (2 Corinthians 5:21). You are righteous! You are righteous enough to get results for your prayers! Start praying for yourself now! Do not depend on your pastor. He may be snoring when you think he is praying for you!

❑ ***The next vital step to receiving one hundred percent answered prayer is to pray to the Father.***

*And in that day ye shall ASK ME NOTHING...*

*John 16:23*

Jesus said that in that day we will not ask *Him* for anything. What day is *that day*? Jesus was talking about the period when He would no longer be with the disciples. In that day, Jesus would not expect anyone to pray to Him directly. Jesus was directing us to pray to the heavenly Father Himself. Is there any difference between praying to Jesus and praying to the heavenly Father? There must be, otherwise Jesus would not have told us what He did!

If you want one hundred percent results, do what Jesus said you should do. Begin your prayer by saying, "Our Father," "Heavenly Father," "Dear Father," or "Father which

art in heaven,” etc. You will begin to experience better results.

## **Do Not Pray to a Handmaid**

Some people pray to Mary. This is unfortunate! I used to attend a church that prayed to Mary. In fact, I myself prayed to Mary almost every day. I think that our holy mother Mary must be wondering why people are praying to her. I am sure she asks herself, “*What can I do for these people? I am a mere mortal like any one of them.*” Mary herself said that she was a mere servant of the Lord.

*And Mary said, Behold THE HANDMAID OF THE LORD; be it unto me according to thy word.*

*Luke 1:38*

Why would you pray to a handmaid? Jesus did not teach us to pray to His mother. He taught us to pray to His Father. There is a big difference! I can understand how our holy mother Mary is respected for the role she played in bringing Jesus to this world. **She was a great woman and a very special vessel. I truly respect and admire her. But I cannot pray to her.** I do not believe that she can do anything for me now. I will pray to my Heavenly Father and I will receive a hundred percent results, in the name of Jesus.

❑ ***The third vital step to receiving a hundred percent answered prayer is to use the name of Jesus.***

Unfortunately, many people use the name of Jesus as an exclamation or a swear word. This has caused Christians

to lose respect for the power in the name of Jesus. I announce to you that there is power in the name of Jesus! Your heavenly Father will respond when He hears the name of Jesus.

*...Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father IN MY NAME he will give it you.*

*John 16:23*

In my church, there are people who try to use my name to get certain things done. They know that the mention of my name in our setup will lead to rapid results. I have often heard it said, “Bishop said, ‘so and so’.” Why do people engage in name dropping? It is because names have power.

The use of a name leads to rapid results. At the name of Jesus, every knee shall bow. Demons respond to the name of Jesus. Sickness responds to the name of Jesus. Satan will bow to the name of Jesus. There is power in that name. In the Book of Acts, we see how the name of Jesus healed a man.

*Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus... doth this man stand here before you whole.*

*Acts 4:10*

**But it is not only bad things which respond to the name of Jesus. Our Heavenly Father Himself responds to the name of Jesus.** Jesus told us to use the “name of Jesus” to get responses from the Father. Jesus told us to use His name to get results in prayer. From today, whenever you pray, use the name of Jesus. Not only as a ritual, but as a vital key to receiving your blessings from heaven.

## CHAPTER THREE

### ABIDING, OBEYING AND BEARING FRUIT

*If ye abide in me and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.*

*John 15:7*

**I**n this chapter, you will discover three other important steps to receiving hundred percent answers to your prayers.

- ❑ ***The fourth step to receiving a hundred percent answered prayer is to abide in Christ .***

Abiding in Christ is an important key to receiving any type of response from the Lord. **If you do not stay in the house, do not expect God to answer any of your prayers.** A hundred percent answered prayer is for people who stay in Christ and in His church. When you wander away from God, you become like the prodigal son. You are far from your Father. The prodigal son did not stay in the house. He moved out and lived in a far country. He fellowshiped with harlots and ate with pigs. The only help he could get was from pigs! So he “asked the pigs” for some of their food.

The “pigs” had compassion on the prodigal son so they gave him some of their food. Even if his father had wanted to give him food, there was no way he could have. He was simply out of the reach of his father. The prodigal son ended up in the custody of a man who put him to work with swine.

When you do not stay in the house, you will end up with the pigs. Perhaps as you read this book, you realize that being far from God has not helped you. It is time to come back home. Staying in fellowship is an important key to receiving the blessings of the Lord.

*But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light,  
we have fellowship one with another...*

*1 John 1:7*

There are some people who think they can be good Christians without going to church. You are deceiving yourself! If you are walking in the light, you will have fellowship with others who are in the light. That is what this scripture is telling you. Are you in the darkness or in the light? If you are in the light you will go to church and fellowship with other Christians.

❑ ***The next vital step is to let the Word of God abide in you.***

It is important for God’s Word to be in you. God does not do anything outside His Word. God’s Word will direct you in your relationship with Him.

*ORDER MY STEPS IN THY WORD: and let not  
any iniquity have dominion over me.*

*Psalm 119:133*

God's Word directs you in prayer. God does not answer foolish prayers, neither does He do things against His Word. If you want to get hundred percent answers to your prayers, stay in the Word.

❑ ***The next step is to obey the Lord.***

*And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him,  
because we keep his commandments, and do those  
things that are pleasing in his sight.*

*1 John 3:22*

This scripture is very clear. God answers the prayers of people who obey him. If you are living a life of disobedience, God will not honor your prayers. If you had a disobedient son who did not please you, would you just give him anything he asked for? Certainly not! Neither does your heavenly Father answer the prayers of disobedient children.

If God has called you to the ministry, just obey! Your obedience opens the door for answers to your prayers.

❑ ***The seventh step to receiving answers to your  
prayer is to be a fruit bearing Christian***

*Ye have not chosen me but I have chosen you,  
and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth  
f            r            u            i            t            ,*

*and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.*

*John 15:16*

I realize that many Christians do not know why they are alive. Let me tell you something right now. **If you are a born again Christian, the only reason why you are being kept alive is so that you can bear fruit.** After all, heaven is guaranteed. You have a place in heaven after you are born again. What else do you need? Earthly treasures are transient and useless. We are being kept alive on this earth so that we can win souls for Him. God wants every Christian to bear fruit.

**One thing that many Christians do not know is that God has linked bearing fruit to answering prayer.** The scripture above is very clear! God will be happy to answer the prayer of someone who bears fruit. What do you do for God? What fruit are you bearing? If you sit in spiritual barrenness just wanting God to answer prayers, you may wait forever. Some people just know how to say, "Give me! Give me! Give me!" But what are you contributing to God's kingdom?

There is a link between answered prayer and bearing fruit. Receive this revelation into your spirit and begin to bear fruit from today. Do something in your church. Do not just sit there and watch. Stop being an observer. There is no blessing in being a spectator or a commentator. The blessings of one hundred percent answered prayer are for Christians who bear fruit.





## CHAPTER FOUR

### THE FAILURE-PROOF KEYS: FAITH AND PERSISTENCE

**I**n this chapter, I want to introduce you to two keys that will guarantee you answered prayer every time you pray! These are the eighth and ninth steps to one hundred percent answered prayer. I will like to describe these steps as the “Failure-proof” keys.

❑ *The eighth step is to use faith every time you pray.*

*Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.*

*Mark 11:24*

Jesus taught great lessons on faith throughout His ministry. He often emphasized that people were getting blessed because they were using faith.

*Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.*

*Hebrews 10:38*

God is saying that if you draw away from faith, He will not be pleased with you. There are those who think that faith is not so important. They tend to draw away from the faith message and faith people. They feel that there must rather be an emphasis on patience, gentleness, holiness and on the other qualities of the fruit of the Spirit. I strongly believe that these qualities are important and play a special role in the Christian life. However, the importance of the fruit of the Spirit to the Christian experience should not make us play down on the importance of something like faith. The fact that the heart is important does not make the kidneys any less important. Both are necessary, and have special, unique roles to play.

Faith is a very special virtue which has a role in every Christian's life. The Bible says that without faith it is *impossible* to please God.

*But without faith it is impossible to please him:  
for he that cometh to God must believe that he is,  
and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek  
him.*

*Hebrews 11:6*

It is interesting to note that the Word of God does not say: "Without love it is impossible to please God." The Bible does not say: "Without peace it is impossible to please God." The Bible is very clear on this fact: **WITHOUT FAITH IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO PLEASE GOD!**

Abraham's faith in God was considered to be an act of righteousness. Abraham believed that El' Shaddai was able to give him a child at an old age. Abraham had his faults. He lied about his wife and surrendered her twice to unbeliever kings for their pleasure. In spite of his lying

and cowardly behavior, God was very pleased with Abraham because he had faith in God.

Maybe by your standards, Abraham would have been disqualified. But he was a great man in God's sight. His greatness was a result of his faith.

*And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore IT WAS IMPUTED TO HIM FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS.*

*Romans 4:21,22*

Dear Christian friend, God is happy, impressed and pleased when you believe in Him. When you believe that God will heal you, you make Him happy. When you believe that God will prosper you, you make Him excited. When you believe that your breakthrough is on the way, God is so pleased with you. When you have faith that you will live long, God is provoked to extend your life. **When you believe that God will give you increase and abundance, you excite the deep parts of El' Shaddai.** You make Him pour out the milk of His blessings into your life.

*I see you walking in the great blessings of Jehovah! I see you enjoying an abundant life in God! I see you free from sickness and disease! I see the power of curses broken in your life! I see that God is pleased with you because you believe in Him!*

From today, never doubt any part of God's Word. Accept that you are the champion He is speaking about. Flow with the message of prosperity, healing and abundance. Always remember that God is happy when you believe in Him.

God is not a God of poverty. Since I came to know the Lord I have not decreased. I do not read about decrease, failure, setbacks and limitations in the Bible. I see only abundance, promotion and deliverance from my enemies. I see God lifting me up everyday! God did not bring you to Christ in order to demote and disgrace you. He brought you to Christ to lift and establish you in an abundant life. Jesus came that we might have life and have it more abundantly (John 10:10).

## **Jesus Blessed the Faith People**

Under the ministry of Jesus, several people experienced personal breakthroughs. Who were they? And why did they receive these miracles?

You will remember what Jesus said about the woman with the issue of blood. This was a woman who had suffered for twelve years without any breakthrough. She came up to Jesus and received an extraordinary miracle. What was the secret of her breakthrough? Jesus gave the answer in Mark 5:34

*...Daughter, THY FAITH hath made thee whole...*

*Mark 5:34*

Blind Bartimaeus received his sight miraculously. He was a noisy fellow who disturbed the service. But Jesus took notice of him and healed him. What was his secret? His secret was faith in God!

*...THY FAITH hath made thee whole.*

*Mark 10:52*

The sinful woman who poured an alabaster box of

ointment on Jesus' feet also received a miracle of forgiveness. Jesus said to the woman:

*...THY FAITH hath saved thee; go in peace.*

*Luke 7:50*

Ten lepers were healed and only one came back to say thank you. Jesus said these same words to him:

*...Arise, go thy way: THY FAITH hath made thee whole.*

*Luke 17:19*

Two blind men came to Jesus and asked for the mercy of God. Jesus touched them and healed them. What were His words to these two men?

*...According to YOUR FAITH be it unto you.*

*Matthew 9:29*

Have you noticed that Jesus never said, "Thy love hath made thee whole?"

Jesus never said, "Thy holiness hath saved you."

He never said, "According to your patience, be it unto you."

Why did Jesus not say, "Thy good character hath made thee whole"?

Please do not misunderstand me! I am not saying that these things are not important! I am saying that it is the people's faith that impressed Jesus. I am showing you that Jesus pointed out over and over that it was their *faith* that had brought the breakthrough. That is why the Bible says that without faith it is impossible to please God.

Have you ever thought of those men who broke through the roof of somebody's house in order to bring their

paralyzed friend to Christ? Perhaps they were experienced thieves who were used to breaking into people's homes. Perhaps they were men who were used to jumping the queue and cheating others out of their rightful places. But the Bible tells us that Jesus noticed their faith and immediately responded to their needs.

*And WHEN HE SAW THEIR FAITH he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.*

*Luke 5:20*

Jesus did not dwell on the wrong they did by jumping the queue or removing the tiles from somebody's roof. **He saw their faith.** Jesus sees your faith. God sees your faith. It is time for you to rise up and believe things in the Word of God. According to your faith, it shall be done unto you!

When you exercise faith in prayer, God responds in the same way that Jesus responded to these men. **He is so impressed with your prayer.** When you believe that you have received, you please God. In order to exercise faith, you must believe that you have received what you are praying for. This means you will not have to pray over and over for the same thing. Begging and crying is not the same as praying with faith. Many Christians just cry and cry in a spirit of hopelessness. God is not against crying. But He is against faithless weeping. Trust God, He wants to give you the desires of your heart. I see the desires of your heart manifesting right now!

Receive answers to your prayers at this very moment, in Jesus name! From today, I want you to believe that you have received what you are asking for.

❑ ***The next step is the step of persistence.***

Persisting in prayer is a guaranteed way to get one hundred percent prayer results. Jesus gave two vivid examples of how

persistence gives one hundred percent answered prayer. I want you to read them carefully.

*And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;*

*For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?*

*And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.*

*I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.*

*Luke 11:5-8*

*And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;*

*Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man:*

*And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.*

*And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man;*

*Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.*

*And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.*

*And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?*

*I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?*

*Luke 18:1-8*

Persisting means repeating! It means you will tirelessly go to the Lord in prayer. It means you will shamelessly cry to the Lord until He responds. Persistence brings results even in the natural. Sometimes I receive a phone call, but I am unable to answer because I am too far from the phone. As I approach the phone, I have often thought to myself, "If only this caller would persist, I will answer the phone." Sometimes by the time I get to the phone, the person has given up. There are some who phone again. There are some who keep on phoning until I answer. This principle of persistence brings results in many spheres of life. This principle of persistence works in prayer as well. I did not say it, *Jesus* did!

Jesus said very clearly that you would get results if you pray and pray and pray! **The reason why you will get results is because you keep praying.**

Someone may ask, "Does the principle of persistence not contradict the principle of faith? After all, when using the key of faith you wouldn't have to pray more than once!" What you must understand here is that there are different ways of expressing faith. **Praying once and thereafter no more is one expression of faith. Praying over and over about the same issue, with a determination never to stop until you get an answer is also another expression of faith. Each of these two expressions of faith are valid.**



Each of these two expressions of faith bring results. Each of these two expressions of faith were recommended by Jesus. Each of these two expressions of faith can make God answer your prayer.

There are many Christians who can testify about how they prayed persistently until God answered! There are also many others who have great testimonies about praying once and receiving answers. Jesus did not teach on only one of these styles of prayer. **He taught both methods and guaranteed one hundred percent results in each case.**

So what does this mean for you? It means you can use either one of the two methods and get positive results. This is somewhat like using your computer. You can access a file by entering your word processor. You can also access the same file by a hot key or by going through your file managing program. Both methods will get you the same results.

For those of you who do not understand computer programming, you can liken faith and persistence to killing a cat in different ways. You can drown it, poison it, shoot it or decapitate it. All of these methods will lead to a hundred percent result – a hundred percent dead cat! Decide today to use any of these two keys. Both of these keys are failure proof. “Faith” prayers work all the time. Persistence works all the time. God has given you two assured methods for receiving 100% answered prayer.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### PRAYING AMISS

*Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask  
amiss...*

*James 4:3*

**U**nfortunately, many Christians ask God for things He cannot give them. God does not answer prayers that have gone amiss. **Praying amiss means that you pray unacceptable, unsuitable, inappropriate, inadmissible, unallowable, unsatisfactory and impossible prayers.** God will not do things which are against His principles. There are four ways you can avoid praying amiss.

#### ❑ *Do not pray foolish prayers.*

Faith is very different from foolishness. There are many Christians who exhibit silliness when they pray. Some people ask the Lord for ill-considered things. God is not a fool. Please do not try to make Him one. The fact that you are allowed to exercise faith does not mean that you should be irrational. When God takes no notice of foolish prayers, do not say that prayer does not work. It is foolish prayers that do not work.

If you ask God for somebody's husband, you are praying a foolish prayer. Some young men, starting out in life, ask

the Lord for huge mansions and fantastically expensive cars. It is true that God wants to bless you, but do not expect God to promote you overnight. Look at your Bible carefully. All the people who were blessed experienced it over a period of several years. If you are a married person and you do not use contraceptives to prevent pregnancy, please do not bind the babies in your wife's womb. God does not respond to foolishness.

If you have a job to do and you do not do it, do not pray that your boss will be struck with blindness so that he will not see the lapses in your work. That is an imbecilic prayer request!

As you grow older do not bother to pray for your youth to return. It is gone forever. You cannot retrace your steps. There is a natural aging process which you cannot bind or revoke by absurd prayers!

Why do you bother to ask God to give you an airplane when you don't even own a bicycle? You might as well ask Him to make you the Queen of England. I do not want the angels in Heaven to think that you are suffering from feeble-mindedness!

❑ ***Do not pray unscriptural prayers.***

This is yet another step to gaining one hundred percent answers to your prayers. God has given us His Word and He will not violate His own Word.

*He hath shewed thee O man, what is good; and  
what doth the Lord require of thee...*

*Micah 6:8*

If you do not know the scriptures, you will not know if you are praying unscriptural prayers. This is why you must study your Bible everyday. Do not just trust what your pastor says because he is a pastor. Read it for yourself and grow up! That is why God wants you to abide in the Word.

If you are praying to God to help you to divorce, you are praying an unscriptural prayer. God does not want you to divorce. How can He help you to divorce?

*What therefore God hath joined together, let not  
man put asunder.*

*Mark 10:9*

This is an unscriptural request and God will not answer you! You may divorce by your own choice, but not with the help of God. God does not break up marriages, He brings people together.

#### **❑ *Do not pray illegal prayers.***

You must realize that there are divine laws operating in the universe. There is no use praying about things which cannot be done legally. I am not talking about the laws of your country. I am talking about the laws of God. I hear some women praying that they will not experience any pain at all when they deliver their babies. Some do not even want to experience labor! If you read the Bible, you will discover that Eve and all women were cursed with having to suffer in bringing forth children.

*Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply*

*thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring*

*forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.*

*Genesis 3:16*

Coming to Christ does not revoke that curse in any way. We are redeemed from the curse of the law and not from the curse of Adam and Eve. That curse came about as a legal punishment for disobeying the Word of God. It is the legal recompense for Adam and Eve's wrong doing and it has a legal right to remain. It is not your "feeble" prayer that is going to revoke a six thousand-year-old legal pronouncement.

In the same way, there is no man on this earth who can escape the curse declared over Adam.

*IN THE SWEAT OF THY FACE SHALT THOU EAT BREAD till thou return unto the ground; for out of it was thou taken: for dust thou art, and UNTO DUST SHALL THOU RETURN.*

*Genesis 3:19*

All men are experiencing the sweat on their faces. All men are returning to dust. All men will go to the grave one day. It is just a matter of time. No matter who they are, all men have to sweat to prosper. No matter how rich they are they will return to the ground. There is no use praying against it. You cannot pray that you will prosper without working hard. You cannot pray that you will not die. That is illegal! Until Jesus returns, you and I have to go the way of all men. Great men like David knew that there was no escape from death.

*Now the days of David drew nigh that he should die; and he charged Solomon his son, saying, I GO THE WAY OF ALL THE EARTH...*

*I Kings 2:1,2*

What is the way of all the earth? It is the inescapable experience of death that all human beings must go through. There is no use in binding or cancelling it! If you pray about things that cannot be answered, you will only erode your confidence in prayer. You will keep getting disappointed in God. Do not pray that you will not have to work hard. Working hard and sweating your way to prosperity is the legal way for us all to prosper. What you must rather do is to pray for wisdom to alleviate the effects of these curses.

It is the wisdom of medical science that alleviates the trauma of childbirth. Get medical science and things will be a little better. Through the wisdom of medical science, many women have experienced little pain in childbirth. Many women have had less sorrow in childbirth through the use of wisdom. I am not saying that God cannot alleviate the pain and trauma of childbirth. What I am saying is this: It is both difficult and illegal to remove a tenant who is legally occupying his place.

It is the wisdom that comes through education that lightens the load on the sons of Adam. All the sons of Adam will labor, but some labor is easier than others. I would prefer to be a doctor than a cleaner. In both cases, I would go through the sweating process to eat bread. But I assure you that the labor of a doctor is easier than that of

a cleaner. Think carefully about what I am saying and the Lord will give you wisdom.

❑ ***Avoid difficult prayers***

Once Jesus visited a hospital. There were multitudes of sick people there. However, He prayed for only one person.

*After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.*

*Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.*

*In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.*

*For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.*

*And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.*

*When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?*

*The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.*

*Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.*

*John 5:1-8*

Why did He not pray for the other hundreds of people who needed help? *Jesus operated in these very steps to getting one hundred percent results.* He only dealt with cases He knew He would get positive results!

It may be God's will to heal everybody. Perhaps the circumstances under which everyone became ill were different. Perhaps in God's plan, it was not yet time for certain healings to manifest.

Jesus knew that it was difficult to get involved in things that God was not doing. Jesus explained why He prayed for only one sick person when there were hundreds who needed a miracle. He said, "I do what I see my Father doing." In other words, if it is not something that God is actively and presently involved in, I will not even bother to pray about it. It may be legally right to do something, but it is very difficult to succeed in something if God is not presently involved with it. If Jesus did not pray difficult prayers, why should you bother?

*Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but WHAT HE SEETH THE FATHER DO: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.*

*John 5:19*

If you do not use these principles, you will come up with a theory that God has three answers to prayer: "Yes", "No" and "Wait". Dear friend, it is very possible to get only a "Yes" answer from God for *all* your requests, if you can diligently practise the steps outlined in this book. Obviously, God will have to say "No" when you ask Him for things which are impossible for Him to do.



Take for example Joab, the army commander of King David. Joab killed an innocent man and David cursed him. King David cursed Joab's family forever. He said,

*Let it rest on the head of Joab, and on all his father's house; and let there not fail from the house of Joab one that hath an issue, or that is a leper, or that leaneth on a staff, or that falleth on the sword, or that lacketh bread.*

*2 Samuel 3:29*

If you study the details of this curse you will find out that sickness was to be a permanent part of Joab's family. Anyone who found himself praying for Joab's family would find himself praying a difficult prayer. It would be difficult, though not impossible, for the Lord to revoke the curse on Joab's family. This curse is different from God's curse on Adam and Eve, in that it was pronounced by a man. Adam's curse was pronounced by God himself and obviously carries more weight.

Perhaps some of Joab's relatives were at the hospital that Jesus visited. Perhaps that is why God directed Jesus to pray for only one person. Jesus explained that God had led Him to pray for only one person. Perhaps God was not ready to undo the curse on some people's lives. Perhaps God does not have sufficient reason to undo a legal curse that is on certain people and their families.

*...Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but WHAT HE SEETH THE FATHER DO...*

*John 5:19*

Allow yourself to be led whenever you are praying. Do not pray amiss (unacceptable, unsuitable, inappropriate, inadmissible, unallowable, unsatisfactory and impossible prayers)! Be like Jesus and have 100% answers to your prayers.

## CHAPTER SIX

### ALL KINDS OF PRAYER

*Praying always with all [kinds of] prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;*

*Ephesians 6:18*

#### **PRAY WITH ALL KINDS OF PRAYER**

There are different kinds of prayer; different strokes for different folks, as they say. There are different types of prayers that must be used for different types of situations. In this life, you will experience a wide variety of situations. Thankfully, God has provided us with a wide variety of prayer types. Let us consider a few of these.

#### **The Prayer of Consecration**

In this type of prayer you offer yourself to the Lord for His perfect will to be done. God loves children who want His will to be done.

If you pray this prayer of consecration, God will be more likely to listen to your other prayers. Some people know only “Give me, give me, give me” prayers. There are times God is not interested in answering such prayers. He wants to hear a prayer of consecration.

Learn to spend hours asking the Lord for His will to be done. Jesus prayed in the garden of Gethsemane for three hours. He had only one prayer topic. He did not pray about seventeen different things

*...and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.*

*Matthew 26:39*

Every Christian must have the prayer of consecration as one of his prayer topics. Pray that God will perform His will in your life. This prayer topic puts all other prayer topics in their right perspective. That is why I mentioned it as the first type of prayer that you need to pray.

## **Praying in the Spirit**

*But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost*

*Jude 20*

What is praying in the Spirit? The answer is in the Bible.

*For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.*

## *1 Corinthians 14:2*

Every Christian can speak to God in mysteries. Praying in tongues is praying in the Spirit. God wants you to pray in tongues. A large percentage of my prayer is prayer “in the Spirit”. I can give you many reasons why you should pray in tongues. One reason is that when you pray in the Spirit, God directs your prayer Himself. He leads you to ask Him for what is necessary. In Acts 2, the Bible says that the Spirit gave them utterance when they spoke in tongues. When the Spirit gives you utterance, it means the Spirit is giving you the words to say. What better deal could you have?

Another important reason why you should pray in the Spirit is that it builds you up. 1 Corinthians 14:4 tells us that he who speaks in an unknown tongue edifies himself. The word edify speaks of charging up in the way a car battery is charged. We all need that regular spiritual charge up.

## **The Prayer of Faith**

*...And the prayer of faith shall save the sick...*

*James 5:15*

The prayer of faith is a prayer which has a great expression of faith. In Mark 11:24, the Bible teaches us to believe that we have already received what we prayed for. Believing that you have already received is different from believing that you will receive it one day.

Prayers of faith are especially effective against sickness and disease. As I said earlier, different types of prayer can be used to solve different problems.

## **The Prayer of Confession of Sins**

It is important for us to confess our sins on a regular basis. Prayer which does not include prayer for forgiveness is insufficient. We must always ask for mercy. We must pray for it! If we say that we are perfect, we are foolishly deceived.

*If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.*

*1 John 1:8*

## **The Short and Powerful Prayer**

*And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships.*

*And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.*

*And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?*

*And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.*

*Mark 4:36-39*

In this scripture, Jesus found Himself in a crisis situation. He and His disciples were caught up in the middle of a very dangerous storm, and their very lives were being threatened. There was no time to find a quiet place to pray for the hand of God to move on their behalf. He just prayed a short but

powerful prayer and the storm ceased!

Also in John 11:41,42, Jesus encountered another situation that demanded an immediate response. He needed a miracle for his family friends. His old pal Lazarus had been dead for four days. Everyone was looking up to him. Could he go away and pray for three hours? The answer is no! He had to pray a short prayer and He needed results immediately. Listen to His prayer,

*...And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.*

*John 11:41,42*

These types of prayers come in handy when you are faced with a crisis situation. There is no time to retreat and pray. Pray a short and powerful prayer when you need to and believe that God has heard you. After the short and powerful prayer, act boldly just like Jesus did! You will have one hundred percent results.

### **The Long Prayer**

There are times that it is important to spend a long time in prayer. Jesus did this very often.

*And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT in prayer to God.*

*Luke 6:12*

*And in the morning, rising up A GREAT WHILE before day, he went out and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.*

*Mark 1:35*

You will notice that in both cases Jesus spent long hours praying. A great while is a long time. All night is also a long time. Develop the art of praying for several hours. Start with one hour and graduate to three hours. Then progress to five and seven hours!

Learn to pray all day and all night long. You will experience one hundred percent answers to your prayers. There are times you need to spend many hours in prayer. If Jesus had to, then you will also have to. There are times you do not have to change the prayer topic. You can pray on the same topic for hours. Jesus did it! It is not useless repetition, it is praying like Jesus did.

## **Loud Prayers**

*Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard that in he feared;*

*Hebrews 5:7*

Jesus prayed with strong cries and so can you. There is a difference between meditation and prayer. Some people claim to pray in their minds. What is the difference between praying in your mind and meditation? I think there is no difference! I am not saying that you must always shout



when you pray. Ninety percent of the time you cannot hear me when I am praying. I usually pray very quietly. But there are times I pray with strong cries and tears. It is a dimension you must get into. There are some things that will only happen in your life when you pray like Jesus did.

## **Prayer of Thanksgiving**

*In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.*

*1 Thessalonians 5:18*

God wants us to give thanks. Apart from the usual “Give me, give me, give me” prayers, God would love to hear some other types of prayers. He would love to hear you say “thank you”. Discover the power of thanking the Lord. As you thank Him you will experience many breakthroughs.

Paul and Silas were in jail but they prayed and sang praises at midnight. They gave thanks to God at midnight. Suddenly, there was an earthquake and their chains were broken. This is the power of the prayer of thanksgiving. Even in the midnight of your life, a prayer of thanksgiving is appropriate. There are times in which it will be the most powerful type of prayer you can offer. It is the prayer that leads to earthquakes and broken bands. Move into this type of prayer and experience God’s breakthrough for your life.

There is no darkness that can keep you down. There is no “midnight” that can keep you bound.

*I see God setting you free! I see you experiencing one hundred percent answers to all your prayers!*

There shall be a performance of all that the Lord has said!

It is my prayer that your prayer life will rise into the realm of 100% answered prayer. God is your Father in Heaven. He has to answer your prayers. In fact, He loves to answer your prayers! This is your hour for answers to all your prayers. Indeed, there shall be a performance of all that God has said.



# 7

## **Great Principles**

**Dag Heward-Mills**

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

Parchment House

ISBN 9988-596-12-X

**Copyright © 2002 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# ***Contents***

Introduction .....	1
Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body .....	3
The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked .....	11
The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy .....	22
After You are Born Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow .....	28
After You are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed .....	37
After You are Saved, Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control .....	41
After You are Born Again, Your Mind is Still Open to All Kinds of Thoughts; You Must Learn to Think On the Right Things .....	48

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to the Association of  
Ordained Ministers and their wives:  
Rev. Ishmael and Olivia Sam, Rev Jacob and  
Kezia Godwyll, Rev Hamish and Annie Oddoye  
— you are the original team!





## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*



For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to:

Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa

*Website:*

[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)

*E-mail:*

[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)



# *Chapter One*

## *Introduction*

There are many people who do not understand the concept of salvation in Christ. They do not understand what exactly has happened to them in Christ.

A lack of understanding often leads to confusion and sometimes backsliding. I wrote this book to bring understanding to your life. I have broken the process of salvation into seven “easy to understand” principles. These principles are key to your understanding of what christianity is about.

## THE PRINCIPLES

- \* *Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body*
- \* *The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked*
- \* *The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy*
- \* *After You are Born Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow*
- \* *After You are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed*
- \* *After You are Saved, Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control*
- \* *After You are Born Again, Your Mind is Still Open to All Kinds of Thoughts; You Must Learn to Think on the Right Things*

After you understand these principles, you will know why there is no religion that offers what Christianity offers you. Christianity offers a *change* and a *recreation* of the wicked heart of man. Christianity is not a new set of rules. You do not get to heaven by obeying the “Do’s” and “Don’ts” of human beings. Christ will change your heart and give you power to control your body and renew your mind.

As you study these principles, I pray God gives you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him.

## *Chapter Two*

### *Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body*

That fact that a human being is actually a spirit living inside a physical body is one of the lesser known truths. When Paul wrote to the Thessalonians, he wrote that God should affect them in all three areas: spirit, soul and body.

**And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole SPIRIT and SOUL and BODY be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23**

A human being is not just a piece of meat. When Princess Diana died, many people in this world reflected on the reality of spiritual issues. One day, I had a chat with a man in the lobby of a hotel. He asked me what I do and I told him that I was a pastor. “Oh, I see,” he said.

“Do you believe in God?” I asked him.

“Actually, I had just been thinking about this.”

He continued, “When Princess Diana died, I wondered whether I was just a piece of meat.”

I told him, “You are not just a piece of meat. There is more to you than a piece of meat.”

When people speak in a very proud and arrogant fashion it is because they are not aware how real eternal things are. I will never forget my first day as a medical student in the dissection laboratory of the University of Ghana Medical School. It was about 2 o'clock in the afternoon when we were ushered into a large air-conditioned room containing twelve white marble tables. On each of these tables was a dead human being lying stark naked.

The dead bodies were those of ten men and two women. My friends and I gathered around one of the tables. There were stools around each table and I sat down staring at the dead body that lay before me. On the chest of this human being was a plaster with a name inscribed. The name of our cadaver was Cornelius. I wondered to myself, “Who was Cornelius during his lifetime? What did he do for a living? How did he come to lie before us, ready for eighteen months of intensive dissection?”

As we sat there, our Anatomy lecturer came in. He happened to be a Christian. He said to us, “Go ahead and touch them, don't be afraid!” But in spite of his encouragement, many of us were scared by the whole scene.

This Anatomy lecturer said something that has stayed with me since then. He said, “This scene should make everyone of you seriously consider what life is all about.”

He added, “If life just consists of the physical, then even goats are better. Because when goats die, they can be eaten, but human beings cannot be eaten.”

I thought about that statement and I realized that life must consist of more than what we see physically. Man is a spirit. The Bible says that God is the Father of spirits.

**...shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the FATHER OF SPIRITS, and live?**

**Hebrews 12:9**

## **Man is a Spirit**

If God is the Father of spirits, then we His children are spirits. That means that our bodies are just containers of the spirit. The Bible also describes the body as a house.

**For we know that if our EARTHLY HOUSE of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.**

**2 Corinthians 5:1**

When Lazarus of Luke 16 died, the Bible teaches us that he was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom.

**And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom...**

**Luke 16:22**

Nothing was said about Lazarus' funeral. He was a poor man. Probably, no one even noticed that he had died. His body was probably thrown into a mass grave.

I once passed by an unmarked grave. I saw three men

throwing dead bodies from the back of a pick-up truck into a mass grave. I went up to the car and asked, “What are you doing?” They were hospital officials who had been sent to bury unclaimed bodies. I immediately remembered Lazarus and said to myself, “These are modern day Lazaruses”.

But that is not the end of the story. After the body of Lazarus died, his spirit lived on!

Lazarus himself— the *real* man, was carried into Abraham’s bosom. Remember also the testimony of the rich man. He had everything in life. He had better health care so he lived longer than Lazarus. Notice that the beggar died before the rich man did. However, it came to pass that he also died. He probably had a grand funeral.

Years ago, I attended a funeral of someone whose funeral was very grand indeed. Dignitaries traveled from all over the country to attend the funeral. Special invitation cards were issued for the funeral. The corpse had several changes of clothing during the night. The most amazing part of the funeral was that a new road was actually constructed in the town to enable everybody to attend the funeral in comfort. I don’t know if you are aware of the cost of constructing a road— it is very expensive!

No expenses were spared for the funeral of this great rich man. This funeral also reminded me of the rich man in Luke 16. But the story does not end there. The Bible says in hell, he lifted up his eyes. The man still had eyes even though he was in hell. He cried to Father Abraham that he should allow Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water to cool his tongue.

**And in hell he lift up his EYES, being in torments, and SEETH Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he CRIED [mouth/voice] and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his FINGER in water and cool my TONGUE; for I am tormented in this flame. Luke 16:23,24**

Notice that different parts of the body have been mentioned. The picture of a man is being painted in this scripture. This is interesting because the Bible describes the spirit of a man as the hidden man, the inward man or the inner man. The body is actually the outward man, and the spirit is the inner man. Notice the terms “inner man”, “inward man”, or “hidden man” in the scriptures.

**For I delight in the law of God after the INWARD MAN:**

**Romans 7:22**

**... strengthened with might by his Spirit in the INNER MAN... Ephesians 3:16**

**But let it be the HIDDEN MAN of the heart...**

**1 Peter 3:4**

Dear friend, the Lazarus who was in Abraham's bosom was the real Lazarus. That was the soul and spirit of Lazarus. The rich man who was languishing in hell was not the rich man who had been buried at that lavish funeral. It was the soul and the spirit of the rich man that was experiencing the fires of hell. You can verify for yourself, whether the body

stays in the grave or not! The mortal remains of human beings remain on earth long after the spirit has departed to eternal life or damnation.

I know that many Christians are not aware of this great reality that they are spirit, soul and body. Many Christians wake up in the morning and spend a long time bathing, brushing their teeth and getting ready. Many ladies spend over one hour getting ready to go out. After that they may have a good breakfast or lunch. Then these born-again Christians walk out of the door without even saying a prayer. They do this because they are not aware that they are more than a body. It is because they are not conscious that they are spirits living in a body that they spend all their time on the body only.

When a person becomes aware of his spirit and soul, he spends time building up and developing the spirit.

Many governments are not aware that a human being is made up of more than just a body and mind. They stress on education and physical fitness but they leave out the *real person*. Man is a spiritual being first of all! The body is just a mortal container of the human spirit.

It is time for Christians to be aware of the spirit that dwells in them. It is time for us to develop the human spirit. You can develop your human spirit by praying.

**He that speaketh in an unknown tongue EDIFIETH [builds up, charges] HIMSELF; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church.**

**1 Corinthians 14:4**



This scripture speaks about buiding up yourself spiritually. The Bible says that when you speak in tongues you build up, charge and edify yourself spiritually. It is good to do bodily exercises. We are not against that! But what about spiritual exercises? Be conscious of your spirit within. You are a spirit, you have a soul and you live in a body.

## **The Soul of Man**

But what is a soul? The Bible makes it clear that the soul is different from the spirit.

**For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of SOUL and SPIRIT...**

### **Hebrews 4:12**

There is a dividing asunder (demarcation) between the spirit and the soul of a man. So what exactly is the soul of a man? There are no clear definitions of the soul in the Bible. What we have are descriptions of soulish activities. These help us to define what the soul of man is.

There are so many words in the Bible that are used to describe the activities of the soul. A soul can be said to be rejoicing (Psalm 31:7). The soul can magnify and bless the Lord (Psalm 103:2). The soul can be downcast (Psalm 42:5). The soul can be grieved (Judges 10:16). The soul can be discouraged (Numbers 21:4). The soul can be joyful (Psalm

35:9). These are just a few of the emotions that the soul expresses. We can therefore conclude that the soul is a part of man that experiences thoughts and emotions.

You will realize that the soul of the rich man was alive in hell. The rich man had thoughts, feelings and emotions even though he was dead and in hell. That is why he could remember Lazarus. The rich man thought things were still the same as when he was alive on earth. That is why he wanted to send Lazarus like a messenger, to proceed all the way from heaven to hell to serve him some water. Apparently the soul of the man had gone into hell, even though his body was still buried on earth.

The rich man remembered his five brothers and pleaded with Father Abraham to prevent them from coming to join him in hell. He pitied anyone who would ever come to hell. The soul of the rich man had perished in the lake of fire and he could remember, think and feel as though he was on earth.

What did Jesus say about the soul? He said, “What shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his soul?” It is the soul that goes to hell. Your spirit and your soul will suffer in hell if you are not born again!

**For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and LOSE HIS OWN SOUL?**

**Mark 8:36**

Never forget this reality. You are a spirit (the inner man). You have a soul (feelings, thoughts and emotions). You live in a body (the house of flesh). This is the first great principle I am sharing with you. When you know who and what you are, you will live your life in the right way and with the right attitude.

## *Chapter Three*

# *The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked*

When a person is not born-again he has what I call an unsaved spirit. There are many different ways the Bible describes a non-Christian. The Bible calls him an unbeliever, a sinner and an unregenerate person. It is important for you to be aware of the condition of the human spirit.

**The heart [unsaved spirit] is DECEITFUL above all things, and DESPERATELY WICKED: who can know it?**

**Jeremiah 17:9**

There are some people who distinguish between unbelievers. They say, “This is a good unbeliever and this is a bad one.” It is true that there are differences between people. But the Word of God makes it abundantly clear that anyone who is not a believer has an unregenerate spirit and is capable of many evil things.

The fact that an unsaved man is in a terrible spiritual condition is made abundantly clear in Romans chapter one.

The Bible says that God's wrath is being released against the wickedness of men.

**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men...**

### **Romans 1:18**

The human race has forsaken the living God and therefore God has given them up to become dead and darkened in their spirits.

**... When they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, AND THEIR FOOLISH HEART WAS DARKENED.**

### **Romans 1:21**

The heart of the unsaved person is darkened and degenerate. God has gone a step further and given up mankind so that they may follow their own desires and perverted feelings.

**Wherefore GOD ALSO GAVE THEM UP TO UNCLEANNESS through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.**

### **Romans 1:24**

Not only is the spirit of the unsaved man darkened with death but the mind of the unsaved human race has also degenerated into a depraved condition.

**And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, GOD GAVE THEM OVER TO A REPROBATE MIND to do those things which are not convenient.**

### **Romans 1:28**

As you read this passage further, you will discover that the sinful human race is filled with every conceivable evil. The long list of evil characteristics are there for your reading.

**Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:**

### **Romans 1:29-31**

This principle that an unsaved spirit is desperately wicked is manifest all around us. God has warned against marrying non-Christians because a non-Christian has an unregenerate spirit and is capable of many evil things. One of the things that an unbeliever is filled with is covenant breaking (Romans 1:31).

Most unbelievers do not stick to their word. It is very rare to find an unbeliever who is faithful to his marriage covenant. One man told me, “I have never seen a faithful unbeliever husband before.”

As I grew up in life, I came to discover that covenant breaking was a part and parcel of unbelievers’ lifestyle. They say, “*I will*” and “*I do*”, but *they won’t* and *they don’t*. This is the reason why God says Christians should not marry unbelievers. Many young ladies think that the pastors are trying to punish them by telling them not to marry unbelievers. **God is trying to prevent your heart from being broken by a covenant breaker!**

Do not be deceived by the dignified appearance of the unbeliever. The nature of an unsaved person is described in detail for you in Romans 1:29-31. Believe the Bible more than you believe your eyes. The Bible is the Word of God and is profitable for our instruction. The wicked nature of an unbeliever will manifest sooner or later. Shakespeare wrote in *MacBeth*, “There is no art to find the mind’s construction in the face.”

No one teaches a child to be wicked. Wickedness comes naturally to many little children. Why do children lie, cheat and steal without being taught to do so? It is because the unsaved spirit is at work again. Everyone is born into sin. That is why we sin so naturally and effortlessly even as children. Our spirits are born in sin and wickedness.

**Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**

**Psalms 53:3**

**Who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?**

**Proverbs 20:9**

**All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way...**

**Isaiah 53:6**

**But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags...**

**Isaiah 64:6**

When I was in secondary school, I couldn't understand the manifestation of wickedness in some of the students. They devised all sorts of unbelievable punishments. When I was in form one, I experienced torture at the hands of senior students. These senior students were not KGB torture specialists. They were just seniors with an unsaved nature.

They could mash chloroquine tablets (a bitter anti-malarial drug) in gari (processed cassava) and give it to people to eat. They had punishments called "tower of liberty" and "monkey dance" which would make all your muscles go into spasms. I was once forced to do a "monkey dance" until I was virtually paralyzed. I couldn't walk for some hours.

Punishments were devised in which you would be sent to collect twenty buckets of manure from a farm two kilometers away. After doing this twenty times, you would have walked eighty kilometers with a heavy load.

Where did all these ideas come from? They originated from the depraved and wicked heart of the unsaved man.

**For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God...**

**Romans 3:23**

I ask myself, "If such people were to come into political power what would they do to their enemies?"

All over the world, the depraved and perverted nature of the human race is manifest. When I hear of the atrocities committed during wars I wonder, "What is happening to the human race?" Wickedness abounds in the heart of man because the heart of the unsaved man is dead and

desperately wicked. This is not something that affects just White people or Black people— it is the nature of all mankind.

**The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?**

**Jeremiah 17:9**

During the Liberian Civil War, we heard of people being fed to the lions. One Liberian refugee told me how the rebel soldiers would throw children into a well. When the well was full of children, they would pour kerosene on top of the screaming children and light a fire. The soldiers would burn a whole well of little children. These are real things that actually happened!

Why are human beings so wicked and evil at heart? Why is it that when the opportunity presents itself, we see incredible acts of savagery?

**The good man is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men...**

**Micah 7:2**

A Lebanese man described something that he experienced during the war in Lebanon. He said, “One group would capture some prisoners that belonged to another faction. Then they would amputate the legs and arms of the captives and put the trunk (head, chest and abdomen, without legs and arms) of the people in a car and dispatch them to their homes.” He told me how a friend’s brother’s arms and legs were amputated and how terrible an experience it was. He continued, “The limbless man



was in such a pitiful condition that my friend had to shoot his own brother to end the torture.”

These acts of barbarism are manifestations of a depraved and reprobate human race. Why is the world filled with homosexuals? Why do millions of people commit fornication and adultery on a daily basis? Why does stealing, killing and injustice abound everywhere? The world has got over five billion greedy, corrupt, degenerate and selfish people.

God has given up the human race to its perverted way of life. It is this unsaved and degenerate people that Jesus came to the earth to save.

**But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.**

#### **Romans 5:8**

This is why Jesus said a man has to be born-again because the first time round, we were born in sin and we were conceived in evil.

**Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.**

#### **Psalms 51:5**

Why do you have to do your O’level exams again? Because the first time round, you didn’t do well.

Another term for born-again is regeneration. When you are born-again, your essential nature is changed. That is why the Bible says when a man is in Christ, he is a new creature. God has to make a new creation out of the old corrupt man.

When a man dies, there is no way you can keep him at home. No matter how much you love your brother, when the condition called *death* lays its icy hands on him you have to part company. The dead person must go to the mortuary and then to the grave. Husbands and wives who love each other have to part when death comes to lay hold on one of them. Why is this? The body of your loved one is dead. It begins to decay and degenerate. There is therefore no way by which you can stay together.

Do you remember what God told Adam and Eve? He said, “in the day that you eat this fruit you will die.” When Adam and Eve sinned, they died. The condition of spiritual death entered their spirits and there was no way God could fellowship with them anymore. He had to drag them out of the garden and separate them from Himself.

The whole human race is separated from God because of sin. Salvation breaks the wall that separates mankind from God.

**...and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us... that he might reconcile both unto God...**

**Ephesians 2:14,16**

Before a man is born-again, he is estranged from God. His nature is essentially evil. **He may look good on the outside, but essentially, he has a corrupt and wicked nature.**

**The good man is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men...**

**Micah 7:2**

That is why democracy and the rule of law are important. When one man with such a nature has unlimited power, he does many evil things.

In every nation where there is a military dictator, inconceivable atrocities take place. People are arrested and disappear into “thin air”, whilst hard-earned properties are arbitrarily confiscated. Stories of torture, brutality and murder abound. Viciousness in secret and in the open, has always been the order of the day with tyrannical rulers.

**A tyrant is simply an unsaved man who has unlimited power.** That is why governments are supposed to have three different *independent* arms: the executive, the legislature and the judiciary. There is supposed to be a separation of powers. This is to prevent one group of “unsaved men” from having too much power over other human beings.

The law is supposed to protect the average citizen from the political powers that be. However, it is unfortunate that in many cases the executive controls the legislature *and* the judiciary, thereby giving absolute power to a few people. As Lord Acton (1834-1902) said in a letter to Bishop Mandell Creighton, “*Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely.*” When Judges are afraid for their lives and their jobs, they often cannot make unbiased decisions.

## **Christianity and other Religions**

The difference between Christianity and every other religion is simple. Christianity claims to change the

essential nature of a man. Jesus makes you a new creation. You become a brand new creature with a brand new heart. In the Old Testament, the prophets predicted that the day would come when God would take out the stony heart and replace it with a heart of flesh.

**A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an HEART OF FLESH.**

**Ezekiel 36:26**

When a man is in Christ, he is a new person. He is regenerated. He is born again. When we speak of being born-again, we do not mean going into your mother's womb again. It is your spirit, the inner nature, that is born again. There is a rebirth of the human spirit.

**...that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

**John 3:6**

## **Outward Changes are not the Answer**

Obedying a set of rules does not change your heart. Coming to Christ and being born-again is what affords every man the opportunity to have a new heart.

If you take a pig and wash it, bathe it and dress it up in a wedding suit, all you have is a dressed up pig. This same pig will return to the filth which it is used to because that is its essential nature.

**I believe with all my heart that it is only a change in the unsaved nature of a man that can bring about a**

**change in this world.** New Year's resolutions and obeying rules do not change anything because the spirit of the unsaved man is dead and desperately wicked. No one toys with a dead thing. Dead things must be separated from living things. The only hope for a dead and wicked human spirit is the miracle of rebirth in Jesus Christ.

## *Chapter Four*

### *The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy*

When a man is born-again, the spirit within is changed. We have learned in the previous chapter that the unsaved spirit is desperately wicked and corrupt. What about the new creation? What about a man who has experienced the miracle of being born again? The new creation is righteous and truly holy. In other words, a man who is saved has undergone a radical transformation of the heart. His spirit is now a new creation in Christ. He is not a renovated and repainted version of an old thing. He is brand new. He is indeed newly created in God.

**Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold all things are become new.**

**2 Corinthians 5:17**

So what happens next? What are we supposed to do now that we are born or created again?

**And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in RIGHTEOUSNESS AND TRUE HOLINESS.**

### **Ephesians 4:24**

This scripture makes us know that we are actually righteous when we are born-again. What God is telling us is that we must put on (act like) the new spirit which is created in righteousness and true holiness. Many times we come to God and say things that are not true. In an attempt to sound humble, we tell the Lord that we are sinners and we are not worthy to approach His throne. But that is not the case anymore. You are not a sinner anymore! You *were* a sinner. You are not unworthy anymore. You *were* unworthy some time ago. But now that you are born again, you are the righteousness of God. You are God's workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto good works— Ephesians 2:10.

Please do not insult God's new creation. Do not think you can impress God with self-demeaning prayers.

It is time for you to acknowledge what God has done to your heart. The Bible says we are the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus.

**For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.**

### **2 Corinthians 5:21**

If we are the righteousness of God, that means that we cannot be more righteous than we are today. The righteousness of God is the highest form of purity and

“sinlessness”. God is describing the status of your new spirit.

Somebody once said, “I don’t feel any different now that I’m born-again!” This is not about feelings but about realities that have taken place. Can you feel your liver? Or your small intestines? Obviously not! But they exist within you!

If surgery was performed and your appendix was taken out, the doctors would inform you that they had removed a part of your intestine. Although you cannot feel that a part of your large intestines has been removed, you are supposed to accept the fact of what took place in your abdomen during the surgery. After the surgery, you are supposed to listen to the doctors’ advice on how to live after such an operation. Sometimes the doctors will tell you not to eat certain types of food anymore, because that part of the intestines which digests such food has been taken out. You are told how to live after the surgery. In the same way, God tells you how to live after being born again or recreated. Being born-again is a spiritual operation in which God recreates your spirit. He takes out the old hardened and depraved heart and puts in a new righteous spirit. You don’t feel it, but it is real. You are supposed to be aware of what has taken place and acknowledge it.

**That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.**

**Philemon :6**

The Bible teaches us to acknowledge the good things that are in us because we are Christians. We are not



supposed to go around saying negative things about ourselves. If you say, “I am a bad person,” you are hurting yourself. If you say, “I’m stupid!” or “I am a sinner” you are saying something that is contrary to the Word of God. It’s time to acknowledge good things about yourself.

**...by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.**

### **Philemon 6**

Acknowledging good things will make your faith come alive. Say to yourself, “I am the righteousness of God”, “I’m a new person!”, “I can make it!”, “I am holy”. These confessions will take you out of sin into a life of practical holiness. There is always something on the inside that must work on the outside. Righteousness on the inside is working on the outside.

**Any born-again Christian who lives in sin is living contrary to his new nature.** If you continue in sin, it is by your own choice because the power of sin is broken and God has given you a new nature. It is no longer natural to do evil, it is against your very nature as a new creation.

Before you get born-again, there are evil things you do without even noticing. After you’re saved, something within tells you, “This is wrong! Don’t do it!” That is the new man crying from within. The Bible says, “Put on the new man.” Act like a new person because you are new.

I became a medical doctor on the 10<sup>th</sup> of March 1989. On the 11<sup>th</sup> of March I didn’t feel any different, in fact, I still felt like a student. I had to tell myself, “Hey, you are now a doctor. Act like one! Stop acting like a student and act like Act like it and walk in the newness of life.” who you really are!” This is what God is saying to His “new creation” children, “You are new, righteous and truly holy.

**Lie not one to another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed...**

**Colossians 3:9,10**

Remember this: righteousness is not a feeling. You do not work to gain righteousness. It is impossible to attain God's standards by your own efforts.

**... all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags...**

**Isaiah 64:6**

Today, if you are born-again, you have been instantaneously transformed into a righteous, new man. You cannot be more righteous than you are after you are born again (we are talking of the righteousness of God Himself).

You can only increase your faith in your inherited righteousness. You can only practice more and more of your true nature. When you are conscious of your righteousness in Christ, you will become as bold as a lion.

**The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the  
RIGHTEOUS ARE BOLD AS A LION.**

**Proverbs 28:1**

Through righteousness, you will rule and dominate in this life. I see you dominating the enemy through righteousness! I see you overcoming your adversaries through the gift of righteousness in Christ Jesus! Your right standing with God is truly a gift from your Heavenly Father. It is something you can never earn through human effort.

Stand up now and become a world overcomer! You are no longer under condemnation!

**...much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the GIFT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL REIGN in life...**

**Romans 5:17**

## *Chapter Five*

# *After You are Born-Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow*

When you get saved, something great has happened, spiritually speaking. There is no doubt about this. However, we must understand exactly what has happened. A spiritual baby has been birthed into the world. The Bible calls new converts spiritual babies. They are not born as spiritual giants or spiritual adults! They are just babies in spirit! When somebody is born into this world, he starts life as a baby. It is important that he matures into an adult.

**As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, THAT YE MAY GROW thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

There are times when people have the wrong impression about what Christianity offers. The evangelist preaches and says, “Tonight is your night! Your life will never be the same again after today.” He goes on, “After tonight, every yoke shall be broken in your life.” He declares, “All

you who are heavy laden must come to Jesus and He will give you rest!” This gives a feeling of an instantaneous breakthrough.

But Christianity is not an instantaneous cure to all the ills of man! Being born-again is just the beginning of a long process. Being born-again is like being born into this world. You must go through all the stages of growth and development. Without growth, the effect of Christ on your life is often not seen. There is very little difference between an unbeliever and a baby “born again” Christian who has not bothered to grow. That is why we ask all converts to go to church and receive the Word so they can grow in the faith. If Jesus had not grown out of the baby stage to an adult man of 30 years, we would not have been saved by Him! Growth is important to bring out the true nature of the body.

You must go through three important stages of development. Every Christian goes through these three stages whether he knows it or not! These are: the baby stage, the childhood stage and then the mature adult.

## **THE SPIRITUAL BABY**

**As NEWBORN BABES, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

Let’s talk about the baby stage. When a Christian is at the baby stage of his development, he has all the characteristics of a natural baby. All babies cry a lot. If you want to know if there is a baby in the house, just stand

outside the gate and sooner or later you will hear some cries.

**A spiritual baby is easily offended.** Anyone who is easily offended is an immature spiritual baby. Little things offend him and he is always upset about one thing or the other. All churches have a lot of babies who are offended when the pastor does not say “hello” or visit them. Life is full of offenses. Those who offend you are often those close to you. Ask yourself: am I easily offended? Do I always have something to complain about? Perhaps you are a spiritual baby!

**Baby Christians, just like natural babies, are unable to help or control themselves.** A baby defecates anytime, anywhere and in front of anyone. There are no controls whatsoever. A spiritual baby is unable to control his fleshly appetites. He continues to live in sin. He lives according to the dictates of his flesh and does whatever he feels like doing. As you mature, you still have certain feelings but you don’t yield to them unless it is appropriate. If you are living in immorality and have no control over your flesh, then you are probably a spiritual baby. A spiritual baby cannot help himself. He needs someone to counsel him and pray for him. Do *you* always need someone to pray for you? Can you not pray for yourself? Can you not read the Bible and seek for understanding yourself? If you cannot, then perhaps you are a baby in Christ!

## THE CHILDHOOD STAGE

**That we be henceforth NO MORE CHILDREN,  
TOSSED TO AND FRO, and carried about...**

**Ephesians 4:14**

There are some important childhood characteristics you must know about. Ask yourself: Do I behave like this? Am I a spiritual child or am I a mature Christian? **A child is unsteady and unstable.** It is difficult to hold the attention of a child for more than a few minutes. The attention span of a child is very short. Because of this, they are unstable and unreliable. Any Christian who is carried about by every new “a la mode” pastor is a child. If you move around from church to church every few months, you are immature.

**The pastor in each church cannot keep the attention of that childlike Christian for more than a few months or years.** A man who constantly changes his mind about who he wants to marry is a child at heart. He is unsteady, tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine and prophecy. Any Christian who can be made to leave his church because of a prophecy delivered to him by the new prophet is simply a child.

There are many childlike Christians in the Church today. Nothing satisfies them for more than a few minutes. Initially they are excited by the good word. After this, they feel they need special prayers and anointing. After that, they are convinced that a holy bath is what will solve their problems. Nothing seems to satisfy them and they are always sniffing for something new. They come into the church full of praises for the church and its pastor.

After a few months, they have changed their mind about what they said initially.

**Another sign of a childlike Christian is that he engages in fruitless playful activity. He does not contribute to the home in any way.** My Children contribute nothing to the upkeep of the home. They eat food everyday without knowing where the food comes from. In fact, my children have never asked where the food on the table comes from. They are just happy to enjoy the provision!

A Christian who is in the childhood stage does not contribute to the growth of the church. He witnesses to no one and he invites no one. He does not support financially and does not pay his First and Best Fruits (tithes). Ask yourself this question, “How much money does your child contribute to the upkeep of your home?” Nothing! Is he a part of your home? Certainly! He just plays and makes the house dirty, but contributes nothing. If you are part of a church but contribute nothing to make the church grow and prosper, you are a playful child who is enjoying good sermons free of charge. You are certainly a part of the church but you contribute nothing! You win no souls! You invite no one to church! You only come to church when you feel like it. Indeed you are a spiritual child!

## **SPIRITUAL ADULTHOOD**

**But strong meat belongeth to them that are of FULL AGE...**

**Hebrews 5:14**



When you reach the stage of maturity, you begin to love the meat of the Word. Bible study and the teaching of the Word are what enchant your spirit. Because the church is comprised of many babies and children, you will discover that a large number of Christians are not interested in the teaching of the Word. They want something dramatic and spectacular. Crowds of people gather when there is a sensational minister in the house.

A mature person understands the deep things of the Word of God. A mature person knows that he cannot live on signs, wonders and miracles. He knows that it is the Word that matters.

Another important feature of a mature person is that he is skilful in the Word of God.

**...everyone that useth milk is UNSKILFUL IN THE WORD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS: for he is a babe.**

**Hebrews 5:13**

To be skilful in the Word means that you are able to share the Word of God effectively with others. When you become skilful in the Word, you begin to teach and preach! Do not make a mistake, every Christian is supposed to develop until he is able to preach and teach. It is not only pastors who are supposed to preach the Word of God. Preaching and teaching is characteristic of the mature stage of Christian development.

**For when THE TIME YE OUGHT TO BE TEACHERS ye have need that one teach you...**

**Hebrews 5:12**

There is a time when every Christian must be a teacher of God's Word. Let this be your goal from today. Decide to be someone who is involved in teaching and preaching the Word of God. Keep on growing spiritually until you are able to preach and teach the Word of God. Move on from there to the higher realms of ministry that God has for You!

## HOW TO DEVELOP YOUR SPIRIT

“Developing your spirit” is another way to describe growing in spirit.

The mind is developed in schools and colleges. Thousands of dollars are spent to develop the minds of the human race. That explains why we have taken such strides in science and medicine. A lot of money and time is also used to develop the body. There are keep fit clubs and gyms everywhere. The body is being developed into grotesque muscular giants. **But dear friend, you are more than a body. You are more than a mind!** You are a spirit living in a body and you have a mind. You must also develop your spirit. The question is, “How do you develop your spirit into maturity?”

The first key to developing the human spirit is the Word.

**...desire the sincere milk of THE WORD, THAT  
YE MAY GROW thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

Allow the Word of God to enter your spirit through your Quiet Time, Bible study and Bible reading. Every Christian must have a Quiet Time everyday. I have a Quiet Time

with the Lord everyday. I benefit greatly from spending time with the Lord every morning. Many of the revelations that the Lord has given me came to me during my Quiet Time.

Moses was a man who had a Quiet Time with the Lord. Moses went up to the mountain early in the morning to meet with the Lord. He took two tables of stone to write down the revelations that God would give him. You need to have a Moses type of Quiet Time. Spend time early in the morning alone with the Lord.

**...Hew thee two tables of stone... And be ready in the morning, and come up in the morning... and present thyself there... And no man shall come up with thee...**

### **Exodus 34:1-3**

A Quiet Time of Bible study and prayer is the most consistent way to feed your spirit. Your spirit does not grow unless it is fed on the Word of God.

Another good way of taking in the Word is by listening to tapes. The second best way by which I have fed my spirit over the years is through listening to preaching tapes.

**So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.**

### **Romans 10:17**

I listen to tapes all the time and I am blessed because I do. God has given pastors and teachers to perfect the saints. You can receive the Word through these anointed men of God.

Another way that you can develop your spirit is by praying in tongues. Every Christian must develop the art of spending hours praying in the spirit. The Bible says you build up yourself in the faith when you pray in the Holy Ghost. Praying in the Holy Ghost is the same as praying in tongues.

**But ye, beloved, BUILDING UP YOURSELVES on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost.**

**Jude 20**

Pray in tongues for an hour everyday and see what will happen in your spiritual life over the next three months. I guarantee you a change in your spiritual life if you will do this simple exercise. The Bible teaches us that you are spiritually charged and built up when you speak in tongues.

**He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself...**

**1 Corinthians 14:4**

The Word and prayer will cause you to develop in the spirit and to become a giant for the Lord. Walk in these two keys of spiritual growth and nothing will be held back from you. I see God taking you out of your hiding place! I see Him placing you before kings and prominent men as you develop your spirit!

## *Chapter Six*

### *After You Are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed*

**And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the RENEWING OF YOUR MIND, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.**

**Romans 12:2**

When you are born-again, your spirit is totally changed. **God gives you a new *heart* and not a new *mind*.** It is therefore the duty of every Christian to renew his mind. If you do not renew your mind, you will be a person with a new spirit and an old mind. There are many Christians who are genuine new creations but still have unrenewed minds.

If you belong to a good church which constantly preaches and teaches the Word of God, your mind will be renewed. There are many people who think that they know all there is to know in the Word of God. No one knows everything!

The unconscious, incompetent person is pitiful because he does not know that he does not know!

Every Christian must decide to be a constant learner of the Word of God. He must never stop learning. You will always discover things that you do not know. Years ago I heard a pastor giving a testimony of his life. He spoke about how he got born-again. Before he was saved, he was a pornographer by profession. That means he was someone who acted in pornographic films and posed for pornographic photographs. Sex was his work and he didn't see anything wrong with it.

He told us one day, "After I got born-again, I continued to live in fornication."

"I slept with one girl after the other and I never thought twice about it. It never occurred to me that there was something wrong with sleeping with someone you're not married to."

He continued, "I thought I was being a loving person to many girls. After all, love is a commandment from God."

One night, he was in bed with one of the girls when suddenly, a huge black figure appeared at the foot of his bed and he woke up in great fright. He was terrified and thought to himself, "Something is not right!"

The next day he decided to read the Bible and discovered where the Word of God says fornication is wrong.

**But fornication, and all uncleanness... let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints...**

**Ephesians 5:3**

Believe it or not, this man was born-again but because of his background, he did not even know that fornication was a sin.

It could be that because of your background you are not even aware that certain things are sin. I know many Christians who are prejudiced or even racist. There are pastors who are racist in their thoughts and decisions. Without even realizing it, we carry on doing wrong things although we are genuinely born-again in our hearts. That is why we need the Word of God to renew our minds.

**...be ye transformed by the RENEWING OF YOUR MIND...**

### **Romans 12:2**

It is actually the renewing of our minds that brings about a visible transformation.

When I became a Christian, I thought God wanted us to be poor. Somehow, my background taught me that poverty was more righteous than being prosperous. If you read the Bible, your mind will be renewed and your attitude will change. Transformation comes when the mind is renewed. The real change we look for in Christians comes through a renewal of the mind in the Word of God.

**See your mind as a computer which has to be programmed. Whatever you feed into the mind is what will come out.**

There are many Christians who do not tithe simply because their minds are polluted with wrong ideas. Some people think there is no need to do any such thing. Some think the pastors are just using the money for their

extravagant lifestyles. However, every Christian who has his mind renewed will find himself being transformed in the area of his finances.

Even though you are born-again, your mind is still the same. It *must* be renewed with the Word of God.

## HOW TO RENEW YOUR MIND

You mind will be renewed by receiving the Word. The old thoughts and ideas will be cleared out as you receive the Word. Jesus Himself said,

**Now ye are clean through the WORD which I have spoken unto you.**

**John 15:3**

Your mind is also renewed by joining the right church and learning the right things. As you receive the Word through your pastor, you will gradually experience a change in your mind.

**That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the WORD...**

**Ephesians 5:26**

That is why it is so important that you choose the right church to attend.

It is true that you are a new creation, but you also need a renewed mind. It is the renewed mind that will make you live out the new life. When people see the new life, they will know that something real has happened to you!



## *Chapter Seven*

### *After You Are Saved Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control*

**But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection...**

**1 Corinthians 9:27**

When you get saved, you must know that your body is the same old body. When you come forward to the altar and give your life to Christ, you do not change physically. If you were tall and skinny before salvation, you will still be tall and skinny after salvation. If you had long hair before you got born-again, you'll still have long hair after salvation. What does this mean? Does it mean that nothing has happened to you? Not at all! Your spirit is recreated in God.

The body is still the same and you must realize this all important fact. Sometimes people give their lives to Christ and they believe that everything is going to be different from then. However, when they get home, they begin to feel the old feelings they felt before salvation.



They experience lust within their bodies. They feel the old feelings of jealousy, hatred and anger. Now because they do not know this truth (that the body is unchanged), the devil begins to tell them, “You are not a real Christian”, “You are not saved”, “You cannot be born-again!”

Satan continues to harass you and says, “If you were really born-again, such a thought or feeling would never occur to you.”

The devil tells you, “None of the Christians sitting in this church has the kind of thoughts you have.”

But that is a lie! We all have thoughts and feelings that we don’t want to have even though we are born again. Everyone who is born-again still has the flesh to contend with. Even Paul was worried about his flesh. He knew that his body was still the same. He knew that his flesh could disgrace him one day so he said, “I keep my flesh under control”.

**...I KEEP UNDER [control] MY BODY and bring it under subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.**

### **1 Corinthians 9:27**

Paul is the one who had personal revelations of Jesus Christ. Paul wrote half of the New Testament. He had so many visions and revelations of Jesus Christ. Very few people have had such spiritual experiences. Paul was one of the greatest apostles with signs and wonders following him. He raised the dead and the bites of snakes had no effect on him.

Yet, this great man was worried about his flesh. He felt his flesh could disgrace him at any time. That is why he

kept his flesh under constant control. Notice what he said in the book of Romans. He declared that there was nothing good in his flesh. Even though he was born-again, his flesh (body) was still the same.

**For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing...**

### **Romans 7:18**

No matter who you are, you still have a body to keep under control. Have you ever seen a spirit smoking or drinking alcohol? Certainly not! Spirits don't smoke. It is the flesh that drinks and smokes. Have you ever seen a spirit committing fornication? Surely not! It is the flesh that does all these evil things! That is why the Bible teaches us to present our bodies as a living sacrifice.

The works of the flesh are listed in Galatians chapter five.

**Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have...**

### **Galatians 5:19-21**

These works are not the works of Satan or evil spirits. They are the works of the flesh. Look at the list again. Adultery, fornication, witchcraft, hatred, wrath, murder, drunkenness, envyings and the list goes on. Mind you, these are not the works of unbeliever's flesh. These are the works of the flesh. Do you have flesh? Of course you do!

You have a body and so do I. That means that both you and I are capable of this list of horrible deeds. The flesh is a real burden that we are saddled with through this life.

That is why we have no confidence in the flesh.

**... and have no confidence in the flesh.**

### **Philippians 3:3**

That is why we must be merciful to Christians who fall into sin, because when we consider our own selves, we realize that we experience similar temptations and feelings in our flesh. You are capable of everything you see listed in Galatians 5:19-21.

**Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.**

### **Galatians 6:1**

One day when Jesus comes, we shall be changed. Our bodies shall be transformed into immortal and incorruptible bodies. We will no longer be capable of sin.

**...We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed... for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption and, this mortal must put on immortality.**

### **1 Corinthians 15:51-53**

One day I went to visit a friend of mine. He was a hardened sinner who was not interested in being born-again. I sat with him in his bedroom and we chatted for many hours. At a point, the Holy Spirit made a way for me to witness to him about Christ. That was his day of salvation. For the first time, he listened to me as I preached to him. When I finished, he asked me, “What must I do?”

I said, “Let us pray and I will lead you to the Lord.”

After I led him in the sinner’s prayer, he looked at me and said, “Dag, thank you very much. I feel I am a changed person.”

Then I thought, “If I have been able to lead my friend to the Lord, why don’t I lead him to receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit? I decided to do just that. I laid hands on him and to my surprise he received the Holy Spirit and began to speak in tongues fluently.

Suddenly something else happened. When I touched him, he was “slain in the Spirit” and fell on his bed. He continued to bubble in tongues for some time. After about an hour, I decided to leave and come back to see him later.

About five hours later, I returned to his house to visit him. When I got to the gate his sister told me that she didn’t think he was home, but I went to his apartment anyway. When I got there, something told me to pause at the door before going in. I stood at the door and what did I hear? My new convert was fornicating in the bedroom with his girlfriend. Oh dear! So soon after a wonderful salvation experience and the Holy Ghost baptism! I was aghast!

Less than five hours ago this man had received Christ and was gloriously filled with the Holy Spirit. I personally ministered to him and heard him speak in tongues, and saw him “slain in the Spirit”. How could he return so quickly into fornication? I asked myself, “Was this man

really born-again?” Does being born-again have any effect on a person? The answer is: yes, it does!

If anyone was ever born-again and filled with the Holy Spirit, this friend of mine was. But the reality was that his body was still the same and was capable of committing all the sins of the flesh.

As a baby Christian, my new convert had yielded his flesh to all the old sins. His flesh had once more engaged itself in sin, because it had not been affected by the “Born again” experience. His flesh was still the same!

**Never forget this! Even though you are born-again, your flesh is still the same, you must keep it under control otherwise it will lead you into sin.**

## **CONTROL YOUR FLESH**

There are some practical ways by which you can keep your body under control. Firstly, be aware of the potential evil that is in your flesh. Spend time fasting on a regular weekly basis. Do not give opportunities to your flesh.

**...only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh...**

**Galatians 5:13**

The reason why boarding schools have separate houses for boys and girls is because the school authorities do not want to give occasion and opportunity to the flesh. If you expose yourself to certain things, you will fall. If I expose myself to certain things, I will fall. What we need is wisdom to help us stay far away from dangerous enticements of the flesh.

Secondly, The Bible did not say we should fight youthful lusts. God said very clearly, “Flee youthful lusts”. If God knew we could have won the fight for fleshly control, he would have told us to fight. When God says run, then you must run! Don’t stand and fight. Flee for your life! Your body is still the same. Don’t trust yourself to your flesh; there is no good thing in your body.

Give no place to the devil and give no opportunity to your flesh!

**Neither give place to the devil.**

**Ephesians 4:27**



who would attend my funeral and I worked out every detail in my mind.

Dear friend, fear is an oppressive spirit that works through the mind. Whether it is worry, fear, or lust, you must learn to cast down wrong imaginations. You must learn to capture your thoughts and make them obedient to the Word of God. You must resist the devil.

**...and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ...**

### **2 Corinthians 10:5**

You must resist the devil in your life. When the Word of God says you must resist the devil, it means that you must resist the thoughts and suggestions that come from the pit of hell. The Bible tells us exactly what to think about. It tells us to think of things that are pure, holy and peaceful.

**Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.**

### **Philippians 4:8**

## **CONTROL YOUR THOUGHTS**

One of the best ways to control your thoughts is to listen to preaching tapes. Christian music and videos are good tools to help in controlling the thoughts. Do not give place

to the devil. You give place to the devil when you allow evil thoughts to settle in your mind. They will oppress and obsess you until you become possessed.

## **A NEW UNDERSTANDING OF SALVATION**

**Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom and with all thy getting, get understanding.**

**Exalt her, and she shall promote thee... a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee.**

### **Proverbs 4:7-9**

Have a new understanding of the concept of salvation through these seven great principles. Read this book over and over again. God will give you a new understanding that will make you grow in grace. In all your getting, get understanding. Wisdom is the principal thing. People who understand what is happening are the people who will experience God's victory. I see you blessed as you understand these seven great principles!





## ***Chapter One***

# ***What is Anagkazo?***

**...Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel [anagkazo] them to come in, that my house may be filled.**

**Luke 14:23**

I grew up in a Christian home and was made to attend church every Sunday. I must be honest, I found church very boring. I hated the long boring hymns and I couldn't understand the sermons. The priests looked unreal and detached from everyday life.

I remember sitting through many boring and lifeless services at church. My main pre-occupation was to predict the closure of the service. I would count the number of hymns on the board and estimate the closing time of the service.

## They Drank \$1000 Worth of Beer in One Night

You see, the priests and the majority of the congregation were not born again. They were what you might call traditional Christians. They had inherited a family religion. One day, the unbeliever priest announced from the pulpit how much beer the whole church had drunk the night before at a party. *It all came up to about \$1000 worth of beer!* **The priest went on to say that one of the members owed him a carton of beer.** Surely, many of these people were just practicing a lifeless religion. I can understand why many young people do not go to church anymore. It is just one meaningless, lifeless and boring ritual. If the pastor is not a born again Christian, you cannot expect many members of the church to be born again.

When I first attended secondary school, at the age of twelve, I was an unbeliever. That is when I first came into contact with “real” born again Christians. They were all members of the Scripture Union (SU).

Though they seemed to be true believers, nothing about them attracted me. I remember one evening in particular, when the SU leader announced at the boarding house that there was going to be a meeting of the SU.

I thought to myself, “*Who would ever attend such a boring meeting?*” These Christians were not attractive. They made weak and lifeless announcements inviting us, the unsaved, to join them.

As a result, it never occurred to me to join this uninteresting group.

I still cannot remember how I eventually joined the SU. I believe that the Spirit of God worked on me and drew me there without even knowing it!

Many Christians are genuine and have a real message to impart. But for a message to have any impact, it must be compelling. It must drive the listener to change! The message of the Lord Jesus Christ must persuade the unsaved to make a decision for Christ. That is why I am writing this book on what I call “*Anagkazo*.”

***Anagkazo* simply means “to compel.”** It also means “to *necessitate*, to *drive*, and to *constrain* by all means such as *force*, *threats*, *persuasion* and *entreaties*.”

Sometimes we need to go back into the Greek in order to understand the original meanings of some Bible words. You see, the New Testament was translated from the Greek language and the Old Testament from the Hebrew language. ‘Anagkazo’ is the Greek word that is translated “to compel.”

Although this is a book on *anagkazo*, I also want to share on another closely related Greek word, “*Biazo*.” This is because the revelation of *anagkazo* is very much linked to the revelation in the word *biazo*.

## What Is Biazo?

***Biazo* is a Greek word found in Matthew 11 that means “to use force” or “to force one’s way into a thing”.**

This is a quality I find lacking in Christian circles. We are forceful about everything else, except God’s work. We

are forceful about our jobs, our girlfriends, our marriages and our future. But when it comes to God's work we become like timid mice!

When I observe the commercials on television, I realize that there are groups of people who are very confident about what they have to offer. They are so confident that they boldly sing catchy songs about how good their product is.

Alcohol advertisers are some of the best in the business. We all know that beer and liquor are some of the commonest killers of young people. Alcohol has broken up more homes, destroyed more marriages, caused more car accidents, started more wars and fights than anything else in the world. Yet, they forcibly advertise it.

### **Is Alcohol the Power?**

Beer is the cause of many accidents, leading to the deaths of a countless number of people. And yet there are smiling people on television, telling us that it is the "Power" we need. These commercials are being forced down our throats. *We are being forced to believe things that are not true.* **Beer is the devil in solution!** Yet we are being compelled to believe otherwise. This unhealthy product is paraded as a good thing.

When I think of the forcefulness of people who want to make money at all costs, I realize that Christians have a better reason to be forceful.

Why then is it that Christians behave like lame ducks,



toothless dogs and helpless sparrows?

I believe that this teaching on the important subject, ‘biazo’ can change that. **Biazo means to force one’s way into a thing.** If Christianity is going to spread we are going to have to be a lot more forceful than we are.

## **Are Muslims More Forceful than Christians?**

It is amazing to see fanatic Muslims who are prepared to die for their faith. I wonder how many Christians have half the drive that Muslims seem to have. Should we be surprised if statistics indicate that Islam is spreading faster than Christianity?

Whether it is making money, spreading a false religion or selling deadly products, the whole world has become very forceful. That is why I am teaching Christians about being biblically forceful.

Another related Greek word I want us to learn about is the word “*Anaideia*.”

## **What is Anaideia?**

***Anaideia* is a Greek word that is used only once in the Bible. It means “to be shameless.” It also speaks of importunity.** In the eleventh chapter of Luke, we learn of a man who exhibited shamelessness in his relationship with God.

**I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity [anaideia] he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.**

**Luke 11:8**

In 1982, I was admitted to the University of Ghana, the premier university in my country Ghana. I cautiously entered this new environment wondering what lay ahead. One of the first things that struck me was the shamelessness of unbelievers as they went about their lives.

### **The Kissing Students**

I remember one of the first times I walked into Volta Hall, the hall of residence for the ladies in the University of Ghana. When we got to the staircase that led up to the first and second floors, there was a young man and woman engaged in a prolonged embrace and kiss. I know that in some cultures this might not look strange. However in our culture it is unusual and out of place.

This couple continued in their long embrace and intimate kissing as we passed by them. They could not care less about who was watching them! They were not moved! *They were shameless!* Perhaps they felt they were in love.

When we got upstairs, I told my friends, “It seems people around here are not ashamed of what they’re doing.”

Then I asked, “Why are we ashamed of what we believe in? Why are we ashamed of the Gospel? Why do we go around like timid mice who don’t have anything to offer?”

The Spirit of the Lord arose within me and I said, “If they are not ashamed of their immoral lives, I’m not going to be ashamed of the Gospel.”

## **For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ...**

### **Romans 1:16**

It is amazing to see homosexuals boldly speak of their abnormal lifestyles. They come on television and speak confidently about the perversion of anal intercourse. These people forcefully demonstrate and fight for their rights. How come Christians are so quiet when it comes to speaking God’s Word?

Many Christians sit in their offices and allow their unbeliever colleagues to shamelessly speak of their evil deeds. The sinners around us dominate the discussions with unwholesome words. That is why I believe many Christians need what the Bible calls ‘anaideia.’ ‘Anaideia’ simply means ‘shamelessness.’

The Apostle Paul practiced ‘anaideia.’ Remember, it was Paul who said, “We are not ashamed of the gospel.”

In the following chapters I will share with you the in-depth meanings of these three Greek words – *Anagkazo*, *Anaideia*, and *Biazo*. You will learn how to put these three revelations into daily use.

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***Practicing Anagkazo***

In the Book of Luke chapter 14 we read a familiar story where Jesus told of an important person who held a party for his friends. I want you to read this whole portion of scripture so that you will be familiar with the story.

**Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready.**

**And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.**

**And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.**

**So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.**

**And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.**

**And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel [anagkazo] them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.**

#### **Luke 14:16-24**

This man had the unfortunate experience of spending a lot of money on a big party, inviting important people, only to find out that most of them were uninterested. This man was very surprised about their rejection of his invitation. He became angry as he listened to the excuses of those he had invited. In his anger, he decided to invite anybody he found out on the street. Imagine having a party with people you don't even know!

Unfortunately, at that time of the night, there were not so many people around. Even after inviting those on the street, his party was relatively unattended. He then decided to invite the sick, the blind and the handicapped. Imagine that! What an unusual selection of partygoers! His party was full of the non-entities of the community – the down-and-outs of society.

**I believe this story is symbolic of the Lord Jesus sending us out to invite people to Him.** It is also symbolic of pastors sending out their members to evangelize the world.

I have discovered that every time I embark on evangelizing the world (inviting many people to a great supper) I encounter the same things that this man encountered. However, I believe this man was a success. In spite of everything, he had his party and his house was full of guests. It might not have turned out the way he initially wanted, but he had his party anyway.

You see, God is sending out evangelists to invite the whole world to know Christ. Unfortunately, many of those who are invited do not respond. The Jews were the first to be invited to know the Lord. But they rejected Christ in their hour of visitation. Therefore, the Gospel was transmitted on to the Gentiles.

Many of the elite, who live in large urban centers, hear the gospel on television and in churches many times. However, they do not receive but rather criticize preachers. Again, the Gospel is passed on to the poor and non-elite in villages. They willingly receive the Word because they have no other hope but God.

## **Is Anagkazo an Important Revelation?**

- 1. Anagkazo is important because a certain type of evangelism is not going to work in this day and age.** People are not going to be convinced or compelled to know God through our little church games.

Our “Mickey Mouse” church programs and bazaars will not go very far in today’s world. We must go out there and drive them to God.

2. **Anagkazo is important because many of the people that need the Gospel are not in places where they can receive bourgeoisie invitation cards.** If people are going to be touched with the Gospel, a new strategy of going to the gutters, highways and the bushes must be employed. Sitting in church and inviting people has long been an unworkable strategy for evangelism.
3. **Dear pastor, without anagkazo, your church is going to be empty.** Please remember that if this man had not employed the strategy of ‘anagkazo’ he would have had an empty house. Remember this, “A pastor without ‘anagkazo’ will have an empty church.”
4. **Without anagkazo, many churches are going to die a natural death.** What you must realize is that the membership of a church is very fluid. Many people come and many people leave. If you don’t have more people coming in than those you are losing, your church will begin to die. If you don’t want your church to close down, you must do what Jesus instructed – go out and practice anagkazo.
5. **Life is becoming more hectic as we approach the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Busy working people are going to have more and more excuses.**

The strategy of anagkazo will help you to overcome these excuses.

Let me now take you through what I call the practical

steps of anagkazo. These steps are derived from the story we just read in Luke 14.

## **Step #1**

### ***An Anagkazo Man Prepares a Great Supper.***

Anyone who wants to be used by God must prepare himself for the ministry. Today, God is using me in the ministry. This has not happened without thousands of hours of preparation. I realize that the sermons I preached to ten people some years ago, are the same sermons I am preaching to thousands today. Preaching to a small group of ten people was part of God's preparation for me. So if you want God to use you mightily, you must start preparing now! Take every opportunity you have to do something useful in the church.

## **I Played the Drums**

Years ago, I remember playing the drums and the piano in my church. Though I didn't know at the time, that was part of my preparation for ministry. Today, I know a lot about music and musical equipment. I can discuss intelligently, all details that concern music, worship and expensive equipment. My experience with the music department has been a valuable asset to me.



## **Step #2**

### ***A Person Who Practices Aanagkazo Does Not Keep To Himself But Influences And Affects Many People.***

You will notice that this man in Luke 14 held a great supper and invited many people. One of the primary reasons evangelism does not happen is because Christians keep to themselves. You cannot keep to yourself if you want to be an effective witness for the Lord Jesus Christ.

When you sit on a bus, you can decide to be friendly to those nearby. Begin talking to the people around you. I always try to share the Gospel with people around me. I have always believed that I have some Good News about Jesus. He has saved me and set me free.

During my second year in medical school, we lived on the beautiful Legon campus. We were transported daily to the other side of town where a teaching hospital was located. This involved a one-hour bus drive from one end of town to the other.

### **They Made Balloons Out of Condoms**

I remember one day as I sat in the bus, I watched some senior colleagues take out condoms, blow them into balloons and fly them in the bus. As these students shouted and laughed over their lewd jokes, I realized how confident they were in what they were doing.

We the Christians sat timidly in the bus, looking lame,

uninteresting and boring.

As I sat there, I decided not to keep to myself. I got the attention of everyone on the bus and began to preach. Although preaching on the bus later became quite common, at that time it was unusual. Some of the students were angry and others were bored. Some looked out of the window in disapproval but I preached on! I decided not to keep to myself anymore. I decided to be like the man in Luke 14.

## **I Clapped My Hands on the London Bus**

An ‘anagkazo’ person does not keep to himself or herself. I lived in London for a period in 1983. I felt stifled by the stiff atmosphere in England. I was used to preaching anywhere and everywhere. But in England I realized that one couldn’t easily relate to the people around. Everyone seemed so unfriendly and uninterested in their surroundings.

One day, while sitting on the top level of a double decker bus, the spirit of ‘anagkazo’ rose up in me and I said to myself, “I cannot keep to myself any longer.”

I stood to my feet and to the surprise of everyone on the bus, I began to clap my hands to get their attention. I tell you, I may have looked bold on the outside, but I was quite scared on the inside. There were all sorts of murderous looking characters in their seats. But I maintained my cool and delivered a complete full Gospel sermon.

The bus was quiet for a few minutes as they listened to

this young mad man preach. I took my seat after preaching and got off at the next stop. One gentleman, who got off the bus with me, said to me, “I admire your courage! But I don’t think you got very far.” Whether I got very far or not is not what matters. What is important is that I preached the Word. And the Word always accomplishes something when it is preached.

**...my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth...  
IT SHALL ACCOMPLISH that which I please...**

**Isaiah 55:11**

You see, any form of soul winning in our modern day and age, is going to have to be of the anagkazo type. Gentleness and meekness will not take you very far.

### **Step #3**

***Anyone Practicing Anagkazo Is Not Prepared To  
Cancel His Service.***

Every pastor, in going through the normal processes of church growth will experience highs and lows. But a pastor with the spirit of anagkazo will never cancel his church service. He will decide to press on no matter how many people attend.

One of my pastors told me how only one person attended church on a particular Sunday. He said that he had never felt so low. However, he managed to preach to that one soul and do his best for the Lord.

## **Anagkazo From The Community**

I remember there was a time we had a very low attendance for one of our services. The Lord told me to do what this man in Luke 14 did- “Go out there and invite the community to church.”

I said, “How can I do that on a Sunday?”

The Lord replied, “You do it, and you will be blessed.”

I continued arguing with the Lord, “What will our Sunday morning visitors think? We will drive away people from the church.”

However, the Lord insisted, “Go out and compel them to come in.”

I obeyed the Lord.

I announced to the church that we were going to stop the service, go out into the community and invite them.

I said, “We are going to go out to the community to bring them in.”

I announced, “This is not a gentle invitation. Every single one of you must hold the hand of someone you see out there. Physically bring them into the church building.”

Some were taken aback. But we did it! And we brought in hundreds of “un-churched” dwellers of the community. That day we had several people giving their lives to Christ. We did this on numerous occasions and over a period, that particular service increased in size dramatically. I was not prepared to close down my service because of a low attendance. That is what any pastor with the spirit of ‘anagkazo’ is prepared to do.

### **Step #3**

#### ***An Anagkazo Person Is Not Prepared To Have An Empty Meeting.***

A pastor working with the spirit of ‘anagkazo’ is not prepared to have any empty church service. Many years ago, as a medical student, the Lord asked me to start a church. I had no members in my church. Not even one soul to preach to! But I was not prepared to have an empty church.

#### **We Woke Up the Nurses**

I was still a student when the Holy Spirit directed me to the nursing students’ hostel. I remember that very first day. It was around 5 a.m. and still dark. Standing outside the hostel, I clapped my hands and woke them up. They might have been surprised but that didn’t bother me. I preached to them about Jesus. After I had finished I did something very bold. I said to them, “If you want to give your lives to Christ, change out of your night clothes, wear something decent and come downstairs. We want to talk to you about Christ.”

That morning several young ladies gave their hearts to God. Up to this day, many of them are still members of my church.

#### **I Love Dawn Broadcasts**

Preaching at dawn to people in their beds has been one

of my favorite methods of implementing this principle of

anagkazo. One morning, I preached at the hostel of public health nurses. A lady threw down a note saying she was a backslider and needed help. She wanted us to speak with her. That morning we ministered to her and God delivered her. She has now been a faithful member of our church for the last ten years.

Although I started out with an empty classroom, it soon became filled with nurses who had given their lives to Christ at my anagkazo dawn broadcasts. Dear reader, I want you to understand something, I did not inherit a church from anyone. I have often gone to places where I knew no one, and no one knew me. I have had to go out and win souls, driving and persuading people about the Lord, until the room was full.

## **Step #4**

### ***He Is Not Overcome By People's Excuses.***

Many people are full of excuses. This 'anagkazo' man in the Bible (Luke 14) listened to three amazing excuses for not attending his party. However, he was not impressed by any of them.

The first excuse was about testing oxen in the night. Everyone knows that no one tests oxen at that time of the night. The second excuse was about somebody who had just gotten married. But we all know that a dinner would have been a nice outing for a newly wedded couple. The

third excuse was about going to see some land in the night. Let me ask you a question. “Would you not assess a piece of land before you buy it? How could you inspect a piece of land in the night? Would you even see it clearly?” Yet somebody was using this as an excuse for not attending the party.

**Any good minister, who wants to reach people, must not be overwhelmed by people’s excuses. He must learn to overcome people’s excuses.**

Even as you minister the Word of God, people form excuses in their minds. They develop reasons why they will not obey the Word. Every good preacher must learn to preach *against* people’s excuses and ideas. Jesus spoke directly *against* the people’s reasoning and excuses. And they knew it!

**...for they perceived that he had spoken this parable AGAINST THEM.**

**Luke 20:19**

## **Step #5**

***Know That Many Excuses Are Empty.***

As I said earlier, many excuses cannot be substantiated. A good minister must learn to see through the emptiness of excuses. I spoke to one friend, inviting him to church.

## **The Successful Businessman**

He in turn spoke about how the time was not convenient

and how he had quite a distance to travel.

I said to him, “You are a successful businessman. Everything you want to do, you do. You travel. You get up early on weekdays. You even have time to visit your girlfriend who lives a few hundred kilometers away. How come you have no time for God?”

I told him, “If you really want to do something you can do it.”

Some people do not pay their tithes because they claim they have no money. Watch how much money they spend on other things. You will realize that the problem is not a lack of money, but the spirit of greed.

## **Step #6**

### ***He Knows That Many Excuses Are Lies.***

There are many husbands who blame the inadequacies of their spiritual relationships on their wives and vice versa. I remember once, one of my pastors did fundraising in a branch church.

## **The Lying Wife**

During the fundraising, the pastor asked for those who would like to give some money for the purchase of church



instruments. A husband who happened to be a foreigner was prepared to give a donation. Just as his hand was going up, his wife pulled his hand down. She thought the pastor hadn't noticed. After the service, the lady approached the pastor and said, "You know, the reason

why we didn't give any money is because my foreign husband is so stingy."

### **She Prevented Her Husband From Giving**

"I will see what we can do," she added. But that was an outright lie. It was actually her husband who wanted to donate something. His wife prevented him.

### **Step #7**

#### ***He Makes A Way And Does Not Give An Excuse.***

Anyone operating with the spirit of anagkazo (the compelling drive) is able to achieve a lot for God.

One of the ways by which I assess leaders is to see how they handle the excuses of people. You see, I don't even have to ask young pastors what problems they have. I know the problems they must be having: the problem of some people coming this week and not coming the next week, the problem of people coming late to church and the problem of backsliding Christians! They also have the problem of new converts not remaining in church, the problem of not having enough time to pray and the problem of

not being able to do outreaches.

If you are a pastor, shepherd, or cell leader you will have experienced some of these problems. But, dear friend, the Bible teaches us that there is nothing new under the sun. The problem that you have, I have. **What differentiates the successful from the unsuccessful is the ability to overcome excuses.** Notice that the man in Luke 14 was not moved by any of the excuses and reasons given. He made a way out of every circumstance that was produced by the unwilling guests.

I believe in one thing; if you really *want* to do something you make *a way*, if you *do not want* to do something you make an *excuse*.

## **They Came to Party**

I recall when many young people were unwilling to come to church. The young men especially, made all sorts of excuses. The spirit of ‘anagkazo’ rose up in me and I said, “If they will not come to church, let us have parties for them.”

We organized a party for the young people in one area of the city. We made invitation cards and distributed them to the youth in the community. They were very happy and said to themselves, “This is another opportunity to jam.”

I remember that evening in particular, we played upbeat Christian music and danced with the unbelievers. One of them told me later that he wondered why they were not being served with beer. At a point in the party, we switched

to slower music and we said we had an announcement to make.

By that time, many of the hardened unbelievers were sitting around. To their surprise, I got up and preached the Gospel to them. They were surprised but they still gave their lives to Christ. Many were born-again that night. I have pastors in the church who were saved during some of these surprise evangelistic parties. You see, the Bible says by *all* means, “save some”.

*Anagkazo* means ‘to compel and to drive’ people to God. An *anagkazo* person is not moved by unfavorable circumstances. We were not moved by the fact that these young men did not want to attend church. We made a way around that! Learn to make a way where there’s no way. Find a way to overcome every excuse that people place before you.

## **Step #8**

### ***He Goes Out of His Normal Circles of Life.***

Everyone has a circle of friends. The usual thing is to stay within your circle of friends and acquaintances. However, anyone who wants to be used by God must move out of his regular group. You will notice that the *anagkazo* man in this story was forced to move out of his normal circle of life. This is a reality that we must face if we want to please God!

## I Had My Circle

When I was growing up in Accra, I had a group of friends, a sort of elitist company made up of children of foreigners and other bourgeoisie. As a child I traveled first class on intercontinental flights and interacted mainly with the so-called upper echelon of society. I stayed in top hotels in international cities with my father. My hobbies were swimming and horse riding. You can imagine that in Ghana, where I come from, very few people have such pastimes.

However, there were hardly any Christians in these circles. When I got born-again, I found myself moving out of this circle into a very different group. I moved out into better company, different from what I knew.

The fact is, in order to please God I could not spend a lot of time in those circles anymore. There were simply no believers in that group. If you want to please God you will have to move out of your circle and get to know other groups of people.

**I know that the rich man in this story would not normally fellowship with people who live in hedges or who stand on highways.** I know that the rich man in this story would not normally interact with cripples, the blind and the disabled. However, in order to achieve his goal, he had to interact with people of other social backgrounds.

I remember in 1984 when I was a leader of a nice fellowship at the university.

## **A Nice Little Fellowship**

We loved each other dearly and were good company for one another (actually, I found my wife in that group!). Many of the people that I knew in that little group are still my bosom friends up to this day. However, the Spirit of God impressed upon me to move out of our little group and go to people we didn't know.

I remember, some people were not in favor of expanding our nice little clique.

"If you bring in more people, we will lose something," they said. "There's something about a small fellowship. It's nice to be petite. It's a cute little family."

But I led this group into one outreach after another, driving and necessitating people to come to the Lord. I was never tired of preaching. **People are not tired of sinning, why should you be tired of spreading the Gospel?** During the second year of the medical school (which by the way is the most difficult year), I led this group in dawn broadcasts every Saturday morning. Everyone knew about us. They were used to our voices which rang out loud and clear every Saturday morning. "Thank God for our nice little fellowship," I said. "But we have to go out there and win souls." We must move out of our little circle.

## **People Are No Longer Impressed**

**There is a very important revelation I want you to catch – people become used to you after awhile. After**

awhile, unbelievers are no longer impressed with our sermons. If you do not rise up with a new approach, a new ‘anagkazo’ method, your message will become blunt.

As we continued preaching at dawn, I realized that people just turned over in their beds and ignored us. I said to myself, “Our messages are no longer driving people to the Lord.”

But the Spirit of the Lord gave me a bright idea.

### **Knock On Their Doors!**

Since the people were now so used to our voices, we needed to do something new. I decided to send out a group to stand outside the doors of their rooms.

I told the preacher for the morning, “When you get to the altar call, we will start knocking on their doors.”

I told him, “Tell the people who are listening to you they are going to hear a knock on their door. If they want to accept Christ they should open up and we will come in and lead them to the Lord.”

The preacher followed my instructions. Suddenly, those who were ignoring us had to pay attention. We were knocking on their doors at 5 a.m.! Believe me, many were gloriously born-again during those morning broadcasts.

I vividly remember one brother in particular.

### **He Would Laugh at Us**

He would laugh at Christians as they spoke in tongues. He

made fun of the gift of speaking in tongues. This is someone who would get drunk and lie by one of the many ponds that litter the beautiful campus of the University of Ghana. That morning as my friend the evangelist preached and said, “Perhaps you are hearing a knock on your door. If you want to be born-again open your door and someone will come in and lead you to the Lord”, I happened to knock on the door of this person.

I was surprised when he opened the door and welcomed us in. He said, “I knew you would come here. Today is my day!” We prayed with him and he gave his heart to the Lord that very morning. To this day, this man is serving the Lord. I give glory to God for all the people that have been born-again as we have forcefully moved out to speak the Word. ‘Anagkazo’ works!

## **Step#9**

### ***The Anagkazo Man Is Not Satisfied As Long As There Is Still Room.***

A song that I love goes like this,

*There’s room at the cross for you.*

*There’s room at the cross for you.*

*Though millions have come, there’s still  
room for one.*

*There’s room at the cross for you.*

A pastor must never be satisfied as long as there is room in the church. The man in this story sent out his servants simply because there was room.

**...and yet there is ROOM.**

**Luke 14:22**

I believe that every church should arrange more chairs than people. The presence of empty pews should motivate the pastor to reach out until the house is full. The whole essence of evangelism is to have a full church.

**...compel [anagkazo] them to come in, THAT MY HOUSE MAY BE FILLED.**

**Luke 14:23**

Evangelism is not intended to be done in a vacuum. It should be related to church growth. All our efforts to lead people to the Lord should bear fruit. We must see our efforts filling church buildings.

Whatever the case, a minister must see that there is room at the cross for one more soul. I believe that if we have this mind, God will use us to fill the church.

I have never been satisfied with the size of my church. When we had ten people, I wanted twenty. When we had fifty, I dreamed of a hundred. When God gave me one hundred people, I thought to myself, "What would it be like if I had five hundred people?" When the church was numbered in the hundreds, I thought, "What would it be like if we had thousands?"

I think a pastor will get tired of preaching to the same few people after awhile. We must be motivated to have a fuller house. These words keep ringing in my soul, "That my house



may be filled!” “That my house may be filled!” Dear Christian friend, never forget that there is still room at the cross.

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***Practicing Anaideia and Biazio***

### **Biazio**

**Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent [biazio] take it by force.**

**Matthew 11:11,12**

Multitudes of non-Christians are hurtling down a broad street to hell. They sing, they dance, and they wine and dine. They do not give a hoot about the Gospel we preach! Many of us Christians live in our nice little world where we are oblivious to the reality of sinners going to hell.

I once worked as a sub-intern at the mortuary of the largest hospital in Ghana. Something struck me that I want to share with you. Every few minutes a car would park outside the mortuary. In that car was the body of a man sprawled in the back seat, or even sometimes in the boot (trunk).

I would stand at the main door of the mortuary as people brought in their loved ones and relatives who had died at home or on the street. These people were so sad and shaken. You must understand that only a few hours earlier they had been talking to a living person who was now gone forever. They were bringing their loved one to a fridge.

I noticed that there did not seem to be any particular time of the day when dead people were brought to this mortuary. As I stood there, God showed me that people were dying across the city *all the time*. Death is not reserved for early mornings or late nights. It happens at random.

A person who has never stood at the door of a mortuary will not know how common death is. How frequently people depart for eternity! Just as the Lord spoke to his prophets when they saw certain things, the Lord spoke to me when I stood at that door. He asked, “How many of these people do you think were saved?”

“I died for them, I gave up my life for them, but are they saved?”

Listen to me Christian friend. Many of our church bazaars, weddings, fellowships and nice choirs are not enough to win the multitudes to Christ. As I said earlier,

people are hurtling down the road of destruction. They do not even know that they are going to hell.

## **They Heard the Music**

This reminds me of a war in which the prisoners were taken to large camps. They were stripped of their clothes and herded into huge gas chambers. As they filed in, their captors would play beautiful music for the prisoners. They heard the music. How soothing and refreshing it must have sounded. Surely nothing evil is going to happen to us, they thought. Little did they know that they were about to be slaughtered by the same people who were playing the music.

This is the lot of unbelievers today. They hear the music of the devil. The melodies and lullabies of this present world charm them. Because of these things, they do not know that they are walking to their own destruction.

**...as an ox goeth to the slaughter...**

### **Proverbs 7:22**

In Matthew 11:12, the Bible tells us that the violent take the kingdom of God by force. What does this mean?

The Twentieth Century New Testament puts it this way,

**...men using force have been seizing it...**

The William's Translation says,

**...men are seizing it as a precious prize...**

The Goodspeed translation says,

**...Men have been taking the kingdom of heaven by storm...**

The Weymouth translation says,

**...the kingdom of God has been enduring violent assault...**

All these scriptures tell us one thing. Gentle words, nice songs, lame sermons and docile choirs cannot help much in this indifferent and uninterested world. People don't want to know. They are deceived.

## **Church Games Will Not Help**

They don't care whether Jesus comes today or tomorrow. "Leave me alone," they say. "To hell with this church business of yours."

That is why we need what the Bible calls *biazo*. *Biazo* means to use force and to force one's way into a thing.

Many people are blinded by the devil. We must open their eyes to the realities of heaven and hell.

**...the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them...**

## **2 Corinthians 4:4**

Apostle Paul did not only give nice sermons. He was actively involved in turning the heads and opening the eyes of unbelievers.

I always know when people are ignoring the message. But I don't want anybody to ignore this important message – I must turn their heads and open their eyes. One particular morning, my group in the university found ourselves in a hall, preaching.

## **Call Out Their Room Numbers**

I realized that the young ladies (it was a ladies hall) were just turning over in their beds, some with their boy-friends. They knew that we would end our “disturbance” after a short while. The Spirit of God gave me a quick instruction on how to use biazio on that occasion.

He whispered, “Do not preach generally, but call out their room numbers and direct the preaching to individual rooms.”

I obeyed.

## **They Were Surprised**

I gave each of the dawn broadcasters four or five rooms to preach to. It was an amazing experience! The people were so surprised to hear their room numbers being mentioned. A voice was coming out in the darkness speaking very specifically to the occupants of particular rooms.

Everyone knew they were being addressed personally by God. Of course, some of them were very angry.

And some had their boyfriends sleeping in their rooms with

them. They could not help but hear a personal and direct message.

I remember that in response to this one lady ran out of her room, came downstairs, lifted up her hands and said, “I want to give my life to Christ today! I want to be born-again!”

Some were outraged, but some were saved. The Bible says,

**...blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.**

**Matthew 11:6**

### **Don't Preach to Yourself!**

When we have city-wide crusades, I stand on the platform and command my church members to go out into the community. We don't wait for them to come to us, we go out there and bring them from their homes.

One day, we even went to a “Red Light District” and brought a group of prostitutes to the crusade. I was very happy to see these prostitutes coming to the altar to give their lives to the Lord. You see, if we hadn't forced these women out of their “work places” and to the crusade, they would never have been saved. Most prostitutes do not go to church. They would have just gone about their daily routine. We would have ended up preaching to ourselves.

Christian friends, let's stop playing games. **If we are going to preach the Gospel, let's not preach to ourselves.**

Let's go out there and drive them in (anagkazo and biazō) to the Lord.

## Anaideia

**I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity [anaideia] he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.**

### Luke 11:8

In Luke 11 Jesus told us a story of a man who needed three loaves of bread. This man buried his shame and embarrassment and went to his friend's house at a very odd hour. The master of the house was woken up.

He might have shouted, "What is happening? Are there some armed robbers here? Is there a fire? What is going on outside?"

The servant of the house probably replied, "It's the neighbor. He says he wants some bread for his visitors."

Dear Christian friend, most of us would not disturb even our best friends at midnight. How much more to ask for something trivial like bread!

But Jesus' message here is very simple. If you are not ashamed to press for certain things, you will never achieve them. **If you are shameless in the work of God, you will accomplish things that others will only dream about!** God has shown me that people who are very concerned about their public image cannot achieve much for God.



## Are You Ashamed to Start a Church?

It takes ‘*anaideia*’ and shamelessness, to start a church. When I discussed with my friend the idea of starting a church, I remember he looked at me in amazement. He said, “What if people don’t come to the church? We will be so embarrassed. People in town will hear that we tried to start a church that didn’t work.”

By starting a church I don’t mean to break away with a large segment of someone else’s ministry. I am talking about moving into a room that has two or three people and preaching to them. **It takes shamelessness to tell these few people that they are now in a great church.** If you are not prepared to go through the shame and ridicule of standing in an empty room and looking odd, you will never achieve great things for God.

## Are You Ashamed?

One pastor told me he was afraid to do an altar call (inviting people to give their life to Christ). What if no one responds? Would you not feel ashamed? People will think that you are not anointed and that your message was not powerful enough. It is this very train-of-thought that keeps people away from powerful ministry.

One of my Elders called and told me that for the first time someone in the church had responded to her altar call. You see, she had been shamelessly doing altar calls with no one responding. But with *anaideia* (shamelessness and persistence) she eventually had results!

## **What If No One Gets Healed?**

The shameless man who asked for the bread, eventually accomplished his goal. I remember when I first began to pray for the sick. I was very worried about what people would think about me.

Many times whilst standing on stage, the devil would tell me, “Don’t even bother to call out for testimonies, no one will be healed.”

The devil told me, “Do not disgrace yourself any further. Just end the service here and send the people home.”

But the Spirit of the Lord rose up within me and I said to myself, “I am not ashamed. If no one gets healed this time, I will do it again, and again, and again! One day, someone will get healed.” I am glad to say that many have been healed.

After I had qualified from the medical school, I worked for one year as a medical doctor. At a point, the Lord began to speak to me about entering full-time ministry.

## **How Will I Survive?**

I argued with the Lord, “I will work and bring enough money to support the church.”

I continued, “What will people think of me. To leave such a noble profession and to enter a controversial area.” I told the Lord, “No one knows my church! And no one knows me!”

“Worst of all, what a shame it is for me to live off people’s collection.”

“That’s ridiculous! Why should people contribute their pennies for my upkeep? I find it degrading,” I thought.

However, the Lord told me, “They that preach the gospel must live off the gospel.”

**Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel.**

**1 Corinthians 9:14**

I had to bury my pride as a doctor and shamelessly enter full-time ministry. Through the revelation of shamelessness (*anaideia*), I have gone far in the ministry. I have achieved things, which no one ever thought would come out of me.

*Anaideia* (shamelessness) is the key you need to accomplish great things for God!





# Beauty

Dag Heward-Mills

**A Parchment House Publication**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING  
JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

**A Parchment House Publication**

ISBN 9988-7797-0-4  
3rd Edition

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book.

## **PREFACE**

“*I want to marry a beautiful girl.*” This is the unspoken cry of many young men.

However, many of these aspiring husbands do not know the ABC's of beauty.

It is my intention that this short but instructive lesson will show much of what there is to know about this subject.

Husbands and wives will also benefit from this lesson by learning what they can do to enhance beauty, maintain beauty, and sustain attractiveness through all the changing scenes of life.



## ***DEDICATION***

**I dedicate this book to my wife Adelaide, who is to  
me, the most beautiful woman on the earth!**

# ***Contents***

Beauty .....	1
Beauty Is Important .....	5
Everyone Is Beautiful .....	8
Beauty Lies In The Eyes Of The Beholder .....	11
Each Age Has It's Beauty .....	13
Beauty Is Like A Flower .....	15
Your Beauty Depends On Many Factors .....	18
External Beauty Depends On Internal Beauty .....	21
Beauty Is Given In Portions .....	23
Everyone Has One Portion .....	25
Spirituality Is Preferred To Beauty .....	27

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

## ***Chapter One***

# ***Beauty***

God is very concerned about whom you marry. And I'm not only referring to your marital happiness, but also to how your partner will influence you in the future. You see, life is very long. And marriage is a long, long road. There are many years ahead of the bride and groom after they say, "I do".

Many things are going to happen and much 'water is going to pass under the bridge'. **Will your marriage make you or break you?** This is what God is concerned about.

When God was instructing the Israelites, he was very concerned about whom they would marry. Because he did not want anyone to turn their hearts away from Him. **God knew that the wife would influence the husband and the husband would influence the wife.** I am a married man, I influence my wife and my wife influences me. It's as simple as that.

Sometimes men think that as the head of the home they will always lead the way. **But you must realise that if you are married your wife will influence you.**

Solomon was a great man. He had seven hundred wives and three hundred 'official' girlfriends. (Imagine how many outdoorings and baby dedications he probably had to attend!).

Solomon was a wise man. One day Solomon prayed to God in a way that really touched God's heart. He didn't ask for money or a new car; he rather asked God to give him wisdom to be a good pastor. God was so touched that He decided to give Solomon more wisdom as well as all the riches he did not ask for.

My brother, can you see that Solomon really loved God? Can you see that he was really called of God? **And yet, in his latter years Solomon began to backslide. He became a fetish worshipper. He became an idol seeker. He left the ministry and resigned from his church.**

**For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his**

**heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the**

**heart of David his father.**

**1Kings 11:4.**

He started well, but ended badly. How could this happen to Solomon? The answer is simple. **Solomon married the wrong women!**

First of all, some of his wives were not Christians. Secondly, although some of them were Christians, they were lukewarm. Some of his girlfriends did not love the ministry as much as he did. Remember, Solomon had the purest of motives. No one ever prayed like Solomon did.

Some of the ladies just loved the glamour of being married to King Solomon. They didn't mind being the 21st or 75th wife. All they wanted was the position (many women are position-minded).

After many years, the effect of the wrong marriages and wrong relationships began to tell. Solomon was not as strong as he was before. **He couldn't continue quarrelling with his wives over church. Solomon was tired of arguing about where to go for fellowship.**

Solomon wanted peace in his old age. So he just 'flowed' with his backslidden wives.

My dear friend, if this is what happened to Solomon whose name is in the Bible, what do you think will happen to you? If you make the mistake of marrying for the wrong reason you will live to regret it.

This book is also about choosing a wife. When a young man goes out to find a wife, he often looks for certain qualities. The spiritual brothers will say, “Oh, I love her, because she’s so spiritual.”

The aristocratic brothers will say, “Oh, I love her, because she’s so educated.”

The Goobley-Gob tribe will say, “I love her because she speaks my language fluently.”

**But there is one thing that all men look for — whether they admit it or not. And that is BEAUTY. Every man wants to marry a beautiful girl.**

As I said before, God wants you to marry a beautiful person. But His primary concern for you is whether or not the person you marry will one day turn your heart away from Him.

**The person you marry is not only a matter of life here on earth, but also a matter of *Heaven or Hell*.**

Marriage is something you must not take lightly or wantonly, but soberly and in the fear of the Lord — duly considering the causes for which marriage was ordained.

Since one of the cardinal things most men and women look for is physical beauty, it’s important for every Christian to understand the subject of beauty.

I want to share with you, ten important attributes that every Christian should know about beauty.

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***Beauty is Important***

*... beauty is vain...*

*Prov. 31: 30.*

From this verse, you might conclude that when the Bible says beauty is vain, it means it is not important. But that isn't true. **Beauty is vain, but very important.**

Why then is beauty vain? Beauty is vain because it will fade.

An elderly lady once came to my church to minister. She took out a photograph of a very beautiful young girl and asked the congregation who it was.



Everyone said the photograph was a picture of her daughter. Her reply was a big surprise.

She revealed that *she* was actually the one in the photograph. This elderly lady had changed so much with the passage of time. Her beauty had virtually faded away.

The old lady said, “Look how ugly my face has become.”

She went on to make the point that life was like a vapour, appearing for a short while and then disappearing.

**I realised from that day that beauty was really something that was temporary. Beauty is vain because it will fade.**

If all you look for in a marriage partner is beauty, then when the beauty begins to decrease with the years; you will look for another beautiful face.

**Although beauty fades away, it is still important, because whoever you marry must look nice to you!**

After all, you will look upon her until you die.

This is the secret every woman must know. Your beauty is important in getting and keeping your husband’s attention.

**If you had to look good to get him, then you will have to look good to keep him!!**

Some Christians who feel they are spiritual, make the mistake of closing their eyes in the choice of a partner. They think that when they refuse to use their physical senses in the choice of a partner, they are being led by the Spirit.

**Some people will never admit that the beauty and attractiveness of the young lady were crucial in making their decision.** They think such an admission means that they are carnally minded.

But the Bible tells us,

*...she[or he] is at liberty to marry whom she will...*

*1 Cor. 7:39.*

You must marry somebody whom you want to marry!

Don't marry somebody just because she was recommended to you. You must be satisfied and happy with what you see. *You* are going to live with *that* person. **Marriage is not something you must endure but something you must enjoy.**

You must marry somebody who looks nice to you!

When I first met my wife I thought she was the most beautiful person I had ever seen. And I still think she is. Her physical beauty has always been important in my attraction to her. Beauty will count in your happiness and satisfaction in marriage.

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***Everyone is Beautiful***

Everyone is beautiful. There is nobody who is not beautiful in one way or the other.

*I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made...*

*Psalm 139:14.*

**Everyone has some beauty about him or her.** You should never think that you are not beautiful. God took time to design you, to create your nose just the way it is. Perhaps He made your ears small, and your lips as full as they are.

**God has not made you a disappointment or a disaster.  
He doesn't make such things.**

If you are short, short is beautiful. If you are black, being black is beautiful, and if you are white, being white is equally beautiful.

*I am black, but comely...*

*Songs 1:5.*

I don't know what you are, but God made you that way. Look at yourself in the mirror, and admire yourself.

There is no need to change any part of your body. There are women who have undergone surgery to enlarge their breasts. The irony is that there are other women who are also having surgery to reduce the size of theirs!

Accept what you are, and believe that you are beautiful because God made you. Some ladies think of themselves as ugly because someone teased them when they were kids.

Maybe in school they gave you names. So although you have grown into a beautiful young lady, you still believe you look like a sparrow.

Don't listen to those lies; they are just jealous of you. **When people tease you, they are probably jealous of you.** Because you have something they don't have and they envy you.

You must begin to appreciate beauty in everything that God has made. Some people are not happy with what they have. But there is beauty in every man and in every woman.

Look at yourself in the mirror, and admire yourself. There is no need to change any part of your body.

It's funny that those who are short want to be tall, so they constantly wear high-heeled shoes. And those who are tall think they are too tall and wish they could be a little shorter!

You must know that you are beautiful the way you are. **Look at yourself in the mirror again and say, "Lord, I thank you because I'm beautifully and wonderfully made!"**

## *Chapter Four*

# ***Beauty Lies in The Eyes of the Beholder***

In other words, beauty depends on who is looking.

As an African, I have often wondered about how similar the Chinese look. Many times, I have not been able to tell the difference between two Chinese women. To me, they are all alike — they have the same eyes, same face, and same skin colour. This is my perception.

However, a Chinese man will be able to see the difference. **To him some of the Chinese ladies are strikingly beautiful. And some are even ugly. But to me they are all the same.**

In the same way, a Korean may not be able to tell the difference between two Ghanaians. So we judge beauty by what we have been taught by our society. Our environment affects our perception.

The typical African will be looking for certain physical features before concluding that a woman is beautiful. He may be looking at how plump she is, how big her backside is and how fat her legs are! The European might be looking at almost the opposite. He may be looking for what is thin and tall!

I chose my wife because, to me, she is beautiful. Beauty therefore depends on who is looking. Be confident about your choice, since it depends on you. In Europe, some Ghanaians are noted for using passports belonging to others when they want to dodge immigration. Sometimes, they go unapprehended, because the European immigration officers cannot even tell the difference between two Ghanaians.

Some Africans have realised that if they frown, the immigration officers cannot tell from the passport pictures who they really are!

A friend wanted my opinion about the lady he was contemplating marrying. He thought the lady was not really beautiful.

I was totally surprised, because to me she was pretty.

Everyone has a different judgement concerning beauty.

**Beauty depends on who is looking. So be confident about your choice.**

## ***Chapter Five***

# ***Each Age Has It's Beauty***

There is the beauty of a sixteen-year-old girl that a thirty-year-old woman does not have. There is the beauty of a thirty-year-old woman which is different from that of a sixteen-year-old. There is a beauty of the forty-two year old lady, and another beauty of a fifty-six-year old.

**At each age, a person possesses a particular beauty.** Therefore there is no need to wish that your wife or husband would be sixteen years old again.



**There are men who are married to beautiful thirty-year-old women, and yet when left alone their eyes hover all over for teenagers.** At a point they begin to think that their wives are not beautiful.

But they don't realize that each age has it's own type of beauty, which cannot be repeated. You cannot become young again!

The beauty of each age was created by God.

You can never rewind to the beauty of a past age. You cannot go backward and you cannot go forward. You are what you are.

Some people think that you can only be beautiful when you are very young. But that is not true. I know some beautiful fifty-year old ladies. And I know some beautiful sixty-year old ladies. I have even seen beautiful seventy-year-old women.

**Exploit that beauty corresponding to whatever age you are.**

## **Chapter Six**

# ***Beauty is Like a Flower***

*...if she pass the FLOWER of her age, and need so require ...let them marry.*

*1 Cor. 7:36*

Beauty has a point at which it blossoms like a beautiful flower. Most plants have a flowering stage. And the plant which flowers is the one that is attractive to both insects and humans.

The same can be said about a woman. There is that age in a woman's life we call the flower of her age, or the flower of her beauty.

**That is when you are most noticeable. That is when you are most beautiful, and when men propose to you.**

For some women, this stage comes for a short while, but for others the period is longer. **Unfortunately, the development of the mind and maturity of most Christian sisters do not correspond to the development of their beauty.** This leads many of them to reject the right partner.

When they are at this stage, a brother may propose to marry them. They would laugh it off because at that time others may have already proposed. So many brothers come their way during this period.

Just because you are in the flower of your age should not make you laugh at people who want to marry you. You keep tossing the suitors away. You make jokes about them. You show others the letters they wrote to you.

**But what you don't know is that this period does not last forever.**

You must not only use your emotions. You need to use your mind. Rely on the Spirit of God and wise counsel to know *when* to marry and *whom* to marry.

**Remember that the peak of your beauty is indeed like a flower — it is temporary.**

A Christian once said, “When a brother proposes to you, don’t just throw him off. You must marry somebody with bright eyes for the future.”

When my wife first saw me, I was wearing a blue and white striped T-shirt, and a pair of jeans. That was my standard attire on the university campus.

I wore that everyday. But my wife looked beyond that and said to herself, **“This man must have bright eyes for the future.”**

I have counselled ladies who wept because they were single at an age when they could have been married. This is very common! When I asked, “Why did you ‘bounce’ that brother?” They replied, “Pastor, I don’t even know why I did that!”

You must not only use your emotions; you must use your mind. You must think logically! You must use the Spirit of God and wise counsel in deciding when and whom to marry.

**When a Christian brother proposes to you, don’t just laugh him off because he doesn’t have a car.**

I look at some of Ghana’s presidents and leaders. Some years ago, some of them were probably hustlers. Who would want to marry a nobody? But when they became leaders their wives were probably glad they married them.

I want you to realise that your beauty is not going to last forever. **A time will come when you will want to marry anything that is wearing trousers.**

Dear sister, be wise and receive counsel before it is too late!

## ***Chapter Seven***

# ***Your Beauty Depends On Many Factors***

Everyone God has made is beautiful. But this beauty can be enhanced by several factors. Beauty depends on your hair, your dressing, your make-up, and even the time of day.

*But if a woman have long hair, it is a GLORY to her...*

*1 Cor. 11:15.*

As a brother looking for a beautiful wife you must remember that the beauty you see in that lady can increase or decrease depending on certain things.

A lady's dress today may make her look outstanding. Her hair style tomorrow may make her loose marks.

**Even the entire happiness of the lady affects her looks! Pimples are often caused by emotional disturbance.**

I tell my wife how I like her hair. To me she looks nicer in certain hair styles. I tell my wife how to do her hair. When she does it the wrong way I tell her, "No, I don't like it that way." After all, who is she looking beautiful for?

Since I am her husband, she desires to please *me* and no-one else.

If you are a wise husband, invest in your wife's clothes. **Do whatever you have to do to make her look even more beautiful. You will reap what you sow.** If you sow into your wife's clothes, you will reap great dividends. Beauty depends on many factors, so invest in those factors.

**Years after the wedding, Christian wives and husbands must still look attractive.**

The Christian wife should not use pregnancy and babies as an excuse for being careless about her looks.

Some of you husbands don't even care what your wives look like! **But you admire other people's wives on television. What a shame!**

As a good husband you must also be concerned about which dress your wife wears. Because her beauty also depends on her dressing.

I want to tell all women to make every attempt to dress nicely. Some dresses just don't look good on certain women! The fact that you see somebody wearing that dress doesn't mean that if *you* also wear it, it will look nice on you.

**Beauty is very variable.**

Many young men become confused about the looks of their fiance/beloved. They wonder, "Is this girl beautiful?"

**They oscillate in their feelings towards her. What is happening here is that they are confused by the apparent variations in beauty.**

If all that you are looking for in a woman is physical beauty you are likely to be confused.

Beauty also depends on money. The more money you have, the more you can invest in making your wife beautiful.

**So Christian husband, here is another reason why you should prosper — beauty!**

## ***Chapter Eight***

# ***External Beauty Depends On Inner Beauty***

Outward beauty depends on the inward beauty.

**If you are beautiful inside it shows on the outside.** Sometimes I see people and I know that spiritually they are not doing well. I saw two pictures of a lady who had converted from witchcraft to Christ. One photograph showed her when she was practicing witchcraft, and the other when she had accepted Christ. **They were two different people.**

**When you are doing well spiritually, the beauty of it shows outwardly.**



Proverbs 7:11-27 describes a strange woman who is very attractive on the outside, but very stubborn and loud. *Such a person is beautiful outside but ugly in character and emotions.*

Some people, especially unbelievers try to polish their outside whilst they are so nasty on the inside. **Young men, look for the inner beauty. The Bible calls it “a meek and quiet spirit”.**

A beautiful wife once threatened to slap her husband in public. She was definitely a beauty on the outside but a tigress on the inside.

**Look at what is inside in addition to the outward appearance, because it is the two things together that make a person truly beautiful.**

Young men, do not be impressed by what you see on the outside. Look out for the *inner* beauty. In spite of the fact that my wife is *physically* beautiful to me, I saw something *inside* her that attracted me — the inner beauty. When a person has a good spirit, and a good heart, it adds to the person’s beauty.

## ***Chapter Nine***

# ***Beauty is Given in Portions***

*Live joyfully with the wife whom thou lovest all the days of your life for... that is your portion.*

*Eccl. 9:9*

You need to realise that beauty comes in portions. Everyone has a portion, but nobody has it all. Your portion is what you are entitled to. **Your portion will include some things, while excluding others.** You can't have a black and a white wife in one person.

Your wife may be an excellent cook, but she could have problems with being a hostess when your friends come home. **That is your portion, and God expects you to be content with her.**

You may know a friend's wife who is very good when visitors come home. You may admire the way she receives, chats and talks with the guests. You may appreciate her confidence and range of knowledge on political issues. But you may find that she is not able to cook very well. Her stews may be like soups, and her soups like stews!

But God expects you to be content with your wife, including her weaker points. Be content!

**No matter how hard you look, you will find out that your portion has it's strong points and its weak points.**

Now the Bible says, **enjoy life with your portion. You can't have it all. So accept your portion and enjoy it. Because that is the way God intended it to be.**

## ***Chapter Ten***

# ***Everyone Has Only One Portion***

Don't reach out for somebody's portion because everyone is entitled to only one portion. One man, one woman. Remember the Genesis story:

*And the Lord God said, It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.*

*Gen. 2:18.*

Adam had only one portion — Eve, and not Eves.

Adam was not given Rose, Rosemond, Rosalyn, Rosemary, or Roseanne. He was given only Eve.

In this age of promiscuity, the Christian must truly stand fast in God's Word by staying forever faithful to his portion.

You are not allowed to have two portions. When you go to a party and you have been served with some food, you may realise that your portion of rice is larger than your neighbour's. But if you look closely, you will find that your neighbour's piece of chicken is larger than yours. **But you dare not stretch out your hand to take your neighbour's portion of chicken,** because you have your own portion. If you take someone else's portion, you are a 'bush man'!

That is exactly how God sees you when you are not satisfied with your portion of wife or husband. He sees you as a 'bush person'!

You must learn to be satisfied with the portion that God has given you.

## ***Chapter Eleven***

# ***Spirituality is Preferred to Beauty***

*...beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the Lord,  
she shall be praised.*

*Prov. 31:30.*

The Bible compares beauty with someone who fears God.  
**If you ever have to choose between beauty and  
spirituality, choose the latter.**

Your portion may not be so beautiful, but very spiritual.  
This is to be preferred. She may have certain godly  
characteristics. Choose that!

If ever you are faced with such a decision don't hesitate to choose the godly woman, **because it is the woman who fears the Lord who will be praised.**

When you have to make a choice, it may look as though the person's beauty is more important. But when you enter the marriage, you will come to see that beauty is always secondary to godliness.

**The spiritual person who knows and fears God will become more and more attractive to you as the years go by.**

**Beauty has very little to offer, apart from what you see.** But the spiritual person has her faithfulness, her character, and godliness to offer to you.

You may not believe it, but just ask those who have gone a bit further down the road in life, "Which one is more important?"

Beauty or character?

Beauty or spirituality?

Beauty or integrity?

If your wife does not pray, you are in trouble.

Find a woman who prays. Find a woman who is deep into the things of God. If you marry a greedy, selfish, and lazy woman you will find yourself living in hell. You will suffer, not because she is not outwardly beautiful, but because she is ugly inwardly.

A person who is ugly inside but beautiful outside can be compared to a cemetery.

A cemetery is well decorated with flowers. But you come a little closer and go deeper. You will see dead men's bones and teeth sticking out. **This can be related to the woman without character; from the outside, she looks nice but go a little further and you will find an angry, lazy, and devilish person.**

Be careful, my brother. Go for the spiritual person.

**GODLINESS IS INDEED TO BE  
PREFERRED TO BEAUTY!**





## ***Chapter One***

# ***What It Means To Be To be Born Again***

- 1. There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:**
- 2. The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.**
- 3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**

## **7. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.**

**John 3:1-3,7.**

In this passage, Jesus had a discussion with a man called Nicodemus. Jesus was at home one night when Nicodemus came to him.

Nicodemus was a very important person in town. He could have been a Member of Parliament or the Chairman of the Metropolitan Assembly.

Perhaps, he was a patron of the Methodist Church, the Catholic Church or the Lighthouse Church.

He was a very important person. The Bible says he was a ruler of the Jews, a master of Israel, a leader in the synagogues.

Nicodemus would not come to see Jesus during the day. He came at night, so that all the people who respected him would not see him.

This prominent Jewish leader said something to Jesus, which prompted Him to give an interesting reply.

When you look at the passage, you wonder why Jesus said all that he said to the man. **After all, Nicodemus did not ask him, “How can I go to heaven?”**

He said to Jesus,

**“Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.”**

In other words, this man told Jesus that he recognized

Him as a great man of God.

But Jesus saw right through him and replied, “You must be born again.”

Jesus saw right through him and replied; **“You are a good person. I know you pay tithes and fast often. You are a Pharisee, and a ruler of the Jews, but you still need to be born again!”**

Now, the question we have to ask ourselves is this: **Why did Jesus tell this man that he had to be born again? “Why did he launch out into this sermon?”**

There are lots of people doing all sorts of religious things. These things look ‘Christian’, but they are not. Such people are not born again.

**Being born again is one of the distinctive features of the Christian faith.**

There is no religion that requires you to be born again. All the other major religions instruct you to **do this, do that; pray, read your Qur’an, read the book; kneel down, fast; don’t drink, don’t smoke; don’t chase men, don’t chase women...**

There is however, no religion that claims to give an inner new birth. **Christianity stands alone in this claim!**

The word ‘*born*’ means **to be produced or created. Therefore, to be born again means ‘to be produced or created again.’**

**To understand what it means to be born again, we can look at what being born again is not!**

To understand the Bible better, I often try to view the opposite of what is written. This can be very revealing. For example:

‘Seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.’

The opposite of this is: **“Seek ye not first the Kingdom of God, and all these things shall not be added unto you”**.

It’s as simple as that. If you don’t seek *first* the kingdom of God, you cannot expect God to give you the things you need.

So, to understand the concept of being born again, we are going to look at **twenty things that are NOT the same as being born again**.

## *Chapter Two*

# ***Twenty Things That Are Not The Same As Being Born Again***

### **1. ADMIRING MIRACLES**

Admiring miracles is not the same as being born again. Whenever there is a miracle worker, large crowds gather. These crowds are often not stable crowds, they only gather for a reason – and for a season.

When Jesus Himself organised miracle crusades, large crowds gathered. But when He began teaching certain hard truths, He was deserted by all, except the twelve disciples (John 6).

**Both good and bad people admire miracles.** My wife once told me of some friends in America. Though they were not born again, they really enjoyed watching TV

programmes which featured miracle working tele-evangelists.

In my country Ghana today, there are crowds of miracle-seeking people flocking the churches. But I'm sad to say that many of them are not born again.

However deep your admiration for miracles is, *it is not* the same as being born again.

Jesus says to the admirer of miracles, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **2. BEFRIENDING ‘MEN OF GOD’**

Nicodemus got acquainted with Jesus and became His friend. In the same way, there are lots of people who have become friends of pastors and other men of God.

You might have pastors as friends, but Jesus didn't say, “Except a man has a pastor as his friend...”. He did say,

**“Except a man be born again he cannot see the Kingdom of God.”**

Jesus says to the man who befriends a man of God, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **3. SENDING MONEY TO CHURCH**

Sending money to church is not the same as being born

again. I know people who for ages have given money to churches, but that is not a substitute for being born again.

Other people also donate heavily towards special church projects such as harvests, (a type of fund-raising practiced in some churches in Ghana) in order to become ‘Harvest Kings’ and ‘Queens.’

**No matter how much money you contribute to the church, you still need to be born again.**

It is good to give to God. **However, if you give expecting to be given special treatment at the gates of Heaven, then you are mistaken.**

God is not a corrupt customs officer you can tip to let you into Heaven. **Your money can’t buy you a ticket to Heaven. You must be born again!**

The Bible gives an account of those who thought their *good works* could save them on the Judgement Day. They were certain that they were known by God. But on that day, they had the shock of their lives when God told them,

**...I never knew you...**

**Matt 7:23.**

Jesus says to the Harvest King and Queen, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **4. JOINING A CHURCH**

Joining a church is not the same as being born again.



## **You can join a church and still not be born again!**

I have been in church all my life. But I did not get born again until I got to form three in Achimota Secondary School.

Everybody in my country, Ghana, has at one time or the other, associated himself with a church — especially as they get older and know they are about to die. In a ‘religious’ country such as Ghana, only a few people would say they do not want to belong to a church.

**So you could easily be a member of a church, (because you want to be buried by that church) and not be born again.**

Jesus says to the church member; **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **5. PLAYING A ROLE IN CHURCH**

Playing a role in church is not the same as being born again.

There are several people who play various roles in church. For instance, the choristers sing to prepare the hearts of the congregation for the sermon. However, a chorister can dutifully play this role without being born again.

Once during an altar call in our church, some choristers responded to the call to give their lives to Christ. **This means they were members of the choir, but were not born again.**

So it is very possible to play a prominent role in church without being born again. A person who is not born again may join a church, get involved in church activities and even become a priest.

There are priests standing behind the ‘sacred desks’ in many churches who are not even born again!

Jesus says to the priests and the choristers, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **6. PRAYING EVERYDAY**

Praying everyday is not the same as being born again.

When I was a child, I once approached a priest and asked him, **“Sir, how can I go to heaven?”**

And do you know what he told me? **“My son, pray ‘Hail Mary’ three times a day, and ‘Our Father’ once a day, and you will go to Heaven.”**

I thanked him, and began to pray everyday, reciting The ‘Lord’s Prayer’ and ‘Hail Mary’. **Oh, how I prayed! But, that was not the way to salvation. I diligently followed my priest’s instructions but I was still not born again.**

A minister of God shared an experience he had when he was a teenager. He said he had been a religious person, but at a point in his life he became seriously sick and died on his bed.

When he died, he saw himself going down. As he went deeper and deeper, he started protesting, **“But I pray everyday, I go to church every Sunday.”** But he heard a

voice telling him, **“YOU ARE NOT BORN AGAIN!”**

Meanwhile his mother, a born again Christian was interceding for him.

Finally, when he got to a part of hell, he saw a horrible-looking creature that lifted its hand to receive him. However, God delivered him, and he came back to life.

Then, at another time, he fell sick and died again, but by then he had gotten born again. **This time round, when he died he went up.** And a voice told him to go back because he had not finished his work on earth. He came back to life, and is now a man of God.

You may be as religious as this man was, but if you are not born again, you will die and go to hell. **Simply praying to God is not a substitute to being born again!**

Jesus says to the man who dutifully prays everyday, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **7. READING THE BIBLE**

Reading the Bible is not the same as being born again. Some of us can easily be deceived into thinking that a person is a born again Christian just because he quotes the scriptures.

**You may be able to quote the Bible from Genesis to Revelation. This does not mean that you are born again.**

I notice that during election year in Ghana, some politi

cians mount political platforms and quote scriptures to us. Why do they do this? They are trying to give us an impression that they are born again. **They want the votes of the born again Christians. But you see, we know them by their fruits.** We know that their quoting of Bible passages is no guarantee to us that they are born again.

There are even theologians who have doctorate degrees, but are not born again.

Jesus says to the theologian, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **8. BEING BAPTIZED**

Baptism is not the same as being born again. Jesus himself commanded us to be baptized, but he said baptism should *follow* salvation.

**...Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved...**

**Mark 16:15,16.**

Now notice that baptism follows believing. You have to believe before you are baptized. It has become the tradition to baptize children when they are eight days old. **How can you believe when you are eight days old?**

**Baptism is immersion in water – a sign to yourself and the people around that you are now born again.**

The ‘old man’ of sin goes down and the ‘new man’ comes out. This is a sign of what has happened inside. That is

why baptism is supposed to be done in public, *after* you are born again.

We say baptism is a sign, because when you are born again, nothing actually happens physically for those around you to see.

**So being baptized becomes a physical sign of what happened inside.**

Sometimes you meet people who think baptism is the same as being born again. They think it is done in order to enable one to join a church. **I once asked someone, “Are you born again?” His reply was, “No, I have not yet been baptized.”**

He had it all wrong. He needed to be born again first.

I was baptized after I got born again. But I was also baptised when I was an eight-day-old baby. **My baptism as a baby did not do anything for me. I just became a *wet* baby.**

Jesus says to the baptized unbeliever, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **9. BEING CONFIRMED**

Being confirmed is not the same as being born again.

In some churches a person is baptized when he is eight-days-old. It is expected that when he grows up he will

come back to church to *confirm* his Christianity. This is what is known as ‘Confirmation.’

I think that what really happened is this: At some point in the development of Christianity, people felt that they were big-shots — too big to be immersed publicly in water. It was humiliating for them to be put into water publicly.

I believe it was arranged for people to be baptized as children. Then, when they grew up, they were confirmed.

**The result of all this is a lot of confirmed unbelievers on their way to hell.**

Jesus says to the confirmed unbeliever, “**Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.**”

## **10. TAKING HOLY COMMUNION**

Taking Holy Communion is not the same as being born again.

It does not matter how much of the communion wine you drink, or the bread you eat. **IT IS NOT THE SAME AS BEING BORN AGAIN.**

Communion is actually meant for born again Christians, who eat the bread and drink the wine in remembrance of Christ’s death.

**However, it is now common to find Reverend Ministers serving communion to die-hard sinners who are approaching the gates of hell, on their death bed.**

What is communion going to do to a dying sinner? He needs to know that he should be born again!

A whole crate of wine and a big loaf of bread which has been left in the Cathedral until it becomes 'holy' may be served to a sinner. But it will not take him to Heaven.

Jesus says to the man who takes Holy Communion regularly, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **11. BEING IN A CHRISTIAN FAMILY**

Being in a Christian family is not the same as being born again. I was brought up in a '*Christian*' family. So when I was an eight-day-old baby, I was baptized, then confirmed later.

I was also given a Bible and a hymn book by my god-mother in England. But it just gathered dust on the shelf.

Now, by this, you realise that I was in the church with my family for years until I became born again.

**I was not brought up in a Muslim home, where they do not believe in Jesus. But there was still a definite point in my life when I got born again.**

I realise that for many people in the younger generation, the first genuine interaction they had with Christianity was one that challenged them to be born again.

But I find that those who are a bit older or more orthodox are surprised (like Nicodemus), when they are told they must be born again.

They have been devoted ‘Christians’ all their lives, probably singing all the hymns, songs and doxologies they know.

If after serving the Lord sincerely over the years, some young man comes along to tell them that they need to be born again, I can understand their surprise.

But, Jesus still says to the man who had ‘Christian’ upbringing, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## 12. USING CHRISTIAN JARGON

Using Christian jargon is not the same as being born again.

What do we mean by Christian jargon?

There are some words and phrases you notice amongst Christians, such as: **“Praise the Lord”, “Hallelujah”, “Glory”, “Be blessed”, “Amen, Brother!”, etc.**

I have worked with people in various Christian groups, sometimes with musicians. There are times I have felt that some of these people were not really born again.

I doubted if they were really Christians, yet they were so rich in Christian jargon. When they met you, they knew exactly what they were supposed to say.

I remember once there was a Christian wedding. This wedding was being held on the university campus. Now, during the ceremony some vandals began screaming from their windows, **“GLORY! GLORY! AMEN, BROTHER!”** They virtually disrupted the wedding with



their shouts of Christian jargon. This obviously cannot mean that they were born again.

Jesus says to the man rich in Christian jargon, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

### **13. DENOMINATIONALISM**

‘Denominationalism,’ or ‘Churchianity’, is not the same as being born again.

**Being a member of one of the great denominations of our day does not make you a born again Christian.**

You may be in the Lighthouse Church, but be an unbeliever. In the same way, you may be in the Methodist Church, but simply be a Methodist unbeliever.

The Catholic Church is a very powerful denomination whose members are very devoted.

In my estimation, other churches are not as devoted and as charitable as the Catholic Church. In the north of Ghana, you will see some of the great things the Catholic Church has done for the world.

When I was in the medical school, I had the opportunity to learn first hand about the Catholic Relief Services. This great denomination has wonderful social, medical, and relief services.

**The Catholic Church is a denomination I really respect.** It is very true that no Charismatic church has done one-half or a tenth of what the Catholic church has done (in terms of material, education, and social helps).

God bless their hearts for all their efforts. **However, it is my duty to inform all Catholics that they must be born again. Being part of your great denomination does not mean that you are born again. Sorry!**

Jesus says to the member of a great denomination, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **14. BEING A MORALIST**

Being a moralist is not the same as being born again. There are some people who are very moral. **But having good morals is not the same as being born again.**

There are some people who would for instance, never break their marriage vows. I once spoke to an unbeliever, who belonged to an occult group.

**This man told me, “I have been married for 17 years but I have never been unfaithful to my wife.”** I have been up and down. People have put pressure on me because I married somebody from another country.”

He went on to say, **“Even though my wife cannot have a child, I will not be unfaithful to her.”**

**This is a test many born again Christians may not be able to pass.** You would find that men would commonly divorce their barren wives in order to have a child.

**But listen, being such a moralist does not mean you are born again.** I congratulate you for your morality. I respect you for the fact that you never commit adultery or

fornication. I am glad that you do not read pornography or chase prostitutes. But I must still inform you that you must be born again!

Nicodemus was a moralist, that's why he was so surprised when Jesus told him that he needed to be born again.

Jesus says to the moralist, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **15. BEING PRINCIPLED**

Being principled is not the same as being born again.

Some people are very principled. They will not cheat you, even if they have the opportunity to do so.

Sometimes in examination situations, people cheat. But such principled people will not have anything to do with it!

In school, there were some students who did not belong to the Scripture Union. Yet, they lived such principled lives. They wouldn't even say anything negative about SU members, but they just wouldn't be born again.

I had a friend like that. A very principled guy, but whenever I talked to him about Christ, he would just look at me with an expressionless face.

**I have never found it more difficult to bring to Christ, someone who is principled, has good morals, but is not born again!**

Hard-core sinners are more aware that they need God. I

was once walking with a young man who told me, “Pastor, I can’t live without prostitutes! I must visit the prostitutes at least twice a day.”

Such a person is more likely to think that he needs to be born again. On the other hand, a very principled person sees no reason why he must be saved. **Their excuse is often, “Why? I am a good person, why should I change?”**

There are many doctors who will never involve themselves in the practice of illegal abortion. These are principled doctors who are not even born again. They simply refuse to do it. To them, abortion is murder. **Yet, even such principled doctors need to be born again.**

Jesus says to the principled man, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **16. BEING RESPECTABLE**

Being respectable is not the same as being born again.

Indeed, you may have appeared respectable for years. All your life you may have been singled out and given leadership responsibilities, such as being the school prefect.

Perhaps, you are a person in authority now. You could be the President of a country, a Parliamentarian, a Minister of State, a King, a Chief, a headmaster or headmistress. Such positions are held in high esteem.

Do not be deceived. That respect accorded you does

not mean you are born again.

Jesus says to the President, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **17. BEING POPULAR**

Being popular or famous is not the same as being born again.

I remember in Achimota Secondary School, there was this particular boy who was extremely short. Whenever he walked in or out of any school gathering, there was a great uproar, as everybody cheered him on. He was a very popular guy. But he still needed to be born again!

You may be popular. People may hail you everywhere you go, but you still need to be born again! There are some popular politicians. In spite of their popularity they must still be born again!

People may like you. Everybody may be pleased with you. **Yet, being liked is not the same as being born again.**

Jesus says to the popular man, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **18. OBEYING A NEW SET OF RULES**

Being born again is not the same as obeying a new set of rules.

When you join a club, you may be presented with a

new set of rules. An example of such a group is a Keep Fit Club or an Old Boys Association.

Such associations often have mottos, or what is perceived as their guiding principle. My wife's former school, Wesley Girls' High School, a prominent Methodist Girls' High School in my country, has as its motto: **'Live pure, speak true, right wrong and follow the King'.**

This set of rules may be your guiding principle. **Throughout your entire life you may be guided by these nice sounding phrases.** Dear 'old boy' and 'old girl', you still have to be born again.

There are also lots of people with wise sayings.

In Ghana, one of our popular wise sayings can be translated as, "*The animal without a tail is protected by God.*" The deeper meaning of this is, "God takes care of the fatherless".

How wise and impressive this sounds!

But Jesus says to the man rich in wise sayings, **"Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again."**

## **19. BEING A GOOD SPOUSE**

Being a good wife or a good husband does not mean you are born again.

You may love your husband, look after him, submit to him, support him and pray for him. But it doesn't mean you are born again. You may be living happily together,

but it does not mean you will go to Heaven.

**Such people are often surprised when you tell them to be born again. They will say, “Look at me! What is wrong with me? I am a good person, and this is my happy wife. We are living happily ever after.”**

I must say that there are some good non-Christian husbands. But whether you are a good spouse or not, you have to be born again!

Jesus says to the good spouse, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**

## **20. BEING RICH OR POOR**

Being rich or poor is not the same as being born again. If you are very rich and everything is going well, you may think you don't need to add anything to your life.

In Luke 16:19-31, we read about the rich fool. **He was a fool, not because he was rich, but because in his riches he did not acknowledge God.** Often, rich people forget about God. Do not be a rich fool, **be a wise and rich person.**

Riches do not make one a fool. Indeed, it is better to be rich than to be poor. However, you still need to be born again, otherwise you will perish with your riches! The last that may be seen of you will be your grand funeral.

**Your body may be left in the mortuary for a long time (as is the custom for Chiefs in Ghana). Your relatives may even insist on changing your funeral clothes**

**regularly as though you were a contestant in a beauty contest.**

Read about what the rich man said when he suddenly found himself in hell- he became an evangelist, longing to send a message to his brothers so they would not come to hell!

Being poor in this life is all the more reason why you must be born again. Your poverty and suffering in this life should not deceive you into thinking that there will be peace after death.

Jesus says to the rich and the poor alike, **“Marvel not that I say unto thee, ye must be born again.”**



## ***Chapter Three***

# ***How To Be Born Again***

**“What must I do?”** If you want to be born again, you must do two important things. You must first believe in Jesus Christ as the Son of God.

**Whosoever believeth Jesus is the Christ is born of God...**

**1Jn. 5:1**

Secondly, you must ask Him to come into your heart or your life. The Spirit of God will come upon you, and into your heart. Then the inner part of you will be *born* or *produced again*.

**God gives you a new heart and spirit altogether!**

With your new spirit, you become a **New Man** or a **New**

**Creature**, and are ready to live a **New Life**. **This new life is possible because you are actually a new person with a new heart.** To be born again is as simple as that. People want to do complicated things. But becoming born again is very simple!

Believe in Jesus. Ask Him into your heart. Confess Him as Lord. And you will be born again.

**Being Born of the Spirit.** *...that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. (Jn 3:6)*

**Having been Regenerated.** *...he saved us by the washing of regeneration. (Tit 3:5)*

**Being Born of God.** *Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin... (1Jn 3:9)*

**A Child of God.** *...to them gave he power to become the sons of God... (Jn 1:12)*

**Having been Saved.** *For by grace are ye saved through faith... (Eph 2:8)*

**A Christian.** *...And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch. (Acts 11:26)*

**A Saint.** *...called to be saints with all that ... call upon the name of Christ Jesus... (1Cor 1:2)*

**A Believer.** *And believers were the more added to the Lord... (Acts 5:14)*

**A Disciple.** *...And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch. (Acts 11:26)*

**Believe in Jesus. Ask Him into your heart. Confess Him as Lord. And you will be born again!**

**Please pray this prayer too be born again.**

“Lord Jesus, I come to you as a sinner, lost and condemned to hell. I repent of my sins and ask for your forgiveness. I believe with all my heart that You died on the cross and rose up again for my sins. I open my heart to You and receive You as my Lord and personal Saviour. Please take control of my life and make me what You want me to be. From today, I am Yours and You are mine. Thank You, Father for this wonderful gift of salvation, Amen.”





# **Catch the Anointing**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

Extracts from ***A Passion For The Gospel*** by Colin Whittaker  
*Used by permission of Kingsway Publications, Lottbridge Drove, Eastbourne,  
BN23 6NT*

Extracts from ***Understanding the Anointing*** by Kenneth Hagin  
*Used by permission of Faith Library Publications & Kenneth Hagin Ministries, Inc.*

Extracts from ***All Things are Possible*** by David Edwin Harrell Junior  
*Used by permission of Indiana University Press*

Extracts from ***The Release of Power*** by Bishop David A. Oyedepo  
*Used by permission of Dominion Publishing House*

Extracts from ***Tragedy Trauma Triumph- WHY?*** by T.L. Osborne  
*Used by permission of OSFO International*

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-596-00-6

**Copyright © 2000 Parchment House**  
**1<sup>st</sup> Printing 2000**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

## **DEDICATION**

*I dedicate this book to Bishop Nicholas Duncan Williams.  
Thank you for paving the way for the church in Ghana.*



# ***Contents***

You Must Be Anointed .....	5
Associating with Great Men of God .....	7
The Art of Soaking Tapes .....	12
My Testimony .....	19
Catching an Anointing .....	26
The Art of Preaching and the Anointing .....	30
“Aman” and “Tsalach” .....	38
6 Giants Catch the Anointing .....	45
Why Some People Never Catch the Anointing .....	66

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

# CATCH THE ANOINTING

## CHAPTERS

1. You Must Be Anointed
2. Associating With Great Men of God
3. The Art of Soaking Tapes
4. My Testimony
5. Catch an Anointing
6. The Art of Preaching and the Anointing
7. “Aman” and “Tsalach”

*Dedication: Rev. Kenneth E. Hagin*

# **CHAPTER 1**

## **YOU MUST BE ANOINTED**

*I had no formal training in the ministry, no Bible school and little contact with any great man of God (and lots of critics). Some of the men of God I came into contact with, ended up opposing and fighting the call of God on my life. I had no option but to tap into the anointing that was on other more distant men of God.*

*I was forced to catch the anointing through tapes and books. I believe that I am anointed with the Holy Ghost to stand in my office of ministry. I have too much evidence all around me to doubt the reality of the anointing on my life. I also believe that the electronic and technological development in the world is for the benefit of the kingdom of God and the ministry. The technology of this world can help you to get near to people who are anointed.*

## **It's the Anointing That You Need**

*When God sends you a man of God, you are given a chance to receive him and catch the anointing that is on his life. The anointing is the principal thing that you and I need to do God's work. The prophet Zechariah knew that the most important thing was the anointing. It was he who said, "It is not by might and it is not by power but it's by the anointing of the Spirit" (Zechariah 4:6).*

*Elisha also realized that the thing which made Elijah's ministry successful was the anointing. When he had the opportunity he asked for the anointing. Some people may have asked for the money, the education or the qualifications that Elijah had. **But Elisha just wanted the anointing!***

***...Elijah said unto Elisha, ask what I shall do for thee before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me.***

**2 Kings 2:9**

*In this book, I want to share about a channel of anointing that is not usually spoken of. It may sound new to you, but it is very real. If there is any way by which you can catch the anointing please take it! I am not presenting this as the only way that God can anoint you. I am sharing with you what I have received from the Lord. I am sharing with you what is biblically and scripturally sound.*

*Many people have received the anointing through listening to tapes and reading books but they do not understand what has happened to them. **Many people who have received the anointing through this channel cannot teach it because they do not fully understand it.** I believe that it is my duty to teach this simple but real method of catching the most essential ingredient of ministry – the anointing.*

## **CHAPTER 2**

# **ASSOCIATING WITH GREAT MEN OF GOD**

*In another book<sup>1</sup>, I have shared about the importance of associating closely with the man of God in order to receive the anointing. Why do you have to associate with anointed men of God? What exactly do you acquire through association? As you closely associate with a man of God you will hear him speaking over and over. These words are what contain the anointing. When Elisha associated himself closely with Elijah he heard him speaking over and over again.*

*And it came to pass, AS THEY STILL WENT ON, AND  
TALKED...*

*2 Kings 2:11*

### **Words Are Powerful!**

**Jesus told His disciples that His words contained two important things. They contained life and the Spirit!** What is this Spirit? The Spirit is the anointing! The scripture says that God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power (Acts 10:38). Jesus was anointed with the Holy Ghost, and therefore the Holy Ghost *is* the anointing (the substance with which He was anointed).

**...the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life.**

**John 6:63**

For many people, the close association we speak about is not possible except through the medium of books and tapes. Books and tapes contain the words of anointed men of God. The words of anointed men of God contain the Spirit and the life. "Soaking" in books written by anointed men is a very valuable way of fellowshiping with them. The time you spend reading a book is time you spend fellowshiping with the one who wrote the book. What a great privilege to interact with someone with three hours in the privacy of your home. As you read this book you are fellowshiping with me and I am fellowshiping with you. As I write this book I feel that I am talking to certain people. I am ministering directly to as many as would take the time to receive. Just as Elisha listened to the words of Elijah and the disciples listened to the words of Jesus, you are listening to my words as you read this book! The disciples listened to the words of Jesus, that is why they were anointed. The anointing makes people take note of you.

**...and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

You can be with Jesus today by reading His words in the Bible. I constantly become amazed at the number of ministers who do not read the Bible. They just use the Bible as a tool for preaching. The word of God is, first of all for your benefit. You will not be a minister of substance if you do not have your own personal fellowship with the Lord. I do not mean a last-minute check of certain scriptures before you preach. A quick check of a scripture is different from fellowshiping with somebody through the written word. Fellowship with Jesus everyday. God wants to interact with you. He wants to

fellowship with you. God's desire since the days of Adam has been to fellowship with man.

When Moses came down from the mountain after fellowshiping with the Lord, the glory of the Lord was upon him. The glory of the Lord will be upon you when you fellowship with God.

When I woke up in this world I found myself in Ghana, West Africa. I realized that I was very far from the great men of God in America. I desperately wanted to fellowship with them but there was no way possible. I did not even have a visa to America. I had no money to buy a plane ticket. Even if I had been able to get there, many would have seen me as a crazy Black man who was trying to get too close! They would have called their security guards to protect them from me. So God showed me a way that I could fellowship with some of the great anointed people of this generation. I have fellowshiped with many people through their books. I have got to know their minds through their books. I have interacted with the Lord Jesus by reading the Bible and studying His words and actions. One of my favorite portions of the Bible are the gospels. In the gospels (Matthew, Mark, Luke and John), I can see what Jesus said and I can hear Him talking to me personally.

## **Two Types of Receivers**

There are two types of people who receive the anointing – those who are physically near and those who are physically afar off. You see, some people have the opportunity to be physically near to the anointed vessel. The apostles, Peter, James and John were physically close to the Lord. They touched Him, they held Him and they even had dinner with Him.

**That which was from the beginning, which we have HEARD, which we have SEEN with our eyes, which we have looked**



**upon, and our hands have HANDLED...**

**1 John 1:1**

The Apostle Paul loved his books. Unfortunately, Paul did not have the chance to physically interact with Christ as the other apostles did. Paul was just like me, he had to depend on books! That is why he sent urgently for his books and parchments (booklets). He had to study and fellowship with the Lord and other great men of God like Isaiah through the written Word.

**The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, AND THE BOOKS, BUT ESPECIALLY THE PARCHMENTS.**

**2 Timothy 4:13**

If Paul had lived in our generation he would have used all the technology available to receive even more of the Word and the anointing. Paul would have listened to tapes and watched videos. **Books contain the written word, but tapes contain the spoken word.** You can catch the anointing from the spoken word.

## **CHAPTER 3**

# **THE ART OF SOAKING IN TAPES**

**“Soaking” in tapes is a scriptural practice. Soaking in tapes simply means to listen to the words over and over again until it becomes a part of you and until the anointing passes unto you!** When a tape is fully *soaked*, both the Word content and the Spirit content are imbibed into your spirit. The anointing is not something you learn, it is something you catch.

*Do not assume that the “soaking” in of the tape is just an educational exercise. It is a spiritual event. Two important things happen when you soak in a tape. Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word (Romans 10:17). Secondly, the anointing of the Spirit content comes into you.*

The Spirit enters a person as he receives the Word of God. That is why many people experience radical transformations by just listening to a powerful message of the Word of God. That is how come people are saved when they hear the preaching of the Word of

God. The Holy Spirit enters into them as the preaching goes forth and they are gloriously Born Again. The Bible says that we are born of the Spirit.

**That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

**John 3:6**

Being Born Again is not an educational experience. Being Born Again does not mean that you have learnt something new. It means that a spiritual change has taken place. Your spirit is recreated by the Holy Spirit. This experience of being Born Again completely and forever changes a person's life. It happens when people listen to the preaching of the Word. That is why we invite people to church. We want them to be exposed to the preaching.

In the same way as you are Born Again and experience a spiritual transformation, you can experience a further spiritual transformation that will convert you into a minister. This spiritual transformation that makes you a minister is what some call "receiving an anointing" or "being anointed". There are too many people who are called ministers who have not received a call to ministry and an anointing to minister.

When you have not been anointed, you are dry and lifeless. I used to go to church every Sunday and I hated it! It was a lifeless and boring experience. I only went because my parents had asked me to go. Unfortunately, not only are some so-called ministers not anointed but they are not even Born Again. This is even worse! You do not become a minister by obtaining a certificate. **You become a minister when God calls you and anoints you!**

Churches do not grow because there is no anointing for church

growth. Pastors everywhere must desire the anointing. It is the anointing that makes the difference! Once you know the anointing, you will not want anything else. You will not succeed in the ministry by being clever. Intelligence and education are no substitutes for the anointing! Desire the anointing! Go for it! It is the main thing! And the main thing is still the main thing! The first sermon that Jesus preached was about the anointing. The first thing that He said when he began His ministry was that He was anointed.

**The Spirit of the Lord is upon *me??* because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor...**

**Luke 4:18**

In fact, Jesus did not attempt any form of ministry until He was anointed. Jesus knew that the ministry depended on the anointing. I recently visited a beautiful large church. The pastor himself was not around so the janitor took us around the building. The main hall had hundreds of beautiful mahogany pews. It was a beautiful building with two huge pipe organs and surrounding balconies.

I asked the janitor, "How many people does this building seat?"

He answered, "This building seats at least eight hundred and eighty people."

"Wow," I remarked, "That's a lot of people!"

He continued, "But, we don't have many people coming to church anymore."

"I see. How many people come to church nowadays?" I asked inquisitively.

"About twenty, with a maximum of thirty people." He added, "Only old people attend church now. The young people don't come to church anymore."

I thought, "How sad. Such a large church has been reduced to a fellowship of twenty old and dying people."

Obviously there was no life. But that was not all.

The janitor continued, “The services from this month are being held every two weeks instead of every week.”

I thought to myself, “We hold church services on almost everyday of the week. There is so much life in our church. It is full of mainly young people who want to serve the Lord. What a contrast!”

What makes a difference between a growing and a dead church is the anointing. The anointing is the life of God in the ministry. Oh, how we need the anointing! We can’t do without the Holy Spirit.

So how do we come by this Holy Spirit? That is what this book is about. God is trying to show you that you need an anointing. You may be ministering the Word. You may even be ordained. But it is only when you are anointed that your ministry will begin to make a difference to the lost masses of humanity. I see the anointing on you right now as you read this book!

The prophet Ezekiel experienced the anointing entering his life one day. He described exactly how and when the anointing came upon him. Ezekiel sensed that the power and anointing of the Spirit had entered into him whilst he was listening to the Word.

*And the spirit entered into me WHEN HE SPAKE unto me...*

*Ezekiel 2:2*

*Ezekiel said very clearly in this scripture that the Holy Spirit entered into him when he was being spoken to.*

*Peter, the apostle, also noticed this phenomenon. He noticed that the power of the Holy Spirit fell on people as he preached. Do you remember when Peter was preaching to the Gentiles? The Bible says that as he ministered the Word the Spirit of God*

*fell on the people.*

***While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.***

***Acts 10:44***

***If the gift of the Holy Spirit could fall on people whilst Peter was preaching then surely the gift of the Holy Spirit can fall on you when any other anointed man of God is preaching. This is simple logic.***

*At 5 o'clock in the morning on the 1<sup>st</sup> of January, 1987 I decided to obey the call of God on my life. It was in the early hours of the first day of that New Year when I decided to take up the mantle and become a pastor. I knew that I had been called and I had decided to obey and become a pastor.*

*At the time, I was in my fourth year of medical school. I began the church with a few nursing students and laboratory students in the Korle-Bu Teaching Hospital where I was studying medicine. I had no one to direct or guide me so I struggled quite a bit during that first year. By the end of 1987 many friends had expressed their lack of confidence in me and deserted me. I was criticized until I felt like killing myself, just to make my enemies happy. I remember looking at the ceiling fan as it twirled above my bed. I often thought of hanging myself on it. I wanted to vanish out of the view of all those who hated me and criticized me. I had very little guidance, but I was sincere and I had a lot of faith and many enemies. It is amazing how people hate you when you decide to follow the call of God.*

*This was the precarious and doubtful beginning of my ministry. I started out by faith and began teaching and preaching what I knew. A few nursing students responded. At the beginning the church met in a little classroom in the School of Hygiene. After*

*awhile many people left and some stayed. The little church stabilized with about forty members. But something happened to me in 1988 that made a big difference to my ministry. It transformed the ministry from a little classroom full of nursing students to a ministry that impacts thousands of people around the world today.*

## **CHAPTER 4**

### **MY TESTIMONY**

*Sometime during the middle of the year 1988, I had to fulfill what is called a community health rotation. Every class in medical school is divided into groups. Each group rotates through different fields of medicine throughout the year. That is why it is called a rotation. I had to complete four rotations in my final year, one each for surgery, medicine, specials and community health.*

*During the community health rotation, I had to travel outside the city of Accra to a smaller town called Suhum, in another region of the country. Whilst there I lived in the Suhum Government Hospital for one month. I was to gain practical experience in running a hospital and working out on the field where conditions are different from the bigger cities.*

*Although I was fulfilling my medical requirements, as usual my mind was on the ministry. By the second week, I took advantage of a more relaxed timetable and decided to fast and pray. On my way out of Accra to Suhum, I had passed through a Christian bookshop and bought some Kenneth Hagin tapes. I felt that I just need something to soak in whilst I was in Suhum. I had been a great follower and admirer of Kenneth Hagin's ministry. Actually, I had already listened to those tapes many times but I thought I would just have something to listen to. No one had ever told me to listen to tapes. I just enjoyed doing it. I loved the Word and I loved the minister of the Word.*



*No one had ever told me to listen to tapes over and over. I wasn't trying to memorize the message although I ended up remembering almost every sentence. Listening to tapes never replaced Bible study and personal quiet times for me. I wasn't losing my personality! I wasn't becoming a clone. I was being blessed tremendously!*

*One night I was praying, fasting and listening to one of these tapes that I had bought. I remember that day as if it was yesterday. I was using a small red Sony auto-reverse tape recorder. The message that was being played was something about dealing with demons. It was a message I had enjoyed listening to many times. The tape played nonstop throughout the night.*

## **Something Happened!**

*At about 3 a.m. in the morning I was kneeling by the bed praying. I could see the tape recorder situated at the other end of the room. Then suddenly, something literally jumped out of the tape which was playing and moved into my belly. I could feel it entering me. Then I heard a voice saying, "From now you can teach." I didn't know what that was but I thought to myself, "That's good, because I want to teach." **I didn't know at that time that I had received a major impartation of anointing through the channel of soaking in tapes.***

*At that time, my church was comprised of about forty students. The Bible teaches that we should prove all things, so I decided to try out this new gifting. I was invited to teach at a Full Gospel Businessmen's breakfast meeting in Suhum. This was my first ministration after my impartation experience. I tell you, I noticed a difference. After the ministration someone asked me where my church was. He was surprised that I was an unknown minister. Inside me I knew that something had*

*happened that was making a difference.*

*When I got back to the church after a month, I noticed a difference in my ability to teach and preach. The anointing had arrived and I began to build up. The first series I preached was about the prodigal son. I preached this on a weekday and the attendance and interest in the service began to increase steadily. I tell you, I noticed there was some life and Spirit in the ministry. It is difficult to describe it but when it's there you know it's there! The anointing is a bit like beauty – when you see it, you know it! You can't easily explain how or why you recognize beauty. But when you see beauty or anointing you know that it is there.*

*I have no reason to say what I am sharing except but to help you. My ministry has grown in leaps and bounds because of an anointing caught from soaking in the Word on a tape. Today, you are reading one of the several books that I have written under that same teaching anointing.*

*At the time, I did not have any biblical basis for what I had experienced, so I did not talk about it. Later, as I studied the Word of God, I realized that the mystery of impartation of anointing through the soaking of the Word is a reality. It is biblical! It is doctrinally sound and it is experientially real!*

***Anyone who exposes himself to soaking in the Word through books and tapes is exposing himself to more of the anointing!***  
*When you do that, only good things will happen to you.*

*On different occasions I have heard people describe how they have received an anointing as they sat in the congregation and received the ministry of the Word. One pastor described how he felt warm drops of anointing falling on his head as I spoke the Word at a Camp Meeting. I believe the Lord was anointing this man.*

*T. L. Osborne, the great evangelist, describes how God changed his ministry as he sat under the ministry of William Branham. It all happened in a moment and he was anointed to go out and be a great witness to the world. It is interesting that outsiders sometimes are better receivers than insiders. Do you remember the story of the Centurion whose servant was sick? He sent for Jesus because he knew that Jesus had the anointing and power to heal.*

*And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.*

*And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant. And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:*

*For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.*

*Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldst enter under my roof:*

*Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.*

**Luke 7:2-7**

*This man realized that there was anointing in the words of Jesus. So he sent another message to Jesus.*

*He said, "Don't bother to come all the way here. **Just stand there and say something.**"*

*In other words, there is no need for you to even lay hands or pour oil on my child, Just speak some words and the healing anointing will flow.*

***He sent his word and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.***

**Psalm 107:20**

*One night when I was ministering at a Miracle Wave Convention something astonishing happened. There were thousands of people present that night and the power of God was flowing. That night I remember that when I finished preaching the Word, I felt that God had already moved. It wasn't even necessary to do anything further. There was a lady sitting up in the balcony with her baby and husband.*

## **The Angel Appears**

*This lady suddenly experienced an open vision. Her eyes opened supernaturally and she could see me and everybody else on the stage. But she saw a huge angel standing on my left hand side suspended in midair.*

*She said, "As you were preaching you would say things like, 'I see you blessed!!', 'I see God answering your prayer!', 'I see you healed in the name of Jesus!', 'I see you owning a car!'" The angel would hand out blessings as I spoke and smaller angels would carry them to the people.*

*She said that some people had outstretched hands and were very receptive. The angels would go straight to them with the blessings. Whilst others were receiving others were dozing off and missing out on the spiritual impartation that was taking place. I believe that that angel goes around with me whenever I minister. I know that that "big guy" has been assigned to me. He's my ministering angel. Spiritual things are as real as physical things. The Bible teaches us that angels are ministering spirits that minister for us. They work for us and help us. That is why the angel was distributing spiritual parcels to those who were receiving the Word.*

*Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*

*Hebrews 1:14*

## **CHAPTER 5**

# **CATCH AN ANOINTING**

*Anyone who listens to tapes and reads books will receive to a greater or lesser extent. Some people are not impressed or touched by the message. Some others are even offended by it. As Jesus said, "Blessed is he that is not offended in me." Some people are excited by the message. Some cannot remember anything they just know that it was a good message.*

*As you listen to a tape you learn the message. You learn the Word. You acquire the knowledge content. Some people stop at this point. But others go even further. I went further without even knowing what I was doing. Somehow it wasn't the knowledge content that I was after. If it was knowledge, I had virtually assimilated all the facts that were being shared after a few times of listening to the tape. My love for the Word made me expose myself to the anointing without even knowing it.*

*I remember being blessed by messages of a pastor of a huge*

*church in Los Angeles, California. I had a few videos of his that I thoroughly enjoyed. I would watch these videos over and over. As I watched this pastor preaching in his church I desired to have a church like that and to preach as well as he did. One day, I was preaching in my church, walking up and down the aisles when the Spirit of God told me, "This is it!"*

*It suddenly dawned on me that I was walking in the steps of that pastor that I had watched and listened to for years. I was teaching and preaching like he did. I was pastoring a church which was as large as I had seen on the television. You see, when the anointing is one you will do certain specific things in your ministry. Do you want to have a big church? Catch the anointing that is on someone who has a big church. Do you want to be an evangelist? Look around and see who God is using and follow that person. Listen to his tapes and read his books. The anointing will fall on you one day.*

## **The Specificity of the Anointing**

*The anointing is like your gun. It does certain specific things. You just have to use it and direct it where you want to. Every anointing has a way of working out itself to achieve specific results. The anointing that was on Elijah made him do certain things. Do you want to be a teacher of the Word? Then follow someone who has a teaching anointing. The anointing is very specific. The healing anointing is different from the teaching anointing which is different from the pastoral anointing.*

*Elijah miraculously caused three years of drought. He multiplied the meal and oil of a widow, caused the resurrection of a young boy and called fire from heaven. Elisha did similar things. He also caused years of drought, performed healings, and multiplied a widow's oil. It is interesting to note that Elisha did exactly twice as many miracles as Elijah did. Elijah did*

*sixteen miracles and Elisha did thirty-two miracles! Elisha had a double portion of Elijah's anointing.*

*The anointing is a very specific substance that makes you achieve certain things. You can desire a specific minister's anointing. God may have put it in your heart to achieve certain things in the ministry. Elisha went for Elijah's anointing without any apologies to anyone.*

*If you catch the anointing which is on certain people you will do similar things because it is the same anointing. John the Baptist also carried Elijah's anointing. There were many similarities between John the Baptist and Elijah's ministry. Both of them had dramatic ministries and both of them confronted kings. Both of these men were familiar with deserts and solitude. They wore the same type of garments and lived simply. Both of them had their ministries terminated by queens.*

## **Benefit From the Tapes**

*In order to gain the maximum benefit from a tape, you must listen to it with a vision of eventually receiving an impartation of the anointing. Listen to the same tape several times. In my experience, this is different from listening to many different tapes of the same minister. When you want to get to Level F below, stay with the tapes you enjoy. Listen to tapes unconsciously and listen to them whilst praying and fasting. Allow yourself to receive the gift of God that is ministering to you. You must be open to the man of God who is ministering. You must receive him with admiration and with love, otherwise, you can get nothing from him or through him.*

**But as many as received him, to them gave he power...**

***John 1:12***



## **CHAPTER 6**

# **THE ART OF PREACHING AND THE ANOINTING**

*You can learn how to preach and teach by listening to tapes. I have not been to Bible school and did not have the privilege of being taught how to deliver a sermon. But there are many ways of learning the same thing. When I was practicing medicine I learnt a little phrase from the surgical department. They said, “Watch one, assist one and do one.” What does this mean? It means that if you want to learn how to operate you watch one, you assist one and then you actually do an operation yourself.*

*Everyone can learn how to preach by listening to preaching. The best thing is to listen to other singers all the time. The*

*prophet Daniel studied what the prophet Jeremiah had taught. The prophet Jeremiah ministered from 685-616 B.C. and the prophet Daniel took over from 616-536 B.C. Daniel said very clearly that he knew what he knew by studying the books written by Jeremiah. Why are you afraid to learn from somebody if great men like Daniel were blessed by prophets like Jeremiah?*

***In the first day of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.***

***Daniel 9:2***

*Open up your heart and become a learner and receiver. After all, we all learn from somewhere. **It is insecure people who are afraid to show that they learnt what they know from somewhere!** Become so receptive that you receive the knowledge of the Word! Open your spirit so that you learn how to preach yourself! Open your heart so that you receive the anointing! I want you to notice these levels of receptivity that I have listed below and ask yourself where you fit in!*

**Level A:**      *The word has no impact. You do not understand the message. You probably did not even like the message.*

**Level B:**      *The word has an impact on you. You are excited and think that it is a good message. However, you only retain 11% of what was preached. This is usually what happens when a person listens to a tape just once.*

**Level C:**      *You absorb the word even further but cannot reproduce the message.*

**Level D:**     *You absorb the word so much that you can reproduce the message.*

**Level E:**       *You begin to learn to how to preach and teach in the same anointed manner.*

**Level F:**       *You absorb the word and at the same time begin to absorb the anointing and spirit of the message.*

**Level G:**       *At this level, the transfer of an entire ministry gift takes place. Often an anointing which is on the speaker is transferred to you. Like John the Baptist and Elijah, similarities emerge between your ministries because the same anointing has been transferred.*

## **NOTICE THESE SIGNS**

*These are signs that you are on the road to catching the anointing.*

- 1.       You are able to follow the trend of the message; even when it is confusing and disorderly.*
- 2.       You receive additional lessons that are not the main message. This is an important sign of you catching the anointing on the minister. You begin to know the mind and the heart of the person you are listening to. Most of these lessons are unrelated to the topic that is being taught. You begin to learn so many little things such as principled character, how to speak, how to analyze scripture and how to overcome problems.*

3. *You unconsciously begin to use certain phrases and points in these messages. Unknown to you, you begin to walk and think like the person you are listening to.*
4. *You are able to minister the message with the same results. E.g. Church growth, miracles, people commenting on the word that they were blessed, people buying your tapes and people wanting to hear part two and part three. This is different from dry imitation, when you become an exact replicate of what you hear, but do not get the same results.*

## **AVOID THESE MISTAKES**

*I am not teaching you not to study the Bible for yourself. I am not teaching you to neglect personal Bible study. That is a great mistake. I am an avid listener of tapes but I study the Word of God everyday. **I have personal quiet times everyday. Many of my messages are what I have learnt from my daily Bible study.***

- *Avoid the mistake of not reading the Bible and doing Bible study for yourself.*
- *Avoid the mistake of thinking that it is a man that is going to anoint you. God anoints you through a man .*
- *Avoid the mistake of only listening to tapes when you are going to preach. Listen to tapes all of the time. I listen to tapes all the time.*
- *Avoid the mistake of not doing further study on subjects or tapes you listen to*
- *Avoid the mistake of preaching about things you do not*

*practice. Do not preach about things that you do not understand or believe in.*

- *Avoid the mistake of simply imitating and copying someone without understanding the whole mystery of catching the anointing through soaking in the word.*
- *Avoid the mistake of leaving out the video dimension. The video dimension helps you to catch things that you cannot catch on a tape like posture, attire and gestures. Soaking in videos helps you to learn how to minister the Spirit and to minister with signs and wonders.*

## **Ignore the Ignoramuses**

*Listening to tapes over and over does not mean that you are engaging in mindless memorization. Some people call this, "Chew and pour." I just laugh to myself when I hear such comments. The most difficult time for me in the medical school was the second year. During the second year we had to study physiology, anatomy and biochemistry. Of these three subjects I found biochemistry the most difficult because it involved a lot of tedious memorization.*

*I am not teaching you to become a copycat. I am teaching you how to catch the anointing. I am teaching you to walk in the steps of anointed people. When a young girl is learning how to cook she is taught to follow a simple routine. As she does this over and over she is able to cook the food as well as her mother. With time she will develop her own variations and style. Would you call that daughter a mindless copycat? Would you say that she is engaging in senseless memorization? Certainly not! She is a humble learner.*

*Dear friend, the devil wants to keep you from the anointing. I*

*have heard people speaking sarcastically about this method of catching the anointing. Someone said that I was producing clones. What is a clone? Why do some people try to confuse God's sheep with clever sounding phrases? Quite frankly, I would rather hear my dog bark in the morning than listen to such rubbish!*

*When a doctor is learning to be a surgeon he has to closely observe what his professor does. Then he assists his professor several times. Soon he gets an opportunity to do the procedure himself. He gingerly follows the procedure that he has seen his professor do. He makes a few mistakes but soon he can perform the operation perfectly. If you watch this new surgeon closely you will realize that he is doing exactly what his professor does. With time, he develops his own additions or improvements to what he has learnt. Has the professor produced a clone? Certainly not! He has trained another competent surgeon.*

*When Paul was training Timothy for the ministry, he wrote to him and said, "My son preach the same things that I have preached to you. Spend time sharing the same things with the faithful brethren that you have."*

***Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, THE SAME COMMIT THOU TO FAITHFUL MEN, who shall be able to teach others also.***

***2 Timothy 2:1,2***

*Paul told Timothy to preach the same thing that he had preached. Was Paul producing mindless clones? Watch out for people who try to redescribe godly things and make them appear stupid.*

*When you soak in tapes many good things happen to you. You*

*learn how to preach and you catch the anointing. It is funny how some people see things. Someone once said that he did not want to listen to tapes because he did not want to “lose his personality”. How would you lose your personality by exposing yourself to the anointing and the influence that comes from special men of God? When the choir in my church sings a song by Andrae Crouch or someone else are you telling me that they have lost their personality? Do you know that they would have to rehearse the song for several hours in order to get it just right. As they soak in this music over and over and as they try to do exactly what they are hearing, are you telling me that they are losing their personalities? As **I said earlier, I prefer to listen to my dogs barking in the morning than to listen to foolishness!** Remember what Paul said to the Corinthian Christians; he told them to follow him!*

***Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.***

***1 Corinthians 11:1***

*It's okay to follow people and to soak in their tapes as long as they are following Christ closely.*

## **CHAPTER SEVEN**

### **“AMAN” AND “TSALACH”**

*And they rose early in the morning, and went forth into the wilderness of Tekoa: and as they went forth, Jehoshaphat stood and said, hear me, O Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem; Believe in the Lord your God, so shall ye be established; believe his prophets, so shall ye prosper.*

**2 Chronicles 20:20**

*In this famous scripture, you find Jehoshaphat, a church member, exhorting the rest of the congregation to believe in God as well as in the man of God. This famous speech teaches us a very great lesson for the ministry. In the first part of the scripture, there is a prediction that believing in God will lead to establishment. In the second part of the scripture, the promise is that believing in the prophet will lead to prosperity.*

*You see, Jehosophat was faced with a very difficult situation. Several kings were about to attack him and his nation was in crisis. He had called for a prayer meeting and much prayer had been offered to the Lord. At the end of the prayer meeting,*



*one of the pastors (Reverend Jahaziel) gave a prophecy. He prophesied that they were going to win the war. He predicted that God was going to fight for them and that everything was going to be okay. Because of this Jehosophat made the choir march in front of the army. That was a very dangerous move! But he believed in God and in the prophet – and it paid off! By the time Jehosophat and his followers had finished believing in God and in the prophet, they had more blessings than they could carry away. God blessed them with more than they could carry!*

***And when Jehoshaphat and his people came to take away the spoil of them, they found among them in abundance, both riches with the dead bodies, and precious jewels, which they stripped off for themselves, more than they could carry away: and they were three days in gathering of the spoil, it was so much.***

## **2 Chronicles 20:25**

*The Hebrew word translated “established” in 2 Chronicles 20:20 is the word Aman. It means to nurture, to foster as a parent, to build up and to nurse. This teaches us that as you believe in God you will be nurtured and nursed by God. He will build you up in the faith and you will receive a strong foundation that only a parent can give. But this scripture goes on and says, Believe in the prophets and you will “prosper”. The Hebrew word translated “prosper” is the word Tsalach. It means to push forward, to go over, to come mightily and to break out! Aman and Tsalach are two very different experiences in the ministry.*

*God will nurture you and build you up for His work. He will nurse you like a baby in a cradle. He will foster you like a parent and encourage you until you are well developed. BUT THEN, YOU NEED A PUSH FORWARD IN THE MINISTRY.*

*You need to come mightily in ministry. You need to break out into the fullness of your calling. God wants you to go over every wall and obstacle in your life and ministry. The question is, "How will you receive this push forward into ministry?" After you have been nurtured and fostered by Almighty God, what is the key to coming mightily to the front of the ministry lines? The key is to believe in the man of God.*

*Some people have a difficulty in believing in the man of God. They say, "I can believe in God, but I can't trust these men." They say, "I cannot put my trust in the arm of flesh." What you must realize is that you are not putting your trust in a human being, per se. The safety catch in this scripture is that you are supposed to believe both in God and in the man of God. One without the other will not get you where you need to go. Believing in God without believing in His prophets will help you to be nicely built up in Christ. But you will not have the push forward that you need. Believing in the man of God without believing in God is also very dangerous! You could easily make a mistake and follow the errors of a human being. That is why the two go together!*

*As you read this book, my prayer is that you would open yourself up to the blessings of Tsalach. The blessing of being pushed forward mightily in the ministry.*

*My early Christian life was one of being nurtured by God through great fellowships like the Scripture Union. I was raised in the Word of God. I was nourished through Bible studies and prayer. I can assure you that I grew steadily in the Lord. As the years went by I came across men of God who impacted my life. Without realizing what I was doing, I began to follow people like Kenneth Hagin, Fred Price and Yonggi Cho. I have closely followed and believed in the ministries and instructions of such men of God and it has pushed me forward in ministry. That is the reason why you are reading this book*

*now. I always have a book or a tape that I am soaking in. It's alright to follow people closely as long as they are following Christ.*

***Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.***

***1 Corinthians 11:1***

*It's alright to believe in a man of God as long as you simultaneously believe in God.*

*God gives everybody a man of God. Through the man of God in your life, you will receive a push into ministry. You will catch the anointing and you will break out mightily. Do not make the mistake of rejecting the man of God that God gives to you.*

*Many people's ministries end up nowhere because they refuse to get connected to God through a man of God. In Ghana, we have the Akosombo Dam as our major source of electricity. That is the world's largest man-made lake. I can assure you that it generates a lot of power. If I want to get connected to that power I do not have to travel to Akosombo. All I have to do is to plug into a socket nearby. The socket nearby is the man of God on this earth whom you can relate with. By connecting to him you will be connecting to God who is 'far away' in heaven. Plug into the socket and you will be connected to amazing power! Plug into the man of God and you will be startled to find that you are actually connected to incredible power itself. He that is plugged into the socket, is plugged into the Akosombo Dam itself.*

**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.**

**John 13:20**

*Look around you and see all those “unimpressive” sockets around you. Look around you and see all the “unimpressive” men of God. Make a connection to God through His chosen vessels. You can do that by listening to their tapes, watching their videos and reading their books. Do not make the mistake of rejecting this great opportunity to be pushed forward in the ministry.*

*Jesus was rejected by the people of his hometown. They could not believe that this unimpressive carpenter was the man of God for their lives. When Jesus told them that He was anointed to heal and preach, they were offended and angry. They ran him out of the city.*

**The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,**

**And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them went his way,**

**Luke 4:18,28-30**

*Others who believed in Jesus received Him and were blessed by His ministry. They received mighty breakthroughs for their lives and ministries. When Peter, James and John began ministering in the Book of Acts, many people noticed that they were heavily anointed. They began to ask themselves, “Who are these young men who have come mightily in ministry?”, “Who are these guys who have pushed to the forefront of ministry in Jerusalem?”, “Where did they get an anointing to preach and to heal the sick?”*

**Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

*I see you being pushed forward in ministry! I see you coming mightily into the forefront of ministry in your city! I see you going over every obstacle and difficulty in your ministry! Tap into your man of God! Soak in the tapes and soak in the books! The anointing is yours for the taking! You are breaking out into fruitfulness and success in the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ!*

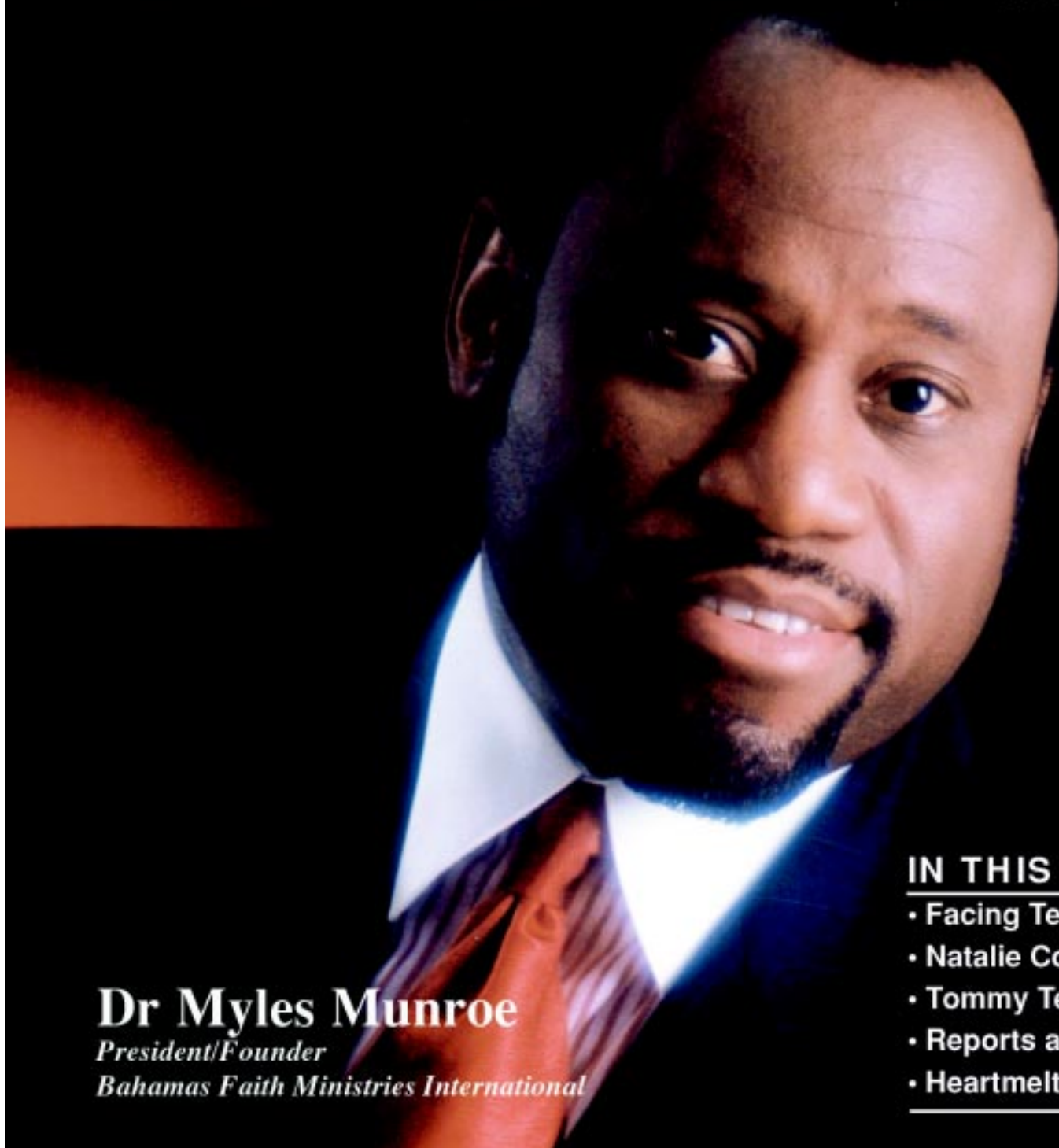
*Heavenly Father, I pray for every young man and woman who desires the anointing of the Holy Spirit. I pray for every pastor in the ministry. I pray that you would open their eyes of understanding that they may see the truth that is in Your Holy Word. Pour out your power and your Spirit on the ministers of this end-time harvest. O Lord, we need your anointing more than ever before. As your people tap into the men of God that You have given to us, may a Spirit of humility and receptivity engulf them. May precious mantles fall on those servants who desire to walk in a greater level of anointing. May every minister of the Lord Jesus who reads this book never be the same again! And may they be endowed with real power and real gifts from on high.*



# Effective LIVING

PUBLISHED QUARTERLY BY BAHAMAS FAITH MINISTRIES INTERNATIONAL

MAGAZINE

A close-up portrait of Dr. Myles Munroe, a Black man with a short beard and mustache, wearing a dark suit, white shirt, and a patterned tie. He is looking directly at the camera with a slight smile. The background is dark with some orange and blue lighting effects.

**Dr Myles Munroe**

*President/Founder*

*Bahamas Faith Ministries International*

## IN THIS ISSUE

- Facing Terrorism Without Fear
- Natalie Cole at BFM
- Tommy Tenney's Teaching
- Reports and Testimonies
- Heartmelting Letters

Dear Friend,

You hold in your hand the first revised issue of our magazine 'Effective Living' designed to serve as our premier communication link to you, our most precious family. Over the past few years we have received your letters, E-Mail, faxes and cards along with thousands of others from around the world, and have found it to be a challenge to respond effectively and efficiently to your most important correspondence.

My staff and I have endeavored to improve our ability to respond in a timely manner and to keep you up-to-date on developments in the ministry and its world-wide outreach. We have attempted a number of items such as a Newsletter and periodic magazines under the name of 'The Ambassador'. However, due to inadequate staff and editorial expertise we were unable to maintain the consistency you deserved.

Well, I am pleased and happy to say that we are now ready to serve you with the quality and excellence you deserve through the introduction of our flagship Magazine for our world-wide family of partners, 'Effective Living'. This first-class publication will provide you with a personal message from me, updates on the ministry and the Vision, field reports of our

## a Personal Letter FROM DR. MYLES MUNROE



Dr. Myles Munroe  
President, BFM

outreaches through the various facets of ministry, stories of interests, news items from around the world, leadership advice, your letters and prayer requests, missions reports, and much more. 'Effective Living' will be published quarterly and sent to all of our friends and partners.

'Effective Living' will also feature articles by many colleges and ministries designed to encourage, educate and counsel. I know you will be blessed and I do look forward to hearing from you. If you have articles, poems or thoughts that could bless and encourage others, please do not hesitate to send them in also.

Please write me and let me know what you think about this first supplement of 'Effective Living'. Your input, advice, comments and critique are invaluable. I want to thank you for your prayers, support and encouragement over the years, and I hope you will enjoy the following pages as we strive to help you 'Live Effectively.'

Sincerely Your Partner  
Dr. Myles Munroe

# Facing Terrorism Without Fear

The global impact of the terrorist attacks of September 11th 2001 and the subsequent economic, political, social and psychological fall out for millions of people around the world is still being assessed. The level of fear, anxiety and uncertainty among heads of states, politicians, religious leaders and the man on the street is cause for much concern as the debate rages over what to do and how to respond.

The trauma among the thousands directly and indirectly impacted through massive job lay offs, shortened work-weeks, and the closure of dozens of major companies has the global village in a state of economic and cultural shock. Added to this mix is the potential danger

of biological and chemical warfare, which has already created a debilitating atmosphere of fear in many quarters. There is so much fear you can almost feel it tangibly. This fear is not only in the average person, but is also in the people we have chosen to lead us. The fear is in governments, it's in businesses. The fear is real.

To further complicate this unprecedented catastrophe is the role religion continues to play in this drama. The tension, conflict and potential

for religious wars between Muslims and Christians are cause

for great concern. The war lines are being drawn in a religious sand.

Instead of being seen as a solution, religion is seen as the problem. So what do you do when your religion is a problem and your government cannot promise you economic stability or safety? We need to put our trust in something that terrorists cannot get to, we have to find an economy they cannot touch, we have to find a security they cannot stop. What you need is an alternative government, and that is what Jesus came to bring.

In the book of Isaiah chapter 9 and verses 6-7 it is written, "for unto us a child is born and unto us a son is given." The next statement says, "and the GOVERNMENT shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His GOVERNMENT and peace there shall be no end."

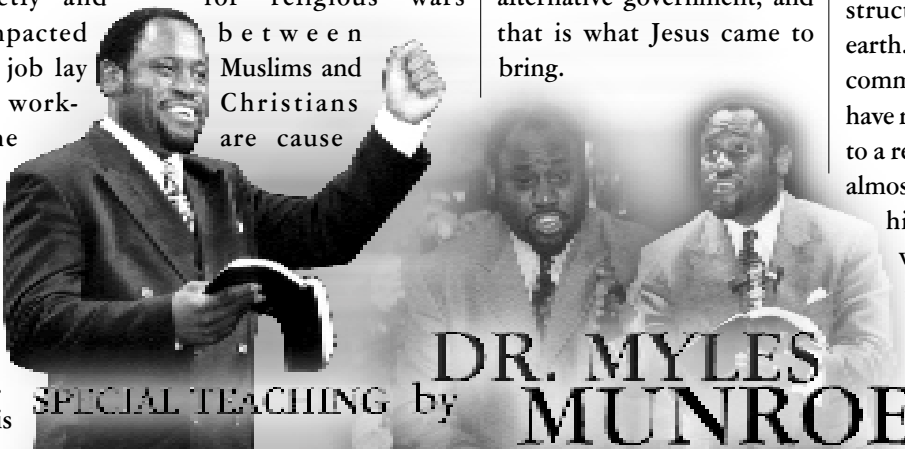
Now what's important here is that Jesus did not bring a religion on His shoulders. He brought a government, a rulership, a kingdom. He brought an authority structure to operate on the earth. What we, the Christian community, have done is we have reduced this government to a religion and have made it almost useless and actually a hindrance. The reason why Christ did not bring a religion is because He knew what the world needed. We needed help, we needed salvation. When Jesus

came to the earth, He came to save the world, He came to salvage mankind. To salvage something means that it was once whole, it broke apart and then it was made whole again. Adam lost this kingdom to the devil through disobedience and Jesus came to salvage it. What did Jesus bring to save it? A government, which means the only thing that can salvage the world is a new government. Government has to do with influence. Jesus brought back the influence of the Kingdom of Heaven and its benefits to the earth.

Right now the world needs peace, security and hope more than anything else and provisions for these things have been made by the Government of Heaven.

To counteract our fears, Jesus brought peace. Romans 14:17 says "For the kingdom of God is not a matter of eating and drinking, but of righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. Jesus, our

Continued on page 3





## Facing Terrorism Without Fear

Continued from page 2

King says to us "Peace I leave with you; My peace I give to you. I do not give to you as the world gives. *Do not let your hearts be troubled and do not be afraid.*" He told us not to be afraid to prevent disaster from taking us over emotionally.

Our security is restored as the Kingdom of God is eternal and unshakable. It cannot be shaken by planes

slamming into it, as they did with the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, reducing tons of steel and concrete into rubble as on that day in question. The Kingdom of God is a *kingdom which cannot be moved.* "Wherefore we *receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and Godly fear...*" Hebrews 12:28-29.

We have to learn the secrets of the kingdom in order to function in it. We need to discover the keys to unlock the benefits of this heavenly kingdom. The good news is that the knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom has already been given to us by our King. (Matthew 13:11).

Whatever you have need of – hope, peace, righteousness, joy, provision, healing – seek first the kingdom of God and all these other things will be added unto you. ■

### INTERNATIONAL THIRD WORLD LEADERS ASSOCIATION



**Be a part of  
our Global  
Network of  
LEADERS.**

**JOIN TODAY!!**

For further information call:  
**(242) 341-6444 Ext. 237**

## THE INTERNATIONAL LEADERSHIP TRAINING INSTITUTE (ILTI) PREPARES

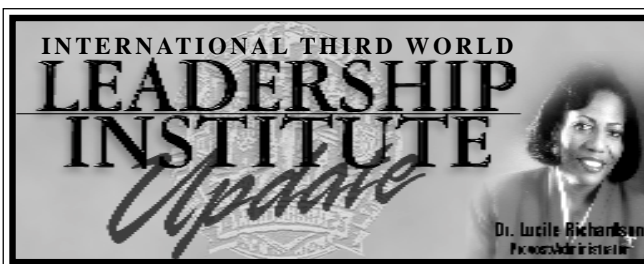
There is a time for everything, and a season for every activity under heaven (Ecc. 3:1a). He has made everything beautiful in its time (vs. 11a). The time has come for the International Leadership Training Institute to officially open its doors to the long awaited dream of BFM President, Dr. Myles Munroe. This is the next step after turning the soil last November 2000 for the historical Ground Breaking Ceremony of the Leadership Institute, Diplomat Mall and Conference Center. Plans are still moving forward for the construction of our Phase I prefab building for the Institute. But, until we are able to set our anchor in a new concrete foundation, the Diplomat Center will facilitate our soon coming first leadership class.

This great day in history will take place at the Diplomat Center on January 12th, 2002 as 50 students will be selected from invitations extended first to the International Third World Leaders Association's (ITWLA) membership within the Bahamas as a first priority. If the spaces allocated for ITWLA's local membership are not filled, then special invitation will be extended to the Bahamas Faith Ministries International Fellowship and other local Residents of the

## TO LAUNCH ITS 1ST COURSE IN JANUARY 2002

Bahamas.

ILTI's first 2-week evening/weekend course will begin on Monday, January 12th, 2002. This three (3) credit



course is entitled: LD 021 Self-Discovery in Leadership Development. The Instructor, Dr. Myles Munroe is the Founding President/Senior Pastor of Bahamas Faith Ministries International, President/Chairman of ITWLA and President of ILTI. Other renowned, international Third World leaders will be invited as Guest Speakers for this class.

LD 021 is taken from the Personal Leadership Development Module of ILTI's two-year Curriculum. It entails an in-depth study of one's self in relation to identity, source and heritage, purpose, potential, and destiny. The course will enable students to do a self-discovery through the following five questions: (1) Who am I? (2) Where am I From? (3) Why am I here? (4) What can I do? (5) Where am I really going? LD 021 is one of two courses offered in the Personal Leadership Development Module and is one among a First Year Program that offers a Diploma in Leadership

Studies. Students then proceed to a Second Year Program that offers a Diploma in International Leadership Studies or Biblical Leadership Studies.

As we progress in this pilot study of our first leadership course, it will be further developed into a Correspondence Course that will be available to all Nations at our August 2002 Believer's Convention.

The real focus of ILTI's coursework is "Training Leaders to Lead the Nations" in every sphere of life. According to Dr. Myles Munroe, "The proliferation of wars, oppression, ethnic cleansing, abuse of power, economic resources and human potential, political corruption, betrayal of trust, compromise and treason are some of the manifestations of the defective leadership that has managed the course of the 20th Century. This leadership vacuum knows no boundaries. Whether it is in political, civic, educational, social, religious or economic areas, the

need for a new breed of quality leadership is the same. This leadership need is critical and must be addressed."

ILTI is designed to meet the needs of leaders at all academic levels beyond high school who desire to become international, intercultural, inter-disciplined

statesmen and women, that is, a person who can move from one culture to another with ease and take on leadership in any chosen discipline.

The INTERNATIONAL LEADERSHIP TRAINING INSTITUTE is the 21st Century center for leadership studies and we are excited about the challenge of first developing and maximizing the leadership potential of our great Nation, the Bahamas before introducing the program to the world. ■

THE INTERNATIONAL LEADERSHIP TRAINING INSTITUTE

**Introduces its  
first LEADERSHIP COURSE...**

**LD 021  
SELF-DISCOVERY IN LEADERSHIP DEVELOPMENT** 3 Credits

**with Instructor: Dr. Myles Munroe**

**Two Weeks of Intense Course Work**  
**Monday, January 14 – Saturday, January 26, 2002**  
 Monday, Wednesday, Thursday & Friday Evenings: 7:30 p.m. - 9:40 p.m. • Saturdays: 8:30 a.m. - 4:10 p.m.

**APPLICATION FEE: \$25.00 (non-refundable) / LATE APPLICATION FEE: \$35.00**

**TUITION: (Does not include Books & Materials)**  
 Citizens and Permanent Residents of the Bahamas - \$150.00 per credit  
 Non-Bahamians - \$200.00 per credit

- Discounts apply for ITWLA and BFM Members  
 - Spousal Discounts

**ORDER OF PRIORITY**

First Priority to ITWLA Members	November 4 - 11, 2001
Second Priority to BFM Members	November 12 - 19, 2001
Third Priority to Bahamas Residents	November 20 - 27, 2001
who are not members of ITWLA/BFM	(Late Application Fee after November 27)

**Enroll Now!!!**  
 Enrollment limited to: 50 Students

**FOR FURTHER INFORMATION CONTACT:**  
 Dr. Lucile Richardson, Administrator / Provost • International Leadership Training Institute  
 Bahamas Faith Ministries International • P.O. Box N-9583 • The Diplomat Center • Corniche Road • Nassau • Bahamas  
 Tel: (242) 341-6444 Ext. 236 • Fax: (242) 361-2260 • E-Mail: itwla@batelnet.bs

THE INTERNATIONAL LEADERSHIP TRAINING INSTITUTE "Transforming Followers into Leaders"

## INTERNATIONAL MISSIONS UPDATE

by Cytella Francis

Photography by Charles Kemp

Just as the kingdom of God resides in the hearts of men, it is said that the essence of Brazil is its people. Brazil, the fifth largest country in the world is home to approximately 172 million.

Beginning in Brasilia, the capital of Brazil, which has a population of some 2 million people, Dr. Myles Munroe was guest speaker at Winter Celebration 2001. The common bond of energy and passion that this diverse family of ethnic groups share was evident in the way they received the Word of God from Dr. Myles Munroe with excitement and great anticipation.

The power of God that has been impacting the lives of many Brazilians for the past 10 years that Dr. Munroe has been ministering to this nation was undoubtedly evident at the second site of ministry, Belo Horizonte, the third largest country in Brazil.

### Dear Dr. Munroe,

Greetings in Jesus' name.

Sir, your teachings during the Leadership Summit at Faith Tabernacle have changed my entire life. I knew before then the purpose of God for my life, but during the Summit, I got a clearer picture and more concrete details about my calling. God has endowed me with talents and potential to maximise this purpose, but these talents were dormant within me. After the Summit, I dusted my books, adjusted my mental antenna and got ready for serious work. Two days after the Summit, I wrote a poem entitled "And The Girl Died", (see page 8) and of course, I dedicated it to you Dr. Myles Munroe.

Although I am a young starter, I have started a Purpose and Talent

## Letters & TESTIMONIALS

FROM AROUND THE WORLD

Motivational Series. Interestingly, colleges and churches have started inviting me to minister on Purpose and Talent. I knew I had to increase my knowledge base, so your books on Purpose, books by Bishop David Oyedepo, and the Bible, have been my daily companions. Purpose will not allow me to rest. Whenever I get discouraged (and I often do) Purpose rises up within to keep me going. What I did was to conduct a marriage

ceremony between Purpose and Talent, the offspring being success. I have since published a book called "Purpose and Talent: The Pathway to Success". I was in pursuit of purpose and basically your ideas formed the root foundation of the book.

I cannot thank you and the Bishop enough for opening me up to my place in destiny. May God replenish you daily, in Jesus' name.

— O.L., NIGERIA, AFRICA

### Dear Brothers & Sisters

This country of the USA has seen evil's hand at work... the terrorist activities have touched us all in many ways. Too often we Americans have gotten lost in the love of money... but I pray these activities have opened all Americans' eyes to know that their trust must be in God!!! This time has been a difficult one for us all... to have seen such hatred manifested.... thank God that "greater is He that is in us than He that is in the world."

**PRAYER REQUEST:** Please pray for the U.S. and its leaders that they may be guided and led by the Spirit of God. Let us all pray together for we know the Victor and Conqueror... we know the Comforter. I shall keep BFMI in my prayers.

— SISTER M., GEORGIA, USA



## SPECIAL GUEST TEACHING BY:

*Tommy Tenney*

## HOW TO BE A GOD CHASER

I walked through the streets of Nassau, Bahamas and the Lord said to me, “these people have learned how to host many nations, therefore they can host the Holy Spirit”. It is difficult for you to host God that you can’t see if you haven’t first learned the lesson of hosting man that you do see.

The spirit of hospitality and the spirit of worship are very akin to each other.

We often make things comfortable for man, but it’s time we learn how to make things comfortable for God. Jesus said “foxes have holes and birds have nests” but He says, “I’m having a hard time finding a place to be comfortable”. But if you peruse the scriptures you will find that whenever Jesus was in Jerusalem, He always stayed at Bethany at Mary and Martha’s house. Why is it that He had a difficult time finding a place of divine comfort? Why is it He always stayed at Mary and Martha’s house? Something had to have connected there to make Him feel comfortable enough.

I believe Jesus stayed at their house because of the unique combination there. He was duelled natured. He was all God, yet He was all man. Sometimes He needed to be worshipped as God, at other times He just needed something to eat. He moved back and forth between those two dimensions. However, there’s always the priority of the divinity, that’s why He said Mary chose the better part, but He did not de-integrate

Martha’s part. Martha entertained His humanity but Mary entertained His divinity. She sat at His feet and worshipped Him.

Too often churches are unbalanced. They are either spiritually passionate or they are humanly passionate. Either they are constantly involved with “let’s feed the hungry, let’s clothe the naked, let’s do this, let’s do that” or they are passionate about Him and leave the other undone. But you’ve got to have credibility in both realms.

What we are looking for is to get God and man together. That’s the spirit of worship. But in order for you to do that, you have to learn how to be divinely sensitive to both realms.

How do you know when to do one and when to do the other? That’s very simple. When He’s in the house you forget about man. Martha, take your apron off, put your broom up. Why? Because He’s in the house right now. All the preparations for His presence should have been done prior to His arrival. Now that He’s here, you just forget about all that.

Do you know what attracts God from

heaven to earth? If perfection is what God was interested in, He would have stayed in heaven. But passion is what He’s looking for so He visits earth.

When we begin to worship Him on earth, He moves the wings of the seraphims aside and peeks out from the middle of perfected worship and He abandons the perfect praise of heaven and sets up His throne in the midst of the passionate praise on earth. Not because you do it well, but passion is what He wants. Not because of the perfection of our praise but because of His relationship with the praiser. He leaves His heavenly throne to come and set up an earthly throne. I can hear the angels ask, “what is man that thou art mindful of him and the son the son of man that thou would visit with him?” and God replied, “I have an answer for you.. Out of the mouth of babes and suckling have I perfected praise.”

Your praise is not perfect when it leaves your lips. It’s only perfected when it enters His ears. He’s collecting your worship. There’s no bad way for you to tell your Father how much you love Him. It’s called WORSHIP. ■

THIS MESSAGE IS  
AVAILABLE IN ITS ENTIRETY.  
CALL 242 341-6444 Ext. 269  
TO ORDER.

Tommy Tenney

Photo by Sidney Rolle

# BUSINESS SEGMENT

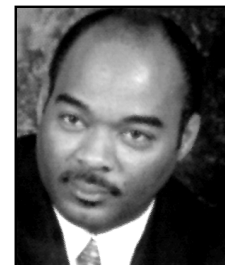
## How To Be a Prudent Investor

— by Carl Albury

Prudent investors pay careful attention to the “RETAINED EARNINGS” position of a company.

### WHAT IS RETAINED EARNINGS?

- the accumulated profits or savings of a company
- the increase in value or equity of a company
- the (default) provisions during challenging times.



Pastor Carl Albury

### HOW IS RETAINED EARNINGS ACHIEVED?

- by the accumulation / savings of the company’s annual profits or
- by the company expensing / spending less than what they earn or their revenue each year.

A company’s earnings are its profits, and is considered as the most important factor influencing the value that an investor pays for the shares of a company. It also determines if a company is successful or not. We can conclude that prudent investors place their money into a company that shows good profitability over the years.

The Word of God shows us in Matthew 25:14-30 (the Parable of the Talent) that Our Father was a prudent investor. He invested heavily into companies or persons who increased their earnings or maximized their resources, while taking away all of His resources from those who did not develop or maximize their companies.

### HOW CAN WE ENSURE THAT OUR FATHER WILL SEE US AS A “PRUDENT INVESTOR”?

We should look at the management of our personal earnings and expenses as a company and develop our retained earnings!!

### HOW?

- 1) Follow the same strategy of a company (review what you read above), that is, we should spend less than what we earn and develop a savings plan. This savings plan should accumulate each year, and should be invested wisely. Our Father, being a Prudent Investor, will favor you as an excellent investment vehicle, or a valued citizen of the Kingdom.
- 2) To really attract His attention, *begin investing into His Kingdom based on the Kingdom objectives revealed in Malachi 3: 10 - 11.* “Bring the whole tithe (and make your offerings) into the storehouse, so that there may be food in my house, and *test Me now in this, says the Lord of hosts*, see if I will not open for you the windows of heavens, (I will invest heavily into you) and pour out for you a blessing until it overflows, (a huge investment of Our Father’s resources) ....!!

Develop your retained earnings, *get started with your savings and investment plan and make yourself more marketable for your Father’s resources.*

## And the Girl Died

Alas! She came to the city  
On a long awaited visit,  
"Good-bye," she said to her mother,  
who eagerly waves her bye.

"Say me well to Lagos,  
especially to your man."

"Yes," she thought,  
"I am going to have a swell time."

At last, she arrived  
with expectation of a glorious time.

She came, she saw, she talked.

All seemed to be well

Until suddenly the unexpected  
happened.

He threatened her,

She dared him,

He had to prove it;

"Am I not a man?" he thought.

Suddenly a bottle appeared

A cracking sound emerged

And he stabbed her,

right beside her neck.

She staggered, and thought

"No, it must be a dream."

Alas! it was real.

Silence.

The hitherto busy street

suddenly became dead.

Figures disappeared.

The culprit too.

She staggered.

"Water!" she screamed

in a voice dead cold,

her hands turning cold.

Nobody surfaced.

She staggered, fell & laid still

Her once sparkling white dress

Dampened with red

And she died.

"Oh no!" I thought

That destiny full of potentials,

That mother waiting patiently

for a daughter that is no more,

Life terminated,

Dreams shattered,

Purpose defeated,

Talent wasted,

The grave enriched once again with

treasures of songs unsung,

Poems unwritten,

Inventions unmade,

Seeds unsown,

Gifts unreleased,

and a silent wealth of power

untapped

she died.

My earnest desire therefore is

that you will not contribute

to the awesome treasury of the

cemetery.

You will release all your

potentials

to actualize your purpose

and birth amazing productivity

only to DIE EMPTY.

— BY OGIDI LIGHT, NIGERIA

(BASED ON AN ACTUAL EVENT)

(DEDICATED TO DR. MYLES MUNROE)



*Just for MEN & Women*  
Presented by: Pastor Ruth Munroe

RAY MOSSHOLDER was guest speaker at a Marriage Seminar held at Babamas Faith Ministries recently. He bares his soul and reveals personal struggles which both he and his wife endured in their Marriage. Below is a taste of this touching, yet powerful testimony of two people whose marriage went through the storm, yet came out in victory. My prayer is that your marriage will be blessed by this powerful testimony.

— Pastor Ruth Munroe

## THE ROLE OF THE CHURCH IN BUILDING THE FAMILY

— by Ray Mossholder

In the course of time I met my wife, Arlyne, and she was, and still is, beautiful and I wanted her. She made it quite clear to me that there will be no 'hanky panky' before the wedding, and that's the kind of woman you marry. Six months after I met my wife I married her, only to wake up about two weeks later to realize that I didn't love her. I went to my Pastors and I'd say, "what can I do to find love for my wife?" and they would say to me, "you've got to go back to what you felt at the beginning." I had a problem, because I didn't feel anything at the beginning. I just wanted to go to bed with a woman.

My house was falling around my ears. I wanted a divorce. If I could not get a divorce, then the next best thing would be to never have to see her again. I got a night job at a Radio Station and by the time I got home from work my wife would already be in bed asleep. I wouldn't even have to talk to her and if I could scoot out of the bed early enough in the morning I wouldn't have to talk to her either and it was wonderful. You may be wondering why I wanted to get out of my house

time with our third child, David, and said "I want a divorce". Though I was a Christian baptized in the Holy Spirit, I had quenched the Holy Spirit about a month before, quit speaking in tongues, wouldn't do it and just absolutely cut off the power of God that had been working in my life.

My wife cried as she saw that her husband was falling away completely, but after crying, she launched a campaign in the Holy Spirit like nothing you've ever seen before. For the next 30 days

the girl. At least I thought that, until I walked into his office that night.

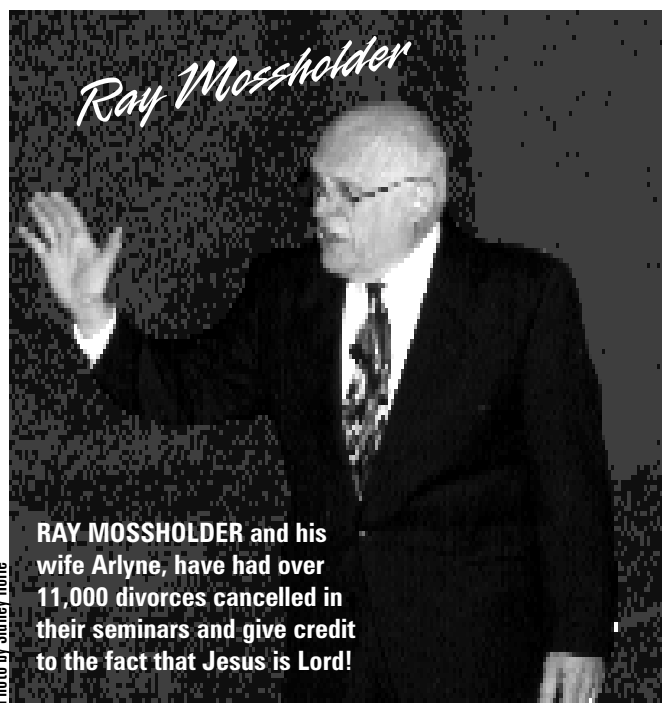
After confronting me about the situation, he asked me, "do you know where that girl is that you think you're in love with right now?" I said 'no'. He said, "she's downstairs right now repenting before the Lord". But an hour into this my Pastor said, "you're not going home tonight. Your wife already packed your bags. We're sending both of you to Springs of Living Water" which was a conference grounds in Northern California. He said "I don't care how long you have to stay there, we're paying all your bills there and all your bills here. You get up there and if you stay up there days, months, years, you are not coming back until you two are whole and well again".

Well I was furious. I got up, plunged down the stairs, followed by my wife. The three and a half-hour drive was filled with silence you can cut with a knife. I got there and rattled the suitcases in the cabin and I went to bed. I wouldn't talk. I felt so trapped, the walls were caving in on me and I wanted that girl. I reached into the suitcase

to find a book that my wife had cleverly planted there. It was a book by Kenneth Weiss. A commentary on 1<sup>st</sup> John 1 v 9: "If we confess our sins he's faithful and just to forgive us our sin and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." But only I didn't want to be cleansed, I wanted that girl. I slammed the book down and went out the door and slammed the door and walked for about half-hour.

But then the hound of heaven caught me and I stood there and I said to the Lord

Continued on page 9



RAY MOSSHOLDER and his wife Arlyne, have had over 11,000 divorces cancelled in their seminars and give credit to the fact that Jesus is Lord!

Photo by Sidney Belle

so badly? Arlyne was a nag. Nagging is like being nibbled to death by a duck. My wife was a nag and so was I. But my wife was something else too; my wife was a woman of prayer. I mean she'd touch the throne of God with her prayers. I was a pray-er too. I prayed, "Lord kill my wife".

I soon got into an adulterous relationship with a teenager, with whom I felt I was totally in love, and could not live without. One day, in the 10th year of my marriage, I walked into the house, my wife was very pregnant at the

when I was sure I was going to leave her, my wife continued to pray and prayed hard. Praying in tongues is extremely important in crisis.

Thirty days after I told her I was going to divorce her I got a phone call from the Senior Pastor of the church where I was the Associate. And he said, "Ray, I'd like to see you in the office tonight about 8 o'clock, I've got some things to go over with you. I said 'sure'. I didn't have any problem because I knew he didn't know anything about



# LET US TALK ABOUT SEX

An excerpt from the book "Sex & Dating"  
by Pastor Dave "Ruffneck" Burrows

Youth  
Alive  
MINISTRIES

generation  
eXtraordinary

No matter where I have been in the world, there is one thing that remains the same in the Caribbean, Europe, the USA and South America, and that is sex. It is the number one thing on the mind of all people, young and old. We may not want to admit it, but sex (sexual intercourse) is an international pre-occupation.

Most entertainers, singers, rappers and sports people talk about sex in demeaning and destructive terms. Their rap line is "we just met, she's so fine, let's take our clothes off, jump in the bed and get busy." Their attitude is "get it while you can, as much as you can, let's have a good time and there are no consequences." These lies kill young people every day and cause young girls to get pregnant and have abortions that leave

tremendous physical and emotional scars which create untold pain and suffering.

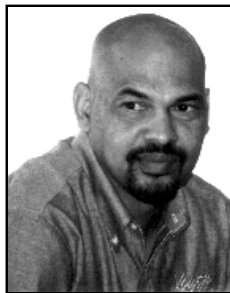
Many times a young lady listens to a young guy who she thinks is nice and who may be good looking also. She thinks he loves her and she ends up having sex only to get pregnant, drop out of high school, delay or cancel college and she learns the hard way what it costs to care for a baby. It is then too late and she has to ask herself: Was it worth it?

So what is the truth about sex? The truth is very complex although the act is common to all animals. In humans, sex without responsibility is abuse.

Why? Because sex is never free.

It may be easy to get, but it is not necessarily easy to walk away from.

In church circles, the question may arise as to why would we are talking about sex. The fact of the



matter is that church is no refuge from sexual issues, no matter what age we are talking about, and if we don't tell you the truth then you will learn from the wrong sources.

Sex used outside its purpose is the reason for most problems in the world today than any other single factor. Think about it, every time there is sex outside of marriage the result is one of the following: broken homes, unwanted pregnancies, abortions, damaged teens, AIDS, death and destruction. This is only a partial list.

You live in a world where teenage sex is accepted as a fact and it is encouraged directly or indirectly. In fact, many parents, teachers and others see nothing wrong with teenage sex. Teenagers are often not discouraged from having sex. Instead, they are simply encouraged to use a condom.

Telling a teenager to wear a condom is like telling a child to be careful with a hand grenade. You may end up being

careful but the mere nature of youth suggests a risk of misuse.

The Bible is obviously very clear on sex. I can never understand debates among Christians about whether homosexuality is wrong or if fornication is wrong. Ephesians 5:2,3 states that we must "...live a life of love, just as Christ loves us and gave himself up for us as a fragrant offering and a sacrifice to God, But among you there must not be even a hint of sexual immorality, or any kind of impurity...

To call yourself a Christian and suggest that God said something different because times have changed is not reasonable in my estimation. I cannot understand how anyone can read the bible and come away saying that God suggested that sex outside of marriage was subject to conditions in the world or changing times. What is said, is said, and is correct all the time. Sex outside of marriage from a Biblical perspective will never be right no matter how long we live or how the world may change. ■

Telling a teenager to wear a condom is like telling a child to be careful with a hand grenade.

## THE ROLE OF THE CHURCH IN BUILDING THE FAMILY

Continued from page 8

"Lord I'm sorry, I've sinned against you. I've sinned against my wife, I've sinned against everybody who believed in You through me and I surrender the girl to You." I promised not to see her again privately. And I didn't. I never phoned her; I never met with her in anyway alone again. Never wrote her a letter. That's so important. If you are into an adulterous affair now you desperately need to repent. Not only do you need to repent, but also you need to break the relationship with that person.

I stood there a lot longer before the Lord, because I knew I had to mean this. It was the hardest thing I ever had to do. I said "...I commit myself to my marriage as long as the two of us shall live. I'm sorry Lord". I went back to the cabin. I woke my wife and she forgave me. She gave me to the Lord and said "I will stay in this marriage because I have a covenant of marriage". Arlyne loved me again and that made all the difference.

The 11<sup>th</sup> and 12<sup>th</sup> years were the hardest years. Why? Because I knew now

there was no exit. That I wasn't going to get a divorce. That I was going to stay true to the Lord and I was going to stay with my commitment. I didn't want to, but I had to die.

The next two months were life changing months for me. I went through the Bible from Genesis to Revelations and studied everything God said about husbands, wives, sex, rearing children and teenagers; I studied it all. At first I studied divorce because I wanted one so badly but I found out suddenly that I did not want one. Why would I

want to end an adventure that's just beginning as I am getting into this Word? As I act upon the Word of God my home would stand. Why give up? And so it was as of that moment I said, "Lord I'm gonna do these things. I'm going to be the Christian husband. I shared the notes with my wife, not to preach at her, but she found out how off the mark she was as a wife and I found out how off the mark I was as a husband. "I can do all things thru Christ who strengthens me". After committing to this I said, "Lord I was such a fool. I thought I could do things my way. I can't. My ways are not

Your ways and I'm going to do the things You taught me in this Word."

My wife and I were a brand new couple. We were excited then and we are excited now. We have now been married 84 thrilling years. 42 years each.

Don't you dare give up on prayer, because that's the most potent and powerful weapon you have against hell that exists on planet earth.

Is there hope for marriages? YES! in Jesus' name. ■

This message is available in its entirety on audio and video cassette. Call (242) 341 6444 Ext. 269 to order.



## ABOUT BAHAMAS FAITH MINISTRIES INTERNATIONAL FELLOWSHIP

**B**ahamas Faith Ministries International Fellowship (BFMIF) is our local Word Fellowship and Charismatic Teaching Center. It is an outreach ministry of Bahamas Faith Ministries International (BFMI) designed to assist in fulfilling the mission, purposes and goals of BFMI as an international fellowship.

BFMIF believes in creating an atmosphere of faith and love where the Holy Spirit can minister to us. We understand that the purpose of Christ goes beyond the scope of changing lives; it's to build up a new community—new creatures in Christ joined to Him and to one another.

At BFMIF, we believe each person has a specific place and function in the Body of Christ. As we mature in grace and the Word, we become equipped to fulfill our potential and personal ministry within the corporate framework of the Body fellowship.

BFMIF is dedicated to providing identification, development and maturing of our gifts and talents for the perfecting of the saints.

The Fellowship has grown from a membership of seven to almost 1,000 with two services held on Sunday mornings at 8:00 a.m. and 10:45 a.m.

We believe that the Body of Christ is not an organization, social club or religious institution. Instead, we are dynamic organisms created by God through Jesus by the Holy Spirit. We believe that the only way a person can become a member of the Body of Christ is through the “new birth”—being born again in the Spirit through faith in the name and atoning work of our Lord, Jesus Christ (John 3:3-7).

Due to Pastor Myles' international travels, the Lord provided our Fellowship with Pastor Richard and Sheena Pinder as local Pastors since the inception of the Ministry. Pastor Richard is the Senior Vice President of BFMI and Vice Chairman of the Executive Board of Directors. He oversees the Ministry of Personnel Administration, the Ministry of Fellowship Care and Development, and is General Overseer of all Ministries. ■



**Pastor Richard & Sheena Pinder**

## VISION

**T**o identify, train, develop, mobilize and release the untapped leader within every human being, especially those of the Third World context. This will be accomplished by maximizing one's true potential in the discovery of personal purpose and destiny in the fulfillment of God's ultimate purpose for mankind. (Acts 26:18 & Hosea 4:6)

We have been mandated to:

1. To go forward!!!
2. Establish a world-class International

Leadership Training Institute based on biblical principles

3. Be an international Church that sees the world as its responsibility. Therefore, we strive to become a model, prototype and standard rather than an example.
4. Formally train leaders in every walk of life to return to their own countries as leaders of leaders.

We are Custodians of a Global Vision and Stewards with an International Assignment. **CATCH THE VISION!!**

## • • CURRENT MINISTRY PROJECTS • •

### ■ STOREHOUSE ASSISTANCE

**T**he Ministry has a program right now to help people who are affected by the layoffs and job problems. We have instituted in the last few weeks a Storehouse Program where we are bringing in foodstuff and clothing and anyone who needs help can come and get groceries. We at Bahamas Faith Ministries are not just doing it for our members but also for anyone in the community who may have needs.

### ■ JOB REFERRAL ASSISTANCE

**W**e have a Job Placement Program here at BFM in conjunction with vacancies at the Employment Exchange. Persons who may have lost their jobs because of the current international crisis are directed to different areas where we have discovered that there are jobs available, thus enabling us to serve in this particular area.

## OUTREACH

**W**e are very concerned about our youth and are working very closely with the Youth Against Violence Association that is under our Ministry helping our young men and women to find some sense of security during this crisis time in our country. Ministry assistance also continues with other social agencies such as Teen Challenge, The Haven, The Shepherd's Nook and others. Community witnessing continues as well as Hospital Visitation.

## PRAYER REQUESTS

Please pray for the following:

- The Government and the Nation
- The Ministry of Helps
- The Leadership of Bahamas Faith Ministries (Executive Directors and Pastoral Staff)
- The International Third World Leadership Association

## OPPORTUNITY FOR INVESTMENT

**O**pportunity is provided for anyone who would like to invest into the Ministry to assist us in fulfilling our God-given mandate. Willing persons may invest into the following areas:

- 2 - 3 (15-seater) Vans for the Youth Ministry
- Funds for the Construction of Phase One of the International Third World Leadership Institute
- Computer Equipment
- Air-condition units and Photocopying machine for our Seed-Life Schools

You may forward your gift to Bahamas Faith Ministries, P.O. Box N-9583, Carmichael Road, Nassau, Bahamas with a note indicating which area you would be assisting in, or call our office at (242) 341-6444.

# Famous Daughter of Nat King Cole and Husband Worships at Bahamas Faith Ministries

Daughter of the late famous singer, Nat King Cole, Natalie Cole-Dupree, spent the week in the Bahamas at the Atlantis Hotel and met with President and Senior Pastor of Bahamas Faith Ministries, Dr. Myles Munroe, in a special meeting for advice and counsel.

Mrs. Cole-Dupree who recently married Bishop Kenneth Dupree, Pastor of a thriving Baptist Church in Nashville, Tennessee, were in the Bahamas enjoying an extended honeymoon. The couple contacted Dr. Munroe and expressed their desire to meet with him and also worship at Bahamas Faith Ministries International Fellowship.

On October 28th, 2001 Mr. & Mrs. Dupree joined the BFM Fellowship Family in exciting praise, worship and celebration.

The Duprees were presented with copies of Dr. Munroe's latest books on marriage and relationships, and the couple were prayed for by the pastoral staff. ■



**The Duprees were presented with copies of Dr. Munroe's latest books on marriage and relationships.**

## DR. MYLES MUNROE'S ITINERARY

**NOVEMBER 5 - 8,  
LAGOS NIGERIA**  
Kingsway International  
Center, Rev. Matthew  
Ashimlowo:  
011-44-208-525-0000

**NOVEMBER 11-18,  
NASSAU, BAHAMAS**  
International Third World  
Leadership Summit,  
Sheila Francis:  
242-341-6444 Ext 233

**NOVEMBER 19,  
MIAMI, FLORIDA**  
Trinity Broadcasting  
Network - Kristy

**DECEMBER 2-5,  
TULSA, OKLAHOMA**  
Greenwood Christian  
Center, Oliver  
Hollingsworth:  
918-582-3580

## TELEVISION

**EFFECTIVE LIVING**  
Aired in the West Coast  
on TBN every Thursday  
at 7:30 p.m. and  
Sundays at 2:00 a.m.

**Aired in the East Coast  
on Cornerstone  
Television every  
Thursday at 9:00 a.m.**

**Aired in Nassau,  
Bahamas on ZNS every  
Sunday at 10:00a.m.**

## The Wise King

Thus, you might learn from studying why the British failed to capture and hold the state and in determining how to govern his people well his kind of fishes. This showed God so much that He gave him Solomon with wisdom and riches.

Qing said, two women came to Jing  
Zi and one fighting over a baby.  
Qing woman said, 'It's my baby!'.  
'No! That's my baby!' said the other.  
Jing Zi then suggested that the  
baby be divided into two and each

King Solomon, being wise, saw that the baby belonged to the woman who cared for the child and gave the baby to her.

Mel  
 "How  
 are  
 the baby  
 boys  
 doing  
 now?  
 Don't  
 you know

Thank You God for giving me  
a new King. I  
will have my  
child to  
honor You  
Lord!

44:36 73

# *ESSENTIALS OF LEADERSHIP*



# *Essentials of Leadership*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*PARCHMENT HOUSE*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-98-1*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-98-1*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*



## *Contents*

<i>1. Recognize The Small Beginnings Of A Great Career .....</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>2. Treat People As Equals But Make The Differences Clear.....</i>	<i>4</i>
<i>3. Predict The Future In A General Way.....</i>	<i>9</i>
<i>4. Do Not Allow Yourself To Be Poisoned By Bitterness .....</i>	<i>12</i>
<i>5. Change People's Minds .....</i>	<i>15</i>
<i>6. Know A Little About Everything That Goes On.....</i>	<i>20</i>
<i>7. Be A Leader With Emotion .....</i>	<i>22</i>
<i>8. Take Your Privileges At The Right Time And For The Right Reason .....</i>	<i>26</i>
<i>9. Relate With Individuals And Relate With The Crowd.....</i>	<i>32</i>

<i>10. Overcome The Disadvantages Of Youthfulness And Inexperience By Studying History .....</i>	<i>35</i>
<i>11. Take Responsibility And Give Account .....</i>	<i>39</i>
<i>12. Don't Give Up Your Source Of Power! .....</i>	<i>41</i>

## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*



## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*

*For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to:*

*Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa*

Website:

*[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)*

E-mail:

*[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)*

# 1

## Recognize The Small Beginnings Of A Great Career

Many great careers begin in a small way. Unfortunately, many do not recognize the beginnings of greatness.

*Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end should greatly increase.*

*Job 8:7*

*For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the Lord, which run to and fro through the whole earth.*

*Zechariah 4:10*

The Bible teaches us not to despise small beginnings. Countless Christians throw away great careers in the ministry because they cannot recognize the beginnings of a great career. Never forget this! The greatest careers begin in the smallest ways.

A tiny mustard seed brings a mighty tree forth. There is no relationship between the size of the mustard seed and the size of the tree.

## **SIX PEOPLE WHO RECOGNIZED THE SMALL BEGINNING OF A GREAT CAREER**

### ***1. Elisha Began His Career As A Prophet By Washing The Hands Of Elijah***

*But Jehoshaphat said, Is there not here a prophet of the Lord, that we may enquire of the Lord by him? And one of the king of Israel's servants answered and said, Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, which poured water on the hands of Elijah.*

*2 Kings 3:11*

### ***2. The Great Army General Joshua Began His Career As A Servant To An Old Prophet***

*And Moses rose up, and his minister Joshua: and Moses went up into the mount of God.*

*Exodus 24:13*

### ***3. King David Began His Career By Playing Instruments In The King's Palace***

*And Saul sent to Jesse, saying, Let David, I pray thee, stand before me; for he hath found favour in my sight. And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that*

*David took an harp, and played with his hand: so Saul was refreshed, and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him.*

*1 Samuel 16:22,23*

#### **4. Aaron Began His Career By Holding Up The Hands Of Moses**

*But Moses' hands were heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon; and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun.*

*Exodus 17:12*

#### **5. Ruth Began Her Career By Helping An Elderly Frustrated Widow**

*And Ruth said, Intreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee: for whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge: thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God: Where thou diest, will I die, and there will I be buried: the LORD do so to me, and more also, if ought but death part thee and me.*

*Ruth 1:16,17*

#### **6. Jesus Began His Career As A Carpenter**

*Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.*

*Mark 6:3*



# 2

## Treat People As Equals But Make The Differences Clear

A good leader must strive to let people feel important. The reality is that you are the leader, so you are different.

### **FIVE WAYS TO MAKE EVERYONE AROUND YOU FEEL IMPORTANT**

#### ***1. Mingle With All Kinds Of People***

Jesus mingled with thieves (the two thieves at the cross), tax collectors (Matthew), fishermen (Peter), foreigners (the Syro-Phoenician woman), demonised people (Mary Magdalene), madmen (the madman of Gadara), priests (Nicodemus) and noblemen (Joseph of Arimathea). There was no strata of society where Jesus did not interact freely. Do not restrict yourself to one group of the society.

#### ***2. Do Not Call Or Describe Your Staff And Subordinates As Servants***

*Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called*

*you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.*

*John 15:15*

Nobody likes to be called a servant even if that is the case. Jesus specifically said that He did not call his disciples servants.

### ***3. Describe Your Staff, Subordinates And Junior Pastors As Your Friends***

*Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.*

*John 15:14*

I enjoy the friendship of the people who work for me. If I did not have them I would be very lonely.

### ***4. Describe The People Who Work For You As Your Family***

*But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.*

*Matthew 12:48-50*

This is one thing I have done all my life. I have never seen my pastors or workers as employees but as family. I actually hate being called “boss”. Let their family and personal problems

This is one thing I have done all my life. I have never seen my pastors or workers as employees but as family. I actually hate being called “boss”. Let their family and personal problems be your personal problems! Create a family spirit in your organization. It is a hundred times better than a formal, stiff organization.

### ***5. Tell Your Pastors Or Juniors About Yourself And Your Plans***

*...but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.*

*John 15:15b*

This is one thing that draws people close.

## **SIX WAYS TO MAKE THE DIFFERENCES CLEAR**

### ***1. Teach Them***

Jesus taught His disciples all the time. When you teach someone you establish the authority to lead them. The authority to lead is found in the ability to feed.

### ***2. Send Them***

Jesus sent His disciples to buy food.

*For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.*

*John 4:8*

Every time you send someone you establish the chain of command. You emphasize the chain of command that exists within the structure.

### **3. Bless Them**

Pray for your followers and bless them. There is a faithful saying that the lesser is blessed of the greater.

*And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better.*

*Hebrews 7:7*

### **4. Say Who You Are**

Jesus spoke of Himself confidently. He said that he was the way, the truth and the life. He said that he was the door. He said he was the good shepherd. There are times I have had to declare that I am the leader and founder of my little church. It is important for people to know that you know who you are.

### **5. Don't Be Afraid Of Being Different**

Jesus rode on a donkey whilst all His disciples walked. Garments were strewn on the floor for Him to walk on.

*And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon. And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.*

*Matthew 21:7,8*

Accept privileges that are exclusively yours. When you refuse to accept your privileges, you create anomalies and disorder. The Bible calls this an evil and an error (mistake) that emanates from the ruler.

*There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler: Folly is set in great dignity, and the rich sit in low place. I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth.*

*Ecclesiastes 10:5-7*

## **6. Allow Yourself To Be Honoured**

Jesus allowed himself to be honoured by Mary. He permitted the expensive gift that was poured on His feet.

*Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.*

*John 12:3*

# 3

## Predict The Future In A General Way

*Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.*

*John 16:32,33*

A leader is someone who sees ahead. Generally speaking, a good leader is able to predict what will happen in the future. Jesus said that the disciples would experience persecution. And they certainly did! You don't need to be a special prophet to know that the members of a new group will experience some trouble.

*Using a combination of history, common sense, the Word of God and the Spirit of God, every leader can generally predict the way things will go. The Bible teaches us that there is nothing new under the sun. The Bible says explicitly that what is going to happen is only what has happened already.*

*The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;  
and that which is done is that which shall be done:  
and there is no new thing under the sun.*

*Ecclesiastes 1:9*

A good manager should be able to predict from the general trend of affairs that certain businesses are going to go out of date in the near future. Certain politicians must see that the course on which they are walking will only end in disaster. Ministers of the gospel must be able to predict the future in a general way. I am not talking about predicting events and dates. I am talking about using common sense!

A few years ago, I realized that members of my congregation were moving to different parts of the city. I also realized that the city was becoming very large. I predicted that many of the members who were living far away would stop coming to church because of the distance. I could predict it because I could predict human behaviour.

As a leader, I notice my people don't come to church when it rains. I notice how they come one week and they don't come the next. It is my duty to see that when it is very inconvenient the sheep will no longer follow. That is why I began metropolitan churches in the city of Accra.

Today, we have over fifty-five metropolitan churches in the city of Accra alone. We have thousands of members in these citywide churches. If I had not acted on my observation and predicted, I would have lost thousands of members. I am not talking about predicting when Jesus will return. I am talking about predicting the obvious and seeing ahead as a wise leader.



# 4

## Do Not Allow Yourself To Be Poisoned By Bitterness

A priest in the Old Testament was not supposed to have boils.

*Speak unto Aaron, saying, Whosoever he be of thy seed in their generations that hath any blemish, let him not approach to offer the bread of his God. For whatsoever man he be that hath a blemish, he shall not approach: a blind man, or a lame, or he that hath a flat nose, or any thing superfluous, Or a man that is brokenfooted, or brokenhanded, Or crookbackt, or a dwarf, or that hath a blemish in his eye, or be scurvy, or scabbed, or hath his stones broken; No man that hath a BLEMISH of the seed of Aaron the priest shall come nigh to offer the offerings of the Lord made by fire: he hath a blemish; he shall not come nigh to offer the bread of his God. He shall eat the bread of his God, both of the most holy, and of the holy. Only he shall not go in unto the vail, nor come nigh unto the altar, because he hath a BLEMISH; that he profane not my sanctuaries: for I the Lord do sanctify them. And Moses told it unto Aaron, and to his sons, and unto all the children of Israel.*

Boils represent unhealed wounds. Leadership is accompanied by wounds, offences and pain. You cannot allow the wounds of leadership to discolour your attitude.

## **FOUR DANGERS OF BITTERNESS IN A LEADER**

### ***1. A Bitter Leader Can Begin To Mistrust God***

There are many unexplained events in the life of a Christian leader. Even in secular politics the good often do not win. The bad and ugly may win elections whilst the good lose out.

I remember when two of my young pastors died suddenly within three weeks of each other. One was twenty-seven years old and the other was thirty-eight years old. What possible explanation was there to such an event? As I comforted the wives of these two pastors I wondered to myself, “As a messenger of God what explanation could I give to a wife who had been married for only seven months?”

What explanation could the church give when James, the brother of John, was killed by Herod? Didn't the early church need the contribution of James to build a solid foundation for the church? Why did God allow James, the brother of John, to be taken away at such a time? Was soul winning not important? Was church planting not important? Was there not a need for more laborers? How could God allow such a thing?

Inspite of the inexplicable occurrences of this life, a leader must continue to trust.

## ***2. A Bitter Leader Can Begin To Hate The People He Leads***

As human beings manifest their nature of betrayal, ungratefulness and forgetfulness, a leader can gradually become bitter towards the flock. I have experienced many painful things. I have learnt that I *must* forgive and move on. Without a sweet spirit I will not be pleasing to God. Every bitter experience is a test of my ability to walk in love. I always pray that I will pass these tests.

## ***3. A Bitter Leader Can Hate His Contemporaries And Colleagues In Ministry***

Unfortunately, it is your contemporaries in leadership who seem to wish you ill more than anyone else. Even unbelievers do not have some of the hateful attitudes that contemporaries and colleagues seem to have! God has given us all of these so that we may truly walk in love towards all men. If you fail to walk in love, your ministry will amount to nothing in the presence of God.

*And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I AM NOTHING.*

*1 Corinthians 13:2*

## ***4. A Bitter Leader Will Have A Distorted Message***

Bitterness is described in Hebrews as a root which defiles many people. It is akin to poison in your drinking water. One of the things that bitterness poisons is your message. A bitter person has a discoloured and distorted message. Do not let your pain prevent you from ministering God's love to people.

# 5

## **Change People's Minds**

The art of changing people's minds is a very important skill that you must develop if you call yourself a leader. The art of persuasion is a basic art of leadership. When somebody has an opinion about something and you are able to change that opinion, then you are operating as a leader.

Thomas' opinion was that the resurrection was not real. Jesus worked on that and in the end Thomas believed in the resurrection. Do you care whether people believe in heaven or hell? If you do not care about what opinions people hold, you cannot be a leader. Perhaps, people have bad impressions about men of God. A leader can work on those people's minds until they are thinking aright!

The pastor often gets people to change their minds about life. His job is to make them love God and serve Him. Perhaps they were serving money, but through the ministry of a true pastor (leader) they believe that service to God is more important than anything else.

# SEVEN WAYS TO MAKE PEOPLE CHANGE THEIR MINDS

## ***1. Teach Them The Word Of God***

*“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*

*Romans 12:2*

This scripture teaches that we will be changed or transformed when our minds have been renewed. The Word of God is the best tool for making people change their mind. There is power in the Word of God that is why Paul said, “I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ for *it is the power of God...*”

## ***2. Make Them Go To Church***

Church provides a regular mind-changing forum for anyone. Show me your church and I'll show you the way you think.

## ***3. Make Them Have Certain Friends***

Your company influences you more than your church. This is because you are with your friends for several hours a week whilst you may be in church for just a couple of hours a week. Like the saying goes, “Show me your friend, and I'll show you your character”.

*Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.*

*1 Corinthians 15:33*

#### ***4. Introduce Them To Successful People Who Have The Kind Of Mind You Want Them To Have***

This is the secret of the Full Gospel Businessmen Fellowship International. They introduce successful Christian businessmen to sinners and show them that it is possible to be a successful businessman. Through this method many people are saved (In other words, change their minds).

#### ***5. Share Your Own Testimony***

A personal testimony is always a powerful instrument to change the mind. Paul used this method on King Agrippa. The entire chapter of Acts 26 describes Paul sharing his testimony to the king. At the end of this powerful personal testimony King Agrippa said,

*Paul, ALMOST THOU PERSUADEST ME to be a Christian.*

*Acts 26:28*

#### ***6. Pray For Them***

The state of the mind is a very spiritual thing. That is why Paul prayed that the Ephesians would be given a Spirit of revelation and wisdom. You may hear preaching and teaching but without revelation change never comes.

*That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:*

*Ephesians 1:17*

## ***7. Allow Them To Have Certain Experiences***

No matter what you say or preach, some people never change their minds. For such people the school of experience (and hard knocks!) may be the only teacher they will listen to. Allowing people to experience certain things is sometimes the only way to make their minds work in the right way. Sometimes I allow pastors to go through certain experiences. For instance, when people have the experience of starting a church, they often appreciate many of the things I teach.

I once had a pastor who did not appreciate the way I was handling another disloyal assistant. He thought I was not walking in love towards this rebellious fellow. No matter how much I explained the issues to this pastor, he still felt I was doing the wrong thing. In the end, I prayed that God would give him his own share of rebellious assistants. God really answered that prayer and he had one experience after another.

One day he called me on the phone and told me that after having his own experience with disloyal people, he felt that I had been too lenient and kind with my rebellious pastor. I smiled to myself because I remembered his former attitude about that issue. This pastor's mind had really changed and now he felt that I was too loving to the rebel.

This is a very scriptural method to change people's minds. You will have to use it because there are many things that can only be learned by experience. The Father even trained Jesus by this method. The Bible says Jesus learned obedience through the things he experienced.

*Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;*

*Hebrews 5:8*

A leader is someone who uses all means at his disposal to make people change their minds. Have you been able to make someone change his mind about something?

*But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*

*John 20:24-29*



# 6

## **Know A Little About Everything That Goes On**

The best leaders are people who know something about everything. A leader must know a little about everything. This is why many organizations train their leaders by taking them to every department.

I know something about law, medicine, accounting, management, administration and carpentry. I know a bit about construction. I have learnt a lot about engineering and architecture. I also know a bit about electronics, music equipment, computers, and the list goes on. I engage in debates with all the professionals I deal with. They know that I know something about their field. They know that I cannot be pushed around like an ignoramus.

You will never be a good leader if you do not have an idea about what goes on. The fact that you are a layperson in a certain field means that you should read up and educate yourself.

When a decision is taken in the field of accounting under your banner, you are responsible. That is why it is important to know a bit about everything. Never say, “Oh, that is medicine. I don’t know, I don’t care, and I don’t want to know!” There is a lot that you can know and must know!

# 7

## **Be A Leader With Emotion**

People are attracted to people who show emotion. Don't be afraid of showing emotion. People will gather around you and listen to what you have to say because you are real. There is no need to live in pretence because you are a leader. Everyone born on this earth laughs, cries, gets angry and becomes happy. There are highs and lows in everyone's life.

To be a leader you must exhibit reality. We live in a real world with lots of problems. A leader is a real human being with real emotions. A leader will experience all the emotions his followers feel. Most people don't know what to do with their emotions. If they find someone who is successful in spite of the real emotions he feels, they would like to relate with him.

**EIGHT REASONS WHY PEOPLE WHO SHOW  
EMOTION ARE ATTRACTIVE**

***1. People Who Do Not Show Emotion Are Often Boring And Not Interesting To Be With***

***2. People Who Do Not Show Emotion Kill The Atmosphere Around Them***

It is very tense to sit with a strict and unsmiling individual who makes no contribution or comment about the conversation going on.

***3. Emotionless Men And Women Are Often Strict, Stern, Authoritarian, Exacting And Rigorous***

***4. Emotionless People May Be Phoney And Artificial***

People simply do not want to deal with a pretender.

***5. People Feel That If Someone Reveals His True Emotions, The Things He Says Will Also Be True***

***6. A Show Of Emotion Stirs Up The Emotions Of Others***

When people are stirred up emotionally, they become more committed.

***7. People Love To Listen To A Preacher Who Ministers Varied Emotions Of Joy, Anger, Sadness And Suspense***

***8. Jesus, Our Great Example Setter, Showed Emotion On Many Occasions***

## **FIVE EXAMPLES OF JESUS SHOWING EMOTION**

### ***1. Jesus was excited when he saw the man with great faith***

*When Jesus heard these things, he MARVELLED at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.*

*Luke 7:9*

### ***2. Jesus Wept Over Cities***

*And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and WEPT over it,*

*Luke 19:41*

### ***3. Jesus Was Moved With Compassion For Lost And Helpless People***

*But when he saw the multitudes, HE WAS MOVED WITH COMPASSION on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few;*

*Matthew 9:36,37*

### ***4. Jesus Was Angry With Hypocrites***

*And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: And when he had made a scourge of small cords, HE DROVE THEM ALL OUT OF THE TEMPLE, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;*  
*John 2:13-15*

### ***5. Jesus Wept Over Individuals***

*Jesus WEPT. Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!*

*John 11:35,36*

# 8

## **Take Your Privileges At The Right Time And For The Right Reason**

*There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler. FOLLY IS SET IN GREAT DIGNITY, and the rich sit in low place. I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth.*

*Ecclesiastes 10:5-7*

A leader must be a humble person but he must also be confident. The Bible teaches that it is foolishness when a leader refuses to sit in the appropriate place reserved for him. When it is time to take your privileges, you had better take them or you will be considered a fool. Leadership is not only sacrifice. Leadership is not only responsibility. Leadership goes along with certain privileges and blessings.

## **Obedience is More Important Than Sacrifice**

God's call is to obedience and not sacrifice per se. There are times when obedience will mean you have to sacrifice. If you sacrifice when God has not asked you to do so, you will separate yourself from God. Do not forget how Saul was separated from God because he sacrificed things that God had not asked him to.

*And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king.*

*1 Samuel 15:22,23*

## **When Princes Must Sit on Horses**

There is a time when princes must sit on horses and servants must walk upon the earth. "I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth." (Ecclesiastes 10:7). Do not be shy to earn money for all the hard work you put in. I feel sorry for ministers of the gospel who are treated like beggars who don't deserve anything. I know of churches where the pastors are not given money, but all of their domestic needs are taken care of. Church members come to inspect whether there is enough soap and toilet paper in the house. How pathetic! Do the pastors not have enough common sense to buy their own toilet paper?



## **The Error**

I have watched church after church enter into crisis because a car was being bought for the pastor. Special funds were raised and the pastor's car became a controversial church matter. When people work at other institutions, is the purchase of a car a special project? Is it not their due? Why are pastors treated like undeserving idlers?

I work hard as a minister of the gospel. I deserve to be paid well. The Bible teaches that they that preach the gospel must live off the gospel.

*Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel.*

*1 Corinthians 9:14*

## **Sowing Without Reaping**

*The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.*

*2 Timothy 2:6*

I must be able to have a good car for my safety and comfort. I must be able to build a house. There is nothing wrong with that! But there is something wrong when a man sows and does not reap. Everybody knows that! A leader must know when it is time to take his place and enjoy his benefits. It is a mistake to refuse your privileges and blessings when it is your turn to have them. I didn't call it a mistake, the Bible did! The Bible calls it the ERROR that proceedeth from a ruler!

## When Princes Eat in the Morning

Some nations have had leaders who begin their rule by drinking the lifeblood of the nation. Before a nation can blink, the leaders have siphoned out everything.

I recently visited a wealthy African nation that produces large amounts of oil. Would you believe that this nation, one of the largest producers of oil in the world, had severe petrol shortages? It was amazing! There were very long queues in every city I visited. Fuel was sold only on the black market.

It was later reported that the head of state of that nation had a billion dollars in petty cash. What is a president doing with a billion dollars of petty cash? These vampires have lined their pockets whilst the masses of the nation struggle to make ends meet. Is it not ironic that a nation that supplies a significant percentage of the world's oil, suffers from fuel shortages? This is what the Bible calls "princes eating in the morning". The prince represents the leader and the morning represents the wrong time.

*Woe to thee, O land, when thy king is a child, and thy princes eat in the morning! Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness!*

*Ecclesiastes 10:16,17*

Dear friend, when a nation or church has an opportunist at the helm of affairs, get ready for frustration and poverty!

In our church, we have a policy that puts the church before the pastor. What do I mean by this? We believe the church must come before the pastor's welfare. This means that the church building is constructed and the church is given a sound footing before the pastor's benefits are considered.

## **When Princes Eat in Due Season**

*Privileges become blessings only when they come at the right time.* When they come too soon, it destroys everything. Some people buy cars that they cannot even afford to maintain. Someone once said, “Don’t buy a car unless you can afford to maintain three of the same thing.” Some people live in houses that they cannot afford to maintain. Why worry yourself? Why do you try to impress people? Be yourself and do not rush to possess certain privileges. As the Lord lifts you up, you will receive everything you need at the right time.

*He hath made every thing beautiful in his time...*

*Ecclesiastes 3:11*

Beauty is only beauty within the context of the “right time”. Have you ever noticed that when you look at pictures taken twenty years ago, you often look odd? Why is this? Because they have been taken out of their “time”.

## **His Time is the Right Time**

That car or home will only be a real blessing when it comes at the right time. If it comes too soon, it will not be a blessing. It will cause problems for you. Everyone is happy when a married woman gets pregnant. It is a blessing to be pregnant. However, when an unmarried teenager becomes pregnant, we are not happy. Why is this? Because the pregnancy has been taken out of its context of the “right time”.

Are you a leader or a hungry vampire? Wait patiently to take your privileges at the right time. Do not rush; you will only destroy yourself, your business, your church or your nation. Do not kill the hen that lays your golden eggs. Keep it alive so that it can lay golden eggs for you for many more years!

# 9

## **Relate With Individuals And Relate With The Crowd**

*There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.*

*John 4:7,9,13-15*

Jesus was somebody who handled great crowds. He had a team of pastors He was training. Jesus also had a busy schedule. But when He met the woman of Samaria, he took a little time and spoke to her as an individual. A leader is someone who

knows how to relate with individuals. Jesus did not know whether this woman was rich or poor. He just treated her as a human being who needed His help.

Every human being is a complex composition of spirit, soul and body. Every human being has his fears, mistakes and successes in the background. Jesus spoke to a woman with a whole lot of problems. He was able to help her. If God has called you to be a leader, you must help *individuals* with needs. Do not treat a human being as a mere number. Anyone who treats his members as “just one of the masses” will soon discover that he loses their support.

Jesus started His ministry fully aware that He was going to relate with poor people. He was going to minister to the broken- hearted and to people that were bound. Dear leader, remember that each individual needs special attention.

*And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.*

*John 6:10*

Jesus knew how to handle large groups of people as well as individuals. When you are handling a crowd, you must know how to behave. You must dress properly and speak wisely. Many people in the crowd want to know what the truth is. A good leader transmits appropriate information to the crowd.

## **KEYS TO RELATING WITH THE CROWD**

### ***1. Give Them Accurate And Timely Information***

Do not tell them that you will raise their salaries when you will not.

## ***2. Do Not Make Useless Promises***

People get tired of vain promises.

## ***3. Announce As Much Good News As You Can***

If a new branch has started, announce it. If a miracle has taken place, tell the people. The people will not know until you tell them. Good news creates a good feeling in the crowd. Every wise government spends a lot of money informing the general population about what they want them to know. That is how they are able to keep the masses in check. Good news encourages everyone. That is how to control the crowds. Bad news discourages the followers.

## ***4. Do Not Speak Down At The People***

People like to feel respected. Even the tone of your voice can indicate whether you respect the people or not! As you sow love and respect you will reap admiration and many “following” hearts.





## ***Chapter One***

# ***Christian Forgiveness***

**And that ye put on the NEW MAN...**

**Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice:**

**And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.**

**Eph 4:24, 31&32.**

The Bible tells us that when we are born again, we become '*new men*', or '*new creatures*'.

When a man becomes a Doctor or an Army Officer, he is expected to behave in a certain way. In the same way, a certain pattern of behaviour is expected of anyone who claims to be a Christian or a 'new man'.

**One of the primary qualities of a new man is that he forgives.** The new man should not live in unforgiveness.

According to Biblical principles, the new man must not live his life according to what goes on in this world. **In the world, people hardly forgive.** It is natural for a person not to forgive, but to seek revenge. However, when you become a new man, God expects you to forgive.

**Indeed, one cardinal difference between the Christian and the unbeliever is that the Christian has the ability to forgive and release the offender.**

A new man must be able to forgive!

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***The ‘Lord’s Prayer’ Test***

Now, how can you be sure that you have forgiven somebody? Often we say, “I have forgiven. I have nothing in my heart against him.” **But you will find that there’s still a grudge you bear somewhere in your heart.**

As a pastor, I have stood in the pulpit and said that I had nothing against anybody. But in reality, I had *something* against someone. I thought that I had forgiven the person. Unknowingly, I had not. Later into the year, I realized that I really hadn’t forgiven this person.

Through my search of the scriptures, the Lord showed me what I call the ‘Lord’s Prayer Test’. This is a test to prove whether you have truly forgiven your offenders.

### ***THE TEST:***

Pray The Lord’s Prayer. Keep praying. When you get to the point where you generally refer to those who trespass against you, you should **specifically mention the name of the person who offended you.** It is important to

specifically mention the name of that person.

So the prayer becomes, **“...And forgive me for my trespasses, as I forgive Araba Lucy.”** In other words, **“If I have not forgiven Araba Lucy for her sins against me, Please do not forgive me!!!”**

**If you are able to pray like that, asking God to forgive you specifically in relation to your forgiveness of certain people in your life, it is very likely that you have forgiven them. However, if you can't mention the person by name in this prayer, then you have not forgiven!**

Think of that man who promised to marry you. You waited for him for six years. But he deceived you and ruined your life. Remember you need to forgive even him. Insert his name into the Lord's Prayer, to see whether you have really forgiven him.

Apply the Lord's Prayer Test to every ugly or unpleasant situation you have ever encountered. This will ensure that you have truly forgiven the person because you need to!

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***493 Trillion vrs 28 Thousand***

Often, even as new men, Christians find it difficult to forgive, because they least expected that that particular person would hurt them. The feeling is that if anybody would hurt you, it wouldn't be this particular person.

Sometimes best friends become worst enemies. Yes, even husbands and wives can become sworn enemies. The closest person who told you he loved and cared for you, can become your worst enemy.

**But as new men, we need to remember that God has forgiven us for lots of horrible things.**

To illustrate this, Jesus told the parable of the unforgiving servant. He compared the Kingdom of God to a certain King who wanted to settle accounts with all his servants. One servant owed him 10,000 talents. When he

was unable to pay, the King thought of selling him, his wife, children and all his property. But the servant begged for mercy.

**...Lord, have patience with me... Then the lord... was moved with compassion, and... FORGAVE him the debt.**

**Matt. 18:26-27**

However, this same servant found a fellow servant who owed him just 100 pence and immediately hell broke loose. Despite his cry for mercy, the unforgiving servant threw his fellow servant into prison, till he settled all his debts. This was reported to the King.

**Then his Lord... said... O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt... Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant...? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors... likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.**

**Matt. 18: 32-35**

Talents could be either gold or silver talents.

One golden talent is worth \$29,085 US dollars. One talent of silver is equivalent to 1,920 US dollars.

10,000 gold talents is two hundred and ninety million and

eight hundred and fifty thousand dollars (\$290,850,000).

Current conversion of \$290m into Ghanaian cedis becomes four hundred and ninety-three trillion cedis — that is ₵493,000,000,000,000. That is the amount that this young servant owed his master.

The equivalent of 100 pence in cedis is twenty-eight thousand and nine hundred cedis (₵28,900).

**God has forgiven us ₵493,000,000,000,000 and we are required to forgive our friends ₵28,900.**

Perhaps you think that you were not a bad person, even as an unbeliever. Maybe you were not a diamond thief or a drug pusher, so you think this 490 trillion does not apply in your case. It applies to everyone who has been a sinner before. Without raising a finger or uttering a word, man's heart is already wicked. (Jer. 17:9).

Sometimes, in talking about what somebody has done to us, we forget that we have also wronged God and man before.

From God's point of view, a new man who cannot forgive, is rather strange.

God will forgive if you murder, lie, fornicate, commit adultery and practice witchcraft. **However, God will not forgive you if you bear someone a grudge.**

**...forgive... that your Father also... may forgive you your trespasses.**

**Mk. 11:25.**

**That is the point at which God stops forgiving you.**

If you have an unforgiving nature, the implications are far-reaching. It indicates that perhaps you are not a new man, or that you are just a pretending Christian.

Over the years, I have come to see and believe that unforgiveness is one sin that God will not forgive. **It may be for you the difference between life and death.** Moreover, the sin of unforgiveness is to me, even more dangerous than the sin of fornication.

Often, because unforgiveness is not seen physically, many Christians feel that they can get away with it. But it is deadly if it is left unchecked in your heart. God will not hear your prayer, and He will not prosper or bless you if unforgiveness lingers in your life.

**God will be angry with you, because He forgave you, but you would not forgive others!** Remember, the Bible tells us the Lord was wroth with his servant for not forgiving. In addition, the Bible says the man who did not forgive his brother was handed over to the tormentors.

**Many Christians do not know why they are being tormented in this life. It could be because of unforgiveness.**

Many times, we commit the same sins over and over



again. Then we come to God expecting him to forgive us.

God looks at our numerous sins and says, “Okay, I have forgiven you.” But we come back with the same sin over and over and God has to forgive us.

**Now, if we refuse to forgive our brothers in the same way, don’t you think God will be angry with us?**

## *Chapter Four*

# ***Signs of Lingering Unforgiveness***

Sometimes unforgiveness lingers on and on, even long after the offence has been committed. People even bear grudges against dead relatives and enemies. It is a dangerous condition!!

What are the signs of lingering unforgiveness?

### **1. MALICE**

According to Ephesians 4:31, one of the signs of unforgiveness is **malice**.

**...and evil speaking, be put away from you with all malice...**

**Malice according to the dictionary means, ‘a desire to harm others’.**

When Brother ‘A’ does something against you, and you have the desire to harm or hurt him, that is malice. **The desire to harm others shows you that you haven’t for-**

**given the offender.** When you have truly forgiven, you won't desire to harm the person. Do you think God desires to harm you? Can you imagine what would happen to you if ever God should decide to harm you?

If you are a wife and you have a secret desire to harm or punish your husband, then that is malice. Sometimes wives punish their husbands by denying them sex. Some women cannot 'commit' love with their husbands because of something he did. I have heard some women complain, "I can't bring myself to take off my clothes and do this with him. I'll go crazy if I have to sleep with him again."

Once you feel this way, you have not forgiven.

One way you can tell that you have not forgiven, is **when you feel uncomfortable at the mention of the offender's name.** At the point when you can say, "Lord, I let him go" or "God will take care of it", then malice is gone. **But when you curse the offender, wish him ill or plan how to hurt him, then malice is still lingering.**

You might complain and wonder why people hurt you so often. That is not the point! God expects us to forgive. **Malice must go away!**

## 2. ANGER

The dictionary defines anger as a strong feeling of **hostility and displeasure.**

I remember one lady came with her husband to the Church office. The husband said something which was not exactly complimentary about his wife. She exploded. The hostility was so glaring, and her behaviour was so bad

that her husband rebuked her. “Is this the way to talk? Don’t you respect the pastor?”, he asked her. Then I sensed that the strong feelings of hostility between the husband and the wife were because of unforgiveness.

If you have this strong feeling of hostility when ever you see someone who once offended you, then there is some unforgiveness lingering in your heart.

### 3. WRATH

Wrath can also be defined as **extreme anger**.

**One sign of the presence of extreme anger is that the person begins to act ‘wild’.**

Once, a man was so angry that he threw all the lunch that had been set before him on the wall. Afterwards, when tempers had cooled, he had to struggle to clean the stained wall (anger really makes you do some foolish things!). **Extreme anger or wrath is a sign of lingering unforgiveness.**

### 4. CLAMOUR

The dictionary defines clamour as **loud abusive language, and loud demands or protests**.

How can you come to church so nicely dressed, looking so sweet and holy, and then go home and quarrel everyday with everyone? If your next door neighbour was to be recording the string of loud abuses, your pastors would be surprised at your behaviour.

I believe that a Christian should not be loud and abu-

sive in any circumstance.

**Clamour or loud abusive language is a sign of lingering unforgiveness.** I know of a Christian church where there was so much disharmony that the pastors fought openly in church. They shouted at each other, and even used tear gas on each other. What a disgrace!

## **5. EVIL SPEAKING OR SLANDER**

To slander is to **say bad things about someone, or to backbite.**

When someone slanders another person, usually what is said about that person is false. **Those who slander, often have the intention of destroying another person.** People who slander their spouses must be watched very carefully. Slandorous people are often full of bitterness.

There may be genuine complaints. But when it is continuous, then such a spouse has a deep-seated problem of unforgiveness.

A husband once complained to me, “Pastor, my wife is very wicked. In fact, she is a witch! If you have ever seen a witch before, you’ll know what I’m talking about.” I told him, “Then you must have been a wizard to have married her!” **I take particular notice of people who say negative things to bring others down.**

I have heard pastors speak carelessly and negatively about other ministers. Sometimes these are people with whom they claim to have a good relationship. I take particular notice of such ministers. From my own experience

I have come to know that, **“He who talks to you about others will talk to others about you.”**

## **6. BITTERNESS**

Bitterness can be defined as **degenerated unforgiveness**. I define bitterness as a long-standing degenerated unforgiveness.

The word “degenerate” is defined as **‘to pass into a worse state than one which is considered normal or desirable’**. Thus, when a situation passes from one stage to a worse state, it can be described as degeneration. Unforgiveness which stays in your heart for a long period of time, degenerates into bitterness.

**The cardinal sign of bitterness is that it begins to poison other people.**

The Bible cautions that when bitterness is permitted, it will spill over and defile others.

**...lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.**

**Heb. 12:15.**

I know some people who are so filled with hatred for their wives, husbands, mothers, fathers, or other relatives. A good example of a bitter person is a woman who has been hurt by a man.

The story line is often similar: The man approached you and told you, “I love you honey. You are the sweetest

lady I've ever known, and I want to love you. When I saw you, my heart moved from the left to the right. I want you to know that if you were on the other side of the Mediterranean, I would swim across just to bring you some ice cream!" Perhaps he also said, "There is only one pebble I see whenever I walk on the beach and **THAT IS YOU!**"

You believed it when he told you he had seen many ladies, but that you were different. What you didn't know was that he had *other* pebbles on the beach, and that he had told *other* ladies these same stories.

You were a virgin and wanted to remain so until you married, but he convinced you to give in to him, with the promise that he would marry you anyway. So he began sleeping with you. You did things you never dreamt of doing with your body. In fact, you also had to commit several abortions because you were not ready for babies.

Then, one day he lets out the bomb, that he can not marry you after all.

So many suitors wanted to marry you at the prime of your youth, but you refused them because of this 'sweet talker'. Then after you turned thirty-eight, most men shied away from you.

Now you bear this man a grudge. You begin to hate him. Then, you begin to hate him with a passion. With time, you have come to hate all men.

**You couldn't forgive that man, so you have lumped all men into this category. Your hurt has become a long-standing degenerated type of unforgiveness — bitterness.**

**Sometimes such people begin to champion women's causes out of bitterness.** They may remain unmarried for the rest of their lives. It can even develop and degenerate further into lesbianism. Lesbians are often bitter women, bitter against men who perhaps hurt them sometime in their lives.

**Men can also be bitter against women.** I remember a London taxi driver told me of his experience. Because of this experience he has vowed never to marry. He had a live-in girlfriend whom he looked after. He took her to school, paid her fees, fed her and gave her everything she wanted for years. If she wanted anything, all she needed to do was to ask. She was almost like a wife.

Then at a point, he began to suspect her of infidelity. So one day, he told her that he was going on a business trip and would return after a week. To be certain that she would believe his story, he asked her to see him off.

He went to the Kings Cross Station with her, got on a train and waved goodbye to her. But at the next stop he got down, took another train and came back into town.

He did not go straight back home, but went to a drinking pub to while away the time till two a.m. Then he went home. When he climbed upstairs and entered the bedroom, here was his 'girlfriend-wife', in his bed with another man. Both of them were stark naked in *his* bed. So he threw her naked out of his flat and called the police.

After this experience he decided never to get married, or trust any woman. **He couldn't forgive that girl, and he has now extended it to all other women.**



When such hurt degenerates into hatred, it is bitterness!  
**Beware of becoming bitter after bad experiences!**

When a bitter person speaks it affects, influences and poisons others.

Dear friend, as you read this, ask yourself: Am I bitter?

## *Chapter Five*

# *Forgiveness Made Easy*

### **Why is it so difficult for people to forgive?**

Often, hurting people find it difficult to forgive because they cannot believe that the offender was the same person they trusted so much.

This could explain the unwillingness of some spouses to forgive, when their husbands or wives cheat on them.

**Sometimes the emotional pain one goes through is almost unbearable. And as human beings it is not easy to forget.** Though we may find it difficult to forgive, God is saying to us is that it is very important to forgive no matter how traumatic the pain may be.

I want to share with you six steps that will make forgiveness easier for you.

### **1. ANALYSE THE OFFENDER**

There is the need to analyse the offender very well — that is, the person who did whatever to hurt you. Luke

23:34 gives an example of Jesus analysing the offenders. He said,

**Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do...**

As the people were killing and destroying him, he looked at them and said, **“Father, forgive them”**. Jesus was not just forgiving them himself. He had gone a step further, and was asking someone else to forgive them for the evil that they had done to him.

The Son of God explained why they needed to be forgiven: because “they know not what they do.”

If you analyse the offender, you will realise that although he is doing evil, **he may not be fully aware of the implications of his action**. As soon as you analyse it this way, it will help you relate well with whoever offended you.

Let me share with you a personal experience. I remember when one of my junior pastors was extremely rude to me. This pastor spoke in a way he should never have spoken — least of all, to me.

He shouted and threatened me. I was then sitting with one of my senior associate pastors. As this was going on, I looked at him and I said to myself, “He does not know what he is doing.” As he continued displaying and behaving in an unbecoming manner, I said to myself, “I am very sure he doesn’t know what he is doing. Maybe he is confused or disturbed.”

Later on, my associate said he thought I would dismiss

him immediately, because the junior pastor's behaviour was appalling. But I made the excuse for him that he did not know what he was doing or he would not have behaved in this way. And it helped me to relate with him.

**Learn to make excuses for people. Jesus made excuses for his own murderers!** Perhaps your offender is sick, ignorant or confused.

If you are able to analyse those who offend you in this way, you will be able to forgive them.

**By analysing in this way, you will find that you have the capacity within you to forgive.**

It helps you to understand why a person behaves in a particular way. Otherwise, you can never forgive.

## **2. ANALYSE YOUR PAST SINS**

When you analyse your past sins, you will find out that you will not be so hasty to judge anybody. This is because you might have done the same thing (or something worse) before. Probably, you might have acted the same way if you had been confronted with the same issue.

Gal. 6:1 cautions:

**If any man is overtaken in a fault, ye who are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness, considering thyself lest thou also be tempted.**

When you consider yourself, you will be more willing to forgive. When you think about your past sins, you will realise that you are not any better.

During the ministry of Jesus, some people who felt they were ‘holier’ brought a woman who had been caught in adultery. They wanted to punish her by stoning her. Jesus, who understood this principle of analysing people’s past, asked for any man who had not sinned to throw the first stone. No one dared throw a stone because they all knew they had past sins.

**When you consider your own self you won’t be so hasty to judge other people.**

As a born again believer, you should be forgiving, especially when unbelievers offend you. *Just remember what you did as an unbeliever.* If it had not been for Christ, perhaps you would have done worse things.

Jesus said, **Father, forgive the unbelievers for they know not what they do.**

So analyse your past when you find it difficult to forgive your neighbour.

### **3. ANALYSE THE OUTCOME**

Out of jealousy and hatred, Joseph’s brothers sold him into slavery. **After thirty years, God raised him from prison to become the Prime Minister of Egypt.**

Unaware of his new identity, his brothers came to him for help during a severe famine. Later, Joseph revealed himself to them. Out of remorse they fell down and begged him to be merciful to them. Joseph forgave them when he analysed the outcome of their misconduct.

**...be not grieved, nor angry with yourself, that ye**

**sold me hither: For God did send me before you to preserve life... to preserve you a posterity in the earth, and to save your life... it was not you that sent me hither, but God...**

**Gen. 45:5,7,8**

Sometimes, when you analyse the way things have turned out, or the way things are going to turn out, you can easily forgive.

I remember that years ago, when I founded my church as a young medical student, I invited a pastor from one of the great Charismatic churches in Ghana, to come to my church and minister. This man of God who had been preaching and encouraging us in my little fellowship at the University for many months, sent a message to me that, *he would not 'sow amongst thorns'*.

**Upon starting a church, I had suddenly been rejected by a man of God I highly respected.**

So I asked myself, “When did we become ‘thorns’?” Because he had been preaching in my fellowship of ‘thorns’ for many months!

I was very surprised, because I thought then, that he was my friend. Instead, he rather influenced my associate to leave me and the church. This almost broke up the baby church. He then told my associate to be careful not to associate with someone who was not ‘called’.

This departure of my immediate assistant generated all sorts of problems among my own church members, *who now began to analyse me, whether I was ‘called’ or not.*

That was not the only trial. I was also under fire everywhere. Some of my classmates in the Medical School called me names, as I carried the church drums and instruments up and down to church.

**“Why should you start a church? Who are you? Who do you think you are?”**, they asked me.

When I was going to get married, my parents-in-law went to see one pastor to ask to use his church as our wedding venue. We did not have a church building then. He told them that he would allow us to use his church only on the condition that we close down the Lighthouse Chapel. I had no more friends.

I remember inviting all the pastors I knew to my wedding. Believe it or not — **no one showed up**. When pastors were called to take photographs with the bridal train, there were none. I was completely rejected. **It was as though I was evil. People just threw me away for starting a new church. At a point I felt like committing suicide.**

**But now, I realise that the Lord wanted me to be independent of man’s help and praise.** The Lord wanted me to stand on my own, go through the pains that I had to go through, and rise up to bear a particular fruit in His Kingdom. Today, the ‘small rejected’ church has expanded not only in Ghana, but has branches all over the world. **It worked!**

Recently I saw some of these people who rejected me and **I told them exactly what Joseph said to his brothers: “You meant it for evil but God turned it out for**

**good.”**

God knows that I don't bear them any grudge. These people are all my friends today, because God has helped me to forgive.

When you look at the outcome, you realize that you have the ability to forgive!!

#### **4. SEE THE DISADVANTAGES OF UNFORGIVENESS**

Are there any disadvantages of unforgiveness?

**YES!**

**God will not forgive you for any of your sins, and you are not going to have any prayer answered. Moreover, the devil will torment you.**

Powerful men of God may lay hands on you, but the tormentors will still be there.

I heard of a pastor's wife who was suffering from multiple sclerosis. She had suffered emotional hurts from within and without the church. She could not forgive those who had criticised her husband. (Sometimes it is the pastors' wives who endure a lot of ministerial hurts and pains).

When her husband travelled, God ministered to her to forgive. And when she forgave those people who hurt her, she received her healing miraculously. To her husband's utter surprise here she was, standing at the airport waiting for him when he returned from a trip.

**This was a wheelchair ridden woman; and there she was, free from unforgiveness and therefore free from**



**multiple sclerosis.**

**The tormentors can have access to torment us with sicknesses, diseases, poverty, and marital disharmony, when we do not release those who hurt us.**

Could that explain your lack of breakthroughs?

**This is the price you will pay for unforgiveness.**

## **5. SEE THE ADVANTAGES OF FORGIVENESS**

One of the major advantages of forgiveness is that **forgiveness makes you a great person!** Not only will your prayers be answered but you become more powerful spiritually, physically and emotionally. Forgiveness makes you a great person.

The South African President, Nelson Mandela is considered one of the greatest men in the world — because of forgiveness.

Mandela was sent into prison for 27 years, by the apartheid white government. He was separated from his home, his wife and children. He spent the better part of his life in prison. This is a man who under normal circumstances should not forgive, but he has been able to forgive his white oppressors and formed a reconciliatory government with them.

**This is what makes him great.**

In forgiving, you become great.

**But there is forgiveness with thee, that thou mayest be feared.**

**Ps. 130:4.**

Your ability to forgive will make people fear you!  
Forgiveness makes you a great person!

## **6. DECIDE TO OBEY GOD**

**...to obey is better than to sacrifice and to hearken, than the fat of rams.**

**1 Sam. 15:22.**

It is better to obey God than to harbour unforgiveness.  
**God is not asking or begging the Christian to forgive, it is a command!**

The advantages of forgiveness outweigh whatever 'sweet revenge' we think we will get by bearing grudges.  
Just *obey* and forgive, and the Lord *will* bless your life!!!



## ***Chapter One***

# ***Fornication***

**But fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;**

**Eph. 5:3.**

Fornication is sexual intercourse before marriage.

The equivalent of fornication in marriage is adultery, that is, when you have sex with anyone who is not your marriage partner.

**God's standard for the Christian life is that no believer should ever be involved in fornication.** Christians should not have a history of regularly committing fornication. Neither should they ever be involved with it. Not even once!

**...fornication... not be once named...**

**Eph. 5:3.**

But unfortunately, even in Charismatic circles, fornication is commonly found amongst born again Christians.

This 'cancer' of fornication is rapidly affecting the Body of Christ, because many Christians who get involved in fornication do not know it's spiritual and physical implications. They do not know its complications.

I want to now share with you 15 reasons why you should not commit fornication.

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***15 Reasons Why You Should Not Commit Fornication***

### **1. FORNICATION IS DISOBEDIENCE.**

The first reason why you should not commit fornication is that it is disobedience to God.

*...Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.*

*I Sam 15:22.*

We are all subject to the temptation to fornicate.

But the priority of every Christian must be to obey the Lord. If you do not obey God *you* stand to lose.

Obedience means more to God than any great sacrifice that you can make to Him.

Some of you come to church, put your offering in the basket, pay your tithes, lift up your hands and worship His Majesty. You give sacrifices of praise to God. But **God prefers your simple obedience to your many offerings and lifted hands.**

I once met a lady who told me that the commandment *not* to commit fornication is an old fashioned law, meant for the olden days. She argued that it was no longer a realistic instruction.

**Even if it does not make sense to you, your duty is still to obey God.**

Christianity has to do with your relationship with the Lord. As a Christian you are dependent on God, and it is only the Lord who can bless you.

If you choose to disobey and disregard God, I don't know what kind of relationship you want to have with Him.

When you disobey God, you incur God's curses upon your life. Some people complain that it is difficult to obey God. "It costs so much", they say.

**Dear friend, the truth is that it *pays* to obey God but it *costs* to disobey Him.**

As you read the rest of this book, you will realize that when God gives us a commandment, it is for our own good. It pays to obey God but it is very expensive to disobey Him.

## 2. FORNICATION WILL DESTROY YOUR SOUL

*But whoso commiteth adultery with a woman lacketh understanding: he that doeth it DESTROYETH his own SOUL.*

*Prov. 6:32.*

When you commit fornication, the Bible says you will destroy your soul.

**This means that fornication will have an effect on you spiritually.**

Anybody who is involved in fornication gets affected spiritually. You may not know exactly how it affects you. **But it does affect you, and will lead you to backslide.**

On Sunday mornings there are people sitting in church knowing very well what they did the night before.

**Some Christians even come to church straight from their boyfriends' beds.**

Your pastor may not know what you have done. He may have shaken hands with you, but didn't have any word of knowledge about you!

So you continue in sin.

Know that it is gradually destroying your soul — **your inner self is affected!**

**With experience I have come to see that when somebody commits fornication, his spiritual life takes a nose-dive.**



When a Christian falls into immorality his lifestyle changes. **The destruction of the soul has begun.**

### **3. FORNICATION WILL DESTROY YOUR BODY**

*Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.*

*1 Cor. 6:18.*

When you commit fornication you commit sin directly *against* your own body.

When you commit fornication you commit a crime against your body. **You are destroying your body.**

If you commit a crime against the State, you are said to be destroying the State. That is why the State will arrest and prosecute you. In the same way when you commit fornication, you commit a *crime* against your body, and God *will* prosecute you for that.

*...know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost...?*

*1 Cor. 6:19.*

## 4. YOU MAKE COVENANTS WITH ALL SORTS OF PEOPLE

Sex is intended to be a binding experience between two people.

**Know that when you commit fornication, you make a covenant with whoever you had sex with.**

God's plan is that when a woman has sex for the first time, her hymen is broken and blood is shed. Whenever blood is shed some sort of agreement or covenant is created.

**That means when you have sex with different people, you may actually be entering into union with them.**

Agreements are made because blood is shed. That is one of the reasons why Paul asked,

*...shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them members of an harlot? God forbid.*

*1Cor 6:15.*

Such covenants are for real. They can affect you for the rest of your life.

I have seen people who have been crippled all their Christian lives because of fornication. **Some Christians never rise out of the covenant of fornication.**

The son of a fetish priest came to our church some years ago. He told us how he got involved in witchcraft. He said he once slept in the cemetery with his father.

After seven days his father cut his hand, drew his blood

and mixed it with his own. **Then they both drank the blood and made a permanent agreement.** A covenant of witchcraft!

This brother was under that covenant. A time came when he had to decide between his father, (that is following the fetish) and following Christ.

This young man could not break away from this blood covenant. (Friend, I am talking here about blood covenants!). He left the church after some months and went back to his father's shrine. Although he was born again, and knew the Lord, he could not easily break away from his covenant.

**Blood and covenants are real things so don't sleep with just anybody.**

You may be sleeping with a witch and that witch will be in your home all the days of your life.

## **5. FORNICATION BRINGS EVIL SPIRITS INTO YOUR LIFE**

*... Babylon the great ...is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.*

*Rev. 18:2.*

A stronghold of evil spirits is a *refuge*, a *sanctuary* or a *hiding place* for demons.

Why did so many evil spirits come to live in Babylon?

Why has Babylon become a hold of demons?

See to verse 3,

**For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her.**

The kings, the Ministers of State, the rich and the famous have committed fornication with her. That is why evil spirits have come into her life.

**Fornication attracts evil spirits into your life.**

This is so true of many Christians' lives. Evil spirits have aggregated and congregated in them because of their fornication.

When God says don't do something he knows why!

**Some of the evil spirits that come into you can prevent you from ever marrying.**

Some evil spirits can cause you to backslide.

Some of them will cause you to marry the wrong person.

Some of them can cause you to have a bad marriage.

**Some of these evil spirits can also lead you into unfaithfulness in your marriage.**

The list is endless.

Do you want to become a hiding place for demons?

## 6. FORNICATION BRINGS SICKNESS

There are a host of diseases that only come about through sexual intercourse. We call these STDs (sexually transmitted diseases). The germs that cause these diseases will have access into you when you commit fornication.

Let me mention only ten of them. (Please notice how *big* the names of these '*animals*' are!):

1. **Neisseria Gonococcus** — this causes Gonorrhoea.
2. **Treponema pallidum** — this causes Syphilis.
3. **Chlamydia trachomatis** — this causes Non-specific urethritis.
4. **Hepatitis 'B' virus** — this causes liver diseases.
5. **Herpes simplex type II virus** — this cause Herpes genitalis.
6. **Trichomonas vaginalis** — this causes vaginitis.
7. **Lymphogranuloma venereum**
8. **Haemophilus Ducreyia** — causes Soft Sore (Chancroid).
9. **Urinary tract infection**
10. **Cancer of the Cervix** — frequent sex at an early age predisposes you to cancer of the cervix.

If you wait till you marry before having sex, you may save yourself from all these diseases. **But if you continue to commit fornication, then remember that all these 'ANIMALS' will ENTER your body and make you sick!**

## **7. FORNICATION BRINGS DEATH**

Fornication will kill you if you acquire the Human Immuno Virus (HIV). Unless God works a miracle, you may die of AIDS.

**HIV is now a death sentence.**

It is sad to say that in the Charismatic churches there are many Christians who are HIV positive.

A laboratory technician once gave me some alarming statistics.

A team of Lab Technicians organised a blood donation event in a Charismatic church and out of about hundred people who donated blood, a large percentage tested positive for HIV.

**In other words, our churches have significant numbers of people with the HIV virus.**

Fornicating with your fellow church member may mean your death!

Those who are HIV positive can develop AIDS. And when you have AIDS, it means you have a few more years to live.

## **8. FORNICATION BRINGS UNWANTED PREGNANCIES**

**Do you want to attend school with your child?**

When I was in Secondary school, there was a man in the sixth form who was said to have *a child* in form one.

How could this be? Probably due to an unwanted pregnancy earlier on in his life.

## 9. BRINGS UNWANTED ABORTIONS

If you commit fornication and become pregnant, it is most likely that you will want to hide it — by committing abortion.

You are falling into the same trap that David fell into when he committed adultery. Murder is the commonest evil that follows the sin of fornication.

**Abortion is the sin of murder.**

Many fornicators are murderers.

**Multiple abortionists are multiple murderers.**

Dear friend, you may not know that abortion is murder. **Medically speaking, abortion is the termination of human life.** The human life may be just a few cells, but it is human life!

Are you a murderer?

## 10. FORNICATION BRINGS INFERTILITY

Let me explain how fornication brings infertility.

During an abortion, various instruments similar to knives and forks are introduced into the womb. This often leads

to infection. And this infection often leads to the blocking of the fallopian tubes.

**Young lady, if your fallopian tubes are blocked you will not be able to become pregnant.**

Then you may find yourself in every deliverance centre — looking for healing.

**Receive your deliverance now by obeying the Word.**

## **11. FORNICATION BRINGS UNWANTED CHILDREN**

Unwanted children are usually products of fornication.

Why should you be pregnant when you are a 16 year old student?

Your child is supposed to be your daughter or son and *not* your younger sister or brother!

## **12. THE UNWANTED CHILDREN BECOME SOCIAL DEVIANTS**

Whenever a child is not wanted, he becomes a reject in society- A “*pikin na bollo*” as we say in Ghana.

**Many deviants in society have a background of having been unwanted.**

I remember a young boy who beat up his mother and left home. No one knows where he is. I asked why a young sixth former should behave in this unbecoming manner.



The answer can be traced to his mother's history. **This young lad was a product of his mother's fornication when she was only 15 years old.**

The boy had been made to stay with different aunties and other relatives. You see, his mother had to continue schooling.

When his mother eventually got married, she was ashamed of her unwanted child. So he continued staying with other sympathetic relatives. Naturally, the young lad grew up doing very poorly in school.

He was suspended several times and became what we call a social deviant, a very bitter boy.

Now whose fault is it?

**Don't blame any child who is born out of fornication if he or she becomes a social deviant!**

### **13. FORNICATION BRINGS DISGRACE**

*A wound and dishonour shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away.*

*Prov. 6:33.*

Although fornication is an **international** and **cross-cultural** sin committed by many people it is still a disgraceful act.

Save yourself from this disgrace!

## **14. FORNICATION BRINGS HURTS AND WOUNDS**

Read the story of Tamar and Amnon in II Samuel 13. Fornication leads to many *hurts*. Tamar was *hurt*.

Absalom her brother was *hurt*. King David was *hurt*. The relation between them was broken forever.

What you must realize is that fornication is essentially wrong and evil. It only leads to many terrible and devastating complications in life.

## **15. FORNICATION BREAKS MARRIAGES**

Fornication is often the last straw that breaks the camel's back in unhappy marriages. Remember, it is only in the case of adultery that God allows divorce.

God knows that this is the sin which has the ability to destroy marriages.

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***Physical Steps to Avoiding Fornication***

How can we save ourselves from this disgraceful sin? We are all men of like passions subject to the same temptations like every one else.

I believe the Lord has shown me some important steps that will keep us all from sin. Four of these steps are spiritual and eight are physical.

Let us start with the physical steps.

## 1. NO UNTIMELY RELATIONSHIPS

Very young people should not enter into relationships.

*To everything there is a season and a time to every purpose under the heaven.*

*Eccl. 3:1.*

There is a time for entering into a relationship. Why do you want to enter into a relationship when you are still in school? You don't even have a job in sight!

In my church, I do not recognise relationships of teenagers. I will advice you to break it in the Name of Jesus! **You worry yourself for nothing when you play with relationships at the wrong time.**

## 2. RELATIONSHIPS ONLY UNTO MARRIAGE

You must only enter into relationships that lead to marriage.

**The only intimate relationship between men and women that God approves of is marriage.**

A Christian man and woman must move towards God's plan, and God's plan is marriage.

When I proposed to my wife many years before I actually married her, I asked her two questions: **“Can you marry a doctor? Can you marry a Pastor?”**

Marriage was what I had in mind.

She was in love with me so she said yes! I had decided

that I was going to marry her. She was not just a friend or girlfriend. She had passed on to become someone special — **the person who was going to be my wife and the bearer of my children.**

I remember asking a young man who had been in a relationship with a sister in church for two years, “Are you getting married?” His response was “I don’t think we will. **We are just in a relationship.**”

I think a lady must be foolish to be in such a relationship. The man is just using you, and will throw you away one day.

The relationships that God approves of are relationships that are headed towards His will; **and His will is marriage!**

If you know that your relationship is not going towards marriage, then it is just going towards fornication. Stop right there!

### **3. HOLY RELATIONSHIPS**

The Bible says there is a time to “refrain from embracing.”

*...a time to embrace and a time to refrain from embracing...*

*Eccl. 3:15.*

If you are in a relationship, there is a time to refrain from embracing.

I can hold my wife, I can hug her and I will not be doing anything wrong. But those of you who are not married are not expected to do so.

**Even when you touch your fiancée's hand, 'osmosis' begins to occur!**

In my church we have a few rules for counselling young people in relationships.

We don't just tell you to live a holy and a pure life, but you are specifically told what living holy entails. You must only have holy relationships!

#### **4. EARLY MARRIAGE**

**I encourage people to marry young.** The more Christians delay the marriage ceremony, the more likely they are to end up living in sin.

What are you waiting for?

In certain churches there are road blocks to marriage. Couples are presented with so many obstacles to delay marriage. But that should not be the case.

*Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy YOUTH.*

*Prov. 5:18.*

**The scripture encourages you to have a wife when you are young — The wife of your youth.**

Don't use the lack of money as an excuse, because you can marry if you really want to. Marry whilst you are still young.

Don't wait until you have all the comfortable things of life before venturing into marriage.

When I decided to get married, somebody whispered to my wife to marry someone who had everything in life. I certainly didn't qualify because I had nothing!

I have been through some really hard times with my wife, where we didn't have any money. We had to warn our visitors to sit in a particular way because our chairs were weak and broken. She even had to go abroad to work to buy us some furniture.

I have truly struggled with my wife, so I love her. I didn't have to wait until I was an old man to get married.

I love the people with whom I have been through struggles and difficulties. They are different from those who have come in at a time of total blessing. When you are already established in life, you will have people interested in you because you are already blessed.

**But the wife of your youth will marry you not because of what you have, but because of who you are.**

It is a blessing to marry young.

## 5. NON-POLYGAMOUS MARRIAGE

*And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.*

*Gen. 2:25.*

The only person you must be naked with is your wife.  
**Not your girlfriend, fiancée, nurse or secretary.**

You are not supposed to have any other wife. God does not endorse polygamy. A polygamous lifestyle encourages fornication.

In Ghana, we have ‘official’ polygamy, where a man maintains two or three wives. **But there is an ‘unofficial’ version of polygamy which is practised by most successful people in Ghana.**

They have an official wife whom they take to official functions and appear on television with.

There are also the unofficial women in the life of these men. And this is a common practice by most of the ‘big shots’ in our society.

Such men have no intention of divorcing their wives. They will spend the weekends at special places with these ‘side’ girls. They travel with them to Paris, and generally have a good time with them. But they still maintain the official marriage.

**We must keep this culture of unofficial polygamy far from us, if we want to avoid fornication.**



## 6. SEXUALLY ACTIVE MARRIAGES

We need to have sexually active marriages.

There are many marriages which are not sexually active. It is amazing that before people get married they want to hold and touch each other but when they get married they can lie by each other like logs.

**Why commit fornication when you can commit love.**

**Drink water out of thine own cistern; and running waters out of thine own well.**

**Prov. 5:15.**

Sex can be likened to drinking water. And we drink water several times in a day. So the Bible admonishes you to have sex several times, so you won't thirst for any other woman.

There is more symbolic language in Proverbs 5.

**Let thy fountains be dispersed abroad...**

*Verse 16.*

**What in sex looks like a fountain?**

God's rule for healthy marriages is that the fountains should be allowed to disperse abroad.

***You must allow the fountains to flow.*** Some fountains have been closed two weeks or six months. Such fountains are not blessed!

*...and rivers of waters in the streets.*

Verse 15.

**What could these streets be?** If the fountains are going to flow into the streets, then God says

*...let them be only thine OWN and not strangers’.*

Verse 17.

**Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times...**

Verse 19.

If you are married your wife’s breasts must satisfy you at all times! Why should you be playing with somebody else’s breast when you have your own wife’s.

**One of the ways to prevent fornication if your are married is to have sex regularly.**

When you eat and are satisfied, you don’t feel like eating any more.

Women especially should know that when they have sex regularly with their husbands, they prevent them from having extra marital affairs.

A man of God fell into sin. I was sitting with him after he had impregnated one of his church members — he was crying. I was so sad, I wanted to know how it happened.

He described the difficulties of sex he had with his wife. She did not want to have sex with him. She kept complaining that she was tired, or cold. As soon as the husband committed adultery, she became active. She realized her husband’s adultery was a product of what was going on at home.

**Some wives are just waiting for their husbands to commit adultery and then they will wake up!**

## ***Chapter Four***

# ***Spiritual Steps to Avoiding Fornication***

### **1. HONESTY**

You need honesty to save yourself from fornication. If you have a problem and need help, you have to be open about it.

The doctor cannot help you unless you open up and tell him your problem.

No one can help you if you do not ask for help.

**Everybody *needs* help. But not everybody *wants* help.**

You need to open up and share your problems with

honesty. Without the belt of truth and sincerity you can never receive help from God.

There is a story about a Christian brother who always thought the messages preached in church were directed at others .

The Pastor would minister under the power of the Holy Ghost, and this Christian brother would sit in the church assuming it was for somebody else.

After the service, he would thank the pastor and say **“Pastor, bless you for this message. I believe you really ministered to *THEM*. You really touched *THEIR* hearts. It’s a message *THEY* really needed.”**

The Pastor tried to modify his sermon so that the man would realize that he was actually talking to him. But it was to no avail.

Then one day, it rained and there was a flood. No one but this brother came to church. As he sat there alone, the Pastor said to himself, **at last this young man will know that the message is for him.**

The pastor preached his heart out. After that the brother came up and said, **“Pastor, that was a very powerful message. *If only THEY* had come to church today, in fact, *THEIR* lives would have been touched!”**

And that’s how it is. We preach the Word, and people *always* assume it’s for somebody else.

We are simply not *honest* enough to accept that *we* have a problem.

## 2. PRAYER

We need prayer to be able to deal with sin.

**And he said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.**

**Luke 22:46.**

Prayer is very important to prevent you from falling into temptation. Prayer strengthens you for whatever is coming your way.

Next time you fast, get up early and pray before the day. You will find supernatural strength to go on.

This strength comes from prayer. When you pray you build up your spirit and become spiritually strong.

The Bible says the body without the spirit is dead. That means the day your spirit goes out of your body, you will die. **It also means that whatever is happening in your body is affected by your spirit.**

It helps you to fight off certain temptations. That is why Jesus said *pray*, in case you fall into temptation.

That is why Jesus prayed all the time. Once Jesus prayed for forty days and nights. Soon after praying and fasting, the devil came to tempt him, **but he was too strong for the devil.**

**The devil had chosen the wrong time to attack Christ.**

Many years ago, the devil tried to bring a temptation my way. But that day, the Lord led me to pray for hours.

honesty. Without the belt of truth and sincerity you can never receive help from God.

There is a story about a Christian brother who always thought the messages preached in church were directed at others .

The Pastor would minister under the power of the Holy Ghost, and this Christian brother would sit in the church assuming it was for somebody else.

After the service, he would thank the pastor and say **“Pastor, bless you for this message. I believe you really ministered to *THEM*. You really touched *THEIR* hearts. It’s a message *THEY* really needed.”**

The Pastor tried to modify his sermon so that the man would realize that he was actually talking to him. But it was to no avail.

Then one day, it rained and there was a flood. No one but this brother came to church. As he sat there alone, the Pastor said to himself, **at last this young man will know that the message is for him.**

The pastor preached his heart out. After that the brother came up and said, **“Pastor, that was a very powerful message. *If only THEY had come to church today, in fact, THEIR lives would have been touched!*”**

And that’s how it is. We preach the Word, and people *always* assume it’s for somebody else.

We are simply not *honest* enough to accept that *we* have a problem.

## 2. PRAYER

We need prayer to be able to deal with sin.

**And he said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.**

**Luke 22:46.**

Prayer is very important to prevent you from falling into temptation. Prayer strengthens you for whatever is coming your way.

Next time you fast, get up early and pray before the day. You will find supernatural strength to go on.

This strength comes from prayer. When you pray you build up your spirit and become spiritually strong.

The Bible says the body without the spirit is dead. That means the day your spirit goes out of your body, you will die. **It also means that whatever is happening in your body is affected by your spirit.**

It helps you to fight off certain temptations. That is why Jesus said *pray*, in case you fall into temptation.

That is why Jesus prayed all the time. Once Jesus prayed for forty days and nights. Soon after praying and fasting, the devil came to tempt him, **but he was too strong for the devil.**

**The devil had chosen the wrong time to attack Christ.**

Many years ago, the devil tried to bring a temptation my way. But that day, the Lord led me to pray for hours.



It is by grace and grace alone!

The song writer said, **“Through many dangers, toils and snares, I have already come. Twas grace that brought me safe thus far, and grace will lead me home.”**

**Friends, it is grace that will see us through!**



# Frugality

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7797-1-2

**Copyright © 2002 Parchment House**

1st Printing 1997

2nd Printing 1998

3rd Printing 2000

4th Printing 2002

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book.

## PREFACE

Looking at the small beginnings of our church, many people have asked me the secret of our growth.

However, there is nothing secret about this old principle of frugality. It's been used by successful people for ages!

As stewards, God expects us to be faithful with the little He gives us. **And I have come to realise that prosperity is inevitable when we wisely maximise profits and minimise losses.**

In this book, I will share with you some of the principles the Lord taught me to apply in my church, ministry and in my personal life. **There is no need to be envious of successful people, you can be successful too!**

One cardinal feature of very intelligent people is that they have child-like minds, and are open to a wide variety of new ideas and possibilities. This makes them very creative and progressive. I think that most Christians need an attitude of being open and ready to learn.

Frugality is one of the traits of successful people, and will take us forward.

**If you are seeking to increase in any area of your life, business, ministry, then this book will help to point you in the right direction.**

## **DEDICATION**

*I dedicate this book to my dear mother,  
Elizabeth Heward-Mills  
who has always been there for me.*

# ***Contents***

What Is Frugality? .....	1
The Principle Of Valuation .....	5
The Principle Of Timely Valuation .....	8
The Principle Of Gathering Crumbs .....	13
The Principle Of The 7 Lean Cows & The 7 Fat Cows .....	18
The Principle Of Needing No Supervision .....	21
The Principle Of Not Chasing Fantasies .....	24
The Principle Of Word-Based Valuation .....	28

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House



Frugality is the careful and wise use of money, resources and opportunities.

A frugal person is one who carefully and wisely uses money and resources. This person for instance, may eat frugal meals — that is, food which is not in excess or wastefully prepared.

**A frugal person wastes nothing! Therefore frugality is the way to prosperity.**

**The opposite of frugality is prodigality.**

To be prodigal means to waste and to misuse money and resources.

Luke gives an account of a man who had two sons. The younger son demanded that his father give him his portion of the property. So he gave him his portion of the goods. The young man took half of the inheritance and set off into a far country. And there, he *wasted* his substance on riotous living.

Luke also tells of a prodigal steward, who was accused of *wasting* the things that were placed at his disposal.

**...There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.**

**Luke 16:1**

The rich man is representative of God and the steward also represents the Christian. This rich man had certain goods which were in the charge of the steward.

In the same way, God has given us everything in this life to control. The Christian is the custodian of these resources. He expects the Christian to use them wisely.

**Whoever you are, know that God has placed certain things in your charge.** He has put your life in your hands; He has given you parents, children, lands, trees, rivers, money and opportunities.

So you have several things in your control. But God's expectation is that you use them *frugally*. **If many of us were to wisely use what God has given us, we would go very far.**

Most of the problems we have in Ghana are not because we don't have the resources. It is not because we don't have the gold, diamonds, silver, steel, timber and a host of other resources. But it is how we have used them. That is why we are rated as one of the poorest countries in the world.

**If you don't use the resources wisely, you will end up poor.** Just as this prodigal steward was asked to account for his stewardship, God will ask you to account for yours.

**I believe that many Christians are failing because they are wasting the resources God has given them.**

When God was taking the children of Israel out of Egypt, He gave them an idea — to borrow jewellery from their Egyptian neighbours.

God gave the Israelites favour before the Egyptians. As a result the Egyptians released lots of jewellery to them. Then, in the 25th chapter of Exodus, God instructed Moses to take an offering from the Israelites. He did not tell Moses to remind the people that *He* had given them the idea to be rich.

God may not remind you of the education He gave you, the job He gave you, or the life He gave you.

**God will give to you over and over again, but one day, He will ask you to give an account for what is in your control.**

If you can't account properly for these things, God, like the rich man in Luke 16, *will dismiss you*.

**So many Christians do not know that God is in the business of employing and dismissing people!**

God employed Moses to deliver the Israelites from Egypt to the promised land. But, when he disobeyed God's instructions by hitting the rock for water, God told him he wouldn't enter into the promised land.

God simply dismissed Moses at that point!

**God also employed Elijah to fight the prophets of Baal, but when he complained, God dismissed him and chose Elisha to replace him.**

How can we use what we have wisely?

**Dear friend, are you making the most of the opportunities God is giving you?**

There are certain principles by which we can wisely use the money, resources and opportunities which God has put at our disposal.

In the following chapters, I will share with you seven important principles on how to carefully and wisely use what God has given to you. These are the seven principles of **FRUGALITY**.

It is very important to esteem, treasure and *place value* on some things in life.

All over the world, people attend school just to learn how to value properties. These are professionals called ‘valuers’ or land economists.

**When you know the value of something you will not mistreat it or throw it away.** There are some things that you do not regard because you don’t know their importance or value.

**Many people only value money!** When a huge amount is mentioned, you easily appreciate how valuable it is.

**But it is important to know that many other things are valuable.** That is why sometimes when somebody buys you a present, he will tell you how much it cost, so that you will treat the gift according to its value.

Once, I bought a present for a couple. When I gave it to them, they looked at it as if it was something ordinary. They didn’t realize the value of the present. So I told them how much it cost.

Suddenly, their reaction changed. They got up and moved towards it to have a closer look at the gift.

When you put value on something, you treat it differently.

**You will not waste or disregard it.**

Many people do not know the importance of teachers. In Ghana, they are not even well paid.

My mother-in-law is a qualified teacher. Her pet name is “Please-Teacher”. She has been a teacher for many years, and at one time, she was the President of the Ghana National Association of Teachers (GNAT).

She had this sticker on her car which read, **“If You Can Read This, Thank Your Teacher”**. It never occurred to me to value the teacher who taught me how to read. **Just like many other people, I had taken the teacher for granted.**

**Another important but unappreciated profession is Nursing.**

It was only when I started working in the hospital that I began to see what nurses go through. In my estimation, nursing should be one of the highest paid professions.

Often, they have to deal with dying people. Sick people are usually unattractive. They can urinate and defecate all over the bed. But it is the nurse’s duty to take care of them. Working in the hospital made me understand why some of them behave the way they do.

**Another group of people who need to be valued are women.**

Until recently, people did not know their value. But fortunately, they are now receiving some recognition all over the world.

In most cases, it is the women who teach the children, and without them a lot of things in the world would not be the same.

Mothers and fathers are also not valued until they are dead. Once, when I was returning home on a flight after a tour of some Lighthouse churches, I saw a man with a giant wreath. It was the most beautiful set of flowers I had ever seen.

It was so big that he had to put it on one of the seats and buckle it with a seat belt.

I wondered if he could not have bought these flowers for the person when he or she was alive. I also wondered if as much money as was used in buying the wreath was ever sent to the deceased while he was alive.

We must place value on things whilst they are with us. Or we will live to regret it.

The principle of valuation teaches us to value what we have, so that we treat it with care, and benefit from it *while* we can.

In Luke 7:36, we read the account of a Pharisee who asked Jesus to dinner.

In the course of the meal, a woman in the city showed up with an alabaster bottle of ointment and poured it on His feet.

Then she began to wash His feet with her tears and wiped them with her hair, kissing and anointing them with the ointment.

When the Pharisee who invited Jesus saw that He did not stop the woman, he began to question Jesus' credibility as a prophet.

To him, Jesus could not discern that the woman was a sinner.

Jesus discerned the heart of the Pharisee and gave a parable to explain that the woman had shown greater appreciation to Him for forgiving her of her numerous sins.

**...I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet.**

**Luke 7:44,45**

This was a woman who felt Jesus was so important that *while Jesus was alive*, she anointed His feet with the most expensive perfume and wiped it with her hair.

It is interesting to note that when Jesus died, the women who had walked with Him came with prepared spices and ointment to anoint Him.



By then it was too late! They rather met two people dressed in white like angels, who told them that He had risen from the grave.

**Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices... And they found the stone rolled away... they were much perplexed...**

**Luke 24:1,2,4**

**You will also be perplexed when you realize too late that something valuable has been taken away from you.**

The opportunity is gone forever!

These women came with all their valuable ointments to anoint the Master. But it was too late.

**When Jesus was with them, they probably did not realise His value.**

**So many people don't realize the importance of something until it is gone.**

All over the world, people are hailed *after* their death.

Ghana's first President, Kwame Nkrumah was insulted, ridiculed and exiled when he was alive. Many years after his death, some political parties are *now* struggling to identify with him, calling themselves 'Nkrumahists'.

**Many great people are recognized and valued *after* they are gone.**

When my father died I wept like a baby. Suddenly, I realized his value in a way I had never known when he was alive!

**When you lose something forever, you will suddenly see its value.**

During the funeral of Ron Brown, (the American Secretary of Commerce, who died in a plane crash) his son read his tribute which was carried live by CNN. He said something which struck me as underlining the principle of timely valuation.

I think he said something to this effect: **I have no feelings of regret. I have said all that I could have said to him. There is nothing that I could have said which I didn't say. I have had the best of relationships with my father. On the day that he travelled I kissed him goodbye on his lips.**

This was a son who probably had little to regret after he lost his father. In showing appreciation to his father, little did he know that this would be the last time.

We need to value things before we lose them.

Many are those who kneel at their fathers' or mothers' graves and weep. **They grieve not only because the person is dead,** but also because they didn't show appreciation to the person when he or she was alive.

I urge you to look into your life and see whether there is anybody you should have valued but you didn't. Hopefully, it is not too late to make amends— locate all such people and find a suitable way of expressing appreciation to them.

God is saying to His people that there are many things He has given us which often go waste. If you keep on wasting them, He will take them away from you.

So if God gives you a pastor and you don't value him, with time, He will take him away from you. If God gives you a mother and you are not grateful for her, He will take her away.

If God gives you money and resources to be a blessing to the house of God, and you fail to do so, **He will take away this opportunity and give it to someone else who will properly utilize it.**

Jesus taught a great lesson when He gathered the crumbs after feeding the multitude on the mountain.

During one of Jesus' evangelistic tours, there were more than five thousand people He needed to feed. Philip, one of Jesus' disciples pointed out that even two hundred penny worth of bread would not be sufficient to feed them.

A small boy's lunch of five barley loaves of bread and two small fish was blessed by Jesus, and He fed them all.

**When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

Instead of just sharing the grace and leaving, He collected twelve baskets of crumbs. I am sure every one of His twelve disciples took a basket home!

**If you want to follow somebody, follow Jesus. He is the express image of God Himself.**

To see what God Himself would have done, look at Jesus — He gathered the crumbs after He had taken five thousand people to the restaurant. **Why would someone who could afford to take five thousand people to the restaurant be interested in crumbs?** The answer is simple: frugality!

**I can say from my little experience in this life, that it is often rich people who gather crumbs. If you do not develop to the point where crumbs are important, you will never be rich, neither will you prosper.**

The Lord told me when we started the Lighthouse Cathedral project, **“If you count your pennies, you will go very far.”**

I have found God’s words to be true. In our church we don’t have any big business tycoon who sponsors our building projects or any other project. Many people are just average. Yet we have gone very far and almost completed our multi-million cedi Cathedral. **We gathered the crumbs!**

**Most people in Ghana do not respect the crumbs.** Lights which are not needed are left switched on; water could be dripping from the taps but everyone would ignore it—these are just two classic examples of the waste in our system.

When I visited my grandparents in Switzerland, I realized the waste in Ghana. Like the typical Ghanaian, I used to leave my lights on all the time. In Switzerland only the rooms in which we were had lights on. Every other room was in darkness to save electricity.

My grandfather would come with his walking stick and say, “You! You!”

Then he would shake his stick, and I would immediately put off the extra lights.

Sometimes you wonder why certain people prosper and some do not. Switzerland is one of the richest countries in the world. In 1993, the GDP of Switzerland was 219 billion dollars while that of Ghana was only about 6 billion dollars.

**In poor Ghana, we waste electricity and become poorer. In rich Switzerland they save electricity and become richer!**

**It is the crumbs that make up the whole meal. When you add up all the crumbs, you will become rich.**

There's a saying that 'little drops of water make a mighty ocean.' Well that's not in the Bible, but it's true. (As Christians we must know that there are many things that are *not* in the Bible, but are still true.)

**Identify the few things that God has given you, and consider them to be important.**

The population of the world has been on a steady rise since 1900. Before the turn of the twentieth century, the world's population had been steady at about the same figure for many years.

Suddenly it began to rise dramatically, and now we are striving to have fewer children.

**What happened to make the number of people in the world increase so much?**

It is largely due to the great breakthroughs in medicine. There are now cures for most of the killer diseases that could have killed us when we were kids.

Where the death rate went down, the number of people went up. If you reduce the amount of deaths (dropouts or waste) your wealth will rise.

**If only you can stay at the same income level and reduce the waste, suddenly you will increase and become rich.**

Pastors need to learn that if they could only reduce the number of people dropping out of their churches, **the churches will grow.**

I value *every single member* of my church. I try hard to prevent unnecessary dropouts and people leaving the church.

I have learnt to close the backdoor of the church. **Many churches have big front doors and big backdoors, that's why they never grow!**

Your business will grow when you can stop the waste and check the high, unnecessary bills and overheads. Don't you realize that all your profits and increase are going down the drain?

In my church, we monitor electricity bills, water bills and telephone bills on a chart. We have a system of sharing the phone bill amongst the staff when the bill goes above a certain figure.

You may not know, but all these contribute to the eventual wealth of the church.

Pharaoh had a dream about seven fat cows and seven lean ones.

In the dream he saw that, out of a river, the seven fat cattle came out to graze. Suddenly, seven other extremely lean ones came out of the water and ate up the fat cattle (Gen. 41:1-4).

When Pharaoh had this dream, Joseph, who was then a prisoner, explained to the King that the seven lean cows stood for years of poverty and the seven fat cows, years of prosperity.

God advised him through Joseph to **store food during the times of plenty**, so that he and the whole of Egypt would survive the lean years.

This is wisdom from God.

This is a principle that will definitely affect you and me. **Everybody's life has seven lean cows and seven fat cows.** The days of the seven fat cows will come, and so will the days of the seven lean cows.

**There are always going to be seven lean cows and seven fat cows, and the lean ones will always eat the fat ones.**

That means that there is a period when things will be good. So make the most of it by storing up for a rainy day.

**If you save in those years, when the lean years come, you won't go-a-begging.**



**The seven lean cows always eat up the fat ones, so if you are not wise in using your money, you will end up a pauper.**

A poor old man who looks like he never had any wealth, probably did not use his seven fat cows very well.

My father was a very good lawyer, who handled many cases in court for several years. Through his hard work, he became rich and famous — those were his fat cow years.

Later, he was taken seriously ill, and kept going in and out of hospital. But he had invested in hotels and other things, therefore he reaped from all the investments of his fat cow years.

If you do not learn to save and invest during your fat cow years, the lean cow years will suddenly overtake you, leaving you with nothing but faint memories of how well you lived ages ago.

Some Ghanaians who live abroad do not know that they are in the fat cow season. Some of them have the opportunity to earn so much money.

But they don't realize that it's just for a season.

They must benefit from their 'fat cow' season.

**Go to the ant... which having no overseer...**

**Prov. 6:6,7.**

If you are the type of worker who needs no supervision, you can be paid the additional money that would have been paid to your supervisor.

If your employer needs to employ someone to supervise you, then your supervisor will be paid more to ensure that you work well.

The supervisor would have to ensure that you come to work on time and see to it that you work well. That is the real reason why the person who supervises is paid more.

No employer needs a worker who has to be told when it's time for him to wake up, when to come to work, and how to work.

**But the more somebody can work without supervision, the more the employer values such a person.**

**Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways,  
and be wise:**

**Which having no guide, overseer, or ruler,  
Provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth  
her food in the harvest.**

**Prov. 6:6-8**

I watched a documentary of an American airline which crashed somewhere in South America.

It was a Boeing 757 with about 195 people on board. During the flight, the co-pilot was the one flying the plane, and not the captain. One survivor recounted that he heard the co-pilot saying, **“We are approaching the airport. The weather is very good, visibility is clear, and there is no problem.”**

Suddenly, they heard a loud bang and the lights went out. This survivor woke up later on in the hospital. Just after the passengers had been assured of arriving safely, a terrible accident occurred and almost everybody was killed. There were only four survivors!

The recorded conversation between the captain and the co-pilot was revealing. He was terribly lost. This caused the plane to crash into a mountain.

**Unfortunately, this was a man who needed to be supervised constantly in order to avoid killing many people. And that is exactly what he did.** If the captain himself had been flying the plane, it might have been a different story.

I know some private businessmen in my church. If I were to go to their offices at eleven o'clock in the night, they would probably be there.

At midnight on Sundays, some of them may be found in their offices working. **Nobody tells them to work, neither does anyone admonish them to rise up early to go to work.**

I know people who started out as drivers, but have risen to become managers because they needed no supervision.

**If you are reliable enough to work without supervision, you will rise. You will not waste all the opportunities you have.**

**He who works his land will have abundant food,  
but the one who chases fantasies will have his fill  
of poverty.**

**Prov. 28:19 (NIV)**

This verse tells us that if a man has a piece of land right before him, and works on it or makes use of it, he will have more than enough food to eat.

**But if this man rather chases after what he imagines  
he can get from somewhere else, then he will be poor  
forever!**

For this man, the difference between abundance and poverty, will be determined by whether he works on the piece of land he has, or whether he runs after imaginary things.

The piece of land here could be his profession, job, or property.

He may own a shop or restaurant. He may be a teacher, doctor, or a photographer. Whatever the profession, he must make good use of it.

Unfortunately, many people waste their lives chasing fantasies. **Fantasies are things that are not real, they are things that are not in your hands.**

You may have something that is right before you, but instead of working on it, you go chasing after something else. You *will* definitely have poverty.

**Instead of concentrating on going to school, some  
people rather chase after visas to travel to Europe and  
America.**

I know a young man who was brilliant academically. I personally encouraged him to go to school, and even promised to pay his school fees. But he insisted on travelling to America.

**For the past six years, he has been waiting for his visa. Chasing the fantasy of travelling to America for six years! Imagine that!**

People are looking for something elsewhere, when there is something right before them.

I know someone who became a millionaire just by taking photographs.

He started out by taking photographs in my church, and became a millionaire.

There are things that are right before our eyes, yet we don't want them. We prefer something else. **When God blesses you with something, use it!**

I have been in my church in Korle-Gonno, Ghana, all these years. I believe this is what God has given to me. **I am not going to go around chasing after ministerial fantasies.**

I will continue to till the 'ministerial ground' that is before me. And I will be blessed. **But if I leave what is in my hands and go chasing after the wind, trying to become famous, I will have poverty enough.**

When it comes to spiritual things, people behave in the same manner. Some Christians have good churches with good pastors. Honest men and women of integrity. But they would rather go round chasing after other things.

Whenever they hear that a powerful man of God is working wonders somewhere, they jump on the bandwagon. When they hear of a new church, they flock there.

**Jesus calls them sign seekers. He says they are *evil* people.**

**... an evil... generation seeketh after a sign...**

**Matt 12:39.**

Sometimes as a pastor, you wonder what such church members are looking for.

What counts is faithfulness. A good Christian must be able to faithfully stay or abide in one church where he will receive nourishment.



**I thank Christ... that he counted me faithful,  
putting me into the ministry...**

**1Tim. 1:12**

There is one thing God will consider before he puts you in the ministry.

**It is not ability, anointing, or talent — it is faithfulness!**

**When you are faithful and stable with what he has put right before you, he will promote you!**

**He hath shewed thee... what is good...**

**Micah 6:8.**

Word-based Valuation can be done by valuing things on the basis of what the Bible says, and *not* what you think.

The Word of God is God Himself, so when you value things according to God's Word, then you will be acting in the will of God.

God is wiser than us; God knows more than we do, so I believe that God is the one who can tell us what is important.

**If it is God who can tell you and I what is important, then we need to be interested in what God says.**

In Akwatia, (a diamond mining town in Ghana) I am sure the children used to play with what they thought were ordinary stones. One day, somebody may have come along and informed them that the stones they were throwing at each other were actually valuable diamonds.

Then they probably stopped throwing away the stones and rather treated them with care. Now these stones have brought them wealth.

When you don't know the value of something and you get someone to tell you how important that thing is (like the people at Akwatia), it can change your life. Your life could improve, or your earning power could increase because you were given the right information about something.



**It is the Word of God which can show you what is valuable.** The Word of God has a lot of instructions as to what is valuable. For instance, the Bible tells us what is more valuable than money.

Proverbs 22:1 says,

**A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches...**

You may not know how valuable a good name is. **As a pastor, I have come to see that every man of God has a good name and a bad name.**

There are some places where I go that I have (as it were) a good name, and others where I have a bad name.

It often depends on whether my enemies or friends have been there, and what they have said about me! **It is through experience that I have seen that a good name is better than riches.**

You cannot flourish in the atmosphere created by a bad name. You cannot buy a good name with money.

**I have learnt to value a good name.**

Why would I give up my profession as a medical doctor to become a minister of the Word? Do I not think that it is important to attend to the physical bodies of people?

I do!

But my Bible also tells me that the *souls* of men are more important than their physical bodies.

**There are so many Christians who do not have biblical reasons for the things they do.** I have biblical reasons for the things I am doing.

The physical is more important to people than the spiritual. **I have often asked for the reasons behind some of the things Christians do.**

**...what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?**

**Matt 16:26.**

Normally, a brother would rather say, “I left this church for the other because my *friend* is in the other church.”

**Hardly would you hear a modern day Christian say, “It is written...” or “The Bible says...”**

It is the Bible which must guide us and tell us what to do.

The Word of God is reliable, it will never change. Jesus also said, **It is written...** when He faced the devil.

Jesus knew why He did the things He did, and said the things He said.

Remember, my friend, Heaven and earth shall pass away but the Word of God will never pass away.

**Jeremiah said,**

**Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the LORD our God...**

**Jer 42:6.**

This means you should obey the Word of God no matter what it says. It may not sound very good. It may sound difficult. But it is the Word.

Jeremiah said he would obey the Word of the Lord whether it sounded good or bad. At the end of the day you will see the results of obedience to the voice of the Lord.

**It is the Word of God which can tell you what is important, what is good and what is right.**

**He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good...**

**Micah 6:8.**

The Word of God gives life, light and direction. God expects the Christian to seek what He says concerning any situation. Through this, the Christian can assess situations by the Word of God.

Dear Friend,

Frugality is the way to maximise the meagre resources at your disposal. Apply these principles and prosper.

***Frugality is the key you need!!!***

# LAY PEOPLE AND THE MINISTRY

## CHAPTERS

1. Sharing the Burden
2. Take Up the Spiritual Burden
3. Poimen
4. Different Levels of the Shepherding Anointing
5. You Can Be a Shepherd!
6. Biblical Conditions To Becoming a Lay Pastor
7. Assessing Potential Pastors
8. The Ministry: Work or Rest?
9. Seven Ministries of 'Poimen'
10. Developing an Effective Feeding Ministry
11. Who is a Good Pastor?

**\*\* RECEIVED PERMISSION** from Dake Publishing Inc. to use information in Dake's Annotated Reference Bible. Notes are found in Column 2 and 3 of page 236 of the New Testament, entitled "16 Qualifications for bishops", "10 Qualifications for deacons" and "4 Qualifications for wives of deacons".

# **CHAPTER 1**

## ***SHARING THE BURDEN***

**And the Lord said unto Moses, Gather unto me seventy men of the elders of Israel, whom thou knowest to be the elders of the people, and officers over them; and bring them unto the tabernacle of the congregation, that they may stand there with thee. And I will come down and talk with thee there; and I will take of the spirit which is upon thee and will put it upon them; and they shall BEAR THE BURDEN of the people with thee, that thou bear it not thyself alone.**  
**Numbers 11:16,17**

One of the most difficult tasks in life is to lead people. The Bible teaches us that Moses delivered the Israelites from bondage, yet he had a difficult time handling them. The job that Moses did is the job that all pastors have to do.

God graciously gave Moses spectacular and sensational miracles. These signs and wonders helped to establish his authority over God's flock. In spite of this, the burden of leading the people was very heavy on Moses. The Bible calls it a burden – and that is what it is!

## People Have Problems

If you have a pastor's heart and love people, you can no longer disassociate yourself from their problems. Their problems will become your problems and the burdens will mount.

When God wants to use you to minister to a large number of people, He will expect you to share the burden of His divine call upon your life. Failure to share this burden will simply mean that you may collapse or come to a standstill in ministry. There are many standstill churches around. They grow to a point but could grow no further. The reason being they fail to share the burden of ministry.

A balanced church is one that has people of all sorts within it; young, the old, educated and uneducated, rich and poor, and male and female. Every pastor will fall into one of these categories. **It must be your goal to incorporate all sections of the church to help in the development and growth of the ministry.** In other words, all sorts must be drafted in to the share the burden. You will find that the category of people who you have written off, as far as ministry is concerned, would be able to contribute greatly to the ministry.

I notice that most churches exclude the educated and rich from involvement in ministry. Usually, the rich are only expected to contribute money to the church. Similarly, the educated are just expected to improve the cosmetic image of the church. However, I have found both of these groups of people to be very productive and useful. I have many medical doctors,

specialists, lecturers, architects, and engineers, all who are serving as lay pastors. These lay pastors are sharing the burden of ministry alongside me.

**The ministry can not be borne by one person. It is simply impossible.** From today, if you want to have a greater ministry than what you currently have, learn to share the burden.

Sometimes people do not share the burden because they want to take all of the glory for themselves. They want people to feel that they are the only ones with the supernatural gift. They want people to show appreciation to themselves alone. Others are afraid of rebellion in the camp. How common is the story of associate pastors rebelling. Many senior pastors fear their assistants will outshine them one day. Fear not, only believe! The work is so great that you will never ever be able to do it all. There is too much space in the sky for two birds to collide.

I want to show you why it is such a burden to pastor people.

## **PEOPLE ARE BY NATURE UNGRATEFUL AND FORGETFUL**

**...in the last days... men shall be... unthankful...**

**2 Timothy 3:1,2**

You can notice ungratefulness in people by the way they complain. Moses led the Israelites out of bondage and slavery and yet they murmured and complained bitterly against him. Aaron even had to make a golden calf to calm them down.

When something minute goes wrong, you may be surprised at the actions of people you have ministered to. Some easily forget what you have done for them, especially since the things that a pastor does are not always tangible but spiritual. Most tend to think that the pastor has done nothing for them. Others go a step further and commit evil towards you after you have been a blessing to them. Don't be shocked! The prophet Jeremiah experienced the same thing from his people. He said,

**Shall evil be recompensed for good?**

**Jeremiah 18:20a**

Once a pastor of another denomination told me us a very disturbing story. He said that he was surprised when one of his church members came to his house one night to assault him. He couldn't believe that this young man whom he had led to Christ, trained up in the Lord, blessed his marriage and helped him through various crises would attack him in that manner.

Dear friend, do not be surprised! Do not expect gratitude from man, expect your rewards from God. Hezekiah was blessed. But he did not "render again". That means he did not show gratitude for all the blessings he had received.

**But Hezekiah RENDERED NOT AGAIN according to the benefit done unto him...**

**2 Chronicles 32:25**



## **PEOPLE WILL BETRAY YOU**

Though Judas walked and ministered with Jesus for three years, he eventually betrayed him for a small amount of money. Betrayal is a part of ministry. It is also a part of life. If you have yet to experience betrayal, I can assure you that you will. The disturbing thing about betrayal is that it is done by people who are supposedly close to you.

You are not greater than your master, Jesus! The fact that someone may one day betray you may make it very difficult for you to happily interact and flow with the ministry. Look closely at the ministry of any great man of God. You will discover that they have all had their fair share of traitors. All of this contributes to the burden and difficulty of ministry.

**Yea, mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me.**

**Psalm 41:9**

## **PEOPLE ARE WICKED**

Alexander, the Coppersmith did Paul a lot of harm in his ministry.

**Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works.**

**2 Timothy 4:14**

I have experienced wickedness from people who have lifted themselves up to fight and oppose me. There were times when my ministry and very existence have even become a source of

work for such wicked individuals. The work being fighting, slandering and that of opposition Without my existence, I think some people may not have a job to do.

If you are not resolute in ministry, you could easily decide to leave the harassment's behind you and move on to a more peaceful existence in some secular job.

## **PEOPLE CAN ABANDON YOU SUDDENLY**

Paul had experienced sudden desertions by some of his colleagues, like Demas. I remember one young man whom I trained. He was about to take up an important position in the ministry that we had been preparing for over a year. On the day he was to fill the position, he suddenly informed me that he was leaving the country. I couldn't believe my ears! All of our months of preparation meant nothing to him. He just abandoned ship without notice. These experiences are all part of the ministry. Abandonment also occurred under the ministry of Apostle Paul.

**For Demas hath forsaken me...**

**2 Timothy 4:10**

## **PEOPLE ARE EQUALIZERS, DISRESPECTFUL AND IMPUDENT**

**And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses... Hath the Lord indeed spoken only by Moses? HATH HE NOT SPOKEN ALSO BY US?**

**Numbers 12:2**

Miriam and Aaron (the closest assistants and closest relatives) were now speaking against Moses. They most probably said these things like, “God also speaks by us,” and “Are you the only one?” With time, familiarity enters the relationship and they now consider you as an equal. They tend to think, “We can all do it. What’s the big deal! You are no different from us!”

This is unfortunate, but real. People easily take you for granted. They murmur and complain against you, forgetting all that you have done for them. When they lose their temper, you will find church members speaking to you like a little child.

### **“You Remind Me of My Father”**

One church member approached her pastor after Sunday service. The pastor thought she was about to compliment him for the powerful sermon he just preached.

She started, “Pastor, you know something? I felt I should tell you that you remind me of my father.”

“Oh really!” the pastor responded.

She said, “He was so full of himself and so are you!”

The pastor was taken aback but he had to smile and continue as though he had received a compliment. The church member was telling the pastor exactly what she thought of him.

**Now Korah... and Dathan... and Abiram... and On... rose up before Moses... and said... WHEREFORE THEN LIFT YE UP YOURSELVES [Moses and Aaron] above the congregation of the Lord?**

**Numbers 16:1-3**

These rebels apparently thought that Moses felt he was too “big for his own shoes”.

## **PEOPLE ARE DISOBEDIENT AND REBELLIOUS**

Samuel confronted Saul and asked him why he had not obeyed the Lord fully. One of the difficult things every pastor will have to come to terms with is that in spite of all the good things you preach, many people are still disobedient and continue to live in sin.

I used to be amazed at the extent of spiritual rebellion found in the Body of Christ. But that is human nature.

**Wherefore then didst thou not obey the voice of the Lord, but didst fly upon the spoil, and didst evil in the sight of the Lord?**

**1 Samuel 15:19**

## **PEOPLE DO NOT UNDERSTAND AND DO NOT RESPOND**

**When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and UNDERSTANDETH IT NOT...**

**Matthew 13:19**

Sometimes people do not understand the Word. Often they

do not understand why you have to do fundraising. Consequently, many do not respond in giving. Many times, I have to explain that they are giving to build a nice church where *they* can have *their* weddings, baby dedications and other ceremonies. Leading people who have all the above characteristics: ungratefulness, disloyalty, etc., are major problems.

One person cannot do it alone. The burden must be shared with others. Sharing the burden is hard work. The people will be angry with you as well. Every good or bad thing will come your way.

## DISTRIBUTING THE BURDEN

The principal strategy for distributing the burden is to involve lay men and women in ministry. No church is capable of employing an endless number of people. Every church has a limit to its resources.

It is not possible to pay salaries and rent an unlimited number of houses for the staff of the ministry. Full-time staff are limited in the number and the amount of work that can be done. In my church, though I oversee a hundred churches and several thousand people at the Lighthouse Cathedral, we currently have only seven full-time pastors on staff worldwide. We have over two hundred pastors and trainee pastors within the ministry. Ninety-five percent of them are unpaid lay people. **The use of lay people is the secret to unlimited expansion of the church.**

Sometimes people think that lay people cannot do much of the ministry work. The opposite is true. This has been one of the greatest mistakes of many senior ministers. Lay workers

often do more ministry work than full-time staff. The reason is simple. The sheep who you have to minister to are at work from nine to five in the day and are only free in the evenings and at weekends.

## **Stop Pretending...**

Both full-time and part-time pastors have to wait until this period to have access to the sheep. What do full-time pastors do during the day? Many of them pretend to be working in the office behind a desk, but in reality, they are doing nothing at all.

Pastors instruct their members to have their “quiet time” at home, however they come to the office to read their Bibles and pray behind their desk. Sitting behind a desk does not mean that you are working. A pastor is neither a banker nor accountant. He is a shepherd. Shepherds must be in the fields moving amongst the sheep and ministering to them.

After you have grasped the secret of using lay people; you must bring to your lay pastors understanding that they are actually sharing the burden of ministry with the senior pastor. They will share the burden on earth and they will share the burden of accounting for the sheep in heaven. What is the burden on earth? It is the burden of praying, visiting, counseling and interacting with the sheep. What is the burden in heaven? It is the burden of answering for each and every soul that God gave to you.

The burden of leading sheep cannot be borne by one person or just a few people who supposedly have a ‘call’. The burden of accounting for hundreds of different people cannot be borne

by one person. When I stand before the judgement seat and God asks me about some souls in Canada, I intend to mention the name of the pastor there and ask the Lord to inquire from him. When the Lord asks me about some souls in Navrongo, in the north of Ghana, I will immediately tell the Lord, "Please ask my dear pastor who is charge of that branch." It is impossible for one person to answer such for such a large burden.

**...for they watch for your souls, AS THEY THAT MUST GIVE ACCOUNT, that they may do it with joy...**

**Hebrews 13:17**

Every Pastor will have a lot to answer for when he stands before the Lord in heaven. Your burden is to lead all your sheep to heaven. Make sure you lose none of them. Every true pastor's motto should be, "Of all that you have given me, I have lost none!" (John 6:39, John 17:12; and John 18:9)

Moses was breaking down under the burden of leading the entire flock. God saw this and decided to take of the 'spirit' that was on Moses and put it on the seventy leaders "to bear the burden" with him.

**And the Lord said unto Moses, Gather unto me SEVENTY MEN of the elders of Israel... THAT THEY MAY STAND [work] THERE WITH THEE.**

**Numbers 11:1**

Involving students, workers, and professionals helps to distribute the burden to all saints in the church. The Lord wants us to be fruitful no matter what we do in this life. In the universities, I have established Lighthouse churches and have entrusted the preaching and pastoring responsibilities to a few students. I

am very proud of these student ministers because of the great job that they have done on their respective campuses. I don't have to rush to the university every Sunday morning to minister the Word. Ordinary saints should please join in and let's work together.

The saints must be perfected (prepared, trained) to do the work of the ministry. Ordinary saints can do the work.

**For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry,  
for the edifying of the body of Christ:**

**Ephesians 4:12**



## **CHAPTER 2**

# ***TAKE UP THE SPIRITUAL BURDEN***

God will only use you if you have a burden. If there is no burden, God will not use you. For example, if you want to heal the sick and cast out devils you need to have a genuine burden to have miracles of healing.

I had a burden to preach and to teach. Preaching and teaching brings deliverance. Preaching and teaching is powerful. I emphasize the Word of God whilst others emphasize other things. You cannot emphasize the Word of God unless you believe it is a powerful tool of deliverance.

Compassion is a key starting point for all ministries.

### **Jesus Had a Burden**

Jesus was moved with compassion when he saw the sheep without a shepherd.

**But when he saw the multitudes, HE WAS MOVED WITH COMPASSION ON THEM, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.**

**Matthew 9:36**

Jesus was moved with compassion when he saw the multitudes.

**And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, AND WAS  
MOVED WITH COMPASSION TOWARD THEM...**

**Mark 6:34**

No one can minister effectively without a real burden. Jesus' burden was to keep all that the Father had given him. The reason I know this was a burden on him was that he kept repeating this particular statement.

**...of all that he hath given me I should lose nothing...**

**John 6:39**

**...those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them  
is lost, but the son of perdition...**

**John 17:12**

**That the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them  
which thou gavest me have I lost none.**

**John 18:9**

People who don't have a burden for souls, are often motivated by money, fame, power or some other ulterior motive.

## **Paul Had a Burden**

Paul's desire (burden) for Israel was that they might be saved.

**Brethren, my heart's DESIRE and prayer to God for Israel  
is, that they might be saved.**

## **Romans 10:1**

Paul had great heaviness and sorrow in his heart for his people.

**I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost, That I have GREAT HEAVINESS and CONTINUAL SORROW in my heart.**

**Romans 9:1-2**

## **HOW TO DEVELOP A GENUINE SHEPHERDORAL BURDEN**

If you are the senior pastor, you can sensitize people towards the burden of ministry. The shepherdoral burden is the burden of not losing any of the sheep that God has given you. This burden drives a shepherd/pastor to look for the lost, pray for the sheep, and to visit them. It is that burden that leads us to fast and pray so that the sheep will not fall away.

The pastor's heart and attitude is that he doesn't want to lose any of the people he has in his ministry or church. It is that attitude that makes the pastor leave the ninety-nine people to follow the one lost sheep.

It should be that the only people who leave your church are "sons of perdition". Sometimes people who leave are not "sons of perdition" but genuine people who we didn't care for. People who didn't receive the shepherd's attention.

Do not allow your own problems to be a weight to you.

## **Do Not be Affected by Your Own Problems and Burdens**

When you get to the point where your own problems and burdens do not weigh you down, then you have taken the first step towards having a genuine shepherdial burden. As long as the burden for your own problems weigh you down, you will not be able to think about God's work. Genuine ministry begins when you can separate yourself from your own burdens and take on the burdens of others.

I always remember the example of Kathryn Khulman, an American healing evangelist. She had a strong burden for the sick to be healed. However, she herself was said to be very ill with a serious heart condition whilst she ministered to the sick. She did not think of her own problems as she ministered to the needs of others.

## **Pray for a Burden**

You can pray to God for a burden for His work. I remember a retreat I attended in 1982, just before I went to university. It was held in the Legon Botanical Gardens. It was a seven-hour prayer meeting from 10:00 a.m. to 5:00 p.m. What a memorable event! Guess what we prayed for? We prayed for a burden. We didn't ask God to bless our ministries, we asked Him to give us a genuine burden for His work. I believe that is why God has given me a burden for His work, because I asked for it.

## **Dive Into the Work and the Burden Will Come**

You cannot do the ministry work for long without realizing the great need of mankind for the Word and power of God. As you do God's will a burden for the harvest will come upon you.

### **CHAPTER 3**

#### ***POIMEN***

#### **WHO WAS JESUS CHRIST?**

**I am the bread of life...**

**John 6:35**

**...I am from above...**

**John 8:23**

**...Before Abraham was, I am**

**John 8:58**

**...I am the light of the world.**

**John 9:5**

**I am the door...**

**John 10:9**

**I am the good shepherd...**

**John 10:11**

**I am the Son of God**

**John 10:36**

**I am the resurrection, and the life...**

**John 11:25**

**Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am.**

**John 13:13**

**...I am the way, the truth, and the life...**

**John 14:6**

**I am the vine...**

**John 15:5**

**...Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born...**

**John 18:37**

**I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending...**

**Revelation 1:8**

**...I am the first and the last.**

**Revelation 1:17**

Jesus Christ was many things to us. He called himself different things at different times. At one time he said he was the way, the truth and the life. He announced that he was the door. He declared that he was the bread of life and the light of the world. But one of the most important things that Jesus proclaimed was that he was the good shepherd.

**I am the good shepherd.**

**John 10:11**

## **What is Poimen?**

What did Jesus mean when he said he was a good shepherd? The word shepherd in John 10:11 is translated from the Greek word *poimen* (pronounced *poy-mane'*). It is this same word, *poimen*, which is translated pastor in Ephesians 4:11.

**And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors [poimen] and teachers;**

**Ephesians 4:11**

We can see from this that the word shepherd is interchangeable with the word pastor. So What the Lord was really saying was, “I am the good pastor”. Throughout the Bible, Jesus referred to himself as a shepherd or a pastor. Jesus Christ is the perfect example of a good pastor.

## **No Shepherd – No Direction!**

The pastoral office is very important because without it many things cannot work. Remember that the sheep were scattered and lost not because they didn’t have an apostle or prophet, but because they didn’t have a pastor.

**And when he saw the multitude he was moved with compassion because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd [pastor].**

**Matthew 9:36**

I am not saying that prophets and apostles are not important. They are! But without a good pastor there will be no gathering of God’s people. The Bible says that the sheep without shepherds fainted. This means they were distressed and harassed.

## **I’m Having a Heart Attack... Somebody Call A Dentist!**

In the medical arena there are ophthalmologists (eye doctors), cardiothoracic surgeons (heart doctors), and dentists (teeth



doctors). If you ever had a heart problem, you would certainly not want a dentist to operate on your heart! Neither would I! Dentists are specialists for the teeth and not for the heart.

In the secular world, people have grown to respect these different specialties and have allowed them to function well within their own field. Specialists increase the individual's safety and allow for the special needs of everyone to be met.

We must learn to accord similar specialties to Christian ministers. Today, everyone in the ministry is called "pastor". However, many of those who claim to be pastors are no more a pastor than I am the Heavyweight Boxing Champion of the world!

## **So, You Say You're a Pastor! Are You Sure?**

In the Old Testament, anyone who intruded into a holy place or office, in which they have not been called, were struck dead by a Holy God who does not accept such intrusions.

In my few years of ministry, I have noticed many people without the shepherding gift standing in the office of pastor. Consequently, some of these people either have failed in ministry or are experiencing a gradual disintegration of their ministries. This is not because they are evil, but simply because *a dentist cannot operate on a heart*. God gives different gifts to everyone. It is time for us to discover our gifts and stay with our special callings.

One of the key roles of a shepherd is to lead sheep.

**The Lord is my shepherd I shall not want, he maketh me to**

**lie down in green pastures: HE LEADETH ME...**  
**Psalm 23:1,2**

## **What Is The Gift of Government?**

In 1 Corinthians 12:28, the Bible talks about the gifts of governments. The word “government” is translated from the Greek word, *kubernesis*, which means a steering, pilotage, or guiding. I believe that this gift of governments is the same thing as the office of a shepherd or pastor.

Essentially the gift of government is used to lead and guide people. The shepherd is to use this gifting to guide the sheep to “good places” (green pastures). This gift of governments is a special gift from God and is therefore not by any to be enterprised and taken in hand wantonly, or unadvisedly by anybody.

We need to soberly reflect on the implications of leading people. When someone does not have the ability to govern in the natural world, the whole nation can be thrown into chaos.

There are bad governments everywhere. This is obvious by the state of poverty, war, and instability that exist in such countries. That is the reason why there is so much fuss about who is elected into the seat of government. The government means so much to everyone. It may mean the difference between death and life, poverty and prosperity.

That is why there is such a commotion over which government will come into power. There must be equal concern in the church about who is allowed to become a pastor. With poor government, and incapable people at the helm of affairs in the

church, we are headed for anarchy and chaos.

God's word must be our guiding post. Things not based on the bread and word of God have a limited life span. In the beginning, they may look flashy and appealing, but with time, they will soon crumble.

It is time for evangelists to leave the church and to go out where the sinners are. It is time for prophets to leave the governing of local bodies to pastors. **It is time for pastors to make budgetary allocations for the support of other ministers like evangelists, prophets and teachers.**

## **Who Should Govern, Prophet or Pastor?**

You will notice certain peculiar things when an evangelist or prophet is in charge of a church. On your first visit, the charisma and the inspiration of the leader may impress you. Apostles, prophets and evangelists are very inspirational and impressive speakers. But remember, a church is not governed on impressive speeches and powerful prophecies.

*A church is not sustained by miracles.* A local church is to be run by a pastor – a good shepherd (*poimen*). Someone with the ability to govern a local body of people. Somebody with the ability to lead people successfully to a good place (green pastures). Someone with the gift of governments (1 Corinthians 12:28).

## **They Don't Know, That They Don't Know!**

As you continue attending a church that is pastored by an evangelist, you will probably notice some amount of disorganization and mismanagement. **I have noticed that church heads, who are obviously not pastors, struggle with the day-to-day administration of their churches.**

Often these out-of-place ministers are accused of evil deeds. Knowing some of them personally, I realize that they have no evil intentions. It is just that they simply do not have the gift of governments (administration, management). The sad thing is that sometimes they don't even know that they don't have the ability.

## **The Broken Amplifier**

I remember once visiting a church headed by someone, obviously called to be an evangelist. After I finished ministering, I heard the minister chide the whole church about an amplifier and other equipment that had not been repaired. The question I asked myself was this, "What does the repairing of equipment have to do with the whole congregation?" The maintenance of the equipment should have nothing to do with the congregation, but rather with the administration of the church. **A church must be able to run its affairs properly.**

This man of God spoke to the congregation about money matters and other intricate details that had nothing to do with the general crowd. They were matters of internal management. At a point, tears almost came to my eyes as I watched this evangelist, helpless and unable to govern the local body.

Dear reader, his rightful place was out on the harvest fields

bringing multitudes to Christ, performing miracles, signs and wonders; not governing a local assembly. As soon as such a person sits in the seat of government, he becomes an oddity. In fact, you can almost become a byword and a laughing stock after awhile!

## **The Evangelist Was Feeding Them “Junk Food”**

Churches not run by *called* pastors are sustained by waves of inspirational meetings. The sheep are rarely systematically taught Bible principles and doctrines. Rather, they are fed on a diet of inspirational, highly motivating and emotional meals every week. **No Christian can survive on eating “junk food” everyday, they need a well-balanced diet!**

These churches are full of babies who are not interested in the Bible. Therefore, there is no stability in the membership. They have what I call a *floating crowd*. Every week you will see an entirely different group of people attending their services. In order to grow, people need a regular diet of the Word of God.

**And Jesus [the Word] said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.**

**John 6:35**

Motivation is different from feeding. There are churches that are full of highly motivated but empty shells.

What am I trying to say? It is time for us to allow the church to be governed by individuals with the gift of govern-

ments. It is time for shepherds to take their rightful place at the helm of the local church. It is time for people to be able to say like the Lord Jesus, I am a good shepherd or pastor.

## **CHAPTER 4**

# ***DIFFERENT LEVELS OF THE SHEPHERDING ANOINTING***

One thing that we must be aware of is that there are different levels of anointing within the same office or calling. Though a group of people may be called to stand as prophets, as individuals they may operate in this ministerial office with varying levels of anointing. I want to show you this truth from three different points in scripture.

### **Two Levels of Prophetic Anointing**

Firstly, notice the example of the prophets Elijah and Elisha. Though they both operated in the office of a prophet, Elisha eventually operated on a level of anointing that was twice that of Elijah's. The Bible records that Elisha asked to be able to operate on a level two times higher than that of Elijah, his father-in-ministry.

**...Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, LET A DOUBLE PORTION OF THY SPIRIT BE UPON ME.**

**2 Kings 2:9**

Obviously, Elisha knew that there was something higher within the office of the prophet that he could attain. He did not want to be something else, like a pastor or teacher. He wanted to remain a prophet, but within that office, he wanted to be a prophet of a higher degree.

You too can desire to go higher within any calling that God has set you in! Ask and you shall receive! Elisha asked and he got what he asked for. Jesus said, **“If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye will ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you (John 15:7).**

## **The Highest Level of Anointing**

Secondly, under the ministry of Jesus. Jesus ministered as a pastor in addition to the other four offices. He was someone who operated in a limitless measure of the anointing. In other words, Jesus operated at the highest possible level within the gifting of a pastor.

**For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: FOR GOD GIVETH NOT THE SPIRIT BY MEASURE UNTO HIM.**

**John 3:34**

Thirdly, Apostle Paul. He wrote to the Corinthians and asked them to notice certain things about their calling.

**FOR YE SEE YOUR CALLING, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:**

**1 Corinthians 1:26**

## You Can Notice Different Levels

*As you observe different people in the office of a pastor, it is obvious that some are operating in a higher shepherding anointing.* Just observe different ministers operating in the same office. You will soon notice that some speak with much more power than others do.

There are times that I have sat in meetings and heard great men of God preaching from the same verses that I have preached. I then ask myself, “Why is the effect so different when this man preaches from the same simple scripture?” The answer is – different levels of anointing. Yes, that minister was ministering the same thing, but with a different level of power and anointing.

You will discover that larger crowds gather to hear someone who is on a higher level of anointing. One of the characteristics of the anointing is that it attracts crowds.

**Pastors who are operating on a higher level of anointing tend to have larger churches than shepherds who have less of the pastoral gift.** In reality, some shepherds have only three church members whilst others have three thousand. This does not mean that the shepherd with three members is not a shepherd. Just that he is a shepherd with a different level of anointing.

You will notice that more miracles and revelations occur in a prophet who moves in a higher level of anointing. Elijah performed sixteen miracles, but Elisha had thirty-two spectacular miracles and revelations.



One of the ways we are expected to develop our calling and office is by observing what God is doing with you. *You can actually see certain things about your calling and your office by watching yourself and observing your natural gifts.* When I say natural gifts, I don't mean natural talents. I mean God-given abilities for the ministry.

**FOR YE SEE YOUR CALLING, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:  
1 Corinthians 1:26**

## **You Can See Your Calling**

You can actually see things about your calling. There are two ways God puts you into an office. Sometimes God can actually tell you that from this time onwards He has called you and put you in an office. You are then expected to flow in that area and follow Him as He leads you step-by-step.

At other times, God expects you to notice your calling by seeing what you do naturally in the ministry. **Anytime you find yourself doing something effortlessly on a consistent basis, you may have a calling in that area.** You see (observe and notice things about) your calling (1 Corinthians 1:26).



## **CHAPTER 5**

### ***YOU CAN BE A SHEPHERD!***

In this chapter, I want to show you that there are many scriptural reasons why I believe you can be a shepherd/pastor. I believe that at a point in your Christian development, you can be a shepherd, at least at some level. The Bible teaches from many angles about you being fruitful in ministry. The Word also teaches us that “many” and not “few” are called to the ministry.

**And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors [*poimen*] and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:**

**Ephesians 4:11,12**

The usual interpretation of this scripture is that God gave special ministerial offices to the Church for three principal reasons:

- 1. To perfect the saints.**
- 2. To do the work of the ministry.**
- 3. To edify the body of Christ.**

This is true, however, we must be aware that the translators of the Bible added punctuation, which sometimes gives an unfortunate interpretation of the text. When you remove the commas from Ephesians 4:12, it gives a completely different meaning, which I believe is more accurate. Remove the punctuation marks in Ephesians 4:12 and look at what the verse

is saying now.

**And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors [*poimen*] and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints for the work of the ministry for the edifying of the body of Christ:**

**Ephesians 4:11,12**

It is saying that God gave apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers “for the perfecting of the saints *for the work* of the ministry”. **In other words, these special ministerial offices are given to perfect ordinary saints to enable them (the saints) to do the work of ministry.** What does this mean? This simply means that ordinary saints can do ministry work. It also means that ministry work is not the sole preserve of certain apostles and teachers. Laymen can satisfactorily accomplish a large part of the ministry.

When you interpret Ephesians 4:11,12 this way it puts the responsibility of ministry on all of us and not just on a few special people. This must be the case, because the Bible says *many* are called!

God never called a few people to do His work. God has always called many more people than have responded. If you were God and you had a huge task to accomplish, the task of saving the whole world, would you call a few people and send them out? Of course not! You would call as many people as possible and send them out. Unfortunately, few people respond to their call, therefore, few are eventually chosen to serve in the vineyard.

## **Is the Call Such a Big Deal?**

We have made the call of God to be some mystical experience involving the hearing of voices, seeing of visions, and having of spectacular spiritual experiences. That is an erroneous generalization. Many are “called”, but many have not seen visions of Jesus. The Bible teaches us that we are “called” to be saints.

**To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, CALLED TO BE SAINTS...**

**Romans 1:7**

**Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, CALLED TO BE SAINTS...**

**1 Corinthians 1:2**

It is the saints who are expected to do the work according to Ephesians 4:12. Now let us be honest. In our calling as saints, how many of us have heard supernatural voices? How many of us have had thunder and lightning frighten us to salvation? How many of us fell down on the way to Damascus? Very few Christians have had such dramatic calls to God. That however, does not mean that we are not called.

All born-again Christians have a supernatural calling on their lives to be saints. It may not be spectacular but it is certainly supernatural. **If you call yourself a Christian, then you have a received a call before in your life to which you have responded.** I am informing you that without knowing, you have actually heard a call and responded to a divine call.

What was that call? That call was simply a conviction that came upon you about the reality of Jesus Christ. That same conviction led you to give your life to Christ, and made you a born-again Christian.

Sometimes people looking out for the sensational miss the real supernatural move of God. **In the same way that we are called to be Christians, God will call many of us to His service at one level or the other.** You may not be called to a breath-taking level of ministry like Elijah, *but it is still a calling!*

Look at the ministry of Samuel the prophet. Samuel was in the temple when he received the call of God.

### **And the child Samuel ministered unto the Lord before Eli... 1 Samuel 3:1**

But notice that Samuel did not know what the call of God was. In fact, he thought it was something very natural, *a man's voice*. Many people are called, but think that because it feels natural, like a thought, an idea or even a conviction, that they are not called. Since the call of God is not so different from natural things around us, many just assume they have not been called.

The prophet Samuel went to his father-in-ministry, Eli, thinking that he was calling him. He could not distinguish between a natural human voice and the supernatural voice of God. What does this mean to us? It means that many times the supernatural is not as dramatic as we expect. If it was that dramatic, Samuel would have immediately known that he was not hearing a human voice.

**...THE LORD CALLED Samuel: and he answered, Here am I. And he ran unto Eli, and said, Here am I; FOR THOU [Eli] CALLEDST ME...**

**1 Samuel 3:4**

It was Eli (his pastor or father-in-ministry) who helped him to recognize the call of God on his life.

## **The Allergic Pastor**

I have watched many of my church members grow up in the Lord. I have watched God calling them and have seen how many of them did not recognize the call of God on their lives. In fact, some of my best pastors were once allergic to the subject *of being called* to the ministry.

One particular pastor did not want to accept the possibility that the call of God was there. So he developed an allergy to the topic and did not want to discuss it with me at all! Today, he is a successful pastor in full-time ministry, obeying the call of God on his life. You see, you can be called without even knowing it, just like Samuel. He was called but did not even know it!

## **The Call is Supernatural**

The call to a small ministry is still a call. It is still supernatural. It may not be outwardly impressive, but it is still a call. I have not had the experience of thunder, lightning and heavenly voices calling me to the ministry. But I am just as called as any other minister.

**...but the Lord was not in the wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake: And after the earthquake a fire: but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire A STILL SMALL VOICE.**

**1 Kings 19:11,12**

God often speaks by this still small voice. It was the still small voice of conviction that brought me into the ministry. I have just had a quiet conviction. It is that conviction that I have followed up until this time.

## **Be Open to the Call**

Pastors ought to encourage their members to be open to the call. This will release many more Christians into useful ministry. *It is this secret of releasing the masses of lay people into the ministry that brings about church growth.* One man can do very little, but many people can a great amount. One pastor can probably remember the names of only one hundred fifty people in his church. **How can one man, who does not even know the names and problems of most of the people in his church, effectively pastor thousands of people?** That is why we need the help of lay shepherds and lay pastors.

In the church I pastor, I encourage everyone to be open to the call to the ministry. In fact, if you ask my congregation whether they are called or not, most of them will respond, "I believe I am called!" The Bible said that many are called and not few.

Samuel stayed in the temple and was able to hear the call of God. **Serious Christians, who spend a lot of time in church doing the work of the ministry, are likely to hear the call of**



**God.** I also think that Christians who spend time at discos, parties and the like do not hear the voice of God. Even if they are called, they will not be able to hear it because of the other distractions in their lives.

## **Who Is Ordained?**

We all quote this famous verse of scripture on prayer.

**Whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.**

**John 15:16b**

We believe that whatever we ask the Father, He will give it to us. In fact, we have great confidence that this scripture applies to all Christians and not just to the apostles. However, what does the first part of that verse say? It says,

**...I HAVE CHOSEN YOU AND ORDAINED YOU, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain:**

**John 15:16a**

Is this ordination and choosing not the same thing as a calling? It certainly is! If you believe that God, the Father will hear all of our prayers then we must believe that God has chosen and ordained all of us to go and bear fruit. This leaves no one out, including you. **This means that Christian doctors, lawyers and businessmen are also ordained ministers who are expected to bear much fruit.** What is the fruit that he is talking about? The fruit of souls brought to the Lord. The fruit of people being established in the Lord. Who does that? A

shepherd.

If you expect God to answer all of your prayers, you must first bear much fruit. **Many people are fainting and are being scattered because there are not enough shepherds.** There are a lot of big-time men of God but there are not enough shepherds.

Let me now show you other scriptural reasons why I think every Christian can do the work of a shepherd.

## **ALL YOU NEED IS A DESIRE**

The Bible says if anyone has the desire to become a bishop, he has desired a good thing. Let us not deviate from the Word of God.

**This is a true saying, if a man desire the OFFICE OF A BISHOP, he desireth a good work.**

**1 Timothy 3:1**

The Word is telling us here that in order become a bishop all we need is a desire. Let it be clear that a bishop is simply a shepherd or pastor. The Greek word translated bishop is *episkopos*, which means an overseer of God's people.

Apostle Paul's vision was to enjoin more people to do God's work. He therefore asked Timothy to look out for people with a desire to be involved in ministry. After locating people who had a desire to do the work, Paul instructed Timothy to ensure that they were of honorable reputation. **All the qualities that Paul asked Timothy to look for were matters of charac**

**ter and not talent, ability or anointing.**

Paul was making it very easy for anyone to become a shepherd. All you needed to do was to have a desire and an unquestionable character. Pastors, look out for people who have a desire for God's work and who have an honest and faithful character. **If that is what the Bible teaches us to look out for, then we cannot be more spiritual than God.**

Some of my most fruitful pastors do not look outwardly anointed or talented. But, because God was looking for their faithfulness and integrity they have grown to be very successful in ministry.

## **A NATURAL STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT**

**FOR WHEN FOR THE TIME YE OUGHT TO BE TEACHERS, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.**

**Hebrews 5:12**

When Paul wrote to the Hebrew Christians, he made it clear that he was disappointed in the fact that when they should have been teachers themselves, they still needed instruction. He talks about a time when you need to be taught.

**There is a time in every Christian's life when he must be able to teach.** This is a natural stage of development. It does not require any special or spectacular experience with God to be able to teach. **Teaching is the principal duty of a good**

**shepherd.** Teaching is the same as feeding sheep.

I have found out that when Christians do not develop normally into shepherding they often turn into something bad. A time comes when some of the church members know exactly what the pastor is going to preach. They know how he will begin the message and how it will end, they heard the same message two years ago. They end up becoming critical.

In the medical field, when a person has more food than he uses the food is converted into fat and the person becomes obese. Obesity is a dangerous disease that can kill you. It is simply caused by being overfed and under exercised. That is the problem of many Christians, they have nothing to do with the knowledge that is being imparted to them, Sunday after Sunday. They never use the knowledge they have. They never feed anyone. They never minister to anyone. They become a danger to themselves.

A dangerous sign that you should look out for in your own life is when you become full of criticism. People who criticize a lot are often not involved in the work of God.

I remember one critical friend. He had many comments to make about different men of God. However, he himself did not do much in the ministry and was more like a commentator. Beware of commentating Christians! They fill your mind with poison!

Let's all grow up naturally, and begin to teach when we need to teach and shepherd when we need to shepherd. Pastors, encourage your members to become shepherds and feeders of sheep under you. Allow them to become solvers of problems

and helpers of the weak. Everyone can do it!

I remember a doctor colleague whose wife went into the labor ward to deliver a baby. Unfortunately, the woman was permitted to labor too long and the baby became distressed (short of oxygen). Eventually the doctors took a decision to operate on the lady and she gave birth to a child who had brain damage. I never saw this child! About five or six years later, I met someone who had visited this lady and I asked about the child. “How is the child doing?”

She said, “Oh pastor. It’s a pathetic story. This child is six years old and cannot talk or move. He sits in a chair as a six year-old defecating and urinating all over himself. He is growing into a boy but he has no control whatsoever of any of these functions!”

She said to me, “It’s a sorry sight. Because when a baby messes up it’s a little different from when a grown boy does the same thing.”

She went on, “What an embarrassment it is to the parents. And how difficult it is for them to cope with the situation.”

As I reflected on this story, the Spirit of the Lord showed me how similar the condition of this child was to many Christians. When they should be performing certain functions naturally, they still need to be carried about, fed and cleaned by someone else. Spiritually, that is also a pathetic situation! A situation of no growth and no development.

Recently I had a call from a young man. I got to know this young man about seven years ago, when he was just nineteen years old. At that time he was a student, but hadn’t taken his education seriously. I said to him, “You have to take your edu-

cation seriously!”

I even tried to help him to continue his schooling. I even promised that, “I will pay for every single one of your books, if only you will go to school.”

After I made that promise, I never saw this young man again. He just wasn’t interested in his studies. The next time I saw him was at a family funeral. When I saw him, I wondered what he was up to. I didn’t speak to him but then out of the blue, seven years later this young man gave me a phone call.

“Hullo!”

“Yes,” I answered. “Oh, I see. It’s been a long time. What can I do for you?”

It was his birthday. He told me his story and said, “Things are difficult for me now. I am twenty-six years old and I have no man to help me now.”

I said, “I see. What can I do for you?”

“Since I have no one to help me now I wanted to ask you if you could start helping me. And if I could be coming to you for pocket money.”

“Pocket money!” I exclaimed.

This is a twenty-six year old man who doesn’t work but wants to collect pocket money from me on a regular basis. What he has failed to realize was that there is a time you can receive pocket money and there is a time you must work for money. In every sphere of life, you are expected to develop and grow into the next stage. If you fail to do so you will become an anomaly in society.

I said to this young man, “Come and see me in my office.”

When he came I told him, “The days of collecting pocket

money like a child are over. You must work now! Nobody is going to give you pocket money at this stage of your life. We can help you go to school or help you get a job, but you cannot expect regular handouts from me.”

You must develop into a teacher or shepherd that feeds God’s people. You are expected to develop and become a feeder according to Hebrews 5:12. If you fail to do this you will become an awkward, critical, malformed, and retarded Christian.

## **THERE IS A GREAT NEED FOR SHEPHERDS**

**But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.**

**Matthew 9:36**

In this scripture, Jesus makes it clear that people are fainting and being harassed because there is was no shepherd.

When I was growing up as a Christian, I learnt a lot by talking to senior Christians (who were like shepherds to me). Every difficult question I had I directed it to them. They were easily accessible and people I could talk to. When I had difficult questions like, “Who created God?”, “Why did Jesus have to die?”, and “Who was Cain’s wife?” I always had somebody to ask.

**Today in some of the big churches, pastors are almost unavailable because the reality is that one man cannot attend to the personal needs of so many thousands of people.**

Yes, he can preach to thousands, but he cannot personally talk to thousands. He cannot answer questions and spend time with the needy thousands. He is likely to have a break down if he tries to.

I believe in preaching to thousands from the pulpit, but I believe in having shepherds on the ground who minister one-on-one to the multitudes. Although I preach to thousands, I still enjoy attending to the personal needs of as many of the flock as I can.

When you decide to become a shepherd, certain people's lives will be changed forever. If you do not become a shepherd, perhaps many lives will never become stable in their Christianity. When you, an ordinary Christian decide to become a shepherd (someone with the Word of God and solutions) people will begin to gather around you. It is then that you will minister to them Living Water.

## **GOD'S PEOPLE ARE SCATTERED WITHOUT A SHEPHERD**

**And they were scattered, because there is not shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered.**

**Ezekiel 34:5**

I remember when I was in Achimota School in Accra there was no Scripture Union (SU) fellowship on the western compound. You see, Achimota School being one of the greatest schools in Ghana has two compounds, the east and the western



compounds.

There was a vibrant SU fellowship on the eastern compound but none on the west. I took it upon myself to begin a fellowship on the western compound. After awhile there was a gathering of the western compound SU members into the western assembly hall. This western SU fellowship became so dynamic that some easterners even began to walk to the west to attend these meetings.

What am I saying? The SU members (God's sheep) were scattered on the west when there was no shepherd. But with the rising up of a shepherd God's people began to gather and were blessed.

The devil wants us to be scattered because he knows that he can get the sheep when they are alone. **When the sheep are together in a group they are safer and the devil knows it!** That is why Satan does not want you to be a shepherd. That is why the devil has blinded the eyes of many pastors preventing them from seeing the potential shepherds and lay pastors amongst the congregation who could help greatly in the work.

## LET'S FULFILL THE GREAT COMMISSION

Jesus' last words to his disciples on top of a lonely hill were, **"Go ye... and make disciples... *teaching* them..."**

Traditionally, we think of the Great Commission as an evangelistic command. Yet when you study the instructions of our Lord very carefully, you will realize that the Great Commission

is also a shepherdial commission. It is a pastoral commission. It is a mandate for shepherds to move out and to begin to teach everywhere the Word of God. Christian friend, it is up to you and I to go out there and fulfill the Great Commission.

The evangelist has an anointing to preach and to lead people to Christ. That was the first instruction Jesus gave to Peter, come and I will make you fishers of men. His last words added something to the first words, the teaching element.

I once read about a famous evangelist who was holding mammoth crusades in every city of the world. One day this evangelist returned to one of the cities where he had held a crusade and did a survey of all the people who had taken decisions for Christ during his last crusade. The result of his survey was frightening. It showed that only 5% of the converts of his last massive crusade were still Christians.

I don't think the evangelist was very happy about these results. The poor results led him to establish a strong follow-up ministry. You see the evangelists' preaching alone does not fulfill the Great Commission. There is a need for shepherds to rise up to finish his work.

A cell leader is a shepherd. A pastor is a shepherd. A bishop is a shepherd. It is the same thing but at different levels. You must decide to develop into a shepherd so that you can help to fulfill the Great Commission. Jesus said, go and teach them because they (the sheep) need shepherds. After you have received for so many years, it is time for you to give.

Teaching builds people. Teaching building churches. Teaching fulfills the Great Commission.

compounds.

There was a vibrant SU fellowship on the eastern compound but none on the west. I took it upon myself to begin a fellowship on the western compound. After awhile there was a gathering of the western compound SU members into the western assembly hall. This western SU fellowship became so dynamic that some easterners even began to walk to the west to attend these meetings.

What am I saying? The SU members (God's sheep) were scattered on the west when there was no shepherd. But with the rising up of a shepherd God's people began to gather and were blessed.

The devil wants us to be scattered because he knows that he can get the sheep when they are alone. **When the sheep are together in a group they are safer and the devil knows it!** That is why Satan does not want you to be a shepherd. That is why the devil has blinded the eyes of many pastors preventing them from seeing the potential shepherds and lay pastors amongst the congregation who could help greatly in the work.

## LET'S FULFILL THE GREAT COMMISSION

Jesus' last words to his disciples on top of a lonely hill were, **"Go ye... and make disciples... *teaching* them..."**

Traditionally, we think of the Great Commission as an evangelistic command. Yet when you study the instructions of our Lord very carefully, you will realize that the Great Commission

is also a shepherdial commission. It is a pastoral commission. It is a mandate for shepherds to move out and to begin to teach everywhere the Word of God. Christian friend, it is up to you and I to go out there and fulfill the Great Commission.

The evangelist has an anointing to preach and to lead people to Christ. That was the first instruction Jesus gave to Peter, come and I will make you fishers of men. His last words added something to the first words, the teaching element.

I once read about a famous evangelist who was holding mammoth crusades in every city of the world. One day this evangelist returned to one of the cities where he had held a crusade and did a survey of all the people who had taken decisions for Christ during his last crusade. The result of his survey was frightening. It showed that only 5% of the converts of his last massive crusade were still Christians.

I don't think the evangelist was very happy about these results. The poor results led him to establish a strong follow-up ministry. You see the evangelists' preaching alone does not fulfill the Great Commission. There is a need for shepherds to rise up to finish his work.

A cell leader is a shepherd. A pastor is a shepherd. A bishop is a shepherd. It is the same thing but at different levels. You must decide to develop into a shepherd so that you can help to fulfill the Great Commission. Jesus said, go and teach them because they (the sheep) need shepherds. After you have received for so many years, it is time for you to give.

Teaching builds people. Teaching building churches. Teaching fulfills the Great Commission.

they pastor God's sheep as well. Isn't that a blessing? What more could you ask for?

## **PEOPLE ARE HUNGRY FOR THE TRUTH**

People have a hunger in their spirits that can only be satisfied by the Word of God.

**...should not the shepherds feed the flocks?**

**Ezekiel 34:2**

I remember when I was a young Christian, I would always have biblical discussions with Christian leaders. That helped me a lot in my spiritual development. Let's ask ourselves, when the pastor preaches on one topic how does he meet the needs of a thousand different people at the same time? That is why we need shepherds of all degrees who will feed the Word of God at every level.

## **The Disastrous Fast**

Some sheep need attention that a particular pastor may not be able to give. God needs lady shepherds to do His work as well. Sometimes when a male shepherd tries to help a female sheep in the "mud", he may get his feet dirty. Perhaps a female shepherd may be more suitable than a male one.

I remember a lady who came to see us in the church office. She had a problem with fornication and adultery. I asked, "What have you been doing about this problem?"

She said, “So-and-so evangelist came to our church to preach and minister deliverance. Afterwards he called and asked me to come for further deliverance at his home church.”

“Did you go?” I asked.

She said, “Yes.”

“What did he tell you at his home church?” I inquired.

“He said that he had discerned by the Spirit that I needed extra counseling and deliverance. So, he decided to fast with me for seven days,” she replied.

“Did you get delivered after the seven days?” I queried.

“I hope so!” She said.

Suddenly the Spirit of God prompted me to ask her, “How close did you get with this pastor?”

“Oh we were close,” she responded.

“Did you ever sleep with him?”

She bowed her head and said, “Yes. At the end of the seven day fast, when we were praying together in his house, we fornicated.”

“How many times did this happen?”

“Twice!” she said.

Please notice that the pastor was so kind as to actually fast for seven days with this sheep who needed counseling and deliverance. Not all pastors would lay aside their stomachs to help a sheep in need. Unfortunately, his help ended up in disaster. Perhaps a lady pastor or shepherd would have been a better person to fast and counsel with this sheep.

**Make no mistake about this, it is not only a physical hunger that people have they also have a spiritual hunger.** Even in Europe and America, this same spiritual hunger leads them to go after the occult and witchcraft.

Once while in Geneva I decided to attend a church service in a very large and old building. I wanted to see how the churches in the land were faring. In the church were eight old men and women. You could see that they didn't have much more than a few years to live. There was no young person in the church. The church building was virtually empty!

Most Swiss have virtually stopped going to church. Many of them no longer believe in God. Yet, they still have a spiritual hunger – a great spiritual need. When I saw a large occult/witchcraft shop, a few blocks down the road, I was not surprised. I have heard that Switzerland has a very high number of such cults and witchcraft activities. The reason for the multiplication of false cults and witchcraft is obvious. The spiritual vacuum has to be filled by something!

Since there is are shepherds the devil is having a field day in such places. The Bible says in **Matthew 9:36**, **“He was moved with compassion... because they fainted... as sheep having no shepherd.**

## **PEOPLE NEED TO BE VISITED AND STRENGTHENED**

One thing that cannot be replaced by any other, is a visit from your pastor. It is a blessing for a shepherd/pastor to come to your house. Remember, Jesus visited the earth for only three years yet this earth has never been the same. A visit is a very **POWERFUL** ministration. People need to be visited.

A visit is different from a phone call. A visit is different from

a powerful ministration of the Word in church. The sheep need to know that they have not been forgotten. They need to know that someone knows where they are. God needs more shepherds to go forth and strengthen the sheep. The Bible says that love never fails. When the sheep are visited, they feel that the pastor genuinely loves them.

You may be a mature and successful Christian who has a lot within you that can strengthen other people. Make the time to be a shepherd who visits somebody.

**Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them...**

**Jeremiah 23:2**

Instead of watching useless films on television and sleeping for twelve hours, get out of your house and minister to someone. Be the shepherd you are called to be!

## **DO YOU KNOW WHETHER YOU ARE CALLED?**

Do you know whether you are called? That is a good question. **I cannot tell whether you are called by looking at your nice face.** No one can tell whether you are called by listening to you speak. As you do the work, you will begin to realize the talents and anointing within you.

I believe in the lay pastor and the lay shepherd. Remember God has given every one of us talents, however some people feel that what they have is so small that it is not important. God



will judge you for doing nothing. God will not judge you only because you are immoral or wicked but also because you are doing nothing to help the kingdom.

Many times Jesus illustrated that doing nothing in certain circumstances is tantamount to being wicked. If you are not in a church that allows people to rise-up and become lay pastors and shepherds, perhaps you should move out to where you can be more fruitful.

## **CHAPTER 6**

# ***BIBLICAL CONDITIONS TO BECOMING A LAY PASTOR***

In this chapter, I want to layout four important conditions for anyone in the church to become a Lay Pastor. The first condition is a desire.

## **THE ALL IMPORTANT DESIRE**

Timothy was pastoring a large church and probably had the task of bringing up future pastors and leaders. He must

have sent a SOS message to Apostle Paul for guidance in this matter. It was very significant that Paul wrote back and laid out very clearly the conditions for anyone to become a pastor in Timothy's church.

**This is a true saying, if a man DESIRE the office of a bishop, he DESIRETH a good work.**

### **1 Timothy 3:1**

The first thing he said was that if anyone has a *desire* for God's work, to become an overseer, he *desires* a good thing. In other words, it is a good thing for members in the church to desire and aspire to become pastors.

Let's be honest. **Why shouldn't members of the church aspire to the highest possible office in the church structure? In the local church, the highest possible office is that of the pastor.**

## **I Never Had a Desire to Clean Toilets**

I remember years ago, as I walked up and down the corridors of different hospitals, I never once remember having the desire to be a hospital cleaner, laboratory man, or even a technician. I only had a desire for the highest possible position in the hospital, that is the position of a *doctor*. When someone walks into a bank, he would naturally aspire to become a *bank manager*. Why is it that people in the church are not taught to aspire for the highest position in the church?

Do not desire just to be an usher. Do not desire just to sing in the choir. Desire to be a pastor! I used to play the drums and the organ in church but I wanted to go as high as I could. The highest position in the church is not the drummer.

Dear ministers of God, if you teach your people that they can also be pastors they will believe it and rise up to the occasion. Here again, I am not talking about anybody leaving their job, I'm talking about becoming LAY pastors. The church does not have an infinite amount of money, and therefore cannot employ an infinite number of people. (Actually, that is why many churches are broke because they employ far too many people).

## **Even the Tax Collector Was Surprised!**

Recently, when the tax office investigated our church, they were surprised to find such a small number of people employed by the church. They asked for the list of pastors in the church. We gave them a long list. However, they did not believe that most of our pastors were gainfully employed elsewhere.

Our chief accountant told them, "This one works in the bank. And this one is an army officer. This one is a nurse..." But they still didn't believe us. They promised to investigate all of these pastors' work places to verify whether we were telling the truth.

Some pastors unfortunately criticize and spread bad stories about sister churches. This keeps them in darkness. Instead of learning the secrets that have made others great, they want to bring their brothers down.

I do not criticize other churches. I think all churches have a role to play. I learn from all successful churches around me, including those in my own city. I read all of the books written by pastors from my own city and I learn from them instead of fighting them. If somebody has a secret that I do not have, why shouldn't I learn from him?

Pastors, look for men and women who have a genuine desire to do God's work. You see, people having a desire or interest in the ministry is supernatural. It may not be a sensational experience but in a sense it is a burden put there by God.

## **YOU MUST HAVE A DIVINE CALL**

You must have a divine call. The ministry is not a human institution. The Bible makes it clear that you need to have a divine call to serve in a certain capacity.

**And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is CALLED OF GOD, as was Aaron.**

### **Hebrews 5:4**

Whenever I interview people who want to be in the ministry, I ask them if they believe they have a call of God on their lives. **Without the conviction of a call you cannot be a pastor.** Many people do not even know what it means to have a divine call. They don't know whether they are called or not!

**I believe that one of the principal manifestations of a divine call is a supernatural desire and interest in the work of the ministry.** Paul had a supernatural interest for the salvation of all men, including the Jews.

**Brethren MY HEART'S DESIRE and prayer to God for Israel is that they might be saved.**

**Romans 10:1**

Paul had this desire in him and it was this desire that was translated into practical ministry time and time again. Christian friend, don't take the call of God lightly. **You could pay with your life for disobeying the divine call.**

I have always had the desire to help God's people and to prevent God's sheep from falling away from the fold. One of my favorite songs begins like this, "*Father, help your children...*" That desire in me is a manifestation of a divine call to the pastoral office.

## **The Sixteen-Year Old Lay Pastor**

I've been a shepherd or pastor since I was sixteen years old in secondary school. I didn't call myself "pastor" then, but it was easy to see that I was called to be a pastor. I would draw up lists of the Scripture Union members who were in the fellowship and pray for them. I would mention each and every name and pray for them daily. I had long lists of names of over a hundred people. Mind you, no one was paying me to do this!

When it was holiday time I would draw maps to everyone's house and would visit them during the vacation. Was that not a sixteen year old pastor visiting his sheep? It certainly was! **You see, the supernatural desire to do God's work is often a manifestation of a divine call.** I believe that is why Paul asked Timothy to look for the desire and didn't even mention the call.

The desire is a manifestation of a divine call.

Dear pastors look out for people with the desire for the work. Most people don't know what a call is. They certainly do understand when they have a desire.

I want to emphasize here that it is important to respond to the call of God on your life. If you were standing downstairs and your boss called for you from upstairs, wouldn't you run to him? What do you think would happen if you ignored his calls when he knew that you could hear him? You might lose your job. It is a different thing if you do not know that you have been called. If you do know that God is calling you and refuse, you might be endangering your very life.

## **A WILLING COMMITMENT**

**Necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel! FOR IF I DO THIS THING WILLINGLY, I have a reward: but if against my will a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.**

**1 Corinthians 9:16,17**

There must be a willing commitment to obey the call of God on your life. Some people know that they are called! They even have a desire to do the work, yet you do not see any commitment in them.

**...Then said I, Here am I; SEND ME.**

**Isaiah 6:8**

Notice that Isaiah didn't say, "**Here am I, *SEND HIM!***" He said, "Here am I, send me!" That is the true sign of commitment for any Christian.

## **Pilot or Pastor?**

For instance, I have always had a desire to be a pilot and to fly a plane. Because of that, when I travel I have often gone into the cockpit of the plane. I have even stayed in the cockpit during takeoff and landing. But beyond this I have made no effort to become a pilot. I am more of an admirer of pilots. I am not serious about becoming a pilot, otherwise, I would have taken some other steps by now.

It is the same thing for some people who claim to be called into the ministry. They make no efforts to be available or involved in day-to-day church life. There is no extra commitment or willing sacrifice.

**I take no notice of such people when they tell me that Jesus has appeared to them, calling them to the ministry. They are no nearer the ministry, than I am to the moon!**

Samuel was available in the temple when he heard the call of God and responded.

**Then Samuel answered, Speak; for THY SERVANT HEARETH.**

**1 Samuel 3:10**

## YOU MUST HAVE A GODLY CHARACTER

There is no substitute for godliness and character. Your faithfulness is the cornerstone of your character.

When I started out in ministry, I was initially impressed by flamboyant and well-spoken people. I thought that was the call of God. As the years have passed, I have absolutely no confidence of an outward and impressive show. I have found people who are quiet, not impressive, but faithful in character to be one hundred times preferred to these outwardly impressive guys.

### Fire Brings Out the Serpent Character

That is why in my church your Bible school certificate, nice dressing, and ability to sing cannot earn you a position in the pastorate. You simply have to be around long enough for us to know you and what you are made out of. **Even with stringent character filters, we still have some sticks turning out to be snakes.** Whenever there is a test of some incident, something happening, we notice some of your firewood sticks turn into snakes. Remember the incident of Paul when he was gathering some sticks to light a fire. When he lighted a fire, a snake jumped out from among the sticks.

**As the senior pastor, beware of people whom you feel under pressure to promote.** Beware of people whom you feel under pressure to show appreciation. Beware of people whom you feel under pressure to increase their salaries. Such people will not be satisfied anyway with your show of appreciation.

There is only one qualification for people who want to join



the pastoral team. They have to stay around long enough. They have to company enough for time and the elements to test them well and truly.

Pastors, do not accept any impressive man from another church to join your ministry. Do not allow such a man to be an associate to you, it would be the mistake of your life. Am I speaking a biblical truth or am I speaking my mind? When the apostles had to choose a replacement for Judas, what did they say?

**Wherefore of these men which have COMPANIED WITH US all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.**

**Acts 1:21,22**

What did they do? They didn't choose the best worship leader or the best guitarist. They chose a tested and tried person.

I take no notice of sweet words showered on me by some people. All I say in my mind is that, "I commend you to God and to time." If with the passage of years and time, your character remains proper then and only then will I believe those sweet words. The break up of many churches and the painful conflicts in many ministries are because people are not abiding Paul's rules for pastoral selection.

Someone cannot be a pastor unless you know his character. **You can never know someone's character unless you have known him for some years.** There are many gifted people

who have a lot of skeletons in their wardrobe. Samson operated in the gift of working of miracles. At the same time he had a major problem with fornication and adultery.

## **The Untested Pastor**

I remember a pastor who came along to help our church in worship and praise. I have never seen someone so talented and anointed in worship and ministry. One day I found out that he was having the young ladies in church cut his fingernails and toenails in his apartment. So I asked him, “Do you think that it is helpful as a young and unmarried man to have ladies doting over you and cutting your nails?”

To my surprise he answered, “Yes I do! It saves me time.”

I went on and warned him to be careful. Not long after one of the young ladies in church approached me, and told me how this pastor had tried to have sex with her on several different occasions. I had known this preacher just by watching him lead praise and worship, but had not known him for any length of time. If I had known of all his problems, I would have never welcomed him into my church.

One night after holding a crusade I called this pastor to sit in my car with me because I wanted to talk with him. As we talked I questioned him about his relationship with the ladies but he was defiant. Suddenly I smelt the unmistakable scent of alcohol. I said, “You have been drinking!”

He smiled, “No pastor!”

This gifted pastor had multiple problems: he was a fornicator, drunkard, smoker and a liar. Irrespective of all this, he was beautifully anointed to preach and lead worship. Dear Chris

tian friend, the concept of duality (*see book on Duality by Bishop Heward-Mills*) is a reality.

Pastors save yourselves from the pain of bringing in untested leaders. **Do not spoil the work you have built by bringing in rebels from outside to fill key positions.** The whole of 1 Timothy 3 is a catalog of character qualifications for every serious minded minister. Read it for yourselves.

You will never read anything about a bishop or pastor having to be anointed or gifted. There is no instruction that a pastor must be talented or charming (in fact, be careful of “charming” pastors). The nearest thing to a gift in the catalog of character qualifications is where it says a bishop must be apt to teach (1 Timothy 3:2). That only means he that must be able to share the Word of God effectively.

## **Your Wife Must be Qualified for Ministry**

The Bible continues to talk about the characters of the wives of the pastors. **Not only is a pastor’s character important, but also the character of his wife.** Even the character of the pastor’s wife has a bearing in his ministry. A Bible school certificate is not the only qualification for the ministry. Certainly not! That is why our Bible school involves a long enough period where we can get to know the disposition of students.

It may not be such a fast and easy way of raising up pastors but it sure is a safer, stronger and more stable way of doing things. After all, that is God’s way and none of us can be wiser than God.

Watch out for these qualifications in shepherds. It is very well outlined in the Dake's Annotated Reference Bible, which I quote below.

## QUALIFICATIONS OF SHEPHERDS

- ❑ *Blameless in conduct* (Greek – anepileptos) 1 Timothy 3:2; 5:7; 6:14
- ❑ *Husband of one wife*, i.e., no polygamist. One could be a bishop without a wife, as Paul (1 Corinthians 9:5)
- ❑ *Vigilant* (Greek – nephaios), drinking no wine; sober. Translated Vigilant (1 Timothy 3:2); and sober (1 Timothy 3:11; Titus 2:2)
- ❑ *Sober* (Greek – sophron, of sound mind; discreet; prudent; moderate; self-controlled; temperate. Translated Sober (1 Timothy 3:2; Titus 1:8); temperate (Titus 2:2); and discreet (Titus 2:5).
- ❑ *Of good behavior* (Greek – kosmios), 1 Timothy 2:9.
- ❑ *Given to hospitality* (Greek – philozenon) lover of strangers. Titus 1:8; 1 Peter 4:9; Romans 12:13.
- ❑ *Apt to teach* (Greek – didaktikos) capable of teaching. 2 Timothy 2:24.
- ❑ *Not given to wine* (Greek – paroinos) a winebibber. Titus 1:7
- ❑ *No striker* (Greek – plektes) not quarrelsome; one not ready to strike back at those who displease him; no persecutor of

those who differ with him. Titus 1:7.

- ❑ *Not greedy for filthy lucre* (Greek – aischrokerde) not desirous of base gain; not using wrong methods to raise money to increase his own income (1 Timothy 3:3,8; Titus 1:7)
- ❑ *Patient* (Greek – epeikes) meek and gentle (1 Timothy 3:3) Philippians 4:5.
- ❑ *Not a brawler* (Greek – amachos) not contentious, but quiet and peacable. Titus 3:2.
- ❑ *Not covetous* (Greek – philarguros) not a lover of money; not desiring the office for the sake of personal gain. Hebrews 13:5; Luke 12:15.
- ❑ *Ruler of his own house*, not by hardness and tyranny but with honesty.
- ❑ *Not a novice* (Greek – neophuton) new convert to the faith.
- ❑ *Of a good report from outsiders.*

## **MORE QUALIFICATIONS FOR SHEPHERDS AND THEIR WIVES**

- ❑ *Grave* (1 Timothy 3:8) (Greek – semnos). Translated grave (1 Timothy 3:4; Titus 2:2) and honest (Philippians 4:8).
- ❑ *Not doubletongued* (1 Timothy 3:8) (Greek – dilogos) liars; saying different things to different persons on the same subject. Only used once in the Bible.
- ❑ *Not given to much wine* (1 Timothy 3:8) even unfermented (in the cluster; Is 65:8).

- ❑ *Not greedy of filthy lucre* (1 Timothy 3:8).
- ❑ *Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience* (1 Timothy 3:9). They must maintain a good conscience and be able to demonstrate the mysterious power of faith (Mark 9:23; 11:22-24; 16:17,18)
- ❑ *Let them be proved* (1 Timothy 3:10). The same as not a new convert in 1 Timothy 3:6. Let them be tested and proved worthy of the office, and able to keep themselves from being lifted up in pride and falling in the same manner Satan did.
- ❑ *Blameless* (Greek – anegkletos) (1 Timothy 3:10). Translated Blameless (1 Timothy 3:10; 1 Corinthians 1:8; Titus 1:6-7) and unreprouvable (Colossians 1:22). They must be free from evil and reproach.
- ❑ *Their wives must meet certain qualifications* (1 Timothy 3:11)
- ❑ *Each, the husband of one wife* (1 Timothy 3:12). No polygamist.
- ❑ *Each, the ruler of his own house* (1 Timothy 3:12), as required of bishops (1 Timothy 3:4,5)
- ❑ *Grave* (1 Timothy 3:11)
- ❑ *Not slanderers* (1 Timothy 3:11) (Greek – diabolos), devils.
- ❑ *Sober* (1 Timothy 3:11). (Greek – nephalios) not drinkers of wine.
- ❑ *Faithful in all things* (1 Timothy 3:11). These qualifications apply to wives of bishops, deacons, deaconesses, and Christian women in general.

# **CHAPTER 7**

## ***ASSESSING POTENTIAL PASTORS***

You must constantly assess your shepherds or lay pastors in certain areas. These areas are indicative of definite deep character traits.

- **A personal relationship with God:** A disciplined person who has consistent prayer and personal Bible study shows a deep relationship with God. Without a personal relationship with God, you are going nowhere. Your reading and study of ministry related books compliments Bible study and is a good sign.
- **The interest in listening to preaching tapes and watching Word videos:** This is indicative of a person's personal interest and desires. The Bible says a pastor should not be greedy for money. Are they greedy for money or greedy for the Word?
- **The personal fasting life of the shepherd:** This also shows commitment and preparedness to sacrifice. Someone who never fasts must be marked. If you cannot lay down your stomach what else can't you lay down?

- **Availability for the work:** *This is the most important feature to look out for in a potential lay pastor.* The major effort of a lay pastor is to make himself available in spite of his business and work schedule. Some people do not make the sacrifice to spend their evenings or Sundays doing extra work for the Lord. *My lay pastors work the whole day Sunday and many evenings throughout the week.* This is a big sacrifice. Someone who is not prepared to be available cannot do this job!
  
- **The individual's financial input to the church:** Someone who is not committed financially is not committed at all. The Bible teaches us that if a person is not faithful with unrighteous mammon than he cannot be faithful with God's riches. Pastors who do not pay tithes and offerings should be dismissed – they are traitors. Acquire and maintain a system of monitoring the tithes and offerings of all leaders in the church. You have a right to demand that those who claim to be shepherds be committed financially!
  
- **People handling skills:** When the Bible says “apt to teach”, it includes the ability to lead and influence by your personal lifestyle. Teaching includes being able to handle people of all sorts. A person who is quarrelsome is disqualified from being a pastor. “No striker” in 1 Timothy 3:3 means you are not to be *quarrelsome* or *cantankerous*.
  
- **Preaching and teaching skills:** People who want to be shepherds or lay pastors must develop the ability to teach and to preach. The principal duty of a shepherd



is to feed the flocks. Someone who wants to be a pastor must demonstrate interest and experience in preaching and teaching. The best way to learn how to preach is listen to preaching tapes and preach the same thing. Timothy was told to preach *the same thing* that he had heard Paul preaching.

**And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, THE SAME commit thou to faithful men...**

**2 Timothy 2:2**

- **An interest in evangelism:** Assess the interest of the potential lay pastor in winning souls. Soul winning is the ultimate job for the whole church. Jesus was a good pastor. He said, “I am the good shepherd” (John 10:14). But he also said, “I came to seek and save that which was lost.” (Luke 19:10). *Therefore, a good shepherd seeks to save sinners which are lost.* If you are not interested in souls I question whether you have a genuine call to be a shepherd.
- **Visiting, counseling and organizational ability:** These are the three most used skills by shepherds. These fall under the qualification – apt to teach. A person who does not love people enough to visit them is not a pastor at heart. Shepherds must be able to organize people together in order to be able to teach them the Word. Counseling is the art of giving the counsel of the Word of God to people.
- **Look out for people with stable and happy marriages:** A person with a stormy and unhappy marriage

is not likely to be a good lay pastor. The Bible says in 1 Timothy 3:5, “For if a man know not how to rule his own house how shall he take care of the church of God?” I have learnt from experience that many of the problems pastors have to solve are related to marriage. If the pastor himself is unable to gain control of his own marriage, what will he say to others? He will be forced to be a hypocrite and a liar, giving advice about things he himself does not practice. Ezra 7:10 gives a very important principle, it says, “Ezra had prepared his heart to seek the law of the Lord, and to do it, and to teach...” It is very important to do things before you teach them!

- **Catch the spirit of the leader:** Choose someone who has caught the spirit of the leader. Lay shepherds and pastors must operate in the same spirit or anointing of the senior pastor or founder of the church. This is the principle which God first set into motion in the days of Moses and his seventy elders. In Numbers 11 God took the same anointing that was on Moses and put it on seventy elders. From that time they all operated in the same spirit. This is important if you want to have a very large network of churches. It helps prevent disunity and disintegration of the Body into different factions with various opinions.
- **Relationship with the opposite sex:** Watch the relationship that potential lay pastors have with the opposite sex. I encourage people to marry and to marry early – this brings stability. It also helps to prevent unwholesome relationships with the opposite sex.
- **Watch out for loyal people:** They are the perfect shep

herds. A deacon must not be double tongued according to 1 Timothy 3:8. The word double-tongued comes from the Greek word *dilogos*. It means liars, people who say different things to different people about the same subject. This person has two tongues. One is full of praise and good reports to the senior pastor. And the other is full of traitorous, sarcastic, and disloyal comments when the pastor is not around. Another interesting revelation is when the Bible says wives of deacons should not be slanderous. The Greek word for slanderer is *diabolos*, which means devils. If you have pastor's wives or pastors who are slanderous, it means your church is full of devils. If your church is full of devils how will it grow? How will it improve when you literally have human devils occupying positions of influence and leadership? Pastoral positions must be occupied by people who are 100 percent loyal to the cause.

- **Look for personal financial and job stability:** People who are unstable in one area of their life are likely to be unstable in other areas. A person who keeps changing jobs may end up changing churches, wives and friends. The Bible says that a double-minded man is unstable in ALL (not some) his ways.
- **A person with a vision:** Lay pastors often struggle with the problem of dual visions. They have a vision to fulfill their secular aspirations on the one hand and to fulfill their call to ministry on the other. Sometimes pressures from secular work stamp out the fire of ministry in lay pastors. Shepherds and lay pastors must desire to go forward in the ministry in real and measur-

able terms. People generally think that you make your vision. But I've come to learn that it is your vision that makes you what you are!

## **CHAPTER 8**

### ***THE MINISTRY: WORK OR REST?***

I remember when I first started out in full-time ministry. People would often ask my wife at work, “Where is your husband? Is he at home?”

One lady, a lawyer friend of hers once said, “Oh, so your husband doesn't work anymore!”

My wife would answer, “You have no idea how hard he

works.”

They thought that because I was no longer practicing medicine that I was no longer working. Many people think that all that the pastor does is to prepare one sermon a week and then deliver it on Sunday morning. Afterwards, he is then free to sleep until the next Sunday.

Many times people have called either late in the morning or in the afternoon and have said, “Hullo, how are you pastor? Sorry to disturb your sleep.”

I would think, “This man thinks I sleep all day and all night as well.”

Then I would politely answer, “I was not sleeping.”

I have never bothered to explain what I was doing. “It is a waste of time.” I thought to myself. These and other remarks have made me realize that some people think that the ministry is one long restful occupation – an easier alternative to real and difficult jobs. From both the Bible and my experience, I have seen that there is no work like ministry work.

## **THE REALITY THAT MINISTRY IS WORK**

**And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, FOR THE WORK OF THE MINISTRY, for the edifying of the body of Christ:  
Ephesians 4:11-12**

This interpretation is a bit clearer in the New International Version:

## **To prepare God's people for works of service...**

### **Ephesians 4:12 (NIV)**

The saints are to be perfected for the *work*. This means that pastors are to perfect the saints so that they can join in the hard work of the ministry. There was a man called Epaphras, a servant of Christ “always labouring fervently for you in prayers”. This man was laboring, he wasn't resting.

Throughout the Bible, ministry has been described as work. When Jesus saw the multitudes who were fainting because of a lack of a shepherd he said, “The harvest is plenty but the labourers are few.” The Greek word translated laborer is the word *ergates*, which means a toiler, teacher, laborer and a worker.

**The ministry is toil and sweat.** I have found that out practically. Anybody who wants to be a lay pastor or shepherd must realize that he is not taking upon a game but real work. He will soon realize that being a pastor is not in title alone, but in real toil and labor. If ministry is work, what does it involve?

I have a simple code that will help every pastor and shepherd to remember what work he or she is supposed to do. I have simply titled it P – V – C – I.

P for PRAYER

V for VISITATION

C for COUNSELING

I for INTERACTION

## PRAYER

Prayer is the cardinal sustaining force of the church. I believe in praying for hours for the church. **There is a correlation between the amount of prayer put into the church by the eldership of the church and the growth of the church.**

In Korea, it well known that the pastors pray for long hours. It is no surprise then that the largest churches in the world are found in that nation. It is the will of God to have large churches because there are many people who need to be saved.

I believe that every full-time pastor should try to pray for at least three hours every day. **Lay pastors and shepherds should pray for at least one or two hours a day.** I believe in long times of prayer. Lay pastors and shepherds should make it a point to get away from their busy schedules and wait on God for even longer periods. Jesus himself retreated to the wilderness and mountains to pray. Praying for whole days on retreats is a very important aspect of the lay pastor's schedule.

The ministry is spiritual from beginning to end. There is a difference between a pastor and an administrator. **The fact that you are doing clerical and accounting work in the church office does not mean that you are in full-time ministry.**

Full-time ministry is full-time prayer and ministry of the Word.

## VISITATION

**...It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.**

**Acts 6:2,4**

Peter made it clear that his work was not arranging tables nor organizing food for his church members. His duty was to pray and minister the Word. In this code PPCI, the ministry of the word comes under counseling.

In Jeremiah 23:2, God makes it clear that one of the principal duties of pastors is to visit.

**Thus saith the Lord God of Israel against the pastors... You have scattered my flock... and have not VISITED them...**

**Jeremiah 23:2**

It is quite clear from this that pastors and shepherds are expected to visit their sheep in their homes. This is different from counseling in the office. It is also different from preaching and teaching from the pulpit. It is a special ministry. The greatest visitor on this earth was Jesus Christ. Since his visit the world has never been the same again.

In my ministry, I have observed a difference between those members I have visited and those who have never be visited. Members who I have been able to visit have become very stable



and hardly ever left the church.

## COUNSELING

It is important to minister the Word of God, especially in teaching. Churches based on solid Bible teachings tend to grow. As the years go by, these churches grow larger and larger. It is like a flock that has been exposed to fields upon fields of green grass in which they can graze. The natural response is that the flock should be healthy, multiply and grow.

**You will find greater growth in churches which have strong teaching and preaching than in churches which emphasize miracles.** I believe in miracles but I also believe in the ministration of the Word. Sheep don't feed on miracles, they feed on the Word.

## INTERACTION

A shepherd is supposed to interact with his sheep. How can he interact properly if he is detached and aloof? Pastors and shepherds must do what I call "*Deep Sea Fishing*".

### Deep Sea Fishing

What is the deep sea? The deep sea is the mass of church members who stream in and out of church every Sunday morning. Many people attend our churches and nobody knows them

or even talks with them. Some come in and out for a while and then drop out.

It is the duty of shepherds and pastors to plunge into what I call the deep sea and conduct *Deep Sea Fishing*. They are to move into the crowd of unknown faces and interact with them. They must befriend unknown people, talk with them, find out where they live, and establish a line of friendship.

## **Everybody Wants to Feel Important!**

Everybody wants to be known and to feel important. Without this, they would move to a place where they can be known and feel important. **All human beings have a psychological need to be identified and recognized! It is that need that we try to meet by doing “*deep sea fishing*”.** How many people can the senior pastor talk to on a Sunday? Not many! But if several lay pastors and shepherds join him to lovingly interact, a lot more of the work will get done!

After interacting, the pastors will get to know the people who do not belong to small groups within the church, but still need pastoral visits and care. **“*Deep sea fishing*” has led to us knowing many of our members and to establishing the floating visitors in the church.** All shepherds and pastors are expected to do a certain amount of *deep sea fishing* every Sunday. That is why it is important for lay pastors and shepherds to be in church on Sunday and involve themselves in this all-important interaction – *deep sea fishing*. It is not only the pastor that is preaching who has work to do. The shepherds and lay pastors also have a lot to do – *deep sea fishing*.

In my church, it is unheard of for a pastor to finish ministering and immediately be ushered out like a Head of State. Although I could afford a chauffeured driven car, I refuse to be ushered out and away of the presence of my sheep, into my car after finishing ministering. I love to linger in the church for hours, interacting with different people.

I am not a Prime Minister. I am a pastor. Pastors are not executive chiefs, they are shepherds who are to mingle with their sheep. The Bible says that the sheep know the voice of the good shepherd. How can they know your voice if they don't even see you?

## **CHARACTERISTICS OF MINISTRY WORK**

No lay person can claim to have joined the ranks of those who do the work of the ministry until their activities have gotten certain characteristics. What I call the *Characteristics of Ministry Work*.

An activity moves out of the realm of playing, joking and pleasure and into the realm of work when it has the following characteristics. If you are involved in ministry and your activity does not have these characteristics, you may be doing something related to the ministry but it has not yet become "work".

### ***It Must Have Working Hours***

Every true job has its own working hours. The work of the ministry has its own peculiar working hours. This is what

confuses many people. They think pastors must be in the office from 9:00 a.m. to 5:00 p.m. like everybody else. Those are the hours of most secular offices. But we are not bankers nor accountants, we are pastors. No more banking hours for pastors! Nobody asks pilots to work from 9:00 a.m. to 5:00 p.m. Everybody knows that their working hours are peculiar and everyone accepts that reality.

I rarely ever go to the office at 8 o'clock in the morning. Most of my work is the mornings and evenings, that is when the sheep have come from their workplaces and are available. That is when I can interact with, pray for and minister to them. **Anyone who wants to be a lay pastor must fix some working hours. These working hours should be your weekends (especially Sundays) and some evenings.**

Someone may say, "Then it means I won't have anytime to rest at weekends." Well, that is the reality of being a lay pastor or shepherd. It means a little extra sacrifice for the kingdom. You may not be prepared to do the greater sacrifice of leaving your job so you have to give up some of your leisure and resting times.

At the Lighthouse Cathedral, we go to work at 6:00 a.m. on Sunday morning and we usually leave by midnight the same day. That is our busiest and most important day. It should be the case for every church. Many people do not realize that the time when sheep would be available is the time when the shepherds must be at work.

Pastors in our church counsel, visit, and teach Bible school classes throughout Sundays. After our fourth service, which ends at one o'clock, activities continue full swing until evening. Some

one may ask, “When do you rest?” The answer is Mondays.

### ***It Must Consume a Reasonable Amount of Time***

When an activity consumes just a few minutes of your time in a week, it cannot be called your “work”. For instance, I drive my car for a few minutes every day but my work is not “driving” per se. It is something that I do *on my way* to work. However, if driving a car, for example a taxi, were to become my work, I would not spend less than eight hours a day driving. Then to me, driving would have become work!

You cannot claim to be doing the “work” of the ministry until it actually consumes a reasonable amount of time in your week. Give your weekends and evenings to God. The lay pastors in my church spend at least twenty hours of their leisure time doing the work of the ministry every week. Remember, the normal working schedule is forty hours a week. That means their pastoral work is equivalent to a twenty-hour part-time job in addition to their full-time job. That is why I can comfortably say that lay pastors in my church are doing the “work” of the ministry alongside with the full-time pastors. Their involvement in church is no longer a relaxing social activity, it is actually “work”.

### ***You Will Expend Energy and Money***

Everyone must realize that doing the work of the ministry involves spending a lot of energy. Do not be surprised if you get tired doing the work of a lay pastor. It is only a sign that the activity has entered the realm of work. You have now begun to

do the work of the ministry in Ephesians 4:11. Don't most jobs leave their employees tired after several hours? This is because it is work.

Another thing that you will expend is money. Does it not cost you money to go to work everyday? Do you not spend money at work for lunch everyday? It is the same thing with the work of ministry. **You will spend some of your money in order to do the work.** Someone may say, "In the case of secular work, we expend money but we get some back at the end of the month." Dear friend, your rewards and treasures will come one day in heaven!

**But lay up for yourselves TREASURES IN HEAVEN...**

**Matthew 6:20**

I do not believe in giving money to lay pastors and shepherds to help them to pay for their transportation when visiting sheep. In our church, we do not give money to lay musicians, lay shepherds or lay pastors to help them come to church. When they were ordinary church members weren't they spending money to come to church? I do this because if we start paying them, it will soon become as though we are hiring people to do a part-time job. As far as I'm concerned you are either full-time or a lay person.

**Very often when you pay people their attitude changes and it becomes more of, "Is this all I get for my hard work?"**

I have decided to let the Lord pay those who work for Him. Make no mistake about this. Praying, visiting, counseling and interacting with people is hard work. As you do this work you will expend your energy and money. When you begin to feel tired, just remember it is a sign that you are really *working for*

God.

## ***Repetitive and Regular***

By nature, all real work is repetitive and regular. If the ministry is “work”, then it will have features which make it *repetitive* and *regular*. Sometimes you may be bored but you just have to keep on doing the “work” – praying, visiting, counseling and interacting (PVCi).

Many pastors don’t pray much because they feel it’s repetitive and boring. But when prayer becomes your *work* you will have to repeat your prayers and you will have to pray regularly. When visiting becomes your *work* you will have to visit repeatedly and regularly.

There is a difference between a social visit to a friend’s house and a pastoral visit. **Pastoral visits must be conducted repeatedly by both lay pastors and shepherds. They must intentionally go to the homes of their members on a regular basis.**

Don’t we all go to work when we don’t feel like it? Don’t we all go to the same work place repeatedly and regularly although we don’t feel like it? In the same way, anyone who claims to be doing the work of the ministry must rise up regularly and repeatedly doing the important tasks of a shepherd.

We don’t pray just because we feel like it. We pray because we have to! We must rise up early and intercede for the people God has given us.

## *Supervised or Unsupervised?*

**Go to the ant... and BE WISE: Which HAVING NO GUIDE, OVERSEER, OR RULER, Provideth her meat...**

**Proverbs 6:6-8**

All work falls into two categories: supervised work or unsupervised work. There are therefore two classes of working pastors and shepherds. Those who need supervision and people who do not need supervision. **In every field, the supervised person is paid more than the unsupervised person!** Decide to be a shepherd or lay pastor who does not need to be told what to do, when to pray, and whom to counsel. Your rewards in heaven will be even greater.

Nobody tells me that I have to pray. I know I have to pray, so I just pray. Become a shepherd who naturally (without supervision) cares about the work of God. Be like Timothy. Paul said that there was no one like him, he had a natural care for the sheep. He didn't need to be told what to do. It just came naturally. I believe the heart of a true pastor.

**But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus... For I have no man likeminded, who will NATURALLY CARE for your state.**

**Philippians 2:19,20**

No one ever told me what to do in ministry. I have naturally wanted to pray, to visit and to counsel my people. Now that our church is much larger I almost feel deprived when I am not able to know all of my sheep personally. I struggle to know



their names and to remember who they are. But it is almost an impossible task! I wish I knew all of their homes. I wish I could attend all of their important family events. It is a natural desire. **Anyone who is a true pastor has what I call *natural care* and does not need to be supervised!**

From today decide that no one will ever have to supervise you to pray, read the Bible, study, visit or any such thing. Just do your work without supervision.

## **CHAPTER 9**

### ***SEVEN MINISTRIES OF 'POIMEN'***

In this chapter I want to show you a very important revelation concerning all of the ministry offices. Each office of the Body of Christ; apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher, has several different ministries under it. A pastor will have several ministries operating under his office. A prophet will also have different ministries operating under his office. For example, a minister standing in the office of a prophet will primarily function in the ministry of preaching and teaching. Beware of so-called prophets who do not preach the Word of God but *only* give personal prophecies. I believe in personal prophecies.

However, let it be very clear that anything that does not put the Word of God in its proper place is doomed to failure with the passage of time. In the beginning was the *Word*... Let the *Word* of Christ dwell in you richly... Thy *Word* is a light unto my path... Thy entrance of thy *Word* giveth light... Anything without the *Word* is in darkness and is not of God.

**All offices of the ministry have a primary function of teaching and preaching. The Word comes first and is of para**

**mount importance in every ministerial office.** After this, a prophet may operate in the ministry of healing, and other revelation gifts like the “word of knowledge” and “word of wisdom”. The prophet may also flow in the ministry of predictive prophesying or exhortative prophesying.

From scripture, you will see that Jesus was a great prophet.

**...and they glorified God, saying, That a GREAT PROPHET has risen up among us...**

**Luke 7:16**

His principal ministry was to go about preaching and teaching the Word of God.

**And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, TEACHING in their synagogues and PREACHING the gospel...**

**Matthew 9:35**

He also had a healing ministry.

**How God anointed Jesus... who went about doing good, and HEALING all that were oppressed of the devil...**

**Acts 10:38**

He also operated in the gifts of revelation. Standing in the office of a prophet, he ministered to the woman of Samaria;

**...for thou has had five husbands; and he whom thou no hast is not thy husband...**

**John 4:18**

The woman of Samaria immediately realized she had met

someone standing in the office of a prophet. Look at her response to Jesus' ministration.

**The woman sayeth unto him, Sir, I PERCEIVE THAT THOU ART A PROPHET.**

**John 4:19**

Jesus also operated in the ministry of predictive prophesying. In Matthew 24 he predicted the destruction of Solomon's temple (70 AD) when Jerusalem was destroyed by the Romans. Speaking of the temple he said,

**...There shall not be left here one stone upon another...**

**Matthew 24:2**

Jesus gave extensive predictions concerning the end of the world. We would do well to take note of these prophecies because Jesus was a great prophet.

I have used the office of a prophet to illustrate how different ministries flow from one office to the other. Just as there is one Holy Spirit with different operations, manifestations and administrations, there can be one office with different ministries emanating from it. Let us now study the different ministries that flow from the office of the pastor (*poimen*).

It is important that lay pastors and shepherds flow in all aspects of the ministry. God does not want an imbalance in ministry

**A false balance is abomination to the Lord.**

**Proverbs 11:1**

We may naturally flow in certain areas but be weaker in others. It is important to develop your weak areas so that you have a balanced ministry. Every profession has a symbol. The symbol of the medical profession is a staff with a snake around it. The symbol of a king is a scepter. The symbol of a shepherd is a staff. For example, a soldier's symbol is a rifle. It symbolizes his ability to kill and to destroy.

**The Lord is my shepherd... thy ROD and thy STAFF they comfort me.**

**Psalms 23:1,4**

## **THE RULING MINISTRY**

**...and out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword... and he shall rule them with a ROD OF IRON...**

**Revelation 19:15**

The first ministry of a pastor is the ruling ministry. The traditional perception of a pastor is of someone who is soft, kind-hearted, compassionate, poorly paid, available at all time, a never complaining doormat. This picture is not one of a ruler but rather a picture of one who is ruled. I believe that a pastor must be kind-hearted and patient, but one of the cardinal roles is to lead and to rule. A pastor is the head of the local church. A head must take decisions

**The Lord is my shepherd... HE LEADETH ME beside the still waters**

**Psalms 23:1,2**

A true shepherd leads sheep to the place where they need to go. You cannot be a good leader if you are weak. Every church needs a strong voice that is confident and bold in the Lord. The sheep are looking for someone with direction who knows where he is going. A shepherd or pastor must lead the people spiritually and in other areas such as family and social.

When the church does not have a strong capable leader in all aspects something is wrong. You may be surprised to discover what the prophet Isaiah described as a curse.

**When a man shall take hold of his brother of the house of his father, saying, Thou hast clothing, BE THOU OUR RULER and let this ruin be under thine hand: In that day shall he swear, saying I will not be an healer; for in mine house is neither bread nor clothing: MAKE ME NOT A RULER of the people.**

**Isaiah 3:6,7**

It is a curse to have weak and spineless leadership. Learn to speak to your sheep with authority. When I say authority I do not mean you should ask them how much money they have. That is unethical! Lead them with a level of confidence and control otherwise they will do what they want. Sheep are meant to be led.

You have authority over the sheep God has placed in your care. You will answer for their souls one day. **A leader who refuses to take important decisions is doomed to failure. A good leader takes decisions when all necessary information has come into him!** These decisions may be hard and painful. If you, as the shepherd do not take them your church is doomed to wither.

Just look around and see how many churches are dead and lifeless. They are a far cry from what their founders had envisaged. This is often because as things began to creep in, the leaders were afraid to rock the boat and take important decisions. Things will get out of hand.

Sometimes when I look at some hopelessly incompetent government corporations and agencies, I just marvel. They make huge losses, and generate a lot of waste in the system. I have been to government offices where I see everyone reading newspapers. Sometimes you see twenty secretaries in one office with one typewriter. They have nothing to do, yet they are paid with the taxpayers money every month. What a pity! They sleep, eat and chat all day. Their managers are afraid to take the decision that nineteen out of the twenty typists must be laid off.

The country becomes poorer and poorer and people wonder why. The reason is simple. The leaders have refused to assess the situation and take a strong but hard decision. They are refusing to rule. The fear of losing political power makes democratic leaders become liars and hypocrites.

I am not afraid of taking such decisions because I realize that the church will deteriorate if I do not. I teach lay pastors to remove stagnating leaders and replace them with willing and capable workers. I myself, make the necessary changes in my staff and with my lay pastors when I realize a change must be made.

Don't be afraid of changes. Sometimes, it is only a big change that will lead to a big breakthrough. **A minor transformation will take place when you take minor decisions. But**

**a *major* transformation will occur only when you are bold enough to take a major decision.** Be a strong ruler and lead your sheep to green pastures.

Even lady pastors can learn to be strong, firm leaders without being ill natured and quarrelsome. Lady shepherds should be gentle and effective, without being cantankerous.

## **THE WAY-MAKING MINISTRY**

**And the Lord said unto Moses... But LIFT THOU UP THY ROD, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea.**

**Exodus 14:15,16**

As a leader, God will tell you to speak to his people, giving them many instructions. There is something I call the *Way-Making Ministry*. After you have given the instruction to the sheep, help them to obey the word. A true shepherd loves his sheep and tries to help them to obey God.

Moses was the shepherd of the people of Israel. His instructions were to cross the Red Sea. After receiving that command he stretched forth his rod and made a way where there was no way. That is what I call the way making ministry of the pastor. **Every full-time minister or lay pastor must learn to make a way where there seems to be no way for the people of God.**

When some of your sheep think that their house is too far



away from the church, go and visit them at whichever corner they live. This will prove to them that their houses are not too far.

## **My Visit Produced a Pastor**

In one of our foreign churches, we had a family that lived about a two-hour train ride from the church. When I called them, they said it was too far to attend church. So one Saturday I took a car and we drove all the way to their house. They were so surprised to see us visiting them. There is one thing that visits do, it establishes the fact that they were not too far for me as a pastor to visit them. From that day, the entire family decided to come to church by taking the train and travelling two hours to come to church.

They did this for a number of years, and today one of them is a pastor of one of the branches of our church. Make a way for your sheep. Help them to see that it is possible to obey the Word of God. Sometimes when they don't have money, tell them to come to church and give them some money to help them attend. You may not be able to give them money all of the time, but the fact that you did it once or twice encourages them and shows them that you really care. This is the pastor's heart.

## **Make a Way for Marriage**

As a pastor, you can see that your sheep are looking for a husband or a wife. Don't just look unconcerned and preach to them that it is good to be married. Discuss the practical concerns of choosing a partner with them. Have them to notice one

another. I call that *Shepherdorial Linking*.

Teach your members that they can find a good partner within the church. Some people may not like that idea, but it works and stabilizes the sheep. Of course, do not force people to marry each other, neither should you guarantee them happiness if they choose someone you have recommended. Marriage is very complicated and they may curse you all the rest of their lives for influencing them to marry someone. They will think to themselves, “I would never have married this person. It was pastor who made me marry her.”

## **Make a Way for Employment**

I preach to my members about prosperity and about how they should work. After I’ve done that, the way making anointing comes upon me and I help them to get jobs. If one of my church members is strategically positioned as an employer, I would speak to them about a sheep who needs employment. Sometimes a person you have recommended will disgrace you. But do not let that deter you from making a way for other good sheep. **It is not good enough to say “Cross the Red Sea”, you must make a way for them to cross!**

## **Make a Way for Attendance**

I have often changed meeting times or rehearsal times just so that one person could attend. I am a pastor and I want all of my sheep to attend the meeting. Schedule reasonable meeting times. **Make things convenient for people.** That is the way-making ministry in action.

Schedule fewer meeting times without compromising the number of meetings. Sunday is a good time to meet and counsel your sheep. For example, when a person already has a service he attends, you can always combine it with another meeting; don't let him travel to church twice when he could do it once.

**Be an expert at overcoming the excuses of sheep (church members).** When they say that church services are too long, point out to them how many hours they spend watching video. When they say that the church is too far from their homes then ask them how far their jobs are from their homes. When the church member doesn't have shoes, get him a pair. Be a way maker.

## **THE TERRITORY-TAKING MINISTRY: THE MILITANT MINISTRY**

The territory-taking ministry of a pastor is embodied in his vision. If the pastor is a visionary, he will always want to take more territory for Christ. **The way you can take more territory for God is through prayer and fasting.** A pastor must lead his sheep into spiritual warfare.

I always have a new vision for my church. When I had twenty members, I had a vision to have fifty. When I had fifty people at the Korle Bu Teaching Hospital, I dreamed of the day when I would see a hundred people sitting in church on Sunday morning. When I had five hundred, I dreamt of a thousand. It is the duty of the pastor to dream about greater territories for the kingdom of God. We are not a social club. We are not

fighting psychological warfare. We are into spiritual warfare.

**And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek: tomorrow I will stand on the top of the hill with the ROD OF GOD in mine hand. And it came to pass, when Moses held up his hand, that Israel prevailed: and when he let down his hand, Amalek prevailed.**

**Exodus 17:9,11**

People who take new territories are people who fast and pray. I believe in praying for long periods. I believe in fasting as the Spirit leads. Moses, the shepherd of God's people stretched out his rod in warfare against Amalek. **Moses' rod symbolized the power of intercessory prayer.** It is the art of travailing in prayer for the ministry. What you see happening in the physical is only a manifestation of what has taken place in the spiritual.

Anyone who calls himself a pastor must learn to fight with prayer in the realm of the spirit. If you want to have a big church, you must learn to fight for it in the spiritual realm. Every physical territory is occupied by evil spirits that dominate the area.

**Africa is dominated by territorial spirits of poverty, superstition and war.** That is why the continent, although blessed with human and natural resources, is plagued with backwardness and underdevelopment.

**Europe is dominated by territorial spirits of atheism, homosexuality, and immorality.** That is why there are ministers who are homosexual and men marrying men. There are even gay clubs within churches now. This is a return of Sodom and Gomorrah! It certainly signals imminent destruction.

Any shepherd who wants to do the work of the ministry will come face to face with the territorial spirits of that area. When I travel from place to place, I can virtually feel the difference in the spiritual atmosphere. When I am in Ghana, I sense a lighter and easier spiritual climate than when I am in a place like Switzerland.

Develop the art of intercession for taking more territory for God. That means you must develop:

**a. The art of praying personally alone for several hours.**

Jesus did that! If we want to have the results that he had we must use the methods he used.

**And it came to pass, as he was ALONE PRAYING, his disciples were with him...**

**Luke 9:18**

**b. The art of leading people into long hours of advancement prayer.**

Whenever we have fasting and long hours of prayer, I often lead the church myself. I do not delegate it to anybody. Sometimes we have prayer meetings from 8 o'clock in the morning until 8 o'clock in the evening. Teach people to pray in tongues for hours, it is a very useful practice.

Many times, I take my pastoral staff to the mountains to wait on God. We pray from morning until evening every day until we return. Jesus often took his disciples to the garden of

Gethsemane.

**And he came out, and went, as he was wont [as his custom was] to the mount of Olives and his disciples also followed him. AND WHEN HE WAS AT THE PLACE, HE SAID UNTO THEM, PRAY...**

**Luke 22:39,40**

Lead your church to pray for church growth. Lead your sheep to ask God for increase. There are many ways that the increase will benefit all of the church members. So tell them that it is for their own good to take new territories for Christ.

**c. Art of praying with the spirit and with your understanding**

In 1 Corinthians 14:15, Paul asked a question, “What is it then? I will pray with the spirit and I will pray with the understanding also.” He also said, “I thank God I speak in tongues more than you all.” (1 Corinthians 14:18). The apostle was very happy about exercising the gift of tongues but he also prayed with his understanding.

In taking new territories, you must learn both aspects of the prayer weapon. Praying in tongues is a powerful tool to defeat the enemy. Use it and spend hours speaking in the spirit concerning your future and ministry. Pray with the understanding also. As you pray with your understanding, you will find yourself praying prophetic in the ministry. You will find yourself speaking conquering words of faith concerning church growth and ministry.

I can pray continuously with my understanding for several hours, if necessary. **Today, there are many Charismatic Christians who cannot pray for more than one minute in their understanding.** They can only pray in tongues. It is a sign that they are shallow and don't really know God. Every pastor must be able to stand up and pray for one hour in their understanding.

I remember when I was in Geneva praying for church growth. I remember praying with my understanding for long periods. It was a powerful time of fighting the devil and taking territory for God.

#### **d. The art of travailing in prayer**

There is something called travailing prayer. It is the art of prayer that results in the giving birth of a new spiritual baby. It may be a baby church, it may be a new Christian, it may be a new ministry, it may be a new fellowship. It may even involve the giving birth to a mature Christian from a baby Christian. The Apostle Paul travailed twice for the Christians in Galatia. The first time was to give birth to the Galatian church. The second time was to give birth to a Christ-like maturity.

**My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.**

**Galatians 4:19**

How will you know that you are practicing travailing (birth-giving) prayer? It is very simple. Until your prayers have begun to resemble what happens in the labor ward, you have not begun to pray travailing (birth-giving) prayers.

Let me give you three characteristics of travailing prayer.

**...shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for AS SOON AS ZION TRAVAILED, SHE BROUGHT FORTH her children.**

**Isaiah 66:8**

- 1. Long hours:** Woman in labor spend hours and sometimes days in the labor ward trying to give birth to a new baby. You cannot claim that a three minute is travailing prayer. When you pray for a long time you will give birth to a bigger church, new ministries and new things in God.
- 2. Suffering and shame:** Every normal woman suffers to have a baby. That is why it is called a *labor* ward and not a *playing* ward. It is a ward of struggles and pain.

## **Doctor, When?**

One day in 1988, I had an experience in the labor ward. I was a medical student who was assigned to deliver at least twenty-three babies. That night I was hoping to catch a couple more babies. I was sitting on a chair when a woman in labor came up behind me and gripped my shoulder, shouting, “Doctor, when? Doctor, when?”

I turned round to see who it was. To my surprise, here was a stark naked woman in labor. She was walking around the ward to help ease her pain. She was in such pain that she could



not be bothered about privacy or anything like that. She felt no shame at all and neither did many of the women on the labor ward. I realized this woman was struggling and agonizing for a new life to come into this world. **Dear friend, labor is pain, suffering and shame.** It is no joke. Travailing prayer is just the same, it involves both pain and suffering.

Another form of suffering comes when you fast. Fasting is not easy. The only part of fasting I enjoy is the breaking of the fast. It is so nice to break a fast. However, fasting is part of the Christian experience. Paul said that he fasted often.

**...in hunger and thirst, in FASTINGS OFTEN...**  
**2 Corinthians 11:27**

You may lose weight and people may ask you whether you are sick. One time, someone asked me if whether by being a skeleton I thought I would enter heaven. I was so skinny in school because of fasting. Yet, that didn't prevent me from getting a good wife. The anointing is more powerful than good looks.

#### **e. Hunger and Tiredness**

Charismatic Christians want everything easy. The Bible says that whatsoever a man sows he will also reap. Travailing prayer will make you tired.

**Epaphris... always labouring fervently for you in prayer.**  
**Colossians 4:12**

Epaphris was a laborer. He toiled in prayer. He labored in

prayer for the Colossian church. When women deliver babies they are often hungry and tired. It is natural to be hungry and tired after hours of hard work. Do not tell me that your ten-minute prayer is something that can make you hungry and tired. Do not tell me that your ten-minute prayer is travailing prayer. It is not!

After many hours of labor and suffering you can expect to have something tangible in your hand. Every woman looks forward to that baby. That is why it is such a terrible experience for a woman to go to the labor ward and to come back without a baby. Expect a new baby of ministry in your life. The Word of God cannot be broken. If you are not prepared to travail in prayer then you are not prepared to have your baby.

**They that sow in tears shall reap in joy. He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed shall doubtless come again with rejoicing...**

**Psalm 126:5,6**

Under the ministry of Jesus, we see travailing prayer in action. To every success story there are hours of hidden preparatory work that no one sees. People marveled at Jesus' ministry. They said, "Never man spake like this man." (John 7:46). They glorified God saying, "We never saw it on this fashion." (Mark 2:12). Multitudes were converted under his ministry. The big question in town was, "Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?" (Matthew 13:54). The secrets of Jesus Christ' ministry was long private prayer times.

**...he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT in prayer to God.**

**Luke6:12**

**...a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.**

**Mark1:35**

Even when multitudes thronged him (His church was growing, the crowds were there) and when he became famous, he still made time to pray alone.

**But so much more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities. And HE WITHDREW HIMSELF into the wilderness, AND PRAYED.**

**Lk5:15-16**

When he had friends around, he sent them away and prayed.

**And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.**

**Mark 6:46**

## **THE COMFORTING MINISTRY**

**...thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.**

**Psalms 23:4**

One of the principal ministries of a shepherd is to comfort. Every sheep should be able to say to his shepherd, "Your rod and your staff comforts me." Some people do not know why their churches do not grow.

The shepherd must genuinely love the sheep and care for them when they are in trouble. Never lose the opportunity to be by your sheep's side in time of their difficulty. The duty of both the lay pastor and full-time pastor is to stand by their sheep in the time of their greatest need and greatest joy. It is not an option! **Remember sorrow shared is half sorrow, and joy shared is double joy.** The sheep want to share their sorrows and their joy with their pastor.

It is the duty of the shepherd to comfort the sheep. The comforting ministry starts by showing interest in things that are important to the sheep. Be interested in all of their major events; especially the birth of a child, marriages, sickness and funerals. God expects you to be there! What is important to your sheep must be important to you. If you claim to be a pastor, what are you doing to show real love to your sheep?

Shepherds, if you genuinely do not love your people they will not respond to your preaching. The Bible says that God is angry with the shepherds because they have not ministered to the sheep under the comforting ministry.

**The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them.**  
**Ezekiel 34:4**

## **THE MEASUREMENT MINISTRY**

One of the principal duties of a shepherd is to do what I call measuring the temple. Measuring the temple helps you to

know where you stand.

**And there was given me a reed like unto a rod; and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and MEASURE the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.**

**Revelation 11:1**

This involves critical analysis of the way things are going. Pastors need to take time off to analyze themselves and to see whether things are being done according to the call of God and the vision God gave.

The first thing you must constantly measure is yourself. Ask yourself, “Am I doing what God called me to do?” The reason why I am writing books now is because I believe it is a continual fulfillment of the ministry God gave me to teach his Word. No matter what additional ministry I have, I am constantly trying to fulfill the call of God on my life according to his specifications.

Even when I had over fifty churches to oversee, my self-analysis (measurement ministry) made me see that I have to keep on pastoring the church and teaching the Word of God. If pastors and ministers were to analyze their ministry, it would help them to take important decisions.

## **Only Twenty-five Members after Twelve Years**

I was chatting with a pastor who had been in the ministry for twelve years. After being in the ministry for twelve years, he only had twenty-five members in his church. His church was in a city where there are many large churches. By analyzing the

reality of the situation, this pastor would have been helped to take an important decision for his life and ministry.

Surely, after some years there must be some growth. Anything that is alive and healthy grows naturally. If this pastor were to analyze his ministry, he may conclude that perhaps he was supposed to be an assistant and not the head.

## **He Returned to the Ministry**

Some years ago, I spoke to a pastor friend of mine. I had known this pastor for several years. He had been actively pastoring a church in a large city of the world. Due to circumstances beyond his control, he found himself in another city. There he just attends a dead Orthodox Church. He was no longer actively in the ministry. He was just a church attendee.

I spoke to him and said, “If you are called of God to the ministry, then wherever you are and whatever your circumstance you must fulfill your ministry.” I impressed upon him to analyze his condition (measuring ministry) as a pastor and take the important decisions that would bring him to a place where he was fulfilling his divine call. I’m happy to say that he did. Today, he is pastoring and overseeing many churches.

**EXAMINE YOURSELVES whether ye be in the faith: prove your own selves...**

**2 Corinthians 13:5**

In other words, examine yourselves to see whether you are

within your call and whether there is anything that you have to change. One thing that people marvel at when they haven't visited the Lighthouse Cathedral for some time is the number of dynamic changes that have taken place. There are always improvements taking place. Many things remain the same, but many things continually undergo enhancement.

Can you imagine if the Mercedes-Benz car that is being sold today is exactly the same as it was fifteen years ago? It would be a very different car. The Mercedes-Benz of today is still a Benz but it is a much improved version of the 1950 model. That is how our churches and ministries must be – *continually upgraded and improved*.

We must compare what we are doing to what is in the Bible. **If you see something in the Bible that is not in your church, strive to attain that biblical standard.** I always marvel at people who fight against miracles and prophecies. Prophecies and prophets are in the Bible. The entire Bible is full with testimonies of supernatural and spectacular miracles. If you have no miracles in your church please do not say that the day of miracles has passed. Just work on yourself until you have the miraculous operating through your ministry.

If people helped the poor in the Bible days, strive to have a church which ministers to the poor. Do not say that people who minister to the poor do so because they do not have anointing to win souls. Accept the fact that it is a biblical standard that you must attain! It is because we don't measure what we are doing, that we continue in the wrong thing for a long time.

Ask yourselves, "Am I a good person?" Ask your wife or husband what he thinks about your character. Ask yourself,

“How many should we be at this stage?” Measure your performance and analyze your duties! Don’t be like a husband or wife who appear so glorious on the outside. They call each other “sweetheart” and “honey”, but are brewing a stormy divorce at home. If you assess and judge yourself, God will not have to deal with you.

**But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.**

**1 Corinthians 2:15**

## **THE MINISTRY OF CORRECTION**

**SHALL I COME UNTO YOU WITH A ROD, or in love and in the spirit of meekness?**

**1 Corinthians 4:21**

Some people think that the pastor must be so soft that he cannot point out evil and correct it. The worst type of pastor is the one who cannot correct things that are going out of line. It is important to purge out certain tendencies from the flock. When your sheep realize that you are a weak leader, they will take you for a ride.

### **Black Beauty**

Many years ago I went for a ride on a horse called Black Beauty. This was at Burma Camp, a military riding school in the city of Accra. I was a new rider; and the horse soon realized that I was a novice. Our instructor would take us on a ride



through various fields in the countryside.

When we got to the boundary of the riding school the horse didn't feel like going out for the ride so it stopped at the gate. I had a whip in my hand so I hit the horse several times and the horse began to kick and jump. It knew that I was afraid of it. Some of the more experienced riders in the group came along and encouraged me to put the horse in line and bring it out of the school into the field. Would you believe that the horse calmly turned around and took me back to the stable? It utterly refused to go out on a ride that afternoon. I will say that the horse rode me, I didn't ride it.

Some months later after I became experienced this horse was no match for me. I could make it do anything I wanted it to do. That is how the pastor is with his sheep. If the people you are leading feel that you are weak, they will go out of line and do outrageous things. Identify disloyal people and remove them from the fold. Rebuke people publicly when you have to.

## **A Pastoral Introduction?**

I remember during a Tuesday night service, Rev. Sackey called to the stage a church member who was notorious for stealing. The boy probably thought he was going to be introduced to the church. However, Rev. Sackey announced to the church that this young man was a dangerous thief who was going about taking things from church members. He went on to say that everybody in the church should be careful of him and not believe his lies anymore.

The church was dead calm for a second and then suddenly

burst out in thunderous applause. This young man thought that he could take us for granted. He thought that because we are a church we would allow him to do anything he wanted. That was his biggest mistake!

The sheep will appreciate your strong leadership.

**...Know ye not that a little leaven leaveth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven...**

**1 Corinthians 5:6,7**

To some of the sheep you must be gentle and say things like:

“I am disappointed in you.”

“I wasn’t expecting this from you.”

“I was expecting something better from you.”

“Let this never happen again.”

“Shame.”

“I give you 20% for your Christianity.”

**Of some have compassion, making a difference:**

**Jude 22**

Correcting the sheep does not mean you should disgrace him. You can correct without disgracing. If you do not correct him, that thing will begin to spread among the congregation.

**“Ruby, Walk out!”**

To some of the sheep, you must be rough and hard. With others, you must actually dismiss them from the church. I re

member one pastor who stood in the pulpit and looked at two giggling girls and shouted from the pulpit, “Ruby, Walk Out!” They had no choice but to walk out and never return.

**Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea strife and reproach shall cease.**

**Proverbs 22:10**

I call this RWO treatment. Some people need to be dismissed from the church. Their presence in the church is not desirable or helpful so get rid of them. It’s as simple as that!

## **THE FEEDING MINISTRY**

The importance of the feeding ministry of a shepherd cannot be overemphasized. It is a principal duty of a shepherd to feed his sheep. Everything else comes after he done this principal duty. **The authority to lead, is given to those with the ability to feed.**

**FEED THY PEOPLE WITH THY ROD, the flock of thine heritage, which dwell solitarily in the wood, in the midst of Carmel: let them feed in Bashan and Gilead, as in the days of old.**

**Micah 7:14**

I have people in my church who are older and wiser than I am in many respects. Yet in the church, I am their leader and minister to them. Where would I get the authority to advise someone who could be my father or my mother? This authority is found in the ability to feed.

Where does your earthly father get his authority to tell you to come home or what to do with your life? It comes from the fact that he has fed you for years and continues to feed you. When your parents no longer feed you, the authority they have over your life drastically reduces. Jesus said to Peter three times, “Feed my sheep”. It is very important to the Lord that His sheep are well fed on the Word of God.

**...Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.**

**John 21:17**

The principal duty of all ministry offices is to preach and to teach the Word of God.

**Jesus went about all the cities and villages TEACHING in their synagogues and PREACHING the gospel of the kingdom.**

**Matthew 9:35**

Paul was an apostle and a prophet. He called himself an apostle to the gentiles.

**Paul, AN APOSTLE of Jesus Christ by the will of God...**

**2 Timothy 1:1**

Paul went on to say in verse eleven,

**Whereunto I am appointed a PREACHER, and an apostle, and a TEACHER of the Gentiles.**

**2 Timothy 1:11**

It should be clear to every minister that our main resolve is

to preach and teach the Word. What did Paul tell Timothy,

**I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ... PREACH THE WORD...**

**2 Timothy 4:1,2**

Paul predicted that a time would come when people would not want the Bible to be preached.

**For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine but after their own lusts they shall heap to themselves having itching ears, And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.**

**2 Timothy 4:3,4**

I believe that time has come now! Many prefer to be prophesied to. They want a quick, “bless me” prayer and some anointing with oil. **Pastors, develop your ability to feed and to preach. It is your one greatest asset.** Look around you and observe the great men of God you know. You will soon discover that every one of them has a strong ability to deliver the Word. Because this is so important, I am going to devote the whole of the next chapter to developing the art of preaching and teaching.



## **CHAPTER 10**

# ***DEVELOPING AN EFFECTIVE FEEDING MINISTRY***

A pastor's greatest asset is his ability to preach and teach. Pastors of large churches are usually good preachers. The sheep know where the grass is green so they go there to be fed. *Sometimes pastors who have had a small congregation for a long time have not developed the art of preaching and teaching.* The following are strategic thoughts on how to improve your feeding ministry.

### **PREACH OUT OF YOUR HEART**

Every good pastor and shepherd must be able to preach from his heart. Thank God for notes. I believe in notes, but they are just a guide. I preach from my heart all the time.

**Out of the depths have I cried unto thee, O Lord.  
Psalm 130:1**

If the thing is not in your heart, don't bother to say it. People notice when what you are saying does not come from your heart. **The best preachers are "heart preachers" and not "note preachers".**

## **PREACH EXTEMPORANEOUSLY**

Extemporaneous means informal, unrehearsed, impromptu and “off the cuff”. If you want your preaching to be powerful, and if you want people to listen to you, then learn to preach “off-the-cuff”.

The powerful sermons recorded in the books of Acts were unrehearsed and from the heart of Peter and Paul. When Peter stood to preach for three thousand to be saved, do you think he was preaching from notes? He stood up and addressed the crowd from his heart without any preparation per se.

I believe that preparation takes place over a long time. It takes a long time for a message to go deep down into your heart. Do you want to preach for three thousand to be saved? Do you want to preach to five thousand? Then learn how to preach extemporaneously. Even when you have prepared notes, let the preparation be so deep that you hardly have to refer to these notes.

**When you are proposing to your fiancée, did you read from notes?** Of course not! You spoke from your heart! You were able to capture one woman! Capture many souls for Christ using the same strategy. Many women have used their charm to win the hearts of their husbands. Use the same charm to turn people to Christ.

## **PREACH IN A CHARISMATIC STYLE**

To be charismatic means to be Holy Spirit inspired. Let your preaching be anointed! Learn to trust the Holy Spirit. Jesus



said, “I will teach you what to say in that very hour.” What Jesus said is true. I have experienced it very many times. Shepherds, never turn down a preaching appointment even if it is at the last hour.

**Preach the word; be instant in season, and out of season...**  
**2 Timothy 4:2**

When you start preaching the anointing will flow. **Many times when I start preaching I don’t feel anointed, but as I begin to flow I can feel the anointing arrive.** Learn to trust the Holy Spirit even if it is contrary to your wonderfully prepared sermon notes.

## **PREACH IN AN ORDERLY FASHION**

Orderly preaching means there is a pattern to which your listeners can follow. When they can follow the train of thought, the congregation usually remembers the message. To do this you often have to write down a few points.

**Let all things be done decently and in order.**  
**1 Corinthians 14:40**

Even when you are preaching under inspiration, there are usually two or three points that you are trying to stress. Learn to preach in a charismatic style using prepared notes. Let there be some order to what you are saying. I believe in writing notes and preaching with points, it helps to establish otherwise vague ideas.

## **PREACH WITH EMOTION**

I believe that every shepherd must preach using his or her emotions as well. If your teaching is bland and emotionless, it will not appeal to anyone. Let your sheep feel your happiness, laughter, righteous anger and your excitement. **Your excitement is contagious and will pass on to the congregation.** Your expressionless and lifeless sermon is also contagious and will minister death.

## **VARY THE TONE OF YOUR VOICE**

Vary the tone of your voice. Anyone who is serious about what he is saying would naturally bring some variation in the tone of voice. After awhile, anything that is monotonous (one tone) is boring.

Learn to imitate other people's voices as you preach, your congregation will love it. People want to have something that is real. They want to hear something that is funny. They also want something that they can relate to. Do not say, "I am not that type of person." Paul said, "I am made all things to all people that I may win some." (1 Corinthians 9:22)

## **LEARN TO PREACH BY CLOSELY FOLLOWING A GOOD PREACHER**

In the natural, many women learnt how to cook by doing exactly what their mothers did in the kitchen. Their food tastes exactly like their mother's food. Initially, they just copied their

mother's recipes word for word. However, with time they may have developed their own variations to the recipe. Nevertheless, they essentially learnt how to cook by copying someone who already knew how to cook. It is that simple in the natural. When it comes to preaching and feeding, many ministers have all sorts of psychological difficulties with accepting this reality.

I have never attended Bible school. I have never studied homiletics. In fact, I didn't even know what that word meant until recently. **I learnt how to preach by watching and listening to good preachers; and I am not ashamed to say so. I think it is a proven method of acquiring a skill.** Even in medicine, you learn surgery by watching, assisting and then doing it under supervision. That is how I train my pastors in Lighthouse Chapel. I teach them to listen to tapes and soak them in. This method has worked and is still working very well for me. Wisdom is justified of her children (Matthew 11:19).

First, you must choose someone who preaches well and who you can mentor. **Then consciously soak in the tapes until you unconsciously flow in his style and message.** Choose a style that works and a message that has worked. I learnt to preach by sitting at the feet of Kenneth E. Hagin and Fred Price for hours. I have watched and listened to Fred Price so much that without knowing it I began to preach like him. I did not do this consciously. I just loved his messages so much that I soaked them in hundreds of times. I now know that I was learning by observing.

The disciples, Peter, James and John didn't even know that they had learned to preach, and heal the sick until after Jesus had left. Suddenly, Peter was thrown into a situation where he had to preach a biting and heartrending sermon. He spoke to the Pharisees in the same biting way as Jesus did. Without

realizing it, Peter had learnt how to preach by being with Jesus.

**Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that THEY HAD BEEN WITH JESUS.**

**Acts 4:13**

## **PREACH ABOUT WHAT PEOPLE ARE THINKING**

Many times Jesus knew what the people were thinking. He often preached against what they were thinking. A good preacher can sense what the people are thinking about as he is preaching.

**...the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. And Jesus KNEW THEIR THOUGHT, and said [preached] unto them...**

**Matthew 12:24,25**

Do not close your eyes when you are preaching. Look at them eyeball to eyeball. Preach against any negative thoughts that they may have. Do not preach about anything that is irrelevant. People must comment that your preaching is biting.

## **DRESS NICELY AND APPROPRIATELY**

Always dress decently and properly. Every pastor should endeavor to look decent and business-like when ministering. If

you are a young preacher, it is important that you dress appropriately. Otherwise, you may be mistaken for a worthless young man. **Your dressing can upgrade your youthful appearance and make you acceptable before an elderly crowd.**

Female pastors must be extra careful! Women have been designed to be attractive to men. Men are also attracted to women. Therefore, lady pastors or female shepherds must ensure that they do not put on any clothing that is risqué or revealing.

## **SHAVE AND TRIM YOUR BEARD NEATLY**

Decide whether to be clean-shaven or to keep a beard. If you shave you must do it regularly. If you decide to keep a beard, you must keep it trim and neat.

At times, you may have to instruct a shepherd to shave off his beard because it looks too scruffy. Some Bible schools do not even allow students to keep a beard. The facts are that your beard changes your appearance completely.

## **HAIR SHOULD BE WELL KEPT**

The maintenance of your hair sends messages to everyone. The lady pastors in particular must maintain their hair in good condition. Otherwise, people will feel, “If she can’t even take care of her hair, can she take care of me?”

## **DEVELOP APPROPRIATE GESTURES AND POSTURE**

Your gestures refer to your body movements during preaching. Observe any good preacher and you will notice that his preaching style includes many interesting gestures and postures. Your body movements add a lot to the message you are preaching. It keeps the congregation attentive. If you do not already use gestures, decide to consciously learn and add some to your preaching.

## **VOLUME**

When preaching there are times when you must speak loudly. At other times, the preacher must shout! There are also moments when whispering is very effective.

Female ministers must be conscious of not shouting and screaming. This can be quite offensive. The shrill voice of a lady who is shrieking is not inspiring. It may turn the attention of the congregation away from their ministration.

## **MOVE AROUND FREELY**

At times you must stay behind the pulpit and preach. However, you must learn to move about when you are preaching. Sometimes it is good to walk into the crowd to get a feel of the atmosphere.

## **CONGREGATIONAL INTERACTION**

I always involve the congregation when I preach. You must learn to involve your congregation by asking them questions. Occasionally call out some familiar names. It helps to keep everybody alert.

## EYE CONTACT

When ministering look into the eyes of the people. **Jesus said that we should feed his sheep, not his giraffes!** Do not look above their heads, look into their eyes. See whether they are dead or alive! As a preacher, you must discern what they are thinking. Watch their facial expressions to know whether they understand what you are saying. Surprisingly, there are messages written all over their faces. You may even notice that people are asleep. This should prompt you to make your sermon less boring.

I once heard a true story about a church member that died sitting in his seat during a service. They called an ambulance to come and collect the body. Upon the arrival of the ambulance, they found several congregation members asleep whilst the pastor was preaching. It was impossible for them to know who was asleep and who was dead. So they carried out several people only to find them waking up in the ambulance. The attendants weren't sure who was dead or not! Neither did the pastor know. How does a pastor continue to preach to a congregation that is asleep or dead? If he was looking at their faces during his ministration he would have known who was dead or asleep.

## YOUR PREACHING MUST BE RELEVANT

Your preaching must be relevant. It must be related to

what is going on in the world around you. People must be able to say that your preaching is down-to-earth and simple to understand. Once the message loses its relevance, it loses its power. Jesus was very relevant.

**Or those eighteen upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?**

**Luke 13:4**

When people were killed in an accident at the tower in Siloam he immediately spoke about it. He used it as an illustration for them to repent or likewise perish. That is what I call relevance.

## **YOU MUST HAVE A COMMAND OF CURRENT EVENTS**

Relate your preaching to current events that may be affecting the members in anyway. It helps them to relate to your preaching. Unemployment figures in Western Europe are of no interest to the average Ghanaian. However, who the next military ruler may be is of the utmost importance and interest to the average Ghanaian.

## **USE “WINDOWS” IN YOUR PREACHING**

Windows are illustrations, amusing stories and personal life testimonies that allow people to “see” into your sermon. A pastor who just reads out scripture upon scripture without any



real life explanation is just ministering death and not life. **A pastor who is not prepared to “open up” and tell people about himself and about his life will never be a good preacher.**

Ensure that you preach with windows. As soon as you begin to give them a story that explains the message, they will begin to understand. People especially love to hear things about your personal life. It is a window into your private life and everyone loves to peep. Church members cannot understand your sermon without the use of windows. Jesus preached with windows all the time. He continually used real life stories, parables and illustrations.

## **LAUGHTER**

Develop the art of making people laugh. People want to be happy. There is so much sadness in the world that everyone looks forward to hope and happiness. People want to laugh, so make them laugh whilst you are preaching.

## **SOAK IN PREACHING TAPES**

You must invest in preaching tapes. Soak them in. Play them over and over again until you preach it exactly as it is, using your own illustrations and personal life stories. Soaking in the words of a man of God through cassettes and videotapes imparts the anointing or spirit of that person into you.

**And the spirit entered into me when HE SPAKE unto me...**  
**Ezekiel 2:2**

In John 6:63 Jesus said, “The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life.” This means that the more of Jesus’ words you hear, the more “spirit” (anointing) comes into you.

The Bible says in Acts 10:44 that “While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost (the anointing) fell on all them which heard the word.” There is something within the word of the king called anointing. As you speak, the Holy Spirit will enter the spirit of the people.

## **CATCH THE ANOINTING TO MINISTER**

As you soak in the tapes of a man of God, you will catch an anointing to minister. Your teaching and preaching ministry will improve. It is not by might nor by power but by my Spirit says the Lord (Zechariah 4:6). The anointing makes the difference in ministry, not strategies and cunning ideas.

## **TITLE YOUR SERMON**

Titling your message gives you clarity of thought. The congregation will know that they are taking “something” home. Your message titles should usually stay within an average of a one-to-five worded catchy sentence. For e.g., Abrahamic Success, Divine Provision, Frugality, Can-Do Man, How to Develop your Potential. Occasionally you may have a long sentence topic, for instance: Twenty-five Reasons Why You Must Be a Permanent Member, Forty Reasons Why Some Christians Don’t Pay Tithes. Titling your message helps to establish order.

## **AUTHORITY AND CONFIDENCE**

People must feel that you know what you are preaching about. When people feel that you are not sure of what you are saying they will no longer receive your preaching. The thing that struck the Pharisees about Jesus' teaching was his authority.

**...By what authority doest thou these things? And who gave thee this authority?**

**Matthew 21:23**

**For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.**

**Matthew 7:29**

## **PREPARATION TO PREACH**

Preparation to minister does not take place a few minutes before a sermon is delivered. It takes place all the time. My preparation to minister is constant and ongoing. Without long term preparation, you can never really preach from your heart. Prayer is a vital part of your preparation. A pastor must spend Saturday evening to Sunday morning in prayer. Specifically pray for the following:

- *That everyone who came the week before will attend again.*
- *That new people will attend church and be Born-again.*
- *That there will be church growth.*
- *That the flock will understand the Word and their*

*lives will be affected.*

- *That every need be met: healing, peace of mind, salvation, deliverance.*

## **INTRODUCE THE MESSAGE WELL**

You must let your congregation know and feel that the message is important. If you tell them that you have a very important message to give to them, they will sit up and listen. Even before you begin ministering, you should inform them that this message is vital for their Christian life.

## **LEARN TO PREACH IN SERIES**

One of the challenges of pastoral preaching and teaching is the challenge of having to preach to the same crowd of people each week. Church members expect the pastor to have a fresh and new revelation that they never heard before. Thank God for the Holy Spirit. Even if we are not capable, He is able.

I have discovered that pastoral preaching is best done in series. If part one is good, many people will come back to hear part two and part three. However, if every week you preach a different sermon, then there will be no motivation to continue receiving the lesson.

## **END MESSAGE WELL**

Learn to conclude your messages well. End on a happy note. End when people are laughing. They will look forward to

hearing more next time.

## **DO ALTAR CALLS FOR SALVATION AND HEALING**

I believe every minister must consistently make altar calls for salvation. This gives ordinary members the opportunity to practically give their lives to Christ. Pastors and shepherds, should not be afraid that no one will come. After all you are not trying to impress anyone; you are trying to please God. He wants all of His people to be saved. I make altar calls at weddings, receptions, parties, and anywhere else I find myself ministering. I will use every opportunity I get.

Every pastor must learn to use strong persuasive and evangelistic language to draw out any sinner that might be present in the congregation.

# **CHAPTER 11**

## ***WHO IS A GOOD PASTOR?***

In every profession, you have good and bad elements. The Bible says that whatsoever a man findeth to do, do it with all his might.

**Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might...**  
**Ecclesiastes 9:10**

If you are going to be a pastor, be a good one! Let us use the word of God to show us exactly what a good pastor is and does. Some people think a good pastor is someone who is gentle and nice. Others think it is someone who is a very good preacher. What does the Word of God say?

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD LEADS HIS SHEEP**

**To him the porter openeth ... and HE LEADETH THEM OUT.**

**John 10:3**

What does it mean to lead sheep? It means to be practically available for them to see and learn from you in every area of life and ministry. Anything you want your sheep to do, you must first do it yourself. They will follow you if they see you doing it first!

A pastor who wants his church members to pray must practically lead them into prayer. When the sheep see the shepherd taking the lead, they are convinced that the ground is safe and can follow confidently. Contrarily, a bad shepherd would sit at home and send the members to go for a prayer meeting alone.

**In our church, I have always tried to do first, what I wanted my people to do.** When we were building a basement in our church, we could not afford to hire the necessary machinery. We had to dig it ourselves. I needed the help of the entire church to drill and dig very deep into the ground. After that, we needed to carry tons of red sand out of the pit.

I could have easily delegated it some others, but I decided to dig and carry sand myself. I believe my decision motivated members of all social standings to get involved. There were students, lawyers, doctors and businessmen carrying sand like laborers. They worked with all their might. Why was that? They had seen their shepherd taking the lead.

I want you to notice something that made David popular.

**But all Israel and Judah loved David, because he went out and came in before them.**

**1 Samuel 18:16**

Why did the subjects of Israel love David? The answer is simple. They could see him practically going and doing the things with them.

We have a large attendance at our mid-week service. Many people are surprised that so many people attend church on a Tuesday evening. The fact is that I'm always there myself. I consider it an important meeting, the sheep see that, and follow my example.

Sometimes we have long periods of fasting with all-night prayer meetings everyday. You would be surprised to see how many people attend every night. I tell my members that I am struggling and suffering in the fast, and they love to hear it. The sheep are always happy to identify with the shepherd.

**Leadership is very spiritual. Even when people do not see you physically, they follow you spiritually. I have found that sheep have a mysterious way of becoming like their shepherd. The reason being, they are following him in the realm of the spirit.**

## **They Caught the Pastor's Anointing**

Many years ago, there was a scandal in the largest church in one city. The senior pastor of the church had an affair with one of his female ushers. The relationship had been ongoing and secret until the lady became pregnant and exposed it. The Christian community was outraged and horrified! However, more horror were to follow.



After the senior pastor finally admitted his sin, it prompted a series of confessions from other pastors and leaders of the same church. Unknown to each other, the pastors, leaders and sheep were all involved in similar sins of the senior pastor.

One evening, the associate pastor announced to the congregation, “I have a confession to make. I am a womanizer. If anyone saw me coming from sister so-and-so’s house in the morning... Whatever you thought happened, that is what happened. I am sorry to say that I have had affairs with four different girls in the church.”

After this confession, many other immoral sins were exposed as being very common in the church. Brothers and sisters, a pastor is a spiritual leader over a flock. **What you do is what the people will do. They cannot rise up unless you the leader show the way through righteous living.** That is why it is important for all shepherds to maintain very high standards.

Go ahead of your sheep. Do not operate as an executive, just walking in and out like a “big shot”. There is no place for “big shots” in the harvest field. There is no place for “big shots” in the real world of the sheep.

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD KNOWS HIS SHEEP BY NAME**

**...and he calleth his own sheep by NAME...**  
**John 10:3**

If you are a shepherd over a few people, you must know *all* their names. You must want to know their names and call them by name. Nobody is a number. Nobody wants to be called “Hey!” or “You there!”

You must get to know new people everyday. Keep asking their names until the name sticks. I am not ashamed of asking somebody his name seven times until it sticks. When you know the sheep by name they cannot simply walk out on you.

## **A GOOD PASTOR IS KNOWN BY THE SHEEP**

**...for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow...**

**John 10:4,5**

How do people know the voice of the shepherd? How do you know the voice of someone? It is because you have heard them speak to you time and time again. A good shepherd must speak to his sheep over and over until they know his voice.

I preach to my church all the time. I do not often have guest speakers. I believe in guest speakers, but I believe the best person to preach to my sheep is me because I am their shepherd. I preach about ninety percent of the time.

When a woman gives birth to a baby, her breasts are full of milk for the new child. So it is with the shepherd. His spirit is full of the Word to give to his children. No other woman's body and breasts are better qualified to feed her own child. Nature made it that way. Because you gave birth, you are naturally

primed up to feed what you have brought forth.

When your sheep are used to your voice, they will not follow strangers. If you call yourself a pastor, rise-up and feed your sheep regularly. **Preaching and teaching only becomes feeding when it is regular.** Preach to them all of the time, and teach them from your heart. They will grow and give birth to others.

They will know your voice on the issues of marriage, business, success and life in general. They will want to hear your voice concerning different aspects of their life. The voice of a true shepherd always rings in the spirit of his sheep. I question whether you are a real shepherd if you do not regularly and consistently feed your sheep.

## **A GOOD PASTOR STAYS WITH THE SHEEP**

**The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.**

**John 10:13**

Anyone who calls himself a pastor will want to stay around and mingle with the members and talk with them and be interested in them. David said,

**One thing have I desired of the Lord that will I seek after; THAT I MAY DWELL IN THE HOUSE OF THE LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the Lord, and to enquire in his temple”.**

**Psalms 27:4**

David wanted to stay in the house of the Lord. He actually wanted to live there. And you want to rush home! Are you really called?

I question the genuineness of a pastor who has no interest in staying around for a long time after service to mingle and chat with the sheep. The Bible says that the hireling flees. This means that he dashes off quickly. He wants to get away from the people.

Such people cannot stand visitors to their homes. They always say things like, “I need my privacy” or “I can’t stand having all these people around” and “I can’t cook for so many people”. Remember that a bishop is supposed to be “given to hospitality” (1 Timothy 3:2).

I once knew a White minister and his wife who were pastoring a large church in a European city. It happened that many of the members of his church were Black people; some Ghanaian, some Nigerians, etc. One day while having coffee with this pastor and his wife I got a feeling, from certain things they said, that they did not really like Black people. It was no wonder that even though they had a large church, they deserted the flock and went elsewhere. The hireling fleeth! (John 10:13).

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD KNOWS HIS SHEEP**

**I am the good shepherd, and I know my sheep, and am known of mine.**

**John 10:14**

Knowing your sheep means that you must know their names, where they live and where they work. Know about their health, friends, and school. Know when they are writing exams. Know their family, spouse and whom they reside with. Know their financial situation and their occupation. Simply know all aspects of their lives. Know means know! It is only when you know more details about your sheep that you can help or advise them properly.

I once asked a pastor about one of his sheep. I asked, “Is he married?”

He answered, “I don’t know.”

“Where does he work?”

“I’m not sure.” He answered.

“Did he come to church last week.”

“I didn’t see him,” he replied.

In a very large church, you may excuse such a question but in a small community church, the pastor has no excuse when he does not know the details about his sheep.

I recall one brother who belonged to a prominent church in my city. He joined another church, and after being a member of that ministry for a number of years, became a pastor himself. One day at a wedding he happened to meet his former senior pastor. His senior pastor said to him, “Brother John, it is a long time since I’ve seen you.”

“Did you come to church last Sunday?” the senior pastor asked.

John (who had now become a pastor in another church) smiled and said, “No pastor I didn’t.”

This senior pastor did not know that this brother had long since stopped coming to his church. He did not know that this

gentleman had even become a pastor in another ministry. How sad!

Jesus said a good pastor *knows* his sheep. If God gives you twenty people to look after, make sure you know *all about them*. Do not let any of them slip out of your hands. Jesus kept saying, “Those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost.” (John 17:12). It is important to have many junior pastors and shepherds to work with the senior pastor so that none of the sheep become lost. **God will hold us accountable for every single sheep that is lost.** Keep the sheep that God has given to you.

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD IS KNOWN**

A good shepherd “opens up” his life to the sheep so that they can know about him. The sheep are interested in the shepherd’s life. Do not be a mystery figure to your sheep. Let them know how real you are and how you experience the same problems and temptations as they do.

## **A GOOD PASTOR KEEPS THE CHURCH FAMILY TOGETHER**

The sheep of a good pastor are kept together under his “wings”. **One of the cardinal features of the pastoral calling is the ability to keep people together throughout the years.**

The longer a group of people stay together the more the people step on each other's toes. The conflicts of a family begin to rise. Brothers turn against brothers and sisters against sisters. The pastoral gift keeps employers in the same church with employees. The anointing on the shepherd is able to keep the old in the same room with the young. It keeps the married flowing with the unmarried.

As the church grows, you will even have enemies worshipping together under the same roof. It is the art of shepherding that will keep debtors and creditors within the same fold and prevent them from tearing each other apart.

**But he that is an hireling and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming and leaveth them and fleeth and the wolf catcheth them, and SCATTERETH THE SHEEP.**

**John 10:12**

## **A GOOD PASTOR NOTICES THE PROBLEMS OF HIS SHEEP**

**But he that is an hireling and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, SEETH THE WOLF COMING.**

**John 10:12**

The scripture tells us that the good shepherd can see the wolf coming. He sees the problems of his people and is concerned. He knows when they are doing exams. He knows when they are having marital problems. He knows when their businesses' are going through "tough times".

When a sheep fails his exams or loses a loved one, a wolf of discouragement and frustration is soon to come. **A good shepherd must be able to see the wolf and move into action.** The bad shepherd sees the wolves but says, “That’s your problem!” The good pastor will always stay with his sheep in their time of trouble.

## **A GOOD PASTOR DELIVERS HIS SHEEP FROM CAPTIVITY**

**...and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.**

**John 10:12**

Most of the members of a bad pastor are backslidden and in captivity. Pastors, rise up and pray for your sheep! Minister to their needs. Apart from preaching, pray for their deliverance from witchcraft, demons and diseases. People loved to be prayed for by their pastor. Pray for them anointing them with oil. They need this encouragement and ministration.

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD WANTS TO HAVE MORE SHEEP**

A hireling is just around for a while but a true shepherd is like the owner of the sheep. He is interested in them and he wants more. Every sheep owner wants to have more sheep because that makes him richer, naturally speaking. Yet, the servant or slave in the farm does not care whether there are more or



fewer sheep. Because he is not the shepherd, he is the hireling.

**And other sheep I have... THEM ALSO I MUST BRING.**

**John 10:16**

The true pastor is always concerned about bringing in more sheep. That is why Jesus said, "Them also I must bring."

## **A GOOD PASTOR LOVES THE SHEEP AND NOT THE MONEY**

**But he that is an hireling and NOT THE SHEPHERD...**

**John 10:12**

A true pastor does not work for money. He is interested in the salvation of souls and the growth of the church. **A bad pastor looks forward to some form of physical gain. His input is tied to that which he can get.** He is not concerned about the problems of his sheep. Anyone who cannot do pastoral work voluntarily, without being paid first, is not genuine.

## **A GOOD SHEPHERD GIVES HIS LIFE**

**I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.**

**John 10:11**

A good shepherd sacrifices his time for the sheep. The bad

shepherd is only prepared to give two hours of his time on Sundays. He always wants to get away from the crowds.

If a woman desires to be a good wife, she must give herself fully to her husband. If you want to be a good doctor, you must give yourself fully to medicine. **Similarly, if you want to be a good shepherd you must give your life and your time to the high calling of the pastoral office. It is worth it at the end of the day.**



*LEADERSHIP MADE EASY*

# *Leadership Made Easy*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*PARCHMENT HOUSE*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-99-2*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*

## ***Contents***

<i>1. Recognize Your Desire As A Symptom Of Your Call To Leadership .....</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>2. Do Not Rush Around From One Emergency To Another.....</i>	<i>5</i>
<i>3. Always Remember: “Nobody Wins Until We All Win” .....</i>	<i>10</i>
<i>4. Know The Names Of Many People .....</i>	<i>13</i>
<i>5. Invest In Yourself.....</i>	<i>15</i>
<i>6. Value Time And Manage Time .....</i>	<i>18</i>
<i>7. Great Achievements Require Great Discipline .....</i>	<i>21</i>
<i>8. Have A Vision .....</i>	<i>23</i>
<i>9. Value Every Moment In The Presence Of A Great Leader.....</i>	<i>25</i>
<i>10. Take Charge! .....</i>	<i>29</i>
<i>11. Master The Art Of Raising Money.....</i>	<i>31</i>

12. *Be Merciful* ..... 34

13. *Have Genuine Friends* ..... 36



## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*

*For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to:*

*Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa*

Website:

*[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)*

E-mail:

*[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)*

# LEADERSHIP MADE EASY

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

1. Recognize Your Desire as a Symptom of Your Call to Leadership
2. Convince People to Believe You
3. Do Not Rush Around From One Emergency to Another
4. Be a Leader with Emotion
5. Always Remember: “Nobody Wins Until We All Win”
6. Give People Hope
7. Know the Names of Many People
8. Say a Lot or Say Nothing, Depending on Who You Are Talking To
9. Respect Principles and You Will Build a Great Organization

## **10. Invest in Yourself**

11. Recognize the Small Beginnings of a Great Career

## **12. Become Self Motivated. Do Not Expect Direction or Encouragement From Outside**

13. Value Time and Manage Time
14. Great Achievements Require Great Discipline
15. Have a Vision
16. Value Every Moment in the Presence of a Great Leader
17. Be a Great Leader, Go the Extra Mile
18. Take Charge!
19. Accept the Principle of Ranking
20. Master the Art of Raising Money
21. Convince People to Make Great Sacrifices
22. Be Merciful
23. Have Genuine Friends
24. Take Responsibility and Give Account



# **About the Book**

## **Introduction**

# 1

## **RECOGNIZE YOUR DESIRE AS A SYMPTOM OF YOUR CALL TO LEADERSHIP**

Are you a leader? Can you become a leader? The answer is yes! In this chapter, I am showing you that there are some symptoms that reveal the leader within. Paul wrote to Timothy and told him to look for people with leadership qualities.

### **A desire**

**...If a man DESIRE THE OFFICE...**

**1 Timothy 3:1**

It is interesting to note that Paul wanted people who had the desire for the office. Timothy was instructed to look for certain qualities in people who had the desire for the office. A desire to lead is a symptom of a leader within. A desire to help other people is a great symptom that God has given you the gift of leadership. A desire to serve others with the good things you have, is a great sign of leadership.

**Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is,  
that they might be saved.**

**Romans 10:1**

Paul had a desire to help the Jews. He was constantly burdened by this desire. All true leadership stems from the burden to help people whom you love. The greatest sign of leadership is the burden and desire which compels the leader into action. That overwhelming burden/desire is the common feature in every great leader.

**I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost,**

**That I HAVE GREAT HEAVINESS AND CONTINUAL SORROW IN MY HEART.**

**For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ FOR MY BRETHREN, MY KINSMEN ACCORDING TO THE FLESH:**

**Romans 9:1-3**

Some people go through difficulties in life. After they have recovered from their pain, they have a strong desire to help others avoid the pain and suffering they went through. A true father wants his children to have what he couldn't have. A true leader wants his followers to be better than himself. Jesus said,

**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and GREATER WORKS THAN THESE SHALL HE DO...**

**John 14: 12**

Jesus wanted His followers to do greater things than He had done. If you do not have a desire to help people to become great, perhaps you are not a leader. If you just have a desire to help yourself, that is not leadership! Leadership is a desire to help other people achieve great things for themselves. A man who has a desire to win the lost at any cost is a leader for the gospel.

In the earlier days of my ministry, I did not even know what the office of a pastor, evangelist or apostle was. I thought these were far-fetched positions which I could never occupy. All I wanted to do was to help people to meet Jesus. All I wanted to do was to help people to grow in Christ. I felt that once people grew up in the Lord, many of their problems would go away. A desire to help people is a symptom of the call of God.

## **Misuse of leadership**

There are some people who have a desire for money, power and fame. Without knowing it, they intend to use the position of leadership to gain these things. That is not leadership! That is what I call the art of vampirism. A vampire is a bloodsucking bat or in human terms, someone who preys ruthlessly on others.

Africa, and many nations of the world, have been well endowed with vampire-like leaders who have sucked the wealth of their nations. Unfortunately, some churches have also had leaders, who like vampires, have sucked away the wealth and the life of the church. A vampire is not a leader and a leader is not a vampire! Peter warned against this in his letter to the church.

The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind;

Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

**1 Peter 5:1-3**

Obviously leaders with wrong motives were not uncommon in Peter's time. They are certainly not uncommon in our time. God is looking out for men and women who will agree to take up the mantle of leadership and pay the price thereof. That desire within you to help others is the sign of a call of God upon your life. It is time to help. God wants to raise you up to do just that. As you read this book, may the anointing to lead be upon you in the name of Jesus.

## 2

# CONVINCE PEOPLE TO BELIEVE IN YOU

**Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!**

**Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.**

**Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.**

**John 1:47-49**

Jesus got Nathaniel to believe in Him. Nathaniel had a personal conviction that Jesus was a good person and that he should follow Him. No one can truly follow your ideas unless he believes in you personally. The two go together. One of the reasons why leaders

must be open is so that people get to know you personally. I sometimes wonder as I watch preachers who say nothing about their personal lives. Could it be that they have no example to give or no testimony to share? Dear friend, the people you lead need to have faith in you as a person. How can this happen except you open up to them. People get to know what is in your heart by your words.

**...for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.**

**Matthew 12:34**

When people can relate with the things that are in your heart, they will more ready to go anywhere you want them to go. They will be ready to do anything you tell them to do. I am not impressed with people who read speeches that have been written for them. I cannot know much about the person until I hear him speaking from his heart. It is the heart that really matters. When people can feel your passion, drive and vision, leadership will become natural. If you don't have a passion for anything or a drive to accomplish something, you are not a leader. Pray for a passion and a conviction. Learning some rules about delegation, authority and management does not make anyone a real leader. That can only augment true leadership, which is from the heart. The reason why there are so many schools and books on leadership and yet so few leaders is because leadership is from the heart. **People will not follow you with their hearts until they believe in you with their hearts.**

## **Seven Ways To Make People To Believe In You**

1. Be Open About Your Private Life. When there are many mysteries surrounding your life people will not naturally gravitate towards you.

2. Be Honest About Your Problems. Everyone has problems including leaders. People rally around leaders whom they perceive to be real. A real leader is someone who has the same challenges as everyone else but overcomes them. If you have marital challenges, admit them openly and share how God helps you and your spouse to overcome them.

3. Preach From Your Heart. Never read a sermon out to people. I once heard a secular head of state complain about his priest. He said, “I make speeches and I speak from my heart. Why should a priest who hears from God read his message to me?” When you read sermons your hearers may doubt your sincerity. Everything that is written is carefully thought out. What we want to hear is what is in your heart.

**But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.**

**Matthew 12:36**

4. Share Your Personal Experiences With God. Having a personal experience with God gives credibility and authority to the leader. After all, your Christian leadership is based on your having a relationship with God. If you have had a visitation by an angel or Jesus, share it and it will bring down the awesome presence of God.

5. Tell People What God Told You. If God spoke to you, share it. Being able to tell people that God told you something is a mighty step of faith. It shows that you have a personal commission from the Lord. People want to follow God, so if you have heard from God then they will want to follow you.

6. Sacrifice Towards Your Vision. People can see the sacrifices

you are making towards what you believe. Your sacrifice will speak louder than a hundred sermons. I have sacrificed my medical profession for the ministry. That one act has given me more credibility than anything else. People will believe in you when they see your sacrifice.

7. Be Prayerful. Prayer generates spiritual authority. Authority is that “not-easily-defined, invisible, magnetic aura that surrounds a man of God.” Authority emanates from your closeness from God. The closer you are to a person, the more confidently you will speak about him. People will believe in you because of your prayer life. This is a secret that many prayer-less people do not know. People do not follow prayer-less leaders. Your private prayer will make people believe in you.

# 3

## DO NOT RUSH AROUND



# **FROM ONE EMERGENCY TO ANOTHER**

## **Two Types Of Leadership**

1. Emergency Style leadership. This involves running around from one crisis to another. It is not an effective style of leadership. The solving of a crisis gives a false feeling of security to the emergency style leader. After settling one crisis, he feels he has accomplished something great. But he does not know that the next crisis is brewing. Pastors solving leadership crises, financial crises, crises over rebellion, crises over debts, crises over breakaways are fully engaged all the time. But there is a better way!

2. Preventive leadership. Preventive leadership involves a style of leadership, which prevents the occurrence of all these crises. There are fewer crises under this style of leadership. People involved with the preventive style of leadership often hold training conferences, shepherds camps, teaching seminars, etc. Such leaders are more relaxed and more in control of their churches or organizations.

## **Seven Steps To Preventive Leadership**

1. Teach Your People What You Want Them To Know. I have discovered that almost everything can be taught. It is possible to get whatever you desire from your subordinates by teaching them. Every subject on earth is taught by someone. Learn to teach in order to achieve your desired result.

2. Train People To Be Loyal. Disloyalty is one of the causes of crises in organizations. Rebels and traitors have a way of destabilizing entire churches. You can minimize your crises by emphasizing loyalty.

3. Hold Regular Conferences, Retreats, Camps, etc. These are opportunities for teaching and discussion.

4. Do Not Borrow Money. Debts create uncertainty! The possibility that your whole world could come crashing down on you because of debt is disturbing. I hate debt. I do not borrow. And I would not advise you to borrow money. It is possible to live without owing.

**Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.**

**Romans 13:8**

5. Distinguish Between Unimportant But Urgent Requests And Important But Non-Urgent Duties. Jesus was summoned urgently to attend to Lazarus but it was more important for Him to do other things. He did not rush around to unplanned activities unless it was absolutely necessary. It is important for a leader to be able to distinguish between requests that require abandonment of scheduled activities and ones that do not. A wise leader will not rush around to unplanned activities unless it is absolutely necessary.

Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

(It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)

Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

John 11:1-6

A pastor has many important non-urgent duties. A pastor must spend time in prayer and in the Word. Praying and studying the Word do not sound as urgent as someone dying in the hospital. Waiting on God does not sound as urgent as having to write cheques or sort out administrative issues. Yet, a leader who attends to his non-urgent but important duties will achieve more.

6. Do Not Overextend Yourself. You can only do so much with your life. Overextending yourself means you take up things that God has not sent you to do. This creates stress and crises. Evangelists who become pastors have one leadership crises after another. They are incapable of extending themselves into an area God has not ordained for them. God does not expect us to do everything. We are not as essential as we may think. If we were that important, no young pastor would ever die! If we were that important in the scheme of things, James, the brother of John, would not have died in the middle of his ministry. Do your part and leave the rest to God. Have you never read where God says you must rest?

**There remaineth therefore a REST to the people of God. For he that is entered into his REST, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.**

**Let us labour therefore to enter into that REST, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.**

**Hebrews 4:9-11**

7. Delegate Whenever You Can. Jesus ministered for three years and delegated the rest of the work to His disciples. He had no delusions about what He could accomplish on His own. He did not

even attempt to go beyond the borders of Israel to minister. He delegated that aspect of His ministry to His disciples.

Do you remember that Jesus sent His disciples to the uttermost part of the earth? Did you notice that Jesus did not attempt to go to the uttermost parts of the earth? He delegated the work of going to the uttermost parts of the earth to the disciples. He did not try to prove to anyone that He could go to the uttermost parts of the earth himself. His role was to minister to the Jews and to die on the cross. Jesus' job was defined in Matthew 15:24. He intended to stick to His assignment. He delegated the rest to us.

**But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.**

**Matthew 15:24**

# 4

## **BE A LEADER WITH EMOTION**

People are attracted to people who show emotion. Don't be afraid of showing emotion. People will gather around you and listen to what you have to say because you are real. There is no need to live in pretence because you are a leader. Everyone born on this earth laughs, cries, gets angry and becomes happy. There are highs and lows in everyone's life.

To be a leader you must exhibit reality. We will live in a real world with lots of problems. A leader is a real human being with real emotions. A leader will experience all the emotions his followers feel. Most people don't know what to do with their emotions. If they find someone who is successful in spite of the real emotions he feels, they would like to relate with him.

## **Seven Reasons Why People Who Show Emotion are Attractive**

1. People Who Do Not Show Emotion Are Often Boring And Not Interesting To Be With.

2. People Who Do Not Show Emotion Kill The Atmosphere Around Them. It is very tense to sit with a strict and unsmiling individual who makes no contribution or comment about the conversation going on.

3. Emotionless Men And Women Are Often Strict, Stern, Authoritarian, Exacting And Rigorous.

4. Emotionless People May Be Phoney And Artificial. People simply do not want to deal with a pretender.

5. People Feel That If Someone Reveals His True Emotions, The Things He Says Will Also Be True.

6. A Show Of Emotion Stirs Up The Emotions Of Others. When people are stirred up emotionally, they become more committed.

7. People Love To Listen To A Preacher Who Ministers Varied Emotions Of Joy, Anger, Sadness And Suspense.

8. Jesus, Our Great Example Setter, Showed Emotion On Many Occasions.

## **Five Examples of Jesus Showing Emotion**

1. Jesus was excited when he saw the man with great faith.

**When Jesus heard these things, he MARVELLED at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.**

**Luke 7:9**

2. Jesus wept over cities.

**And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and WEPT over it,**

**Luke 19:41**

3. Jesus was moved with compassion for lost and helpless people.

**But when he saw the multitudes, HE WAS MOVED WITH COMPASSION on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.**

**Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few;**

**Matthew 9:36,37**

4. Jesus was angry with hypocrites.

**And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up**

to Jerusalem,

**And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting:**

**And when he had made a scourge of small cords, HE DROVE THEM ALL OUT OF THE TEMPLE, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;**

**John 2:13-15**

5. Jesus wept over individuals.

**Jesus WEPT.**

**Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!**

**John 11:35,36**

# 5

**ALWAYS REMEMBER:  
“NOBODY WINS UNTIL WE  
ALL WIN”**

When I was in medical school this truth was very real to me. Our end-of-year exams were very stressful. One of the tensest moments of my life was when I waited for my final results. By the

grace of God I passed every exam. However, there was always a friend or other who did not make it. I came to discover that unless we all passed, our joy was never really complete. How can you rejoice when your best friend has to repeat the year? How can you rejoice when six people are becoming doctors and one has to repeat the year?

Every leader must remember that nobody wins unless we all win. If your marriage is working, you will never be fully happy unless your friend's marriage is also working.

## **Five Lessons That Teach Us that “No One Wins Unless We all Win”**

1. Jacob Had Twelve Sons And Lost Joseph To Slavery. Even though he had eleven sons left he could not rejoice. Jacob was a wise man. He knew that no one wins unless we all win. “And he knew it, and said, It is my son's coat; an evil beast hath devoured him; Joseph is without doubt rent in pieces. And Jacob rent his clothes, and put sackcloth upon his loins, and mourned for his son many days. And all his sons and all his daughters rose up to comfort him; but he refused to be comforted; and he said, For I will go down into the grave unto my son mourning. Thus his father wept for him. And the Midianites sold him into Egypt unto Potiphar, an officer of Pharaoh's, and captain of the guard.” (Genesis 37:33-36).

2. Jesus Taught About The Shepherd Who Left The Ninety-Nine Sheep But Had Lost One. “How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went



not astray.” (Matthew 18:12,13).

3. Jesus Taught About The Woman Who Swept The Entire House To Find The One Lost Coin. “Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it?” (Luke 15:8).

4. Jesus Taught About The Prodigal Son’s Father Who Had One Son But Waited Hopefully For The Prodigal Son To Return. “For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.” (Luke 15:24).

5. Jesus Taught About The Banquet That Did Not Begin Until All Of The Seats Were Taken. “...Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.” (Luke 14:21-23).

## 6

## GIVE PEOPLE HOPE

Do you wonder why nobody stays in your company or church for very long? Perhaps there is not much hope for the future. Perhaps they cannot see good things in store for themselves in the future.

## **Six Ways To Give People Hope**

1. **Make Promises And Keep Them.** Every time you break a promise, you erode people's trust in you. It is very difficult to make people trust in you. When people do not trust you they will not follow you. The whole of Jesus' ministry was centred around a promise for the future. "...I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also." (John 14:2,3). Jesus' disciples were made to believe that there were good things in store for them in the future. They knew that Jesus would keep His promise so they had hope.

2. **Preach The Word Of God.** The Word of God is full of hope. Anyone who preaches the Word of God will not minister discouragement, disappointment and disillusionment.

3. **Speak About Rewards More Than Punishment.** The disciples had hope. They had hope in the glory and the rewards of heaven. This was a great source of motivation to them. You must understand that Jesus' disciples were so highly motivated that they had left their secular jobs for the ministry. They eventually died for their beliefs.

4. **Show Positive Examples That Inspire Hope.** In your business or church, you must accept the fact that people need to be motivated. The key to having motivated people is "hope for the future". That is

why Jesus often spoke of heaven and the rewards that await His faithful servants. If you want to inspire pilots show them how many pilots have successfully flown for years and eventually retired. That is the sort of example that will give hope. If you want to inspire pastors, show them examples of ministers who have made it in ministry.

5. Avoid Speaking About Examples That Inspire Discouragement And Depression. If they see how badly others have fared, they will be discouraged. They will say to themselves, “This is how I will end up one day.” If you are an airline pilot there is no point in discussing all the terrifying air crashes in aviation history.

6. Build Permanent Structures. People have more hope in permanent things. It is natural to gravitate to something that is more permanent. Every pastor who puts up a building, inspires hope in his congregation.

# 7

## KNOW THE NAMES OF MANY PEOPLE

...and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

**John 10:3**

People will follow someone who knows their name! It is very important that a leader knows the names of the people he works with. No one is a number or an object. If you want to lead people, try to remember their names and call them by name.

## **Five Reasons Why You Should Know The Names Of Many People**

1. Every successful leader knows the names of many people.
2. People feel special when you know their name. Everyone gravitates towards where he feels special. People do not feel disregarded or despised when you call them by name.
3. When you know the names of people they feel that you are friendly and human. People are attracted to someone who is friendly and warm.
4. Knowing people by their names connects you to them in a personal way. This creates the bond of leader and follower.
5. Knowing the names of people makes you closer to them. I sometimes wonder at pastors who have sixty members and cannot remember all their names. If you cannot remember people's names, they will not like to follow you. When you know somebody's name, they feel you are real and they feel you are near enough. People are less inclined to follow a distant figurehead.

King David was a great leader. One of the reasons he was loved is because he was near enough to the people he led.

**But all Israel and Judah loved David, because he went out**

**and came in before them.**

**1 Samuel 18:16**

# **8**

## **SAY A LOT OR SAY NOTHING, DEPENDING ON WHO YOU ARE TALKING TO**

A leader must learn to speak more or less depending on who he is speaking to. Jesus Christ spoke for hours when eager listeners who wanted to learn surrounded him. People came from miles around to hear and to be healed. He would preach for hours until people could not go back home.

**And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about**

**the door: and he preached the word unto them.**

**Mark 2:2**

**And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret,**

**Luke 5:1**

When Jesus was in the presence of people who hated and scorned him, He said nothing. He knew that time would tell it all.

### **Three People Jesus Refused To Speak To**

1. Jesus had nothing to say to the religious leaders. “And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, ANSWEREST THOU NOTHING? what is it which these witness against thee? But he held his peace, and ANSWERED NOTHING...” (Mark 14:60-61).

2. Jesus had nothing to say to the governor, Pontius Pilate. “And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it. And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing. And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? Behold how many things they witness against thee. But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.” (Mark 15:2-5)

3. Jesus had nothing to say to Herod. “And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod’s jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time. And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. Then he questioned

with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.” (Luke 23:7-10).

These were people who hated Jesus and he knew it. He knew that nothing he said would change their minds. I would rather follow the example of Jesus than to follow the guidance of a communications expert. I have left many matters to God and to time. He can best answer every accusation. You will notice that Jesus was accused vehemently, but refused to comment or respond to these accusations. It was not that Jesus could not speak. We see how He preached the Sermon on the Mount. We see how he taught at the seaside. We see how he preached so long that he had to feed the people afterwards.

Many pastors and leaders feel the need to attend interviews and discussions. They feel that they are obligated to clear their name and to improve their image. Mind you, I am not saying that it is wrong for pastors to speak to the press or to be interviewed. What I am saying is that Jesus did not bother to speak to hostile, disapproving interviewers who would never change their minds anyway. I would advise every minister to follow the example of Jesus Christ.

### **Three Reasons Why Pastors Are Not Obligated To Speak To The Press**

1. The media has no power to make or destroy a minister of the gospel. I know that many media men think that they have that power. Pilate also thought that he had power to destroy or establish Jesus. “Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest

thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?" (John 19:10). But Jesus corrected him. "Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin." (John 19:11).

In the same way, many press men feel that they have the power to destroy a man of God or a church if they want to. No one has the power to do anything unless God allows it. If Jesus thought His ministry was being destroyed by those unanswered accusations, he would have spoken out. Learn this secret; no human being can destroy what God has built. Those accusations only serve as a basis for the future judgement of those liars. It may seem as though they have destroyed something, but in reality no one can destroy God's handiwork.

2. Pastors must reserve their words for their congregations who will truly appreciate them. Pastors must know that the appropriate forum for ministering is in the church and not to scoffing, scornful talk show hosts who despise your very existence. When hostile interviewers who were already biased questioned Jesus, He explained to them that He had nothing new to say. He had said all He had to say in church already.

**The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold they know what I said.**

**John 18:19,20**

Such an answer would annoy most reporters. Indeed, it



irritated the men of that day. “And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so? Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?” (John 18:22,23).

3. There is no need for a pastor to justify himself to men. If you are acceptable to God there is no need to appear pleasing to human society. Efforts to make yourself more acceptable to human beings may actually incur the displeasure of God. “And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God. (Luke 16:15).

## 9

# **RESPECT PRINCIPLES AND YOU WILL BUILD A GREAT ORGANIZATION**

## **Three Definitions Of A Principle**

1. A principle is a fundamental rule which becomes the basis of an

action.

2. A principle is the fundamental truth which is the basis of our reasoning.

3. A principle is a general law which is the foundation for a decision.

## **Seven Ways To Destroy An Organization**

Organizations are destroyed by leaders who do not base their decisions and reasoning on principles. To build a lasting organization, church or nation, you must base your reasoning, actions and decisions on principles. Principles outlive favouritism, partisanship and political expediency. If you break principles, the principles will break you.

1. An organization that is governed by political expediency rather than principles is doomed. “It is not politically expedient!” These leaders take bad decisions that destroy entire nations. When decisions in a country are taken to gain political favour rather than to do the right thing, the country is often doomed.

2. An organization that is run mainly by giving favours to relatives rather than principles will be destroyed. When a leader decides to place his family in certain positions, even when they do not qualify, he has set aside principles and is governing his organization by emotionalism. The Bible teaches that partiality and hypocrisy are not wisdom.

**But the wisdom that is from above is... without partiality  
and without hypocrisy.**

**James 3:16**

Your nation, business or church will break up when you deal with people based on family relationships rather than important principles.

3. An organization ruled by a leader who takes decisions to gain personal financial advantage will eventually collapse. I know of a project that should have cost the organization only forty million dollars. However, it ended up costing fifty million dollars. Why? Because somebody was bribed to agree to a higher figure. Such an organization will only end up becoming highly indebted and poor. It is not governed by principles but by leaders who seek to line their pockets. If I sought to make myself rich rather than to build the church, I would see the church collapse.

4. When a nation is governed by greed rather than by principles, it will end up in deep poverty. This is the story of Africa. It is the story of greedy leaders who have drunk the blood of the nations they have governed. Instead of principled leadership, we have had greedy vampires and vultures who sucked up every drop of blood. Despot African leaders have left their countries desolate while they have amassed millions of dollars that they can never spend in their lifetime.

5. A nation governed by selfishness rather than rules and principles is doomed. Selfish African leaders send their children to school in Europe and America whilst the educational system of their own country crumbles. These selfish government ministers could not care two hoots if ten million children are not educated. The hospitals of developing Ghana decay whilst government officials seek medical help for themselves and their favourites in London's Cromwell Hospital. Selfishness is not the basis for good leadership.

Democracy is a political system or government based on giving

power to the people through elections. The very nature of this system corrupts leaders. Selfishness drives them to remain in power indefinitely. So-called democratic leaders try to please the masses with sweet words. This is why many democratically elected leaders are liars and hypocrites. Many promises are never fulfilled.

6. An organization ruled by favouritism and partiality rather than by principles is doomed. When a leader singles out one or two people whom he likes because they are friends or schoolmates, he rules his organization by favouritism rather than by principle. People must be promoted on merit and not on favouritism. When everything depends on who you know and whose friend you are, the organization deteriorates.

7. An organization ruled by ethnicity rather than by principles is destined for division and war. A leader whose mind works along ethnic lines rather than along principles is destroying his organization. Those who are not of his ethnic origin will gradually hate him. This is the basis of many of the civil wars in Africa and Europe. Many African leaders reason along ethnic lines rather than along the line of principle. Many countries have degenerated into war zones because of this kind of leadership. The Second World War developed as Hitler tried to eliminate Jews and other undesirable groups. The Balkans conflict grew as Muslims, Croats and Serbs tried to get rid of each other. The Tutsis and Hutus of Rwanda are another sombre reminder of how leadership based on ethnicity can destroy an entire region.

## **Three Principles To Build Your Organization**

Principle 1: Everybody must have an equal opportunity to make the best of his life in my organization.

Principle 2: Everyone must be promoted and rewarded based on merit rather than anything else.

Principle 3: Achieving results, hard work, loyalty, productivity and a good attitude must always be rewarded.

# 10

## INVEST IN YOURSELF

**Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.**

**1 Timothy 4:16**

Every leader who invests in himself will ensure that he remains the leader.

### **Three Reasons Why Every Leader Must Invest In Himself**

1. Because of the law of deterioration. This law says that everything is decaying naturally. Nothing on earth stays in the healthy original condition for long. This is why the Bible warns that the crown (your

leadership position) is not guaranteed forever.

**Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, and look well to thy herds.**

**For riches are not for ever: and doth the crown endure to every generation?**

**Proverbs 27:23,24**

2. Because of the law of staying one-step ahead. There is no leadership unless you are a step ahead. I am constantly investing in myself in order to stay at least one-step ahead of my followers. Without doing this, I would actually fall out of my position.

3. Because of the law of taking care of yourself before you can take care of someone else. While flying, adults are instructed to take care of themselves before taking care of their children. Paul said the same thing. There is no way you can save others unless you save yourself. A doctor cannot attend to others if he is sick. The blind cannot lead the blind. “Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.” (1 Timothy 4:16).

## **Seven Ways Every Leader Can Invest In Himself**

1. Read the Bible everyday. In 1986 I travelled to London as a student. I bought one thing for myself – that was a special reference Bible. I used up all my meagre student’s allowance to invest in myself. I have never regretted that investment.

**...but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap...**

**Galatians 6:8**

2. Read Christian books everyday. Read books about things you do not know.
3. Listen to audiotapes. When added up, the hours spent listening to tapes are equivalent to several semesters of lectures at the university.
4. Attend seminars, conferences and church services. These will make you a better person.
5. Spend more money on your books than you do on your clothes and your hair.
6. Watch vide tapes of anointed men of God teaching wisdom.
7. Build up a personal library of books and tapes.

# 11

## **RECOGNIZE THE SMALL BEGINNINGS OF A GREAT CAREER**

Many great careers begin in a small way. Unfortunately, many do not recognize the beginnings of greatness.

**Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end should greatly increase.**

**Job 8:7**

**For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the Lord, which run to and fro through the whole earth.**

**Zechariah 4:10**

The Bible teaches us not to despise small beginnings. Countless Christians throw away great careers in the ministry because they cannot recognize the beginnings of a great career. Never forget this! The greatest careers begin in the smallest ways. A tiny mustard seed brings a mighty tree forth. There is no relationship between the size of the mustard seed and the size of the tree.



## **Six People Who Recognized The Small Beginning Of A Great Career**

1. Elisha began his career as a prophet by washing the hands of Elijah. “But Jehoshaphat said, Is there not here a prophet of the Lord, that we may inquire of the Lord by him? And one of the king of Israel’s servants answered and said, Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, which poured water on the hands of Elijah.” (2 Kings 3:11).

2. The great army general Joshua began his career as a servant to an old prophet. “And Moses rose up, and his minister Joshua: and Moses went up into the mount of God.” (Exodus 24:13).

3. King David began his career by playing instruments in the king’s palace. “And Saul sent to Jesse, saying, Let David, I pray thee, stand before me; for he hath found favour in my sight. And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that David took an harp, and played with his hand: so Saul was refreshed, and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him.” (1 Samuel 16:22,23).

4. Aaron began his career by holding up the hands of Moses. “But Moses’ hands were heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon; and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun.” (Exodus 17:12).

5. Ruth began her career by helping an elderly frustrated widow. “And Ruth said, Entreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee: for whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge: thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God: Where thou diest, will I die, and there will I be buried:

the LORD do so to me, and more also, if ought but death part thee and me.” (Ruth 1:16,17).

6. Jesus began his career as a carpenter. “Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.” (Mark 6:3).

# 12

## **BECOME SELF MOTIVATED. DO NOT EXPECT DIRECTION OR ENCOURAGEMENT FROM OUTSIDE**

**...but David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.**

**1 Samuel 30:6**

Everyone looks up to the leader for encouragement, but who encourages the leader? A true leader is someone who knows how to encourage himself whenever it is necessary. I do not look to the outside for motivation. I have learnt that I have to motivate myself. I cannot depend on external factors to encourage me.

There are many times I have been absolutely discouraged and dejected in ministry. There are times I have problems that I have no one to talk to. Like David, I have had to learn to encourage myself in the Lord.

You cannot encourage your followers until you have learnt to encourage yourself. David experienced a crisis and he had no one to talk to. He had no choice but to encourage himself.

**And David's two wives were taken captives, Ahinoam, the Jezreelitess, and Abigail the wife of Nabal the Carmelite.**

**And David was greatly distressed; for the people spake of stoning him, because the soul of all the people was grieved, every man for his sons and for his daughters: BUT DAVID ENCOURAGED HIMSELF IN THE LORD HIS GOD.**

**1 Samuel 30:5,6**

## **Seven Steps To Encouraging Yourself**

1. Develop a personal relationship with the Holy Spirit. Hear him speaking to you personally. You will do this by faith. You must be able to say that God has spoken to you. When you are all alone and there is no one to speak to, the Holy Spirit will be the guide that you need. That is what He is there for! . Be constantly aware of the Greater One in you. You have overcome because He is in you.

**Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.**

**1 John 4:4**

In my darkest moments, I have found the Holy Spirit to be

someone who speaks to me personally. Jesus described the Holy Spirit as another Comforter. “And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;” (John 14:16). Jesus was the first comforter. He was available to be spoken to. He was there to answer questions. He was there to give guidance. Today, the Holy Spirit does this job. Leaders are often lonely people. I pity any leader who does not have the Holy Spirit as a personal friend to talk with.

2. Receive living messages from God by the simple reading of scriptures. When the Bible becomes a living message from God to you, you will always have a source of direction and encouragement. When I’m in need of encouragement or direction I believe that whichever part of scriptures I read at that time will be God’s message to me. This makes the Bible my greatest tool of self-encouragement and motivation.

3. Remember other problems that God has delivered you from. When you remember what the Lord has done in the past you will be encouraged. Jesus expects us to remember the things He has done for us in the past to encourage ourselves. Notice how he was angry with the disciples for not remembering the past miracles. **(FIND SCRIPTURE)**

4. Make positive confessions. Your faith must speak when you need encouragement. Faith is the opposite of depression. Faith is a shield. Your faith is a God given weapon meant to stop attacks. That is why the Bible calls faith a shield that quenches the fiery darts. In my book, “Name it! Claim it! Take it!”, I have written a whole lot of positive confessions that will help every leader. (See Name it! Claim it! Take it! by Dag Heward-Mills).

5. Learn to listen to appropriate tapes and get fired up again.

6. Play the right music at the right time.

7. Avoid depressive and discouraging personalities who only draw you back into the darkest gloom. Remember that joy cometh in the morning.

# 13

## VALUE TIME AND MANAGE TIME

### Six Ways To Manage Your Time

1. Distinguish between important and urgent things.

Many people claim they cannot do certain things because they have no time. However, the reality is that they are unable to manage their time. Do you call yourself a leader? If you are a leader, you must be able to distinguish between the important things and the urgent things. **Many things that are urgent are not important and many important things are not urgent.** A real leader is someone who cuts away the unimportant things and ensures that he does what he is supposed to do.

2. Do not get involved with things that are not on your schedule.

If you are a leader, you will know that many good things are not necessarily the things you must do. I have decided that I will spend my time in prayer and in the ministry of the Word. Even as I write this book, I am under pressure to do many other things. I have decided that to write this book is the most important thing for me to do at this time.

**Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.**

**Ephesians 5:16**

3. Surround yourself with competent helpers who will do certain essential jobs for you.

A responsible employee who takes care of important things for you is a valuable asset. There are things that must be done for me so that I can have time for the things that only I can do.

I am a pastor overseeing over two hundred churches; you can imagine the number of problems that arise everyday. I have to decide what to do: counselling people, praying for people, sorting out financial problems, solving managerial issues, and the list goes on. With the help of intelligent administrators and problem solvers I will have time for my work.

4. Get rid of people who fail to do jobs that are delegated to them. These people will create problems for you and drag you into areas which should have been taken care of.

5. Stay in your calling.

How can you develop the art of using your time wisely. I want to share with you a secret which I believe is a key to managing your time effectively. It is also a key to fulfilling the will of God. Did you know that you have only seventy years (more or less)? This means that you have only a limited time to serve the Lord. God is expecting you to do certain things. A true leader discovers what he is supposed to do and sticks to it. Stay in your calling. Don't branch out into other people's territory. If you a teacher, teach the Word. If you are a pastor, give yourself to pastoring, don't try to become a prophet.

#### 6. Avoid useless socializing.

Chatting around and being friendly is often time you could have spent fellowshiping with your Heavenly Father. People may say that you are not very friendly but you know what you are doing. Avoid wasting your time on useless television programs. This is not because I cannot afford it. It is because I would not have the time to watch it.

# 14

## **GREAT ACHIEVEMENTS REQUIRE GREAT DISCIPLINE**

To be disciplined means to be controlled, restrained, well-organized, regular, orderly, and regimented.

**Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.**

**And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered.**

**Matthew 4:1,2**

Jesus subjected Himself to the strict discipline of fasting for forty days and nights. That is no mean achievement! Anyone who has fasted without eating for even three days and nights will discover the terrible strain it puts on your self-control.

To be a great leader you must discipline yourself in prayer, fasting and reading the Bible. There are times I stay in one room for eight hours, praying to the Lord. I can stay alone for hours in the presence of the Holy Spirit. You cannot do this without self-discipline.

Do you want to be a great leader? It is time to discipline yourself in every way. To write this book, involves great self-discipline. For hours and hours, I transmit unto the paper the words that you are reading. It has not been an easy task! But I know that there will be no great achievement without great discipline.



## **Five Things Every Leader Should Be Disciplined About**

1. A daily quiet time.
2. To spend several hours in prayer.
3. To read the Bible everyday.
4. To fast regularly.
5. To read books.

# 15

## **HAVE A VISION**

The greatest secret about vision is this: Your vision will make you into what you desire to become. Every great leader moves towards the vision and goal that he has set.

**Where there is no vision, the people perish: but he that**

**keepeth the law, happy is he.**

**Proverbs 29:18**

The vision a man has makes him a leader. Your vision is what drives you and propels you out. If you are a leader and there is no vision before you, I really question whether you are a leader or not.

It is what I see ahead that keeps me going. In my mind's eye, I see a mega church! I see thousands of people being brought to Christ. I see many miracles taking place in my life and ministry. That is what keeps me going. You do not make your vision, it is your vision that makes you!

What is the key to having a great vision? I'll give you a good secret. Look around you and see anyone doing the things you like to do. Make it your vision to achieve what that person has achieved and more. Without such a vision, you will flounder in the sea of aimlessness.

# 16

## VALUE EVERY MOMENT IN THE PRESENCE OF A GREAT LEADER

### Three People Who Valued Their Fellowship with Great Leaders

1. John the disciple spoke of his interaction with Jesus. He shared how he had actually touched the Lord and heard Him speak. “That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)” (1 John 1:1,2). This was the greatest experience of his life. The rest of his life was spent A few moments in the presence of a great leader will teach you many things.

2. Elisha refused to go away from the presence of Elijah. He knew how important it was for him to stay close. On four different occasions, he refused to go away. “And Elijah said unto Elisha, Tarry here, I pray thee; for the Lord hath sent me to Bethel. And Elisha said unto him, As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee. So they went down to Bethel.” (2 Kings 2:2).

3. Joshua was also greatly affected by his close interaction with Moses. Remember that Joshua was the only one who went up the mountain with Moses. “And the Lord said unto Moses, Come up to me into the mount, and be there: and I will give thee tables of stone, and a law, and commandments which I have written; that thou mayest teach them. And Moses rose up, and his minister Joshua: and Moses went up into the mount of God.” (Exodus 24:12,13). All the members of Moses’ original team became “someway” as time elapsed. Aaron moved into idol worship. Miriam became disloyal and critical. But Joshua was full of wisdom because of his closeness to Moses. “And Joshua the son of Nun was full of the spirit of wisdom; for Moses had laid his hands upon him: and the children of Israel hearkened unto him, and did as the Lord commanded Moses.” Deuteronomy 34:9).

## **Seven Things To Notice When In The Presence of Great Leaders**

1. Notice their vision. You will be inspired to have a greater vision.
2. Notice their achievements. It will show you what is possible.
3. Notice their focus. You will see the secret of concentration at work.
4. Notice their relationship with God. It will inspire you to be closer to God.
5. Notice their appearance and their language. You will feel the atmosphere of greatness.
6. Notice how they handle situations. You will receive wisdom for

your own situation.

7. Notice their weaknesses. When you see their great achievements in spite of their weaknesses, you will be encouraged.

# 17

## BE A GREAT LEADER, GO THE EXTRA MILE

**And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him  
twain.**

**Matthew 5:41**

Every true leader goes the extra mile for his followers. This may mean a little more sacrifice and a little more time. One extra mile for somebody you love is never too much. It is not uncommon to find the leader of a company in the office well after his closing hours. He is going the extra mile.

When I became a pastor, I often went the extra mile without being asked to. The extra mile is the mile you are not supposed to go. The extra mile is the mile you are not really required to do. That is why it is called the extra mile!

My car was used as the church bus. My stereo sound system was used as the church equipment. My private room was used as the church office. These were not things that I was required to do, but I did them gladly because that is what a natural leader does. Without even being asked, you will do extra things.

For your church or business to work, somebody has to put in the extra effort. Do you consider yourself a leader? Are you going the same number of miles that everybody else does? Remember that a true leader is often doing extra miles.

# 18

## TAKE CHARGE!

**And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.**

**And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.**

**And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.**

And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a

great calm.

**But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!**

**Matthew 8:23-27**

Jesus was called up when there was a problem. It was raining and everyone was drowning. When Jesus was called, He took charge. I remember my first night alone as the doctor-in-charge of the Korle-Bu Hospital emergency room. It was a frightening experience for me. I was a new doctor and I was expected to lead the way and to know what to do in each case. Throughout the night, people were brought in unconscious, sick and some even dead. But I rose to the occasion and became the leader in the emergency room. How did I do it? I just did what I thought was right from the training that I had received. As time went by it became easier.

When Saul became a new leader, Samuel gave him this very instruction, “Do what you think is right and the Lord will be with you.”

**And let it be, when these signs are come unto thee, that thou DO AS OCCASION SERVE THEE; for God is with thee.**

**1 Samuel 10:7**

What is the key to taking charge as a leader? The key to taking charge is to simply take charge. Just rise up and speak

confidently! Do what you think is best and God will be with you.

# 19

## ACCEPT THE PRINCIPLE OF RANKING

**They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks.**

**Joel 2:7**

### **Ten Things Every Leader Should Know About Rank**

1. Everyone was not created to be the same. Ranking is the acknowledgement of that reality. Some political ideologies have tried to make everybody the same. God did not create everyone to be equal. A leader is somebody who understands that he has a place in the scheme of things.
2. Your rank defines your level of operation. It tells you how high or low you are. Your rank may be designated by God or by your human superiors



3. Ranking eliminates confusion within an organization.
4. Ranking shows you how much higher you can go. I know of people who have more growth in their ministries than I do. I am rejoice with them at what the Lord is doing. I know that I am not at the highest level that there is. I respect those who are ahead of me.
5. Ranking shows you how low you can sink. Understand that there are always people senior and junior to you.
6. Ranks are changeable and very often they are changed. Once you understand that your current rank is not necessarily your position for life, you will have hope for promotion in the future.
7. Every rank has to be explored fully before you move on to the next. If God places you at the level of a pastor, explore it fully and discover all that there is in the pastoral office.
8. There are principles that determine promotion from rank to rank. For instance, faithfulness and fruitfulness within your rank are very important for promotion.
9. A real change of rank occurs when God promotes you himself. "I said unto the fools, Deal not foolishly: and to the wicked, Lift not up the horn:" (Psalm 75:4). Promotion comes from the Lord. My position in the Lord is God given and so is yours. Let us respect one another and God will move us to a higher rank.
10. Promotion to a higher rank often goes with new attacks. New levels bring new devils.

David's problems began when he killed Goliath. By killing

Goliath he moved from the ranks of an unknown youth to the ranks a famous warrior. It was then that Saul began to “eye” him and persecute him.

Promotion from God comes with persecution. You must know the implications of a higher rank. I never knew that God would raise me to where I am in ministry. I also never expected that I would encounter such persecution.

**But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, WITH PERSECUTIONS...**

**Mark 10:30**

## 20

# MASTER THE ART OF RAISING MONEY

Every leader is going to need some money to accomplish his mission. If you do not know how to raise money, you will not be a successful leader.

Elisha the prophet was a bold fundraiser. He met with a widow

who was about to eat her last meal. Elisha convinced this woman to give up her last meal for his ministry. When the woman did that, she was led into a great financial miracle. It took a bold man of God to raise money for the work of ministry.

## **Five Keys to Successful Fundraising**

1. **Trust.** I have come to accept the fact that part of my job as a leader is to raise money. I am often raising money for different projects. What is the key to successful fundraising? People must trust you! Trust is something that builds up over the years. The more people trust you, the more they will be prepared to release their wealth. There are people who would give me thousands of dollars if I were to ask. They trust me because they have been with me for many years. Dear leader, the key to your fundraising ability is integrity. Whenever money is raised for a specific purpose, use the money for that specific purpose. As time goes by people will trust you.
2. **Be careful about projects which will take a long time to complete.** If you start something that does not conclude, people will think that you deceived them. They will think that you collected the money and used it for something else.
3. **Do not raise money for inappropriate projects.** Do not raise money to meet the personal needs of pastors. I would advise you not to raise money to buy clothes, cars or to finance a holiday for the pastor and his wife. The congregation will not be happy to pay for luxuries that they themselves do not have. People prefer to give money to missionary work, evangelism and building projects.

4. Do not raise funds too often. Donor fatigue sets in when fundraising is too frequent. Depend on regular tithes and offerings for most things.
5. Be conscious of the 80-20 rule when you are raising funds. Most people can give very little. However, a few people can give much more. The 80-20 Rule tells us that 80% of our income comes from 20% of the people. Raise funds from the eighty percent but expect much more from the wealthy twenty percent.

Never forget this fact. A leader will always need money to fulfil God's vision. Pray for financiers. Be a man of integrity. God will help you and you will never lack!

# 21

## CONVINCE PEOPLE TO MAKE GREAT SACRIFICES

**If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.**

**Luke 14:26**

Under the leadership of Jesus, many people gave up their lives for a great cause. Many people lost their lives because they believed in Him. I know of many missionaries who died as they served the Lord on mission fields. A leader is someone who can convince people to make sacrifices towards a great cause.

I once told a young medical doctor to go and live in a remote town of Ghana and begin a church there. This medical doctor had the option of going to the USA to become a rich consultant. He made a great sacrifice and went to that town because I had asked him to. I believe that one day, when we get to heaven, he will be very glad that he made that sacrifice!

Once upon a time, our church was in a crisis and we needed a huge financial input. I had to speak to many individuals and ask them to sacrifice their building projects and large amounts of money for the gospel. They did it gladly. God has blessed them with more than they can carry.

## **The Master Key to Leading People Into Sacrifice**

Are you the type of leader that people would make sacrifices for? Let me give you a key to becoming this type of leader. It is simple. You must be someone who has made great sacrifices yourself. People assess you as you speak! They are convinced when they realize that you practice what you preach.

**Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou**

**wouldest not.**

**This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.**

**John 21:18,19**

Jesus told Peter very clearly that following Him would lead to a horrific death on the cross. Peter was prepared to die because Jesus was leading Him.

By 1840, twelve missionaries had been sent to the Gold Coast (Ghana) from the Basel Mission in Switzerland. Only two had survived. The story is told of how a class of the Basel Mission were asked, “Who will volunteer to go to the Gold Coast?” No one responded. Another question was asked, “Who is prepared to be sent to the Gold Coast?” Several people responded to that. These missionaries were prepared to die if someone would send them.

You see, people are prepared to make sacrifices if they are led into it. You need a strong leader to send people to a place that has swallowed up the lives of others. Thank God for strong leadership. Be a leader who convinces people to make sacrifices for a good cause.

# 22

## BE MERCIFUL

**Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.**

**Matthew 5:7**

A leader is someone who knows the importance of showing mercy. Certain political leaders came on the scene spitting fire and brimstone. They passed judgements on others for minor crimes and sentenced them to death. Years later, they discovered that members of their own government were doing worse things. If they were to apply the same measuring rod to these individuals, they would probably have to execute their entire government. Blessed is the merciful for he shall obtain mercy. A wise leader knows that he may need mercy himself one day. That is why a true leader is merciful to his followers.

### Are You Spiritual?

**Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.**

**Galatians 6:1**

This scripture says that people who are spiritual must be careful to be merciful. Have you caught a thief today? Please show mercy! I know that you find it difficult to appreciate the circumstances under which you could be accused of being a thief one day. I am not

predicting that every man of God will fall. All I am saying is that it is wise to be merciful rather than judgmental. Mercy triumphs over judgement. Surely you will need the mercy of God in your life. God looks at how much mercy you show to others. The blessing of merciful people is that they will also receive mercy. A leader is a humble person who also knows that he is capable of falling one day.

Years ago, I met a pastor who was so judgmental about Kenneth Hagin. He spoke at length and described the faults of Kenneth Hagin to me. He then gave me a book full of criticisms about Kenneth Hagin. As this pastor spoke, I marvelled at the critical spirit he possessed. Some years later, this critical pastor divorced his wife and lost his ministry. The next I heard of him was that he was in prison. There is no need to be judgemental. Are you a leader? Be merciful, you may need it one day.

## 23

### **HAVE GENUINE FRIENDS**

One of the first things a real leader does is to make friends. It is these same friends who will help you. The people who support you will become your followers. Are you a person who makes



friends, or scatters people? Your friendships form a basis for acts of loyalty, support and even sacrifice.

What is the secret to having genuine friends? Be a genuine friend yourself.

**A man that hath friends must show himself friendly: and there is a friend that sticketh closer than a brother.**

**Proverbs 18:24**

Never forget that you reap what you sow. If you are a traitor, traitors and rebels will surround you. If you are a loyal person, mostly loyal people will surround you. No matter how loyal you are, you will still have some traitors. Betrayal is a part of real life. Jesus was a loyal friend and leader, but he had Judas.

In spite of this, decide to be a real friend so that you will gather genuine people around you. If you are honest, dishonest people will not flow with you. If you are holy, unholy people will not feel free to become your friends. As they say, “Birds of a feather flock together.”

# 24

## TAKE RESPONSIBILITY AND GIVE ACCOUNT

What you must realize is that every leader will give account for what he or she is doing. Are you ready to account to God for the sheep He gave you? Jesus kept on saying that He had lost none of the sheep except the son of perdition. Paul kept saying that he would have to give account.

**Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.**

**Hebrews 13:17**

Leadership is a great responsibility. I remember years ago, I watched as several heads of state and ministers of state were executed by a firing squad. It was pathetic to see important people being humiliated and murdered. The ordinary citizen in his home will receive no such treatment. This is because the ordinary man had not taken up the responsibility of ruling the country. However, those who had taken up responsibility had to pay with their lives.

If you are conscious of the reality that you will account for your leadership you will discover that you will become a better leader. Always remember that the day of accountability is coming. This will make you do the right thing. I am constantly aware that I will have

account for the call of God on my life. I know that I will have to account for the sheep in my churches. This is why I make great efforts to look after them.

Are you a leader? Are you constantly thinking of your day of accountability? Please do! You will be transformed into a natural and effective leader.



# **LOYALTY AND DISLOYALTY**

**DAG HEWARD-MILLS**

## **PARCHMENT HOUSE**



UNLESS OTHERWISE STATED, ALL SCRIPTURE  
QUOTATIONS ARE TAKEN FROM THE KING JAMES  
VERSION OF THE BIBLE

PARCHMENT HOUSE

ISBN 9988-7798-4-4



COPYRIGHT © 2000  
PARCHMENT HOUSE

1<sup>ST</sup> PRINTING 1998

2<sup>ND</sup> PRINTING 2000

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED UNDER INTERNATIONAL  
COPYRIGHT LAW. WRITTEN PERMISSION MUST BE  
SECURED FROM THE PUBLISHER TO USE OR  
REPRODUCE ANY PART OF THIS BOOK, EXCEPT FOR  
BRIEF QUOTATIONS IN CRITICAL REVIEWS OR  
ARTICLES.



## **Dedication**

*I dedicate this book to Rev E.A.T. Sackey, my friend and associate  
in ministry.*

*Thank you for the many years of faithfulness and loyalty!*



## CONTENTS

*Why Loyalty?*  
9

*Stages of Disloyalty*  
16

*A Culture of Allegiance*  
34

*Lessons on Loyalty*  
40

*Signs of Disloyalty*  
56

*From the Lips of Treacherous Men*  
74

*A Loyal Assistant*  
78

*A Disloyal Assistant*  
86

*Why Judas Betrayed Christ*

**91**

***Avoiding Disloyalty***  
**100**

***The North Wind***  
**105**

***The Good Fruits of Loyalty***  
**109**

## ***Chapter One***

# ***Why Loyalty?***

Why teach on the subject “Loyalty and Disloyalty”? I believe the Lord has laid on my heart this practical subject for various reasons. First of all, I have seen the relevance of this subject in the Word of God. The scriptures are littered with accounts of faithful and treacherous people. There is a lot to learn from these accounts in the Bible.

My few years in the ministry have also made me very aware of loyal and disloyal people. I have noticed the impact that it has on churches and ministries. In the next few pages I will share with you a few reasons why the subject of loyalty is such an important one.

### **Reason #1**

## **LOYALTY IS THE PRINCIPAL QUALIFICATION FOR EVERY MINISTER**

An inexperienced person is likely to think that the more gifted you are, the more qualified you are for the ministry. My little experience has shown me that it is the faithful

and loyal people in church who are most qualified to be leaders.

### **Friendly and Flashy!**

An inexperienced person would think that a friendly brother would make a good pastor. He may also think that someone with good oratory skills would make the best preacher. Do not make that mistake. The Bible teaches us that the cardinal requirement for leadership is faithfulness and not anything else.

**...it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.**

**1 Corinthians 4:2**

I have many wonderful pastors who work with me. Many of them are not overly friendly, flashy or particularly gifted. But time has proven that they are the best gifts that God has given to His church and me.



## **Reason #2 TO FIGHT THE 5<sup>TH</sup> COLUMN**

Very early in my ministry I realized that the devil is an expert at destroying the church from within. If you are a good minister, called of God and doing the right things, the devil will have very little opportunity to fight against you from outside. Like Jesus said,

**...the prince of this world cometh, and hath  
nothing in me.**

**John 14:30**

You will realize that Satan often does not have the occasion to launch deadly attacks against you from outside. Jesus was saying that though the enemy was coming after him, he did not have any grounds to destroy him. There are many anointed preachers in this same category. Satan has no basis for which to overcome them so he has to use someone from within. In the case of Jesus it was a traitor (Judas) whom Satan used.

I recall reading the story of an army general who surrounded a large city with the aim of conquering it. This city was heavily fortified with a high and imposing wall and gate. The army general surrounded the city in readiness to attack.

One friend of the general came along and asked him, "Sir, how do you think you are going to overcome the defenses of this city? No one in recent history has been able to conquer this great city."

The army general smiled and said, “It’s my 5th column. I’m depending on them to do the trick.”

The general’s friend was very interested and asked, “What is this 5th column? I thought you only had four columns.”

The army general replied, “I do have a 5th column.”

“Oh, I see. Is it a special commando unit or are they airborne paratroopers?” the man asked.

### **I Will Fight From Within**

The general laughed, “No, it’s none of these. My 5th column consists of my spies, agents, friends and supporters who are already *within* the city. You just wait. They will open those big gates from within and my armies will rush in.”

This is the only way the enemy can destroy a successful and powerful ministry that is doing all the right things. It has to come from within. The 5th column comprises the disloyal, double-faced, double-tongued and discontented people within every ministry. If these people are allowed to wreck havoc as they so very well can, they will destroy the church.

## **I Had a Disloyal Associate**

I remember years ago when I started out in the ministry, I experienced the effect of having a disloyal associate. This person although officially standing on my right hand side, did not believe in me and was murmuring against me all the time.

His home was the meeting place for all the discontented people in the church. Every time they gathered, they would discuss and criticize me. At times, they would talk about the way I preached. At other times, it was the way I sipped water in the middle of my sermons. Yet again, some felt I was not friendly enough. But the Lord revealed all these things to me. I prayed about it and asked the Lord what to do.

God told me, “Get rid of that guy.”

I said, “Lord, do you mean he must leave the church?”

And the Lord said, “I mean exactly that! Dismiss him otherwise you will never have peace and your church will never grow.”

So I called for a meeting of the elders of the church. At the meeting I said, “I realize that Brother X is not in support of me. He’s constantly full of bitter criticisms.”

I said to Brother X, “I know that you do not believe in my leadership anymore. I trained you. I brought you up. And today you are too big to remain under my authority.”

I asked, “What do you think we should do?”

Then the brother said, “Let’s work things out.”

But the scripture that the Lord had shown me came floating up to my mind.

*Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out;  
yea, strife and reproach shall cease.*

*Proverbs 22:10*

I spoke up, pointed to my assistant and said, “You know as well as I do that it’s not going to work. You don’t believe in me anymore.”

I went on, “From today, I have relieved you of all your duties in this church.”

He sputtered, “What!” Then he said, “I will continue coming to church even though I may not have certain responsibilities.”

## **You Must Leave This Church Now!**

But I said to him, “No! You must leave! You are not part of us. Your presence in the church will only be destructive.”

I tell you, it was no easy thing to dismiss a friend and associate of many years. But it had to be done. The Bible tells us that when Abraham was in FOV 11:00 conflict with Lot he directed Lot to go somewhere else! Abraham was saying, “If we are apart there will be peace and the work of God can go on.”

A disloyal person breeds strife, hatred and murmuring. These disloyal sentiments are like smoke that fills an entire house. The only way to get rid of the smoke is to get

rid of the fire.

If we want to have a large church, we need to minister with love and with oneness. If we cannot be one, let's stop pretending. You see, I encourage people to walk out of my church if their hearts are not with me.

*He that is not with me is against me...*

*Matthew 12:30*

I will beg you to leave, if I have to. I am serious about this. I will even give you money to pay for your transportation and snacks as you leave us! So that those of us who love one another and are confident about each other can stay together and continue working.

## **Get Rid of Pretenders**

I don't know how to pretend. I simply don't know how to do it. But there are many pretenders\* in the church. They pretend to love you and support you but in their hearts they despise you.

## **Reason #3 FOR THE LOVE OF GOD TO FILL THE CHURCH**

The ministry is supposed to operate with the power of love, unity and teamwork.

*By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if*

*ye have love one to another.*

*John 13:35*

To minister as effective leaders you need to exhibit the love that Jesus spoke about. People are attracted by love. When they see leaders who flow together in genuine love they are attracted. You must never forget that your church members are not blind. Neither are they deaf. They can see and feel disunity and discord when it is there.

### **Sheep Only Drink From *Still* Waters**

One thing that every pastor must know about sheep is that they drink from still waters. If the water is murky and rough the sheep will stay away. You see, they are not sure there is no crocodile in the water!

**...he leadeth me beside the still waters.**

**Psalm 23:2**

Whenever there is treachery and distrust your church members become scared and wary and stay away.

### **Reason #4 TO HAVE A LARGE & SUCCESSFUL MINIS- TERIAL TEAM**

One man can only do so much. One pastor can only be at one place at a time. He can only minister until his strength

(which is limited) is exhausted.

Because of this, anyone who wants to extend his ministry and bear much fruit has to learn to work with many other people. These people are the team that I'm talking about. **However, it would be better to work alone than with a team of disloyal, disgruntled, disunited and disaffected people.** In fact, it is not possible to have an effective team with such people. I believe I have only been able to do as much as I have done because of the team with whom I work.

## **Reason #5 TO HAVE A MEGA CHURCH**

As I am writing, there are Lighthouse churches all over the world – Ghana, South Africa, New York and Switzerland to mention a few. These churches are part of a network that is loyal to the headquarters of the church in Ghana. People often ask me, “How do you sustain churches in all these different locations? What sort of controls do you have?”

You see, much of the system depends on loyalty. The churches are pastored by ministers who are loyal to the Lord, to me and to the Lighthouse vision.

**Without loyalty every network or denomination of churches constantly undergoes disintegration.** They frequently divide into splinter groups and smaller sub-churches.

## **Their Church Disintegrated**

I remember the story of a branch church that disintegrated because of disunity. Some longstanding seeds of disloyalty manifested shortly after a fundraising event in the local church. As a result of this disagreement, the pastor decided to resign and start his own church. He was so angry that he returned all the monies he had raised. The church members of course were very surprised that the money they had given to the church was being returned. This pastor spread many bad stories about his denomination and its senior ministers. Naturally, this church virtually disintegrated following the pastor's actions.

Dear friend, I can give you story after story of why churches (especially branch churches in big cities) constantly divide and break off. What I can say for sure is that **without principled and loyal pastors, the ministry of our Lord will always be limited.**

## **Reason #6 TO HAVE A LONG LASTING MINISTRY**

One person has only a few years of practical and effective ministry. Jesus only ministered for three and a half years but he extended his ministry and his influence through an effective and loyal team. Notice that Jesus' ministry has branched out into the whole world and has spanned almost two thousand years.

If I die now, the Lighthouse Chapel is going to live on!



It does not depend on me. I have not built a church around my personality. The church will continue. None of us is indispensable. God can do without us. That is why we need to build a team of loyal successors.

## **Reason #7**

### **IN ORDER TO REAP OUR FULL REWARD**

Those who benefit from the blessings of success are the faithful and loyal ones. One day we all hope to hear those famous words: *Well done, good and faithful servant*. Those who stick with you through difficult times are different from those who come in when everything is working well.

### **Well Done!**

Jesus himself told his twelve disciples that they would be treated differently from any other famous minister. They would have a special kingdom and their names would even be written on the foundations of the New Jerusalem.

*And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles...*

*Revelation 21:14*

Even the great men of God we know today, will not qualify for this special reward. Jesus gave a reason for this special reward – they had been loyal to him through the most difficult part of his ministry.

*Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations... I appoint unto you a kingdom...*

*Luke 22:28,29*

**You see, loyalty is most appreciated in hard times. In the good times everybody seems loyal.**

### **A Few Have Stood**

I appreciate very much the pastors who have stood with me throughout my ministry. They have watched me rise and supported me, even in my mistakes. To me they are different from others. Like Jesus said, they have a special reward!

## *Chapter Two*

# *Stages of Disloyalty*

### **Becoming Disloyal is a Process**

Disloyalty doesn't just happen overnight. Becoming disloyal is a process! Most people are unaware of the fact that they are becoming disloyal. Many leaders do not even notice disloyalty in their associates. In this chapter, I am going to outline the stages a person goes through when he is gradually changing into a rebel.

### **Learn to Detect Disloyalty**

There are two reasons why you must know these stages of disloyalty. First of all, it will help you to identify and kill any such tendency within you. **Secondly, it will help you to detect disloyalty in any person you work with.** This applies to the ministry and even to businesses, especially smaller companies.

The Lord has shown me eight important stages that a person goes through when he is becoming disloyal. The

first stage is when he develops what I call an independent spirit.

## **1<sup>st</sup> Stage**

### **THE INDEPENDENT SPIRIT**

The independent stage is so subtle that most people do not recognize it for what it actually is – disloyalty. When a person belonging to a group, ministry or company develops an independent attitude, he sort of becomes autonomous within the set-up. The rules of the organization no longer control him. Such a person is still a part of the church but does what he wants to do, in spite of contrary instructions.

For instance, the pastor may say, “We are all fasting on Friday.” But the person with an independent spirit would think, “I’ve already decided to fast on Wednesday. So that’s what I’ll do.”

## Watch Out for the Independent Ones

Pastors, watch out for deacons and leaders who have independent spirits. You may call for several meetings, but a person with an independent spirit decides to attend only those he feels are important. Such a person obeys only *certain* instructions – the ones *he* thinks are really important.

Because Ghana is independent of the USA, whenever there is an American holiday it has no bearing on Ghana. Ghana and America are two countries in the same world, but independent of each other. When Ghana declares a holiday, America takes no notice of it because America is independent of Ghana.

If you are unfortunate enough to have choristers who have independent spirits you may experience something like this. You would declare prayer meetings, rehearsals, and outreaches, but an independent chorister would decide, “I think I’ll just attend the rehearsal.” Once again this individual is doing exactly what *she* thinks should be done.

There is nothing wrong with being independent. I believe in independence and we thank God for independent people. **However, if you are a part of a denomination, group or company you are not independent.**

When you begin to exhibit a spirit of independence within an organization, be it known unto you that you are becoming disloyal.

## I Had an Independent Spirit

Many years ago, I belonged to a group that had branches all over the country. I even founded a branch of this group. But as time went on I began to have difficulties with the headquarters of this group.

At that time I thought to myself that my superiors at the headquarters were out of step spiritually. You see, the group I was leading was growing. Many souls were being established every week.

The overall directors of the organization would call for meetings at the headquarters. They wanted the whole group to come into town for these meetings. But I never went for any such meeting; neither did I encourage any of the members to attend.

I always said to myself, “Those meetings are not important. What I am doing on campus is important. I am winning souls.”

## I Was Wrong

But I was wrong. I had an independent spirit and didn’t even know it. The overseers found me to be a successful leader in my little branch. But they could not control me within the organization. At that time, I just attributed the conflict to lack of vision on the part of my overseers.

The point I’m making here is; **if you belong to an organization, you are not independent of that organization. Therefore, you cannot just do what you think is right.** You must comply with directives that are coming from the head. If you feel you want to be independent than you should resign.

## Pastor Joab – The Independent Killer

Were there independent people in the Bible? The answer is yes. Throughout the Second Book of Samuel, Joab is noted as someone who did what *he* wanted to do. He was part of David's army. He was part of David's ministry team, if you like. He was one of David's managers! You could say he was the Prime Minister or David's right-hand-man. He was so powerful, yet he had an independent spirit. This independent spirit manifested itself many times.

The first example of the independence of Joab was in the murder of Abner.

Abner was the commander-in-chief of another section of the armies of Israel. David as the head of government, decided to make peace with Abner after years of conflict.

The King even called for celebrations of this peace agreement by feasting with him.

*So Abner came to David... And David made... him a feast... and he went in peace.*

*2 Samuel 3:20,21*

But when Joab heard that this man had been entertained in the palace, he was furious. He chased him, caught up with him and requested to speak with him privately. But Joab tricked him and killed him.

*And... he [Joab] sent messengers after Abner, which brought him again... took him [Abner] aside... and smote him...*

*2 Samuel 3:26,27*

When the King opted for peace, his right-hand-man decided to do otherwise. Although he was supposed to submit to the wishes of the king, he went ahead with his own plan. People like this are dangerous. **Joab could have plunged an entire nation into war through his independent actions.**

There are people like that in church. The founder or Head pastor is often the vision carrier. He leads the way because he is the head.

All associate pastors and leaders in the church are supposed to flow with his vision. An independent 'Pastor Joab' will only bring confusion and strife to the church. Take note of such people in the church, because they are only a few stages away from open rebellion.

The second incident I want you to notice is in Joab's handling of Absalom's coup d'état.



## **Rev. Joab Moves Independently Again**

Absalom rebelled and actually ousted his father David from the throne. Absalom was now in power and David was faced with the bizarre circumstance of having to fight against his own son.

In the midst of these extraordinary circumstances, David specifically instructed that the army should not kill his son Absalom. He wanted to spare the life of his son.

*And the king commanded Joab... Deal gently for my sake with... Absalom...*

*2 Samuel 18:5*

Thankfully, the battle turned in the favor of King David and Absalom had to flee. A certain man reported that he had seen Absalom hanging by his hair on a tree. Joab immediately blurted out, “Why didn’t you kill him? I would have rewarded you handsomely.”

But the man said,

*...Though I should receive a thousand shekels of silver in mine hand, yet would I not put forth mine hand against the king’s son: for in our hearing the king charged thee... saying, Beware that none touch the young man Absalom.*

*2 Samuel 18:12*

This unnamed person was part of King David’s set-up and was obviously loyal to him. But here comes a man with an independent spirit and look at what he did.

## **Independent People Do What They Want To Do**

*...And he [Joab] took three darts... and thrust them through the heart of Absalom...*

*2 Samuel 18:14*

Independent people do what they want to do in spite of the instructions that are emanating from above.

### **Ironically, Independent People Don't Leave**

Notice that Joab never really left David's camp. Such people have not decided to leave. They will stay around but will do what they want to do! That is the independent spirit and it is a degree of disloyalty.

I always notice independent people within the congregation. Some of them are leadership material but because they are independent of me and of my vision, I cannot work with them.

## He Was Spiritual, But Independent

I once asked an independent church member, in whom I saw leadership potential, to join our Bible school. Quite characteristic of an independent person, he said, “I have been in the church since it began many years ago. I have heard all of your messages.”

He went on, “Pastor, what else am I going to learn in this Bible school?” That was the end of the matter. He didn’t attend.

At another time, I asked him to become a fellowship (cell) leader within the church. He told me, “Pastor, I am already conducting a fellowship in my home.”

I asked, “Who are the members of this fellowship? Are they members of our church? Do you consider this to be a church group?”

“Oh no!” he answered. “They are my personal converts.”

This brother could not be a cell leader within the church because he was building his own private cell group. He had no intention of defecting from the church. **He was within the church but independent of everything going on around him.**

## Branch Pastor Joab Threatens a Take-over

The next example of Joab’s independence was when he fought against the royal city of Rabbah on behalf of King David. When victory was in sight he sent a warning message, “You better come and participate in the war other

wise I will get all the credit.”

*Now therefore gather the rest of the people together,  
and encamp against the city, and take it...*

*2 Samuel 12:28*

He wanted David to be there himself! What he was saying in other words was, I’m no fool to do all the hard work only for you to take the glory. As is said in Ghana, “*monkey dey work, baboon dey chop*”. (In other words, the monkey does all the hard work whilst the baboon benefits from the reward.)

### **Pastor Threatens to Change Church’s Name**

Joab went on to threaten that if the king did not get involved as he was suggesting, the city could be named after him instead of David.

*...lest I take the city, and it be called after my [Joab] name.*

*2 Samuel 12:28*

How can you send such a message: “Come quickly otherwise I will change the name of the church”? Such a pastor can take over a branch church and rename it. Such a person can convert a cell group into his personal church. This is the reason why some pastors don’t believe in cells or branches. They fear that they will have Joabs as leaders.

The last example of Joab’s independent spirit comes at the end of the king’s life. David made it very clear that he wanted Solomon to be the next king.

## Independent Pastor Helps the Opposition

There was another son named Adonijah who wanted to be king in the stead of Solomon. To do this he needed the help of some perfidious characters. Once again Joab, who knew David's wishes went contrary to it and helped Adonijah.

*Then Adonijah... exalted himself, saying, I will be king... And he [Adonijah] conferred with Joab ...[who] helped him.*

*1 Kings 1:5,7*

### 2<sup>nd</sup> Stage OFFENCE

The second stage of disloyalty is offence. Jesus said,

*And then shall many be OFFENDED, and SHALL BETRAY one another, and SHALL HATE one another.*

*Matthew 24:10*

From this scripture you can see that people begin to betray and hate one another when they are offended. The Bible says folks will betray you when they are offended. **I have always been wary of wounded people because I know that they can turn against me. The spirit of offence opens the door to the spirit of treachery.**

### Is Anyone Hurt?

Dear leader, look around you and observe those who

have been wounded by one event or another. If these people have not genuinely overcome their hurts, hear the voice of the Spirit today. They are potential separatists, and they can easily become your enemies.

I believe that Absalom was grievously hurt by two important events. First of all, his half-brother's rape of his sister. He probably decided to kill his brother from the very day it happened.

Secondly, his father King David did not take the appropriate action against Amnon for raping Tamar. The Bible says King David was very angry with Amnon. However, he was under obligation to do more than just being angry. If he had done his duty, he would have fulfilled the Law of Moses.

*And if a man shall take his sister, his father's daughter... and see her nakedness... [he] shall be cut off...*

*Leviticus 20:17*

The penalty for incest in those days was death. But David failed to implement it. Never forget this, hurts and offences usher people down the road of disloyalty.

### **3<sup>rd</sup> Stage** **PASSIVITY**

After being offended by one thing or the other, people become passive.

When a person is in the passive stage of the disloyalty

process he does not involve himself in much. He sits and watches unconcerned and uninvolved. Pastors, look out for people in the congregation who are indifferent and unconcerned. They are potential deserters of the ship.

## **Watch Out for the Uninvolved Members**

For instance, I consider members to be passive if they don't get involved in prayer meetings or smaller group activities.

If all businessmen were called for a meeting, he is not likely to attend, even though he is a businessman. Such people may have been hurt in the recent past. They say things like, "I don't want any more trouble in this church. Let me just keep to myself."

*Cursed be he that doeth the work of the Lord deceitfully, and cursed be he that KEEPETH BACK his sword from blood.*

*Jeremiah 48:10*

You can see from the above scripture that God expects you to get involved when you have something to contribute. This verse is actually teaching us that it is a *curse* to be uninvolved when you have something to pitch in.

Passivity is dangerous because you move rapidly into the critical stage of disloyalty. **In order to become critical you must be uninvolved. You must have enough time to scrutinize and despise the church and its leaders.** Don't you know that an uninvolved person more readily sees the faults around him?

As they say, it is the bystander who sees that the worker

is digging a crooked trench. All leaders must learn to look for this important sign of passivity among their workers. The uninterested leader is uninvolved for a reason.



## Why Was He So Quiet?

Remember the story of Absalom who went through this stage of passivity. Amnon had raped and disgraced Absalom's sister, Tamar. Absalom was doubtlessly angry with his half-brother but said nothing for two whole years. That is passivity! Doing nothing and saying nothing! I do not overlook silent and detached people who have nothing to say or contribute.

*And Absalom spake unto his brother Amnon neither good nor bad...*

*2 Samuel 13:22*

But notice again that this indifferent person (Absalom) quickly degenerated into a murderer and tergiversator when the opportunity presented itself.

*...Absalom had commanded his servants... when Amnon's heart is merry with wine... then kill him...*

*2 Samuel 13:28*

## Are You Happy?

When I talk about being quiet, I am not talking about someone who has a naturally subdued personality. I am talking about someone who is normally outgoing but is consciously subdued and detached.

One of the common questions I ask those around me is, "Are you happy?" I want everybody around me to be happy. I am concerned when someone is unusually calm and cool. Every good leader must ensure that those around

him are secure and content. **If King David had noticed Absalom's nonchalant attitude, he might have been able to prevent his son from becoming a full-fledged anarchist.**

## **4<sup>th</sup> Stage**

### **THE CRITICAL STAGE**

A disloyal person is not *passive* forever; he progresses into the next step of being *critical*. This is the stage of noticing and magnifying faults. In church, he finds faults with the preaching of the Word and with the order of service. He analyses the building and notices all the deficiencies of the surroundings.

Miriam had become critical of Moses. She had followed his leadership all the way out of Egypt, but now she began to see his faults and humanness. And she spoke about his marital problems.

*And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses...*

*Numbers 12:1*

I remember early in the ministry, a spirit of disloyalty entered my church. Many of the church members became very critical of me. With eagle eyes they watched out for my faults. Poor me!

### **I Was Frightened By My Church Members**

I was a young pastor with no theological training. Here I was, being subjected to the critical scrutiny of these people.

“Is he really called?” they asked.

“Can a medical student be a pastor?”

I could virtually hear them saying, **“We know you don’t have much to say. Just summarize your message and let’s close the service.”**

## **I Dreaded Saturday Evenings**

I would become so nervous on Saturdays that I would have diarrhea from Saturday night to Sunday morning. Once I asked my beloved (fiancée), “Is this the dread I will have to go through every Saturday night?”

I will never forget standing before the congregation, on one particular Sunday morning. I lifted my eyes from my Bible after praying, and saw the angry and hypercritical eyes of my assistant and a host of others. I knew within me that they would never find anything good in what I was going to preach. This critical atmosphere almost broke up my fledgling church.

Naturally, a hypercritical atmosphere does not help anyone to preach well. Some may ask why I teach so much on the subject of loyalty. This is because I have experienced the devastating impact disloyalty can have on the ministry.

## **Point of View or Viewpoint?**

Someone once told me, *your point of view depends on your viewpoint*. The value of a thing varies depending on the glasses through which you look at it. **If you look at something with critical eyes, you will only see the imperfections.** However, if you look at it with an eye of love you will see something good and hope for the future.

Absalom also had begun to find faults with the king's style of leadership. He was so engrossed with the deficiencies of David's ministry. He could see no good anywhere. This only led to another stage of disloyalty – *deception*.

*And Absalom said unto him, See, thy matters are good and right; but there is no man deputed of the king to hear thee.*

*2 Samuel 15:3*

## 5<sup>TH</sup> Stage

### THE POLITICAL STAGE

When a person becomes political, he tries to involve others in his ideas and philosophies. Politicians operate on the power of people's opinions. Many politicians cannot tell the truth because they want to please people. What people think and say is what concerns them most.

When a person is becoming disloyal he tries to involve other people in his treacherous ideas. **He wants to gather a following and make people believe that he has identified a real problem that must be addressed.** This is exactly what Absalom did.

Absalom was hurt (offence stage), then he said nothing for two years (passive stage). He then became unduly analytical of David's policies (critical stage). Now he began to involve other people in his disloyal thoughts.

*And Absalom said unto him, See, thy matters are good and right; but there is no man deputed of the king to hear thee.*

*2 Samuel 15:3*

The Bible tells us that Absalom sat at the gate of the city. When anyone came to see the king, he would ask if they had any problem. He would then listen carefully and sympathize with them.

He explained to the people, "It is a pity that the king has no time for you today."

He lamented, "Unfortunately, he has not even bothered

to delegate someone to attend to your problems.”

## Let's Pray For Our Pastor

Absalom went on, “Let’s pray for our dear king. He’s getting older and is probably finding it difficult to cope with the job.” This is the mistake that some associate pastors make. Because of their work schedule they may have more opportunity to interact with the people. The congregation begins to feel that the associate is more accessible and friendlier than the senior pastor (the king) is. The mistaken associate will allude that the senior pastor (the king) is incompetent and really just a figurehead.

The people of Israel were so impressed with the king’s son for two reasons. Number one, he was so handsome and physically attractive. Two, he seemed to genuinely care for them. After impressing them for a while, Absalom won the hearts of the people.

*...so Absalom stole the hearts of the men of Israel.*

*2 Samuel 15:6*

When someone becomes political he wants to involve others in his train of thought. You see, the more people that you can involve in something controversial, the more confidence you will gain. **Disloyal people have an insidious way of discussing the shortcomings of their leaders.**

They ask questions like, “How did you find the service today? I thought it was a bit dry.”

They even come up with scriptures. “As a Bible based

church, don't you think we should have some miracles?"

"Do you think our pastor is as anointed as he was last year?"

"Have you noticed that a lot of people are leaving the church?"

"I think that our pastor travels a bit too much. Don't you?"

These questions are used as bait for unsuspecting Christians. They drag innocent members into analysis of issues that are "above" them.

*...neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in things too high for me.*

*Psalms 131:1*

Gradually they are able to spread their dissenting feelings to a group of gullible Christians.

### **Many People Are Saying...**

The next thing is that they approach you with reports of discontent within the congregation. From experience I have come to learn that when a person is in the political stage of disloyalty, he has three favorite phrases:

- A lot of people are saying "so-and-so".
- Everybody is saying "so-and-so".
- Many people are saying "so-and-so".

They say, "A lot of people are saying, 'You travel too

much.' Everybody is saying that the church building project has taken too long to complete."

They explain, "I am speaking on behalf of many who are not happy in church."

### **His Home Was the Center of Discussion**

Some years ago, I had an associate just like that! He seemed friendlier than I was and more accessible. People would take their problems to him. His home was the center for the discussion of the problems of the church. They discussed all of my shortcomings in his house. The church members became more and more discontent with my style of doing things.

"He preaches too long, don't you think?"

"He sips water while he preaches."

"He walks up and down too much."

With time, he began to tell me, "A lot of people are saying... Many people are saying..."

### **There Is Joy and Liberty When He Travels**

I recall one day I was at a retreat center for a time of fasting and prayer. I came across the associate pastor of a large church in my city. After exchanging social niceties, I asked, "How is your senior pastor?"

"Oh, he's around." He said.

I went on, "How is the church doing?"

He replied, "We have some problems, but we are watch-



ing. You know what; *when he travels everybody is happy.*”

Confused, I asked, “When *who* travels?”

He smiled and said, “The senior pastor.”

“Why is this so?” I queried.

He answered, “Because when he’s away there is liberty and joy, and the Holy Spirit flows. The fact is that, *a lot of people are not blessed anymore when he preaches.*” He emphasized, “Oh, *many people are not happy when he is here!* There is joy and liberty when he is away!”

As I listened to him, I concluded that this man was far down the road of disloyalty. And I was not wrong! Less than a year later he rebelled and broke away from his senior pastor with a section of the church.

## **Sack Him!**

When a person gets to this political stage of disloyalty he becomes dangerous to the unity and stability of the church. **Such an individual is a threat to the security of your leadership.** It is unsafe to maintain this “Absalom” personality within your ranks. In my opinion, you have more than enough grounds to get rid of him.

## **6<sup>th</sup> Stage DECEPTION**

One thing that I am sure about is that people who rebel are grossly deceived. If they were not deceived they would not do some of the things they did. Most people who have

rebelled have ended up in destruction. And I know that no one intends to destroy his life.

I want to take you through some of the common deceptions that ministers encounter as they progress along the road of disloyalty. You must realize though, that every minister is tempted with these thoughts.

**Many rebellious people are deceived into thinking they are greater than their seniors.** Sometimes a son in the ministry can rise up to do greater things than his father. Jesus did not seem to be worried about the fact that some of His disciples would do more miracles. He actually predicted that His trainees would do greater things than He had done and He was happy about it.

*...the works that I do shall he do also; and GREATER WORKS THAN THESE SHALL HE DO...*

*John 14:12*

History has proved this to be true. Today, evangelists minister to larger crowds than Jesus ever did. Ministers have larger Bible schools than Jesus did (Jesus had only twelve students in his Bible school). Jesus never traveled more than two hundred miles from the place where He was born. I have traveled thousands of miles from the place where I was born. Jesus never wrote a book but you are reading one of my books. Jesus never had an office for His ministry. But most churches do. Jesus never went to the university, but I did for seven years.

Jesus raised only two people from the dead, but someone like Smith Wigglesworth is said to have raised twenty-one people from the dead. At the end of His life, Jesus

was ruthlessly murdered by His enemies and condemned amongst thieves. Most pastors would be given an honorable exit from this world. But Jesus didn't have that!

While He was dying, the soldiers gambled for one of the few things He had on earth – His coat. However, most ministers now own more property on this earth than Jesus did.

These facts do not make any of us greater than Christ. Christ is still Christ the King. And you and I are still mortal non-entities. Without Him we are nothing. Do not be deceived by your recent promotion in the ministry. You are still you.

Jesus said,

*...The servant is not greater than his lord; neither  
HE THAT IS SENT greater than HE THAT SENT  
HIM.*

*John 13:16*

It is unfortunate that when we make little gains in the ministry, we begin to think that we are greater than anyone who has been before us.

## **Don't Despise Your Teacher**

Ministers despise their teachers just because they have acquired a little following and a new car. One of the oaths I had to make as a new doctor was to respect my teachers. You must remember that you have been helped by somebody to get to where you are. You must never forget that, in a certain sense, you have been set where you are by or through someone else.

Lucifer was appointed by God, but it seems he forgot the all-important fact.

*Thou art the anointed cherub... and I HAVE SET THEE SO...*

*Ezekiel 28:14*

Lucifer forgot that his perfection, wisdom and beauty had come from somewhere. It was actually created. You learnt what you know from somewhere. Eighty per cent of what we preach and teach is learned. Lucifer was a created being. He did not create himself.

*...Thou... full of wisdom... perfect in beauty... WAST CREATED.*

*Ezekiel 28:12,13*

Some people have a little vision and go off into the deep end. Some pastors have a few miracles in their churches and from that time they respect no one. They lay hands on one or two people who fall under the power of the Spirit and their hearts are corrupted because of their success in the ministry. Many sing their praises and young ladies approach them with admiring eyes.

### **Deceived By His Recent Success**

*Thine heart was lifted up BECAUSE OF THY BEAUTY...*

*Ezekiel 28:17*

Many Ghanaian pastors become rebellious when they are sent outside their country to pastor churches in rich

European and American cities. They walk up and down in the midst of the “stones of fire” and it goes to their heads.

I remember one minister who had been in training for some years. He was sent to pastor a branch church for the first time in his ministry. After six months he returned completely transformed into a rebel.

### **He Said, “Give Me Six Months”**

No one could control or counsel him. He had cutting rebukes for his seniors, pointing out to them that they were not always right.

This person had become deceived into believing he was as gifted as anyone else was. In the end, he resigned, bitterly denouncing and deriding his superiors in the ministry. Out of contempt, he called his former church a cult. He even went as far as calling his father-in-the-Lord (the one who led him to Christ) a fool, for associating with the church he was leaving.

To emphasize the “I’m as good as you are” attitude, he started a church a few meters away from his home church. And began to invite members from his previous denomination to join him.

That was not all. This refractory anarchist vowed to prove his ministerial gift to all and sundry within six months of his defection. However, years after this defiant separatist revolted, he has simply disappeared into obscurity.

This obstinate insurgent thought that within six months he could achieve things that take many years of experience to attain.

I believe that avoidance of deception was one of the

reasons why Jesus instituted the Lord's Supper. It is to remind everyone that no matter what you achieve or attain you are not Christ! We need to remember our origins. We need to remember how we became what we are today. Jesus said,

*...this do in remembrance of me.*

*Luke 22:19*

Many rebellious people are deceived because they are gifted and anointed. Absalom was very gifted but wanted to be the king. Many insurrectionists think that they have acquired all the knowledge they will ever need.

### **The Mother of All Deception**

The mother of all deception is when the mutineer thinks that he can destroy his teacher and father. He thinks he has enough clout to obliterate those who have been a blessing to him. **The spirit of rebellion does not only lead assistant pastors to defect but also inspires them to fight against the authorities that have been set over them.**

Absalom fought against his own father and failed. Judas tried to destroy Jesus his teacher and Lord but that is the mother of all deception. You cannot destroy the Lord through your uprising. Lucifer thought he could dethrone God, but that was also not possible. What folly! What unthinkable madness!

### **He Threatened to Destroy His Own Father**

Some years ago, I sat at home fellowshiping with a Nigerian minister. This pastor friend of mine is the over-

seer of several large churches scattered all over Nigeria. As we chatted, I realized he had had experiences similar to mine. He spoke of one mutinous pastor who had grown up in his house as a sort of servant.

## **I Will Publish a Book About You**

This young man had graduated into becoming the pastor of one of his largest branch churches. My friend told me that this pastor had become anarchistic and had decided to fight against him. I was struck by one of the comments that he made.

He told me, “This young man rebelled, broke away and began to say all sorts of malicious things about me.”

His own son in the ministry said, “I will publish a book of seditious material that will bring you down.”

## **I Will Run You Out of This Town**

How interesting, I thought. I remembered a similar threat that I had received from a rebel pastor. This person had said that he was going to run me out of my own city.

You see, this is the mother of all deception. This is the spirit of *Absalom* that *fights against* your own father. The spirit of *Lucifer*, is the spirit that tries to *replace and take over* rightful authority. The spirit of *Judas*, is the treacherous spirit that *betrays and turns against* its own teacher.

I want you to learn right here, that all of these things are impossible. You cannot replace God. And you cannot succeed in fighting your own father. God will not help you

and in fact, He will fight against you. All of nature, including the wild ravens and eagles of the air will fight against you. The Bible says,

*The eye that mocketh at his father... the ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it.*

*Proverbs 30:17*

## **7<sup>th</sup> Stage**

### **OPEN REBELLION**

This is the stage where deceived insurrectionists fight openly against authority. This open fight comes about because of the confidence the rebel develops over the months and years. He gains psychological support by gaining the support of some of the people he talked to. Remember that Lucifer gained the support of over a third of the angels. He has had time to analyze the merits and demerits of the person against whom he is rebelling. Then suddenly, he exposes himself to be what he is at heart.

#### **1. Lucifer did this.**

*And there was war in heaven ...and the dragon [**the devil**] fought...*

*Revelation 12:7*

#### **2. Absalom fought against his father.**

*And David said... Behold, my son (Absalom), which*



*came forth of my bowels, seeketh my life...*

*2 Samuel 16:11*

**3. Absalom tried to become his father in all aspects, including in the bedroom.**

*...And Absalom went in unto his father's concubines in the sight of all Israel.*

*2 Samuel 16:22*

**4. Judas betrayed and fought against his Lord and master.**

*Judas... came, and with him a great multitude with SWORDS... Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: HOLD HIM FAST.*

*Matthew 26:47,48*

Judas had told them to get a good hold of Christ and not let Him go. This is the open fight against your master, teacher or your father. It is what I call the open rebellion stage of disloyalty. This leads us into the last and final stage of this drama. What I call the execution stage.

## **8<sup>th</sup> Stage**

### **EXECUTION**

The end of all rebels is one and the same – execution. Rebellion is an essentially evil thing. The Bible teaches us that rebellion is as witchcraft.

*For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft...*

*1 Samuel 15:23*

The Biblical punishment for witchcraft is execution.

*Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.*

*Exodus 22:18*

God does not support rebellion in any form or fashion. Do not involve yourself in any kind of rebellion. The people who get involved in revolts are often simpleminded. Many of them do not know what is afoot.

*And with Absalom went two hundred men out of Jerusalem, that were called; and THEY WENT IN THEIR SIMPLICITY, AND THEY KNEW NOT ANY THING.*

*2 Samuel 15:11*

Many people run into rebellion because of their innocence and ignorance. If Absalom's followers had known exactly what they were doing, I believe they would not have followed him.

The fruit of rebellion throughout the Bible is very clear

– execution. God will divinely displace and replace you with someone else. Your seat will be taken by another who is worthier than you. You will be banished into obscurity and oblivion. There will be a curse on you and your family. Just study the following list of executions:

## **LUCIFER**

*And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.*

*Revelation 12:9*

## **ABSALOM**

*And ten young men... compassed about and smote Absalom, and slew him.*

*2 Samuel 18:15*

## **AHITHOPHEL**

*...Ahithophel... hanged himself, and died...*

*2 Samuel 17:23*

## **SHEMEI**

*So the king commanded Benaiah... which went out, and fell upon him (Shemei), that he died.*

*1 Kings 2:46*

## **ADONIJAH**

*And king Solomon sent by the hand of Benaiah the son of Jehoiada; and he fell upon him (Adonijah) that he died.*

*1 Kings 2:25*

## **JUDAS**

*And he (Judas)... went and hanged himself.*

**Matthew 27:5**

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***A Culture of Allegiance***

A culture can simply be defined as “the way we think and the way we do things around here”. The culture of a church is a very powerful force. A church can either have a culture of loyalty or disloyalty. In visiting different churches, I have noticed a prevailing climate of loyalty or treachery.

I remember once when I was in South Africa to minister, I interacted with several assistant pastors and leaders. Throughout my interactions, I noticed a certain reverence and genuine love that all the associates seemed to have for their senior pastor. Never once was there any sarcastic remark from anyone. They seemed to sincerely love and respect their pastor.

### ***That Church Had a Culture of Disloyalty***

I recall also being in another church where the contrast was unmistakable. I found assistant pastors who did not hesitate to make sarcastic comments about their head pastor behind his back. They seemed to think that they were

gaining my sympathy by applauding different aspects about my church while maintaining an unfavorable picture of their own church.

I remember one of the pastors said, “Oh, I like your church building. It’s simple and practical.”

And he continued, “You know our ‘man’ (he was referring to his senior pastor). We have been doing this expensive project for many years and we are getting nowhere.”

I just looked on in amazement! You see by this comment this pastor had ridiculed his pastor and his pastor’s management in front of me, an outsider.

I remember another time, when I was officiating a wedding of a church member. The bride was from my church and the bridegroom was from this other church. I had asked my associate to perform the nuptial ceremony so that I would preach.

### **He Said, “I Like Your Style”**

After the service, this pastor who belonged to the bridegroom’s church approached me and said, “I am very happy to meet you. I like your style.”

He added, “I’m glad to meet a Bishop who allows his associates to participate in the ceremony. You know, at our place things are different. Our man the Bishop, would not have allowed anybody else to play a prominent role.”

I listened quietly. I thought to myself, “This man thinks he’s praising me by making cynical remarks about his Bishop.”

## **But He Was a Rebel**

I said to myself, “This is a rebel in the making.” And sure enough a year later, this pastor rebelled against his Bishop.

I am talking about a culture of disloyalty. A culture can simply be defined as “the way we think and the way we do things around here”. A church’s culture is simply the set of unique customs and values that the members are accustomed to.

The culture of a church is a very powerful force. You may not be aware of it but it is real. You need to develop a good culture of faithfulness, fidelity and loyalty. Even in the business world, the culture of the company in question determines how well it does.

In my church, we have gradually developed what I call a *culture of loyalty*. It is unacceptable to speak negatively about any minister. I myself have no sardonic remarks to make about my friends and pastors behind their backs. If I have anything to say I will usually just say it.

## **People Notice Loyalty**

Lighthouse church members would regard you as a rebel if you began to speak in a certain way. One brother, coming from a less loyal church culture remarked, “Your church is airtight.” What he was trying to say was that he had found our culture impermeable to all forms of malicious talk. As a result, the undercurrents of murmuring and discontented people are not free to exist in our environment.

# KEYS TO THE CULTURE OF LOYALTY

## Key #1 THE NORTH WIND

*The north wind driveth away rain: so doth an angry countenance a backbiting tongue.*

*Proverbs 25:23*

The first key to developing a culture of loyalty may come as a surprise to many. It is what I call the *Key of the North Wind*. The Bible says that the north wind drives away the rain. A powerful rainstorm is driven away by a strong wind. In the same way, the power of malicious backbiting tongues can be neutralized by certain facial expressions.

### **Your Face is the North Wind**

Just show someone by your face that you are not interested in their conversation. According to the Bible, your disagreeable attitude is strong enough to deter unruly and rebellious elements. People will gradually get to know that disloyal people are not welcome there.

One day a certain young lady came to see one of my associate pastors. She mistakenly thought she was praising him when she said, “How approachable you are!

She went on, “If it wasn’t for you I would have left this church.”

My associate pastor told me, “As soon as she made that



remark I ‘squeezed’ my face.”

(In other words, this young lady was saying that I was not a nice enough pastor. And the only reason she could give for staying on as a member was the presence of my associate.)

However, the expression on the associate pastor’s face was enough to quench any further traitorous discussion. You see, the pastor could have thought that he was very anointed and that was why this church member was saying what she said. But that would have been a mistake.

Assistant pastors must not be deceived by temptations to be disloyal. The devil often uses ordinary people to bring about these temptations. The women in Israel sang, “Saul has killed his thousands, and David his tens of thousands.” **This was not true. David had just killed Goliath and not tens of thousands of Philistines.** Do not be deceived by empty words that come out of baby Christians.

## **The Friendly Assistant Pastor**

Often the assistant pastor seems friendlier than the head pastor. This is because the head may have certain duties that are for the benefit of the whole church. The assistant pastor may be delegated to handle the lesser needs of the church. The assistant pastor therefore seems more approachable and accessible.

Some associates can become deceived into thinking that the congregation prefers them to the senior minister. A

loyal assistant must learn to drive away any backbiting and criticism of the senior.

## **Her Face Frightened Me**

Many years ago I attended a meeting of a church group to which I belonged. At the close of the service the pastor decided to take a second offering. When he announced it, I immediately turned to the person sitting by me and murmured, "Why take a second offering? It's not necessary." **She said nothing but gave me a look I will never forget.**

Suddenly my heart smote me and I realized I had done something wrong. I felt so bad that I had complained, even though it was unknown to the pastor.

*...an angry countenance [drives away] a  
backbiting tongue.*

*Proverbs 25:23*

## **Key #2 CONSTANT PRUNING**

To have a culture of loyalty you must constantly prune out disloyal elements that find their way into our midst. I believe that no one should stay on in a church when he or she does not want to. I have discovered that if anyone indicates his desire to resign, it is best for such a person not to stay on but to leave immediately. This is because his heart has already left the church.

**Remove Disloyal People *Quickly***

I learnt this the hard way when I encouraged a rebellious pastor to stay on after he had indicated his

desire to leave. The extra months that he stayed on were not worth the trouble they yielded. Now, I have a different policy. If you indicate your desire to leave, you will have to go immediately. Even if you change your mind, it is too late. The reason for this is simple,

*...a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?*

*1 Corinthians 5:6*

One dissenting employee pollutes the others with his disgruntled attitude. After Judas resigned from Jesus' ministry, Jesus told him,

*...That thou doest, DO QUICKLY.*

*John 13:27*

One pastor of a large church described how many unhappy experiences he underwent because he retained a pastor who did not want to stay on. People who don't want to be with you must go; and they must leave as soon as possible. It's as simple as that.

Some pastors are so soft that they do not remove openly rebellious elements. I remember the testimony of a pastor who graduated from the Bible school of a church with a disloyal culture.

He said, "It was obvious that the Dean and lecturers of this Bible school had little confidence in their own church." "They could rarely find something positive to say about

their church.”

This pastor said something that I find amazing! He said, “Whenever there was need of an example to illustrate a negative point, they would choose their own church as the example.”

He went on, “Once when we were being lectured on administration and management, the lecturer said, ‘See, this church (and its pastor of course) is an example of a church with a poor administration and bad management.’”

What do you think the students would think of the senior pastor whenever he taught in the Bible school? Such people need to be weeded out of the system. Do not allow any leader to pollute your precious sheep.

### **Key #3 CREATE FIRE**

At times it is necessary to create conditions that expose disloyal elements within the team.

*...there came a viper out of the heat...*

*Acts 28:3*

When Paul landed on the island of Melita, the local folk kindly kindled a fire for him and his companions. Paul gathered some sticks and laid them on the fire.

### **The Stick Was a Snake**

Suddenly, a viper (which by the way is one of the most

dangerous species of snakes) came out of the fire and fastened itself to Paul's hand. One of the 'sticks' was a snake! The fire exposed it. Before being subjected to fire, some snakes can pose as ordinary sticks.

What fire am I talking about? The fire of *time* for instance is an example of something that exposes the snake-like nature of some people. **Difficult times and hardships also bring out the true nature of people.** Sometimes softening the path on which ministers travel does not help to test their hearts.

Jesus suffered in the ministry from wicked people all around him. We must also suffer. And suffering brings out the true nature in people.

### **Do Not Be Under Pressure to Promote People**

Do not be in a hurry to promote people. If they will rebel because they have not been promoted, they will rebel even if they are promoted. If you don't believe me, just try it out! I have come to see that rebellion is of the heart. If a person will cause trouble, no amount of money or attractive conditions of service will prevent it.

### **Transfer and See What Happens**

One of the fires that bring out snakes within a large denomination of churches is the "fire of transfer". Numerous pastors when subjected to the possibility of transfer rebel against the authority. Why should you rebel against your transfer? Did you obey the call of God on condition that you would live in a rich city? A person's reaction to

being transferred tells us a lot about his character.

## **Key #4**

### **WORK WITH WILLING PEOPLE ONLY**

Make sure you do not have unwilling (trapped) people around you. Constantly make a way for them to leave if they want to. One thing you should not have is someone who would like to leave but because of financial or other reasons feels trapped within your organization. The hearts of such people are not with you anymore. They can become traitors. **Make a way for such people to exit peacefully.**

There is nothing like working with a willing and happy person.

*For if there be first a WILLING mind...*

*2 Corinthians 8:12*

I have decided to assist the departure of any unwilling person who wants to leave. Because in helping them I will also be helping myself.

## **Key #5**

### **TEACH AGAINST DISLOYALTY**

Constant teaching on the subjects of loyalty and disloyalty are very important. Most people are ignorant of the evolvement of the disloyalty process. In other words, many

rebels are unaware of what they are doing. Constant education will prevent people from unknowingly involving themselves in traitorous activities.

Anyone who wants to build a large church must constantly teach on faithfulness and loyalty. No one is born with faithfulness and loyalty written all over. Every minister will have his due share of temptations to become disloyal. Your leaders will develop a culture of loyalty as you constantly teach about it.

## **Chapter Four**

# **Lessons on Loyalty**

### **Lesson #1**

#### **LOYALTY DEMANDS FULL PERSUASION**

You must be fully convinced in your heart about anything you are involved in. To be a committed member of a ministry team requires what I call *full persuasion*.

If you are going to be loyal to me, you will have to be sure about me. Am I somebody you can trust? Am I somebody who is what he claims to be? I once asked some pastors, “What will make people stop talking about me?”

One person gave the right answer. She said, “If you stop doing the work of the ministry, people will stop talking about you!” And that is very true.

### **Jesus Was Accused**

In **Luke 23:2**, Jesus was accused by many people of,  
**...misleading our people...**



Twentieth Century New Testament

**...teaching our people sedition...**

The Four Gospels (E.V. Rieu)

**...preventing them from paying taxes to the Emperor...**

Twentieth Century New Testament

**...telling them that it is wrong to pay taxes...**

New Testament in Modern English

**...claiming to be an anointed king...**

Emphasized New Testament

And in **Luke 11:15**, Jesus was accused of being able to cast out devils because he is,

**...in league with Beelzebub, the chief of the evil spirits...**

The New Testament in Modern English

## **Paul Was Accused**

In **Acts 24:5**, Paul was accused of being

**...a source of mischief...**

New Testament in Modern Speech

**...a veritable plague...**

Berkeley Version of the New Testament

**...a public pest...**

Twentieth Century New Testament

**...a disturber of the peace...**

Weymouth translation

**...one who stirs up disputes...**

Twentieth Century New Testament

**...a fomenter of discord...**

New English Bible

**...a ringleader of the sect...**

King James Version

In **Acts 24:6**, he was also accused of being someone who,

**...also attempted to desecrate even the temple...**

The Emphasized New Testament

**...was attempting to make the temple unclean...**

New Testament in Basic English

Anyone working with Paul would have to be fully persuaded about his character. Was he really the ringleader of a sect and the source of mischief? Did he ever attempt to desecrate the temple? I wouldn't like to work with someone

as evil as that. So, it is important to establish in your heart all the facts about the ministry or person with whom you're working. Be fully persuaded so that when the accusations, trials and testings come you will be able to remain faithful.

### **Can There Be Smoke Without Fire?**

There is a saying that there is no smoke without fire. In other words, there is some truth in every rumor. I would rather say – find out the real truth behind every rumor. Was there any truth in any of these terrible accusations? The answer is no.

You see, in the normal experience of ministry there will be numerous accusations, rumors and stories about every man of God.

## **All Pastors Will Be Accused**

I remember visiting a pastor who had been accused of committing adultery with some of his church members. A popular newspaper had published this scandalous story. I decided to visit that church on a Sunday morning to encourage him. That day, as I interacted with some of the other pastors and loyal members, I realized that there were probably questions in their minds. I knew immediately that they would have to be fully persuaded about their pastor.

You see, it was a matter of his word against his accuser's word. Who was telling the truth? The accuser or the pastor? If you decide to stay on, you must be prepared to confidently defend the integrity of the ministry.

*...I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded...*

*2 Timothy 1:12*

Do not stay on in a ministry if you have lots of questions in your mind. Answer the questions for yourself or leave.

## **OPENNESS BREEDS FULL PERSUASION** **Openness About Finances**

Let those who matter, know the source of everything you have. Do not be a mystery personality. Some pastors when asked, "How did you get this expensive car?" Respond by saying, "The Lord has provided."

We know that the Lord has provided, but how did He provide it and through whom?

Even if people fail to question you, be it known unto you, that they are asking those questions in their minds. Although I am under no obligation to do so, I try to explain the source of all my blessings to those with whom I work closely. I want them to be fully persuaded as to what I really am.

I don't believe in being a mystery person who nobody can fathom. **When people start accusing, it is those around you who must be able to answer confidently and correctly.**

## **Openness About Your Vision**

Let people understand what you are trying to achieve. Let them know why you are so zealous about your vision. This is one of the reasons why I teach by giving long lists of reasons why certain things should be done.

I once taught *Twenty Reasons Why You Should Be a Permanent Member of a Church*. I also remember teaching, *Fifty-four Reasons Why You Should Be a Soul Winner*. When you give someone fifty reasons for doing something, don't you think he would be fully persuaded?

## **They Thought He Was On Vacation**

I recall one pastor who was committing so many misdeeds that he had to be corrected and even suspended. To preserve this pastor's ministry, I kept the details very private and the congregation even thought his suspension was

a vacation.

However, when this rebellious person eventually defected from my ministry he went around spreading all sorts of stories about me. You see, he had to justify his unexpected defection. But nobody knew that this pastor was someone who was undergoing disciplinary measures because of his multiple wrongdoing.

## **I Was Now Under Fire!**

When all sorts of questions arose concerning this character, I had a hard time explaining to people. Ironically, *my* church members were now questioning my integrity. That was a great lesson to me! Sometimes it is good to explain certain issues as they develop. Openness about what is going on generates confidence, understanding, and the fullest assurance, especially in a crisis.

*He that is not with me is against me...*

*Matthew 12:30*

**You cannot be neutral in a crisis.** You must know about the issue and face the issue. You must know what you stand for and you must be prepared to die for it. I don't want to work with anyone who is "neutral". Either you believe in what is going on or you are against it.

Dear Christian friend, be fully persuaded that you are in a good church where God wants you to be. Be fully persuaded about the pastor-in-charge. Before you venture into full-time ministry, be fully persuaded about it. This is essential for the development of true loyalty.

## Lesson #2

# YOUR LOYALTY MUST BE TO THE HIGHER AUTHORITY

In a large organization like the church there will always be a number of different authorities you will have to submit to. Obviously, some of them will have a higher rank than others. The lesson here is – **if the question of loyalty arises, your loyalty must go to the higher authority.**

For example, the structure in our ministry consists of Fellowship Shepherds, Ministry Shepherds, Branch or Chapel Pastors and Senior Ministers.

If for instance, the Branch Pastor begins to say things that are contrary to the general vision of the church, your loyalty must go to the higher authority. If the most Senior Pastor begins to say and do things that are contrary to Christ, you are *not* supposed to follow him. Even Apostle Paul said,

*Follow my example, as I follow the example of Christ.*

*1 Corinthians 11:1 (NIV)*

In other words, Paul was saying, follow me only as long as I follow Christ. The day I stop following Christ is the day you must stop following me. Your loyalty in this case is to the higher authority that is Christ. I am convinced that many people do not understand this principle.

## Whom Must I Follow?

Many years ago, when Jim Jones led hundreds of people

to commit suicide, the whole world was stunned. Since then, people have tried to put many genuine pastors in the category of Jim Jones. Let me tell you how to distinguish a genuine minister of Christ from a heretic.

A genuine minister will always tell you, “Do not follow me if I am not following Christ.” Christ did not tell you to drink cyanide. If your pastor is telling you to drink cyanide, it must be wrong. I always tell church members that because I am a man, I can make mistakes. Therefore, follow me as I follow Christ.

### **The Pastor Stole the Church**

I remember one Charismatic denomination that had a large branch church in a city in Ghana. One day, the Branch Pastor had a conflict with the General Overseer of that denomination. Following the dispute, he decided to take control of the branch church and change its name. Would you believe this man painted over the original name of the church and put up a new signboard with a new name? He then announced to the church that the assembly was no longer a member of their former denomination. This defecting pastor stole the church building, church property, church instruments and even the pulpit.

However, many of the members knew that their loyalty was to the higher authority, which in this case was the General Overseer. They said, “We are not going to be a part of this rebellion. If you decide to rebel and steal a whole church, we will not follow you! Our loyalty is to our General Overseer.”

I am sad to tell you however, that many of the church



members followed this renegade minister. These things can only happen because people do not know the principles of loyalty.

### **Lesson #3**

## **A LOYAL PERSON DOES NOT WITHHOLD INFORMATION**

A loyal person is open to his senior about whatever is going on. I consider someone loyal if he tells me about any corruption that is taking place. If I find out that he knew all along, but said nothing, I will consider that he is disloyal.

There are several examples of people in the Bible not withholding information. Some of these led to great revelations and blessings.

Apostle Paul wrote to the Corinthians and said,

*It is REPORTED commonly that there is  
fornication among you...*

*1 Corinthians 5:1*

Notice that Paul did not have a word of knowledge about the extent of immorality going on in the church. Someone reported it to him. **A good and loyal structure works by faithful people who inform the top about anything that is out of order.** We would not have had all the teachings of 1 Corinthians 5 if someone had not reported about this act of sin.

Observe how another family reported to Paul about some happenings in the church. This report did not even come from the pastor, but from an ordinary church member called Chloe.

*For it hath been DECLARED unto me of...the house  
of Chloe, that there are contentions...*

*1 Corinthians 1:11*

Such reporting leads to the edifying of the church. There is a difference between godly reporting to the appropriate authorities and slanderous gossip.

### **The Pastor's Fiancée Had Another Boyfriend**

I remember a minister who proposed to marry a young lady and began courting her. Unknown to him, this girl, although a regular member of the church, had an unbeliever boyfriend on the side. This minister did not know what he was dealing with!

There happened to be another church member who worked in the same area as this young lady. After awhile

this sister said to herself, “This young lady is preparing to marry one of our pastors. But I see that she has an unbeliever boyfriend on the side. She is leading a double life.”

## **She Spilled the Beans**

This sister mustered up courage, went to the office of the church and “spilled the beans”. The rest of the pastors were horrified but thankful to this loyal sister. You see, godly reporting saved that pastor’s life.

If you do not withhold information, it may save your life some day. For example, Mordecai was sentenced to death through the evil conspiracy of Haman. Just before he was to be executed, it was discovered that Mordecai had earlier on exposed two killers who almost murdered the king.

*...Bigthan and Teresh... ...sought to lay hand on the king Ahasuerus. And the thing was known to Mordecai, WHO TOLD IT...*

*Esther 2:21,22*

When you know of something evil, you are expected to tell it! Mordecai’s act of loyalty was recorded in the annals of the nation. The king could not sleep one night and was reading some materials from the archives. **He discovered that Mordecai (whom he was about to execute) had in fact saved his life.**

This revelation proved that Mordecai was actually a very loyal person. When you withhold information the impression is given that you are in support of what is going on. It is what we call complicity. If you uncover an insur

rection and arrest all the rebels, that is only the first step. The next thing to do is find out all of those who knew about it.

Godly reporting can save the life of a church.

## **Lesson #4**

### **LOYALTY IS BASED ON PRINCIPLES AND NOT EMOTIONS**

Many people operate by feelings and emotions, rather than by a set of principles. Decisions based on emotions rather than principles are not substantial. If you have decided to belong to something you must make your decision based on principles and not on feelings.

#### **They Said, “We Feel Sorry For Him”**

Once upon a time, a dissident pastor went off on a tangent and decided to do the wrong thing. Some church members decided to follow him. When some of them were asked why they were following this renegade fellow, they answered, “We know what he is doing is wrong, but we feel sorry for him.”

You see, I have experienced rebellion before. Many people who follow rebels do so without thinking. You must remember that all those who followed Absalom without seriously considering it were killed. Remember that all those angels who followed Lucifer were cast down. You must remember that when Korah the rebel was perishing, he was destroyed with his entire family and three hundred

others.

All of these people wouldn't have been destroyed if they had thought twice about what they were doing. How can you follow somebody like Absalom, who was fighting his own father? Perhaps Absalom's good looks and long hair swayed the masses. The point I'm trying to make is that loyalty is based on principles and not feelings and emotions.

## **The Return of the Rebel**

Once upon a time, I had a pastor who left me with a small group of rebellious people. A few weeks later, I was informed that one of the rebels wanted to meet with me.

I was told that Rebel #2 wanted to meet with me. I said, "Why should he want to meet with me. I have nothing to do with him anymore."

However, they insisted, "Please come down, he wants to talk with you." I agreed.

At the meeting I asked, "Young man, what can I do for you?"

"I have come to apologize for rebelling against you," he replied. "You have done me no wrong, and I don't see why I behaved the way I did."

So I asked him, "Why did you join Rebel #1 in fighting against me?"

## **I Don't Know Why I Did It**

He bowed his head and replied, "I don't know why."

He went on, “I got born again here. I grew up here. Everything I know in the Lord, I learnt from you.”

So I asked again, “Why did you do it?”

He shook his head and answered, “Pastor, I don’t know why I did it.”

This young man admitted that he acted out of emotion. He could not even explain to himself why he had taken the course of action that he did. Many disloyal people just follow the crowd. They feel that they are on to something new.

There was a pastor of a church who felt he was popular and broke away with a section of the church. This caused much pain for the senior pastor-in-charge and virtually destroyed the ministry. Those that joined the rebellion were initially very happy thinking that they were on to something new and exciting.

## **You Can’t Fool Me Twice**

After a year or so, this traitorous pastor traveled to America and never returned. He abandoned his breakaway church when the door opened for him to go to America. Those who followed him were very surprised and felt let down. (But what else can you expect from a rebel?)

It happened that some members of this now pastor-less group drifted over to join the Lighthouse Cathedral. Not long after, we also had an experience of rebellion. A rebellious pastor approached some of these new members and invited them to his renegade church.

One of the people he invited told us about the response he gave.

He said to this rebel pastor, “I once followed a pastor who did exactly what you are doing. I have seen all of this before. No one can fool me twice. There is no way that I am going to follow you!”

Church, let us stop playing games. Let us base our loyalty and commitment on principles and not on emotions. Baby Christians live by their feelings! Loyalty is broken when the Word and its principles are set aside.

Loyalty is to God and to his Word and to the principles of His Word.

## **Jonathan Was Principled**

Cast your mind back to Jonathan, the son of Saul. He realized that his father was wrong in principle. He also realized that his father was trying to murder an innocent young man. So he decided to help David even though it was emotionally difficult. Even though his actions were directed against his own family, it was the right thing to do.

Some people just follow family lines. If it's your brother or your sister it must be right. Even if it is glaringly wrong. Jonathan was not like that. Look at what he said.

*...but if it please my father to do thee evil, then I WILL SHEW IT THEE, and send thee away, that thou mayest go in peace...*

*1 Samuel 20:13*

## **Lesson #5**

## **LOYALTY WILL COST YOU RELATIONSHIPS AND FRIENDSHIPS**

Everything has a price. Education has a price. Even your salvation has a price. The Bible says we are bought with a price. Loyalty also has a price.

To be loyal to someone means you cannot be loyal to everyone. Loyalty will cost you relationships and friendships. My loyalty to Christ has meant that I cannot maintain some of my old friendships.

### **Loyalty Is Expensive**

I have some friends with whom I can no longer flow. The reason for this is my loyalty to the Lord. I find it amazing that some Christians claim that they are simply friends with a rebellious person.

They say, “Oh, he’s just a colleague from school.”

I’ll ask, “Are you sure?”

They answer, “Oh yes, it’s just an old friendship. We never talk about church or anything like that.”

I want you to meditate on the following verse. Please do not just brush it away.

*...whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world  
IS the enemy of God.*

*James 4:4*

Notice that certain friendships are equivalent to enmity with God. No explanations are needed. Just the existence of the friendship implies enmity with God. Anyone who



is the friend of my enemy is also my enemy. You don't need to explain much about whether he's an old colleague, a social friend or a neighbor. The Bible says that the existence of certain friendships is equivalent to certain enmities.

You cannot take relationships for granted. They are not meaningless. They mean something. Every friendship or relationship will contribute something to your life.

I would advise every pastor to observe the relationships and friendships that his associates maintain.

I once visited an assistant pastor friend of mine. As we chatted, he spent most of the time commending the achievements and accomplishments of another pastor (not his own senior pastor). He said virtually nothing about his own senior pastor or his own church. In fact, he seemed closer to this external pastor than he was to his own senior pastor.

### **The Friendship That Didn't Pay**

On my way home, I mused about the closeness that seemed to exist between this assistant and an external pastor. I thought to myself, "I wonder how long this assistant is going to be in his present ministry?"

Lo and behold, a few months later I heard the news that my assistant pastor friend had defected.

No relationship is meaningless. Friendship with this means enmity with that! Your commitment to a cause may even cost you your relationship with your family. Jesus said,

*If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and*

*mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.*

*Luke 14:26*

There are certain things that are virtually impossible to see openly. For instance, it is very rare to see two human beings having sex openly. Fornication is one thing you are unlikely to spot with your physical eyes. But the Bible says, we should look diligently to see if there is any fornicator amongst us. How are we supposed to recognize fornicators?

The answer is obvious. You are supposed to look out for signs of it. For instance when a couple who are not yet married visit each other till late after midnight.

It is the same thing with the concept of loyalty. **Disloyalty is not easy to detect.** You have to look for signs of it. And one of the signs is unhealthy friendships and relationships.

Your loyalty is revealed through the friends you keep. Some friendships will be broken if you are being loyal to Christ, to your church and to your pastor.

Jonathan's loyalty to David cost him his relationship with his own father.

*And Jonathan answered Saul his father, and said unto him, Wherefore shall he be slain? what hath he done? And Saul cast a javelin at him...*

*1 Samuel 20:32-33*

When Jonathan questioned the decision of his father to kill David, King Saul was so angry that he threw a spear at his son. Notice that Jonathan almost lost his life because of his loyalty to David. Loyalty is expensive.

## **Lesson #6**

### **LOYALTY MAY COST YOU PHYSICAL THINGS**

The Bible teaches us that when Moses became a man, he had to choose between being loyal to God or to Pharaoh. His loyalty to God cost him everything. Moses may have become the next Prime Minister of Egypt. But his loyalty cost him his citizenship, his passport and his royal status. He lost it all because of Christ.

*By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God...*

*Hebrews 11:24,25*

If someone is giving you money on a regular basis and he rebels against God and against the church, you will have to choose between singing the praises of an Absalom and doing the right thing. If you decide to do what is principled, obviously your supply of cash will dry up. But dear friend, that is the cost of loyalty.

## **Lesson #7**

### **LOYALTY DEMANDS ANALYSIS**

Whenever your loyalty is tested, you will have to analyze many things in order to stay loyal. An analysis is a detailed study or interpretation of the information set before you.

I want to show you a few things that you must analyze in order to stabilize your mind and your heart in what you

are doing.

## **Analyze the Past**

I want to show you how Paul appealed to Timothy to analyze things. First of all, he said analyze the past.

*Wherefore I PUT THEE IN REMEMBRANCE that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.*

*2 Timothy 1:6*

Timothy was a man who was probably deviating from his call. Paul wrote to remind him of what happened in the past. We don't know exactly what Paul was reminding Timothy about, but it must have related to his call. He said, "I'm reminding you of something."

Think about all that has happened in the past. How God called you and brought you to where you are. I always remember the stirrings and callings of the Spirit, which I began to feel very early in my life. I keep in mind the zeal and love I have always had for souls to be won. That helps me to remain loyal to the call of God upon my life.

I am certain that many people do not think for a moment about the past.

## **I Found Someone With a Passion For Souls**

I remember one of the first times I talked with my senior associate. It was in a room in the medical hostel of the university. We spoke about preaching the Gospel in the

towns and villages of our nation. I realized he had the same passion and concern for souls that I did.

Something in my heart clicked and I realized I had found someone I could work with. That discussion is still fresh in my mind. It helps me to stay on track and to do what I originally set out to do. That is why today we have a mass evangelism ministry. Anytime I want to do anything else, God reminds me of what he said to me earlier on.

I have also decided to remember past associations and friendships. Once, a rebellious character went out of his way to slander me to my friend.

### **Beware of Pastor Dag**

He said, “Be careful of Pastor Dag.”

My friend replied, “Why are you telling me to be careful of him?”

He answered, “He is into the occult.”

“What! You must be mad!” my loyal friend continued, “Do you know how long I have known Dag? You don’t seem to know how longstanding our relationship is.”

My loyal friend pointed out to him, “There must be something wrong with you.”

Anytime you analyze the events of the past it will help you to remain loyal.

### **Analyze the Individual Concerned**

In order to remain loyal over a long period of time, you will need to make a good analysis of the individual concerned. Paul said that Timothy should continue in the things that he had learnt. Most importantly, **Timothy should remember the type of person from whom he learnt what he knows.**

*But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, KNOWING OF WHOM THOU HAST LEARNED THEM;*

*2 Timothy 3:14*

When people begin to come up with all forms of seditious stories and slanderous reports, think carefully about what they are saying. Analyze the individual who is being criticized and whether it makes sense.

### **Who Earns More: Doctor or Pastor?**

One time, someone said that I was preaching for money, trying to get rich quickly. This person obviously is not a deep thinker. If this individual were to analyze what he was saying he would realize that very few people are privileged to be medical doctors. He would also realize that I must have been out of my mind to leave the practice of medicine in order to make money by collecting people's pennies. How absurd!

There are much easier ways of making money as a medical doctor. This dishonest character is refusing to consider where all my medical colleagues are and how much money they are earning.

All I am saying is: analyze the individual who is being

criticized and it will help you to decide whether to be loyal or not.

*But thou hast fully known my doctrine, MANNER OF LIFE, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, Persecutions, afflictions...*

*2 Timothy 3:10-11*

Paul said, “you have known my lifestyle and my character.” He was appealing to Timothy to acknowledge how intimately he had known him. When I meet people I have heard unfavorable rumors about, I find them to be quite different from how they have been portrayed. Get to know the individual concerned personally. It is only then that you will know the true picture.

### **Did the Pastor Go to the Nightclub?**

A church member once told me that she had seen one of my pastors taking a lady into a nightclub. I thought about what this lady was saying for a moment, then I dismissed it. Why did I dismiss that story as being frivolous? When I analyzed the person who was telling me the story and the pastor concerned, I felt that this was a ridiculous accusation.

I have known the pastor in question for many years and I have never had cause to doubt his integrity. Why should I listen to the tale of some silly personality, whose agenda I’m not sure of? Of course, I would take an accusation like that more seriously if it came from more than one person.



*Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.*

*1 Timothy 5:19*

Loyalty demands continuous analysis in the face of constant accusations, rumors and slanderous stories.

### **I Supported Him Till...**

Some years ago, a man of God I loved was accused of committing adultery with a member of his church. I had heard this pastor preaching and teaching many times and have been very moved by the gift of God upon his life. So when this rumor was confirmed, I wrote a letter to him encouraging him. I told him I was praying for and standing with him. I emphasized that I still believed in him, in spite of what had happened. I felt that I should still be loyal to him because he had probably made a terrible mistake of which he had repented.

## **A Girl in the Hotel Room**

Although many people criticized that pastor in the heat of the scandal, I constantly defended him, both in public and in private. You see, the Bible says the righteous man falls seven times and rises again. So I felt that he would rise again. However, a few years later, something happened that made me turn my loyalty away from this person.

I visited this minister in a hotel. I had a message for him. The receptionist showed me the room in which the minister was staying.

I went up to his door and knocked. Someone came to the door and opened it. It was a half-naked girl with a flimsy towel that she held up in front of her!

I was startled.

“Oh, is pastor in?” I asked.

“I have a message for him.”

She smiled sweetly and said, “Yes. He’s in bed.”

I quickly sputtered out the message and left in a daze.

As I walked out of the hotel I asked myself, “What was this undressed young lady doing in my man of God’s hotel room? Is this man not tired of scandals?”

I analyzed the situation. Years after the scandal, this pastor was still engaging himself in questionable and immoral behavior.

It was only at this point in time that my loyalty to this individual ceased.

## **Analyze the Form of Words You Have Heard**

*Hold fast THE FORM OF SOUND WORDS, which thou hast heard of me...*

*2 Timothy 1:13*

You are supposed to check on what pastors preach to you from the pulpit. Is it accurate? Is it the Word?

This will help you to know whether to remain loyal to them or not.

*These were more noble... and searched the scriptures daily...*

*Acts 17:11*

You are also supposed to compare what they are preaching now to what they used to preach. This is because some start out with Bible based preaching and end up with all sorts of weird doctrines. When it's not the Word of God anymore, you are supposed to "defect from the defector".

## **Is Your Pastor Preaching the Right Thing?**

Some ministers have drifted off from the mainstream of Bible doctrines into extreme versions of some fundamental truths. There are great truths about the Holy Spirit, prayer, prosperity, etc. But all of these can be perverted and misinterpreted. God didn't say we would whistle in tongues or bark and bite people in the Spirit. But these are being taught as biblical truths. Let's stay with the mainstream.

We have to analyze the type of messages that our men

of God give us. Has he been lying to us all along? Does he normally slander other people? Is he a talebearer? If you are suddenly hearing criticisms of someone you love and trust, analyze the sort of things he has said all along. He is likely to be saying the same sort of things. It will help you to decide whether to trust him or not. Remember this little phrase, ***He who lies to you about others will lie to others about you.*** Lying is usually a chronic disease.

## **He Preached His Opinion**

Do I usually preach my opinion? Or do I preach the **Word**?

I was once at a meeting with a group of pastors in my city. One of them said, “When we preach in our churches on Sunday mornings, we usually give our opinions.”

I asked, “Did you say you preach your *opinion*?”

“Yes, we all preach our opinions.” he insisted.

I challenged him right there, “We are supposed to preach the Word of God and *not* our opinions.”

You see, there is a difference between your opinion and the Word of God. Do not just accept what anybody says because of who he is.

## **Some Preachers Are Clever**

Some preachers are clever with words. The Bible says they sway the hearts of the simple with their nice sounding maxims. **Don’t let them get away with their clever little phrases.** Take them up on what they say! Anything that you say must balance up with the written Word. If it doesn’t

balance up with the Word, then it is unacceptable.

Analyze the form of words you are receiving – somebody’s opinion or the Word?

I am trying to grow a beautiful lawn in my house, but I am having lots of problems with weeds. It is difficult to see the difference between the real grass and the weeds. The weeds seem to grow faster. They are more flamboyant and flashy. **But the good gardener must analyze the difference, pull out the weeds and water the good grass.**

### **Analyze the Word of God**

Once upon a time I had to tell my church members to mark and avoid a contumacious individual in the church. Some people were surprised that I had given such an instruction.

### **We Marked the Rebel**

They asked, “How can you ask us to stay away from a brother?” Once again, these were people who do not read their Bibles. The Word of God says,

*...MARK THEM which cause divisions and offences...  
AND AVOID THEM.*

*Romans 16:17*

All through the scriptures, you will find the historical records of Lucifer, the rebel; Absalom, the papa killer; and Adonijah, the usurper.

Ahitophel, the traitor; Shemei, who cursed King David and Judas, who betrayed Jesus are just a few more ex

amples of treacherous people. Can we not expect to see these same people in real church life? The bible is a practical book and it declares,

*The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be...*

*Ecclesiastes 1:9*

Read your Bible and analyze what it is saying. You will realize that we are experiencing nothing unusual.

### **Did Jesus Make a Mistake?**

How could Jesus choose a team of pastors only for one of them to become a traitor? **When Jesus chose leaders, one of them turned out to be a *devil*. Do not be surprised if one of your leaders turns out to be a *villain*.** Someone may question Jesus' ability to choose leaders. Jesus tried to choose the best, but look at what happened. If you appoint pastors and one of them turns against you, remember that the same thing happened to Christ.

*The disciple is not above his master...*

**Luke 6:40**

## **Chapter Five**

# ***Signs of Disloyalty***

I learnt some time ago that leaders often do not know their flock as they truly are. If you are a leader, people will pretend to you all the time. They will conceal their shortcomings from you and only tell you things they know you want to hear. They will praise you because they know you like the encouragement.

When anyone you relate with is disloyal, do not expect the person to announce, “I don’t support you.” Every good leader must watch out for what I call *Signs of Disloyalty*.

### **Leaders: Watch For the Signs**

These signs will help you navigate through the maze of people who sing your praises. When those surrounding Christ seemed to praise him and acknowledge him as a great leader, Jesus did not trust himself to them.

*But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.*

*John 2:24,25*

Every good leader must not subject himself to men. Neither should he trust what people are saying, wholeheartedly. Please remember that when Jesus entered Jerusalem on Palm Sunday he was hailed and praised.

### **Don't Trust Everyone**

In a certain sense, you must learn to take everything with a pinch of salt. In another part of the Bible, Jesus' own brothers suggested that he go public with his ministry.

*His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.*

*John 7:3*

They encouraged him, explaining that no one who wanted to have a far-reaching ministry should keep himself in secret. Remember, these were Jesus' own brethren. Jesus simply answered and said, *My time is not yet come*. But in John 7:5, the Bible reveals that this advice coming from his own brothers was not genuine.

*For neither did his brothers believe in him.*

*John 7:5*

You can see right here that a leader is often subjected to hypocritical advice and lying praises. This is the reason why every good leader must learn about what I call the *Signs of Disloyalty*.



The following are some of the signs that people exhibit when they are disloyal or *potentially* disloyal.

**1) A leader who disappoints you in times of pressure or crisis.**

Notice leaders who absent themselves when the church is going through difficult times. Watch out for people who are absent during hard times. It is in times of pressure that you see the true character of a person. In the heat of events, you may have to rebuke someone sharply, or you may have to over stretch those you work with. Watch how they behave in such times, it will tell you something about their loyalty.

You expect everyone to cooperate in times of war. Some time ago, we had a crisis in our church relating to factions within our community. One day, in the heat of events, we had to go and see some officials in the government. When we went to see these officials, they told us that they wanted to see if we had any support from the local people who lived in the community.

### **The Three Deserters**

I said, “Oh, that’s not a problem; we have some members of the community in our church.” “I even have some of the community members working in our office.”

So, I left a hurried message for some of the church workers (who were also pastoral trainees) to join me in visiting these government officials. I wanted the government officials to see that we had genuine support from the

community. Would you believe that these pastoral trainees did not turn up? They did not go to see the government officials in support of the church. I felt really depressed and let down in a time of war.

After the crisis, I confronted the three deserters.

## **Two of Them Apologized**

Shortly after that, two of them apologized for letting me down in the time of crisis. However, the third person in question rendered no such apology. I decided to say nothing to him, but just to watch him. I realized that I had detected a lack of full commitment. I was not surprised when a few weeks later I received a letter on my desk from this same brother. I can always tell when a letter is a resignation letter.

## **I Resign**

This particular letter had only one sentence, “I resign from your organization.” I never saw this brother again and was not interested in seeing him anymore. Watch out for those who desert you in times of trouble. They are probably not loyal to you.

Why did Paul say he wouldn’t work with Rev. John Mark? It was because John Mark had deserted him in a time of crisis.

*But Paul thought not good to take him [John Mark] with them, who departed [**deserted**] from them...*

*Acts 15:38*

## **2) Leaders who disappoint you when *they* are under pressure.**

I have noticed that certain people just do not come to church or participate when *they* are experiencing a domestic challenge or a financial problem. I am often under pressure from several quarters (looking after the Cathedral, dealing with situations concerning branches, pastors, lands and properties, personnel, salaries, letters, criticisms, telephone calls, emergencies, pressures of travelling and family). But in the midst of all this I have to remain focussed and perform all my duties. It is important that I do not collapse or let people down when I am under pressure.

*Confidence in an unfaithful man in time of trouble is like a broken tooth, and a foot out of joint.*

*Proverbs 25:19*

There are some people who often present themselves with problems concerning homes and families. Have you noticed that these problems have not prevented them from going about their jobs? Any leader that deserts you when *he* is under pressure is a potentially dangerous person.

## **Pastors Still Have to Preach**

Many pastors have to preach on Sunday mornings sometimes after they have had a disagreement with their wives on the way to church. But they still have to minister under the anointing. If they were to break down under the least of pressure they would be unreliable ministers.

## **3) Leaders who have moral weaknesses**

If you have a leader with a persistent problem of immorality, please take note of such a person. He could disappoint you or turn against you one day. Why is this? The Bible says a leader must live a holy life, treating the young ladies as sisters and not as girlfriends.

*[Treating] ...the younger as sisters, with all purity.*

*1 Timothy 5:2*

A person who lives continually in sin, is often in rebellion against God. That attitude of rebellion can be turned unto any of God's representatives at short notice.

### **The Angry Pastor Walked Out**

You may also have to discipline such a fellow for his misdeeds. In his anger at your correction, he may walk out on you in rebellion. Such people usually go around, making up bad stories.

You see, they have to give an explanation for leaving their church.

#### **4) Leaders who have a financial weakness.**

Again, someone who is a thief is in rebellion against God. This rebellion will eventually turn against the pastors. If such a thief is confronted about his evil deeds, he is likely to be incensed against you. In his anger at correction, he may also walk out and spread negative stories about you, claiming that you are the real thief! Remember that many traitors and rebels are also thieves.

*...he [Judas] was a thief...*

*John 12:6*

## **5) Leaders who are worldly.**

A leader who loves watching worldly and perverted films is to be noted. He loves worldly music and knows all the lyrics. Someone who admires worldliness is surely attracted to it. This person could desert you just as Demas deserted Paul.

*For DEMAS HATH FORSAKEN me, having LOVED THIS PRESENT WORLD...*

*2 Timothy 4:10*

## **6) Leaders who think that they can do what you are doing better than you can.**

Anyone who is watching me the senior pastor, and has thoughts flashing through his mind – “I could do this better” or “If I had the chance, I would also be able to minister like that, and probably even better”- such a person is a dangerous person to have around. Remember that Absalom thought he could do his father’s job better than he was doing it. Absalom said,

*... OH THAT I WERE MADE JUDGE IN THE LAND,  
that every man which hath any suit or cause might  
come unto me, and I would do him justice!*

*2 Samuel 15:4*

A person is not doing what he is doing because he is the best at doing it. He is doing it because God has put him there. I am not the pastor of my church because I am the best pastor. I am here because God has put me here. There may be people who are even better pastors than I am, but God put me here instead of them.

David was the king because God made him king. **He was not the king because he was the most qualified person.** Sometimes the assistant may look even more capable at certain things than the head. But don't make the mistake of fighting against the order that God has set. You will not succeed! It is God who sets and it is God who will remove, if He so pleases. You cannot remove what God has set in place.

*And GOD HATH SET some in the church...*

*1 Corinthians 12:28*

**7) Any leader who is prepared to attack his own father or senior in ministry.**

Be careful of people who come to you from another church where they grew up. Mark them when they say all sorts of negative things about their former pastors and fathers in the Lord. Remember that Absalom was prepared to attack his own father.

*...Behold, my son [Absalom]... seeketh my life...*

*2 Samuel 16:11*

Such a person is deadly! Do not admit such a person into your fold thinking that he will be loyal to you. Remember that he was thinking of attacking his own father. Absalom chased his own father out of town. Never befriend someone who attacks his own pastor.

I have listened as pastors said all sorts of negative things about their own seniors. Perhaps they thought they were gaining my sympathies, but the more they talked the more "Absalom" and treacherous I found them to be. This is

why it is almost impossible to become a pastor in my set-up unless you grow up from within.

**8) Wounded Leaders who have never recovered from their hurts.**

I observe closely all people who have been hurt by one event or the other. In normal church life, many things occur that can lead to hurt and offences. I have discovered two types of people. One type recovers from the offence and moves ahead with his life. The other type seems to harbor some lingering unforgiveness. Watch these people. They are potential defectors.

**Many Rebels Have Been Hurt Before**

Almost every traitor has a history of being hurt at one time or the other. Just dig into the history of anarchists. You will discover that they have been hurt by something that was said or done earlier. Remember how Absalom was furious at his brother Amnon for raping his sister Tamar.

*...Absalom hated Amnon, because he had forced  
his sister Tamar.*

*2 Samuel 13:22*

Two years after this event, Absalom struck! The deep-seated wound finally produced fruit. All deep-seated wounds will one day bear the fruit of mutiny.

**9) Leaders who are not prepared to be trained or re-trained in the ministry.**

Notice people who say things like, “I was a leader before I joined you.” “I have been a leader for many years in

such-and-such church.” What he is saying is, “I have already been trained and your training program is unnecessary for me.” Make no mistake, dear pastor. People coming from other institutions need to be retrained to suit your needs. Do not allow anyone from another church to introduce another spirit or philosophy into the house.

## **Are You an Old Tree?**

There are two types of trees, young and old. When a tree is young it can be bent over, when it’s old it can no longer be bent over. Do not try to bend an old tree. In other words, do not try to teach an old dog new tricks. What am I saying?

**I have given up trying to retrain nice people from other churches.** Paul trained Timothy and told him exactly what to do. He told him what to preach and how to minister. He called him, *my son* Timothy. Timothy was obviously prepared for training and retraining.

*O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust...*

*1 Timothy 6:20*

### **10) Leaders who are not prepared to do menial jobs.**

Anyone who is not prepared to do menial jobs may be too lofty for real ministry. The disciples did menial jobs. They were ushers, waiters, errand boys, and scavengers. **Without shame, they collected baskets of leftover bread crumbs and fish bones in front of thousands of people.** They were sent on errands to buy food and to relay simple



messages. I take very serious note of high and mighty individuals who think certain tasks are below them.

## **The Lofty People**

I have watched over the years as certain individuals from within my flock have refused to engage in menial jobs.

They have rarely amounted to much in the ministry. I rebuke pastors who appear too stiff and too elite to get involved in down-to-earth work. Jesus taught us the importance of being a hands-on leader.

*...I am among you as he that serveth.*

*Luke 22:27*

That is why my Bible students are involved in scrubbing church toilets and cleaning floors. It helps them to become more unpretentious and practical leaders.

Watch out for these big shots. They won't amount to much in the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Except ye... become as little children... ye shall not enter...*

*Matthew 18:3*

## **The Cafeteria Evangelist**

Never forget Philip the evangelist who was first sent to work in the church cafeteria. When he was asked to sort out all the problems of the church in relation to food, he did not say that it was below his dignity. He did not even mention that he was called to be an evangelist! In fact, it

was because he was called to be an evangelist that God was giving him the opportunity to be a dining hall prefect.

**If God has called you to evangelize the world, you may have to start with menial jobs. Never forget that!**

### **11) A leader with a persistently stormy marriage.**

Everybody has difficulties in marriage. All honest people attest to that fact. However, notice people who have persistently unhappy homes. This is often because of pride and a bad character. Someone who is not able to keep his own home in order is not recommended to be a minister.

*One that ruleth well his own house...*

*1 Timothy 3:4*

In quarrelsome and unhappy marriages, you often have people that do not know how to apologize when they have done something wrong. If this characteristic spills over into the ministry, you will have turbulent and unhappy relationships between ministers and church members.

### **12) Leaders who are irritated and reactionary every time you correct them.**

A leader will often have to correct his subordinates. When a person becomes irritated by correction, surely there must be some question about his character. A true student, will never be angry or irritated when you reprove him. He will eagerly welcome the redress that makes him a better person.

*Better is a poor and wise child than an old and foolish*

*king, who will no more be admonished.*

*Ecclesiastics 4:13*

The very fact that a person is irritated should tell you that he will not fit into your organization.

Notice that Peter was neither, irritated nor reactionary when Jesus rebuked him harshly.

*But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan...*

*Matthew 16:23*

### **13) A person who gives excuses and continually justifies himself.**

When a simple instruction turns into a prolonged debate, you are dealing with a possible anarchist. I remember one brother who misused some church equipment. When confronted, he denied it. A couple of weeks later, we came up with conclusive evidence that he had misused the church's property.

### **He Continued Arguing**

Would you believe that in spite of documented and irrefutable evidence this leader argued his innocence for two more hours! I just looked on in amazement. Remember to be careful of those who cannot admit their mistakes. Let us all learn from the example of King Saul who justified himself when he had obviously disobeyed God. In spite of undeniable evidence Saul insisted,

*...I have obeyed the voice of the LORD...*

*1 Samuel 15:20*

This stubborn denial is what made the Lord reject and replace Saul with King David. Watch out for leaders who constantly deny any wrongdoing. It seems they are never wrong about anything. They never have anything to apologize about. They rather get angry and irritated when you seem to be unhappy about something they are doing. They turn the tables on you and make you feel that you are a hard taskmaster. The punishment for stubbornness is indeed severe – rejection.

*...he hath also REJECTED thee from being king.*

*1 Samuel 15:23*

**14) A person who does not keep promises.**

Watch out for brothers who make proposals to young ladies about marriage only to disappoint them a few months later. A person who constantly makes promises and breaks them is unreliable. Do not think that unfaithfulness will remain in the arena of marital relationships. It will definitely spill over into his relationships with his colleague pastors.

*...He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not.*

*Psalms 15:4*

Unfaithfulness is a character flaw and it transcends through every sphere of a person's life. If he is unfaithful to his beloved (girlfriend) he is likely to be unfaithful to you one day. I respect people who say, "I will do this" and years later, they do exactly what they said they would do.

## I Married Her

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of August, 1985, I told my beloved (now, wife) that I would marry her one day. Five years later, I did! Watch people who keep their word on minor issues. They are likely to keep their word on major issues.

### 15) A leader who is vying for promotion and recognition.

*...Adonijah... exalted himself, saying, I will be king...*

*1 Kings 1:5*

Adonijah was position- conscious. Although he was a prince, he wanted to be king himself. I once hinted to a leader that I intended to appoint him a pastor in the near future.

## The Pastor Could Not Wait

To my surprise, I found out that he had asked a little fellowship within the church to point to him and say, “Pastor so-and-so, we love you.” He could not wait for his public appointment. **Watch out for position conscious people.** Many people have the position but do not do the job. Make sure your leaders are doing the job that goes with the position.

### 16) A person who is an unknown factor.

Pastors, do not be naïve. Do not welcome little known individuals into sensitive positions. Allow new people to stay around long enough before you make them leaders.

An unknown factor is a dangerous factor.

**Any new person is a *potential* traitor until proved otherwise.** Remember that when the disciples had to choose someone to replace Judas, they picked someone who had been with them long enough.

*Wherefore of these men WHICH HAVE COMPANIED  
WITH US all the time... must one be ordained...*

*Acts 1:21,22*

### **17) A leader who has never been criticized.**

A person who has never been criticized is often surprised when his superiors are under attack. He thinks there must be some truth in the criticism leveled against them. He usually thinks that if you do everything right, you will never be criticized! This is a great deception.

### **Younger Ones Have Not Yet Been Criticized**

This is a deception that is common to inexperienced leaders. An immature leader may even join the “enemy” if he feels *they* have a strong enough case.

I realize that no matter how hard you try to relate your experiences to certain people, they just cannot comprehend what you are saying.

A leader who has been through the fire of criticism is different from someone who has never been criticized. When a mature person encounters slander and criticism in ministry, he will handle it differently. He understands how the machinery of deception works. A mature person, like

Christ, knows that these things are part of normal ministry.

*...for IT MUST NEEDS BE that offences come...*

*Matthew 18:7*

**18) A leader who does not say amen or smile whilst you are preaching.**

Any loyal leader will appreciate the sermons of his pastor. His support of the pastor is demonstrated when he constantly vocalizes his agreement by saying “Amen”. **You cannot tell me that the expression on your face and your silence mean nothing. Silence means something. And the expression on your face means something.**

**No Comment For Two Years!**

The Bible says that Absalom said neither good nor bad for two years. How can you make no comment or remark for two whole years and then after that invite me for a party? This is what Absalom did to his brother Amnon.

Absalom’s silence and lack of response to his brother meant a lot. It meant murder was in the offing! Because God knows that a person’s facial expression means something, he advised Ezekiel and Jeremiah not to be frightened by people’s facial expressions.

*Be not afraid of their faces...*

*Jeremiah 1:8*

An unsmiling, grimacing leader who always has no comment to make must be watched.



**19) A person who does not take notes whilst you are preaching.**

*...he said unto me, WRITE: FOR THESE WORDS ARE TRUE AND FAITHFUL.*

*Revelation 21:5*

The Bible teaches us to write down true and faithful words. Watch out for people who do not take notes whilst you are teaching. This is a sign that they *think* that they know everything. A person who thinks he knows all that you are teaching should not be around you. He may be saying, “I’m as good as you. And there is nothing new that *you* can teach me!”

**He-Knows-It-All**

During a community health lecture in the medical school, I learnt a valuable lesson about handling public health education. We were taught that every time we ventured to give a public lecture we would need to psychologically overcome certain personalities in the audience.

One of them was the *know-it-all*. Know-it-alls do not take notes because they know it all. One thing you don’t need is a know-it-all as an associate leader.

John the Apostle could not minister effectively to Diotrephes because he felt too big (pre-eminence) to receive from John. I believe this character in the Bible did not bother to take notes as John was preaching. Diotrephes was too big to receive. John said that Diotrephes didn’t receive him.

*...but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence... RECEIVETH US NOT.*

Surely, any leader that does not take notes when you preach must be watched.

**20) A person who is not faithful in another person's work.**

Watch people's attitudes towards their responsibilities. If they treat other people's businesses and properties with care, they are likely to treat your ministry with care. You never know how people behave when they are out of your sight. But when you see them, just observe how they handle someone else's car or property.

Watch the person who recklessly handles other people's belongings.

*And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?*

*Luke 16:12*

**21) A leader who does not pay tithes and offerings.**

Anybody who goes to a restaurant with the intention of not paying for his meal, is a dangerous character. Anyone who benefits from the church, but secretly does not support it, needs to be watched. He is a disguised robber and traitor.

## **Monitor Their Giving**

I cannot monitor the tithes and offerings of the whole

church. But I do monitor the tithes of my *leaders*. Any leader who does not pay his tithes may be a traitor. You see, money must not be a problem for any leader. The Bible teaches us that a person who does not give tithes is a robber.

*Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me... IN  
TITHES AND OFFERINGS.*

*Malachi 3:8*

I declare unto you therefore that every robber is a potential traitor. Watch him!

## **22) Leaders who do not attend certain meetings.**

Attending all meetings is important for leaders. Take note of those who constantly absent themselves from certain meetings. They always have excuses, but take note of them! Remember that Judas was always moving out on other missions when the disciples were fellowshiping with Christ. Remember how Thomas was absent when Christ appeared after His resurrection.

### **Absentee Turns Traitor**

I believe that it is because of Judas' frequent absenteeism that he became a traitor. I also think that it is because Thomas missed a very important meeting, that is why he became a doubter.

*But Thomas... was not with them when Jesus came.*

*John 20:24*

Most definitely, the absence of certain leaders from some meetings will cause them to be different from your loyal team members.

Attendance at all important meetings is essential to maintaining loyalty. Do not overlook leaders who seem to be too busy to attend important discussions. After a while such people will be different from the rest of your team.

## **23) A person who approves of someone who makes wrong decisions.**

*And he [Adonijah] conferred with Joab... and they... helped him.*

*1 Kings 1:7*

Joab approved of Adonijah's rebellious ideas. This was because Joab himself was a rebel. He had exhibited an independent spirit throughout the life and ministry of King David.

Notice the things that your leaders admire and become involved with. Observe the things that your team members approve of.

### **What Do Your Leaders Admire?**

Many years ago, a rebel in the making made favorable comments about another rebel. He spoke about how this dissident pastor seemed to be succeeding in his breakaway faction. He observed gleefully how this defector had acquired a new car shortly after rebelling. "He is having a good program!" he exclaimed. Only a few months later, this fellow staged his own rebellion.

#### **24) Leaders who are not prepared to do things they did not choose to do.**

Leaders must be prepared to do what they are told to do. If you expect others to obey you, remember that it is first required of you to obey instructions. Some people want to sit where they want to sit and do what they want to do. Notice anyone who becomes reluctant in what he is doing, because he is not doing what he *prefers* to do.

*Do ALL THINGS without... disputings:*

*Philippians 2:14*

This scripture is telling us to do *all things* joyfully – without arguments. Even the things *we* don't feel like doing.

## **25) A person who poisons you about others.**

The cardinal thing everyone remembers about a snake is that it can poison you! Any Christian who poisons your mind about other people is a dangerous person. Never forget that “*He that speaks negatively about somebody to you, will speak negatively about you to somebody.*”

### **The Slanderer In the Hotel**

Mark the person who attempts to poison your mind about people you don't even know. I remember one time a famous evangelist came to Accra. My friend happened to be the manager of the hotel that this evangelist visited. Because he was in and out of the hotel room, my manager friend overheard a local pastor lambasting another minister of the city.

### **He Poisoned the Evangelist**

As he listened, my friend told me that the famous evangelist's mind was thoroughly poisoned about this other minister. Before this minister had the opportunity to introduce himself, the slanderer had gone to work. The word slanderer in the New Testament is translated from the Greek word *diabolos* (which means devil).

*...not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.*

*1 Timothy 3:11*

Learn right here that a person who spews out negative

things about others is a devil. I didn't say so; the Bible says so. Slanderer means devil. A slanderer is a devil.

**26) A leader who is not prepared to be birthed into the philosophy, the standards, the vision, the procedures and the spirit of the house.**

Every church is essentially different. We all believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. However, the philosophy, the standards, the vision, and the procedures of each church are very different. This is what the Bible calls the due order of a ministry – the way things are done there.

**Every Church Has a Due Order**

*...for that we sought him not AFTER THE DUE ORDER.*

*1 Chronicles 15:13*

Any new person must be prepared to acclimatize and adapt himself to the new environment. A person who often says, “In my old church, we did things like that...” and, “I think that a better way to do this is how I used to do it in my former church.” This person must be watched. He probably hasn't fully adapted to the spirit of the house. That is why he is constantly making references to his previous place of ministry. The Israelites never adapted to their new circumstances in Babylon. They were never birthed into the spirit of their new homes. And this was evident in their songs,

*...we wept, WHEN WE REMEMBERED Zion.*

*Psalms 137:1*

**27) A person who manipulates his way into leadership without serving his way into that leadership position.**

Every leader is supposed to serve his way into a leadership position. Joshua was a servant of Moses. Elisha was the servant of Elijah. Elisha became the next major prophet by serving Elijah for many years. In fact, once when the king was looking for a prophet, they immediately thought of finding someone who had served Elijah.

*But Jehosophat said, Is there not here a prophet... [They] answered... Here is Elisha... which poured water on the hands of Elijah.*

*2 Kings 3:11*

Certain people pose as mature and already seasoned leaders who don't need to serve. They exert certain airs and manipulate inexperienced leaders. They sometimes have certain skills that the church desperately needs. The pastor may unknowingly appoint such a person to a leadership position. He may then realize that this fellow has not served his way through the normal ranks. Such a person is dangerous, because one day he may try to manipulate his way into other positions. He may even try to replace you!

**28) A leader who does not stay around to mingle and interact with other church members.**

If you are a leader of God's people surely you will want to interact with them and get to know them. Are you just occupying a high sounding position or are you a true shepherd? Remember that the hireling doesn't care about the



sheep but the true shepherd cares and wants to be near them.

## **Are You a Prime Minister or a Pastor?**

I always stay around after ministering, to interact with the congregation. I do this even though I am often tired and exhausted. A genuine leader does this because he is truly interested in the flock. I don't believe in being whisked away by a chauffeur driven car.

Some pastors behave more like Prime Ministers than shepherds of God's flock. Are you a Prime Minister or a shepherd?

*I am the good shepherd, and KNOW MY SHEEP, and AM KNOWN OF MINE.*

*John 10:14*

### **29) A leader who has a “Jezebel” for a wife.**

Jezebel was a wife who pushed her husband into doing wrong things. **Every experienced pastor must not only look at the leader's character but also at the leader's wife.** A wife has a great influence on her husband. She can either make or break him. A “*Jezebellic*” wife will encourage her husband to have things which don't really belong to him. Just because you are the king does not mean that you own all land in the nation. But Jezebel encouraged her husband to take over Naboth's vineyard even though it did not belong to him.

## **Watch the Position-Conscious Wives**

If your associate has a Jezebel for a wife, she will push him into improper things without him even realizing it. He will find himself stretching out his hand to take what does not belong to him. **Many pastors' wives make their husbands discontent.**

### **Watch the Possession-Conscious Wives**

They suggest to their husbands:

“By now we should have such and such a car.”

“Is the senior pastor the only one who must travel to conferences?”

“By now, you should have your own church.”

Jezebel planted evil thoughts in her husband's mind.

*And Jezebel his wife said unto him, Dost thou now govern the kingdom... arise and eat bread...*

*1 Kings 21:7*

These “*Jezebellic*” inspirations will spur a good pastor on into things which he never really intended to do. **Do not only consider the leader; observe his wife carefully.** Remember that the husband is the head but the wife is the neck.

### **30) A person who constantly shifts the blame to other people.**

A good leader does not shift blame. As a leader, you must realize that you are ultimately responsible for everything that happens.

## **Bad Leaders Say, “It’s Your Fault!”**

I do not know why some leaders never want to take any blame. We are all to blame sometimes. A true leader takes the blame for everything. One time something bad happened in our church. At a meeting of pastors, I told them it was my fault. They were surprised because they didn’t know how that unfortunate event related to me.

But I pointed out to them that I was to blame because I was the overall head. When two bad leaders meet, they will accuse each other of being at fault.

## **Good Leaders Say, “It’s My Fault!”**

When two good leaders meet they will fight to take the responsibility for any mishap. Remember how Adam shifted the blame to his wife. And how the wife shifted the blame to the serpent. Unfortunately, the serpent had no one to shift the blame to.

*...The woman whom thou gavest to be with me,  
SHE GAVE ME...*

*Genesis 3:12*

### **31) A leader who thinks too much money is being spent on the Head.**

Remember how Judas opposed the expensive gift given to his pastor, Jesus. Most people who really love their pastors feel that *nothing is too good for him*. Usually, a trait of disloyalty manifests itself when other loyal people begin to appreciate the pastor. Often this is out of guilty feelings that the disloyal leader may have, since he does

not get involved whenever there is a show of appreciation for the pastor. Remember the words of the traitor Judas,

*Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?*

*John 12:5*

Judas, like all disloyal people, felt it was a waste to spend such an amount of money on the pastor.

**32) A leader who is unduly quiet, reserved and detached.**

Take note of people who always have no comment to make and nothing to contribute. The Bible says that Absalom said nothing for two years. After being quiet for two years he decided to have a party. The quietness and moodiness of Absalom had a meaning.

## **The Quietness Means Something**

Unfortunately, Amnon and King David did not detect anything wrong with Absalom's reserved demeanor. However, it did mean that something evil was in the making. Watch out for those who are unusually calm and detached, when you know that they normally make positive contributions and comments.

**33) A leader who is always late for meetings.**

Chronic lateness to important meetings can often mean a wrong attitude. Perhaps an attitude of "I know what they are going to say at the meeting." "I will come when it is necessary." Such a person might be working with a scorn-

ful and arrogant spirit. Pride always leads to conflicts within organizations.

*Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out...*

*Proverbs 22:10*

**Lateness is a reflection of the unwillingness of the person to be a part of the meeting.** He wishes he did not have to be around. He therefore cannot bear to be at the meeting for a complete session. Before you receive a resignation letter from your assistant, you may find him often coming in late.

**34) A leader who feels he knows the mindset of the organization and therefore does not bother to ask important questions.**

I recall a leader being queried as to why he did not bother to find out about an important issue.

### **I Knew What You Would Say**

He answered, *“I knew what you would say, so I didn’t bother to ask.”* “I know how you analyze such cases anyway.”

In reality, this person was saying that, “I’m dealing with unreasonable personalities who will *never* understand me *anyway*. There was no point in my coming to see you.” A person who views you as being unreasonable is obviously not loyal to you in his heart.

**35) A leader who has not been involved in practical ministry work.**

I don't see how someone can teach at a Bible school unless he has been involved in the ministry work himself. The ministry of the Lord Jesus is not a set of theories. It is practical down-to-earth hard work. A person who has not been involved in the basics of ministry work is a theoretician. All he has to offer is theories about what is right and wrong.

*Not a novice...*

*1 Timothy 3:6*

Such a person could turn against you because of his theoretical inclinations. No wonder good Bible schools only accept seasoned ministers as instructors. We need people who have seen the practical workings of the Lord Jesus, the Holy Spirit and the Word of God. People who have lived through successes, mistakes, betrayals, the highs and the lows of ministry have much more to offer.

It's amazing how it's always the ones who are doing nothing for God who know how things should be done!

**36) A leader who does not contribute to a joint effort which is intended to bless and appreciate their pastor.**

Notice those who do not get involved in projects done in honor of their superiors. If the non-involvement is *not* out of a genuine lack of money, it is usually out of disloyalty.

**37) A leader who has not been tested by time.**

Dear Christian friend, in this very last sign I am pointing out a very important reality. Time reveals many important things. The Bible says,

*For many are called, but few are chosen.*

*Matthew 22:14*

Time reveals the difference between those chosen and those called. Time alone will differentiate between the men and the boys. Many of our theories and analyses will only be proved with time. **If you want to know if someone will be loyal, commend the person to God and to time.**

## **Chapter Six**

# ***From The Lips of Treacherous Men***

*...out of the abundance of the heart the mouth  
speaketh.*

*Matthew 12:34*

Many people do not know that their words give them away, especially when spoken in an unguarded moment.

The Bible also tells us,

*...the tree is known by his fruit.*

*Matthew 12:33*

The next time you stand under a big tree wondering what species it is, just look out for the fruit. The fruit of the tree reveals its true nature.

In this chapter, I am going to share with you some interesting quotations that I have noted down over the years. These sayings, coming from the lips of disloyal people, strike me whenever I hear them.

I remember the day I heard each of these statements.



Some of these statements were said to me personally, although many of them were things I heard about. **The statements tell you a lot about the personalities concerned and about the condition of their hearts.**

Let's begin with this statement I heard from the right-hand man of a pastor of a very large church.

- 1) ***Some of us could be head pastors. It is just that we have decided to submit.***

This statement comes from an associate who after analyzing his head pastor for awhile, has begun to see himself as someone just as capable as his head. He thinks that he is placed at the second or third position mistakenly or by an unfortunate play of circumstances. Such thoughts arise when assistants or associates are permitted to step into the shoes of their head for a brief season.

This often happens when the head is away for a period. They had the opportunity to preach once or twice and some people said that they were blessed. This makes the associate think that he is as good or even better than his head.

- 2) ***I would like you to pray with me about certain things that are going on at the office – the way I am being treated.***

This gentleman thought he was being mistreated by the administration of his church. He went around discussing this with ordinary church members. He solicited their prayers but in reality he was spreading dissent and mis

trust.

It was a subtle way of getting other people involved in his feeling of discontent. He was indirectly gaining the sympathy and support for what he considered mistreatment. This is the political stage of disloyalty. By the time this particular pastor had finished spreading his story, the church was full of confused members who saw the senior pastors as unreasonable.

This pastor eventually defected and left behind a miserable, divided, and untrusting group. It took over a year for this church to recover from the lies that had been spread. It took almost two years to regain a healthy environment.

3) ***He (the senior pastor) has deviated from the original vision and course.***

I heard the associate of one mega church declare that his pastor had deviated from the principal course of the Bible.

### **He Doesn't Read the Bible Anymore**

He claimed that his pastor didn't read the Bible anymore, but instead, studied secular books on leadership.

This however, was a misrepresentation of the truth. This statement, although it sounded like a valid accusation, was actually a manifestation of disloyalty.

This associate was simply not prepared to flow anymore with new ideas that the visionary would come up with. He had assisted for years but now a disloyal spirit

made him criticize every move of his head.

**4) *I will not come. I will not go. I will not be transferred.***

Remember that during the rebellion of Korah, Dathan and Abiram refused to come when Moses called for them.

*And Moses sent to call Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab: which said, WE WILL NOT COME UP:*

*Numbers 16:12*

When a person is too big to be sent, then he probably is too big for the organization. You are now too much of a big shot to be “pushed” around. When a leader declares that he will not move, *decide to move him away from you permanently.*

**5) *Would you do that yourself?***

In an army, if the Colonel or General asks the troops to move out in attack, no member of the platoon dare ask the Colonel or the General if he would go to such a place himself. No one would dare to ask, “Would you risk *your* life to do what you are sending us to do?” Although this is a legitimate question, it reeks of insubordination and defiance. These words only come from the heart of a rebel.

**6) *Many people are saying... Even the workers and elders are saying that...***

This statement, as we discussed in the political stage of disloyalty, implies that you have been talking to people about your leader in a negative way. People realize your

disloyalty and the disapproval that you have for your head. That is why they are able to say negative things to you about him.

A disloyal person has an ear to hear the negative things *that many people are saying*. Take note of anyone who comes up to you with these phrases – *many people are saying... a lot of people are saying...*

**7) *You are not always right.***

I remember when one pastor told me that I was not always right. At the time, I just brushed over the statement. But as I thought over it, I realized that nobody is ever always right. No one, apart from God, is ever a hundred percent correct.

This insurrectionist was actually giving me another message. He was saying, “You are having your way as always. But you are not right this time.”

He was telling me that he did not support me in what I was doing. He was informing me that he would just flow along because I had the veto power. His eyes blazed with hatred as he said those words – *you are not always right*.

**8) *You are proud and difficult to work with. You are stubborn.***

This person no longer admires or trusts his leader's decisions. They are words of a person who is critical and untrusting. A good leader has to be firm and strong. **When a person is full of disloyalty, he sees the strength and firmness as stubbornness and pride.** If you look at your

leader through eyes of love, you will see how great a person he is. However, if you look at him through the eyes of rebellion, you will see in him evil.

- 9) A pastor colleague of mine was told, ***“Pastor, there is a lot of fear in this church. But I want you to know that I don’t fear you.”***

This person is speaking out of a spirit of defiance. What he’s actually saying is, “I will fight you if necessary because I don’t fear you.”

- 10) A pastor friend of mine was told by his church member after service, ***“You remind me of my father. He is so full of himself.”***

This person was telling her pastor that his confidence reeked of pride and arrogance. When a church member tells a pastor, “You are arrogant and proud,” she is not admiring him, but rather demeaning him. Her heart is not full of commitment, but filled with venom. *Pastor – you are full of yourself.*

- 11) An associate pastor said about his head pastor, ***“When he’s away the church grows and many more people attend the services.”***

This associate pastor was in other words saying that the presence of the head pastor is undesirable; and that people in the congregation dislike the contribution of the head pastor. No loyal pastor would ever speak about his head in such a way.

- 12) I once asked an associate pastor, “How is your se

nior pastor doing?”

*He replied, “I don’t know where he is.”*

Then I asked, “How come? Do you not see him regularly?”

*He answered, “Not at all. This yessa master, yessa master, yessa master cannot go on forever.”*

This associate pastor by saying these words was ridiculing the beautiful and orderly relationship that exists between a head and his subordinate. He was depicting it to be a demeaning slave-master relationship. I don’t even need to tell you that a short while after, this associate turned out to be an ungrateful separatist.

**13) *I don’t see why everybody is making such a fuss about that breakaway pastor!***

By making this statement, this pastor was indirectly approving of rebellion and church splits. No wonder he became a rebel in the process of time.

**14)** I asked a pastor, “How was the visit of your senior to the town? Was it successful?”

*“Oh yes, it was fine. We had a good time. But you know our man, he likes expensive Chinese restaurants.”*

Here again, a pastor is making sarcastic and critical remarks about his senior. It may seem like a passing remark, but it is full of contempt.

**15)** A disloyal assistant pastor once said to his head, *“You don’t have any idea what people are saying about*

***you. You don't know what I've had to tell them."***

By saying this, this disloyal pastor is letting you know that your support within the church is waning. He is informing you that he has had to stabilize the feelings of discontent that are in the congregation. He is informing you that you are unpopular and that you are not as great as you may think.

**16) *"I admire your style of leadership. In our church, our man (the head pastor) doesn't give us many opportunities."***

By making this statement, this pastor is expressing his dissatisfaction with his home church. By saying so openly, he is showing that he is not loyal or protective of his home. He is now openly exposing the deficiencies and shortcomings of his church.

## ***Chapter Seven***

# ***A Loyal Assistant***

The assisting minister is anyone operating in any of the following positions: associate pastor, assistant or deputy

pastor, worship leader, departmental pastor, youth pastor, branch pastor, minister of music, etc.

The duties of an assisting minister may look obvious. It may even seem superfluous to write about what is expected of the assisting minister. But I have found the assisting minister to be one of the most important people in the ministry team. He can make or break the ministry by his actions, words and even attitude. **From experience I have learnt that it is better to have no assistant, than to have a bad assistant.** It is better to have no branch church than to have a branch church with a bad branch pastor.

### **A Good Ambassador**

A good assistant minister can be compared to a good ambassador. He does not reflect his own ideas and visions, but only those of his home country (senior minister).

A good assistant minister can also be compared to a good wife. **He must not only obey instructions, but also must genuinely support and flow with the head or senior pastor.** He must not be an independent and difficult to control person.

If you are not faithful with another man's ministry, do not ever expect to have anything of your own.

*And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?*

*Luke 16:12*



There is a proliferation of associate Absaloms, Adonijahs, Ahithophels, Semeis, Joabs, Judases and Lucifers in the church. These are the major rebels of the Bible. Any experienced minister would have had his fair share of these personalities. I am against these people, and I am teaching against these personalities. Decide that you will never become a rebel.

### **It Is Not Easy to Be a Head**

It is not easy to be the head of anything. All of the responsibility falls on you. You are always to blame for everything that goes wrong because you are the ultimate head. In a certain sense, it is easier to be an assistant than it is to be a head. But in another sense it is difficult to always submit, follow and support.

### **You Must Be Called to Assist**

I believe that it is a gift and a calling to be a good associate. If God has not called you to stand in the office of an assisting leader, do not take on yourself a frustrating and difficult task. Decide to be on your own from the beginning. If you are the head you must ensure that you have loyal associates. Anyone who is supposed to be a head but acts as an assistant, will be a bad assistant.

I am going to share with you some lessons that will help you function in the role of an assistant. **If you are going to do it, then you should do it well!** I believe that these are perspicacious and important instructions.

**1) Make mention of your senior pastor often, and in**

**a favorable light.**

Do this whenever you are speaking, preaching or counseling.

## **2) Quote your head as often as possible.**

As I said earlier, you are actually an ambassador representing him. Jesus is supposed to be the most important person in the church and not the pastor. He must be magnified and not anyone else. He said,

*...if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.*

*John 12:32*

However, there is a certain respect and admiration you must have for the head. Do not use your pastor as an illustration of a bad example. You must speak of your head as someone to be admired and followed. In every institution, a particular person must be more prominent – that is the head.

## **Anything With Two Heads is a Beast**

If more than one person is prominent, you will have a situation where there are two heads – a freak. Make mention of the fact that what you are doing is being done on behalf of the head. This makes it clear that there are not two heads, but only one.

## **3) Genuinely admire your pastor and praise him often.**

If you do not admire him you should not be working

with him in the first place! If you are a good assistant, you will see the wisdom in the decisions that your head takes. You will admire the way he preaches and the revelation he brings forth. A bad assistant is full of contempt for all that his head does.

**I learnt some time ago that you receive best from people you admire. That is a secret to catching the anointing.** If you admire other people and have no admiration for your own head, I humbly submit that you are in the wrong place.

**4) Introduce your pastor in an exciting way and make positive or complimentary remarks about everything that he has preached.**

Make statements like, “I was really blessed today by this message”, or “That message was timely.” A loyal associate is full of genuine public compliments for his pastor’s sermon. When the associate makes these open remarks the whole church appreciates their pastor’s message even better!

**5) Announce the visit or arrival of your pastor with excitement.**

We are all excited to see someone we love. A good associate will announce with joy, the arrival of his head and introduce him with pride. Surely the fact that you are not happy to see your head must mean that there is something wrong.

**Don’t Allow Him In!**

I remember a church that had a rebellious pastor. When the general overseer came on a visit, the pastor instructed the ushers not to allow the general overseer to enter the building. Can you believe that? The overall head was physically prevented from entering a church he had founded. A rebellious person is not happy to see his pastor. But a loyal person welcomes his father with joy.

**6) Do not become a receiver of complaints.**

Let people know that if they want to grumble and criticize, they have come to the wrong person. If your office is a center for the discussion of the shortcomings of your pastor, then surely, another Absalom is in the making! It takes a certain evil spirit for people to have enough confidence to bring you all their accusations. Unity begins with the most senior associate. If he is loyal, the others will follow.

**7) You must find genuine excuses for any lapses in the head.**

Everybody makes mistakes, and nobody is always right. So your senior will have his fair share of mistakes.

**It is your duty as a good assistant to defend and protect the developing ministry of your pastor.**

For example, if the head is late for an important function, a good assistant should give a suitable explanation for this lapse. You must emphasize that something *must* have happened to hold him up.

**He is Always Late**

If you make sarcastic remarks like “He’s always late anyway” or “He’s probably sleeping as usual”, you are putting your pastor in a bad light. And that is a sign of disloyalty!

- 8) Whenever your senior pastor is unable to attend a function, you must inform the parties concerned that he had intended to be there himself but could not make it because of very important reasons.**

You must give the impression that your head *is a good person* who was constrained by real and pressing issues. Do not say, “Oh, I do not know why he didn’t come to the hospital to visit you. He was sleeping at home when I last called.”

- 9) Always remind the congregation that you are not the main pastor.**

When people praise you and are very impressed with your ministry, you must be able to tell them happily that there is someone above you. Notice what John the Baptist did when people were so pleased with his ministry. He said,

*...I am NOT the Christ but... I am sent...*

*John 3:28*

If you are not willing to let others know that there is someone more senior to you, surely, there must be something wrong with your loyalty.

- 10) The good assistant tells his admiring congregation where he learnt all that he knows.**

Jesus often said,

*...The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he  
seeth the Father do...*

*John 5:19*

- 11) When you minister to church members let them know that what you are doing is actually being done on behalf of the head, and not on your own behalf.**

When we say, “In the name of Jesus” it makes the people know that we are acting on behalf of Jesus, our Head. For instance, all ministers on earth represent Christ. We do not come in our own name. We come in the name of Jesus.

- 12) Be genuinely happy at the promotion of your pastor.**

Do not secretly think that he does not deserve the fame and popularity that he is getting. Notice what John the Baptist said when the popularity of Jesus was reported to him – “Behold... all men come to him.” Notice again the classic reply of a good assistant:

*He must increase, but I must decrease.*

*John 3:30*

A bad associate gets worried as his pastor is promoted. He feels he is being left behind and people will see too great a difference between himself and his head.

**13) Ensure that everything is well with your head.**

Ensure that he has a seat and is comfortable. Give up your own chair if necessary. Ensure that he is acknowledged and respected by everyone. This is the duty of a good assistant.

**14) Be genuinely excited at the arrival and involvement of your head pastor in any function.**

You must announce the visit of your pastor to your department or branch with excitement. If you see his visit or involvement as an intrusion and a bother, then there must be a problem with you. You are probably a rebellious and independent assistant at heart.

**15) Honor your pastor's wife as well. Minister to her and give her gifts.**

I take note of any person who doesn't respect my wife. It is an important sign to me. If you receive my wife, you have received me. In the same way, if you disrespect and disregard my wife you have done the same to me.

*He that receiveth you receiveth me...*

*Matthew 10:40*

**16) Regard your association with your head as a learning experience.**

Decide to learn something from him everyday. A good assistant or deputy or associate learns from his head; the bad associate sees many mistakes in him.

## **Two Pastors, Two Opinions**

I remember once when two pastors visited from their branch churches outside Accra. They were present on Sunday morning as I ministered. Later, we had a meeting with all the visiting pastors.

One of the pastors told me, “As I listened to you minister on Sunday morning, I thought to myself, ‘This man is repeating himself.’ He went over these points in last week’s sermon.”

“However,” he said, “I happened to speak to the other visiting branch pastor who thought otherwise.”

This other branch pastor also passed a comment about the Sunday service. He said, “I really enjoyed Sunday’s message. The Bishop was very relaxed as he emphasized the points from the previous week’s sermon. It makes the congregation understand the message even better.”

## **Repetition or Good Teaching?**

While one pastor saw it as useless repetition the other saw it as an effective teaching approach. These two pastors confirmed what I believed all along. You can either take your relationship with your head as a learning experience or as a faultfinding mission.

A good assistant is always learning something new. A bad assistant is always tired and bored.

### **17) Acquire your pastor’s tapes.**

‘Soak in’ *his* messages on audio and videotapes. Catch



the anointing on their lives through faithfulness and loyalty.

**18) In your preaching, do not hesitate to refer to your pastor as an example of a successful person.**

Use your pastor as an illustration of noble things.

**19) Flow with decisions and policies made by the head. Do this even if you have a different opinion.**

Only one idea can work at a time. Only one strategy can be implemented at a time. If you are the associate, you are supposed to submit to the leader. You may say, “I don’t think this is the right thing to do, but if that is the decision you have taken. I will abide by it.”

**20) A good assistant does not establish a private, side-fellowship in the church without the knowledge or approval of his pastor.**

**21) Periodically organize pleasant surprises for your pastor.**

Spontaneously celebrate the birthday of your pastor, and give him gifts. This will draw you closer to his heart. The church will be full of the love of God.

**22) When your head is going on a journey, you must be at the airport or the station to see him off. It is also important to be there to welcome him with joy.**

On some occasions you must organize a ‘welcome home’

party. Associates must be glad to have the pastor back home. A bad assistant will say, "If he is going, let him go. He has a wife, I'm sure she will see him off."

### **23) During counseling sessions you must learn to assist properly.**

First of all, the assisting minister must not contribute any counsel that is contrary to what is being said. He must also not try to develop a completely new train of thought, which may only be confusing to the one receiving counsel. Do not try to impress anyone with some 'high sounding' wisdom.

### **Just Emphasize What Your Pastor Says**

Simply help your senior to say what he is saying better and emphasize what he has already said. Do not remain quiet during counseling sessions, this will only make you look like a spectator and will make the counselee feel awkward.

I teach all assisting ministers to use these simple but very powerful phrases whilst assisting their seniors in counseling. These phrases can be introduced at intervals during the counseling session.

1. Do you understand what pastor is saying?
2. Do you understand that pastor is only trying to help you?
3. Pastor is only saying this because he loves you.
4. I wish I had had someone to speak to me in this way

when I was in a similar situation.

When you insert comments like these as the senior minister counsels, you lend greater impact to his words.

**24) A loyal assistant takes notes at meetings whilst his senior pastor is talking or ministering.**

You must realize that it takes a certain amount of humility to write notes when someone is talking. That is why not writing notes is significant. Writing notes means that you are learning something.

### **It Takes Humility to Write Notes**

It means that someone senior or someone with more insight than you is imparting knowledge to you. If the most senior associate writes notes, it will encourage all the others to do the same. All my pastors, from the most senior to the least of them, write notes when I am speaking.

**25) A loyal assistant personally gives gifts to his senior pastor.**

### **Why a gift?**

*A man's gift maketh room for him, and bringeth him before great men.*

*Proverbs 18:16*

A gift means a thousand different things. It means the giver loves you, he appreciates you, he respects you and he honors you. It also means the associate admires you, thinks well of you and wants to be like you.

A gift is also sending a message of encouragement, telling the head that he has been a real blessing. A gift also says 'I want the anointing that is upon you'. All these are not evil thoughts and rule out (to some extent) traitorous plans.

The head may not necessary need the gift. It is most likely that the one giving the gift needs it more! However, when a person ministers a gift to you, a thousand messages are spoken.

**26) A loyal assistant is protective of his Senior Pastor. He is prepared to defend against any problems arising out of his pastor's mistakes.**

Everyone is capable of making mistakes. I can assure you that every senior pastor will make several mistakes during his ministry. Woe to you, if you have a disloyal assistant by your side in the day you make a blunder. A loyal assistant is supposed to cushion the effect of any mistake and protect you.

**27) A good assistant is not ignorant of the fact that his pastor is human and capable of making mistakes.**

Because of this, a good assistant constantly prays for his pastor. He hopes for the best and prays that God will keep them all on the right track. He sees himself as someone who is linked to his senior pastor. They will either sink or swim together. A good associate does not think that his Head is infallible. He knows that his pastor can and does make some mistakes. This is why he prays so hard for him.

**28) A good assistant gives his head pastor wise counsel. He does not feed him with lying praises or flatteries.**

A good assistant knows that he is very close to his head. He knows that his input may be the most valuable. He knows the damaging effect of flattering his senior Pastor and misleading him.

**29) A good associate is content to be an assistant.**

A good associate is happy to stay in his position. Pastors must look out for the spirit of contentment in assisting workers. A content assistant does not covet his pastor's position or anything that is his pastor's.

*Thou shall not covet... any thing that is thy  
neighbour's.*

**Exodus 20:17**

## ***Chapter Eight***

# ***A Disloyal Assistant***

A bad assistant is often difficult to detect. The Bible teaches us to mark them that cause divisions. Senior ministers should use the following signs to identify disloyal behavior in assisting or associate ministers. Honest branch and assisting ministers who identify any of these traits can also judge themselves. Take note, whenever assisting pastors exhibit the following characteristics.

- 1) When things go wrong unfaithful assistants are quick to say, “I knew all along that this would not work.”**

This is because they were not in full support of the idea from the very beginning. Therefore, they are glad that something went wrong. Any assistant who is happy that things have gone wrong is a bad assistant and must be displaced and replaced.

- 2) When you come up with a suggestion, new idea or vision they have no comment to make – either good**

**or bad.**

Silence, especially in time of trouble is often indicative of someone who is not in full agreement.

**3) The disloyal assistant is often thinking, “I would be a better head if I had the chance!”**

He is often thinking that he could actually be the head. A good assistant does not think that way. He is conscious of how difficult it must be to be the head. He has no wish to replace his head but is content to continue assisting until the very end.

**4) A dissatisfied assistant is not happy about the differences between himself and his head that make him look subordinate.**

A bad assistant wants to have all that his head has. He wants to have the same authority, the same status, a similar income and the same car as the head. He sees no reason why there should be a difference. He does not like it when people see that there is a difference between himself and his head pastor.

**5) He is very concerned about his image rather than being concerned about raising the image of his head.**

John the Baptist was a good associate of Christ. He said Jesus must become more important and prominent than he was.

*He must increase, but I must decrease.*

*John 3:30*

That is the attitude of a good assistant. However, a bad assistant gets irritated at the slightest event that in any way lowers his image. He will ask you, “Why did you talk to me that way when we were outside?” If you instruct him in public, he will pretend that he is not even listening. He gives the impression to the flock that although he is an associate, he is his own boss.

**6) A treacherous assistant will eagerly look for opportunities to sit in his head’s chair.**

Such bad assistants cannot wait for opportunities to preach in the stead of their heads. They eagerly look forward to the time when the head travels so they can pose as the leader. This can get so bad that when he is away, they actually use their head’s office and take decisions that they are not entitled to make. In contrast, a good assistant constantly realizes that he is not the head and cannot fit into his head’s position.

**7) The bad assistant sees all the faults and mistakes in the senior minister’s life. He rarely sees any good thing.**

The bad assistant sees mostly mistakes in what the head says or does. He thinks the head does not speak well in public. He thinks the head prolongs the services. He has information that a lot of people are offended about the way the head speaks to them. In other words, the bad assistant



has a catalogue of the “sins” of his head. *But he has no such catalogue of the good attributes of his head.*

**8) The disloyal associate notices the good attributes of external ministers, but never speaks positively about his own pastor.**

A bad associate constantly observes the successes of outside ministers and praises them. Meanwhile, he is always complaining about the shortcomings of his own ministry. The fact is that everyone has faults! If you have a critical attitude (third stage of disloyalty) you will notice twenty-one mistakes in everything your head does. This fact is highlighted by the way you notice and praise the good in other ministers.

**9) A subversive associate constantly listens to tapes from external ministers and learns from them. But he never listens to his own head pastor’s tapes.**

Surely, an associate must listen to the tapes of his own head pastor. Even though he is an associate and the next in rank, the head is still his pastor. The feeding that comes from the pulpit is a blessing even to assistant pastors. The fact that an associate has nothing to learn from his head is a serious indicator. There is nothing wrong with assistants who are constantly learning from outside ministers. But there is something very wrong when these associates never seem to learn from their own pastors.

**10) A disaffected associate always feels that things should be done in a different way.**

As he watches the senior pastor, he thinks to himself,

“My head should have brought in more scriptures when he was teaching.” As he looks on during counseling sessions, he says to himself, “He’s not handling this case properly.” He calmly observes his head handling administrative issues, but feels that there is a far better way of going about things. This is a mind of discontentment and disloyalty. The bad associate is not happy and convinced about his head’s ministerial capabilities. I wouldn’t like to have such an associate around me. I would never know what he is thinking.

**11) A disloyal associate is a habitual and persistent receiver of complaints. In other words, he is a magnet for complaints.**

Some members of the flock seem to find their way to these bad assistants with all sorts of complaints. Often they say to them, “You are more approachable than the head.” Watch out for these so-called ‘approachable’ assistants. If I love my wife, I will not allow people to complain about her.

### **Department of Complaints**

If I love my associates, I will not create the environment for people to say negative things about them to me. In the same way, if my associate is loyal to me, no one can readily speak evil of me to him. There will simply be no good reception for these complaining and murmuring Christians. No one is perfect and we all make many mistakes.

**If you are in the complaining department of the church, there must be something wrong with you. Why**

do people choose to come to you whenever they want to grumble or murmur about something?

**12) They do not clap, smile, say “amen”, shout, or laugh when the head is preaching.**

These bad assistants look like diplomatic “know-it-alls”. They maintain straight and uninterested faces throughout the sermon. Certainly, a loyal and supportive associate would like to encourage his Head to preach, rather than making things more difficult. If your associates become exuberant when others minister whereas they maintain their unsmiling and rigid faces when you are ministering, there *is* something wrong.

**13) A disloyal associate does not sing, or lift up his hands during worship. Neither does he clap his hands during praise.**

These diplomatic associates hinder the flow and the work of the Spirit by their very rigid presence. Get rid of all such unhappy people who do not really want to be around. The church is better off without them.

**14) A disloyal associate does not flow with the general *mood* of the congregation.**

When everybody is laughing, he does not laugh. On a good day, he may afford a faint smile. When everybody is exclaiming in agreement, he may give a diplomat nod of consent. When everybody's hands are raised, he will lift up only one hand. **You see, they are simply not as impressed as the rest of the church.**

**15) A bad assistant is not happy at the wealth and blessings of his senior pastor.**

He feels the head has too much anyway. Disloyal associates feel that they do the “donkey work” while the head reaps all the rewards. He thinks in his heart, “Monkey dey work, baboon dey chop”, as is said in Ghana. This is because he wants those same things himself.

**16) A disloyal assistant openly disagrees with his head pastor.**

Any associate who publicly displays disagreement with his head is sending a message to the whole church. Some associates may frown and you will see disapproval written

all over their faces. What they are saying here is, “I am opposed to the decisions that have been made. And I want everyone to know I was against it.”

When an associate comes out publicly instead of waiting for a private forum to express his opinion, something is very wrong. He is undermining the authority of the head. Such a person is nearer the stage of full-blown rebellion because he doesn’t care about what people think. Do you need me to tell you to get rid of this person?

**17) The disloyal associate considers the privileges and honor bestowed upon his head as uncalled-for and wasteful.**

Instead of seeing certain things as necessary privileges accompanying the office of a head, they are constantly unhappy (whether openly or secretly) about any fame, respect and rights of the head. They consider all these as *frivolous* and as a waste of resources. You will notice that the one who thought in this way during the ministry of Jesus was the betrayer, Judas.

**18) They constantly have thoughts flashing through their mind about leaving the church.**

They may come to you and say they are confused as to whether they are in the will of God, or not. When others are gladly receiving the message, they are contemplating whether to hand in their resignation or not. As they sit at pastoral board meetings, they hope in their hearts that they will not be there to implement the decisions made during the meetings. Identify such assistants and be careful not

to discuss your future projections with them.

**19) Disaffected associates do not make any ‘extra’ effort!**

Notice people who do not make any ‘extra’ effort outside their specified duties. A lazy and reluctant assistant is a dangerous liability. When a person is unhappy in what he is doing, he does it listlessly and without enthusiasm. Watch the apathetic characters around you, they may have already departed from you in their hearts.

**20) Traitorous associates listen to bad advice from ‘empty’ and non-spiritual wives.**

Such a wife is prone to stirring up discontent in the assistant pastor’s mind. She passes comments and suggests things that make the assistant pastor feel dissatisfied with his rank and position. These ‘empty’ wives think mainly of physical comfort, public impressions and their status in the church. They are often unaware of the spiritual implications of the advice they give.

A bad assistant is all ears to the carnal suggestions and pressure coming from his ‘empty’ wife. There are many loyal leaders who degenerate into disaffected and mutinous people because of influence from their wives. The Bible teaches us that King Ahab was galvanized into doing much evil by Jezebel, his wife.

*...Ahab... whom Jezebel his wife stirred up.*

**1 Kings 21:25**

## ***Chapter Nine***

# ***Why Judas Betrayed Christ***

I have always wondered why Judas betrayed his master Jesus Christ. It is difficult to see why Judas would betray Christ because we see Jesus as the King of kings and the Lord of lords. Why would anyone want to fight against God? Why would anyone want to have innocent blood on his hands?

Many people just see Judas Iscariot as a detestable person. Most people refuse to name their children after Judas. But I believe many people were named Judas before the era of Christ.

I believe Judas was a trustworthy person when he started out. In fact, the Bible tells us that there is a point at which Satan entered into Judas. That means there was a point in time when there was no devil in Judas.

### **Judas: The Trusted Minister of Finance**

If Judas weren't trustworthy, Jesus wouldn't have entrusted him with the money. **Most people appoint the trustworthiest person to be their treasurer.** I have appointed trustworthy people to be treasurers in my church and I am sure you are doing the same. The Minister of Finance of any country must be very close to the Prime Minister.

In this chapter, I want us to analyze what might have led Judas to betray Christ. Was this something that could only happen to Judas? Or is it something that can happen to us?

## **You Will Have a Judas**

I remember once I sat with a senior church leader who said something that struck me! He said, "I don't care what leadership style you have." "I don't care what type of leadership principles you are using."

He continued, "You are not greater than Jesus. If Jesus had a Judas, you will too!"

He went on, "No matter what you do, you will have to experience betrayal because your master experienced it." This made me think deeply. I realized that what this senior minister said was true.

Every church will have a Judas. Every church will experience the scourge of treacherous leaders.

*... it must needs be that offences come...*

*Matthew 18:7*

**There will by all means be a Judas from among your trusted leadership.** The Bible describes him as a trusted friend who eats, drinks and fellowships with you. The



Bible says that he is not an ordinary friend, but a *familiar* friend. That means, someone who is very close.

*...mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me.*

*Psalm 41:9*

Dear leader and pastor, you cannot escape this reality. It is difficult to believe that someone you have known for years will fight against you one day.

Maybe up to now you have not encountered this, but I assure you that as you become more experienced you will find out how true and accurate the Word of God is. I hardly know of any seasoned minister who has not experienced betrayal in one form or other.

### **Which of Us Will Be the Judas?**

The truth I have just shared with you has two implications. The implication for all heads is simple. **Anticipate disloyalty and create a system that will not collapse in the event of betrayal.** Notice how Jesus' ministry continued effectively after Judas had fallen away. The implication for assistants, associates and followers is frightening but also very real – *one of us will be a Judas. Just make sure it's not you!*

*...woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!*

*Matthew 18:7*

Apostle Paul knew that it was inevitable that treacherous people would arise from amongst the congregation, so he said,

*...after my departing shall GRIEVOUS WOLVES  
enter...*

*Acts 20:29*

These grievous wolves are the anarchists and betrayers of the church. Other versions describe them as savage, monstrous, merciless, fierce and evil wolves. Paul said they *would* come!

I believe many people, though not called Judas, will behave like Judas when the opportunity presents itself. It's just a matter of time. Before we begin this study, I want us to remember that Jesus prayed all night before he chose his twelve apostles.

You must also note that the disciples were very close to Jesus. They traveled together. They talked together and they lived together.

How could someone so evil rise out of such a fraternity? These reasons I am going to share with you, although theoretical propositions are very real. I think they apply especially to people who embark on full-time ministry or ministry as a career.

### ***1. Judas was the odd one out.***

All the disciples came from Galilee, but Judas came from Kerioth. **Judas was the exception to the Galilean team. HE WAS THE ODD ONE OUT in a related Galilean family.** Whenever you are the exception or the odd person within a group, your oddness may make you see things in a different light. If you are the only black person among

many whites, you may always see their jokes and comments directed against your color.

## **Who Is the Odd One Out?**

If you are the only woman amongst men, you may always interpret their decisions as being targeted against women. If you are the only uneducated person amongst many educated people, the devil will come to you many times and tell you that the people think you are stupid.

Watch out for people who are circumstantially peculiar. Judas probably began to see himself as different from the others. He gradually grew apart as these thoughts raced through his mind. Many disloyal people are casualties of the “odd one out” experience.

### **2. *Judas was disappointed at the type of training he was undergoing.***

He initially felt that joining the ministry team would elevate his status and give him opportunities to minister. To his surprise, he became an errand boy, a waiter, an usher and a scavenger.

### **Judas the Usher**

*And Jesus said, Make the men sit down...*

*John 6:10*

### **Judas the Waiter**

*...the disciples [**distributed food**] to them that were set down...*

*John 6:11*

**Judas the Errand boy**

*...then sent Jesus two disciples,*

*Matthew 21:1*

**Judas the Scavenger**

*...Gather up the fragments that remain...*

*John 6:12*

## **Judas Was Humiliated**

He was humiliated before thousands of people as he carried baskets of food from place to place. At a point, Judas thought to himself: this is not what I bargained for.

- 3. Judas was probably disappointed at the poor accommodation that the ministry office provided for him.***

He thought that he would get better conditions of service. But in following Jesus he did not even have a good apartment or rented house to live in. In fact, he became a homeless street dweller.

*...but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.*

*Luke 9:58*

Judas thought to himself, “Jesus has not taken into consideration some important administrative details.” Perhaps Judas hated staying with friends and crowding into people’s homes. Imagine twelve grown men crowding into a small house.

*And being In Bethany in the house of Simon the leper...*

*Mark 14:3*

- 4. Judas was disappointed at the poor transportation provided by the ministry office.***

Perhaps Judas thought that by going into full-time ministry he would have the luxury of owning his own donkey or mule (car). This was not to be so. The only person to

ride on a donkey was Jesus himself, and even that was at the end of his ministry.

*...thy King [**Jesus**] cometh... sitting upon an ass [**donkey**]...*

*Matthew 21:5*

What a disappointment for the aspiring young man! A number of people defect from their ministry jobs when they discover that good cars are not as readily available as they imagined. What is even more difficult for them is when only the Chief Executive (the Lord Jesus, in the case of Judas) seems to enjoy certain benefits.

**5. *Perhaps Judas was not happy with the type of food he had to eat when he became a full-time minister.***

Judas was probably looking forward to some good restaurants and expensive high quality food. Judas probably thought that he had had better times when he was not working for Christ.

## No Chinese Restaurants?

He hoped for some good Chinese dinners with international guests. *But the worst came when he was asked to eat other people's leftovers.*

*...and filled twelve BASKETS WITH THE FRAGMENTS [leftovers]... which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.*

*John 6:13*

**6. *Perhaps Judas began to see Jesus as a wicked miser who would never be generous to his employees.***

This point was emphasized when Jesus asked his disciples to collect the leftover crumbs. As Judas carried his basket of crumbs, he must have thought to himself, "This is the limit! I cannot take this stingy treatment any longer."

*...Gather up the fragments that remain...*

*John 6:12*

**7. *Perhaps Judas did not like the way Jesus was being treated specially.***

He thought that the expense being lavished on Christ was unnecessary. "Who is this Christ anyway?"

he thought. Why spend so much money on one man? There are thirteen of us on the team now. Why single out one person and expend so much on him? *After all, we started this ministry together a few years ago.* He began to think that there was an imbalance in the distribution of church finances.

*...To what purpose is this waste?*

*Matthew 26:8*

**8. *Perhaps Judas felt that the emphasis and direction of the ministry had changed.***

He felt that more money should be given to the poor. As the treasurer, Judas knew how money was being spent in the ministry. He now found Jesus' financial and administrative policies defective.

*Why was not this... given to the poor?*

*John 12:5*

**9. *Maybe Judas had accused Jesus of misusing the church's finances.***

I want to tell you a secret, a revelation that you must always remember. **Someone who accuses others tenaciously of horrible crimes, is often guilty of the same.** A person who has never been involved in certain things doesn't usually accuse others in an adamant fashion. This is because those evil crimes do not even come to him as options that he could take.

## **He Accused His Wife Continually**

I remember one man who continually accused his wife of adultery. He would say to her, "I know you. You are



going out with another man.” But she was not doing anything of the sort. Ironically, *he* was having multiple affairs with different women.

It was Judas who accused Jesus of wasting and misusing the church’s money. And it was Judas himself who was the thief.

*...he [Judas] was a thief...*

*John 12:6*

#### ***10. Perhaps Judas wanted to get rich quickly.***

He thought his income was too low for the work he did. Even though Jesus promised that those who followed him would have car loans and housing benefits he could not envisage when such a promise would materialize.

*...he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time,  
HOUSES...*

*Mark 10:30*

So he began to think of other means to get money quickly. He began by stealing money from the offering.

*...he [Judas] was a thief...*

*John 12:6*

After a while this was not enough. He felt a big one-time deal would earn him a lot of money. Considering the hatred that the Jews had for Christ, he realized that if he could sell-off Christ he could make it in a big way.

*And Judas... went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them ...they were glad, and promised to give him money...*

*Mark 14:10,11*

***11. Perhaps Judas had become too familiar with Christ.***

There is a saying, “familiarity breeds contempt”. This saying is not in the Bible but it is true. Judas had now been with Jesus for three years. He had seen Jesus happy.

*...Jesus rejoiced...*

*Luke 10:21*

He had seen Jesus crying.

*Jesus wept.*

*John 11:35*

Judas did not only know Christ in his moments of great power, miracles and anointing. He knew him when he was vulnerable, like any other man. Judas would not have attempted to murder Christ if he did not see him as an ordinary human being.

*...MINE OWN FAMILIAR FRIEND... hath lifted up his heel against me.*

*Psalms 41:9*

Familiarity had crept in as Judas engaged in so many day-to-day activities with his master. He had been with Jesus while he ate. He had been with Jesus when he went to the toilet. The close fellowship that Judas had with Jesus led him to think that he was someone easy to betray or even kill. Judas did not see Jesus as God but as man. Nobody in his or her right mind would attempt to betray God. But many people would attempt to betray another man.

As soon as you begin to see your man of God as a mere man, you will no longer receive from him. Evil thoughts of betrayal will now enter your mind. Ministers must therefore not allow themselves to become too familiar.

*...mine own FAMILIAR friend...*

*Psalm 41:9*

The congregation must also not want to be too familiar with their ministers. This is important so that the temptations familiarity brings may reduce.

***12. Perhaps Judas may have realized that Jesus had discovered he was a thief.***

It was a known fact (even before Christ was crucified) that Judas was a thief.

*...but because he [Judas] was a thief...*

*John 12:6*

Perhaps the Lord was giving Judas an opportunity to come clean. Some government officials, when they realize that their corruption has been uncovered, decide to burn down their entire office. This is an attempt to destroy all relevant documents and evidence. Judas probably realized that he had been discovered and feared that he would be exposed further. He decided that he would attack Jesus before anything happened to him.

**Many rebels are guilty of other crimes in addition to rebellion.** They often time their rebellion to cover up other offences. Judas timed his betrayal to exterminate Christ before he could publicly disgrace him. Some ministers, fearing public discipline for their wrongdoing, fight against authority. They pretend to have justifiable reasons for doing so. But beneath the façade are many shameful crimes.

## **He Attacked Me First**

I remember the bitter attacks of one minister against my life and ministry. As I mused over all the lies and unbelievable stories that this gentleman spread about me, I realized it was just an attempt to cover his own shame. As is said in Ghana, *“do them before they do you.”*

**13. *Perhaps Judas thought that if Jesus was to really die he would lose his job. He had to secure himself.***

He felt the future was not so bright. With the impending departure of Christ, Judas conceived a plan that would give him enough money to set-up a private business.

*And Judas... went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them... they were glad, and promised to give him money...*

*Mark 14:10,11*

Perhaps Judas thought that if he were to betray Christ and earn some money it would stabilize his family financially for the next few years.

***14. Perhaps Judas knew too much about too many things.***

He knew about the offerings.

*...he [Judas]... had the bag [account book], and bare what was put therein.*

*John 12:6*

He knew how much money came into the ministry. He knew Jesus' timetable. He knew where Jesus lived and when he traveled. Sometimes people know things that do not help them. This is because they see things from the wrong perspective. Be careful about those who count the money of the church. Many of those who count the money do not pay the church bills. They just know the income of the church, but they do not know the expenditure.

*...neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in things too high for me.*

*Psalms 131:1*

They often have a warped idea about the kind of wealth

that the church must have. This can lead to disloyalty and treachery.

**15. *Perhaps he thought that the power and anointing on Jesus Christ was waning because Jesus kept talking about his death.***

Usually only depressed people keep talking about death. Jesus Christ calmly predicted his death several times.

*And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer... and be killed...*

*Mark 8:31*

Each time Jesus talked about the end of his ministry, Judas must have thought, “The fight has gone out of this man. He is not as powerful as he was three years ago.”

“When I first knew this man he would powerfully confront the Pharisees and Sadducees. He would preach with such zeal. No one could stand before the anointed preaching of Christ,” he remembered. “Things have changed. The anointing has lifted.”

Many observant but natural people see the man of God with a very critical eye. They notice variations in the mood and presentation of the Word. Over a long period, some critical people may conclude that the man of God is in a “low” season.

## **Don't Make a Mistake**

There may be a genuine change in a minister's outlook

because God may have moved the person on to another phase of his ministry. However, make no mistake about this! It does not mean that God is not with him.

When Jesus cried, “O God why hast thou forsaken me”, many people thought that he was an ordinary man who had come to an unfortunate demise. Little did they know that this was just a stage in the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ? **Unfortunately, Judas misinterpreted the phase and change in Jesus ministry.**

## ***Chapter Ten***

# ***Avoiding Disloyalty***

How can we escape from the dangers of betrayal? I believe one of the ways is to learn how to honorably leave an institution without rebelling – this is what I call *Godly Resignation*.

### **Godly Resignation**

Leaving a church or ministry (resignation, in other words) is something that happens – whether we like it or not. Most of the time people never intend to leave. However, there may be some reasons why resignation occurs.

### **Resignation is Rarely Peaceful**

Resignation is rarely done in a cordial atmosphere. Resignation in the church setting usually occurs in the midst of misunderstandings, conflicts, accusations and unhealed wounds.



I have rarely seen a peaceful departure.

I believe there are three reasons why departure or resignation may be biblically necessary:

- i. ***When it comes as an explicit instruction from the Lord.***
- ii. ***When there is a major doctrinal deviation in the ministry.***
- iii. ***When there is significant and chronic moral deviation.***

Why is it important to leave a ministry that is suffering from major doctrinal or moral decay? That wrong spirit is likely to affect you eventually.

If you have to resign, there are certain standards of behavior expected of you before, during and after your resignation. How you go about your departure will show everyone whether you are a faithful worker or just another anarchist.

- a) Give ample notice of your intentions to leave the ministry or church. **Ample notice means at least one year.**
- b) **Resignation must never be a surprise move.** If it comes as a surprise, then it is an evil, calculated misdeed.
- c) If you must resign, resign alone. **Do not try to influence other ministers to leave with you.**

- d) **Do not try to win the hearts of people long before you leave, by making special friends all around and developing close relationships with vital church members.** In the end you will leave behind a confused group of members who have to choose between their relationship with you and their commitment to the church. This is another reason why you need to declare your intentions of resignation long beforehand.
- e) Be grateful to the church from whence you are departing, and **do not spread bad stories about them after you leave.**

*Whoso rewardeth evil for good, evil shall not depart from his house.*

*Proverbs 17:13*

- f) Do not ‘muddy’ the waters you have drunk from, leaving behind a group of confused people. By saying evil things about the church you just left, you will ‘muddy’ the waters and prevent others from being trained and blessed by the same ministry that blessed you.

*Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet?*

*Ezekiel 34:18*

This will invite a curse into your life. It cannot be possible that the church you were trained in has become such an evil place. **The reason why most ministers disappear into oblivion after departure from a major ministry is because they bring upon themselves a curse by the manner in which they leave.**

- g) If you intend to set up a church you must declare your intentions to the senior minister. **You must however discourage others from following you.**
- h) Do not set up a church anywhere within a 10-mile radius **from where you used to be.**
- i) It is improper, cheap and unethical to establish a church virtually next door to your mother church.
- j) **It also smacks of the logic of the jungle** to use the same or very similar names that are unique to the church or ministry you are leaving. **The new name should in no way give unclear signals and reminders of your recent defection. For instance, if the church you are resigning from is called *Angels Harvest and Healing Center International*, do not call your new church *Angels Salvation and Healing Center International*.**
- k) After departure, you must speak well about where you came from. **This will give you some credibility.**

## **The Jacob Style**

Notice that Jacob resigned from Laban's ministry in the wrong way. He left unexpectedly. His absence was detected after three days. Jacob almost received a curse for this.

*And Jacob stole away UNAWARES to Laban the Syrian, in that HE TOLD HIM NOT that he fled. So he fled with all that he had; and he rose up, and passed over the river, and set his face toward the mount Gilead. AND IT WAS TOLD LABAN ON THE THIRD DAY THAT JACOB WAS FLED.*

*Genesis 31:20-22*

But for God's intervention, Laban could have spoken a curse on Jacob (v29).

## **The Moses Style**

Observe that Moses on the other hand, left his father-in-law Jethro's ministry in the right way. He had been with him for forty years. Notice also that when it mattered many years later, he could receive help from, and relate to Jethro.

*And Moses went and returned to Jethro his father in law, and said unto him, Let me go, I pray thee, and return unto my brethren which are in Egypt, and see whether they be yet alive. And Jethro said to Moses, GO IN PEACE.*

*Exodus 4:18*

*And Moses went out to meet his father in law... and they asked each other of their welfare; and they came into the tent... And it came to pass on the morrow, that Moses sat to judge the people: and the people stood by Moses from the morning unto the evening... Harken now unto my [Jethro] voice, I will give thee counsel, and God shall be with thee...*

*Exodus 18:7,13,19*

Moses' method of departure from his ministry in the desert is more ethical. It was followed by blessings many years later. Let us all learn from these lessons. It is my prayer that you would read over these truths repeatedly. I believe that the Lord will give you an even greater understanding of how to behave in the kingdom.

*...that thou mayest know HOW THOU OUGHTEST TO BEHAVE THYSELF in the house of God...*

*1 Timothy 3:15*

## Can Rebels Repent?

When a person gets involved with betrayal is there any hope for him?

I believe that not every traitor is deeply rebellious. Some are innocent and some are not. Let me point out to you that it was not only Judas who deserted Christ in his last hours. Every single disciple, except John the beloved disowned Christ when it mattered most. There were a few people standing at the cross in the heat of the crisis: John the beloved, Mary the mother of Jesus, and Mary Magdalene. The other disciples were nowhere to be found.

*Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother...*

*John 19:25,26*

Peter cursed and denied ever having had anything to do with Christ. In spite of this, the fate of Peter was very different from the fate of Judas. I believe that Peter's desertion was not of the heart, but it was an emotional and irrational action that may be expected of most people in his circumstances.

What about Judas? Didn't he repent? The Bible says that he went back to the High Priest saying that he had betrayed innocent blood.

*And he cast down the pieces of silver... and went*

*and hanged himself.*

*Matthew 27:5*

He *did* admit that he had done something wrong. Is this not repentance? The answer is no, this is not repentance. I have often wondered why Judas is not considered as someone who genuinely repented. The answer is simple. **Judas admitted that he was wrong, but he did not retrace his steps.**

To repent means to turn around, and to change. Judas never changed. He did not turn around or retrace his steps. He just admitted that he was wrong, jumped out of the boat and hung himself! He did not want to see anybody or face anyone. He just excused himself.

He could not bear to look at the faces of the other disciples and admit to them that he was wrong. I have seen pastors admit one or two mistakes that they have made. But that did not amount to repentance. Remember what I said earlier: admission of sins is not the same as repenting. Many people who come up with apologies have the “what did they say I should say” attitude.

**She asked, “What did they say I should say?”**

There was once a disagreement between a husband and a wife. The problem got so bad that the families had to intervene. After much discussion, it was discovered that the wife was at fault. The council of elders asked the lady to apologize to the family and especially to her husband.

She grudgingly agreed and went from elder to elder saying to them, “I’m sorry for what I did.” When she got

to her husband, with a bored look on her face, she turned around to ask the others, “*What did they say I should say to him?*”

Dear reader, by asking this question she was confirming that she indeed had not repented. She was being forced to admit her mistakes. That is why she had to ask, “*What did they say I should say?*” Never forget that true repentance is different from admitting one’s sins.

I was once discussing with a pastor friend, what to do if a rebellious separatist came back claiming he had repented from his sins. We agreed that the following seven points would help to differentiate between a forced admission of wrongdoing and true godly repentance.

1. *First of all, admit to yourself and to God that you have been a rebel.*
2. *Ask God for his mercy and forgiveness.*
3. *Confess your rebellion to those against whom you rebelled.*
4. *Tell your rebel group that you have realized that you were a rebel. Explain to them your decision to repent.*
5. *Go to the church from which you rebelled and confess your sins publicly.*
6. *Confess to any other parties that were involved during the time of your rebellion.*
7. *Those from whom you rebelled will forgive you for your rebellion and release you in God’s blessing.*





## ***Chapter Eleven***

# ***The North Wind***

*The north wind driveth away rain: so doth an angry countenance a backbiting tongue.*

***PROVERBS 25:23***

**In nature, the north wind drives away clouds thus preventing unnecessary problems from storms. We need to drive away certain potential storms from our midst. Many people do not realize that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.**

**...Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?**

**1 Corinthians 5:6**

**It just takes a little venom to kill a six-foot tall, eighty-kilogram man. In other words, the whole body can be polluted or destroyed by a drop of poison.**

**Many businessmen do not know that by maintaining**

certain employees, they are destroying their firms.

When someone hates you there is very little you can do about it. The best thing you can do is to ask the person to be separate from you. It is time to create an airtight culture in your organization. An organization that is unfriendly to scoffers and disloyal people!

If you live in a culture where people do not speak their minds this is very important. You may have people smiling at you all the time and passing pleasant remarks. But this means nothing when in reality they don't believe in you.

When I was in South Africa, I frequently noticed a signboard in the front of many public buildings. It said, "*Right of Admission Reserved*". What it meant was that they had the right to exclude anyone whose presence was not desirable. I believe that the church has a right to exclude people whose presence is not desirable. God is love and the environment that must prevail in the church is love! **Anything or anyone who consistently destroys the love atmosphere of the church should be driven away in the same way that the north wind drives away unnecessary storms.**

**These are spots in your feasts of charity...**

## **Jude 12**

Who are these “spots in your feasts of charity”? What are these intrusions that disturb the environment of Christian love, peace and harmony? Read verse ten of the Book of Jude and you will see for yourself.

**But these SPEAK EVIL OF THOSE THINGS WHICH THEY KNOW NOT: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for the reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. THESE ARE SPOTS in your feasts of charity... CARRIED ABOUT OF WINDS...**

### **Jude 10-12**

If these spots in our feasts of love can be carried by winds, it shows how insubstantial they are. It is time to allow the north wind to blow these things away.

You could actually call the north wind, the wind of exclusion. Let me give you some examples of people who may have to be blown away by the north wind of exclusion.

### **The Wind of Exclusion**

***1. A backbiting tongue must be flushed out of the church.***

A backbiting person is someone who bites your back.

In other words, he does not have the boldness to do it in front of you. He has to wait for your back to be turned before he speaks. Such people are dangerous. They are potential Absalom. If discovered they should repent or be *flushed out*.

***2. A slanderer is somebody who must be driven away from the church.***

Slander comes from the Hebrew word ‘*Lashan*’. *It means to use the tongue to defame, abuse, scandalize, belittle or blacken the character of another.* King David was slandered by many people. Do you need people to blacken your character? Certainly not!

**I am forgotten as a dead man out of mind: I am like a broken vessel. For I have heard the slander of many: fear was on every side: while they took counsel against me, they devised to take away my life.**

**Psalm 31:12,13**

Why was David like a broken vessel? Because of slander. Many ministers are like broken vessels which can no longer hold the anointing. If slander has such a terrible effect on God’s chosen vessels then it must not be entertained at all!

- 3. A double-tongued person must be driven away from the church.***

**Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued...**

**1 Timothy 3:8**

- 4. A murmurer must be driven away from the church.***

**Do all things without murmurings and disputings.**

**Philippians 2:14**

People who speak undertone and bring a spirit of unwillingness are dangerous people. It is very difficult to lead unwilling and discouraged people.

- 5. Evil “critics” must be driven away from the church.***

- 6. Talebearers must be driven from the church.***

Talebearers are people who invent stories or recreate events to make them look unwholesome. Such people separate friends and pollute the environment with unhealthy poison. They must be driven away from the church.

**Where no wood is, there the fire goeth out: so where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth. As coals are to burning coals, and wood to fire; so is a contentious man to kindle strife. The words of a talebearer are as wounds, and they go down into the innermost parts of the belly.**

## **Proverbs 26:20-22**

Notice that the Bible says that where there is no tale-bearer there is no strife. In other words, if you want to get rid of strife, get rid of the talebearers

### ***7. Accusers must be driven away from the church.***

The devil's nature is to accuse. Anyone who rises up with the spirit of accusation is actually representing the devil. One of the most appropriate names for the devil is accuser of the brethren. In the church, there are always people who allow themselves to be used as agents of accusations. Such people create stories that look very true but are not, and they end up sowing seeds of confusion in the church. Accusers must be driven out!

### ***8. Liars must be driven away from the church.***

I remember one young man who made it his duty to tell lies about me. This gentleman would not leave the church. He wanted to be with us and still malign us constantly. One day, one of the pastors in the church just asked him to leave. It seems he did not know how to leave the church. People do not realize that if you are not happy with what pertains in the church, you should simply move away without destroying the church of Christ.

***9. People who cause divisions must be driven away from the church.***

**Now I beseech you, brethen, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.**

**Romans 16:17**

*It is sometimes important to take a good spiritual history. You will then discover what people have done in every church they have been in. Dear pastors, don't be overly excited when you receive a member from another church. Find out why he moved. Whatever problems that fellow was associated with in the old place will surely come up again!*

***10. People who cause quarrels.***

**...them which cause divisions and OFFENCES...**

**Romans 16:17**

*There are some people who are always causing offences and quarrels. These are contentious individuals. They delight in magnifying frivolous and vexatious issues until these become a pivot for divisions. It is important to mark these people and avoid them.*



## ***Chapter Twelve***

# ***The Good Fruits of Loyalty***

**...Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things. I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.**

*Matthew 25:21*

This scripture outlines two important blessings that follow loyal or faithful people. They receive an increase (many things) from the Lord. As you pray for growth in your church and ministry, remember that loyalty is the master key to expansion. Loyalty makes you persist in the same thing until it bears fruit.

I suggest that you engage in a little research. You will discover that large growing churches differ in style, strategy and emphasis. Some of them are soul winning churches, others have an emphasis on miracles and the Holy Spirit. Some mega-churches are oriented towards social services and political issues. Yet still, some large churches have an emphasis on prosperity and dominion! All of these

churches differ greatly in many areas. However, a closer look will reveal that there are some common denominators in every large church.

**Almost all large churches are led by pastors who have remained faithful to the same church for a long time.** When pastors move around every few years, they do not experience consistent growth. If you are a minister who desires expansion and growth, you must be prepared to stay in one place for a long time. Ask God for the privilege of investing your entire life in one location.

I am in the ministry for the rest of my life. My commitment to the people around me is a lifetime commitment and vice versa. I am loyal to them and I pray that they will be loyal to me. The blessing of largeness is reserved for faithful and loyal people.

The second blessing of faithfulness is entering the joy of the Lord. This means experiencing the favour of God. When the favour of God is upon you, your enemies will not flourish.

**By this I know that thou favourest me, because mine enemy doth not triumph over me.**

*Psalm 41:11*

Be a loyal person so that you can have great growth in your business or ministry. Be a loyal person so that you can have God's favour over all that you set your hand to do.

May you one day hear those coveted words, "*Well done, good and faithful (loyal) servant.*" May you experience the good fruits and benefits that belong to every faithful Christian!

*For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:*

*In Africa:*

Parchment House  
P.O. Box DC 1034  
Dansoman, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa

*Rest of the world:*

Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ

*Website:*

[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)

## *Parchment House*

## **First Steps to Spiritual Growth:** *How to have meaningful time with God*

By Rick Warren

(Condensed from his book,  
*Dynamic Bible Study Methods*)

Once you're convinced that a daily quiet time is necessary for spiritual growth, then how do you go about having one? You may be motivated to do it but may not know how.

You need to consider **four essentials elements of a good quiet time**:

- Start with the proper attitudes.
- Select a specific time.
- Choose a special place.
- Follow a simple plan.

## START WITH THE PROPER ATTITUDES

In God's eyes, why you do something is far more important than what you do.

On one occasion God told Samuel, *"The Lord does not look at the things man looks at. Man looks at the outward appearance, but the Lord looks at the heart."* (1 Samuel 16:7, NIV\*) It is quite possible to do the right thing but with the wrong attitude.

This was Amaziah's problem, for *"he did what was right in the eyes of the Lord but not wholeheartedly."* (2 Chronicles 25:2)

When you come to meet with God in the quiet time, **you should have these proper attitudes:**

1. **Expectancy** - Come before God with anticipation and eagerness. Expect to have a good time of fellowship with Him and receive a blessing from your time together. That was what David expected: *"O God, You are my God, earnestly I seek You."* (Psalm 63:1)
2. **Reverence** - Don't rush into God's presence, but prepare your heart by being still before Him and letting the quietness clear away the thoughts of the world. Listen to the prophet Habakkuk: *"The Lord is in His holy temple; let all the earth be silent before Him."* (Habakkuk 2:20; see also Psalm 89:7) Coming into the presence of the Lord is not like going to a football game or some other form of entertainment.
3. **Alertness** - Get wide-awake first. Remember that you are meeting with the Creator, the Maker of heaven and earth, the Redeemer of men. Be thoroughly rested and alert. The best preparation for a quiet time in the morning begins the night before. Get to bed early so you will be in good shape to meet God in the morning; He deserves your full attention.
4. **Willingness to obey** - This attitude is crucial: you don't come to your quiet time to choose what you will do or not do, but with the purpose of doing anything and everything that God wants you to do. Jesus said, *"If anyone chooses to do God's will he will find out whether My teaching comes from God or whether I speak on My own."* (John 7:17) So come to meet the Lord having already chosen to do His will no matter what.

## SELECT A SPECIFIC TIME

The specific time has to do with **when you should have your quiet time** and how long it should be. The general rule is this: **The best time is when you are at your best!** Give God the best part of your day - when you are the freshest and most alert. Don't try to serve God with your leftovers (leftover time). Remember, too, that *your* best time may be different from someone else's.

For most of us, however, early in the morning seems to be the best time. It was Jesus' own practice to rise early to pray and meet with the Father: *"Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house, and went off to a solitary place, where He prayed."* (Mark 1:35)

In the Bible many godly men and women rose early to meet with God. Some of these were:

- Abraham - Genesis 19:27
- Job - Job 1:5
- Jacob - Genesis 28:18
- Moses - Exodus 34:4
- Hannah and Elkanah - 1 Samuel 1:19
- David - Psalms 5:3, 57:7,8

*(See also Psalm 143:8; Isaiah 26:9; Ezekiel 12:8.)*

Throughout church history many Christians who were used most by God met with Him early in the morning. Hudson Taylor said, "You don't tune up the instruments after the concert is over. That's stupid. It's logical to tune them up before you start."

The great revival among British college students in the late 19th century began those historic words: "**Remember the Morning Watch!**" So we need to tune ourselves up at the start of each day as we remember the Morning Watch.

**If Jesus is really in first place in our lives, we ought to give Him the first part of our day.** We are to seek His Kingdom first (see Matthew 6:33). Doctors tell us that the most important meal of the day is breakfast. It often determines our energy levels, alertness, and even moods for the day. Likewise, we need a "spiritual breakfast" to start our day off right.

Finally, in the morning our minds are uncluttered from the day's activities. Our thoughts are fresh, we're rested; tensions have not yet come on us, and it's usually the quietest time. One mother sets her alarm clock for 4 a.m., has her quiet time, goes back to bed, and then rises when everyone else in the household gets up. Her explanation is that with kids around the house all day, early morning is the only time when it is quiet and she can be alone with God. It works for her; you need to select a time that will work for you.

**You might even consider having two quiet times (morning and night).** Dawson Trotman, founder of the Navigators, used to have code letters for his night quiet time: HWLW. Whenever he was with a group of people at night or home with his wife and the conversation seemed to be ending, he would say, "All right, HWLW." HWLW stood for "His Word the Last Word;" and he practiced that through the years as a way of ending a day with one's thoughts fixed on the Lord (Betty Lee Skinner, *Daws*, Zondervan, 1974, p. 103).

Stephen Olford, a great Christian and minister in New York for many years, said, "*I want to hear the voice of God before I hear anyone else's in the morning, and His is the last voice I want to hear at night.*"

David and Daniel even met with the Lord three times each day (see Psalm 55:17; Daniel 6:10).

**Whatever time you set, be consistent in it.** Schedule it on your calendar; make an appointment with God as you would with anyone else. Make a date with Jesus! Then look forward to it and don't stand Him up. A stood-up date is not a pleasant experience for *us*, and Jesus does not like to be stood up either. So make a date with Him and keep it at all costs.

The question is often asked, "*How much time should I spend with the Lord?*" If you've never had a consistent quiet time before, **you may want to start with seven minutes** (Robert D. Foster, *Seven Minutes with God*, NavPress, 1997) and let it grow naturally. You should aim to



eventually spend not less than 15 minutes a day with the Lord. Out of 168 hours we all have during a given week, 1 hour and 45 minutes seems terribly small when you consider that you were created to have fellowship with God. Here are some additional guidelines:

- **Don't try for a two-hour quiet time at first.** You'll only get discouraged. You must grow in this relationship as you do in any other. So begin with a consistent seven minutes and let it grow; it's better to be consistent with a short time than to meet for an hour every other week.
- **Don't watch the clock.** Clock-watching can ruin your quiet time faster than almost anything else. Decide what you can do in the Word and prayer during the time you have selected; then do it. Sometimes it will take longer than you have set aside, and sometimes less time. But don't keep looking at your watch.
- **Don't emphasize on quantity, emphasize on quality.** There is nothing super spiritual about have a two-hour quiet time. It's what you do during your time - 15 minutes or two hours or anything in between - that's important. Aim for a quality relationship with the Lord.

## **CHOOSE A SPECIAL PLACE**

**The location where you have your quiet time is also important.** The Bible indicates that Abraham had a regular place where he met with God (Genesis 19:27). Jesus had a custom of praying in the Garden of Gethsemane on the Mount of Olives. "*Jesus went out as usual to the Mount of Olives, and His disciples followed Him.*" (Luke 22:39, emphasis added)

**Your place ought to be a secluded place.** This is a place where you can be alone, where it's quiet, and where you will not be disturbed or interrupted. In today's noisy Western World, this may take some ingenuity, but it is necessary. It ought to be a place ...

- where you can pray aloud without disturbing others;
- where you have good lighting for reading (a desk, perhaps);
- where you are comfortable. (WARNING: Do not have your quiet time in bed. That's too comfortable!)

**Your place ought to be a special place.** Wherever you decide to meet with the Lord, make it a special place for you and Him. As the days go by, that place will come to mean a lot to you because of the wonderful times you have there with Jesus Christ.

**Your place ought to be a sacred place.** This is where you meet with the living God. Where you meet the Lord can be just as holy as the place where Abraham met God. You don't have to be in a church building. People have had their quiet times *in* their cars parked in a quiet place, in an empty closet at home, in their backyards, and even in a baseball dugout. Each of these places has become sacred to them.

## FOLLOW A SIMPLE PLAN

Someone has said, "If you aim at nothing, you are sure to hit it!" **To have a meaningful quiet time, you will need a plan** or some kind of general outline to follow. The main rule is this: **Keep your plan simple.**

You will need the following three items for your planned quiet times:

- **A Bible** - a contemporary translation (not a paraphrase) with good print, preferably without notes.
- **A notebook** for writing down what the Lord shows you, and for making a prayer list.
- **A hymnbook** - sometimes you may want to sing in your praise time (see Colossians 3:16).

1. **Wait on God (Relax).** Be still for a minute; don't come running into God's presence and start talking immediately. Follow God's admonition: *"Be still and know that I am God."* (Psalm 46:10; see also Isaiah 30:15; 40:31) Be quiet for a short while to put yourself into a reverent mood.
2. **Pray briefly (Request).** This is not your prayer time, but a short opening prayer to ask God to cleanse your heart and guide you into the time together. Two good passages of Scripture to memorize are:
  - *"Search me, O God, and know my heart; test me and know my anxious thoughts. See if there is any offensive way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting."* (Psalm 139:23-24; see also 1 John 1:9)
  - *"Open my eyes that I may see wonderful things in Your law [the Word]."* (Psalm 119:18; see also John 16:13)

You need to be in tune with the Author before you can understand His Book!

3. **Read a section of the Scripture (Read).** This is where your conversation with God begins. He speaks to you through His Word, and you speak with Him in prayer.

### *Read your Bible ...*

**Slowly.** Don't be in a hurry; don't try to read too large an amount; don't race through it.

**Repeatedly.** Read a passage over and over until you start to picture it in your mind. The reason more people don't get more out of their Bible reading is that they do not read the Scriptures repeatedly.

**Without stopping.** Don't stop in the middle of a sentence to go off on a tangent and do a doctrinal study. Just read that section for the pure joy of it, allowing God to speak to you. Remember that your goal here is not to gain information, but to feed on the Word and get to know Christ better.

**Aloud but quietly.** Reading it aloud will improve your concentration, if you have that problem. It will also help you understand what you are reading better because you will be both seeing and hearing what you are reading. Read softly enough, however, so that you won't disturb anyone.

**Systematically.** Read through a book at a time in an orderly method. Do not use the "random dip" method - a passage here, a chapter there, what you like here, an interesting portion there. You'll understand the Bible better if you read it as it was written - a book or letter at a time.

**To get a sweep of a book.** On some occasions you may want to survey a whole book. In that case you will read it quickly to get a sweep of the total revelation. Then you need not read it slowly or repeatedly.

4. **Meditate and memorize (Reflect and Remember).** In order to have the Scriptures speak to you meaningfully, you should meditate on what you are reading and memorize verses that particularly speak to you. Meditation is "seriously contemplating a thought over and over in your mind." Out of your meditation you might select and memorize a verse that is particularly meaningful to you.
5. **Write down what God has shown you (Record).** When God speaks to you through His Word, record what you have discovered. Writing it down will enable you both to remember what God revealed to you and to check up on your biblical discoveries. Recording what God has shown you is the way of applying what you see in the Scripture that pertains to your life.
6. **Have your time of prayer (Request).** After God has spoken to you through His Word, speak to Him in prayer. This is your part of the conversation with the Lord.

## CONCLUSION

**What if you miss a day?** Don't worry about it if it only happens occasionally. Don't go on a guilt trip. *"There is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus."* (Romans 8:1, NIV)

**Don't get legalistic** because missing one day does not make it a flop. BUT don't give up. If you miss a meal, it does not mean that you should give up eating because you're inconsistent. You simply eat a little more at the next meal and go on from there. This same principle is true with your quiet time.

Psychologists tell us that it usually takes three weeks to get familiar with some new task or habit; it takes another three weeks before it becomes a habit. The reason why many people are not successful in their quiet times is because they have never made it past that six-week barrier. **For your quiet time to become a habit, you must have had one daily for at least six weeks.**

William James had a famous formula for developing a habit (*Selected Papers on Philosophy*, E. P. Dutton & Co., 2000, pp. 60-62):

1. **Make a strong resolution (vow).** You must always start with a strong initiative. If you begin halfheartedly, you'll never make it. Make a public declaration by telling others about your decision.
2. **Never allow an exception to occur until the new habit is securely rooted in your life.** A habit is like a ball of twine. Every time you drop it, many strands are unwound. So never

allow the "just this once" to occur. The act of yielding weakens the will and strengthens the lack of self-control.

3. **Seize every opportunity and inclination to practice your new habit.** Whenever you get the slightest urge to practice your new habit, do it right then. Don't wait, but use every opportunity to reinforce your habit. It does not hurt to overdo a new habit when you are first starting.

*To these suggestions I would add one more:*

4. **Rely on the power of God.** When it is all said and done, you must realize that you are in a spiritual battle, and you can only succeed by the power of the Holy Spirit of God. So pray that God will strengthen you and depend on Him to help you develop this habit for His glory.

---

*If you have been convinced that this is what you need to do, would you pray the following:*

#### **A PRAYER OF COMMITMENT**

*"Lord I commit myself to spending a definite time with You every day, no matter what the cost. I am depending on Your strength to help me to be consistent."*

---

This article was adapted from *Dynamic Bible Study Methods* (Chariot Victor Books, 1989) by Rick Warren. ©Copyright 2004. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

\*All scripture references from the New International Version.

*You may use this study guide for yourself or share it with friends, but please keep the copyright information within the document, and please don't sell it.*

# **THE MEGA CHURCH**

The Anointing and the Strategies.

## **CHAPTERS**

1. Why Have a Mega Church?
2. Let's Have Real Numbers!
3. The Coming of the Anointing
4. Understanding the Anointing
5. Steps to the Anointing
6. A Special Secret
7. What It Means to Catch the Spirit of the Ministry
8. How to Start a Church
9. Fight for Commitment
10. How to Develop Devoted Members
11. Retention Evangelism
12. How to Have Permanent Church Members
13. The Secret of Industrialization
14. Loyalty and the Mega Church
15. Special Principles for Church Growth

# **CHAPTER 1**

## **WHY HAVE A MEGA CHURCH?**

**Though thy beginning was small, yet THY LATTER END  
SHOULD GREATLY INCREASE.**

**Job 8:7**

Should our church be big or small? Many people feel happy in a small church. They often say it is cozier and more like a family. “We get to know each other and have better relationships.” These statements are true. But let us ask ourselves a question. Do we want to do what is cozy or do we want to do the will of God? God has shown us His will in His Word. **Your starting may be small but God is expecting your latter end to be greatly increased.** If it is not explicit in scripture, it is implicit throughout the Word.

**And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the**

**highways and hedges, and compel them to come in,  
THAT MY HOUSE MAY BE FILLED.**

**Luke 14:23**

In Luke 14, the Lord gave us an important revelation. The master said to his servant, "I need my house to be filled." The master in this story represents Jesus. Jesus wanted His house to be filled. In other words, Jesus wants His churches to be filled. God wants full churches! The master in this story was not content with having just a few people at his party. He could have had the party anyway, but he wanted many more people. And more especially he wanted the house to be filled.

Through this story, God is showing His will for the church. His will is more people! His will is filled rooms! His will is overflowing churches! His will is the MEGA CHURCH!

## **Our Harvest Field Is the World**

God did not send us to a suburb of your town. Neither did he send us to a few villages. He sent us to the whole world. If we had a small field to harvest from, then we could not expect a large quantity of harvested fruits.

**And he said unto them, Go ye into ALL THE WORLD, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.**

**Mark 16:15,16**

The fact that the entire world is to be reached implies that the harvest of souls that we will bring in must be very large. It will definitely be a major portion of the world's population. If a major section of the world's population is to be saved through



the preaching of the gospel, then every church should be bursting at the seams for lack of space. Remember that there are over six billion souls out there waiting for us to reach them with the Gospel.

## **The Work Stands Undone**

During the time of his ministry, Jesus made a very important statement.

**...The harvest truly is PLENTIEOUS, but the labourers are few.**

**Matthew 9:37**

This means there are plenty of winnable souls. There is plenty of work for us all. There are plenty of people to fill our churches.

## **Many Pastors Are Deceived**

Many pastors are deceived by the fact that their little halls are full. Many ministers feel that they have “arrived” in ministry. You receive a nice salary and have a nice car. God has blessed you and all your expenses are paid for. But this does not mean that you have “arrived”. Do not let the devil blind your eyes to the real work we have to do. It is Satan who fans the church to sheep!! He whispers to the hearts of many ministers. “Everything is o.k.” “This is it.” “You have made it.” “This is how far you can go.” “This is everything you can achieve for God!” Such ministers have had their spiritual and visionary eyes blinded by Satan. The enemy whispers to their heart, “Everything is okay. This is it! You have made it!”

Satan wants your church to remain small. The fewer people you have in your congregation the more captives he has.

**The size of your church shows you to what extent you are depopulating hell.** When you have a Mega Church, it means that you are establishing more souls. It also means that more souls have escaped from the clutches of the devil.

## **A Mega Church Releases Multiple Ministries**

It is important to desire to have a large church. Pastors must dream of having large congregations. A large church results in the multiplicity of many ministries. It results in the multiplication of several important activities in the church.

For instance, it multiplies the ministry of music. Initially, our church had only one choir. Now we have no less than six choirs in addition to numerous other singing groups. What does this mean? It means that a large church has resulted in vital multiplication. It is the will of God that more of His children sing for him. The more singing groups we have, the more God is glorified. The number of choirs you have depends on the number of people in the church.

## **More Prayer Breaks the Power of the Prince of the Air**

**When you have a Mega Church, more prayer will go forth unto the Lord. Therefore, more people will be saved and established.**

When the Lord sent me to establish churches in Europe, he showed one key role that we were going to play in rebuilding

His kingdom in that continent. You see, Europe has virtually become a nation of atheists. They have put God out of their minds. Many Europeans do not believe that God even exists.

Years ago, Europe sent out missionaries to the world. But now they have fallen to the lowest state of demonic blindness and godlessness. The Lord showed me that one of our duties as a church was to release prayer into the atmosphere concerning the Church in Europe. Our presence in countries like Switzerland, The Netherlands and England has resulted in much more intercession being made in those nations.

Our church in Geneva has all-night prayer meetings every Friday, praying from midnight until 6 a.m. They engage in spiritual warfare in a land where God is forgotten. As more churches like ours go into the nations, then more prayer will take place. This is one of the primary reasons why a large and branching church is important.

When the church I pastor, The Lighthouse Cathedral, grew to a certain size, we were able to successfully have all-night prayer meetings everyday. We have had so many small groups within the church that it was possible to setup a rotation so that one of these groups could have an all-night prayer meeting everyday. Thus, we had a different group praying every night. The larger the church the more prayer groups are created. More prayer is possible in a Mega Church! That is why the devil wants the church to remain small!

**A Mega Church Generates Large Crowds  
and Large Crowds Create Great  
Expectation**

**Through experience I have noticed that the larger the crowd, the greater the expectation.** When there is a large gathering of God's people, there is an air of excitement, expectation and real faith. Why is this? This happens because the faith of everyone is heightened by what they see. The sight of a large crowd inspires faith and creates excitement. The combined faith of the crowd is greater than the faith of just one person. That helps to draw out the gift of God from the minister.

I have preached to small groups and to very large crowds. The spiritual atmosphere of these two situations is often different.

**And as THE PEOPLE WERE IN EXPECTATION, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not.**

**Luke 3:15**

Whenever there is great faith, you can expect more power and miracles of healing. Jesus often said, "Your faith has made you whole." It is faith that generates the miraculous! I know some people will misunderstand me on this. I am not saying that God does not move in small congregations. I often minister in small congregations, and I see God moving in a wonderful way. God certainly does miracles in small churches. All I am saying is that generally speaking, when there are more people there is more faith, more expectation and therefore more miracles. I think even the simplest Christian can understand this simple logic. **A bigger church means more people, which means more faith, which means more power, which means more miracles, which results in more testimonies!**

Don't you want more glory, power and anointing to flow in your congregation? Dear pastor friend, believe God for a

bigger church. With a bigger church, many more blessings will flow from the throne of God to His people.

**And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word WITH SIGNS FOLLOWING.**

**Mark 16:20**

## **A Mega Church Means More Evangelism!**

One of the side effects of having a larger church is that more evangelism takes place. Our Cathedral is divided into about fifteen chapels. Under each chapel, there are several ministries and under each ministry several fellowships. It is our policy that every ministry has at least one major outreach during each month. Since our church has many ministries, it is possible that fifty different outreaches by fifty different groups will be taking place at the same time at many different locations!

More soul winning has taken place simply because the church has grown larger. **It is God's will for your church to grow larger so that more souls will be won for the Lord.**

## **A Mega Church Leads to a Greater Income For the Gospel**

Having more people also means having a higher church income. If a church has a good pastor, the money of the church will be used for the right things. Unfortunately, some pastors are more like vampires – they suck the blood of the church, rather than pouring into the life of the ministry. A higher income means many more spiritual goals are achievable. Money is not an evil thing. Money is neutral! It is

the love of money that is evil! Money is a weapon in the hand of man. If a good man has money he will use it to do good things. A good minister will use the income of the Mega Church to build the church and promote the gospel!

I had a dream that we would one day have trucks driving around the nation, holding crusades in every town and village. Once upon a time, that was just a dream. Now, with a larger church we have been able to purchase a truck and have begun crusading all across the nation. How was that possible? We had more people and therefore more money, and we could do more for God!

## **A Mega Church Means More Laborers!**

There will always be a certain percentage of the flock who are real laborers. No matter what you do or say, a certain percentage of the church will not get involved in the real work of ministry. There will always be the spectators and observers. There will always be the commentators. The laborers will always be in the ministry. The larger the crowd you have, the more laborers will be sent forth. And the more easily you will be able to finance them.

**...The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will SEND FORTH LABOURERS into his harvest.**

**Matthew 9:37,38**

## **Special Ministries Develop Within a Mega Church**

As the church grows it becomes more diverse in its composition. This results in specialist ministries being

developed. When you have a small church, there will usually be very few special ministries like a ministry to the poor, refugees, and to orphans. As the church becomes larger it is possible to get involved in some of these other areas. When a church is able to be involved in these special areas many blessings are released! Look at the blessings that are available to churches that minister to the poor.

**Blessed is he that considereth the poor: THE LORD WILL DELIVER HIM in time of trouble. THE LORD WILL PRESERVE HIM AND KEEP HIM ALIVE; and HE WILL BE BLESSED upon the earth and thou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies.**

**Psalms 41:1,2**

These are powerful blessings for those who are able to grow to the point where they minister to special needs. Often when a church is small, it does not have the capacity to reach out in these areas. Have a vision of building a Mega Church. Other special areas of ministry will develop within it. You will have people with the ministry of giving being released. There are churches which have men and women with a heart for financing the gospel.

**...he that giveth, Let him do it with simplicity.**

**Romans 12:8**

It is rare to come across church members who have the ability to make a difference in the church through their giving. Every pastor would love to have members who take care of major expenses for the church. In the earlier stages of our church's life I had no one who could do things like that. But now, there are people who have the ability and the ministry of giving.

Other special areas that can develop are ministries to the

poor and to the disabled. I have a dream to establish an orphanage. I've had this dream for a long time. But, it will take a large and strong church to be able to support such a venture. If you have a hundred orphans in your orphanage, you have to pay for three hundred meals a day. You also have to buy clothes for a hundred people. You then have to pay the hospital bills for a hundred children. After that you have to pay several professionals to care for these motherless and fatherless people. I think that you will agree with me that it will take a truly Mega Church to setup such a ministry.

## **A Mega Church is Like a Nation**

**As the church increases in size it will become a powerful community. It virtually becomes a nation of its own.** Governments begin to fear the power and influence of a Mega Church, but they despise small churches. Governments know that a large church means a lot of people which means a lot of votes. The politicians fear the power of the masses. They know that popular opinion keeps them in power. They know that the pastors are influencing people's minds. Small things are easy to despise. The Bible says,

**For who hath despised the day of small things?...**

**Zechariah 4:10**

Politicians can no longer despise the reality of the kingdom of God when it is massive! They cannot attack the pastors in the churches when they know the number of people who they lead.



Our church was once attacked and the walls around us were broken. The people behind the attack thought that they could get away with it easily. They did not appreciate the magnitude, strength and scope of influence of the church they were attacking. The “people behind the scenes” were very surprised when the attack led to a nationwide crisis. Several churches and the general public rallied together against the perceived attackers. The politicians had to move quickly to prevent nationwide demonstrations and civil unrest.

As you read this book, I want you to believe God for a Mega Church. I want you to receive the anointing to rise out of smallness into the largeness that God has destined for you.

## **More Beloveds, More Weddings... In a Mega Church**

You will be blessed with more weddings within your church. A healthy growing church is one that has numerous marriages taking place. I always pray for my members that they will find husbands and wives.

Years ago, when our church was much smaller. A young lady said to me, “My type of man is not in this church.” When I looked throughout my congregation, I realized that what she said was true. There was no suitable person for this woman to marry. Some years later she went ahead and married an unbeliever.

At another point another lady said, “There is no man who is old enough to marry me. So I’m going to a larger church where I can find a man to marry me.” You see, she was thirty-nine years old and there were no forty-year-old bachelors in the church. All of the bachelors we had in our church were in their twenties and thirties. However, today we

have had brides and bridegrooms of all ages. In a Mega Church, even people over the age of seventy have become bridegrooms and brides.

## **More Contacts, More Job... In a Mega Church**

**The larger the church the more contacts and “connections” can be made.** Let’s face it, many things in this world depend on “who you know!” You may get a breakthrough just because you belong to a certain church. I have employers in my church to who I can recommend potential employees. When our church was smaller, it was only full of students. Now, many people can find jobs through the church. People always like to stay in a place which leads to blessings and security. The church members enjoy these fringe benefits of making contacts and finding jobs.

Another benefit of a Mega Church is that it gives rise to large branches. Big branches are offshoots of the main stem. Many churches have branches or satellites. The larger the main church, the larger the branches will be. As your church grows larger it will make it possible for churches that spring forth from your ministry to become larger. I have noticed that our branches have grown larger as the main church expanded.

**...and shooteth out GREAT BRANCHES...**

**Mark 4:32**

## **25% – The Biblical Quota**

The Bible teaches us that the sower went out to sow the Word of God in a city. The result was that one out of four

(25%) of his seeds yielded good results. If we win only a quarter of our cities to Christ, I can assure you that there will be no more half-filled churches.

It is time for the Church to achieve its biblical quota of twenty five percent of the population. How many people are there in your city? There are about four million people in the city of Accra, Ghana. According to my little theory, at least twenty five percent of them should have responded to the Word of God. This means that at least one million of these people should be safely established in the Church. However, I wonder how many people darken the doorways of church buildings in Accra every Sunday morning. Several thousands do, but I doubt whether it reaches our biblical quota of twenty-five percent of the population.

**And when he sowed, some [25%] seeds fell by the way side... some [25%] fell upon stony places... some [25%] fell among thorns... BUT OTHER [25%] FELL INTO GOOD GROUND and brought forth fruit...**

**Matthew 13:4-8**

If the church of God attains the twenty-five percent goal, there will be many many large churches scattered all over the city. Every church will have multiple church services from morning to evening. Calculate it for yourself! You will see that the Church is no where near attaining that twenty five percent goal. How many Born Again Christians attend church on a Sunday morning in your city? What is the population of your city?

Total citywide Born Again church attendance

= 25%      **??**

Total Population of your city

When I did this calculation for my own city, I realized that we

were far from achieving the results of that “sower who went out to sow”. But I prophesy that churches shall be filled in the last days. The land shall be filled with Mega churches. God wants big churches because He is expecting at least twenty-five percent of the population to respond positively to our preaching.

**The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the Lord of hosts...**

**Haggai 2:9**

The Bible predicts that the glory, which means beauty, of the latter day church, will far exceed the glory of the former one. I believe that we are in that latter day. When I consider what the Lord has done in Ghana over the last fifteen years, I realize that God is bringing a greater glory to His end-time Church. The largest churches some fifteen years ago would be the youth groups of some of the Mega Churches that God has raised up today!

Let me share with you a very important secret. God does not work with only one person. The Spirit of God does not move in only one church. **If a pastor has been able to achieve great growth in your city, it is a clear sign that the grace of God is abundant for the work of church growth there.** People who think that God is only using one man are deceived! The Lord ministered powerfully to Ahab the king through Elijah the Tishbite (1 Kings 17,18,21). But there was another powerful prophet called Micaiah who was used to rebuke Ahab the king. God does not limit Himself to one man. Elijah himself made the mistake of thinking he was the only one who was faithful to God,

**And he said, I have been very jealous for the Lord God of hosts: because the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant, thrown down thine altars, and slain thine**

**prophets with the sword; AND I, EVEN I ONLY, AM LEFT;...**

**1 Kings 19:14**

But the Lord showed him that He had seven thousand other faithful prophets.

**Yet I have left me SEVEN THOUSAND IN ISRAEL, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him.**

**1 Kings 19:18**

Many big churches are springing up. God is raising up men and women of integrity to pastor His people. Flow in it. Catch the Spirit! You will also walk in the glory of the latter church. Learn the strategies of church growth. Obtain the power and the wisdom of God. Walk in love towards the brethren. Love even those who slander and betray you. Every great work of the Holy Spirit is as a result of love, unity and teamwork.

I really want to emphasize and stress this great truth that God does not work with one isolated person. Did you know that when Ezekiel was prophesying between 622-600 B.C., Daniel the prophet was also raised up and prophesied between 616-536 B.C. It was a time when God was moving through great prophets – people who yielded themselves to the call were used greatly in the ministry. Interestingly enough, Jeremiah also ministered between 685-616 B.C. You will notice that the time periods often overlap. This is because the Spirit of God does great works with many people at the same time.

Isaiah (792-722 B.C.), Nahum (786-757 B.C.) and Micah (772-722 B.C.) were raised up in the ministry around the same period of time. You must buy into the move of God

when the season comes. Zechariah and Malachi both prophesied about the end-times. Their ministries, interestingly enough, spanned the same period of time 557-525 B.C.

What am I trying to say? I am showing you that God is using many people to do the same thing in a particular season. He is building Mega churches now! Jump on the train and become the pastor that God wants you to be. Did you know that God moved in a Spirit of reform during the sixteenth century? Did you know that He did not only work through Martin Luther in Germany?

At the time as the Spirit of reform was flowing through the ministry of Martin Luther, the Spirit of reform was also flowing through a man called Zwingli in Switzerland. If Martin Luther had thought he was the only anointed reformist he would have been making a big mistake! God moves in waves! There is a wave of church growth right now. There is a wave of massive harvesting of souls! Get in on this move of God and allow God to use you to build a Mega Church!

Be open to learn new things that you do not know. A common statement in my church is, "You don't know everything! You and I are learning. Everyday of our lives should be a living classroom. Everyone you meet can teach you something!"

As we study the subject of church growth through the power and wisdom of God, decide that you can do it. Do not let the failures of yesteryear keep you down. Be a "Can-do man". Rise up in your spirit and say, "We are able to possess the land. We can do it!"

**...Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to overcome it.**

## Numbers 13:30

When you say, "I can," the Holy Spirit will rise up to perform that which he has called you to do. **Remember you did not call yourself.** Faithful is he that called you and he will do it. **You are the believer and God is the doer.**

I remember when our church had only one member that owned a car. I was that member! I prayed, confessed and believed that we had ten people in our church who owned cars. After some time, I received what I believed God for. Believe that God who called you will do it.

**Faithful is he that CALLETH you, who also will DO it.**

**1 Corinthians 5:24**

I recall walking up and down the streets adjacent to the canteen we had rented for our church services. I spoke to the street and said, "Be filled with cars." I spoke to the empty benches and said, "Be filled with members." Today there are countless numbers of cars and members in our church.

## CHAPTER 2

# LET'S HAVE REAL NUMBERS!

If you read the back of this book, you will realize that I did not specify how many members I have in my church. There is an important reason for this. I believe in real numbers and have learnt that many people count the same thing differently! If I gave you a number, you may not know exactly how I arrived at that figure. Consequently, I may end up giving you the wrong impression.

**It is important for the credibility of pastors that we say what we mean and mean what we say.** I used to get confused by the numbers that certain pastors would claim to have in their churches. I have visited these churches at night and counted the chairs in their halls (I am an expert at counting chairs quickly). I would ponder, "How can they claim to have so many thousand members in their church?"

However, as I checked and rechecked the number of chairs, I realized that there was no way that those numbers could be accurate. Even with the addition of canopies and multiple services, there was no way that I could correlate the numbers that I heard with what I had actually seen. Maybe they were counting all the people who were present in spirit, but not in the flesh. After all, Paul claimed that he attended the Corinthian church in spirit.



**For I verily, absent in body, but present in spirit...**

**1 Corinthians 5:3**

I could not bring myself to believe that the pastors were telling lies. I prefer to think that they were just counting in a different way. I realize that there are different ways of counting.

**There are seven types of counting that I have observed in the Body of Christ.** And I think it will do us all some good to know which type of counting is being used.

## **TYPE 1 COUNTING**

Type 1 counting is the count of the number of human beings physically present. It is the headcount of people in attendance. This is the headcount. **I believe this type of counting is the most informative of all the types of counting.** However, it is probably the least used type of count because it is usually the lowest! When I ask my data officer for numbers in the church, I get the type one numbers. I need to know Type 1 figures. I work best with Type 1 Counting. The fact is that only a fraction of your members come to church on Sundays. If you use the Type 1 Count, you are talking about a fraction of real number that God has given you to look after. In spite of this, I still prefer to work with Type 1 because it provokes me to work harder.

## **TYPE 2 COUNTING**

This is the total number of people on the church register. Many churches quote this type two number as their membership. The type two count is larger or smaller

depending on how far back the church will go in counting its registered members. The figure also depends on whether the church updates or revises its membership lists frequently. It also depends on how a church revises the membership list. Some churches have what we call active members. For some people, an active member is someone who attends a service at least once a month. For others it is someone who attends every Sunday service. I consider an active member to be someone who comes to church during the week, i.e., not only on Sundays. For others it is someone who belongs to a smaller cell group. All of these can vary the eventual outcome of the type two count. What this means is that my ten thousand may be different from your ten thousand. **That is why I prefer to stay with Type 1 Counting because there can be no variation in the method of counting heads who are actually present.**

Some pastors give a type two figure as their regular attendance. When you attend their church and see the actual number of people, you may be very disappointed. There is often a sharp contrast between the number of people physically present and the number of people the pastor claims to be his members. You may even think the pastor has a problem with lying or exaggeration.

I have seen situations where the type one count is as low as ten percent of what they claim to be their membership. The church may claim to have ten thousand members, but only one or two thousand are present in the service.

## **TYPE 3 COUNTING**

This type of counting is often used during conventions and crusades that run over a few days. It is the cumulative count.

They count the total number of people that attend the meetings. For instance they could say that the convention was very successful, ten thousand people were in attendance. What they actually mean is that two thousand people came each night for five days! This type of counting is often misleading, as it does not give an accurate picture of the truth.

## **TYPE 4 COUNTING**

This is where the seating capacity of the building is used to estimate. Sometimes a building has a maximum capacity of three thousand. During a program, the pastor could say that there were three thousand people in church. This is because the whole church looked full, so the assumption was that three thousand people were there. This is a wrong assumption. A type one count could have easily revealed that only two thousand people were present. A hall, whose capacity is three thousand, can “look” full when only two thousand are present. Once again, this is why I feel that type one counting will help us all to know where we are and where we need to go.

## **TYPE 5 COUNTING**

This is when pastors give rough estimates. They try to give a reasonable assessment of the crowd. The pastor thinks he can assess the numbers present in the crowd. He estimates based on experience that there are about three hundred people present. Sometimes these rough estimations are quite accurate but at other times they can be totally misleading.

The pastor of the local church is likely to give a higher type five count than the pastor of a sister church who is visiting and observing. The local pastor would say, "There are about two thousand people present." The visiting minister would say, "I think there are about one thousand two hundred people present." The visiting minister would not like his rival's church to look too big, so his figure would therefore be much more modest.

## **TYPE 6 COUNTING**

Type six counting is what I call wild and unreasonable guessing. Some years ago when we had about eight hundred people attending, I met someone in London who told me, "I heard you had a convention and there were seven thousand people present."

I asked him, "Who told you that?" He gave me the name of the woman who said that.

She had said, "I was in the meeting myself and there were about seven thousand people present."

I always wondered "How did she get the figure 'seven thousand'?" She must have had a shot at type six counting – wild guessing!

## **TYPE 7 COUNTING**

This type of counting aims at outdoing everyone else. A pastor mentions a figure that is higher than any other figure being mentioned in town. If the largest church in town is said to be around five thousand, he will always have around six or seven thousand members. This pastor is suffering from the

spirit of lying and exaggeration.

## **Is It Scriptural to Count?**

We need to ask ourselves – is all of this counting biblical? Is it scriptural to be concerned about numbers? Should we not be concerned about quality and not quantity? The answer is in implicit through the scriptures.

**Numbering was done in the Old Testament.** There is an entire book in the Bible dedicated to numbering – the Book of Numbers. In that book, the number of people, the number of soldiers and the number of tribesmen were recorded.

However, there was a time when God was angry with King David because he had numbered the people. It is clear from this that when numbering is done for the wrong reason it displeases God. For instance, if you put your faith and trust in your numbers, you are making a grave mistake.

**...for there is no restraint to the Lord to save by many or by few.**

**1 Samuel 14:6**

God will pull down whatever you put your trust in. He wants you to have your faith in Him and Him alone.

In the New Testament, different reports of numbering were mentioned. Everyone knows that Jesus had only twelve disciples. We know that Jesus sent out seventy disciples. It was reported that Jesus appeared to five hundred people after he rose from the dead. We also know that one hundred and twenty people were waiting for the Holy Spirit in the upper room. The Book of Acts records that Peter ministered to three thousand people at one time. At another time, we know

that five thousand responded to an altar call at Peter's crusade.

If these numbers were not important, then why were they recorded in the Bible? **God through the Holy Spirit was teaching us that the numbers of people involved in any spiritual event is a significant indicator.** The numbers are important. The Bible says that God will reward us for the quality of work we have done.

**Every man's work shall be made manifest... of WHAT SORT it is.**

**1 Corinthians 3:13**

But Luke 19 shows us that God will judge us for how much we have done in his name.

**A certain noble man went into a far country... when he was return having received the kingdom, he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know HOW MUCH every man had gained by trading.**

**Luke 19:12,15**

God is interested in what sort of work you are doing. But He is also interested in how much.

## **THE DANGERS OF COUNTING**

### **The Pressure To Impress, Lie And Exaggerate**

Many pastors are under pressure to say things that sound

impressive. If everyone around you claims to have so many thousand members, you can look foolish if you just have a few hundred. It's almost as though you have not been called by God. **God is not going to reward us because of the number of people in our churches. He is going to reward us for our faithfulness to Him.**

Once I attended a convention of a great church. I counted all of the people that were seated there. As I said, I have become an expert at counting seats or human beings very quickly. There were a few thousand people present. Later, I heard a claim from that pastor that several more thousand people had attended the meeting. This pastor was probably under pressure to impress and to exaggerate. I was there myself! I counted the human beings myself. Yet I heard a figure that was several times the reality.

**Perhaps the other thousands were present in spirit.** If the people you are counting are there in spirit, please tell us so that we stop looking for them in the physical!!

## **Self-deception and Complacency**

It is easy to deceive yourself if you use the wrong counting method. I heard one minister say, "The whole area outside the building was full." He continued, "People were sitting under canopies." That is how he knew that things were getting better. But that is deception. I have learnt not to trust this type of counting. I don't want to be self-deceived. I want to know the reality. When you are self-deceived, you think you are what you are not! You think of yourself more highly than you ought to, but this will lead to your downfall.

**...to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think...**

## Discouragement

You can also be discouraged when you count too often. Counting should be done so that you have a baseline figure you can use as a reference point. This will help you to know whether things have gotten any better over the months.

However, if you want to put on weight, I would not advise you to weigh yourself everyday. You will become depressed because you will not notice any change. Growth should not be and cannot be measured so frequently.

Church attendance can fluctuate so much that following it on a weekly basis can lead to a weakening of the pastor's heart. I have the Head Usher or Data Officer do a type one count every Sunday. But I only ask for the figures after several months have passed. This helps me to see if there is any improvement.

## ADVANTAGES OF NUMBERING

**Numbering Lets you know where you are.** When you know where you are, you can more readily plan your future. (When you know where you are, you know where you want to go.) It helps you to see the reality of what you are doing. It is easy to deceive yourself. Checking the true numbers will help you to move forward with God.

**Numbering helps to check backsliding.** There is a law of degeneration at work in this world. Everything starts to decay the moment you take your eyes off it. The Bible teaches that you should look diligently to know the state of the flock.



**BE THOU DILIGENT TO KNOW THE STATE OF THY FLOCKS, and look well to thy herds. For riches are not forever...**

**Proverbs 27:23, 24**

Numbering is a diligent way of knowing the state of the flocks. When you are fed with the information that things are decaying, you will sit up! When you are stimulated by the veritable facts, it generates a greater vision within you to do God's work. It makes you rise up to build the kingdom of God.

One day I asked my data officer to tell me the attendance for that Sunday. He told me how many people were in attendance on that day. I was very discouraged because I thought it was a very small number after all of my years of hard work. However, when he added the total number of satellite and branch churches, the real fruit of the ministry became clearer to me and I was a bit more encouraged. I decided to start more churches and press on for more growth in the central church.

**Numbering stimulates growth and generates a new vision and compassion for the lost.** You become dissatisfied with smallness. It leads you to pray. Knowing the true number of people in my ministry has always made me pray more, fast more and seek God more often. You know that prayer changes things, and prayer can change those ugly numbers.

**Numbering the sheep has been a valuable tool for me to help monitor the increase and decrease of the church.** It will guide you when you need to emphasize on visitation and when you need to judge yourself in areas that may be hindering growth.

## IMPORTANT NUMBERS

There are some important quantities that every pastor must always be constantly aware of. Each of these numbers has some significance. I have discovered that each meeting has its special role to play in the life and development of the church.

**The number of people physically present on Sunday mornings (type one count of Sunday service).** This number is only a percentage of your true membership. In a normal church a large number of people are absent on a given Sunday. This is why the number can fluctuate so much. The Sunday service attendance is the best number to use for monitoring progress in a general way.

**The number of people present at a weekday service.** This tells you the number of really committed members you have. Most serious Christians make time to attend church during the week. You will find that the anointing and flow of the Spirit is different on a weekday service. A corporate anointing manifests because of the gathering of faithful ones. Lukewarm and religious attendees do not dilute the atmosphere.

**The number of people present at small group or fellowship meetings.** This number shows you how developed the internal structure of the ministry is. There are some churches which can command thousands of people for a special convention, however they are not be able to mobilize fifty people on a regular basis for small group meetings. It is important to have these small groups so that they can meet the needs of the members at a personal level.

**The number of people who attend fasting and prayer sessions.** This tells you the number of spiritual soldiers you have. This is very different from the swelled up convention attendance. It should be the goal of every pastor to build up a large core of spiritual warriors. These people may be more dependable.

**The number of people at a convention.** The convention crowd contains many people who are moved by excitement. There are many “miracle seekers” and “sign watchers” in attendance.

**The number of people absent at each church service.** This is a very important number. It tells you how many people are falling away. It is probably an indication of how hard the pastors and shepherds are working. Perhaps they are not being prayed for and they are not being visited.

**The number of people in the choir of the church.** The choir of a church is like the flower of a plant. It is often the part of the church that the outside world sees. It is often a reflection of the organizational skills of the church. It tells us how well the pastors are making use of the talents within the congregation.

**The number of people in the city where your church is located.** A church's size is always related to the size of the city in which they are situated. The largest churches in the world are found in the largest cities in the world. For example, if 0.1 % of people in Accra (a city of 3.5 million) are in the Lighthouse; then our church population would have to be three thousand five hundred. If the membership shoots up to six thousand, we would still form only 0.17% of the population. This figure makes us relatively insignificant.

This figure must be determined every year for us to know how great an impact we are making in the city. If this percentage is insignificant, it must motivate us to have more visitations, more prayer, more fasting and more witnessing. It means that we must have more pastors, more shepherds, more churches, more ministries and more fellowships. We must invite more people, do more follow-ups, have more crusades and release more power.

**The number of people who give their lives to Christ every Sunday.** This tells you how conscious of lost souls the pastor is. It shows you whether members are inviting non-Christians to church. It tells us whether the church is fulfilling the Great Commission in getting people Born Again.

**The percentage of people who were saved in the church.** Occasionally it is interesting to find out how many people got saved in the church. This tells you how original the church is. Many of my members were saved at the Lighthouse Cathedral. Some churches are made up of breakaway members of other churches. Since this was the source of the majority of their members they often don't know how to win souls for themselves. Every church must know how to intentionally win souls and assimilate new converts.

**The number of new converts who are still in the church after two months.** This tells you whether follow-up is being done.

**The number of lay workers in the church.** This shows you how involved the general congregation is in the ministry. It tells you what percentage of the church is asleep. When a human being is asleep only eight percent of his body is at work. If only eight percent of your members are active, it means your church is asleep.

**The number of people who pay tithes.** This is a reflection of the number of truly loyal people you have. The Bible says, "Where your treasure is there will your heart be." It tells you how many people in the crowd have their hearts solidly planted in the church.

**The number of people who attend the 31<sup>st</sup> December night service.** Traditionally, this is a very well attended service. From my experience, it is the best attended service in the whole year. Superstitious people run to the church so that God will see them in church as the New Year dawns. All of those you haven't seen throughout the year may finally show up on 31<sup>st</sup> December. The pastor is usually encouraged by the 31<sup>st</sup> December crowd. This swollen number usually regularizes within a few weeks.

## **CHAPTER 3**

# **THE COMING OF THE ANOINTING**

**...Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.**

**Zechariah 4:6**

One thing all of us must realize is that ministry is different from any other secular job out there. In the secular world, many things are important for success. Zerubbabel was trying to build the temple. We are trying to build the Church. Building the church and building the temple are one and the same thing. The instruction that applied to Zerubbabel applies to us.

The Bible is making it clear that it is not by any form of power that the Church will be built. **The Church will be built by**

**the power of the Holy Spirit – end of story!** There are people who look at me and say, “Oh, he’s succeeding because he’s educated.” But it is not by the power of education. There are educated people in the ministry whose churches have not amounted to a “hill of beans”. It is not by education, it is by the anointing.

## **The Handsome Pastor**

I read a newspaper which said, “The pastor of the church is so handsome. That is why so many young ladies go there.” However, there are pastors who are not handsome per se, whose ministries have grown into thousands. Still others say, “Oh, it is their background.” “Oh, it is the location of the church.” “Oh, it is the wealth of the members.” “Oh, it is the exciting music.” “Oh, it is the instrumentalists.” Everybody tries to give a reason why something does or does not work. There are pastors who have said to me, “You have the strategies!” They think I have loads of hidden tactics to make my ministry work. Some people think I am a expert administrator that is how come things are working.

In this chapter, I will introduce to you the one most important factor that will make you start out and accomplish something substantial for God. I believe in education. I believe in administration. I believe in strategies. But above all, I have come to the conclusion that the prophet Zechariah came to – it is not by any form of might, it is not by any power, it is by my spirit says the Lord.

This Spirit is the same thing as the anointing. The Bible says

in Acts 10:38, How God anointed Jesus Christ with the Holy Spirit. You will see from this scripture that the substance that God anointed Jesus Christ with was the Holy Spirit.

Therefore, we can conclude that the anointing is the Holy Spirit.

We need the anointing to do the work. The ministry is not a human or natural thing. As soon as all ministers get that in their minds, the better it will be for them. When you see a successful minister, look beyond the physical and see into the realm of the spirit. Observe the anointing at work. There is an invisible cloak over that person which allows him to succeed in what he is doing. **That invisible mantle is what I call the anointing. It explains why some people succeed and some don't.** It explains why some people have greater degrees of success under exactly the same circumstances.

A pastor cannot oversee a very large church, unless he is anointed to do so. I have been in the ministry for over twenty years and I know from the Word and by experience that it is by the anointing and nothing else. Jesus told Pilate that all of the power he possessed was what God had allowed him to have. Nobody can have power unless God gives it to him.

**...Thou couldst have NO POWER AT ALL against me, except it were GIVEN THEE from above...**

**John 19:11**

I believe that God selects people and specifically anoints them to accomplish certain purposes. When I look back on my life, I can see that I was specifically anointed to do what I'm doing. This is different from a genuine in-filling of the Holy Spirit which every Christian has. Since the anointing is so important, we must ask ourselves, "How do we get this vital ingredient?" **It is very important to realize that the**

**anointing is not taught it is caught.** How does this special ingredient come onto a person? Is it something that we can all have or is it reserved for the special few? God is the one who introduces the anointing into the earth. He does it in His own sovereign way. I have noticed different ways by which the anointing is released on the earth.

## **TERMINATED TRANSFERRED ANOINTING**

In this type of transfer, a man of God's life is terminated and his anointing is transferred to someone else. The person who has received the anointing usually starts ministering after the death of the original anointed vessel. A good example of this is Joshua. Joshua became anointed to lead the people of Israel after Moses' life was terminated.

A transferred anointing is something that is moved from one person to another. **This transfer can occur when a man of God dies or leaves the scene. His mantle then falls directly on someone else.** The departure of Elijah from the scene resulted in the anointing on his life being transferred to Elisha. This resulted in the same anointing being present on the earth but operating through another human being.

God is concerned about finishing His work and will use whichever vessel is available. I call this terminated transfer because death terminates the life and ministry of one man and the anointing is transferred to another. This also happened under the ministry of Jesus. As soon as Christ was off the scene, the anointing that operated through him whilst he was on earth began to function through his



disciples. People were amazed. The only explanation that they could give for Peter and John's new charisma was their association with Christ.

**Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John... they MARVELLED; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

## **LIVING TRANSFERRED ANOINTING**

The next type of transfer is living transferred anointing. **In this case, the anointing on one person is transferred to someone else whilst that man of God is alive.** A man of God who is blessed with long life may see the anointing that is on his life working through others.

For example, the anointing departed from Saul and was replaced by an evil spirit. Meanwhile, his successor, David, was anointed while Saul was alive. Saul saw the anointing to be king on another man and was afraid of him. **This is a common occurrence in the ministry.** Even the prophet Samuel was afraid to anoint David while Saul was yet alive. He knew that it would provoke much jealousy and hatred.

**And the Lord said unto Samuel... fill thy horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite; for I provided me a king amongst his sons. And Samuel said, How can I go? IF SAUL HEAR IT, HE WILL KILL ME.**

**1 Samuel 16:1,2**

Some older men of God can see that their anointing has left them and moved on to another person. This sometimes

makes the older man of God to fight the new one upon whom he sees the anointing. Have you not seen that in your city? The older and insecure men of God fight to keep their position, whilst God works through others. God allowed Saul to fight David in order to test David's character. All things do work together for good to them that are called.

## **ANOINTING SHARING**

**This is when God takes the anointing on one man and shares it with several other people at the same time.**

You will notice several men of God in the same era, operating in a similar way. In Bible times, several of the prophets lived and prophesied around the same time. God took of the anointing that was upon Moses and shared it amongst seventy people.

**...Gather unto me seventy men... and I will take of the spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them.**

**Numbers 11:17**

All seventy men were anointed. They shared in Moses' anointing and accomplished God's will. I have seen the anointing on my life being shared to many of my pastors. I can see them operating under the same anointing. I have watched them catch the anointing.

## **MODIFIED ANOINTING TRANSFER**

The next type of anointing transfer is what I call a modified anointing transfer. **In this case, the anointing is transferred from one individual to another but in the**

**process it is modified.** In such a case, the recipient of the anointing may be notably different in ministry from the one from whom the anointing was transferred. An example of this can be seen under the ministry of Moses and Joshua. It was Moses who laid hands on Joshua and imparted the Spirit (anointing).

**And Joshua the son of Nun was full of the spirit of wisdom; for Moses had laid his hands upon him...  
Deuteronomy 34:9**

Basically, Joshua was anointed to do battle and take over new lands. Moses did not conquer any new lands, however you could see a similarity between Moses and Joshua. Joshua crossed the River Jordan using the “Red Sea crossing anointing” which he had received from Moses. He ruled the people with the authority of Moses. But apart from this and a few other occurrences Joshua was quite different from Moses.

## **DIMINISHING ANOINTING TRANSFER**

**The diminishing anointing transfer occurs when the anointing from is passed to another but is reduced in its strength and glory.** It is often God’s way of fading out a particular ministry.

You will see a clear example of this under the ministries of King David and King Solomon. David’s kingly anointing was transferred to his son Solomon and then to Rehoboam and Jeroboam. Solomon’s sons did not have the grace of God on their lives to rule over all of the twelve tribes of Israel. We cannot even remember the names of the other kings who

lived after Solomon. **This is because the kingly anointing was fading as the years passed.** God showed Solomon, before he died that the anointing on his son Rehoboam would be greatly diminished.

**But I will take the kingdom out of his son's hand [Rehoboam] and will give it unto thee even ten tribes. And unto his son will I give one tribe.**

**2 Kings 11:35,36**

Some American universities started out as Christian institutions with a Christian vision. Today there is not even a trace of Christianity in some of those colleges.

## **ENHANCED ANOINTING TRANSFER**

This is when the anointing transfer from one person to the other is upgraded. For example, Elisha had twice as much of the anointing that Elijah had and performed twice as many miracles. This type of anointing transfer is unusual. You will notice that Elijah told Elisha that he had asked for a hard thing, that is, to have an enhanced anointing transfer.

**...Thou hast asked a hard thing...**

**2 Kings 2:10**

## **FORMER ANOINTING REINTRODUCED**

This type of anointing transfer can be seen in the case of John the Baptist and Elijah. God decided to reintroduce the Elijah anointing through a man called John the Baptist. This

is because God was doing a work, which needed a dramatic Elijah-type of ministry.

**And if you will receive it this [John] is Elias, which was for to come.**

**Matthew 11:14**

**I believe that some of the apostolic and prophetic anointings of the early Church are being reintroduced into the Church at this time.** There is therefore a resurgence of the miraculous and the prophetic. There are much larger churches with ministers preaching to three thousand and five thousand members like Peter did in the Book of Acts.

The Bible predicts that two prophets with a peculiar anointing will arise in the Last Days to challenge the anti-christ. The Bible says that these two prophets will do certain things. A closer look at the ministry of these two Latter Day prophets reveals a great similarity between their anointings and those of Moses and Elijah. Once again this is the principle of the reintroduced anointing at work.

These two prophets will have power to call down fire from heaven. They will also have power over the weather to prevent it from raining for three and a half years. This sounds very much like Elijah. The Bible also says that they will have power to turn water into blood and command plagues to appear at random. Once again this sounds like the anointing that was on Moses.

**And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and three score days in sack cloth. These are the two olive trees and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, FIRE**

**PROCEEDETH OUT of their mouth and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them he must in this manner be killed. These have power to SHUT UP HEAVEN, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over WATERS TO TURN THEM TO BLOOD and, to SMITE THE EARTH WITH ALL PLAGUES, as often as they will.**

**Revelations 11:3-6**

Once again, it looks like God is reintroducing a former anointing in order to do a vital job. **The anointing on Moses' life was introduced to fight against a despotic and repressive Pharaoh. The anointing on Elijah's life contended with one of Israel's most detestable and incorrigible kings, Ahab.**

The Anti-Christ, one of the most tyrannical and evil men the Bible speaks about, will need to be trounced by a combination of these two strong anointings. Perhaps the Anti-Christ himself will combine the evil spirits that worked through both King Ahab and the Pharaoh.

You will learn from this study that God does specific things for specific reasons. You may want a miraculous ministry to impress people but God wants to fulfill His purpose. He may not want you to do any miracles. All He may want you to do is to teach His Word. John the Baptist did not perform any miracles but he fulfilled his ministry. He prepared the way for the Christ. Jesus said John the Baptist was the greatest prophet.

**Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist...**

**Matthew 11:11**

You can only line up with God's purpose. God will not do

anything outside His purpose. When you fulfill God's purpose for your life, Jesus will call you "great". Find out the purpose of God and flow with it. It is the purpose of God that will be achieved at the end of the day, and not your purpose.

**THIS IS THE PURPOSE THAT IS PURPOSED upon the whole earth: and this is the hand that is stretched out upon all the nations. For the Lord of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?**

**Isaiah 14:26,27**

## **A NEW AND ORIGINAL ANOINTING**

In this case, a person comes on the scene and God anoints him to do new things. This is not very common! A study of the Bible will show you that God rarely introduces a new and original anointing.

The more common way by which God introduces anointing is through people. Elijah the Tishbite is somebody who appeared with what I believe was a new and original anointing.

Two other people, Elisha and John the Baptist, have operated in the same anointing that was on Elijah. The difference, was that Elijah, was walking in a new and original anointing! Elisha was walking in an enhanced transferred anointing and John the Baptist was walking in a reintroduced anointing.

**CHAPTER 4**  
**UNDERSTANDING THE**  
**ANOINTING**



It should be the desire of every real minister to catch an anointing. Without the anointing, your ministry is reduced to philosophy and your church to an ideological institution. If you want to have a big church you need an anointing. If you want to teach the Word you need an anointing. If you want to be a prophet you need to be anointed. Without the anointing, you are no nearer being a minister than I am to becoming the Prince of Wales.

There are a few important facts that people need to know about catching the anointing.

## **It Is Difficult To Get An Anointing**

**...Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, that a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, THOU HAST ASKED A HARD THING...**

**2 Kings 2:9,10**

Although this scripture is usually referred to in terms of being anointed with a double portion, I believe that it also refers to the act of receiving an anointing. **It's a hard thing because few people have the anointing.** Many people try to get it, but few succeed. I can see why it is a hard thing.

Why is it that there are few doctors (relatively speaking) in the whole world? The answer is simple. It is because it is a "hard thing" to become a doctor. Many would like to be doctors, but few end up becoming doctors. In Ghana, like other countries, it is only the very best students who gain entry into the medical schools.

As I look around, I realize that there are not so many "truly"

anointed ministers. Many may call themselves pastors, but few are really anointed to stand in that office. If they were anointed we would both know and see it. Though many have certificates and qualifications from Bible schools, few are actually anointed. This leads us to ask, “Why is it such a difficult thing to be anointed?”

## **You Must Have a Strong Desire for the Anointing**

I want to show you why it is such a difficult thing for you to be anointed. **One reason why God does not readily give his anointing to just anyone is because the anointing is the Holy Spirit (God Himself).** The Holy Spirit is a precious gift from God to the Church. However, God does not haphazardly bestow that higher anointing needed for ministry on anyone. God does not cast His pearls before swine – you wouldn’t! If you don’t value the anointing God will not give it to you!

I once had an old car that I had used for a number of years. I wanted to give it to somebody. I searched earnestly for someone whom I could give it to. I knew that the car was very valuable and would cost millions of Ghanaian cedis (thousands of dollars) on the open market. However, because the car was slightly used I knew that if I gave it to the wrong person, he could mistakenly think I was getting rid of a worthless wreck. He would not appreciate it at all. Because of this, it took me a longtime to decide whom to give it to.

There were many around me who desperately needed a car. But because I wasn’t sure whether they would appreciate it or not, I decided to give it to a particular person. When I eventually gave the car away, I was happy with his response

to the gift. I felt that he genuinely appreciated it. I am sure there were people who wondered why I didn't give the car to them.

**God has a very precious commodity! He is looking for someone who really wants it and will appreciate it.**

Often, those who should be obvious recipients miss out on the blessing. The anointing then passes on to someone else, to the surprise of others.

Many wonder why God anointed someone like me. A pastor once stood in my pulpit and was overwhelmed by the huge crowds. He said, "The tables are turning. Many people are asking, 'Why Dag? Why is God using Dag?'" He was surprised that God had given me an anointing. Perhaps, in his estimation I shouldn't have received it.

Have you ever asked yourself why God loved Jacob and hated Esau?

## **Jacob Desired the Anointing**

**As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.**

**Romans 9:13**

Was Jacob not a heel snatcher and a deceiver? He was, but he desired the anointing. Often other earthly desires drown the desire for the anointing. You may be surprised that not meeting this qualification (of desiring the anointing) eliminates many people as it did with my car gift.

Jacob strongly desired the birthright (anointing), but Esau did not care much about it. Something that should worry us is the fact that God hated Esau. **If God hated Esau, then it is**

**possible that God can hate you!** If God hated Esau because he didn't care about the gift, then God can hate you because you don't care about the gift of His anointing. People have wondered why God used Kathryn Kuhlman, a healing evangelist. She married someone else's husband and later on divorced him. I believe that she strongly desired the anointing.

## **God Anoints the Desirous**

**God will pass over a thousand people who don't care much for the anointing and will give it to a person who strongly desires it.** I see God passing over many people to get to you now!

Did you know that Elijah's first servant was not Elisha? Did you know that Elijah's first servant was bypassed when it was time to be anointed? This servant was active in ministry but he was not chosen to be anointed by God. It was this servant who Elijah sent seven times to see if the rain clouds had appeared?

**...And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees, And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go again seven times**  
**1 Kings 18:42,43**

Why did this servant not receive the anointing? Why did Elisha, who was not even in the ministry, receive the anointing? Elisha was involved in business. He was plowing a field with his other business partners.

**So he departed thence, and found Elisha the son of Shaphat, who was plowing with twelve yoke of oxen**

**before him, and he with the twelve...**

**1 Kings 19:19**

What happened to the servant? Why wasn't he anointed? Why didn't he become the next great prophet? Please learn this important principle right now! God will pass over a thousand people who don't care much for the anointing and will give it to a person who strongly desires it.

Desire the anointing more than anything else in this world. That is the first step to becoming anything in the kingdom of God. God told Pastor Timothy to look for people with a desire to be bishops. **It is people with strong desires who get spiritual gifts.** Paul said,

**Follow after charity, and DESIRE SPIRITUAL GIFTS**  
[anointing]...

**1 Corinthians 14:1**

If we could paraphrase this, it would say, "desire the anointing".

**But COVET [desire] earnestly the best gifts..**

**1 Corinthians 12:31**

## **You Can Desire a Minister's Anointing**

I have learnt that you can specifically desire the anointing you see on particular man of God. You can covet the gift that God has given to him. This is possible because Elisha specifically requested the anointing that he saw on Elijah. Look around and see which man of God's ministry or gift you would like to have. I see that gift coming on you now!

Why would God tell you to desire something you cannot have? **The anointing is the principal tool for ministry. Without the anointing, all of your Bible school knowledge and certificates are useless.** You need an anointing. Anointing does not come by going to school. Anointing is not taught, it is caught!

When I was coming up in ministry, I did not know what I am teaching you now. God led me personally into this revelation. I loved the ministries of certain men and I followed hard after them. The anointing that I unknowingly coveted began to operate in my life. I will share more about this later. God often uses a man or several different men to impact your life with the anointing.

When you have decided which gifts and anointing to covet after, there are several hard steps or filters that you will have to go through. I call them filters because as people go through them, many “drop out”. There are people who desire the anointing but never get it. It is because they are not able to pass through these tests. The steps are filters, which differentiate between the receivers and all others.

# **CHAPTER 5**

## **STEPS TO THE ANOINTING**

### **THE PRINCIPLE OF VESSEL CHANGE**

Anointing is like a liquid that is poured into a vessel. Every liquid has a corresponding bottle or vessel. For instance, Coca-Cola will only be found in Coca-Cola bottles. Sprite has its own bottle. In order to be filled with Sprite you need to be a Sprite bottle. This is because specific fluids are associated with specific bottles. It is the same thing with the anointing.

**Specific anointings are associated with certain types of people.** An evangelistic anointing will go with a certain type of personality and character. A pastoral anointing will fit into a certain type of vessels. The Bible says that in a large house there are many type of vessels. You and I are these vessels.

**But in a great house there are not only VESSELS OF GOLD and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.**

**2 Timothy 2:20**

If we want to be filled with a Coca-Cola anointing we need to be Coca-Cola bottles, so that the anointing will fit into us. If you study the prophet Elijah, you will see a particular kind of anointing on his life. The prophetic anointing (1 Kings 18:36) on Elijah's life led him to do certain things. **The anointing allows you to achieve certain things.** He rebuked the kings of his day (1 Kings 21:17-20), fought with religious

leaders (1 Kings 18:20-24), challenged sins and evil, was dramatic (1 Kings 18:30-39), and had his ministry ended by a woman, Jezebel (1 Kings 19:3,14,16).

**The Bible tells us that John the Baptist operated in the same prophetic anointing as Elijah (Luke 1:76).** We therefore see John the Baptist, rebuking the king of his day (Mark 6:17-20), confronting religious leaders (Matthew 3:7-10), fighting sin and evil and having a very dramatic ministry (Luke 3:7-14). We also see his ministry terminated by a woman, Herod's wife (Matthew 14:6-10). This was the anointing of Elijah at work.

Elijah's anointing operated in John's life because he was changed into a vessel that could receive it. Note that both John the Baptist (Mark 1:4) and Elijah (1 Kings 19:4) lived in the desert. Both Elijah and John the Baptist ate weird things – locusts (Matthew 3:4) and worms (1 Kings 17:6). Both John the Baptist (Matthew 3:4) and Elijah (2 Kings 1:8) wore clothes made of camel's hair.

To receive such a heavy prophetic healing anointing such as that on Elisha, a person cannot have problems such as lying, stealing and covetousness. The anointing of Elisha does not fit into lying and covetous vessels. Unfortunately, Gehazi did not pass the test of lying and stealing. He lied and misrepresented Elisha! If a prophet is a liar, how will you know when he is speaking the Word of God? How would you know when he is speaking his own mind? Although Gehazi was close to the anointing, he did not obtain it! Elisha eventually cursed Gehazi for his unethical behavior as a prophetic student.

**The leprosy therefore of Naaman shall cleave unto thee, and unto thy seed for ever. And he went out from his presence a leper as white as snow.**



## 2 Kings 5:27

**If you desire a particular anointing, God will mould you into the type of vessel can contain that anointing.** If God wants you to be a great pastor, he may work on your education. He may work on your knowledge of administration and law. To receive the anointing you must allow Him to work on you! Some people are not educated, yet they do not educate themselves by reading. Yet, they desire the anointing to be leaders of large numbers of people. Don't you know that pastoring a large number of people means that you will have several highly educated people in your congregation? How will you relate with all of these people?

God may be working on your language. He may try to polish your manners and general etiquette! He may send you to a Bible school for training. He may send you off to a secular university for molding. I had seven years of university training. These years molded me into a suitable vessel. God may take you through various humbling experiences. All that He is doing is to prepare a vessel that can handle the anointing. This is the principle of vessel change.

If you desire a strong prophetic anointing, God is likely to require of you a life of solitude. You cannot have such an anointing if you do not make time to wait on the Lord. You see, many changes may have to take place in your character and moral life if God is to use you for great achievements. **Those who refuse to change and to modify are refusing to be recipients of the anointing.**

This first step alone can explain why many people desire the

anointing but never get it. Nobody pours Coca-Cola into a fuel tank. It is only petrol that is poured into a fuel tank. **If you are a fuel tank you will never receive Coca-Cola – you will receive fuel!** There are different containers for different anointings. Please accept this simple reality.

## SERVANTHOOD

Throughout the Bible, those that received an anointing were servants. Joshua was a servant of Moses.

**Now after the death of Moses the servant of the Lord it came to pass, that the Lord spake unto Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' MINISTER [servant]...**

**Joshua 1:1**

Elisha was a servant of Elijah.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, which POURED WATER [servant] on the hands of Elijah.**

**2 Kings 3:11**

Peter, James and John were the servants of Christ.

**HENCEFORTH I CALL YOU NOT SERVANTS [the disciples were ushers, bodyguards and errand boys]; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends...**

**John 15:15**

The position of a servant is a humbling one. You do not have your own mind! You must work for your master, taking him to be right all of the time. When you become a servant, you are like a grown up child, ready to receive every instruction that is

meted out to you.

No one is above the Word of God. **If Joshua had to be a servant before he became an anointed General, so will you.** This is another reason why some people never become anointed. They are simply too big to ever become servants of anyone. They are so conscious of their age and position in society. They feel that their status must be constantly recognized. No wonder God has raised up many young people to receive an anointing. Many old dogs could not be taught new tricks.

Although God has given me several thousand people in my ministry, I have been a servant for many years. **I have served as an usher, drummer, arranger, sound technician and organist.** There is hardly any department of the church, in which I have not been a servant.

I marvel at those who want pastoral positions based on their having a Bible School diploma. They are no nearer becoming pastors than I am to living on Mars. Some people just attend services and want to be appointed elders in the church, without serving their way to the top. These are the signs of a servant. Ask yourself if you are a servant or a boss.

## SIGNS OF A SERVANT

§ A servant has a master.

**A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master...**

**Malachi 1:6**

§ A servant is at the beck and call of his master.

**For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.**

**Matthew 8:9**

§ A servant is one who executes the command of another.

§ A servant cannot be inconvenienced by any job or task.

§ A servant does not see himself as equal to his master. He doesn't say things like, "We are all classmates. We are all engineers. We all have children."

**Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God.**

**Philippians 2:6**

§ A servant carries out the wishes of his master.

**Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again;**

**Titus 2:9**

§ A servant cannot be embarrassed by his job.

**...And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.**

**Philippians 2:8**

§ A servant does menial jobs: picking up crumbs, serving food.

**When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

**...Elisha the son of Shaphat, which poured water on the hands of Elijah.**

**2 Kings 3:11**

§ A servant sets up his master while he stays below.

**He must increase, but I must decrease.**

**John 3:30**

§ A servant does not expect thanks or acknowledgment.

**So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.**

**Luke 17:10**

§ A servant does what his master wants in the way his master wants it.

**...Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.**

**1 Samuel 15:22**

§ A servant ministers to his master of his substance.

**And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna, the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, WHICH MINISTERED UNTO HIM OF THEIR SUBSTANCE.**

**Luke 8:3**

§ A servant has a reward.

**Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name.**

**Philippians 2:9**

**Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.**

**Hebrews 12:2**

## **RECEIVING A FATHER**

When God leads you to follow after a man of God, (like Elisha followed Elijah) it is important for you to receive him as a father. You will notice from the story of Elisha that he had an earthly father called Shaphat.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat...**

**2 Kings 3:11**

However, by the time Elijah was taken away, Elisha referred to Elijah as his father. He did this effortlessly and naturally.

**And Elisha saw it, and he cried, MY FATHER, MY FATHER...**

**2 Kings 2:12**

Why is it important to receive your man of God as a father? What does it mean? I want to bring to your attention two very important reasons why you must receive him as a father.

**Firstly, a person who does not have a father is very different from someone who has parents.** A person with a father receives guidance and direction in life. A fatherless person has a life full of struggles.

I never worked whilst I was in university. My father provided for me fully until I became a doctor. The money he gave me each month as a student was even more than my salary when I became a doctor. My father bought me a brand new car when I was in the fifth year of medical school. I was really blessed to have a good father looking after me. **My life as a student was struggle free because I had a father!** However, the same can not be said for many people.

I have met countless people who did not receive guidance in life. They threw away their talent and became non-entities in life, because there was no father to guide them. I know many people who do not even know their fathers.

The situation is worse for an orphan! **Struggles abound for orphans.** The future of an orphan is very uncertain. It is the same thing in ministry. When you have no one to influence you in the right way, your ministry is full of various struggles. Although I have had different fathers in ministry, there are times I have been fatherless as far as developing into a pastor was concerned.

I have had fathers in ministry from afar. I have gone through various struggles because I have not received support from nearby and potential fathers. Many of the struggles and frustrations I've experienced in ministry are because I had no one to help me in starting a church.

In fact, people who should have been as fathers to me when I was beginning my church were more of outright enemies. They opposed my cause and fought against me. Today

some of these people are always eager to claim fatherhood over my life because I am successful in ministry.

**The second reason why it is important to have a father is because inheritance flows naturally from a father to his children.** In the ministry, spiritual inheritance flows naturally from the fathers to the sons. When my father died, his will was read in Court. He left his properties to his children. Although he had many employees and friends he didn't leave anything to them – it all went to his children. Dear friend, that is the reality of life. Inheritance usually goes to children.

There is something known as a spiritual inheritance (Ephesians 1:18). **This spiritual inheritance of anointing and gifts passes naturally from fathers to sons.** It does not pass from father to equals, colleagues and friends. It does not even pass from father to servants. It passes from fathers to sons.

## Hello “Boss”

I used to have a junior pastor who preferred to call me “boss”. I always felt uneasy when he called me “boss”, but I didn't know why. You see, when someone calls you “boss”, it means that he sees himself more as a hired hand. A few years later this pastor departed under unpleasant circumstances. Then I realized why I had felt uneasy. A servant or an employee does not stay around forever. He's only there for awhile and will leave when it suits him.

**And the servant abideth not in the house for ever:  
but the Son abideth ever.**

**John 8:35**



**So, if you have a relationship with a man of God which becomes a father-son relationship, then you can expect a spiritual inheritance of anointing to flow effortlessly from him to you.**

**How do you receive someone as a father?** When someone is your father he can speak freely into your life and you trust what he says. A child usually believes that his father really cares for him, no matter how much the father disciplines him. If you have doubts in your mind about someone, or are suspicious of him, that person cannot be a father to you.

A pastor can remain as a good man of God to some people, but to others he becomes a father. When a person becomes a father to you one of the main features is an attitude of fullest trust in him. That attitude makes you admire and open up to him. You can never really open up your spirit to someone unless you trust him.

**Maintain great respect and admiration for anyone you want to receive as a father.** Our father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name (Matthew 6:9). Let the will of your father in ministry be done. If he says to you to pray and to fast, because you believe it is for your own good, allow that thing to happen.

Finally, accept the father's position and authority. Every time we pray the Lord's prayer, we end it by saying, "thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory." We constantly affirm the position of our heavenly father. In the same way, every son must overcome the temptation to fight his father's authority and rule. **Never fight a father, it is a dangerous violation.** Instead, give the honor to the fathers.

**The eye that mocketh at his father, and despiseth to**

**obey his mother, and ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it.**

**Proverbs 30:17**

## **FOLLOW THE MAN OF GOD CLOSELY**

Another important step is to follow the man of God closely. All the examples of people who received anointing stayed close to their mentors. Elisha stayed with Elijah to the very end. Elijah tried on many occasions to get Elisha to stay behind, but he followed him to the very end. It was at the end that he caught the anointing. There are two ways you can follow a man of God closely.

### **Physical Association and Close Interaction**

The first way is through physical association, close interaction and personal acquaintance with the anointed servant of God. Joshua associated with Moses as his personal servant and minister.

**...Joshua the son of Nun, MOSES' MINISTER...**

**Joshua 1:1**

Elisha desired a double portion of the anointing on Elijah's life. He knew that through service to the man of God he could obtain the anointing he desired. Elisha became known as the person who physically washed the hands of Elijah. Close association of this sort may lead to a transfer of anointing.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, WHICH POURED WATER ON THE HANDS [cleaned and ministered] of**

Elijah.

2 Kings 3:11

## Follow His Words Closely

The second way by which you can follow a man of God is to follow his words closely. Not many people will have the privilege of interacting personally with their mentors. So how can anyone catch an anointing on a great man of God? The answer is simple. Is it the pouring of water or the doing of menial jobs that leads to a transferring of an anointing? The answer is no! **The physical interaction exposes you to his words.**

Jesus said to his disciples, the words that I speak to you, they are Spirit (anointing) and life. **The anointing is in the words.** The disciples of Jesus soaked in the words of their master until he left them. **They took his words seriously because he had told them that the anointing was in the words.** Thank God that today the words of anointed ministers are available in books, tapes and videos.

**...the WORDS that I speak unto you, they ARE SPIRIT [anointing], and they ARE LIFE.**

John 6:63

The anointing enters you as you listen to the word. The word is not just some philosophical discourse. It is different from a lecture in college. The word is able to impart an anointing into your life. Look at this amazing scripture in Ezekiel! The prophet said he could feel the anointing enter him as the Lord spoke to him.

**And THE SPIRIT ENTERED into me WHEN HE SPAKE UNTO ME...**

## **Ezekiel 2:2**

I have always wanted the opportunity to live and serve certain men of God. But that opportunity was never practical. However, following some of these men through videos, tapes and books has greatly blessed my life and ministry. The fact that you are reading this book is evidence that an anointing I received some years ago is real.

The Bible records that Elisha soaked in the words of his spiritual father. Elisha didn't just wash Elijah's hands. He didn't just wash and clean in the house. Just like Jesus and the disciples, Elisha and Elijah engaged in lots of important conversation.

**And it came to pass, as they still went on, and TALKED...  
2 Kings 2:11**

Decide to stay close to the very end until the anointing which you desire is flowing through your ministry. Elisha walked so closely to Elijah that God had to separate them Himself. Don't allow anyone to separate you from your spiritual father. Do not allow circumstances to keep you away from your man of God.

**...there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire,  
and PARTED THEM BOTH ASUNDER...  
2 Kings 3:11**

## **SPIRITUAL MINISTRATIONS**

We must be careful not to make any mistakes. God will give you the anointing. No man can give you the anointing. Yet, He does it through men. It is important to pray and ask for

the anointing.

**If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?**

**Luke 11:13**

Another way you can receive the anointing is through the laying on of hands. The laying on of hands is a foundational doctrine of the Church. It is the principal way in which an impartation or gift is given. It is such an important procedure that God tells us not to hurriedly impart gifts through the laying on of hands.

**LAY HANDS SUDDENLY ON NO MAN, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.**

**1 Timothy 5:22**

Timothy, the pastor, had hands laid on him and received spiritual gifts. The Bible plainly declares that he received the gift of God through the laying on of hands.

**Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the PUTTING ON OF MY HANDS.**

**2 Timothy 1:6**

This means that the manifestation of the gift and anointing must have begun to operate in Timothy's life after hands were laid on him. Thank God for the preaching of the Word of God. There is a place for the laying on of hands. The disciples received an anointing when Jesus breathed on them and said,

**...Receive ye the Holy Ghost:**

**John 20:22**

These different spiritual ministrations are ways by which God can impart His gift to you.

## THE PASSAGE OF TIME

Time is a very important element in the development of any ministry. The Word of God teaches us that Jesus adds to our gifts when He recognizes that we are faithful to what He has given to us.

**He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.**

**Luke 16:10**

With the passage of time your faithfulness will be tested. Your faithfulness will provoke God to give you additional gifts and a greater anointing. You will discover that certain realms are inaccessible to you until “time” elapses. **Unfortunately, there is no substitute for the test of time.**

Some years ago, I tried to raise the dead but I did not succeed. I often wondered why God did not honor me then. If He had, I probably would have backslidden by now. I now see certain things happening in my ministry, which I didn’t see before. If I had had that level of anointing some years ago, it could have destroyed me. It is important to trust God to allow time to pass so that He Himself can lift you up at the right time.

## MINISTER TO THE MAN OF GOD

The last but not the least step I want to share with you concerns ministering to the man of God with your substance.

**And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna, the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, WHICH MINISTERED UNTO HIM OF THEIR SUBSTANCE.**

**Luke 8:3**

You must be able to minister to the man of God out of your own substance. If money is a problem to you then you cannot be a minister. The Bible teaches that people who have been taught should share their good things with those who teach them.

**Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.**

**Galatians 6:6**

The man of God will minister spiritual things to you and you will minister back to him in physical things. The anointing is provoked when you minister to the man of God. Anytime I have had the opportunity to be near those who have been a blessing to me I have ministered to them out of my substance.

When the woman with the alabaster box of ointment ministered to Christ, he said that she would be remembered. When you pour an "alabaster box" on a man of God you will provoke a blessing and be remembered. **Your ministry will have a longer life span as you decide to honor those before you. Your ministry will be remembered by many.** You will provoke the favor and anointing of God over your life.

Notice what great men like Abraham did when they met up with greater men of God. They immediately ministered to the man of God out of their substance.

**And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. And he blessed him... And he [Abraham] gave him tithes of all.**

**Genesis 14:18-20**



## **CHAPTER 6**

# **A SPECIAL SECRET**

I had no formal training in the ministry, no Bible school and little contact with any great man of God (and lots of critics). Some of the men of God I came into contact with, ended up opposing and fighting the call of God on my life. I had no option but to tap into the anointing that was on other more distant men of God.

I was forced to catch the anointing through tapes and books. I believe that I am anointed with the Holy Ghost to stand in my office of ministry. I have too much evidence all around me to doubt the reality of the anointing on my life. I also believe that the electronic and technological development in the world is for the benefit of the kingdom of God and the ministry. The technology of this world can help you to get near to people who are anointed.

**It's the Anointing That You Need**

When God sends you a man of God, you are given a chance to receive him and catch the anointing that is on his life. The anointing is the principal thing that you and I need to do God's work. The prophet Zechariah knew that the most important thing was the anointing. It was he who said, "It is not by might and it is not by power but it's by the anointing of the Spirit" (Zechariah 4:6).

Elisha also realized that the thing which made Elijah's ministry successful was the anointing. When he had the opportunity he asked for the anointing. Some people may have asked for the money, the education or the qualifications that Elijah had. **But Elisha just wanted the anointing!**

**...Elijah said unto Elisha, ask what I shall do for thee before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me.**

**2 Kings 2:9**

In this chapter, I want to share about a channel of anointing that is not usually spoken of. It may sound new to you, but it is very real. If there is any way by which you can catch the anointing please take it! I am not presenting this as the only way that God can anoint you. I am sharing with you what I have received from the Lord. I am sharing with you what is biblically and scripturally sound.

Many people have received the anointing through listening to tapes and reading books but they do not understand what has happened to them. **Many people who have received the anointing through this channel cannot teach it because they do not fully understand it.** I believe that it is my duty to teach this simple but real method of catching the most essential ingredient of ministry – the anointing.

In the previous chapter, I have shared about the importance of associating closely with the man of God in order to receive the anointing. Why do you have to associate with anointed men of God? What exactly do you acquire through association? As you closely associate with a man of God you will hear him speaking over and over. These words are what contain the anointing. When Elisha associated himself closely with Elijah he heard him speaking over and over again.

**And it came to pass, AS THEY STILL WENT ON, AND  
TALKED...**

**2 Kings 2:11**

## **Words Are Powerful!**

**Jesus told His disciples that His words contained two important things. They contained life and the Spirit!** What is this Spirit? The Spirit is the anointing! The scripture says that God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power (Acts 10:38). Jesus was anointed with the Holy Ghost, and therefore the Holy Ghost is the anointing (the substance with which He was anointed).

**...the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit  
and they are life.**

**John 6:63**

For many people, the close association we speak about is not possible except through the medium of books and tapes. Books and tapes contain the words of anointed men of God. The words of anointed men of God contain the Spirit and the life. "Soaking" in books written by anointed men is a very valuable way of fellowshiping with them. The

time you spend reading a book is time you spend fellowshiping with the one who wrote the book. What a great privilege to interact with someone with three hours in the privacy of your home. As you read this book you are fellowshiping with me and I am fellowshiping with you. As I write this book I feel that I am talking to certain people. I am ministering directly to as many as would take the time to receive. Just as Elisha listened to the words of Elijah and the disciples listened to the words of Jesus, you are listening to my words as you read this book! The disciples listened to the words of Jesus, that is why they were anointed. The anointing makes people take note of you.

**...and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

You can be with Jesus today by reading His words in the Bible. I constantly become amazed at the number of ministers who do not read the Bible. They just use the Bible as a tool for preaching. The word of God is, first of all for your benefit. You will not be a minister of substance if you do not have your own personal fellowship with the Lord. I do not mean a last-minute check of certain scriptures before you preach. A quick check of a scripture is different from fellowshiping with somebody through the written word. Fellowship with Jesus everyday. God wants to interact with you. He wants to fellowship with you. God's desire since the days of Adam has been to fellowship with man.

When Moses came down from the mountain after fellowshiping with the Lord, the glory of the Lord was upon him. The glory of the Lord will be upon you when you

fellowship with God.

When I woke up in this world I found myself in Ghana, West Africa. I realized that I was very far from the great men of God in America. I desperately wanted to fellowship with them but there was no way possible. I did not even have a visa to America. I had no money to buy a plane ticket. Even if I had been able to get there, many would have seen me as a crazy Black man who was trying to get too close! They would have called their security guards to protect them from me. So God showed me a way that I could fellowship with some of the great anointed people of this generation. I have fellowshiped with many people through their books. I have got to know their minds through their books. I have interacted with the Lord Jesus by reading the Bible and studying His words and actions. One of my favorite portions of the Bible are the gospels. In the gospels (Matthew, Mark, Luke and John), I can see what Jesus said and I can hear Him talking to me personally.

## **Two Types of Receivers**

There are two types of people who receive the anointing – those who are physically near and those who are physically afar off. You see, some people have the opportunity to be physically near to the anointed vessel. The apostles, Peter, James and John were physically close to the Lord. They touched Him, they held Him and they even had dinner with Him.

**That which was from the beginning, which we have HEARD, which we have SEEN with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have**

## HANDLED...

1 John 1:1

The Apostle Paul loved his books. Unfortunately, Paul did not have the chance to physically interact with Christ as the other apostles did. Paul was just like me, he had to depend on books! That is why he sent urgently for his books and parchments (booklets). He had to study and fellowship with the Lord and other great men of God like Isaiah through the written Word.

**The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, AND THE BOOKS, BUT ESPECIALLY THE PARCHMENTS.**

2 Timothy 4:13

If Paul had lived in our generation he would have used all the technology available to receive even more of the Word and the anointing. Paul would have listened to tapes and watched videos. **Books contain the written word, but tapes contain the spoken word.** You can catch the anointing from the spoken word.

“Soaking” in tapes is a scriptural practice. **Soaking in tapes simply means to listen to the words over and over again until it becomes a part of you and until the anointing passes unto you!** When a tape is fully soaked, both the Word content and the Spirit content are imbibed into your spirit. The anointing is not something you learn, it is something you catch.

Do not assume that the “soaking” in of the tape is just an educational exercise. It is a spiritual event. Two important things happen when you soak in a tape. Faith comes by

hearing, and hearing by the Word (Romans 10:17).  
Secondly, the anointing of the Spirit content comes into you.

The Spirit enters a person as he receives the Word of God. That is why many people experience radical transformations by just listening to a powerful message of the Word of God. That is how come people are saved when they hear the preaching of the Word of God. The Holy Spirit enters into them as the preaching goes forth and they are gloriously Born Again. The Bible says that we are born of the Spirit.

**That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that  
which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

**John 3:6**

Being Born Again is not an educational experience. Being Born Again does not mean that you have learnt something new. It means that a spiritual change has taken place. Your spirit is recreated by the Holy Spirit. This experience of being Born Again completely and forever changes a person's life. It happens when people listen to the preaching of the Word. That is why we invite people to church. We want them to be exposed to the preaching.

In the same way as you are Born Again and experience a spiritual transformation, you can experience a further spiritual transformation that will convert you into a minister. This spiritual transformation that makes you a minister is what some call "receiving an anointing" or "being anointed". There are too many people who are called ministers who have not received a call to ministry and an anointing to minister.

When you have not been anointed, you are dry and lifeless. I used to go to church every Sunday and I hated it! It was a lifeless and boring experience. I only went because my parents had asked me to go. Unfortunately, not only are some so-called ministers not anointed but they are not even Born Again. This is even worse! You do not become a minister by obtaining a certificate. **You become a minister when God calls you and anoints you!**

Churches do not grow because there is no anointing for church growth. Pastors everywhere must desire the anointing. It is the anointing that makes the difference! Once you know the anointing, you will not want anything else. You will not succeed in the ministry by being clever. Intelligence and education are no substitutes for the anointing! Desire the anointing! Go for it! It is the main thing! And the main thing is still the main thing! The first sermon that Jesus preached was about the anointing. The first thing that He said when he began His ministry was that He was anointed.

**The Spirit of the Lord is upon because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor...**

**Luke 4:18**

In fact, Jesus did not attempt any form of ministry until He was anointed. Jesus knew that the ministry depended on the anointing. I recently visited a beautiful large church. The pastor himself was not around so the janitor took us around the building. The main hall had hundreds of beautiful mahogany pews. It was a beautiful building with two huge pipe organs and surrounding balconies.

I asked the janitor, "How many people does this building



seat?"

He answered, "This building seats at least eight hundred and eighty people."

"Wow," I remarked, "That's a lot of people!"

He continued, "But, we don't have many people coming to church anymore."

"I see. How many people come to church nowadays?" I asked inquisitively.

"About twenty, with a maximum of thirty people." He added, "Only old people attend church now. The young people don't come to church anymore."

I thought, "How sad. Such a large church has been reduced to a fellowship of twenty old and dying people."

Obviously there was no life. But that was not all.

The janitor continued, "The services from this month are being held every two weeks instead of every week."

I thought to myself, "We hold church services on almost everyday of the week. There is so much life in our church. It is full of mainly young people who want to serve the Lord. What a contrast!"

What makes a difference between a growing and a dead church is the anointing. The anointing is the life of God in the ministry. Oh, how we need the anointing! We can't do without the Holy Spirit.

So how do we come by this Holy Spirit? That is what this book is about. God is trying to show you that you need an anointing. You may be ministering the Word. You may even be ordained. But it is only when you are anointed that your ministry will begin to make a difference to the lost masses of humanity. I see the anointing on you right now as you read this book!

The prophet Ezekiel experienced the anointing entering his life one day. He described exactly how and when the anointing came upon him. Ezekiel sensed that the power and anointing of the Spirit had entered into him whilst he was listening to the Word.

**And the spirit entered into me WHEN HE SPAKE unto me...**

**Ezekiel 2:2**

Ezekiel said very clearly in this scripture that the Holy Spirit entered into him when he was being spoken to.

Peter, the apostle, also noticed this phenomenon. He noticed that the power of the Holy Spirit fell on people as he preached. Do you remember when Peter was preaching to the Gentiles? The Bible says that as he ministered the Word the Spirit of God fell on the people.

**While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.**

**Acts 10:44**

**If the gift of the Holy Spirit could fall on people whilst Peter was preaching then surely the gift of the Holy Spirit can fall on you when any other anointed man of God is preaching.** This is simple logic.

At 5 o'clock in the morning on the 1<sup>st</sup> of January, 1987 I decided to obey the call of God on my life. It was in the early hours of the first day of that New Year when I decided to take up the mantle and become a pastor. I knew that I had been called and I had decided to obey and become a pastor.

At the time, I was in my fourth year of medical school. I

began the church with a few nursing students and laboratory students in the Korle-Bu Teaching Hospital where I was studying medicine. I had no one to direct or guide me so I struggled quite a bit during that first year. By the end of 1987 many friends had expressed their lack of confidence in me and deserted me. I was criticized until I felt like killing myself, just to make my enemies happy. I remember looking at the ceiling fan as it twirled above my bed. I often thought of hanging myself on it. I wanted to vanish out of the view of all those who hated me and criticized me. I had very little guidance, but I was sincere and I had a lot of faith and many enemies. It is amazing how people hate you when you decide to follow the call of God.

This was the precarious and doubtful beginning of my ministry. I started out by faith and began teaching and preaching what I knew. A few nursing students responded. At the beginning the church met in a little classroom in the School of Hygiene. After awhile many people left and some stayed. The little church stabilized with about forty members. But something happened to me in 1988 that made a big difference to my ministry. It transformed the ministry from a little classroom full of nursing students to a ministry that impacts thousands of people around the world today.

## **What Happened to Me?**

Sometime during the middle of the year 1988, I had to fulfill what is called a community health rotation. Every class in medical school is divided into groups. Each group rotates through different fields of medicine throughout the year. That is why it is called a rotation. I had to complete four rotations in my final year, one each for surgery, medicine, specials and community health.

During the community health rotation, I had to travel outside

the city of Accra to a smaller town called Suhum, in another region of the country. Whilst there I lived in the Suhum Government Hospital for one month. I was to gain practical experience in running a hospital and working out on the field where conditions are different from the bigger cities.

Although I was fulfilling my medical requirements, as usual my mind was on the ministry. By the second week, I took advantage of a more relaxed timetable and decided to fast and pray. On my way out of Accra to Suhum, I had passed through a Christian bookshop and bought some Kenneth Hagin tapes. I felt that I just need something to soak in whilst I was in Suhum. I had been a great follower and admirer of Kenneth Hagin's ministry. Actually, I had already listened to those tapes many times but I thought I would just have something to listen to. No one had ever told me to listen to tapes. I just enjoyed doing it. I loved the Word and I loved the minister of the Word. No one had ever told me to listen to tapes over and over. I wasn't trying to memorize the message although I ended up remembering almost every sentence. Listening to tapes never replaced Bible study and personal quiet times for me. I wasn't losing my personality! I wasn't becoming a clone. I was being blessed tremendously!

One night I was praying, fasting and listening to one of these tapes that I had bought. I remember that day as if it was yesterday. I was using a small red Sony auto-reverse tape recorder. The message that was being played was something about dealing with demons. It was a message I had enjoyed listening to many times. The tape played nonstop throughout the night.

## **Something Happened!**

At about 3 a.m. in the morning I was kneeling by the bed praying. I could see the tape recorder situated at the other end of the room. Then suddenly, something literally jumped out of the tape which was playing and moved into my belly. I could feel it entering me. Then I heard a voice saying, "From now you can teach." I didn't know what that was but I thought to myself, "That's good, because I want to teach." **I didn't know at that time that I had received a major impartation of anointing through the channel of soaking in tapes.**

At that time, my church was comprised of about forty students. The Bible teaches that we should prove all things, so I decided to try out this new gifting. I was invited to teach at a Full Gospel Businessmen's breakfast meeting in Suhum. This was my first ministration after my impartation experience. I tell you, I noticed a difference. After the ministration someone asked me where my church was. He was surprised that I was an unknown minister. Inside me I knew that something had happened that was making a difference.

When I got back to the church after a month, I noticed a difference in my ability to teach and preach. The anointing had arrived and I began to build up. The first series I preached was about the prodigal son. I preached this on a weekday and the attendance and interest in the service began to increase steadily. I tell you, I noticed there was some life and Spirit in the ministry. It is difficult to describe it but when it's there you know it's there! The anointing is a bit like beauty – when you see it, you know it! You can't easily explain how or why you recognize beauty. But when you see beauty or anointing you know that it is there.

I have no reason to say what I am sharing except but to help you. My ministry has grown in leaps and bounds because of an anointing caught from soaking in the Word on a tape.

Today, you are reading one of the several books that I have written under that same teaching anointing.

At the time, I did not have any biblical basis for what I had experienced, so I did not talk about it. Later, as I studied the Word of God, I realized that the mystery of impartation of anointing through the soaking of the Word is a reality. It is biblical! It is doctrinally sound and it is experientially real!

**Anyone who exposes himself to soaking in the Word through books and tapes is exposing himself to more of the anointing!** When you do that, only good things will happen to you.

On different occasions I have heard people describe how they have received an anointing as they sat in the congregation and received the ministry of the Word. One pastor described how he felt warm drops of anointing falling on his head as I spoke the Word at a Camp Meeting. I believe the Lord was anointing this man.

T. L. Osborne, the great evangelist, describes how God changed his ministry as he sat under the ministry of William Branham. It all happened in a moment and he was anointed to go out and be a great witness to the world. It is interesting that outsiders sometimes are better receivers than insiders. Do you remember the story of the Centurion whose servant was sick? He sent for Jesus because he knew that Jesus had the anointing and power to heal.

And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.

And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly,

saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:  
For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.  
Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far  
from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto  
him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou  
shouldest enter under my roof:  
Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee:  
but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

**Luke 7:2-7**

This man realized that there was anointing in the words of  
Jesus. So he sent another message to Jesus.  
He said, "Don't bother to come all the way here. **Just stand  
there and say something.**"  
In other words, there is no need for you to even lay hands or  
pour oil on my child, Just speak some words and the healing  
anointing will flow.

**He sent his word and healed them, and delivered them  
from their destructions.**

**Psalms 107:20**

One night when I was ministering at a Miracle Wave  
Convention something astonishing happened. There were  
thousands of people present that night and the power of God  
was flowing. That night I remember that when I finished  
preaching the Word, I felt that God had already moved. It  
wasn't even necessary to do anything further. There was a  
lady sitting up in the balcony with her baby and husband.

## **The Angel Appears**

This lady suddenly experienced an open vision. Her eyes

opened supernaturally and she could see me and everybody else on the stage. But she saw a huge angel standing on my left hand side suspended in midair.

She said, "As you were preaching you would say things like, 'I see you blessed!!', 'I see God answering your prayer!', 'I see you healed in the name of Jesus!', 'I see you owning a car!'" The angel would hand out blessings as I spoke and smaller angels would carry them to the people.

She said that some people had outstretched hands and were very receptive. The angels would go straight to them with the blessings. Whilst others were receiving others were dozing off and missing out on the spiritual impartation that was taking place. I believe that that angel goes around with me whenever I minister. I know that that "big guy" has been assigned to me. He's my ministering angel. Spiritual things are as real as physical things. The Bible teaches us that angels are ministering spirits that minister for us. They work for us and help us. That is why the angel was distributing spiritual parcels to those who were receiving the Word.

**Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?**

**Hebrews 1:14**

## **Levels of Receptivity**

Anyone who listens to tapes and reads books will receive to a greater or lesser extent. Some people are not impressed or touched by the message. Some others are even offended by it. As Jesus said, "Blessed is he that is not offended in me." Some people are excited by the message. Some cannot remember anything they just know that it was a good message.



As you listen to a tape you learn the message. You learn the Word. You acquire the knowledge content. Some people stop at this point. But others go even further. I went further without even knowing what I was doing. Somehow it wasn't the knowledge content that I was after. If it was knowledge, I had virtually assimilated all the facts that were being shared after a few times of listening to the tape. My love for the Word made me expose myself to the anointing without even knowing it.

I remember being blessed by messages of a pastor of a huge church in Los Angeles, California. I had a few videos of his that I thoroughly enjoyed. I would watch these videos over and over. As I watched this pastor preaching in his church I desired to have a church like that and to preach as well as he did. One day, I was preaching in my church, walking up and down the aisles when the Spirit of God told me, "This is it!"

It suddenly dawned on me that I was walking in the steps of that pastor that I had watched and listened to for years. I was teaching and preaching like he did. I was pastoring a church which was as large as I had seen on the television. You see, when the anointing is on you you will do certain specific things in your ministry. Do you want to have a big church? Catch the anointing that is on someone who has a big church. Do you want to be an evangelist? Look around and see who God is using and follow that person. Listen to his tapes and read his books. The anointing will fall on you one day.

## **The Specificity of the Anointing**

The anointing is like your gun. It does certain specific things. You just have to use it and direct it where you want to. Every anointing has a way of working out itself to achieve specific

results. The anointing that was on Elijah made him do certain things. Do you want to be a teacher of the Word? Then follow someone who has a teaching anointing. The anointing is very specific. The healing anointing is different from the teaching anointing which is different from the pastoral anointing.

Elijah miraculously caused three years of drought. He multiplied the meal and oil of a widow, caused the resurrection of a young boy and called fire from heaven. Elisha did similar things. He also caused years of drought, performed healings, and multiplied a widow's oil. It is interesting to note that Elisha did exactly twice as many miracles as Elijah did. Elijah did sixteen miracles and Elisha did thirty-two miracles! Elisha had a double portion of Elijah's anointing.

The anointing is a very specific substance that makes you achieve certain things. You can desire a specific minister's anointing. God may have put it in your heart to achieve certain things in the ministry. Elisha went for Elijah's anointing without any apologies to anyone.

If you catch the anointing which is on certain people you will do similar things because it is the same anointing. John the Baptist also carried Elijah's anointing. There were many similarities between John the Baptist and Elijah's ministry. Both of them had dramatic ministries and both of them confronted kings. Both of these men were familiar with deserts and solitude. They wore the same type of garments and lived simply. Both of them had their ministries terminated by queens.

## **Benefit From the Tapes**

In order to gain the maximum benefit from a tape, you must

listen to it with a vision of eventually receiving an impartation of the anointing. Listen to the same tape several times. In my experience, this is different from listening to many different tapes of the same minister. When you want to get to Level F below, stay with the tapes you enjoy. Listen to tapes unconsciously and listen to them whilst praying and fasting. Allow yourself to receive the gift of God that is ministering to you. You must be open to the man of God who is ministering. You must receive him with admiration and with love, otherwise, you can get nothing from him or through him.

**But as many as received him, to them gave he power...**

**John 1:12**

## **Learn How to Preach**

You can learn how to preach and teach by listening to tapes. I have not been to Bible school and did not have the privilege of being taught how to deliver a sermon. But there are many ways of learning the same thing. When I was practicing medicine I learnt a little phrase from the surgical department. They said, "Watch one, assist one and do one." What does this mean? It means that if you want to learn how to operate you watch one, you assist one and then you actually do an operation yourself.

Everyone can learn how to preach by listening to preaching. The best thing is to listen to other singers all the time. The prophet Daniel studied what the prophet Jeremiah had taught. The prophet Jeremiah ministered from 685-616 B.C. and the prophet Daniel took over from 616-536 B.C. Daniel said very clearly that he knew what he knew by studying the books written by Jeremiah. Why are you afraid to learn from somebody if great men like Daniel were blessed by prophets

like Jeremiah?

**In the first day of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.**

**Daniel 9:2**

Open up your heart and become a learner and receiver. After all, we all learn from somewhere. **It is insecure people who are afraid to show that they learnt what they know from somewhere!** Become so receptive that you receive the knowledge of the Word! Open your spirit so that you learn how to preach yourself! Open your heart so that you receive the anointing! I want you to notice these levels of receptivity that I have listed below and ask yourself where you fit in!

**Level A:** The word has no impact. You do not understand the message. You probably did not even like the message.

**Level B:** The word has an impact on you. You are excited and think that it is a good message. However, you only retain 11% of what was preached. This is usually what happens when a person listens to a tape just once.

**Level C:** You absorb the word even further but cannot reproduce the message.

**Level D:** You absorb the word so much that you can reproduce the message.

**Level E:** You begin to learn to how to preach and teach

in the same anointed manner.

**Level F:** You absorb the word and at the same time begin to absorb the anointing and spirit of the message.

**Level G:** At this level, the transfer of an entire ministry gift takes place. Often an anointing which is on the speaker is transferred to you. Like John the Baptist and Elijah, similarities emerge between your ministries because the same anointing has been transferred.

## **NOTICE THESE SIGNS**

These are signs that you are on the road to catching the anointing.

1. You are able to follow the trend of the message; even when it is confusing and disorderly.
2. You receive additional lessons that are not the main message. This is an important sign of you catching the anointing on the minister. You begin to know the mind and the heart of the person you are listening to. Most of these lessons are unrelated to the topic that is being taught. You begin to learn so many little things such as principled character, how to speak, how to analyze scripture and how to overcome problems.
3. You unconsciously begin to use certain phrases and

points in these messages. Unknown to you, you begin to walk and think like the person you are listening to.

4. You are able to minister the message with the same results. E.g. Church growth, miracles, people commenting on the word that they were blessed, people buying your tapes and people wanting to hear part two and part three. This is different from dry imitation, when you become an exact replicate of what you hear, but do not get the same results.

## AVOID THESE MISTAKES

I am not teaching you not to study the Bible for yourself. I am not teaching you to neglect personal Bible study. That is a great mistake. I am an avid listener of tapes but I study the Word of God everyday. **I have personal quiet times everyday. Many of my messages are what I have learnt from my daily Bible study.**

- § Avoid the mistake of not reading the Bible and doing Bible study for yourself.
- § Avoid the mistake of thinking that it is a man that is going to anoint you. God anoints you through a man .
- § Avoid the mistake of only listening to tapes when you are going to preach. Listen to tapes all of the time. I listen to tapes all the time.
- § Avoid the mistake of not doing further study on

subjects or tapes you listen to

- § Avoid the mistake of preaching about things you do not practice. Do not preach about things that you do not understand or believe in.
- § Avoid the mistake of simply imitating and copying someone without understanding the whole mystery of catching the anointing through soaking in the word.
- § Avoid the mistake of leaving out the video dimension. The video dimension helps you to catch things that you cannot catch on a tape like posture, attire and gestures. Soaking in videos helps you to learn how to minister the Spirit and to minister with signs and wonders.

## **Ignore the Ignoramuses**

Listening to tapes over and over does not mean that you are engaging in mindless memorization. Some people call this, “Chew and pour.” I just laugh to myself when I hear such comments. The most difficult time for me in the medical school was the second year. During the second year we had to study physiology, anatomy and biochemistry. Of these three subjects I found biochemistry the most difficult because it involved a lot of tedious memorization.

I am not teaching you to become a copycat. I am teaching you how to catch the anointing. I am teaching you to walk in the steps of anointed people. When a young girl is learning how to cook she is taught to follow a simple routine. As she does this over and over she is able to cook the food as well as her mother. With time she will develop her own variations

and style. Would you call that daughter a mindless copycat? Would you say that she is engaging in senseless memorization? Certainly not! She is a humble learner.

Dear friend, the devil wants to keep you from the anointing. I have heard people speaking sarcastically about this method of catching the anointing. Someone said that I was producing clones. What is a clone? Why do some people try to confuse God's sheep with clever sounding phrases? Quite frankly, I would rather hear my dog bark in the morning than listen to such rubbish!

When a doctor is learning to be a surgeon he has to closely observe what his professor does. Then he assists his professor several times. Soon he gets an opportunity to do the procedure himself. He gingerly follows the procedure that he has seen his professor do. He makes a few mistakes but soon he can perform the operation perfectly. If you watch this new surgeon closely you will realize that he is doing exactly what his professor does. With time, he develops his own additions or improvements to what he has learnt. Has the professor produced a clone? Certainly not! He has trained another competent surgeon.

When Paul was training Timothy for the ministry, he wrote to him and said, "My son preach the same things that I have preached to you. Spend time sharing the same things with the faithful brethren that you have."

**Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, THE SAME COMMIT THOU TO FAITHFUL MEN, who shall be able to teach others also.**

**2 Timothy 2:1,2**

Paul told Timothy to preach the same thing that he had



preached. Was Paul producing mindless clones? Watch out for people who try to redescribe godly things and make them appear stupid.

When you soak in tapes many good things happen to you. You learn how to preach and you catch the anointing. It is funny how some people see things. Someone once said that he did not want to listen to tapes because he did not want to “lose his personality”. How would you lose your personality by exposing yourself to the anointing and the influence that comes from special men of God? When the choir in my church sings a song by Andrae Crouch or someone else are you telling me that they have lost their personality? Do you know that they would have to rehearse the song for several hours in order to get it just right. As they soak in this music over and over and as they try to do exactly what they are hearing, are you telling me that they are losing their personalities? **As I said earlier, I prefer to listen to my dogs barking in the morning than to listen to foolishness!**

## **CHAPTER 7**

# **WHAT IT MEANS TO CATCH THE SPIRIT OF THE MINISTRY**

Your aspiration for church growth will naturally lead you to work with many different people. It is only understandable that in a larger ministry you will need more “hands on deck”.

The act of recruiting new people often leads to the destruction of the ministry. Be careful that you do not end up destroying what you are trying to build. **It is important to recruit people who have what I call the spirit of the ministry.**

**And I will come down and talk with thee there: and I will take of the SPIRIT WHICH IS UPON THEE, and will put it UPON THEM and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee, that thou bearest not thyself alone.**

**Numbers 11:17**

Please notice the revelation that God gave Moses. He said, "I'm going to take of the spirit or anointing that is upon you and that same anointing will be transferred to other people." It is only then that they will be able to work with you. It is only then that they will be able to help you.

God could have simply given these seventy people an anointing for leadership, but He didn't. **God did not give them a general anointing for leadership! Neither did He give them a special anointing of management and wise judgement! He simply gave them Moses' anointing.** What was the spirit upon Moses? It was the special gift of ministry given to Moses to lead the people. This is what those seventy pastors received.

**There is an anointing on every ministry.** That is why people can start out in a ministry of their own and have only twenty people after ten years. Were these people to operate under a certain ministry they would not have only twenty people after ten years. They may have a thousand. This is because different ministries have different anointings over them.

I am not saying that you do not have to start something new,

not at all! I am saying that God gives certain gifts to certain men. Those who find themselves planted under such men find that they are catching the same spirit of ministry. They will find themselves doing great things or even greater things than he is doing.

## **There is a Difference!**

Catching the spirit of the ministry is a little different from catching the anointing. When you join a new church, you will notice that it is different from any other church. **Understand that every church is different and has its own culture.**

Every minister has a peculiar anointing on his life. This leads to a unique ministry. When you join up with this unique ministry, you must adapt and flow with it. Understand that every church is different. When you join a church, you have to acclimatize and re-learn certain things. It is the senior pastor's duty to prevent anyone from becoming a minister without adapting fully to the culture of the church.

**It is the trainee's duty to learn, imbibe, observe and adapt to the spoken and unspoken philosophies of the church.** Study the culture. Flow with it. Do all you can to fit in. When you fit in, that peculiar anointing will also fit into you and operate through you. It is possible and it is necessary if you want to be fruitful in the context of a particular church.

If you do not adapt, the anointing will not be able to fit into you because it was meant for a particular type of vessel. You will run into problems if you choose to ignore the standards accepted and used by the general leadership. **When people do not operate under the same Spirit (anointing), they create conflict.** The leaders become disunited and each one thinks he is right. The church begins to disintegrate behind the scenes and soon this comes into the open.

## HOW TO CATCH THE SPIRIT OF THE MINISTRY

To catch the spirit of the ministry you have to company with the leadership and the church. There is simply no other way. You have to know what they do, and watch them do it! You have to accept it in your mind and believe in it in your heart. The standards and principles in the church must become yours. They must no longer be “their” principles.

**When you think like the leadership thinks, then you have caught the spirit of the ministry.** The anointing makes you think in a particular way. The anointing makes you act in a particular way.

**I learnt long ago that I should not accept people into my ministry who do not really fit in as sons.** Someone may be a well-qualified minister with great credentials, but if he does not have the spirit of the ministry, it is no use taking on such a person. The few conflicts that I have experienced in the Lighthouse denomination have been through and from people who did not fully catch the spirit of this ministry. It looked as though they fitted in, but in reality, they were not a part of us.

After Jesus ascended into heaven, a replacement was sought for Judas. They chose someone who had the spirit of Jesus’ ministry. Someone who knew them through and through. They needed someone who had accepted the standards and philosophies of Christ. They did not want to introduce somebody who would create confusion within their ranks.

**Wherefore of these men which have COMPANIED WITH US ALL THE TIME that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us...**

**Acts 1:21,22**

You will observe in the above scripture that they chose somebody who had been with them long enough to catch the spirit of the ministry. They didn't care whether the person had the gift of prophecy or the gift of leadership. It is better to be safe than sorry. Go for those you know and avoid unknown elements!

There are three groups of people I do not often consider for employment. These are not "bad" people! They are good people but they need to catch the spirit of the ministry.

- A Bible School Graduate Seeking Employment in the Church.

Graduating from a Bible school means very little to me. All it means is that you have a piece of paper showing that you have studied some courses. Those courses may be different from the courses I teach in my church. Even if they are the same, they may have a completely different orientation.

I ask such people to simply join the church and become a part of the church family. Then they must go through the ranks like every other church member. If and only if he is able to catch the spirit of the ministry can he be part of its leadership.

- An Experienced and Seasoned Minister

There is a saying, "You can't teach an old dog new tricks". This saying is not in the Bible but it is often true. When a tree is young, you can bend it. But when a tree is old, you must break it in order to get it to bend! Usually, people who have been in the ministry for years feel that they know all about the ministry. Such people have problems fitting in. After being a part of your system for a while, they will say, "I was a pastor before I joined you." They will say, "I was a minister in my own right before I came here." They will add, "I had a ministry before I came here and I just decided to place it under your ministry." **Such people do not fit in because they feel that they are not prepared to be trained or retrained.**

I have learnt from painful experience, to train up my own sons and daughters in ministry. They are to me like the disciples were to Jesus. I can trust them and I can leave my ministry in their hands wherever they are in the world. Jesus left his ministry to twelve men and they handled it perfectly. **When you have people who have caught the spirit of the leadership you can leave things with them and not worry. They will not rebel.**

- **A Pastor of a Small Church Who Wants to Join a Larger Network**

This is even more dangerous! When the church begins to grow under a new name and new anointing, the pastor will begin to have thoughts of breaking away. He will say, "I had a church with members before I joined up with you. I want to change the name back to what it was before." This often leads to painful splits and breakaways. At this point, no one will know who is really right or wrong.

**My policy is to encourage such individuals to continue independently in ministry.** If he insists, the way forward is for him to close down his church and join the bigger network

as an ordinary member. With the process of time, such a person may become a minister within the network and start a church again. However, it takes a lot of humility to do something like that.

It is important for senior pastors to know when people have caught the spirit of the ministry. It is important for up-and-coming ministers to understand how to catch the spirit of the ministry.

## EIGHT THINGS YOU MUST CATCH

In every church, you must endeavor to catch the vision, principles, philosophy, standards, doctrines, procedures, emphasis and the anointing of the house. To illustrate this better I will just use Lighthouse Chapel International as a model.

### The Vision of the House

Generally speaking, the vision of Lighthouse Chapel International is one of soul winning and church planting. Many pastors do not have a vision for soul winning. We have a strong vision for soul winning. If you are not oriented towards the harvest, you will be a misfit in such a church.

Everyone is taught and motivated to save the lost. Everyone in the church is taught to be involved in practical ministry. No one is left out, including professionals and businessmen. **We believe that every member can be a minister.** It may sound strange, but that is our vision.

Some churches have a vision for prosperity. Others have a vision for dominion over the works of darkness. Others have

Another important principle of which we believe is that we are people to be imitated. We understand people to be imitated and that to see a young man is to see a man. The biblical principle is that all people should be imitated and the more, rather than judgment of that to be imitated. Any leader within our system must have these ideas as his own ideas.

## **The Principles of the House**

### **The Standards of the House**

The principles of LCI are the principles in the Word of God. One of our principles is that everything we do must be founded on the solid foundation of the Bible. Ministers principle to reject things that are not firmly based on the Word of God. We do not expect people to compromise on these standards! We do not expect people to compromise on these principles. We do not expect people to be these principles cannot fit into our ministry. I am loyal to my pastor and I expect them to be loyal to me. We believe in principles. A leader who does not have a principle to the highest position in ministry is because of the lowering of standards that gay and lesbian priests and even bishops are now a part of church life. Some priests are officiating the marriages between two men. The philosophy of the house refers to the general approval on homosexuality. This is Sodom and Gomorrah coming into the church. How did it get there? It got there by gradually changing the standards of the Church of God. We must do the work of ministry. We believe that the educated can also be in ministry.

### **The Doctrines of the House**

We believe that church buildings are very important for the establishment of the church. We believe that the church buildings bring stability and permanence. Church buildings are the place of loyalty. We teach that the church is the place of loyalty. We also believe in frugality. There are many ways by which we save money. Ironically, this makes people think that we are rich.

Another doctrine we have is what we call, Anagkazo. This



Greek word means something to every leader in our church. It teaches about compelling souls to come to Christ. You cannot be a minister in our church if you do not understand and believe in Anagkazo.

## **The Procedures of the House**

The way things are done in every church is different. In our church, a person becomes a pastor by rising through the ranks. One must first be a shepherd before being promoted to a lay pastor. That is just the way things are done here. We have very few full-time ministers.

We believe that you must first be successful as a lay pastor before becoming a full-time minister. This may be different from the way you do things in your church, but if you want to be in a particular ministry, you must accept the procedures of that house.

You cannot be a leader in the church if you do not pay tithes, or what we call First and Best Fruits. That is just the way we do things. Every Lighthouse church takes two offerings on Sundays. In our church, you must have extensive counseling before getting married. These are just some of the procedures we do not intend to alter. Anyone who is going to be a leader of the church has to accept these procedures and flow with them.

The church has a system of small groups involving fellowships, ministries and chapels. This system has worked for us throughout the world, wherever Lighthouse has been established. That is the way we do things. That is our procedure. Welcome to the house.

## The Emphasis of the House

Every minister has a peculiar emphasis. We emphasize the preaching and the teaching of the Word of God. Some emphasize prosperity and healing. Some emphasize the anointing. We emphasize the winning of souls and the establishing of the church. Mind you, we believe in miracles, and we experience great moves of the Spirit, but our emphasis is the Word. If you accept this emphasis then you can be with us.

## The Anointing of the House

This is the anointing that we have been talking about in the earlier chapters. Apart from getting the natural and physical aspects like the procedures and standards, you need to get this spiritual component.

**There is nothing like the anointing. Without it, you can do nothing in ministry. Once you have tasted the anointing and the difference it makes to ministry, you will not like to do anything without it.** If you are within a particular church, the principal anointing that you should desire is the anointing on your leader. This is because you are working under his ministry.

# **CHAPTER 8**

## **HOW TO START A CHURCH**

## Why People Fear to Start Churches

Many people are afraid of starting a church because they do not know how to pioneer a work. **The art of beginning a church is the art of witnessing, following-up and gathering sheep together.** You do not need to break up someone else's church to begin your own! How would you feel if someone was building his house next to yours and decided to break down your house to get some blocks for his? That is madness!

Unfortunately, this seems to be the only way that some people feel they can start a church. From today, do not be afraid of starting out in an honorable way. If God has really spoken to you, it will succeed!

## COUNT THE COST

**For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost...**

**Luke 14:28**

Carefully consider the implications of starting a church. It is not going to be easy! Not many people want to identify with a small thing. I learnt many years ago that there are two types of people in the world. There are those who push the canoe from the sand into the sea. Then there are those who jump into the boat when it is safely on the water.

When the canoe is on the sand, it is very difficult to push into the water. When it is on the water it is safer and many more people jump in. That is why it is easier for a large church to grow.

When I began in the ministry I was despised and opposed! Looking back, I am surprised that I was able to survive the storms of beginning a church on my own. At certain times, I felt like giving up. Everyone in the world seemed against me. They called me names and ridiculed me.

When I carried a set of drums from my room in the medical hostel to a nearby classroom, I must have looked like a crazy zealot! “What does this person think he is doing with a few medical and nursing students?”

I had no help from any of the bigger churches of my day. Some of them ridiculed me whilst others even opposed me. There was no help or approval from any man of God.

## **DO NOT BECOME DESPERATE**

Do not become financially desperate in the early stages of ministry. Be careful not to become dependent on the church you are pioneering for your financial survival. That is a big mistake! If you do, you will become a desperate man, clutching at every straw for survival.

A small church usually cannot afford to pay the salary of a pastor, much less buy him a car. **My advice to anyone who is beginning a church, is to find a job and start the church as a lay person.** When people see that you are not ministering for financial gain, they will be more interested in your new church. Too many pastors are desperate for more and more offerings from their few members. Sixteen people cannot look after you. Twenty one people cannot support your upkeep and your children’s school fees. Don’t be a desperate pastor! Get a job right now! At the right time, the church will have more than enough money to look after its

pastors.

I had to invest a lot of my own money to get the church to work. Although I am now in full-time ministry, I was not paid for the first five years of the church's existence. There is another reason why you should not draw a salary in the early stages of a church. Money will be needed to buy equipment and pay other expenses like rent. If you siphon out the lifeblood of the church's money, it will not develop normally.

## TWO OR THREE IS ENOUGH

How many people are needed to start a church? The answer is in the Bible! Two or three!

**For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.**

**Matthew 18:20**

Some people have criticized me for having two or three people in a church. Well, such criticism comes from an ignoramus. **I prefer to hear my dogs barking in the morning than to listen to critical and inexperienced scoffers.**

I do not start my churches with half a section of another person's church. If I have one pastor who is ready to obey God, all I need to do is to send him and he will start the work. The Lighthouse Cathedral was started with as few as five people.

When I went to Zürich to start a church, I knew only one person. Today that church has several hundred people in it. One pastor who did not know anybody in South Africa, but

was willing to do the work of God, started our church in South Africa. You do not need more than one person to start a church. I have churches that have only three people, and I am not ashamed to say it. Do not try to impress anyone, just do the work of God!

Sometimes people are afraid to pioneer a church because they do not know how to do basic Christian tasks. What do I mean by the basics? The basics are praying, witnessing and following up converts.

If you are truly called of God then the only person you need is yourself! All churches which began in this way have grown to become great trees. The Bible says that the kingdom of God is like a mustard seed.

**...The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.**

**Matthew 13:31,32**

What does that mean? Whereas an Old Boys Association or a Keep Fit Club may begin with quite a number of people, the beginnings of a church are like insignificant seeds. They can grow, and they will grow. Many of my pastors are surprised when their churches grow. They cannot believe that the church will work. The beginning looks so miserable yet that is how the kingdom of God is.

**The Mega Church Had One Member!**

One day, one of my pastors went to church and only one person came. He told me that he was very discouraged and depressed. He led that one person in worship. Then he preached to that one person. Afterwards he took an offering from that one person and then closed the service. He narrated to me how he went back home to his apartment in the deepest and blackest depression of his life. I am happy to tell you that today his church is a Mega Church and is growing.

## **DON'T BE IN A HURRY**

There isn't any tree that grows from a seed into a large tree overnight. No human being grows to be six feet tall in one year. No two-year old grows into an eighteen-year old within six months. If you have a hasty spirit, you will not be successful in starting a church.

**He that hasteth to be rich hath an evil eye, and considereth not that poverty shall come upon him.**

**Proverbs 28:22**

In fact, when you are in a hurry, you are likely to cut corners, break someone else's church and criticize those ahead of you. You will commit dangerous sins in the early days of your fledgling ministry. Do not expect much within a year. Don't be surprised if you only have twenty people after two years. The mustard seed will surely grow into a Mega Church!

## **PRAY FOR AND RECRUIT PILLARS**



Pray for laborers. Ask God to give you helpers. Then go out and recruit pillars. Jesus called individuals to follow him. Jesus recruited Simon and Andrew. Then he also recruited James and John.

**Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother... And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.**

**Mark 1:16,17**

**And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother... And straightway he called them... and they left their father... and went after him.**

**Mark 1:19,20**

These people later became pillars in the church.

**And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be  
PILLARS...**

**Galatians 2:9**

Sometimes you need to travel quite far in order to convince certain important pillars to join your church. **Be extra careful that you do not break down somebody else's church in the process of building your own.**

Making an open invitation to all is different from coercing people to leave their church to join you. The very existence of a church is an open invitation. Remember that you will reap what you sow (Galatians 6:7). If you pressurize pillars in another person's church to leave, it will happen to you one day.

One important aspect in recruiting people is to pray for laborers. Let it be your daily prayer topic. Ask God for workers and committed people. Pray for people who will be loyal to you in everything that you do. Pray for people who will support you.

**Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth LABOURERS into his harvest.**

**Matthew 9:38**

## **LAY A FOUNDATION OF PRAYER**

I recommend an average time of prayer and fasting of three weeks or more. Pray for the future of the church. Do not expect results next week. The answer to these prayers will be seen in the years ahead.

When I first came to Korle-Bu (the area in Accra where our church is located), I would go at ten o'clock every night with four other medical students to the beach to pray. We would pray up until midnight. As I stood on the rocks near the seashore, my prayer was simply, "Lord, let your will be done. Do whatever you want to do with my life." As the years have gone by, the Lord has answered this prayer beyond my wildest imagination.

I believe in laying a solid foundation of prayer and fasting at the beginning of every church. The church is a spiritual entity and not a social club. It must be established on scriptural and spiritual foundations.

Some useful scriptures in praying for church establishment and church growth are:

**...Thy will be done...**

**Matthew 6:10**

**Thy kingdom come...**

**Matthew 6:10**

**Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance...**

**Psalms 2:8**

**...enlarge my coast...**

**1 Chronicles 4:10**

**...increase them with men like a flock...**

**Ezekiel 36:37**

**...for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children...**

**Isaiah 66:8**

**...I travail in birth again...**

**Galatians 4:19**

## **BE A MOTIVATIONAL LEADER**

After gathering a few people into a room, you will need to greatly encourage them, including yourself. People will be thinking in their minds, "Are you out of your mind? Is this what you call a church?" You must learn to do what David did when faced with discouragement. Encourage yourself first.

**...but David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.**

## **1 Samuel 30:6**

Then you must encourage the people. Tell them that though the beginning seems to be small, the future is going to be great!

**Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end  
should greatly increase.**

**Job 8:7**

Tell them not to despise the small start. Explain to them that the end is always better than the beginning. When they see that you are encouraged, they will be motivated to continue with the church.

**Better is the end of a thing than the beginning  
thereof...**

**Ecclesiastes 7:8**

**For who hath despised the day of small things?...**

**Zechariah 4:10**

Tell them that they are privileged to be founding members of a great church. Explain that the foundation of a building is the most important part of a building. Therefore, they are the most important members that the church will ever have. Tell them that Jesus always had a special place and reward for the apostles because they were his foundational members.

**And are built upon the foundations of the apostles...**

**Ephesians 2:20**

Do not make the mistake of rebuking and shouting at them. Do not vent your frustration on your few members. It is not their fault that the church is small in the beginning stages. Preach faith! Preach hope! Preach stabilization! Preach

about a better tomorrow! People love to hear that tomorrow will be better than today. You must be bold and shameless in your preaching.

**I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is the friend, yet because of his importunity [shamelessness] he will rise and give him as many as he needeth**

**Luke 11:8**

In the above passage, the Greek word “Anaideia” translated importunity also means shamelessness. The shamelessly persistent person gets results. Let’s face it! There is some amount of shame in beginning a ministry with a few people. That is why people despise small beginnings!

**Shamelessness (Anaideia) must characterize all that you do when you begin a church.** Shamelessly invite people to join you on Sunday morning. When they see that you are not shy of your church, they will be interested in coming. Shamelessly advertise your church.

People will believe what you say about your church. If you have an assistant, he must say good things about the preaching and about the church in general. All of these things help to create a good atmosphere for church growth.

## **WITNESSING AND FOLLOW-UP**

This must be predominant in all of your church activities. You must boldly enter into the houses of your city and preach Christ to the people. You must shamelessly lead people to Christ in their living rooms. Pray for them and invite them to church.

Stand on the street and talk to passers-by about Jesus Christ. If you cannot shamelessly do street evangelism, then you cannot be a pastor. Lead the congregation in inviting people to church every Sunday. Do not be depressed if most of the visitors do not come back. Most of them will not stay anyway. God will supernaturally bring the increase.

Pastors must realize that there is a spiritual principle of sowing and reaping. Whatever you sow is what you will reap.

**...for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.**  
**Galatians 6:7**

If you sow seeds through invitations and witnessing, you will reap from it one day. My experience is that after a crusade or an outreach we initially have very few results. However, after awhile we begin to have people coming from the very place we did the outreach. Usually they are not the people we witnessed to. But God divinely sends them to us from that place. Use all of the principles of anagkazo (For further study see Anagkazo by Bishop Heward-Mills).

## **AVOID THESE MISTAKES**

**Do not hurriedly appoint people to leadership positions.** Allow time to pass before you make definite appointments. Many of the people who are with you in the beginning will leave anyway. **Do not be discouraged because of fluctuating attendance.** Do not be discouraged because of a rotational shift of the members, i.e., half attend this week, the other half next week. **That is how sheep behave. Take no notice of them!**

**Do not rent an expensive hall.** Do not keep the church's money in your house or in your personal account. One day somebody will accuse you of stealing, although you may have contributed a lot to the church. Do not count the money yourself but assign people to do so.

## **YOU DON'T NEED THESE THINGS**

Contrary to what people think, several things are not necessary when starting a church. You do not need a complimentary card or a briefcase to build a Mega Church! A constitution is not vital in the early stages. What is important is to have members and a regular congregation. A church logo is not important, neither is a church flag.

Initially, It may not be necessary to register a church. Many countries allow freedom of association and freedom of religion. Just build the church and fill it with people. Pray for them, preach the Word, visit the sheep and trust God! Since the greater one is in you, you cannot fail!

# **CHAPTER 9**

## **FIGHT FOR COMMITMENT**

### **TYPES OF COMMITMENT**

If you want your church to grow you must fight to have more committed members. Committed members are the building blocks of a large church. **The key to increasing in size is to have more and more very committed people.**

Let's consider for example if you are in a situation where you are building a house. Supposing you laid a hundred blocks



on your building foundation everyday. At the end of the day you might look at the work done and say to yourself, "Things are getting better. The building is coming up nicely!"

How would you feel if you noticed that seventy of those blocks were missing every morning? You would feel very frustrated because your building project would progress at a much slower rate. The building would still develop, however at a much slower rate. This is because of the regular loss of the building blocks. In the case of a church, the building blocks are the members. The missing blocks are the uncommitted members who disappear ever so often.

In order to develop committed members, every pastor must know about the different levels of commitment each member may have. Do not be deceived by a large crowd. **A large crowd consists of people with different levels of commitment. You must press for the highest level of commitment possible from every one of your members.** Over the years, I have observed four main types of commitment.

## **Fair Weather Commitment**

The lowest type of commitment is Fair Weather Commitment. This consists of those who are committed when things are going well. The Bible says a rich man has many friends, but a poor man does not have many friends.

**Wealth maketh many friends; but the poor is separated from his neighbour.**

**Proverbs 19:4**

When I started out in ministry, I had few friends. When the ministry became large and successful, many people claimed

to be my friends. Many spoke of imaginary assistance they gave me in my early days. Senior ministers have sworn that they never said negative things about me (although I know they did). When things are not going well, people don't want to know you. But when the sky is clear, they all claim to be your friends.

Fair weather church members are people who are committed only when things are going well. They form the crowds that come when the church is flourishing and successful. Such people fall away when a crisis or problem arises. You cannot rely on such people when building a Mega Church. People with fair weather commitment are usually not aware of their low level of commitment. Therefore, the pastor must preach and teach against being committed only when things are going well.

## **Situational Friendship Commitment**

The next type of commitment is what I call situational friendship commitment. Friends are committed to each other to some extent. There are also two levels of commitment between friends, situational friendship commitment and non-situational friendship commitment.

There are two types of friends in the world. There are friends, who are friends because the situation permits. In school, for instance, different situations bring people together and make them friends. Everyone has friends like that. You had to sit in the same classroom for some years and you became friends because of the circumstances. However, when you left school or didn't see them anymore, you stopped relating with them. I have many friends like that.

Some people are only committed to their church when the

situation permits. They may live near the church or there may be no other church nearby. However, if another church were to start in the vicinity they would go there. You may have many people in your church, but they are only members because of their circumstances. Such people cannot be relied upon. You must press for a higher commitment.

Aim to get all of your members to be committed irrespective of their circumstances. That is non-situational commitment. They are committed to you irrespective of the situation. Some children come to the church because their parents do so, however, if their parents were not to come anymore they would stop coming to church.

## **Attack Sunday**

Our church was once attacked by a traditional practitioners. On that Sunday morning an armed mob of people invaded the church, threw rocks at the church and physically assaulted several of our church members and pastors. I believe they were hunting for me on that fateful morning. The attack so startled us that it has been ingrained in our memories. After the attack, we had to wash away streams of blood from the church grounds.

Many of our church members were hurt and the entire incident was broadcast on national television. As you would expect this caused the “fair weather” and “situational friendship” members to vanish for several weeks. Someone whose commitment is deep, will not be moved by such attacks.

On that Sunday, many cars were vandalized with their windcreens smashed. However, the next Sunday, the committed members were back in church with their cars.

They were members, whether they were attacked or not. In fact, some have expressed their commitment to die for the church if there is any further attack.

Members whose commitment is at the level of “fair weather” and “situational friendship” are not of much use to the church in times of crises. The pastor must preach to raise the level of commitment of all members.

## **Non-Situational Friendship Commitment**

When your church members have graduated to this level of commitment, they are not moved by hurts, separation, conflicts or distance. You can rely more on such people. The commitment is one of deep friendship. It is not affected much by circumstances. Pastors should aim at moving their members to at least this level. I have friends who I don't see often.

For instance, one of my university roommates “Dr. Nosh” is a non-situational friend. That means he's my friend whether I see him or not. We live in different parts of the world, yet our friendship is not affected by distance or separation. I know he's my friend and he knows I am his friend. He can depend on me and I can depend on him. Like Jonathan and David, their friendship became a bond between them.

**And Jonathan caused David to swear again, because he loved him: for he loved him as he loved his own soul.**

**1 Samuel 20:17**

## **Marital Commitment**

There is an even higher level of commitment – marital

commitment. In marital commitment, the individuals are committed as though they are married. In marriage, there should be no thought of divorce, but rather a spirit of permanence. There are no more options left. You cannot decide to stay or leave. You must stay; it is as simple as that! You are in it for good. There may be conflicts, challenges and even disappointments, but this will have no ability to shake the commitment of a married couple.

Like everyone else, I have had challenges in my marriage. I have had happy times and not so happy times. Nevertheless, I never consider the option of divorce. That option has been ruled out by the Word of God and by my level of commitment. Nothing can and nothing should be able to separate a married couple. **Our commitment to Christ is at the marital level of commitment.** The Bible teaches that we are supposed to be married to Christ.

**Wherefore my brethren... that ye should be MARRIED TO ANOTHER, EVEN TO HIM who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.**

**Romans 7:4**

When the commitment to the church rises to the level of marital commitment, the Bible teaches that we will begin to bring forth fruit unto God. The higher the commitment, the more the fruit. **It is only when a man and woman have marital commitment that they can successfully bring forth fruit (children).**

This is the type of commitment I expect from all pastors, leaders and mature members in the church. I am committed to them for life and I expect them to be committed to me for life. When a church has a pastor who is unstable, the congregation can feel the instability. The church members are not ready to give their best if they feel that the pastor is

there for just a season.

## **The Temporary Associate**

One day I was visited in my office by a senior pastor and his associate. I asked him, "How is the ministry?"

"We're not doing badly," he said. "We are having a few struggles though."

They continued, "As you know, our church has been going through one crisis after another."

The senior pastor continued, "It has not been easy. One person after the other keeps leaving the church."

Out of curiosity, I asked the associate, "Do you have any plans of starting your own ministry one day?"

"Certainly!" he said. "I am just working with this man for awhile, then I will launch out on my own."

"Oh, I see."

I told him (in front of his associate), "If I were you, I wouldn't like to work with someone who is using me as a springboard to start his own ministry."

I warned him, "When this pastor eventually leaves you, it will cause a lot of pain and conflict in the church."

"Really!" he exclaimed.

I advised him, "I personally do not believe that your closest associate should have such a low level of commitment. I think a pastor in the church should have the highest level of commitment. I believe he should have what I call marital commitment."

"I only want to work with people who are committed. This is because I can then pour out my life into them."

I explained further, "Take a young man and a young lady who are courting each other. A decent young woman would not be prepared to undress and perform acts of great commitment with her fiancée. However, if this young man takes his fiancée to the marriage altar and signs a legal

contract, then he can expect the highest level of commitment (till death us do part) from her. That same decent young lady would then be prepared to give her utmost commitment and flow into the deepest level of involvement.”

“Do you understand what I am saying,” I said to this pastor. He seemed to understand what I was saying.

“I would not like to get deeply involved with people unless they guarantee me the highest level of commitment,” I added.

Not long after, this senior pastor called me saying, “Just as you predicted, my associate has left me suddenly and it has caused me a lot of pain.”

At the time I had had the conversation with him, he had about seventy members in his church. However, after the associate left the church, he was left with only twenty people. The lack of a high level of commitment from associates and pastors is very damaging to a church. The congregation follows what they see the pastors do. If they see shallow commitment, they in turn will have a low level of commitment.

Let’s be committed to one another. I am the type of person who gives my utmost to help people. I do not want to pour out my life and soul into people only for them to despise and destroy me.

**Preach marital commitment. Teach marital commitment. The commitment of your members will rise. They will become solid building blocks of your Mega Church.**

Anytime you speak to a church member, assess his or her level of commitment. Try to place him in one of these four levels. Then you must work on him or her for a higher level of commitment. If your members are very committed, no one can invite them away or steal them from you.

**For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor**

**angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things  
present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor  
any other creature, shall be separate us from the love of  
God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

**Romans 8:38,39**

## **CHAPTER 10**

# **HOW TO DEVELOP DEVOTED MEMBERS**



A person goes through three stages when becoming established as a member of your church. As a shepherd, you must be able to distinguish between the different types of members that you have.

**...he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.**

**Matthew 25:32**

## **DEER STAGE MEMBERS**

When a person is initially converted, he behaves like a deer: untamed, swift-footed and difficult to keep in one place. You have to track them down through the mountains and the forest. They are difficult to handle. It is important to move your members out of this stage. When you visit them, they play “hide-and-seek” with you. Deer are nimble creatures.

### **The Deer and the Assistant Deer**

Seventeen years ago I visited a deer stage member called Adelaide. Somehow, she did not want to see her shepherd at all. This was one of the deer in my fellowship. I was trying to convert her from the deer stage to the sheep stage. I remember one evening when I knocked on her door in Volta Hall of the University of Ghana.

A voice from within answered, “Who is there?”

“It’s me Brother Dag. I’m looking for Sister Adelaide.”

After a few moments her roommate said, “Come in.” This roommate happened to be her sister Irene.

“Hello. We are looking for Adelaide. Is she in?”

The roommate smiled sweetly, “Sorry, she’s not in.”

“Oh, I see. Where did she go?”

“I’m not sure, she just went out.”

“Alright, please tell her I came by to check on her.”

“Okay,” she smiled again sweetly. “When she comes back I’ll tell her you were here.”

Each room had its own balcony, and unknown to me Adelaide was hiding there. I was a shepherd who was dealing with a deer and an assistant deer. Only deer dodge and hide. However, I worked on them until they became sheep. Today, they are stable “sheep” members.

## GOAT STAGE MEMBERS

Goats are a little better than deer. They are far more homely and easily accessible. However, a goat is much more independent than a sheep. They do what they want to do and are less likely to follow. When a church member graduates from the deer stage, they move on to the goat stage. As soon as a deer sees a human being, it takes off, whereas a goat remains. **Goats are friendlier than deer, though they can often have traces of stubbornness.**

## SHEEP STAGE MEMBERS

Sheep are the best of the three groups. Your goal as a pastor should be to have your church full of devoted sheep. These people follow the shepherd. They stay together and move with the group. Such members are much easier to pastor.

Sheep are often devoted, committed, faithful, dependable and loving members. If your church is full of devoted sheep, you will be a happy pastor. They will stay near you always, and receive your ministrations.

## **DEVELOPING DEVOTED MEMBERS**

**They DEVOTED themselves to the instruction given by the apostles and to fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(Moffatt translation)**

**And they CONTINUED STEADFASTLY in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(King James Version)**

**They DEVOTED themselves to the apostles' teaching and to the fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(New International Version)**

The number one task of a shepherd is to transform the members from deer to devoted sheep. How is this possible?

**But we all... are CHANGED into the same image from glory to glory.**

**2 Corinthians 3:18**

Now the word “change” comes from a Greek word metamorphoo, which means metamorphosis. The word metamorphosis always reminds us of a dramatic transformation that occurs inside a cocoon when a larvae changes into a butterfly. When you see a butterfly elegantly fluttering around, you have no idea what it used to be like. There has been a drastic and major change – metamorphosis.

It is this same kind of metamorphosis, that can take place in the members of a church. People change because of the ministry of the Word. They are transformed by the renewing of their minds. Loose and dodgy Christians can become devoted and committed zealots.

In this next section, I want to share with you a few keys on how to develop devoted membership. The first important thing is that you the pastor be devoted. Devotion is a spiritual thing, it can be perceived. There are three main areas in which you can develop devoted membership: who you are, what you say and what you do.

## **KEY #1**

### **BE A DEVOTED PASTOR!**

The pastor must be devoted to his church and his church members. Devotion is a spiritual thing. It is transmitted sometimes by osmosis – from person to person. The unspoken commitment and sacrifice of the leadership is contagious, it passes from one member to another without speaking. Why do I say this? Because not all pastors are committed to their churches.

I began my ministry as a medical student. In 1987, I was already struggling as a pastor/medical student. The tradition for newly qualified doctors in Ghana is for them to travel to America to seek “greener pastures”. Medical doctors earn thousands of dollars in America, England and South Africa.

My fledgling church was full of people watching to see whether I would remain in Ghana or move out of the country. When the time came for the decision to be made, I declared boldly to my members that I was staying with them. I wasn't going to leave them. From that time, I noticed a dramatic change in the commitment of the members to the church.

The sheep can sense the pastor's commitment. No one wants to follow someone who will abandon him midstream. In addition to the senior pastor being devoted, associates and assistants must be equally committed and devoted. The assistant pastors must be devoted to the senior pastor as well as to the church members. The seed of devotion leads to a harvest of multiplied commitment from the church members.

## **KEY #2**

### **SAY POSITIVE THINGS ABOUT THE CHURCH**

Everybody wants to be part of a good thing. That is human nature. People are more likely to be devoted to something that is successful than to something that is failing. I have learnt that you can make your church flourish by using your mouth. If you want your church to grow, tell the members that they are part of a good church. Speak positively about the other pastors in the church. Do not criticize the pastors of the church.

That is why we call the Lighthouse Chapel International, The Mega Church. I am aware that this worries some people. It is just our faith confession! We know we have a long way to go. We know that we are still learning. But we believe that we have a Mega ministry with a Mega impact in a lost and dying world!

## **KEY #3**

### **SAY POSITIVE THINGS ABOUT THE PASTORS**

**The associate pastor must say positive things about the senior pastor.** He must say things like, "This is some of the best teaching you can get anywhere in the world." You must tell the church, "We are blessed to have such a man of God as our pastor." Acts chapter two says that they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine (teaching). One version puts it this way,

**And they steadfastly persevered DEVOTING themselves constantly...**

**Acts 2:42  
(Amplified version)**

You can make your church members devoted to your teaching. Let them hear that it is the best they can get anywhere. The assistant pastor must constantly make the church aware of the precious gift that God has graciously given to them in their senior pastor.

**I am the Best Preacher for My Church**

I believe I am the best preacher for my church. This is not vanity, it is biblical commonsense. I am their shepherd and I know what is best for my people. When God gives a woman a baby, he fills her breasts with milk for her baby. God does not fill another woman's breast with milk for that baby.

Similarly, God has filled my spirit with the Word of God for my sheep. My spiritual breasts are full of spiritual milk for my spiritual children. That is why I preach all the time to my church members. **I have other pastors, but I do ninety percent of the preaching and teaching. This is because I am the shepherd and God gave me the duty of feeding the sheep.**

Pastors ought to take charge of the pulpit and discharge their duties honorably. Thank God for visiting ministers. Many have ministered at my church and have been a blessing, but I am the best shepherd for my sheep.

In various ways, I make my church members devoted to my teaching and preaching. I let them know that it's the best thing for them. If your members are not devoted to your preaching and teaching they will be devoted to someone else's ministry, and your church will not grow.

I have watched how visiting preachers are appreciated more than a resident pastor. This is unfortunate! Visiting pastors are often hailed as superheroes, whilst their resident pastors are ignored. The church members should not be deceived into thinking that the visiting minister has more to offer than their own pastor. He does not! He may have something different but he does not have anything better! It is only because the pastor from the church fed the sheep so well that there is a congregation groomed enough to receive a visiting minister.

One translation of Acts 2:42 says that they were devoted **“to the teaching of the apostles and to fellowship with another.”** In Bible times, the Christians were devoted to two principal things:

- Their pastors’ teachings.
- Fellowshiping with one another.

Read Acts 2:42 for yourself! Read it from different versions of the Bible. It is crystal clear! Any simpleton should be able to understand these two strategic keys of church growth.

Get your church to be like the New Testament Church and you will have the thousands that are spoken of in the Book of Acts. **If you don’t have an associate pastor who says good things about your teaching, then get one that does!**

## **KEY #4**

### **SAY GOOD THINGS ABOUT YOUR CHURCH MEMBERS**

In order to encourage inter-sheep relationships you must speak good things about your church members. Some people say things like, “I don’t trust these church members.” “I don’t want any church member in my house.” Although some church members may disappoint you, do not maintain a negative attitude towards all other members. That would be a big mistake!

I have heard Christians say, “I’d rather employ a Muslim than a Christian.” That is unscriptural! The Bible teaches us to



do good to Christians, especially your church members.

**Because we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, ESPECIALLY UNTO THEM WHO ARE OF THE HOUSEHOLD OF FAITH.**

**Galatians 6:10**

The fact that you have had unpleasant experiences with Christian men does not mean that you should marry an unbeliever. You are reacting in the wrong way. You are moving into foolishness!

Speak positively about Christians, especially your own church members. This will cause your church members to interact with each other. If you say evil things about them, new members will not form vital bonding relationships.

There is a principle at work here. **People are often attracted to the church by the pastor, but they often remain in the church because of the internal relationships they establish.** Never forget this! People stay in a church because of relationships they have in the church. It is the duty of the pastor to create interaction between members of the church.

This is a very important key to implement, if you really desire to have a large church. The Bible says that they were devoted to the fellowship. Members must be devoted to the fellowship of Christians in the same church. If you have members who hardly know each other, then introduce and influence them to develop relationships.

Encourage them to be committed to the church. Teach them that it is important to attend church all of the time. **Teach them not to make a habit of hopping from church to church, just to see what is happening elsewhere.**

Explain to them that it is only the devil who goes “to and fro” (Job 1:7).

## **KEY #5**

### **ENCOURAGE EMPLOYERS TO HIRE CHURCH MEMBERS**

Practically speaking, you can also encourage the members to be devoted to one another's fellowship in many different ways. When I have a church member who is an employer in a strategic position, I encourage him to consciously help other members to get jobs. Do not think that this will happen naturally, the pastor's involvement is important.

When one Lighthouse member secures a job in a company, you will often find several other members finding their way there. Nowadays, this often happens naturally without my involvement. However, in the beginning I had to encourage this interaction. Many people were put off by the bad behavior of some church members. Do not overreact to the disgraceful behavior that some church members put up when they are employed. Church members are human beings. Keep on recommending in the Spirit of love and forgiveness.

One employer said that he would not employ a member of the church because the church member would arrive to work late, claiming he went witnessing early in the morning. That is nonsense! Witnessing is not supposed to make you arrive late for work. I would encourage to sack such a person. Church members are supposed to be disciplined!

**KEY #6**  
**ENCOURAGE MEMBERS TO APPLY FOR**  
**WORK**  
**FROM WITHIN THE CHURCH FAMILY**

When you have a member who needs a job, direct him to other church members that can help him to get a job. This increases the members commitment because the sheep will see that you really care for them. The church then becomes an important family to belong to.

**KEY #7**  
**ENCOURAGE CHURCH MEMBERS TO**  
**MARRY EACH OTHER**

Have you ever noticed how a young lady seems so committed to a church? Many of them have relationships within that church. Often it is their fiancée that is the glue which fixes them to the church. They are cemented to the church by their relationship. This is what I call shepherdorial cement. As I said earlier, they may be attracted initially to the church by the charismatic man of God, but they remain because of the relationships they acquire within the church!

I repeatedly tell my church members that the person they want to marry can be found within our congregation. If they want a tall, short, fat, skinny, fair or dark person; they can find their choice within the congregation! Of course, it is not a sin to marry from outside your own church. Many people in my church do that! All I am saying is that I encourage my church members to intermarry.

Anytime one of our “daughters”, in whom we have invested, is married and taken to another church, we lose a church

member. However, if this member stays on in the church, she will contribute to church growth. The couple will also have children who will become members of our children's church, and eventually our adult assembly. You may want to argue with my theory, but it's working very well for me!

## **KEY #8**

### **ENCOURAGE MEMBERS TO SOCIALIZE AND FRATERNIZE**

The New Testament church was devoted to fellowshiping one with another! Sometimes people will accuse us of sticking to ourselves and not interacting with outsiders. However, that is not our intention at all! Our intention is also to interact with outsiders in order to win souls.

But make sure you encourage your church members to have their friends from within the church. **If your church members friends are within the church, they will have two reasons for coming to church.** Firstly, they will come for spiritual nourishment. Secondly, they will come to meet with their friends. You can easily lose members whose friends are mainly people outside the church.

## **KEY #9**

### **DEVELOP SMALLER CHURCH FAMILIES WITHIN THE BIG CHURCH**

My church is made out of many small groups. Some groups have ten members, five, and even others have fifty.

It is these small groups, called ministries and fellowships, which form the nucleus of family relationships in our church.

You may be surprised to discover that people are more committed to these smaller groups than to the big church. When there is a wedding or funeral, it is usually the concern of these smaller groups. Even when there is a social event, most of the friends are drawn out of these same groups.

## **KEY #10 BECOME A FATHER OR MOTHER TO YOUR CHURCH**

Some pastors never develop beyond being a teacher of doctrines and truths. Chicks gather around the mother hen because of her motherly security

**...I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings...**

**Matthew 23:37**

If you want your church to grow, develop fatherly or motherly attributes. Be everything to your sheep. Be a friend. Be a brother. Be a father. Show concern for your flock. Show interest in things that concern them. Be interested in their school. Ask for details concerning their businesses. Help them in their marriages. Correct them when they are wrong. Rebuke them and discipline them when they need it. Don't just give them good teachings. Become a mother or a father to your flock. **The anointing to be a father or mother is the anointing to gather.**

**To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak; I AM MADE ALL THINGS TO ALL MEN, THAT I MIGHT BY ALL MEANS SAVE SOME.**

**1 Corinthians 9:22**

# **CHAPTER 11**

## **RETENTION EVANGELISM**

## The population/Follow-up graph

One of the secrets of church growth is the secret of “retention evangelism”. Retention evangelism is the art of winning souls and retaining them. Every pastor must learn to keep what he already has at all costs.

**...Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

Jesus did not waste any of his blessings. He wanted to save as much as he could. The same applies to church growth. Our problem is not one of bringing new people to the church, but one of getting them to stay! If we can retain all the visitors and souls who come in through the front door, we will build a Mega Church for Jesus.

A Mega Church pastor is interested in what others despise. **Be interested in every single member.** Jesus collected the fragments. If the fragments were important to the Lord, then the fragments must be important to you. Every member, big or small, rich or poor, must be important to you!

**...Of them which thou gavest me HAVE I LOST  
NONE.**

**John 18:9**

Let me share with you three vital strategies for retaining church members.

## **FOLLOW-UP BRINGS RETENTION**

Many years ago, I learnt a simple truth which has stayed with me ever since. This truth has helped me greatly in the ministry. It is the secret of retention through follow-up.

My physics teacher once showed me a graph of the population of a chicken farm. The graph showed the population of chickens remaining constant at a low level for a long period. At a point, the chickens began to multiply and the farm population increased greatly. Something had happened to make the chickens multiply.

I then looked at the population of the world, which had remained constant up until the beginning of the twentieth century. At the turn of the century, the population of the world began to expand greatly.

The question was: "What caused the sudden increase of the chicken population on the farm?" The other question was: "What made the population of the world increase so radically?"

The answer was simple. When the chickens in the chicken farm received the right medication and stopped dying from epidemics, the number of chickens suddenly increased.



With the world's population, the pattern was the same. The reason for growth in the world's population was not the result of people having more babies. In fact, the number of births had been relatively the same. The reason for the growth was that a greater number of people were staying alive due to medical science.

Medical science has improved remarkably from the beginning of the twentieth century. Diseases that have killed human beings years ago are now treated with one injection. Children no longer die from tuberculosis and malaria as they used

There is a great revelation to be derived from these two graphs! **If we can prevent a large number of converts from dropping out, then the church will experience the growth of the chicken farm.** If we can stop the falling away of so many Christians, perhaps we will experience sudden accelerated growth like the world population did.

### The population/Follow-up graph

This can be the graph of your church's membership. The turning point, as you can see, is the point at which retention begins. I see your church multiplying greatly in Jesus' name!

Every successful pastor must have the picture of this Follow-up Graph firmly imprinted in his spirit. The follow-up ministry is important because without it, our fasting and praying for church growth is in vain. Without follow-up, all of our efforts are useless! Without follow-up, all evangelism is worthless. Let us not make fools of ourselves. If we evangelize and invite people to church, why don't we follow them up? I believe that every new convert must be followed-up.

## **THE ART OF FOLLOW-UP**

You must bear in mind that the follow-up ministry is both a physical and spiritual exercise. It consists of three main components: prayer, visitation and teaching. Always remember that the church is not a social club. It is a spiritual organism, which operates through prayer and the Word of God.

### **Pray for Visitors and Converts**

Pray that all visitors and converts will come back to the church. Declare that they will come back again next week. Prophecy that when they go back home, they will return next week with more people. Pray that when they return they will come back with their families. Pray that they will become established in Christ! You travailed for them to be born again, now travail for Christ to be formed in them!

**My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until CHRIST BE FORMED in you.**

**Galatians 4:19**

Without prayer, you are wasting your time. I really want to emphasize that prayer is important in order to achieve anything for the kingdom of God. **Pastors must emit spiritual energy whenever they speak or minister.** Lead your entire church in prayer for the establishment of visitors and converts in the church.

## **Visit New Converts and Visitors**

It is important to visit all new converts and visitors. This is an area where many of the church members can get involved.

**Churches are full of sleepy and lazy Christians who contribute nothing to the work of God.** One person cannot effectively visit that many people. However, one hundred trained workers can do a great deal more. I involve many people in following-up new converts.

There are three types of visits that church members must be trained to participate in.

### **IDL Visit**

This is done to **I**dentify and **L**ocate the homes of converts. I encourage church members to accompany new converts to their homes after the service. This first visit is used to locate their homes. Sometimes the official address does not correspond to the reality on the street. Physically going to homes to identify them is a powerful first step in the visitation process.

### **WELP Visit**

This visit is done to minister the **W**ord. You must **E**ncourage

the new converts. This second visit will demonstrate that you really Love them. Finally, you must Pray with them for the establishment of their soul and for their general welfare.

## **ABA Visit**

This involves **Anagkazo**, **Biazo** and **Anaideia** (for further study read "Anagkazo" by Bishop Heward-Mills). Sometimes you must visit your members and bring them physically with you to church. Demonstrate that you care by patiently waiting for them as they get ready for church. Then you take them to church. Many inactive Christians will become active if they find something to do in the church. Teach these three types of visitation for following-up new converts. You will discover how many more of your members will become active Christians.

## **Do Not Waste Your Time**

You will have to be careful not to waste your time on non-serious converts. The Bible teaches us that we should commit things to faithful people. In other words, do not waste too much time on unfaithful people.

**And the things that thou hast heard of me... COMMIT THOU TO FAITHFUL MEN...**

**2 Timothy 2:2**

The word faithful means constant and reliable. When a new convert says that he will be there and then does not show up, this may be a sign of unfaithfulness. **Learn to distinguish between the faithful converts and unfaithful converts. Then direct your time and investment to the faithful ones.**

On several occasions, I have wasted my time on non-serious converts (they probably weren't even born again). With time, I have learnt to distinguish between people who are serious with God and others who are just playing games. When you have many converts, you really have to learn to distinguish who is serious and who is not.

When you have more converts than lay workers, it is crucial that you determine who is serious and who is not. **If you are outnumbered, you should only follow-up those who are serious.**

## CONCENTRATE TO RETAIN

Retention evangelism requires concentration. In every city, there are many different churches and pastors. Many of these pastors and churches interact and end up having all sorts of conflicts. Unfortunately, in the real world, you will see competition between churches and pastors. There will always be one or two pastors fighting for supremacy over the body of Christ in their city.

Who is the father and leader of us all? Some will claim, "I am the father and leader of all Christians in this city." Others will take sides and join one faction or the other. I want to tell you right here, that your church will not grow if you involve yourself in these things.

Politics consumes both time and energy. **Church growth requires concentration.** The rays of the sun shine on us everyday, yet none of us catches fire. Were you to take a magnifying glass and concentrate the rays of the sun unto one spot, you could set a piece of paper on fire. The

principle at work here is the principle of concentration. When the rays of the sun are not concentrated, they have no power to light a fire.

**Direct your spiritual energy towards your calling.** Our principal goal must be to fulfill the call of God on our lives. A prophet relayed a vision he had had to a friend of mine. He saw a world famous man of God standing on a platform. Behind the platform were two electric generators. One of the generators was on and the other was off. The voice of God came loud and clear in this vision, "This man of God has neglected one half of his ministry." He had set aside the power and evangelistic dimension of his call and was only doing half of what he was called to do.

Two weeks after this revelation, this world famous man of God died suddenly. That was a real shock to everyone, including me. Failing to concentrate can cost you your church. It can cost you your ministry. It can even cost you your life!

## **DEVOTION BRINGS RETENTION**

Another essential method for retaining your membership is to teach devotion to the church. You must teach them to be devoted to the pastor's teachings. You must teach them to be devoted to one another's fellowship. We have discussed this at length in a previous chapter.

It is also very important for the pastor to be devoted to his members. When a pastor is devoted to his members it leads to retention. Anytime there is a wedding, funeral, baby dedication or some crisis in your church member's life; you have a chance to practice devotion. That is your golden

opportunity to devote yourself to your sheep. Stand by them at the graveside. Be there in their deepest sorrow. Attend their important events. This demonstrates your devotion to them. You are fulfilling a principle, whatsoever a man sows he shall reap. **You will reap the devoted membership of your church members.** Many years ago I heard a seasoned pastor say, "If you stand by your members in their time of need, they will stand by you in yours."

# **CHAPTER 12**

## **HOW TO HAVE PERMANENT CHURCH MEMBERS**

The Lord emphasized to me was the need to have permanent church members. I realized that many of the young church members were vacillators. **The best type of church member is a permanent church member.** A permanent member is unmovable, stable and dependable throughout the years. A very important characteristic of that member is that his mind and heart are saying, "I am here, and I am here forever."

I am no fool. Of course I know that not everybody is going to stay forever. Yet, it is important for people to have the mind of staying around forever. I am not God. If God, by His Spirit, would lead someone away from our church, there is nothing I can do about it. It is the same thing with marriage. No good person enters a marriage with the mind that "I am in this marriage for just a few years. Who would like to marry such a person?"

### **My Famous Announcement**



One day I told my church, "I have decided to go to America to study cardiothoracic surgery." I announced, "I am going to be a heart surgeon."

I went on to explain, "The course will last for about five years after which I will need to gain some experience on the job. That will last for another five years, making the trip a total of ten years."

The whole congregation was shocked. "Ooooooh," they said, "It can't be possible." They all looked very sad. "Why are you sad?" I asked, "Don't you want me to go away?"

I asked them, "How many of you would like me to be here in three years time?" Everybody raised their hands.

I asked again, "How many of you here would like me to be here in seven years time?" Again, they all raised their hands. "So you don't want me to go," I said.

They all shouted, "No!"

I began to laugh. Then I told them, "I was just joking. I'm glad you want me to stay! I realize that you want me to stay permanently!"

I went on, "If you would like me to be here in seven years time, I would also like you to be here seven years from now. Just as you want me to be your permanent pastor, preaching to you and praying for you, I also want you to be permanent members for me!"

**I believe in permanent members and permanent commitment.** I would strongly recommend all pastors to teach their congregations about being permanently joined to the church. Listen to me, faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Romans 10:17). What you teach your people is what they will believe. If you want them to be a permanent part of the ministry, teach them and they will be!

**The church members want a permanent pastor and we the pastors want permanent members.** I am going to give

you several reasons that you can share with any congregation as to why they should become permanent members of the church. If you teach these things, your members will stop jumping around from church to church.

## **REASON #1 THEY ARE PART OF A FAMILY**

**Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is name.  
Ephesians 3:15**

The first reason why people must be permanently part of the church is because they are part of a family. When every church member is taught that the church is a family, they will be less willing to leave. Every family has its problems! In every family, you have conflicts and misunderstandings. But there is simply no way you can leave your family. You are simply a part of that family whether you like it or not.

A misunderstanding with your uncle does not lead you to change your name. Teach the church members that misunderstandings and hurts should not make them change their churches. Family members belong together in a lifetime commitment. Church members must belong to the same family in a lifetime commitment.

## **REASON #2 THEY ARE PART OF A BUILDING**

**For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, YE ARE GOD'S BUILDING.**

## 1 Corinthians 3:9

The second reason why people need to be permanent is because they are part of God's building. The Bible clearly teaches that we are God's building. Every Christian must know that he is part of God's building, which is the church. You cannot easily remove the blocks of a building. Blocks are a permanent part of the structure. **How would you feel if you came home and your bedroom had moved to the next house?** Sections of buildings do not move around!

I teach my church to see themselves as permanent building blocks in the building called Lighthouse Chapel International. I tell them that I have never seen a building block walk out of a building before. Such an occurrence would be magical. I trust that there is no magician amongst the members.

## REASON #3 THEY ARE PART OF A GARDEN

**And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to my vineyard: [garden] I will take away the hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; and break down the wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down.**

**Isaiah 5:1**

Throughout scripture, we see believers being referred to as a garden. If we are like a garden, then each of us is like a plant in the garden. If you uproot a plant and then you replant it in

another spot, you endanger the life of that shrub. In fact, if you do this repeatedly you will kill the plant.

**It is a common fact that planting and replanting kills plants. God has no plan for planting and replanting His people in different churches every few years.** If every time your roots go a little deeper you move around you will kill yourself spiritually. I have noticed that Christians who are planted and replanted in different churches often do not survive spiritually.

When the Lord asked the devil where he had been, the devil replied, "I've been roaming in the earth." The devil does not sit still, he moves "to and fro" and "up and down" in the earth. If you move to and fro from church to church your lifestyle resembles the devil.

**And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going TO AND FRO in the earth, and from walking UP AND DOWN in it.**

**Job 1:7**

## **REASON #4 THEY ARE PART OF A TREE**

**I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.**

**John 15:5**

Another important revelation is that you are a part of a tree. Jesus said that He was the vine and we were the branches. Everyone knows that a branch cut off from the tree is dead.

Branches were intended to be permanently fastened to bigger branches or tree trunks.

**If you are indeed a branch, have no plans of moving anywhere.** People who move from church to church often do not flourish in the kingdom of God. They experience stunted growth and some even backslide and go to hell.

## **Pastor Turns Rasta**

Recently I was speaking with a prophet of God. He told me how the Lord had shown him a dream, how a pastor who had jumped from church to church had backslidden and had become a Rastafarian. This prophetic dream was predicting that the vacillating pastor was going to fall. This was a warning to the unstable pastor.

Cutting yourself off and attempting to reattach yourself is risky business. I believe in permanent membership. I teach permanent membership. I campaign for permanent members. My people want a permanent pastor, and I want permanent members.

## **REASON #5 THEY WILL FLOURISH IF THEY ARE PLANTED**

**Those that be planted in the house of the Lord shall  
FLOURISH in the courts of our God.**

**Psalms 92:13**

The next reason for permanent membership is so that you

will flourish. You will notice that I have a scriptural basis for each of these points. What I am sharing with you is sound biblical doctrine. I am not saying that there are no grounds for a person to leave a church (for further study see book "Ministerial Ethics" by Bishop Heward-Mills). Not at all! What I am saying is that you must teach people to be permanently attached and permanently planted for their own benefit. Sheep will follow and obey what their shepherd tells them.

The Bible tells us plainly that those who are planted will flourish. I have watched Christians and pastors who move around from place to place. **You cannot compare a planted member to a roving member.** Stay in one place. Develop roots and flourish!

As you remain in one place, you will develop businesses and business contacts. Members of the church will begin to rely on you for their business. You will develop lasting friendships that may help you during your lifetime. Staying in one place for only a couple of years does not allow you to develop the sort of relationships that you need for a blessed life.

## **REASON #6**

### **THEY CAN INVEST FREELY WHEN THEY ARE PERMANENT**

It is so nice to live in one's own house. It is very different from renting a house. When you live in your own house, you can invest freely. You can pour in freely. You can pour in your money, your time and your life. Why is this? Because it is yours and you are going to be there permanently. No one wants to spend any money on a house that doesn't belong to

him. After all, he is only going to use the place for a few months.

When we acquired our own church building, we invested freely into the structure. One day the contractor told me, “I want to build this building as perfectly as possible because I am going to be here for life.”

“I want the floor to be smooth and perfect because I intend to die as a member of Lighthouse,” he added.

He continued, “One day when I am dead and they are carrying my coffin into the church for the funeral service, I don’t want anyone to trip and fall over a crooked floor.”

I laughed. This was a joke but he was also making a serious point. He had planned to be there for life. In other words, he had opted for permanent membership.

Permanent members will be encouraged to give of their money freely. They know that they are building a church for their children’s weddings. They know that they will see the fruit of their investments.

## **REASON #7**

### **THEY WILL HAVE FAMILY TO CELEBRATE THEIR VICTORIES**

I preach faith and hope for the future. I teach my members that things are going to get better. Many poor people come to the church. As they hear the Word, their faith rises and they begin to see better things ahead.

If they are permanent members, they will live to celebrate their victories in the church. If they are not permanent, in the day of their victory they will have no one to rejoice with.

**Remember that joy shared is double joy and sorrow shared is half sorrow.**

**Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.**

**Romans 12:15**

They will have a family to rejoice with as you dedicate their new houses, new cars and new babies. You will stand together and remember how the Lord took them from the beginning and brought so far!

I have often reminisced with my friends about the ministry. We ponder over how the Lord has been kind to us. We laugh about things that threatened us some years ago. We say like the psalmist,

**When the Lord turned again the captivity of Zion, we were like them that dream. Then was our mouth filled with laughter and our tongue with singing: then said they among the heathen, The Lord has done great things for them.**

**Psalms 126:1,2**

Who will you sit down with to quote this scripture to one day? Will you have abandoned all the friends with whom you struggled in the early days? A permanent relationship will give you people to rejoice with in the day of rejoicing. Better days are ahead. I teach my church that our better days are yet to come. I want them to stay around to see the better days of this ministry.

I remember when I used to speak about miracles. It was more like a dream. Today we have real miracles abounding in our midst. The Lord has been good to us. We are seeing better days. When you are permanent you will have a family



to go through your mourning with you. Joy shared is double joy, but sorrow shared is half sorrow.

## **REASON #8**

### **THEY WILL SEE THE FRUIT OF THEIR LABOR**

It is important for Christians to know that harvest time is coming in the future. What is the use of laboring in a church for years, only to leave just before harvest time? Some of the people who were with me in the days of real struggles are no longer around to enjoy the blessings. That is a pity! That is the price you pay for not being permanent.

Anyone who is double-minded about their commitment becomes unstable in other areas of his life. The Bible states that such a person is unstable in all his ways. Be stable. Be permanent. Be blessed.

**A double minded man is UNSTABLE in all his ways.**

**James 1:8**

## **REASON #9**

### **THEY WILL AVOID THE DECEPTION OF SHORT RELATIONSHIPS**

Short relationships are sweet whilst they last. There are no quarrels, no emotional disturbances, no worrying comments or misunderstandings. Long relationships have often been through much testing.

Long relationships that have survived the tests of time are better. Greater trust develops. You also know what to expect in the relationship. I prefer to work with someone I have known for a long time rather than with someone I have just met.

## **Joshua Made That Mistake!**

Joshua made the mistake of forming an alliance with someone he didn't really know. He thought the Gibeonites were ambassadors from a far country. Little did he know that they had lied to him in order to secure a peace treaty. He later discovered their true identity. But it was too late! He was already bound to the peace accord, although it was done under a cover of deception.

**...And Joshua said unto them, Who are ye? and from whence come ye? And they [Gibeonites] said unto him, From a very far country... And it came to pass at the end of three days after they had made a league with them, that they heard that they were their neighbours, and they they dwelt among them.**

**Joshua 9:8,9, 16**

What I am saying is that longer relationships are safer relationships. Permanent members will be able to develop genuine relationships with genuine people. As the years go by, the members will know whether they have a genuine pastor or not and they will be more committed.

**REASON #10  
THEY WILL HAVE CONSISTENT**

## **PASTORAL CARE**

The church, like a hospital, cares for you. Your permanent pastor can cater for you better because he has been with you for a long time and knows your history better. He is better equipped to minister to you.

Church members often leave churches when they think the pastor has discovered their secret sins. You must want your pastor to have access to your life so that he can minister in the area where you really need help.

### **REASON #11 THEY WILL BE REWARDED FOR FAITHFULNESS**

The next important for being a permanent member is that God will reward His children for faithfulness. Faithfulness means loyalty, constancy and permanence.

**Well done, good and faithful servant... enter thou into the joy of the Lord.**

**Matthew 25:23**

Please note in this scripture that the servant is recommended for his faithfulness. He is not recommended for his charisma or his gifting. Being a permanent member is part of the life of faithfulness. Be faithful. Be permanent. One day, Jesus will tell you, "Enter thou into the joy of the Lord." That is the day I am waiting for. I just want to hear Him say, "Well done, good and faithful (permanent and loyal) servant."

# **CHAPTER 13**

## **THE SECRET OF INDUSTRIALIZATION**

I like to think of the future and how things will be like in some years to come. I have often wondered what our church will be like in a few years. As I pondered over the future of the church, the Lord told me that one way I could secure the future was to develop a culture of industrialization.

God instructed me to industrialize my church. He showed me how our nation, at that time, was only importing goods from western countries and reselling them at a profit. "There is no future in this," the Lord said. "Have you noticed that the richest nations of the world are all involved in producing important products?"

I said to the lord, "Yes, I do."

God showed me that the richest nations of the world produce cars. The best cars come from the richest countries of the world. These countries are rich because they produce something. The church will be rich in souls if we begin to be

spiritually industrialized!

Just as the success of the nations of the world depend on them producing something, the success of the church depends on it producing souls. **An industry is an organized system of producing goods and services regularly.**

**An industry is a deliberate (intentionally) organized system. It comes out with a well-defined product on a regular basis.** It does not only produce its products when it is convenient. It does produce goods accidentally. An industry is also very profit-oriented. Any nation that does not establish industries is doomed to buy secondhand things forever. It is doomed to be at the mercy of those who produce goods and services.

When I speak of industrialization, I am not speaking of making money. I am talking about churning out souls deliberately and regularly. **I am a “businessman” for God, and my currency is human souls.** Your church will have reached an industrialized stage when it begins to churn out souls regularly and systematically. The important word here is regular. I know of some car factories that produce one car every three minutes.

Jesus said in **Luke 19:13, “Occupy (do business) till I come.”** That is, industrialize and commercialize with diligence until I come. In other words, Jesus expects us to take the business of soul winning as a very serious enterprise. Soul winning should be intentional and not incidental.

Many pastors are afraid of starting churches because they do not know how to win souls. Others don't know how to follow-up and establish converts in the Lord. They only know how to break churches and take away half of somebody's church

members. No industry turns out a car accidentally. It is a deliberate planned exercise. **It is time for us to deliberately win souls with the regularity of a factory.**

God showed me how to setup the church and ministry to deliberately and regularly win souls every month. My church is divided into chapels, ministries and fellowships. Each ministry is supposed to have a monthly regular outreach.

**The Lord showed me that it is important for the ministries to develop the habit of having a monthly outreach without needing a special exhortation to do so.** Car factories do not need a charismatic manager to preach about the importance of producing their product for the month! In contrast, churches and ministries seem to need a special emotional seminar on soul winning. Without this, everybody forgets about the harvest. Surely this is not an industrialized church.

That is why I initiated ministries and fellowships, so that we would win some souls every month. I am not directly involved in the winning of those souls. It is done at the ministry and fellowship level. I do not have to go and whip up enthusiasm for the winning of souls before it happens. It just happens automatically.

An industry is profit conscious.

**Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls [souls]:**

**Matthew 13:45**

An industrialized church is concerned about how many people are being converted every month. It is biblical to be interested in the number of souls that are being added to the church daily, weekly or monthly.

**...And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.**

**Acts 2:47**

It is interesting to note how many pastors rarely do altar calls. Many ministers do not care about lost souls. Instead, they care about how impressive they were and how powerfully they ministered!

After ministering at a convention, the host pastor said something to me that struck my heart. He said, "You are the only minister who made an altar call during this convention." I asked myself, "Have altar calls for salvation become obsolete?" How sad! The primary job of the church is being relegated to the background.

Salvation altar calls are compulsory in every service we have. I make altar calls at all weddings and funerals. Industrialize your church – regularly and deliberately conduct outreaches. I see you increasing as you industrialize your church!

When a church is industrialized, even when the charismatic leader is no more, the church will continue to grow on its own accord. Why industrialize? So that we may increase and not diminish.

**...Build ye houses, and dwell in them; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them; Take ye wives, and beget sons and daughters; and take wives for your sons, and give your daughters to husbands, that they may bear sons and daughters; that YE MAY BE INCREASED THERE, AND NOT DIMINISHED.**

**Jeremiah 29:5,6**

# **CHAPTER 14**

## **LOYALTY AND THE MEGA CHURCH**

My few years in the ministry have made me very aware of the consequences of having both loyal and disloyal people in ministry. I have noticed the impact that it has on churches and ministries. In the next few pages, I will share with you a few reasons why the subject of loyalty is very important especially in relation to building a Mega Church.



# **IT IS THE FOREMOST REQUIREMENT FOR EVERY MINISTER**

An inexperienced person is likely to think that the more gifted you are, the more qualified you are for the ministry. My experience has shown me that it is the faithful and loyal people in church who are most qualified to be leaders.

An inexperienced person would think that a friendly brother would make a good pastor. He may also think that someone with good oratory skills would make the best preacher. Do not make that mistake! The Bible teaches us that the cardinal requirement for leadership is faithfulness and not anything else.

**...it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.  
1 Corinthians 4:2**

I have many wonderful pastors who work with me in the ministry. Many of them are not overly friendly, flashy or particularly gifted. But time has proven that they are the best gifts that God has given to His church and to me.

## **TO FIGHT THE 5<sup>TH</sup> COLUMN**

Very early in my ministry I realized that the devil is an expert at destroying the church from within. If you are a good minister, called of God, and doing the right things, the devil will have very little opportunity to fight against you from inside. Like Jesus said,

**...the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in  
me.**

## **John 14:30**

You will realize that Satan often does not have the occasion to launch deadly attacks against you from outside. Jesus was saying that though the enemy was coming after him, Satan did not have any grounds to destroy him. There are many anointed preachers in this same category. Satan has no basis for which to overcome them so he has to use someone from within. In the case of Jesus, Satan used a traitor (Judas).

I recall reading the story of an army general who surrounded a large city with the aim of conquering it. This city was heavily fortified with a high and imposing wall and gate. The army general surrounded the city in readiness to attack.

A friend of the general came along and asked him, "Sir, how do you think you are going to overcome the defenses of this city? No one in recent history has been able to conquer this great city."

The army general smiled and said, "It's my 5th column. I'm depending on them to do the trick."

The general's friend was very interested and asked, "What is this 5th column? I thought you only had four columns."

The army general replied, "I do have a 5th column."

"Oh, I see. Is it a special commando unit or are they airborne paratroopers?" the man asked.

## **He Fought From Inside**

The general laughed, "No, it's none of these. My 5th column consists of my spies, agents, friends and supporters who are already within the city. You just wait. They will open those big gates from within and my armies will rush in."

This is the only way the enemy can destroy a successful and powerful ministry that is doing all the right things. It has to come from within. The 5th column is comprised of the disloyal, double-faced, double-tongued and discontented people within every ministry. If these people are allowed to wreck havoc as they so very well can, they will destroy the church.

## **I Have Experienced Treachery**

I remember years ago when I started out in the ministry, I experienced the effect of having a disloyal associate. This person, although officially standing on my right-hand side, did not believe in me and was always murmuring against me.

His home was the meeting place for all the discontented people in the church. Every time they gathered, they would discuss and criticize me. At times, they would talk about the way I preached. At other times, it was the way I sipped water in the middle of my sermons. Yet again, some felt I was not friendly enough. But the Lord revealed all these things to me. I prayed about it and asked the Lord what to do.

God told me, "Get rid of that guy!"

I said, "Lord, do you mean he must leave the church?"

And the Lord said, "I mean exactly that! Dismiss him otherwise you will never have peace and your church will never grow."

So I called for a meeting of the elders of the church. At the meeting I said, "I realize that Brother X is not in support of me. He's constantly full of bitter criticisms."

I said to Brother X, "I know that you do not believe in my leadership anymore. I trained you and brought you up, but today you are too big to remain under my authority."

I asked, "What do you think we should do?"  
Then the brother said, "Let's work things out."  
But the scripture that the Lord had shown me came floating up to my mind.

**Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease.**

**Proverbs 22:10**

I spoke up, pointed to my assistant and said, "You know as well as I do that it's not going to work. You don't believe in me anymore." I added, "From today, I have relieved you of all your duties in this church."  
He sputtered, "What," then said, "I will continue coming to church even though I may not have certain responsibilities."

## **Casting Out a Scorner!**

But I said to him, "No! You must leave! You are not part of us. Your presence in the church will only be destructive."

I tell you, it was no easy thing to dismiss a friend and associate of many years but it had to be done. The Old Testament showed us that when Abraham was in conflict with Lot, he directed Lot to go somewhere else! Abraham was saying, "If we are apart there will be peace and the work of God can continue."

A disloyal person breeds strife, hatred and murmuring. These disloyal sentiments are like smoke that fills an entire house. The only way to get rid of the smoke is to get rid of the fire.

If we want to have a large church, we need to minister with love and oneness. If we cannot be one, let's stop pretending.

You see, I encourage people to walk out of my church if their hearts are not with me.

**He that is not with me is against me...**

**Matthew 12:30**

I will beg you to leave, if I have to. I am serious about this. I will even give you money to pay for your transportation and snacks as you leave us! So that those of us who love one another and are confident about each other can stay together and continue working.

## **Deal with Imposters**

I don't know how to pretend. I simply do not know how to do it. In spite of that, there are many pretenders in the church. They pretend to love you and support you but in their heart, they despise you.

## **FOR THE LOVE OF GOD TO FILL THE CHURCH**

The church is supposed to operate with the power of love, unity and teamwork.

**By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye  
have love one to another.**

**John 13:35**

To minister as an effective leader you need to exhibit the love that Jesus spoke about. People are attracted by love. When they see leaders who flow together in genuine love, they are attracted. You must never forget that your church members are not blind. Neither are they deaf. They can see and feel

disunity and discord when it is there.

## **Still Waters**

One thing that every pastor must know about sheep is that they drink from still waters. If the water is murky and rough, the sheep will stay away. You see, they are not quite sure whether a crocodile is in the water or not!

**...he leadeth me beside the still waters.**

**Psalm 23:2**

Whenever there is treachery and distrust your church members become scared and wary and stay away.

## **TO HAVE A LARGE TEAM OF PASTORS**

One man can only do so much. One pastor can only be at one place at a time. He can only minister until his strength (which is limited) is exhausted. Because of this, anyone who wants to extend his ministry and bear much fruit has to learn to work with many other people. These people consist of the team that I am talking about.

**However, it would be better to work alone than with a team of disloyal, disgruntled, disunited and disaffected people.** In fact, it is not possible to have an effective team with such people. I believe I have only been able to do as much as I have done because of the team with whom I work.

## **TO HAVE A TRULY MEGA CHURCH**

As I am writing, there are Lighthouse churches all over the world – Accra, Toronto, Pretoria, New York and Geneva to mention a few. These churches are part of a network that is loyal to the headquarters of the church in Ghana.

People often ask me, “How do you sustain churches in all these different locations? What sort of controls do you have?” You see, much of the system depends on loyalty. The churches are pastored by ministers who are loyal to the Lord, me and to the Lighthouse vision.

**Without loyalty every network or denomination of churches constantly undergoes disintegration.** They frequently divide into splinter groups and smaller sub-churches.

## **A Major Church Split**

I remember the story of a branch church that disintegrated because of disunity among its ministers. Some longstanding seeds of disloyalty manifested shortly after a fundraising event in the local church. Because of this disagreement, the assistant pastor decided to resign and start his own church.

He was angry he returned all the money he had raised. The church members of course were very surprised that the money they had given to the church was being returned. This pastor then spread many hurtful stories about his denomination and its senior ministers. Naturally, this church virtually disintegrated following the pastor’s actions.

Dear friend, I can give you story after story of why churches (especially branch churches in big cities) constantly divide and break off. **What I can say for sure is that without**

**principled and loyal pastors the ministry of our Lord will always be limited.**

## **TO HAVE A LASTING CHURCH**

Any one person has only a few years of practical and effective ministry. Jesus only ministered for three and a half years but he extended his ministry and his influence through an effective and loyal team. Notice that Jesus' ministry has branched out into the whole world and has spanned almost two thousand years.

If I die now, Lighthouse Chapel International is going to live on! It does not depend on me. I have not built a church around my personality. The church will continue. None of us is indispensable. God can do without us. That is why we need to build a team of loyal successors.

## **IN ORDER TO REAP A FULL REWARD**

Those who benefit from the blessings of success are the faithful and loyal ones. One day we all hope to hear those famous words: Well done, good and faithful servant. Those who stick with you throughout the difficult times are different from those who come in when everything is working well.

Jesus himself told his twelve disciples that they would be treated differently from any other famous minister. They would have a special kingdom and their names would even



be written on the foundations of the New Jerusalem.

**And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles...**

**Revelation 21:14**

Even the great men of God we know of today, will not qualify for this special reward. Jesus gave a reason for this special reward – they had been loyal to him through the most difficult part of his ministry.

**Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations... I appoint unto you a kingdom...**

**Luke 22:28,29**

**You see, loyalty is most appreciated in hard times. In the good times, everybody seems loyal.** I appreciate very much the pastors who have stood with me throughout my ministry. They watched me rise and have supported me, even in my mistakes. To me they are different from others. Like Jesus said, they have a special reward!

Building a team of loyal associates is vital to having a Mega Church. It is important to study further and know how disloyalty develops and the stages through which it passes. A good senior pastor must know the signs of growing disloyalty and how to check them. All these are essential for building a truly Mega Church.

# **CHAPTER 15**

## **SPECIAL PRINCIPLES FOR CHURCH GROWTH**

The following are a few principles that I have discovered for building successful and large churches. The advice I would give you is to consider them and allow the Lord to give you a deeper understanding of what I am saying in this chapter

### **THE PRINCIPLE OF THE MULTIPLIED SENIOR PASTOR**

I have discovered that if you could multiply the senior pastor by twelve, it would mean that you had twelve pastors at work. Logically, you could do twelve times as much work. I taught my assistant pastors to do whatever I do. If I meet people after church, they should also meet people after church. If I am able to counsel ten people and twelve other pastors are able to counsel ten people, that makes it one hundred and thirty people who are being attended to.

There are some churches in which the senior pastor is a “superman”. He is the only one who does anything important – and that is a sure recipe to keep your church small. One person can only attend to a certain number of people. If you try to visit everybody, counsel everybody and help everybody

you will go crazy! There is a limit to what you can do. That is why I have many branches and many pastors. I believe that many of the people I preach to can also preach. I believe that many of the people who are receiving the Word now are capable of rising up into the ministry.

Do not be an insecure senior pastor. Don't be afraid to trust people. It is true that many people will betray your trust, but if you live in fear Satan will have access to your life and ministry. I have been hurt by some people, but I have decided to still trust others to help me. If they betray me one day, I will take it in stride and keep on trusting some others.

One of the reasons why some people cannot trust is because they do not believe that people can do a good enough job. In the medical field, young doctors are being trained all the time. Some people are always attended to by inexperienced student doctors under supervision. As the young doctors are allowed to have a go, they learn and soon they are just as good. It is the same thing in the ministry. People must be trusted with responsibilities under supervision. **They must be allowed to do important things.** This will multiply the number of capable pastors in the ministry.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MAXIMIZED SUNDAY USAGE**

This principle has been stretched to its fullest at the Lighthouse Cathedral in Accra. The principle of using Sunday to its fullest is effective because traditionally, people have dedicated Sunday to both resting and going to church. Since so many of the church members are available on Sunday, it is only wise to use Sunday to its fullest. Sunday is

a full working day for me. Jesus worked on Sundays and I would like to follow His example.

**And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day. But Jesus answered them, My father WORKETH hitherto, and I WORK.**

**John 5:16,17**

Sunday is a full working day for all lay pastors in our church. We work hard from Sunday morning until late Sunday evening. We are able to accomplish a lot of counseling on Sunday because people are free on Sundays. Visitation is also very effective on Sunday because many people are at home on Sunday afternoon. We conduct Bible schools for lay people on Sunday afternoons. Many people are able to attend because they don't have much to do on Sundays.

Decide to utilize your Sundays. I don't know what pastors are doing in their homes at two o'clock on Sunday afternoon when most of the church members are available to be ministered to. Take advantage of this opportunity. Lay pastors and shepherds will be able to do more work for the Lord.

Although some people find it difficult to accept, I emphasize to all the people I work with that Sunday is a full working day for me and my church. I am not an accountant or a computer programmer. My working hours are not Monday to Friday from nine to five. I work on Sundays and I rest on Mondays. We do not start work at eight o'clock in the morning. I see no reason to go to work at eight o'clock in the morning. We stay late in the evenings because that is when many lay people are available for us to minister to them.

Our office is usually closed on Mondays, and all of our staff,

except the security officers, have a day off. Pastors and churches must not allow the world to impose its schedule on us. When airplane pilots go to work at odd hours no one complains. Everyone accepts that their work demands a different type of work schedule. Pastors and non-pastoral people must realize that the work of the ministry is peculiar and goes with its own special working times.

Begin to consider what you can do with your Sundays. Think of how many more people you can attend to if your Sundays are used for ministry instead of being used for sleeping and having lunches in the afternoon.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF SMALLER SUB-DIVISIONS**

Smaller sub-divisions within the church allow for better pastoral care, which eventually leads to church growth. Questions that cannot be asked in a large Sunday service can be addressed in the small groups. The small groups become the family units to which church members belong.

I have several smaller groups within the church. I have always believed that every Christian can and should be actively serving the Lord. These smaller groups allow for all Christians to get involved.

As your church becomes Mega, it will remain small enough to meet the needs of all the people. As they say, "Large enough to include you, and small enough to know you."

Some people's churches are like large convention centers. People come in, hear the Word, and go away. No human being likes to feel like he is not known. People are not

numbers they are human beings. **Nobody wants to be reduced to a numbered article or a countable commodity.** People want to feel important. People want to feel necessary. People want to feel loved. You may preach a powerful sermon but they still need to belong to a little family.

Your church can be broken into cells, divisions or departments. Our church has chapels, ministries and fellowships. I am always encouraging my members to get involved in one ministry or the other. How can I know all these people who come to church? How can I know what they think or feel? How can I know their problems and how can I help them?

If you think that God is going to give you a word of knowledge about these people everyday, you are making a mistake. God expects you to breakup your church into smaller divisions so that people can receive adequate pastoral care.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF THE PERSON X ORIENTED CHURCH**

What on earth is a “person x” oriented church? I define “person x” as a new convert or a new member. **Most churches are oriented towards established members.** A “person x” oriented church is very concerned about new people and visitors.

Treat your visitors well. We make song sheets so that the new people can flow along during the praise and worship. After the service, we host a reception to allow our new members to feel at home. We also give gifts to new converts.

Recently, the Lord directed me to direct my most senior associates to handle all new converts. God told me that if new converts were important to me than I should allow senior ministers to take care of them rather than junior leaders. This has helped tremendously to establish many new people in the church. When a church is “person x” oriented, it is on the road to towards increase because growth will come through new members and converts.

**And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour...**

**1 Corinthians 12:23**

Most people think that growth comes because more people visit the church. This is not necessarily the case. Some people also think that growth takes place because more converts are won. History has shown that the population of this world has increased because people are being kept alive and not because more people are being born. If we want our churches to grow, we have to sustain and maintain our new members and converts.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF CATERING FOR GROUP A AND GROUP B MEMBERS**

Every church can be divided into group A and group B members. Group A members are the more reliable people; they attend church twice or more a week. They are often involved in other small group activities in the church life. Thank God for Group A members. We really appreciate their input.

**Group B members on the other hand, are the once-a-**

**weekers, non-small group members, early service lovers, short sermon lovers, mind drifters, day dreamers, bible forgetters, non note-takers, non tithe payers, clock-watchers and the church-near-me attendees.**

These group B members will form an important segment of your church, as it becomes a larger entity. You will have to accept them as part of the family. **You can choose your friends, but you cannot choose your brothers.** Not everybody is going to be a prayer warrior.

In fact, in a large church many of the people fall into group B. Love them anyway. Preach sermons that they can also appreciate. Pray for them. The Spirit of the Lord will work on them. Sometimes when you organize a social event like a beach party, the group B members will flood the place. Use such opportunities to minister to them.

If you try to filter out your group B members, you may be left with nothing at the end of the day. Jesus said that the harvest is plenteous but that the laborers are few. Jesus didn't say that there were few members, He said that there were few laborers (Group A members).

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MULTIPLE SERVICES**

Nobody ever told me that multiple services led to church growth. I discovered it almost by accident. Well, now I am telling you that multiple services lead to church growth.

We have seven different services every Sunday morning. It is very tiring and draining, but our church attendance is better because of these multiple services. As the church grows,



people with all sorts of needs come into the church.

Some pastors give the impression that they conduct multiple services because they have such a large crowd. This is true to some extent. But I do not have multiple services because the building can be filled four times over. Not all of the services are full. Each service has a different level of attendance. I have never seen multiple services where all of the services have the same attendance. **I conduct multiple services primarily to make a variety of convenient services available to my members.**

I am always amazed at why people will want to come to church at 6 o'clock in the morning. I always ask myself, "Can't they come to church a little later?" Human beings are so varied. **Once you are dealing with a large number of people you are dealing with variety.** If you don't make variety available, you will lose those for whom you have nothing to offer.

Accept the reality of variety and flow with it. You will notice that different types of people come to each service. Some of the services are more formal whilst others are more relaxed. The type of people who attend each service determines the type of atmosphere you get. We have services for the youth and for the children. We have services for different languages. We have several services for English speaking members. Each of these services is different and there are people to fit into all of these services. **God will bless your church as you provide variety for more people.**

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF DYNAMIC CHURCH SERVICES**

You must have a goal for each service you conduct. When

determining the goal of the service you must ask yourself, "What am I trying to achieve with this service?" Are you planning to raise the dead, to heal the sick, or to preach and teach? In the Lighthouse Cathedral, our Sunday morning services are teaching and worship services. We do not usually pray for the sick on Sunday mornings. We pray for the sick on other days.

How much time have you allotted for each service? How long should the service be? Our services are one and a half hours and two hours each. Within two hours, you can do everything that you need to do for a church service.

Many years ago I attended a church whose services began around eight o'clock in the morning and ended at about three o'clock in the afternoon. After attending twice, I decided that the service was too long. Today that church is non-existent. When your Sunday services are too long you will drive away all of your members. You cannot achieve everything on a Sunday morning. We conduct miracle services which can last for several hours. We have camp meetings at which I can preach for more than twelve hours in a day. At the last Shepherd's Camp Meeting I preached from 6:30 a.m. to 12:30 a.m. the next day with only two short breaks. I know how to do long meetings, but I'd advise you not to use your Sunday services for such things.

What type of meeting place do you have? Man looks on the outward appearance, so it is important to decorate your church nicely. Even if you do not own a church building, let your place of meeting attain a certain standard. **Remember that you have only one chance to give a first impression.** Make use of flowers, baskets, curtains or anything that would improve the physical appearance.

Sometimes the pastor does not have very good taste. How

can you know if you do not have good taste? He would then have to rely on others in the church to help with enhancing and brightening your corner. It is important that every church tries to acquire its own place of meeting. Owning your own facility introduces more stability to the church.

How do you present yourself? God looks on the heart, but man looks on the outward appearance. Man cannot see your heart. Man can only see your outward appearance. That is why your outward appearance is also important. We must seek to put up a good outward appearance in addition to preparing the right heart for the Lord. Everyone who plays a part in the service must be well dressed. Male pastors must be formally dressed and neatly shaved. Female pastors must be properly dressed and must not wear suggestive or indecent clothing. **In some churches the musicians look like agents from the world who have been temporarily contracted to help God.** These instrumentalists often come in with the attitude and culture of secular pop groups. That is why I insist on all my musicians dressing like pastors. If they cannot afford it then we buy clothes for them!

Altar calls should be made at every service. This important and good habit must be maintained at all costs. New converts and visitors must receive a warm welcome. Remember these are the “person x” members. The assisting pastor should take over and briefly emphasize the message of the senior pastor. He should also encourage the congregation to buy tapes.

Pastors must not run off after church. They must stay and mingle with the congregation for some time after the service. I question the call of someone who says he’s a pastor but does not want to mingle with his congregation after the service. The shepherd’s place is in the field amongst the sheep. **A true shepherd smells of sheep.** I remember

meeting a frustrated congregant in a church. This man had traveled many miles to attend a conference. He wanted to have a chance to say hello to the great man of God. He was so frustrated that he became bitter. I met him in a lift and he said to me bitterly, "Is this man a prime minister or a pastor?"

But I have been to other conferences where the men of God made the effort to stay around and mingle with the sheep. Some people just want to shake your hand. Give them the opportunity to get near if you can. A pastor's wife must help with the interaction and must be seen to be a warm and friendly person. All these things contribute to building the Mega Church we all desire.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF USING TECHNOLOGY AND RESEARCH**

As the number of passengers on different airlines has increased, their efficiency has improved. This is because they have used technology to help them in their work. Whilst the membership of most churches has increased over the past few years, the pastor's ability for handling larger crowds has not been developed.

In our church, we try to keep an accurate data and statistics department. We maintain accurate counts and figures of everything. We have developed our own pastoral care monitoring system which we call the Pastoshep.

In spite of the limitations due to limited addresses and telephone numbers in Ghana, our Pastoshep has become a reliable and technological method of assessing the work of all pastors and shepherds alike. Without being there to physically see what people are doing, my computer tells me

what everybody is doing. I decided long ago to allow technology to help me to do the work of God.

Too many pastors say things like, 'The whole of outside was full.' They say things like, "Thousands of people were here today." Whereas in reality just a few hundred were present. Let's have real numbers!

We sometimes do surveys in the church to find out different interesting things. For instance, we did a survey to find out how many members of the church had ever been visited by a pastor. The results of that study were certainly revealing!

## THE 80-20 PRINCIPLE

This rule teaches us that eighty percent of your increase comes from twenty percent of the people. This means that eighty percent of church growth is as a direct result of the work of twenty percent of your members. Therefore, it is important for every pastor to spend more time with the twenty percent who will bring church growth.

Often the leaders, teachers and pastors make up this twenty-percent. They are the most important people in the church. More time, personal interaction and prayer with this twenty-percent will give you amazing results that you never expected. Some pastors spend most of their time with the rich and influential. They do not know that they are spending time with the wrong group. **Spending time with rich people does not make your church grow.** It rather makes the rich people more important than they really are. It makes the rich people stubborn and difficult to pastor!

A church with a future will identify potential leaders and put them to work. When you do this, you are looking out for the

twenty percent who can bring about sustained church development.

When I visit our churches outside the headquarters, I spend more time with the leaders and pastors than with the rest of the church. Often I just minister in one service. Afterwards, I have various meetings, spending several hours with the pastors and shepherds. This style of activity does not come naturally. It is born out of the knowledge of the 80-20 Principle.

When you implement the 80-20 Principle, you may initially think that you are doing the wrong thing, but that is not the case. You will soon discover that this simple principle is a secret of church growth.

## THE PRINCIPLE OF THE SCHOLARLY PASTOR

By this, I simply mean that pastors should develop themselves academically. I have never been to Bible school; I only attended medical school. Yet, I have learnt so much about the ministry by reading.

I always have several books that I am reading at the same time. I believe in reading, studying and acquiring knowledge. How could I rise above the handicap of having no formal pastoral training? Only by reading!

There is a difference between ministers who read books and those who do not. **Those who do not read are no better than those who cannot read! Those who do not read are doomed to be ruled by those who do read.** Paul the apostle was a reader of books and parchments. He deemed

his books so important that he asked Timothy to bring them to him.

**...when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books,  
but especially the parchments**

**2 Timothy 4:13**

Prophet Daniel read the books that Jeremiah wrote.

**In the first year of his reign I DANIEL UNDERSTOOD BY BOOKS the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.**

**Daniel 9:2**

People like Daniel and Paul read books. It is no surprise that they went far in ministry. There are many ministers who also need some secular education. They would do well to educate themselves in important subjects like administration, law, medicine and history. Administration is important in a church because many aspects in the church have to be run in a secular way. Things have to be managed properly. Accounts have to be prepared. Salaries have to be determined and paid. People have to be employed and dismissed. Things simply have to be done properly. A good study of administration and management will do the church of God a lot of good.

The study of law is also important for pastors and churches. Churches enter into contracts and the law of contract becomes important. There are laws that affect property acquisition. The law of property becomes important to the pastor. There are laws that concern marriage. Pastors have to be well versed in the laws that exist. God does not want His ministers to be ignoramuses. I am not a lawyer, but I

know quite a bit about law because I have taken an interest in it for my own sake.

A good understanding of medicine is also important. A pastor, like a doctor, often deals with terminally ill people. There is no use in a pastor not appreciating the conditions of their members. It is important to have a basic understanding of what is going on around you. I have seen pastors declaring healing based on ridiculous and presumptuous premises. How absurd we sometimes look to the professionals of this world! They know we are completely unlearned in certain areas.

Another area that pastors need a bit of education in is history and politics. History shows the rise and the fall of tyrants. It shows trends which keep repeating themselves. The Bible says that there is nothing new under the sun. In fact, the Bible predicts that the past will repeat itself over and over again. For those of you who want to know the future – it is basically the past again.

**The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there anything whereof it may be said, see, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.**

**Ecclesiastes 1:9,10**

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF HAVING A POWER MINISTRY**

If you cut out all of the scriptures on healing and miracles



from your Bible, you will discover that your Bible is totally destroyed! You will be destroying the Word of God. When you take out the scriptures concerning the power of God, you are left with a book on philosophy.

It is not only the teaching and preaching which helps God's people. God's children also want to receive a touch of His power. **It is important to add on the power dimension of miracles, healings and deliverance.** The Holy Spirit wants to manifest Himself and bless the people of God. You will discover that your people love to be prayed for. It is important for you to pray for your sheep and minister God's power to them.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF PASTORAL INDIVIDUALITY: FULFILL YOUR CALL**

It is very important for every pastor to fulfill his individual call. Don't look to the crowd. Don't think about what others are doing.

Many years ago when I started out in ministry, many people laughed at me. One pastor ridiculed me as I encouraged my members to go out and witness door-to-door. He sneered at me and said, "What is witnessing? What is door-to-door witnessing? We have moved on into higher realms of ministry!"

I answered, "It is an important Christian activity."

I stressed, "No matter how big you become in the ministry it is important to preach the gospel from house-to-house."

Today, that pastor who scoffed at me is struggling at the bottom of the ministerial ladder. Please do not allow anyone to drown your convictions. Be a man of conviction. Follow

the plan that God has given to you. Comparison is one of the dangerous practices of certain ministers. Please do not compare yourself with anyone else, it is too dangerous.

**For WE DARE NOT make ourselves of the number, or COMPARE OURSELVES with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.**

**2 Corinthians 10:12**

God told me not to compare myself with anybody. He showed me how certain ministers were uneducated and that His expectations of different people was varied. He also showed me that my background of prolonged education made Him give me a different standard. He told me that I would be wrong to compare myself with anyone else. The Lord also showed me that if I used other ministers as a standard that I may do far less for Him than I am supposed to. The Lord showed me that I would mistakenly think that I had “arrived” because I had used certain low standards that had been set by others. It is indeed a dangerous thing to compare yourselves with others. Paul said that he dared not compare himself with others.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MASSIVE ORGANIZED PRAYER**

Massive organized prayer involves gathering all of your leaders and/or members for intensive prayer. I do massive organized prayer on three levels. At the highest level, I frequently organize the senior ministers away from the city to pray for a few days.

At the level of cell leaders, we often decree what we call prayer sentences. Sometimes we “sentence” the shepherds to twenty hours of prayer within a three-week period. This means that they have to meet as a group and pray for twenty hours spread over three weeks. This is massive organized prayer – organizing prayer on a massive scale.

Finally, we involve the whole church in prayer. There are times we have all-night prayer and fasting meetings everyday for an entire week. I am always surprised when on a weekday the church is full at 2 a.m. Working people gather to pray intensively for church growth and breakthroughs.

There is no other way to make any progress in the ministry than to work in the realm of the spirit. The Bible says, “Epaphras was always laboring in prayer.” The principle of massive organized prayer is what you need to bring about a breakthrough in your ministry.

**Epaphras ...always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.**

**Colossians 4:12**

There are some people who see me as an administrator and a strategist. Anyone who knows me closely knows that as I write this book I do not even have a desk or an office. But I do have a study where I pray and I do have places where I spend time praying. There is no shortcut in the ministry. There is no other way than that which has been set by the Lord. There is no other example than that which has been set by Jesus. Peter said that he wanted to give himself to prayer and the Word. Prayer and the Word are more important than administration and strategies!

**But we will give ourselves CONTINUALLY TO PRAYER,**

and to the ministry of the word.

Acts 6:4

## THE PRINCIPLE OF USING LAY PEOPLE TO DO THE WORK

One of the great secrets of a large church is in the use of lay people or volunteer church workers. These volunteer workers can do most of the church work.

I have several pastors who are not paid a dime for all of their hard work. The Lord pays them Himself. They work very hard on Sundays and some evenings. They make huge sacrifices in their private lives in order to be pastors and shepherds. Many very big churches use this principle and are succeeding at it. May the Lord give you understanding and revelation concerning this vital principle.

**I am always saddened when I see a small church of one hundred people employing seven full-time pastors.** I often ask myself, "How much will one pastor be paid? Do the wives of these pastors work? Do they make enough money to survive?" Such environments are the breeding grounds for discontent and rebellious elements! Many church rebellions are related to money. When money is left out of the ministry, people are able to concentrate on the work of the Lord because they love God.

Many pastors in my church are doing well as lay pastors. If some of them were to come into full-time ministry, things may change. The church may be able to pay them enough but they may not be at the stage where they are ready for full-time ministry. New problems relating to salaries and income

levels may arise. These problems have the potential to disrupt the work of ministry.

I suggest this to every senior pastor: analyze the church conflicts you have ever had. Aren't most of them related to money? **Make use of unpaid people. They are the key to a peaceful and stable church environment!**

I see a ministry growing! I see your ministry growing! I see you rising up in the kingdom of God! I see you taking your place! I know the Lord is going to use you! He has determined to use you! The Mega Church is for you! The anointing is yours! Rise up with wisdom and possess what the Lord has placed before you!



# THE MEGA CHURCH

The Anointing and the Strategies.

## **CHAPTERS**

1. Why Have a Mega Church?
2. Let's Have Real Numbers!
3. The Coming of the Anointing
4. Understanding the Anointing
5. Steps to the Anointing
6. A Special Secret
7. What It Means to Catch the Spirit of the Ministry
8. How to Start a Church
9. Fight for Commitment
10. How to Develop Devoted Members
11. Retention Evangelism
12. How to Have Permanent Church Members
13. The Secret of Industrialization
14. Loyalty and the Mega Church
15. Special Principles for Church Growth

# **CHAPTER 1**

## **WHY HAVE A MEGA CHURCH?**

**Though thy beginning was small, yet THY LATTER END  
SHOULD GREATLY INCREASE.**

**Job 8:7**

Should our church be big or small? Many people feel happy in a small church. They often say it is cozier and more like a family. “We get to know each other and have better relationships.” These statements are true. But let us ask ourselves a question. Do we want to do what is cozy or do we want to do the will of God? God has shown us His will in His Word. **Your starting may be small but God is expecting your latter end to be greatly increased.** If it is not explicit in scripture, it is implicit throughout the Word.



**And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, THAT MY HOUSE MAY BE FILLED.**

**Luke 14:23**

In Luke 14, the Lord gave us an important revelation. The master said to his servant, "I need my house to be filled." The master in this story represents Jesus. Jesus wanted His house to be filled. In other words, Jesus wants His churches to be filled. God wants full churches! The master in this story was not content with having just a few people at his party. He could have had the party anyway, but he wanted many more people. And more especially he wanted the house to be filled.

Through this story, God is showing His will for the church. His will is more people! His will is filled rooms! His will is overflowing churches! His will is the MEGA CHURCH!

## **Our Harvest Field Is the World**

God did not send us to a suburb of your town. Neither did he send us to a few villages. He sent us to the whole world. If we had a small field to harvest from, then we could not expect a large quantity of harvested fruits.

**And he said unto them, Go ye into ALL THE WORLD, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.**

**Mark 16:15,16**

The fact that the entire world is to be reached implies that the harvest of souls that we will bring in must be very large. It will

definitely be a major portion of the world's population. If a major section of the world's population is to be saved through the preaching of the gospel, then every church should be bursting at the seams for lack of space. Remember that there are over six billion souls out there waiting for us to reach them with the Gospel.

## **The Work Stands Undone**

During the time of his ministry, Jesus made a very important statement.

**...The harvest truly is PLENTIEOUS, but the labourers are few.**

**Matthew 9:37**

This means there are plenty of winnable souls. There is plenty of work for us all. There are plenty of people to fill our churches.

## **Many Pastors Are Deceived**

Many pastors are deceived by the fact that their little halls are full. Many ministers feel that they have "arrived" in ministry. You receive a nice salary and have a nice car. God has blessed you and all your expenses are paid for. But this does not mean that you have "arrived". Do not let the devil blind your eyes to the real work we have to do. It is Satan who fans the church to sheep!! He whispers to the hearts of many ministers. "Everything is o.k." "This is it." "You have made it." "This is how far you can go." "This is everything you can achieve for God!" Such ministers have had their spiritual and visionary eyes blinded by Satan. The enemy

whispers to their heart, "Everything is okay. This is it! You have made it!"

Satan wants your church to remain small. The fewer people you have in your congregation the more captives he has.

**The size of your church shows you to what extent you are depopulating hell.** When you have a Mega Church, it means that you are establishing more souls. It also means that more souls have escaped from the clutches of the devil.

## **A Mega Church Releases Multiple Ministries**

It is important to desire to have a large church. Pastors must dream of having large congregations. A large church results in the multiplicity of many ministries. It results in the multiplication of several important activities in the church. For instance, it multiplies the ministry of music. Initially, our church had only one choir. Now we have no less than six choirs in addition to numerous other singing groups. What does this mean? It means that a large church has resulted in vital multiplication. It is the will of God that more of His children sing for him. The more singing groups we have, the more God is glorified. The number of choirs you have depends on the number of people in the church.

## **More Prayer Breaks the Power of the Prince of the Air**

**When you have a Mega Church, more prayer will go forth unto the Lord. Therefore, more people will be saved and established.**

When the Lord sent me to establish churches in Europe, he showed one key role that we were going to play in rebuilding His kingdom in that continent. You see, Europe has virtually become a nation of atheists. They have put God out of their minds. Many Europeans do not believe that God even exists.

Years ago, Europe sent out missionaries to the world. But now they have fallen to the lowest state of demonic blindness and godlessness. The Lord showed me that one of our duties as a church was to release prayer into the atmosphere concerning the Church in Europe. Our presence in countries like Switzerland, The Netherlands and England has resulted in much more intercession being made in those nations.

Our church in Geneva has all-night prayer meetings every Friday, praying from midnight until 6 a.m. They engage in spiritual warfare in a land where God is forgotten. As more churches like ours go into the nations, then more prayer will take place. This is one of the primary reasons why a large and branching church is important.

When the church I pastor, The Lighthouse Cathedral, grew to a certain size, we were able to successfully have all-night prayer meetings everyday. We have had so many small groups within the church that it was possible to setup a rotation so that one of these groups could have an all-night prayer meeting everyday. Thus, we had a different group praying every night. The larger the church the more prayer groups are created. More prayer is possible in a Mega Church! That is why the devil wants the church to remain small!

**A Mega Church Generates Large Crowds  
and Large Crowds Create Great**

## Expectation

**Through experience I have noticed that the larger the crowd, the greater the expectation.** When there is a large gathering of God's people, there is an air of excitement, expectation and real faith. Why is this? This happens because the faith of everyone is heightened by what they see. The sight of a large crowd inspires faith and creates excitement. The combined faith of the crowd is greater than the faith of just one person. That helps to draw out the gift of God from the minister.

I have preached to small groups and to very large crowds. The spiritual atmosphere of these two situations is often different.

**And as THE PEOPLE WERE IN EXPECTATION, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not.**

**Luke 3:15**

Whenever there is great faith, you can expect more power and miracles of healing. Jesus often said, "Your faith has made you whole." It is faith that generates the miraculous! I know some people will misunderstand me on this. I am not saying that God does not move in small congregations. I often minister in small congregations, and I see God moving in a wonderful way. God certainly does miracles in small churches. All I am saying is that generally speaking, when there are more people there is more faith, more expectation and therefore more miracles. I think even the simplest Christian can understand this simple logic. **A bigger church means more people, which means more faith, which means more power, which means more miracles, which results in more testimonies!**

Don't you want more glory, power and anointing to flow in your congregation? Dear pastor friend, believe God for a bigger church. With a bigger church, many more blessings will flow from the throne of God to His people.

**And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word WITH SIGNS FOLLOWING.**

**Mark 16:20**

## **A Mega Church Means More Evangelism!**

One of the side effects of having a larger church is that more evangelism takes place. Our Cathedral is divided into about fifteen chapels. Under each chapel, there are several ministries and under each ministry several fellowships. It is our policy that every ministry has at least one major outreach during each month. Since our church has many ministries, it is possible that fifty different outreaches by fifty different groups will be taking place at the same time at many different locations!

More soul winning has taken place simply because the church has grown larger. **It is God's will for your church to grow larger so that more souls will be won for the Lord.**

## **A Mega Church Leads to a Greater Income For the Gospel**

Having more people also means having a higher church income. If a church has a good pastor, the money of the church will be used for the right things. Unfortunately, some pastors are more like vampires – they suck the blood of the church, rather than pouring into the life of the ministry. A

higher income means many more spiritual goals are achievable. Money is not an evil thing. Money is neutral! It is the love of money that is evil! Money is a weapon in the hand of man. If a good man has money he will use it to do good things. A good minister will use the income of the Mega Church to build the church and promote the gospel!

I had a dream that we would one day have trucks driving around the nation, holding crusades in every town and village. Once upon a time, that was just a dream. Now, with a larger church we have been able to purchase a truck and have begun crusading all across the nation. How was that possible? We had more people and therefore more money, and we could do more for God!

## **A Mega Church Means More Laborers!**

There will always be a certain percentage of the flock who are real laborers. No matter what you do or say, a certain percentage of the church will not get involved in the real work of ministry. There will always be the spectators and observers. There will always be the commentators. The laborers will always be in the ministry. The larger the crowd you have, the more laborers will be sent forth. And the more easily you will be able to finance them.

**...The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will SEND FORTH LABOURERS into his harvest.**

**Matthew 9:37,38**

## **Special Ministries Develop Within a Mega Church**

As the church grows it becomes more diverse in its composition. This results in specialist ministries being developed. When you have a small church, there will usually be very few special ministries like a ministry to the poor, refugees, and to orphans. As the church becomes larger it is possible to get involved in some of these other areas. When a church is able to be involved in these special areas many blessings are released! Look at the blessings that are available to churches that minister to the poor.

**Blessed is he that considereth the poor: THE LORD WILL DELIVER HIM in time of trouble. THE LORD WILL PRESERVE HIM AND KEEP HIM ALIVE; and HE WILL BE BLESSED upon the earth and thou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies.**

**Psalms 41:1,2**

These are powerful blessings for those who are able to grow to the point where they minister to special needs. Often when a church is small, it does not have the capacity to reach out in these areas. Have a vision of building a Mega Church. Other special areas of ministry will develop within it. You will have people with the ministry of giving being released. There are churches which have men and women with a heart for financing the gospel.

**...he that giveth, Let him do it with simplicity.**

**Romans 12:8**

It is rare to come across church members who have the ability to make a difference in the church through their giving. Every pastor would love to have members who take care of major expenses for the church. In the earlier stages of our church's life I had no one who could do things like that. But now, there are people who have the ability and the ministry of giving.



Other special areas that can develop are ministries to the poor and to the disabled. I have a dream to establish an orphanage. I've had this dream for a long time. But, it will take a large and strong church to be able to support such a venture. If you have a hundred orphans in your orphanage, you have to pay for three hundred meals a day. You also have to buy clothes for a hundred people. You then have to pay the hospital bills for a hundred children. After that you have to pay several professionals to care for these motherless and fatherless people. I think that you will agree with me that it will take a truly Mega Church to setup such a ministry.

## **A Mega Church is Like a Nation**

**As the church increases in size it will become a powerful community. It virtually becomes a nation of its own.** Governments begin to fear the power and influence of a Mega Church, but they despise small churches. Governments know that a large church means a lot of people which means a lot of votes. The politicians fear the power of the masses. They know that popular opinion keeps them in power. They know that the pastors are influencing people's minds. Small things are easy to despise. The Bible says,

**For who hath despised the day of small things?...**

**Zechariah 4:10**

Politicians can no longer despise the reality of the kingdom of God when it is massive! They cannot attack the pastors in the churches when they know the number of people who they

lead.

Our church was once attacked and the walls around us were broken. The people behind the attack thought that they could get away with it easily. They did not appreciate the magnitude, strength and scope of influence of the church they were attacking. The “people behind the scenes” were very surprised when the attack led to a nationwide crisis. Several churches and the general public rallied together against the perceived attackers. The politicians had to move quickly to prevent nationwide demonstrations and civil unrest.

As you read this book, I want you to believe God for a Mega Church. I want you to receive the anointing to rise out of smallness into the largeness that God has destined for you.

## **More Beloveds, More Weddings... In a Mega Church**

You will be blessed with more weddings within your church. A healthy growing church is one that has numerous marriages taking place. I always pray for my members that they will find husbands and wives.

Years ago, when our church was much smaller. A young lady said to me, “My type of man is not in this church.” When I looked throughout my congregation, I realized that what she said was true. There was no suitable person for this woman to marry. Some years later she went ahead and married an unbeliever.

At another point another lady said, “There is no man who is old enough to marry me. So I’m going to a larger church where I can find a man to marry me.” You see, she was thirty-nine years old and there were no forty-year-old

bachelors in the church. All of the bachelors we had in our church were in their twenties and thirties. However, today we have had brides and bridegrooms of all ages. In a Mega Church, even people over the age of seventy have become bridegrooms and brides.

## **More Contacts, More Job... In a Mega Church**

**The larger the church the more contacts and “connections” can be made.** Let’s face it, many things in this world depend on “who you know!” You may get a breakthrough just because you belong to a certain church. I have employers in my church to who I can recommend potential employees. When our church was smaller, it was only full of students. Now, many people can find jobs through the church. People always like to stay in a place which leads to blessings and security. The church members enjoy these fringe benefits of making contacts and finding jobs.

Another benefit of a Mega Church is that it gives rise to large branches. Big branches are offshoots of the main stem. Many churches have branches or satellites. The larger the main church, the larger the branches will be. As your church grows larger it will make it possible for churches that spring forth from your ministry to become larger. I have noticed that our branches have grown larger as the main church expanded.

**...and shooteth out GREAT BRANCHES...**

**Mark 4:32**

## **25% – The Biblical Quota**

The Bible teaches us that the sower went out to sow the Word of God in a city. The result was that one out of four (25%) of his seeds yielded good results. If we win only a quarter of our cities to Christ, I can assure you that there will be no more half-filled churches.

It is time for the Church to achieve its biblical quota of twenty five percent of the population. How many people are there in your city? There are about four million people in the city of Accra, Ghana. According to my little theory, at least twenty five percent of them should have responded to the Word of God. This means that at least one million of these people should be safely established in the Church. However, I wonder how many people darken the doorways of church buildings in Accra every Sunday morning. Several thousands do, but I doubt whether it reaches our biblical quota of twenty-five percent of the population.

**And when he sowed, some [25%] seeds fell by the way side... some [25%] fell upon stony places... some [25%] fell among thorns... BUT OTHER [25%] FELL INTO GOOD GROUND and brought forth fruit...**

**Matthew 13:4-8**

If the church of God attains the twenty-five percent goal, there will be many many large churches scattered all over the city. Every church will have multiple church services from morning to evening. Calculate it for yourself! You will see that the Church is no where near attaining that twenty five percent goal. How many Born Again Christians attend church on a Sunday morning in your city? What is the population of your city?

Total citywide Born Again church attendance

= 25%      **??**

Total Population of your city

When I did this calculation for my own city, I realized that we were far from achieving the results of that “sower who went out to sow”. But I prophesy that churches shall be filled in the last days. The land shall be filled with Mega churches. God wants big churches because He is expecting at least twenty-five percent of the population to respond positively to our preaching.

**The glory of this latter house shall be greater than of the former, saith the Lord of hosts...**

**Haggai 2:9**

The Bible predicts that the glory, which means beauty, of the latter day church, will far exceed the glory of the former one. I believe that we are in that latter day. When I consider what the Lord has done in Ghana over the last fifteen years, I realize that God is bringing a greater glory to His end-time Church. The largest churches some fifteen years ago would be the youth groups of some of the Mega Churches that God has raised up today!

Let me share with you a very important secret. God does not work with only one person. The Spirit of God does not move in only one church. **If a pastor has been able to achieve great growth in your city, it is a clear sign that the grace of God is abundant for the work of church growth there.** People who think that God is only using one man are deceived! The Lord ministered powerfully to Ahab the king through Elijah the Tishbite (1 Kings 17,18,21). But there was another powerful prophet called Micaiah who was used to rebuke Ahab the king. God does not limit Himself to one man. Elijah himself made the mistake of thinking he was the only one who was faithful to God,

**And he said, I have been very jealous for the Lord God**

**of hosts: because the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant, thrown down thine altars, and slain thine prophets with the sword; AND I, EVEN I ONLY, AM LEFT;...**

**1 Kings 19:14**

But the Lord showed him that He had seven thousand other faithful prophets.

**Yet I have left me SEVEN THOUSAND IN ISRAEL, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him.**

**1 Kings 19:18**

Many big churches are springing up. God is raising up men and women of integrity to pastor His people. Flow in it. Catch the Spirit! You will also walk in the glory of the latter church. Learn the strategies of church growth. Obtain the power and the wisdom of God. Walk in love towards the brethren. Love even those who slander and betray you. Every great work of the Holy Spirit is as a result of love, unity and teamwork.

I really want to emphasize and stress this great truth that God does not work with one isolated person. Did you know that when Ezekiel was prophesying between 622-600 B.C., Daniel the prophet was also raised up and prophesied between 616-536 B.C. It was a time when God was moving through great prophets – people who yielded themselves to the call were used greatly in the ministry. Interestingly enough, Jeremiah also ministered between 685-616 B.C. You will notice that the time periods often overlap. This is because the Spirit of God does great works with many people at the same time.

Isaiah (792-722 B.C.), Nahum (786-757 B.C.) and Micah

(772-722 B.C.) were raised up in the ministry around the same period of time. You must buy into the move of God when the season comes. Zechariah and Malachi both prophesied about the end-times. Their ministries, interestingly enough, spanned the same period of time 557-525 B.C.

What am I trying to say? I am showing you that God is using many people to do the same thing in a particular season. He is building Mega churches now! Jump on the train and become the pastor that God wants you to be. Did you know that God moved in a Spirit of reform during the sixteenth century? Did you know that He did not only work through Martin Luther in Germany?

At the time as the Spirit of reform was flowing through the ministry of Martin Luther, the Spirit of reform was also flowing through a man called Zwingli in Switzerland. If Martin Luther had thought he was the only anointed reformist he would have been making a big mistake! God moves in waves! There is a wave of church growth right now. There is a wave of massive harvesting of souls! Get in on this move of God and allow God to use you to build a Mega Church!

Be open to learn new things that you do not know. A common statement in my church is, "You don't know everything! You and I are learning. Everyday of our lives should be a living classroom. Everyone you meet can teach you something!"

As we study the subject of church growth through the power and wisdom of God, decide that you can do it. Do not let the failures of yesteryear keep you down. Be a "Can-do man". Rise up in your spirit and say, "We are able to possess the land. We can do it!"

**...Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to overcome it.**

**Numbers 13:30**

When you say, "I can," the Holy Spirit will rise up to perform that which he has called you to do. **Remember you did not call yourself.** Faithful is he that called you and he will do it. **You are the believer and God is the doer.**

I remember when our church had only one member that owned a car. I was that member! I prayed, confessed and believed that we had ten people in our church who owned cars. After some time, I received what I believed God for. Believe that God who called you will do it.

**Faithful is he that CALLETH you, who also will DO it.**

**1 Corinthians 5:24**

I recall walking up and down the streets adjacent to the canteen we had rented for our church services. I spoke to the street and said, "Be filled with cars." I spoke to the empty benches and said, "Be filled with members." Today there are countless numbers of cars and members in our church.



## **CHAPTER 2**

# **LET'S HAVE REAL NUMBERS!**

If you read the back of this book, you will realize that I did not specify how many members I have in my church. There is an important reason for this. I believe in real numbers and have learnt that many people count the same thing differently! If I gave you a number, you may not know exactly how I arrived at that figure. Consequently, I may end up giving you the wrong impression.

**It is important for the credibility of pastors that we say what we mean and mean what we say.** I used to get confused by the numbers that certain pastors would claim to have in their churches. I have visited these churches at night and counted the chairs in their halls (I am an expert at counting chairs quickly). I would ponder, "How can they claim to have so many thousand members in their church?"

However, as I checked and rechecked the number of chairs, I realized that there was no way that those numbers could be accurate. Even with the addition of canopies and multiple services, there was no way that I could correlate the numbers that I heard with what I had actually seen. Maybe they were counting all the people who were present in spirit,

but not in the flesh. After all, Paul claimed that he attended the Corinthian church in spirit.

**For I verily, absent in body, but present in spirit...**

**1 Corinthians 5:3**

I could not bring myself to believe that the pastors were telling lies. I prefer to think that they were just counting in a different way. I realize that there are different ways of counting.

**There are seven types of counting that I have observed in the Body of Christ.** And I think it will do us all some good to know which type of counting is being used.

## **TYPE 1 COUNTING**

Type 1 counting is the count of the number of human beings physically present. It is the headcount of people in attendance. This is the headcount. **I believe this type of counting is the most informative of all the types of counting.** However, it is probably the least used type of count because it is usually the lowest! When I ask my data officer for numbers in the church, I get the type one numbers. I need to know Type 1 figures. I work best with Type 1 Counting. The fact is that only a fraction of your members come to church on Sundays. If you use the Type 1 Count, you are talking about a fraction of real number that God has given you to look after. In spite of this, I still prefer to work with Type 1 because it provokes me to work harder.

## **TYPE 2 COUNTING**

This is the total number of people on the church register.

Many churches quote this type two number as their membership. The type two count is larger or smaller depending on how far back the church will go in counting its registered members. The figure also depends on whether the church updates or revises its membership lists frequently. It also depends on how a church revises the membership list. Some churches have what we call active members. For some people, an active member is someone who attends a service at least once a month. For others it is someone who attends every Sunday service. I consider an active member to be someone who comes to church during the week, i.e., not only on Sundays. For others it is someone who belongs to a smaller cell group. All of these can vary the eventual outcome of the type two count. What this means is that my ten thousand may be different from your ten thousand. **That is why I prefer to stay with Type 1 Counting because there can be no variation in the method of counting heads who are actually present.**

Some pastors give a type two figure as their regular attendance. When you attend their church and see the actual number of people, you may be very disappointed. There is often a sharp contrast between the number of people physically present and the number of people the pastor claims to be his members. You may even think the pastor has a problem with lying or exaggeration.

I have seen situations where the type one count is as low as ten percent of what they claim to be their membership. The church may claim to have ten thousand members, but only one or two thousand are present in the service.

## **TYPE 3 COUNTING**

This type of counting is often used during conventions and crusades that run over a few days. It is the cumulative count. They count the total number of people that attend the meetings. For instance they could say that the convention was very successful, ten thousand people were in attendance. What they actually mean is that two thousand people came each night for five days! This type of counting is often misleading, as it does not give an accurate picture of the truth.

## **TYPE 4 COUNTING**

This is where the seating capacity of the building is used to estimate. Sometimes a building has a maximum capacity of three thousand. During a program, the pastor could say that there were three thousand people in church. This is because the whole church looked full, so the assumption was that three thousand people were there. This is a wrong assumption. A type one count could have easily revealed that only two thousand people were present. A hall, whose capacity is three thousand, can “look” full when only two thousand are present. Once again, this is why I feel that type one counting will help us all to know where we are and where we need to go.

## **TYPE 5 COUNTING**

This is when pastors give rough estimates. They try to give a reasonable assessment of the crowd. The pastor thinks he can assess the numbers present in the crowd. He estimates based on experience that there are about three hundred people present. Sometimes these rough estimations are

quite accurate but at other times they can be totally misleading.

The pastor of the local church is likely to give a higher type five count than the pastor of a sister church who is visiting and observing. The local pastor would say, "There are about two thousand people present." The visiting minister would say, "I think there are about one thousand two hundred people present." The visiting minister would not like his rival's church to look too big, so his figure would therefore be much more modest.

## **TYPE 6 COUNTING**

Type six counting is what I call wild and unreasonable guessing. Some years ago when we had about eight hundred people attending, I met someone in London who told me, "I heard you had a convention and there were seven thousand people present."

I asked him, "Who told you that?" He gave me the name of the woman who said that.

She had said, "I was in the meeting myself and there were about seven thousand people present."

I always wondered "How did she get the figure 'seven thousand'?" She must have had a shot at type six counting – wild guessing!

## **TYPE 7 COUNTING**

This type of counting aims at outdoing everyone else. A pastor mentions a figure that is higher than any other figure being mentioned in town. If the largest church in town is said

to be around five thousand, he will always have around six or seven thousand members. This pastor is suffering from the spirit of lying and exaggeration.

## **Is It Scriptural to Count?**

We need to ask ourselves – is all of this counting biblical? Is it scriptural to be concerned about numbers? Should we not be concerned about quality and not quantity? The answer is in implicit through the scriptures.

**Numbering was done in the Old Testament.** There is an entire book in the Bible dedicated to numbering – the Book of Numbers. In that book, the number of people, the number of soldiers and the number of tribesmen were recorded.

However, there was a time when God was angry with King David because he had numbered the people. It is clear from this that when numbering is done for the wrong reason it displeases God. For instance, if you put your faith and trust in your numbers, you are making a grave mistake.

**...for there is no restraint to the Lord to save by many or by few.**

**1 Samuel 14:6**

God will pull down whatever you put your trust in. He wants you to have your faith in Him and Him alone.

In the New Testament, different reports of numbering were mentioned. Everyone knows that Jesus had only twelve disciples. We know that Jesus sent out seventy disciples. It was reported that Jesus appeared to five hundred people after he rose from the dead. We also know that one hundred and twenty people were waiting for the Holy Spirit in the upper

room. The Book of Acts records that Peter ministered to three thousand people at one time. At another time, we know that five thousand responded to an altar call at Peter's crusade.

If these numbers were not important, then why were they recorded in the Bible? **God through the Holy Spirit was teaching us that the numbers of people involved in any spiritual event is a significant indicator.** The numbers are important. The Bible says that God will reward us for the quality of work we have done.

**Every man's work shall be made manifest... of WHAT SORT it is.**

**1 Corinthians 3:13**

But Luke 19 shows us that God will judge us for how much we have done in his name.

**A certain noble man went into a far country... when he was return having received the kingdom, he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know HOW MUCH every man had gained by trading.**

**Luke 19:12,15**

God is interested in what sort of work you are doing. But He is also interested in how much.

## **THE DANGERS OF COUNTING**

**The Pressure To Impress, Lie And Exaggerate**

Many pastors are under pressure to say things that sound impressive. If everyone around you claims to have so many thousand members, you can look foolish if you just have a few hundred. It's almost as though you have not been called by God. **God is not going to reward us because of the number of people in our churches. He is going to reward us for our faithfulness to Him.**

Once I attended a convention of a great church. I counted all of the people that were seated there. As I said, I have become an expert at counting seats or human beings very quickly. There were a few thousand people present. Later, I heard a claim from that pastor that several more thousand people had attended the meeting. This pastor was probably under pressure to impress and to exaggerate. I was there myself! I counted the human beings myself. Yet I heard a figure that was several times the reality.

**Perhaps the other thousands were present in spirit.** If the people you are counting are there in spirit, please tell us so that we stop looking for them in the physical!!

## **Self-deception and Complacency**

It is easy to deceive yourself if you use the wrong counting method. I heard one minister say, "The whole area outside the building was full." He continued, "People were sitting under canopies." That is how he knew that things were getting better. But that is deception. I have learnt not to trust this type of counting. I don't want to be self-deceived. I want to know the reality. When you are self-deceived, you think you are what you are not! You think of yourself more highly than you ought to, but this will lead to your downfall.



**...to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think...**

**Romans 12:3**

## **Discouragement**

You can also be discouraged when you count too often. Counting should be done so that you have a baseline figure you can use as a reference point. This will help you to know whether things have gotten any better over the months.

However, if you want to put on weight, I would not advise you to weigh yourself everyday. You will become depressed because you will not notice any change. Growth should not be and cannot be measured so frequently.

Church attendance can fluctuate so much that following it on a weekly basis can lead to a weakening of the pastor's heart. I have the Head Usher or Data Officer do a type one count every Sunday. But I only ask for the figures after several months have passed. This helps me to see if there is any improvement.

## **ADVANTAGES OF NUMBERING**

**Numbering Lets you know where you are.** When you know where you are, you can more readily plan your future. (When you know where you are, you know where you want to go.) It helps you to see the reality of what you are doing. It is easy to deceive yourself. Checking the true numbers will help you to move forward with God.

**Numbering helps to check backsliding.** There is a law of degeneration at work in this world. Everything starts to decay

the moment you take your eyes off it. The Bible teaches that you should look diligently to know the state of the flock.

**BE THOU DILIGENT TO KNOW THE STATE OF THY FLOCKS, and look well to thy herds. For riches are not forever...**

**Proverbs 27:23, 24**

Numbering is a diligent way of knowing the state of the flocks. When you are fed with the information that things are decaying, you will sit up! When you are stimulated by the veritable facts, it generates a greater vision within you to do God's work. It makes you rise up to build the kingdom of God.

One day I asked my data officer to tell me the attendance for that Sunday. He told me how many people were in attendance on that day. I was very discouraged because I thought it was a very small number after all of my years of hard work. However, when he added the total number of satellite and branch churches, the real fruit of the ministry became clearer to me and I was a bit more encouraged. I decided to start more churches and press on for more growth in the central church.

**Numbering stimulates growth and generates a new vision and compassion for the lost.** You become dissatisfied with smallness. It leads you to pray. Knowing the true number of people in my ministry has always made me pray more, fast more and seek God more often. You know that prayer changes things, and prayer can change those ugly numbers.

**Numbering the sheep has been a valuable tool for me to help monitor the increase and decrease of the church.** It will guide you when you need to emphasize on visitation

and when you need to judge yourself in areas that may be hindering growth.

## IMPORTANT NUMBERS

There are some important quantities that every pastor must always be constantly aware of. Each of these numbers has some significance. I have discovered that each meeting has its special role to play in the life and development of the church.

**The number of people physically present on Sunday mornings (type one count of Sunday service).** This number is only a percentage of your true membership. In a normal church a large number of people are absent on a given Sunday. This is why the number can fluctuate so much. The Sunday service attendance is the best number to use for monitoring progress in a general way.

**The number of people present at a weekday service.** This tells you the number of really committed members you have. Most serious Christians make time to attend church during the week. You will find that the anointing and flow of the Spirit is different on a weekday service. A corporate anointing manifests because of the gathering of faithful ones. Lukewarm and religious attendees do not dilute the atmosphere.

**The number of people present at small group or fellowship meetings.** This number shows you how developed the internal structure of the ministry is. There are some churches which can command thousands of people for a special convention, however they are not be able to mobilize fifty people on a regular basis for small group

meetings. It is important to have these small groups so that they can meet the needs of the members at a personal level.

**The number of people who attend fasting and prayer sessions.** This tells you the number of spiritual soldiers you have. This is very different from the swelled up convention attendance. It should be the goal of every pastor to build up a large core of spiritual warriors. These people may be more dependable.

**The number of people at a convention.** The convention crowd contains many people who are moved by excitement. There are many “miracle seekers” and “sign watchers” in attendance.

**The number of people absent at each church service.** This is a very important number. It tells you how many people are falling away. It is probably an indication of how hard the pastors and shepherds are working. Perhaps they are not being prayed for and they are not being visited.

**The number of people in the choir of the church.** The choir of a church is like the flower of a plant. It is often the part of the church that the outside world sees. It is often a reflection of the organizational skills of the church. It tells us how well the pastors are making use of the talents within the congregation.

**The number of people in the city where your church is located.** A church's size is always related to the size of the city in which they are situated. The largest churches in the world are found in the largest cities in the world. For example, if 0.1 % of people in Accra (a city of 3.5 million) are in the Lighthouse; then our church population would have to be three thousand five hundred. If the membership shoots up to six thousand, we would still form only 0.17% of the

population. This figure makes us relatively insignificant.

This figure must be determined every year for us to know how great an impact we are making in the city. If this percentage is insignificant, it must motivate us to have more visitations, more prayer, more fasting and more witnessing. It means that we must have more pastors, more shepherds, more churches, more ministries and more fellowships. We must invite more people, do more follow-ups, have more crusades and release more power.

**The number of people who give their lives to Christ every Sunday.** This tells you how conscious of lost souls the pastor is. It shows you whether members are inviting non-Christians to church. It tells us whether the church is fulfilling the Great Commission in getting people Born Again.

**The percentage of people who were saved in the church.** Occasionally it is interesting to find out how many people got saved in the church. This tells you how original the church is. Many of my members were saved at the Lighthouse Cathedral. Some churches are made up of breakaway members of other churches. Since this was the source of the majority of their members they often don't know how to win souls for themselves. Every church must know how to intentionally win souls and assimilate new converts.

**The number of new converts who are still in the church after two months.** This tells you whether follow-up is being done.

**The number of lay workers in the church.** This shows you how involved the general congregation is in the ministry. It tells you what percentage of the church is asleep. When a human being is asleep only eight percent of his body is at work. If only eight percent of your members are active, it

means your church is asleep.

**The number of people who pay tithes.** This is a reflection of the number of truly loyal people you have. The Bible says, "Where your treasure is there will your heart be." It tells you how many people in the crowd have their hearts solidly planted in the church.

**The number of people who attend the 31<sup>st</sup> December night service.** Traditionally, this is a very well attended service. From my experience, it is the best attended service in the whole year. Superstitious people run to the church so that God will see them in church as the New Year dawns. All of those you haven't seen throughout the year may finally show up on 31<sup>st</sup> December. The pastor is usually encouraged by the 31<sup>st</sup> December crowd. This swollen number usually regularizes within a few weeks.

## **CHAPTER 3**

# **THE COMING OF THE ANOINTING**

**...Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.**

**Zechariah 4:6**

One thing all of us must realize is that ministry is different from any other secular job out there. In the secular world, many things are important for success. Zerubbabel was trying to build the temple. We are trying to build the Church. Building the church and building the temple are one and the same thing. The instruction that applied to Zerubbabel applies to us.

The Bible is making it clear that it is not by any form of power that the Church will be built. **The Church will be built by the power of the Holy Spirit – end of story!** There are people who look at me and say, “Oh, he’s succeeding because he’s educated.” But it is not by the power of education. There are educated people in the ministry whose churches have not amounted to a “hill of beans”. It is not by education, it is by the anointing.

## **The Handsome Pastor**

I read a newspaper which said, “The pastor of the church is so handsome. That is why so many young ladies go there.” However, there are pastors who are not handsome per se, whose ministries have grown into thousands. Still others say, “Oh, it is their background.” “Oh, it is the location of the church.” “Oh, it is the wealth of the members.” “Oh, it is the exciting music.” “Oh, it is the instrumentalists.” Everybody tries to give a reason why something does or does not work. There are pastors who have said to me, “You have the strategies!” They think I have loads of hidden tactics to make my ministry work. Some people think I am a expert administrator that is how come things are working.

In this chapter, I will introduce to you the one most important factor that will make you start out and accomplish something substantial for God. I believe in education. I believe in administration. I believe in strategies. But above all, I have come to the conclusion that the prophet Zechariah came to – it is not by any form of might, it is not by any power, it is by my spirit says the Lord.

This Spirit is the same thing as the anointing. The Bible says in Acts 10:38, How God anointed Jesus Christ with the Holy Spirit. You will see from this scripture that the substance that God anointed Jesus Christ with was the Holy Spirit. Therefore, we can conclude that the anointing is the Holy Spirit.

We need the anointing to do the work. The ministry is not a human or natural thing. As soon as all ministers get that in their minds, the better it will be for them. When you see a successful minister, look beyond the physical and see into the realm of the spirit. Observe the anointing at work. There is an invisible cloak over that person which allows him to succeed in what he is doing. **That invisible mantle is what I call the anointing. It explains why some people succeed and some don't.** It explains why some people have greater degrees of success under exactly the same circumstances.

A pastor cannot oversee a very large church, unless he is anointed to do so. I have been in the ministry for over twenty years and I know from the Word and by experience that it is by the anointing and nothing else. Jesus told Pilate that all of the power he possessed was what God had allowed him to have. Nobody can have power unless God gives it to him.

**...Thou couldest have NO POWER AT ALL against me, except it were GIVEN THEE from above...**

**John 19:11**

I believe that God selects people and specifically anoints them to accomplish certain purposes. When I look back on my life, I can see that I was specifically anointed to do what I'm doing. This is different from a genuine in-filling of the Holy Spirit which every Christian has. Since the anointing is so



important, we must ask ourselves, “How do we get this vital ingredient?” **It is very important to realize that the anointing is not taught it is caught.** How does this special ingredient come onto a person? Is it something that we can all have or is it reserved for the special few? God is the one who introduces the anointing into the earth. He does it in His own sovereign way. I have noticed different ways by which the anointing is released on the earth.

## **TERMINATED TRANSFERRED ANOINTING**

In this type of transfer, a man of God's life is terminated and his anointing is transferred to someone else. The person who has received the anointing usually starts ministering after the death of the original anointed vessel. A good example of this is Joshua. Joshua became anointed to lead the people of Israel after Moses' life was terminated.

A transferred anointing is something that is moved from one person to another. **This transfer can occur when a man of God dies or leaves the scene. His mantle then falls directly on someone else.** The departure of Elijah from the scene resulted in the anointing on his life being transferred to Elisha. This resulted in the same anointing being present on the earth but operating through another human being.

God is concerned about finishing His work and will use whichever vessel is available. I call this terminated transfer because death terminates the life and ministry of one man and the anointing is transferred to another. This also happened under the ministry of Jesus. As soon as Christ

was off the scene, the anointing that operated through him whilst he was on earth began to function through his disciples. People were amazed. The only explanation that they could give for Peter and John's new charisma was their association with Christ.

**Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John... they MARVELLED; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

## **LIVING TRANSFERRED ANOINTING**

The next type of transfer is living transferred anointing. **In this case, the anointing on one person is transferred to someone else whilst that man of God is alive.** A man of God who is blessed with long life may see the anointing that is on his life working through others.

For example, the anointing departed from Saul and was replaced by an evil spirit. Meanwhile, his successor, David, was anointed while Saul was alive. Saul saw the anointing to be king on another man and was afraid of him. **This is a common occurrence in the ministry.** Even the prophet Samuel was afraid to anoint David while Saul was yet alive. He knew that it would provoke much jealousy and hatred.

**And the Lord said unto Samuel... fill thy horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite; for I provided me a king amongst his sons. And Samuel said, How can I go? IF SAUL HEAR IT, HE WILL KILL ME.**

**1 Samuel 16:1,2**

Some older men of God can see that their anointing has left them and moved on to another person. This sometimes makes the older man of God to fight the new one upon whom he sees the anointing. Have you not seen that in your city? The older and insecure men of God fight to keep their position, whilst God works through others. God allowed Saul to fight David in order to test David's character. All things do work together for good to them that are called.

## **ANOINTING SHARING**

**This is when God takes the anointing on one man and shares it with several other people at the same time.**

You will notice several men of God in the same era, operating in a similar way. In Bible times, several of the prophets lived and prophesied around the same time. God took of the anointing that was upon Moses and shared it amongst seventy people.

**...Gather unto me seventy men... and I will take of the spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them.**

**Numbers 11:17**

All seventy men were anointed. They shared in Moses' anointing and accomplished God's will. I have seen the anointing on my life being shared to many of my pastors. I can see them operating under the same anointing. I have watched them catch the anointing.

## **MODIFIED ANOINTING TRANSFER**

The next type of anointing transfer is what I call a modified

anointing transfer. **In this case, the anointing is transferred from one individual to another but in the process it is modified.** In such a case, the recipient of the anointing may be notably different in ministry from the one from whom the anointing was transferred. An example of this can be seen under the ministry of Moses and Joshua. It was Moses who laid hands on Joshua and imparted the Spirit (anointing).

**And Joshua the son of Nun was full of the spirit of wisdom; for Moses had laid his hands upon him...**  
**Deuteronomy 34:9**

Basically, Joshua was anointed to do battle and take over new lands. Moses did not conquer any new lands, however you could see a similarity between Moses and Joshua. Joshua crossed the River Jordan using the “Red Sea crossing anointing” which he had received from Moses. He ruled the people with the authority of Moses. But apart from this and a few other occurrences Joshua was quite different from Moses.

## **DIMINISHING ANOINTING TRANSFER**

**The diminishing anointing transfer occurs when the anointing from is passed to another but is reduced in its strength and glory.** It is often God's way of fading out a particular ministry.

You will see a clear example of this under the ministries of King David and King Solomon. David's kingly anointing was transferred to his son Solomon and then to Rehoboam and Jeroboam. Solomon's sons did not have the grace of God on

their lives to rule over all of the twelve tribes of Israel. We cannot even remember the names of the other kings who lived after Solomon. **This is because the kingly anointing was fading as the years passed.** God showed Solomon, before he died that the anointing on his son Rehoboam would be greatly diminished.

**But I will take the kingdom out of his son's hand [Rehoboam] and will give it unto thee even ten tribes. And unto his son will I give one tribe.**

**2 Kings 11:35,36**

Some American universities started out as Christian institutions with a Christian vision. Today there is not even a trace of Christianity in some of those colleges.

## **ENHANCED ANOINTING TRANSFER**

This is when the anointing transfer from one person to the other is upgraded. For example, Elisha had twice as much of the anointing that Elijah had and performed twice as many miracles. This type of anointing transfer is unusual. You will notice that Elijah told Elisha that he had asked for a hard thing, that is, to have an enhanced anointing transfer.

**...Thou hast asked a hard thing...**

**2 Kings 2:10**

## **FORMER ANOINTING REINTRODUCED**

This type of anointing transfer can be seen in the case of

John the Baptist and Elijah. God decided to reintroduce the Elijah anointing through a man called John the Baptist. This is because God was doing a work, which needed a dramatic Elijah-type of ministry.

**And if you will receive it this [John] is Elias, which was for to come.**

**Matthew 11:14**

**I believe that some of the apostolic and prophetic anointings of the early Church are being reintroduced into the Church at this time.** There is therefore a resurgence of the miraculous and the prophetic. There are much larger churches with ministers preaching to three thousand and five thousand members like Peter did in the Book of Acts.

The Bible predicts that two prophets with a peculiar anointing will arise in the Last Days to challenge the anti-christ. The Bible says that these two prophets will do certain things. A closer look at the ministry of these two Latter Day prophets reveals a great similarity between their anointings and those of Moses and Elijah. Once again this is the principle of the reintroduced anointing at work.

These two prophets will have power to call down fire from heaven. They will also have power over the weather to prevent it from raining for three and a half years. This sounds very much like Elijah. The Bible also says that they will have power to turn water into blood and command plagues to appear at random. Once again this sounds like the anointing that was on Moses.

**And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and three score days in sack cloth. These are the two olive trees and**

the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, FIRE PROCEEDETH OUT of their mouth and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them he must in this manner be killed. These have power to SHUT UP HEAVEN, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over WATERS TO TURN THEM TO BLOOD and, to SMITE THE EARTH WITH ALL PLAGUES, as often as they will.

Revelations 11:3-6

Once again, it looks like God is reintroducing a former anointing in order to do a vital job. **The anointing on Moses' life was introduced to fight against a despotic and repressive Pharaoh. The anointing on Elijah's life contended with one of Israel's most detestable and incorrigible kings, Ahab.**

The Anti-Christ, one of the most tyrannical and evil men the Bible speaks about, will need to be trounced by a combination of these two strong anointings. Perhaps the Anti-Christ himself will combine the evil spirits that worked through both King Ahab and the Pharaoh.

You will learn from this study that God does specific things for specific reasons. You may want a miraculous ministry to impress people but God wants to fulfill His purpose. He may not want you to do any miracles. All He may want you to do is to teach His Word. John the Baptist did not perform any miracles but he fulfilled his ministry. He prepared the way for the Christ. Jesus said John the Baptist was the greatest prophet.

**Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist...**

Matthew 11:11

You can only line up with God's purpose. God will not do anything outside His purpose. When you fulfill God's purpose for your life, Jesus will call you "great". Find out the purpose of God and flow with it. It is the purpose of God that will be achieved at the end of the day, and not your purpose.

**THIS IS THE PURPOSE THAT IS PURPOSED upon the whole earth: and this is the hand that is stretched out upon all the nations. For the Lord of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?**

**Isaiah 14:26,27**

## **A NEW AND ORIGINAL ANOINTING**

In this case, a person comes on the scene and God anoints him to do new things. This is not very common! A study of the Bible will show you that God rarely introduces a new and original anointing.

The more common way by which God introduces anointing is through people. Elijah the Tishbite is somebody who appeared with what I believe was a new and original anointing.

Two other people, Elisha and John the Baptist, have operated in the same anointing that was on Elijah. The difference, was that Elijah, was walking in a new and original anointing! Elisha was walking in an enhanced transferred anointing and John the Baptist was walking in a reintroduced anointing.



## **CHAPTER 4**

# **UNDERSTANDING THE**

# ANOINTING

It should be the desire of every real minister to catch an anointing. Without the anointing, your ministry is reduced to philosophy and your church to an ideological institution. If you want to have a big church you need an anointing. If you want to teach the Word you need an anointing. If you want to be a prophet you need to be anointed. Without the anointing, you are no nearer being a minister than I am to becoming the Prince of Wales.

There are a few important facts that people need to know about catching the anointing.

## It Is Difficult To Get An Anointing

**...Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, that a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said, THOU HAST ASKED A HARD THING...**

**2 Kings 2:9,10**

Although this scripture is usually referred to in terms of being anointed with a double portion, I believe that it also refers to the act of receiving an anointing. **It's a hard thing because few people have the anointing.** Many people try to get it, but few succeed. I can see why it is a hard thing.

Why is it that there are few doctors (relatively speaking) in the whole world? The answer is simple. It is because it is a "hard thing" to become a doctor. Many would like to be doctors, but few end up becoming doctors. In Ghana, like other countries, it is only the very best students who gain

entry into the medical schools.

As I look around, I realize that there are not so many “truly” anointed ministers. Many may call themselves pastors, but few are really anointed to stand in that office. If they were anointed we would both know and see it. Though many have certificates and qualifications from Bible schools, few are actually anointed. This leads us to ask, “Why is it such a difficult thing to be anointed?”

## **You Must Have a Strong Desire for the Anointing**

I want to show you why it is such a difficult thing for you to be anointed. **One reason why God does not readily give his anointing to just anyone is because the anointing is the Holy Spirit (God Himself).** The Holy Spirit is a precious gift from God to the Church. However, God does not haphazardly bestow that higher anointing needed for ministry on anyone. God does not cast His pearls before swine – you wouldn’t! If you don’t value the anointing God will not give it to you!

I once had an old car that I had used for a number of years. I wanted to give it to somebody. I searched earnestly for someone whom I could give it to. I knew that the car was very valuable and would cost millions of Ghanaian cedis (thousands of dollars) on the open market. However, because the car was slightly used I knew that if I gave it to the wrong person, he could mistakenly think I was getting rid of a worthless wreck. He would not appreciate it at all. Because of this, it took me a longtime to decide whom to give it to.

There were many around me who desperately needed a car.

But because I wasn't sure whether they would appreciate it or not, I decided to give it to a particular person. When I eventually gave the car away, I was happy with his response to the gift. I felt that he genuinely appreciated it. I am sure there were people who wondered why I didn't give the car to them.

**God has a very precious commodity! He is looking for someone who really wants it and will appreciate it.**

Often, those who should be obvious recipients miss out on the blessing. The anointing then passes on to someone else, to the surprise of others.

Many wonder why God anointed someone like me. A pastor once stood in my pulpit and was overwhelmed by the huge crowds. He said, "The tables are turning. Many people are asking, 'Why Dag? Why is God using Dag?'" He was surprised that God had given me an anointing. Perhaps, in his estimation I shouldn't have received it.

Have you ever asked yourself why God loved Jacob and hated Esau?

## **Jacob Desired the Anointing**

**As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.**

**Romans 9:13**

Was Jacob not a heel snatcher and a deceiver? He was, but he desired the anointing. Often other earthly desires drown the desire for the anointing. You may be surprised that not meeting this qualification (of desiring the anointing) eliminates many people as it did with my car gift.

Jacob strongly desired the birthright (anointing), but Esau did not care much about it. Something that should worry us is the fact that God hated Esau. **If God hated Esau, then it is possible that God can hate you!** If God hated Esau because he didn't care about the gift, then God can hate you because you don't care about the gift of His anointing. People have wondered why God used Kathryn Kuhlman, a healing evangelist. She married someone else's husband and later on divorced him. I believe that she strongly desired the anointing.

## **God Anoints the Desirous**

**God will pass over a thousand people who don't care much for the anointing and will give it to a person who strongly desires it.** I see God passing over many people to get to you now!

Did you know that Elijah's first servant was not Elisha? Did you know that Elijah's first servant was bypassed when it was time to be anointed? This servant was active in ministry but he was not chosen to be anointed by God. It was this servant who Elijah sent seven times to see if the rain clouds had appeared?

**...And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees, And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go again seven times**  
**1 Kings 18:42,43**

Why did this servant not receive the anointing? Why did Elisha, who was not even in the ministry, receive the anointing? Elisha was involved in business. He was plowing a field with his other business partners.

**So he departed thence, and found Elisha the son of Shaphat, who was plowing with twelve yoke of oxen before him, and he with the twelve...**

**1 Kings 19:19**

What happened to the servant? Why wasn't he anointed? Why didn't he become the next great prophet? Please learn this important principle right now! God will pass over a thousand people who don't care much for the anointing and will give it to a person who strongly desires it.

Desire the anointing more than anything else in this world. That is the first step to becoming anything in the kingdom of God. God told Pastor Timothy to look for people with a desire to be bishops. **It is people with strong desires who get spiritual gifts.** Paul said,

**Follow after charity, and DESIRE SPIRITUAL GIFTS**  
[anointing]...

**1 Corinthians 14:1**

If we could paraphrase this, it would say, "desire the anointing".

**But COVET [desire] earnestly the best gifts..**

**1 Corinthians 12:31**

## **You Can Desire a Minister's Anointing**

I have learnt that you can specifically desire the anointing you see on particular man of God. You can covet the gift that God has given to him. This is possible because Elisha specifically requested the anointing that he saw on Elijah.

Look around and see which man of God's ministry or gift you would like to have. I see that gift coming on you now!

Why would God tell you to desire something you cannot have? **The anointing is the principal tool for ministry. Without the anointing, all of your Bible school knowledge and certificates are useless.** You need an anointing. Anointing does not come by going to school. Anointing is not taught, it is caught!

When I was coming up in ministry, I did not know what I am teaching you now. God led me personally into this revelation. I loved the ministries of certain men and I followed hard after them. The anointing that I unknowingly coveted began to operate in my life. I will share more about this later. God often uses a man or several different men to impact your life with the anointing.

When you have decided which gifts and anointing to covet after, there are several hard steps or filters that you will have to go through. I call them filters because as people go through them, many "drop out". There are people who desire the anointing but never get it. It is because they are not able to pass through these tests. The steps are filters, which differentiate between the receivers and all others.

# **CHAPTER 5**

## **STEPS TO THE ANOINTING**

### **THE PRINCIPLE OF VESSEL CHANGE**

Anointing is like a liquid that is poured into a vessel. Every liquid has a corresponding bottle or vessel. For instance, Coca-Cola will only be found in Coca-Cola bottles. Sprite has its own bottle. In order to be filled with Sprite you need to be a Sprite bottle. This is because specific fluids are associated with specific bottles. It is the same thing with the anointing.

**Specific anointings are associated with certain types of people.** An evangelistic anointing will go with a certain type of personality and character. A pastoral anointing will fit into a certain type of vessels. The Bible says that in a large house there are many type of vessels. You and I are these vessels.

**But in a great house there are not only VESSELS OF GOLD and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.**

**2 Timothy 2:20**

If we want to be filled with a Coca-Cola anointing we need to be Coca-Cola bottles, so that the anointing will fit into us. If you study the prophet Elijah, you will see a particular kind of anointing on his life. The prophetic anointing (1 Kings 18:36)



on Elijah's life led him to do certain things. **The anointing allows you to achieve certain things.** He rebuked the kings of his day (1 Kings 21:17-20), fought with religious leaders (1 Kings 18:20-24), challenged sins and evil, was dramatic (1 Kings 18:30-39), and had his ministry ended by a woman, Jezebel (1 Kings 19:3,14,16).

**The Bible tells us that John the Baptist operated in the same prophetic anointing as Elijah (Luke 1:76).** We therefore see John the Baptist, rebuking the king of his day (Mark 6:17-20), confronting religious leaders (Matthew 3:7-10), fighting sin and evil and having a very dramatic ministry (Luke 3:7-14). We also see his ministry terminated by a woman, Herod's wife (Matthew 14:6-10). This was the anointing of Elijah at work.

Elijah's anointing operated in John's life because he was changed into a vessel that could receive it. Note that both John the Baptist (Mark 1:4) and Elijah (1 Kings 19:4) lived in the desert. Both Elijah and John the Baptist ate weird things – locusts (Matthew 3:4) and worms (1 Kings 17:6). Both John the Baptist (Matthew 3:4) and Elijah (2 Kings 1:8) wore clothes made of camel's hair.

To receive such a heavy prophetic healing anointing such as that on Elisha, a person cannot have problems such as lying, stealing and covetousness. The anointing of Elisha does not fit into lying and covetous vessels. Unfortunately, Gehazi did not pass the test of lying and stealing. He lied and misrepresented Elisha! If a prophet is a liar, how will you know when he is speaking the Word of God? How would you know when he is speaking his own mind? Although Gehazi was close to the anointing, he did not obtain it! Elisha eventually cursed Gehazi for his unethical behavior as a prophetic student.

**The leprosy therefore of Naaman shall cleave unto thee, and unto thy seed for ever. And he went out from his presence a leper as white as snow.**

**2 Kings 5:27**

**If you desire a particular anointing, God will mould you into the type of vessel can contain that anointing.** If God wants you to be a great pastor, he may work on your education. He may work on your knowledge of administration and law. To receive the anointing you must allow Him to work on you! Some people are not educated, yet they do not educate themselves by reading. Yet, they desire the anointing to be leaders of large numbers of people. Don't you know that pastoring a large number of people means that you will have several highly educated people in your congregation? How will you relate with all of these people?

God may be working on your language. He may try to polish your manners and general etiquette! He may send you to a Bible school for training. He may send you off to a secular university for molding. I had seven years of university training. These years molded me into a suitable vessel. God may take you through various humbling experiences. All that He is doing is to prepare a vessel that can handle the anointing. This is the principle of vessel change.

If you desire a strong prophetic anointing, God is likely to require of you a life of solitude. You cannot have such an anointing if you do not make time to wait on the Lord. You see, many changes may have to take place in your character and moral life if God is to use you for great achievements.

**Those who refuse to change and to modify are refusing**

**to be recipients of the anointing.**

This first step alone can explain why many people desire the anointing but never get it. Nobody pours Coca-Cola into a fuel tank. It is only petrol that is poured into a fuel tank. **If you are a fuel tank you will never receive Coca-Cola – you will receive fuel!** There are different containers for different anointings. Please accept this simple reality.

## **SERVANTHOOD**

Throughout the Bible, those that received an anointing were servants. Joshua was a servant of Moses.

**Now after the death of Moses the servant of the Lord it came to pass, that the Lord spake unto Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' MINISTER [servant]...**

**Joshua 1:1**

Elisha was a servant of Elijah.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, which POURED WATER [servant] on the hands of Elijah.**

**2 Kings 3:11**

Peter, James and John were the servants of Christ.

**HENCEFORTH I CALL YOU NOT SERVANTS [the disciples were ushers, bodyguards and errand boys]; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends...**

**John 15:15**

The position of a servant is a humbling one. You do not have

your own mind! You must work for your master, taking him to be right all of the time. When you become a servant, you are like a grown up child, ready to receive every instruction that is meted out to you.

No one is above the Word of God. **If Joshua had to be a servant before he became an anointed General, so will you.** This is another reason why some people never become anointed. They are simply too big to ever become servants of anyone. They are so conscious of their age and position in society. They feel that their status must be constantly recognized. No wonder God has raised up many young people to receive an anointing. Many old dogs could not be taught new tricks.

Although God has given me several thousand people in my ministry, I have been a servant for many years. **I have served as an usher, drummer, arranger, sound technician and organist.** There is hardly any department of the church, in which I have not been a servant.

I marvel at those who want pastoral positions based on their having a Bible School diploma. They are no nearer becoming pastors than I am to living on Mars. Some people just attend services and want to be appointed elders in the church, without serving their way to the top. These are the signs of a servant. Ask yourself if you are a servant or a boss.

## **SIGNS OF A SERVANT**

§ A servant has a master.

**A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master...**  
**Malachi 1:6**

§ A servant is at the beck and call of his master.

**For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.**

**Matthew 8:9**

§ A servant is one who executes the command of another.

§ A servant cannot be inconvenienced by any job or task.

§ A servant does not see himself as equal to his master. He doesn't say things like, "We are all classmates. We are all engineers. We all have children."

**Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God.**

**Philippians 2:6**

§ A servant carries out the wishes of his master.

**Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again;**

**Titus 2:9**

§ A servant cannot be embarrassed by his job.

**...And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.**

**Philippians 2:8**

§ A servant does menial jobs: picking up crumbs, serving food.

**When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

**...Elisha the son of Shaphat, which poured water on the hands of Elijah.**

**2 Kings 3:11**

§ A servant sets up his master while he stays below.

**He must increase, but I must decrease.**

**John 3:30**

§ A servant does not expect thanks or acknowledgment.

**So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.**

**Luke 17:10**

§ A servant does what his master wants in the way his master wants it.

**...Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams.**

**1 Samuel 15:22**

§ A servant ministers to his master of his substance.

**And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna, the wife of Chuza**

**Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, WHICH MINISTERED UNTO HIM OF THEIR SUBSTANCE.**

**Luke 8:3**

§ A servant has a reward.

**Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name.**

**Philippians 2:9**

**Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.**

**Hebrews 12:2**

## **RECEIVING A FATHER**

When God leads you to follow after a man of God, (like Elisha followed Elijah) it is important for you to receive him as a father. You will notice from the story of Elisha that he had an earthly father called Shaphat.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat...**

**2 Kings 3:11**

However, by the time Elijah was taken away, Elisha referred to Elijah as his father. He did this effortlessly and naturally.

**And Elisha saw it, and he cried, MY FATHER, MY FATHER...**

**2 Kings 2:12**

Why is it important to receive your man of God as a father?

What does it mean? I want to bring to your attention two very important reasons why you must receive him as a father.

**Firstly, a person who does not have a father is very different from someone who has parents.** A person with a father receives guidance and direction in life. A fatherless person has a life full of struggles.

I never worked whilst I was in university. My father provided for me fully until I became a doctor. The money he gave me each month as a student was even more than my salary when I became a doctor. My father bought me a brand new car when I was in the fifth year of medical school. I was really blessed to have a good father looking after me. **My life as a student was struggle free because I had a father!** However, the same can not be said for many people.

I have met countless people who did not receive guidance in life. They threw away their talent and became non-entities in life, because there was no father to guide them. I know many people who do not even know their fathers.

The situation is worse for an orphan! **Struggles abound for orphans.** The future of an orphan is very uncertain. It is the same thing in ministry. When you have no one to influence you in the right way, your ministry is full of various struggles. Although I have had different fathers in ministry, there are times I have been fatherless as far as developing into a pastor was concerned.

I have had fathers in ministry from afar. I have gone through various struggles because I have not received support from nearby and potential fathers. Many of the struggles and frustrations I've experienced in ministry are because I had no one to help me in starting a church.



In fact, people who should have been as fathers to me when I was beginning my church were more of outright enemies. They opposed my cause and fought against me. Today some of these people are always eager to claim fatherhood over my life because I am successful in ministry.

**The second reason why it is important to have a father is because inheritance flows naturally from a father to his children.** In the ministry, spiritual inheritance flows naturally from the fathers to the sons. When my father died, his will was read in Court. He left his properties to his children. Although he had many employees and friends he didn't leave anything to them – it all went to his children. Dear friend, that is the reality of life. Inheritance usually goes to children.

There is something known as a spiritual inheritance (Ephesians 1:18). **This spiritual inheritance of anointing and gifts passes naturally from fathers to sons.** It does not pass from father to equals, colleagues and friends. It does not even pass from father to servants. It passes from fathers to sons.

## **Hello “Boss”**

I used to have a junior pastor who preferred to call me “boss”. I always felt uneasy when he called me “boss”, but I didn't know why. You see, when someone calls you “boss”, it means that he sees himself more as a hired hand. A few years later this pastor departed under unpleasant circumstances. Then I realized why I had felt uneasy. A servant or an employee does not stay around forever. He's only there for awhile and will leave when it suits him.

**And the servant abideth not in the house for ever:**

**but the Son abideth ever.**

**John 8:35**

**So, if you have a relationship with a man of God which becomes a father-son relationship, then you can expect a spiritual inheritance of anointing to flow effortlessly from him to you.**

**How do you receive someone as a father?** When someone is your father he can speak freely into your life and you trust what he says. A child usually believes that his father really cares for him, no matter how much the father disciplines him. If you have doubts in your mind about someone, or are suspicious of him, that person cannot be a father to you.

A pastor can remain as a good man of God to some people, but to others he becomes a father. When a person becomes a father to you one of the main features is an attitude of fullest trust in him. That attitude makes you admire and open up to him. You can never really open up your spirit to someone unless you trust him.

**Maintain great respect and admiration for anyone you want to receive as a father.** Our father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name (Matthew 6:9). Let the will of your father in ministry be done. If he says to you to pray and to fast, because you believe it is for your own good, allow that thing to happen.

Finally, accept the father's position and authority. Every time we pray the Lord's prayer, we end it by saying, "thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory." We constantly affirm the position of our heavenly father. In the same way, every son must overcome the temptation to fight his father's authority and rule. **Never fight a father, it is a dangerous violation.**

Instead, give the honor to the fathers.

**The eye that mocketh at his father, and despiseth to obey his mother, and ravens of the valley shall pick it out, and the young eagles shall eat it.**

**Proverbs 30:17**

## **FOLLOW THE MAN OF GOD CLOSELY**

Another important step is to follow the man of God closely. All the examples of people who received anointing stayed close to their mentors. Elisha stayed with Elijah to the very end. Elijah tried on many occasions to get Elisha to stay behind, but he followed him to the very end. It was at the end that he caught the anointing. There are two ways you can follow a man of God closely.

### **Physical Association and Close Interaction**

The first way is through physical association, close interaction and personal acquaintance with the anointed servant of God. Joshua associated with Moses as his personal servant and minister.

**...Joshua the son of Nun, MOSES' MINISTER...**

**Joshua 1:1**

Elisha desired a double portion of the anointing on Elijah's life. He knew that through service to the man of God he could obtain the anointing he desired. Elisha became known as the person who physically washed the hands of Elijah. Close association of this sort may lead to a transfer of anointing.

**Here is Elisha the son of Shaphat, WHICH POURED WATER ON THE HANDS** [cleaned and ministered] **of Elijah.**

**2 Kings 3:11**

## **Follow His Words Closely**

The second way by which you can follow a man of God is to follow his words closely. Not many people will have the privilege of interacting personally with their mentors. So how can anyone catch an anointing on a great man of God? The answer is simple. Is it the pouring of water or the doing of menial jobs that leads to a transferring of an anointing? The answer is no! **The physical interaction exposes you to his words.**

Jesus said to his disciples, the words that I speak to you, they are Spirit (anointing) and life. **The anointing is in the words.** The disciples of Jesus soaked in the words of their master until he left them. **They took his words seriously because he had told them that the anointing was in the words.** Thank God that today the words of anointed ministers are available in books, tapes and videos.

**...the WORDS that I speak unto you, they ARE SPIRIT** [anointing], **and they ARE LIFE.**

**John 6:63**

The anointing enters you as you listen to the word. The word is not just some philosophical discourse. It is different from a lecture in college. The word is able to impart an anointing into your life. Look at this amazing scripture in Ezekiel! The prophet said he could feel the anointing enter him as the Lord spoke to him.

**And THE SPIRIT ENTERED into me WHEN HE SPAKE  
UNTO ME...**

**Ezekiel 2:2**

I have always wanted the opportunity to live and serve certain men of God. But that opportunity was never practical. However, following some of these men through videos, tapes and books has greatly blessed my life and ministry. The fact that you are reading this book is evidence that an anointing I received some years ago is real.

The Bible records that Elisha soaked in the words of his spiritual father. Elisha didn't just wash Elijah's hands. He didn't just wash and clean in the house. Just like Jesus and the disciples, Elisha and Elijah engaged in lots of important conversation.

**And it came to pass, as they still went on, and TALKED...**  
**2 Kings 2:11**

Decide to stay close to the very end until the anointing which you desire is flowing through your ministry. Elisha walked so closely to Elijah that God had to separate them Himself. Don't allow anyone to separate you from your spiritual father. Do not allow circumstances to keep you away from your man of God.

**...there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire,  
and PARTED THEM BOTH ASUNDER...**

**2 Kings 3:11**

## **SPIRITUAL MINISTRATIONS**

We must be careful not to make any mistakes. God will give you the anointing. No man can give you the anointing. Yet, He does it through men. It is important to pray and ask for the anointing.

**If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?**

**Luke 11:13**

Another way you can receive the anointing is through the laying on of hands. The laying on of hands is a foundational doctrine of the Church. It is the principal way in which an impartation or gift is given. It is such an important procedure that God tells us not to hurriedly impart gifts through the laying on of hands.

**LAY HANDS SUDDENLY ON NO MAN, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.**

**1 Timothy 5:22**

Timothy, the pastor, had hands laid on him and received spiritual gifts. The Bible plainly declares that he received the gift of God through the laying on of hands.

**Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the PUTTING ON OF MY HANDS.**

**2 Timothy 1:6**

This means that the manifestation of the gift and anointing must have begun to operate in Timothy's life after hands were laid on him. Thank God for the preaching of the Word of God. There is a place for the laying on of hands. The disciples received an anointing when Jesus breathed on them and said,

**...Receive ye the Holy Ghost:**

**John 20:22**

These different spiritual ministrations are ways by which God can impart His gift to you.

## **THE PASSAGE OF TIME**

Time is a very important element in the development of any ministry. The Word of God teaches us that Jesus adds to our gifts when He recognizes that we are faithful to what He has given to us.

**He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.**

**Luke 16:10**

With the passage of time your faithfulness will be tested. Your faithfulness will provoke God to give you additional gifts and a greater anointing. You will discover that certain realms are inaccessible to you until "time" elapses. **Unfortunately, there is no substitute for the test of time.**

Some years ago, I tried to raise the dead but I did not succeed. I often wondered why God did not honor me then. If He had, I probably would have backslidden by now. I now see certain things happening in my ministry, which I didn't see before. If I had had that level of anointing some years ago, it could have destroyed me. It is important to trust God to allow time to pass so that He Himself can lift you up at the right time.

## **MINISTER TO THE MAN OF GOD**

The last but not the least step I want to share with you concerns ministering to the man of God with your substance.

**And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna, the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, WHICH MINISTERED UNTO HIM OF THEIR SUBSTANCE.**

**Luke 8:3**

You must be able to minister to the man of God out of your own substance. If money is a problem to you then you cannot be a minister. The Bible teaches that people who have been taught should share their good things with those who teach them.

**Let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.**

**Galatians 6:6**

The man of God will minister spiritual things to you and you will minister back to him in physical things. The anointing is provoked when you minister to the man of God. Anytime I have had the opportunity to be near those who have been a blessing to me I have ministered to them out of my substance.

When the woman with the alabaster box of ointment ministered to Christ, he said that she would be remembered. When you pour an "alabaster box" on a man of God you will provoke a blessing and be remembered. **Your ministry will have a longer life span as you decide to honor those**



**before you. Your ministry will be remembered by many.**  
You will provoke the favor and anointing of God over your life.

Notice what great men like Abraham did when they met up with greater men of God. They immediately ministered to the man of God out of their substance.

**And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. And he blessed him... And he [Abraham] gave him tithes of all.**

**Genesis 14:18-20**

## **CHAPTER 6**

# **A SPECIAL SECRET**

I had no formal training in the ministry, no Bible school and little contact with any great man of God (and lots of critics). Some of the men of God I came into contact with, ended up opposing and fighting the call of God on my life. I had no option but to tap into the anointing that was on other more distant men of God.

I was forced to catch the anointing through tapes and books. I believe that I am anointed with the Holy Ghost to stand in my office of ministry. I have too much evidence all around me to doubt the reality of the anointing on my life. I also believe that the electronic and technological development in the world is for the benefit of the kingdom of God and the ministry. The technology of this world can help you to get near to people who are anointed.

## It's the Anointing That You Need

When God sends you a man of God, you are given a chance to receive him and catch the anointing that is on his life. The anointing is the principal thing that you and I need to do God's work. The prophet Zechariah knew that the most important thing was the anointing. It was he who said, "It is not by might and it is not by power but it's by the anointing of the Spirit" (Zechariah 4:6).

Elisha also realized that the thing which made Elijah's ministry successful was the anointing. When he had the opportunity he asked for the anointing. Some people may have asked for the money, the education or the qualifications that Elijah had. **But Elisha just wanted the anointing!**

**...Elijah said unto Elisha, ask what I shall do for thee before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me.**

**2 Kings 2:9**

In this chapter, I want to share about a channel of anointing that is not usually spoken of. It may sound new to you, but it is very real. If there is any way by which you can catch the anointing please take it! I am not presenting this as the only way that God can anoint you. I am sharing with you what I have received from the Lord. I am sharing with you what is biblically and scripturally sound.

Many people have received the anointing through listening to tapes and reading books but they do not understand what has happened to them. **Many people who have received the anointing through this channel cannot teach it because they do not fully understand it.** I believe that it is my duty to teach this simple but real method of catching the

most essential ingredient of ministry – the anointing.

In the previous chapter, I have shared about the importance of associating closely with the man of God in order to receive the anointing. Why do you have to associate with anointed men of God? What exactly do you acquire through association? As you closely associate with a man of God you will hear him speaking over and over. These words are what contain the anointing. When Elisha associated himself closely with Elijah he heard him speaking over and over again.

**And it came to pass, AS THEY STILL WENT ON, AND  
TALKED...**

**2 Kings 2:11**

## **Words Are Powerful!**

**Jesus told His disciples that His words contained two important things. They contained life and the Spirit!** What is this Spirit? The Spirit is the anointing! The scripture says that God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power (Acts 10:38). Jesus was anointed with the Holy Ghost, and therefore the Holy Ghost is the anointing (the substance with which He was anointed).

**...the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit  
and they are life.**

**John 6:63**

For many people, the close association we speak about is not possible except through the medium of books and tapes. Books and tapes contain the words of anointed men of God. The words of anointed men of God contain the

Spirit and the life. "Soaking" in books written by anointed men is a very valuable way of fellowshiping with them. The time you spend reading a book is time you spend fellowshiping with the one who wrote the book. What a great privilege to interact with someone with three hours in the privacy of your home. As you read this book you are fellowshiping with me and I am fellowshiping with you. As I write this book I feel that I am talking to certain people. I am ministering directly to as many as would take the time to receive. Just as Elisha listened to the words of Elijah and the disciples listened to the words of Jesus, you are listening to my words as you read this book! The disciples listened to the words of Jesus, that is why they were anointed. The anointing makes people take note of you.

**...and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.**

**Acts 4:13**

You can be with Jesus today by reading His words in the Bible. I constantly become amazed at the number of ministers who do not read the Bible. They just use the Bible as a tool for preaching. The word of God is, first of all for your benefit. You will not be a minister of substance if you do not have your own personal fellowship with the Lord. I do not mean a last-minute check of certain scriptures before you preach. A quick check of a scripture is different from fellowshiping with somebody through the written word. Fellowship with Jesus everyday. God wants to interact with you. He wants to fellowship with you. God's desire since the days of Adam has been to fellowship with man.

When Moses came down from the mountain after

fellowshipping with the Lord, the glory of the Lord was upon him. The glory of the Lord will be upon you when you fellowship with God.

When I woke up in this world I found myself in Ghana, West Africa. I realized that I was very far from the great men of God in America. I desperately wanted to fellowship with them but there was no way possible. I did not even have a visa to America. I had no money to buy a plane ticket. Even if I had been able to get there, many would have seen me as a crazy Black man who was trying to get too close! They would have called their security guards to protect them from me. So God showed me a way that I could fellowship with some of the great anointed people of this generation. I have fellowshiped with many people through their books. I have got to know their minds through their books. I have interacted with the Lord Jesus by reading the Bible and studying His words and actions. One of my favorite portions of the Bible are the gospels. In the gospels (Matthew, Mark, Luke and John), I can see what Jesus said and I can hear Him talking to me personally.

## **Two Types of Receivers**

There are two types of people who receive the anointing – those who are physically near and those who are physically afar off. You see, some people have the opportunity to be physically near to the anointed vessel. The apostles, Peter, James and John were physically close to the Lord. They touched Him, they held Him and they even had dinner with Him.

**That which was from the beginning, which we have**

**HEARD, which we have SEEN with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have HANDLED...**

**1 John 1:1**

The Apostle Paul loved his books. Unfortunately, Paul did not have the chance to physically interact with Christ as the other apostles did. Paul was just like me, he had to depend on books! That is why he sent urgently for his books and parchments (booklets). He had to study and fellowship with the Lord and other great men of God like Isaiah through the written Word.

**The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, AND THE BOOKS, BUT ESPECIALLY THE PARCHMENTS.**

**2 Timothy 4:13**

If Paul had lived in our generation he would have used all the technology available to receive even more of the Word and the anointing. Paul would have listened to tapes and watched videos. **Books contain the written word, but tapes contain the spoken word.** You can catch the anointing from the spoken word.

“Soaking” in tapes is a scriptural practice. **Soaking in tapes simply means to listen to the words over and over again until it becomes a part of you and until the anointing passes unto you!** When a tape is fully soaked, both the Word content and the Spirit content are imbibed into your spirit. The anointing is not something you learn, it is something you catch.

Do not assume that the “soaking” in of the tape is just an educational exercise. It is a spiritual event. Two important things happen when you soak in a tape. Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word (Romans 10:17). Secondly, the anointing of the Spirit content comes into you.

The Spirit enters a person as he receives the Word of God. That is why many people experience radical transformations by just listening to a powerful message of the Word of God. That is how come people are saved when they hear the preaching of the Word of God. The Holy Spirit enters into them as the preaching goes forth and they are gloriously Born Again. The Bible says that we are born of the Spirit.

**That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

**John 3:6**

Being Born Again is not an educational experience. Being Born Again does not mean that you have learnt something new. It means that a spiritual change has taken place. Your spirit is recreated by the Holy Spirit. This experience of being Born Again completely and forever changes a person's life. It happens when people listen to the preaching of the Word. That is why we invite people to church. We want them to be exposed to the preaching.

In the same way as you are Born Again and experience a spiritual transformation, you can experience a further spiritual transformation that will convert you into a minister. This spiritual transformation that makes you a minister is what some call “receiving an anointing” or “being anointed”. There are too many people who are called ministers who



have not received a call to ministry and an anointing to minister.

When you have not been anointed, you are dry and lifeless. I used to go to church every Sunday and I hated it! It was a lifeless and boring experience. I only went because my parents had asked me to go. Unfortunately, not only are some so-called ministers not anointed but they are not even Born Again. This is even worse! You do not become a minister by obtaining a certificate. **You become a minister when God calls you and anoints you!**

Churches do not grow because there is no anointing for church growth. Pastors everywhere must desire the anointing. It is the anointing that makes the difference! Once you know the anointing, you will not want anything else. You will not succeed in the ministry by being clever. Intelligence and education are no substitutes for the anointing! Desire the anointing! Go for it! It is the main thing! And the main thing is still the main thing! The first sermon that Jesus preached was about the anointing. The first thing that He said when he began His ministry was that He was anointed.

**The Spirit of the Lord is upon because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor...**

**Luke 4:18**

In fact, Jesus did not attempt any form of ministry until He was anointed. Jesus knew that the ministry depended on the anointing. I recently visited a beautiful large church. The pastor himself was not around so the janitor took us around the building. The main hall had hundreds of beautiful mahogany pews. It was a beautiful building with two huge

pipe organs and surrounding balconies.

I asked the janitor, "How many people does this building seat?"

He answered, "This building seats at least eight hundred and eighty people."

"Wow," I remarked, "That's a lot of people!"

He continued, "But, we don't have many people coming to church anymore."

"I see. How many people come to church nowadays?" I asked inquisitively.

"About twenty, with a maximum of thirty people." He added, "Only old people attend church now. The young people don't come to church anymore."

I thought, "How sad. Such a large church has been reduced to a fellowship of twenty old and dying people."

Obviously there was no life. But that was not all.

The janitor continued, "The services from this month are being held every two weeks instead of every week."

I thought to myself, "We hold church services on almost everyday of the week. There is so much life in our church. It is full of mainly young people who want to serve the Lord. What a contrast!"

What makes a difference between a growing and a dead church is the anointing. The anointing is the life of God in the ministry. Oh, how we need the anointing! We can't do without the Holy Spirit.

So how do we come by this Holy Spirit? That is what this book is about. God is trying to show you that you need an anointing. You may be ministering the Word. You may even be ordained. But it is only when you are anointed that

your ministry will begin to make a difference to the lost masses of humanity. I see the anointing on you right now as you read this book!

The prophet Ezekiel experienced the anointing entering his life one day. He described exactly how and when the anointing came upon him. Ezekiel sensed that the power and anointing of the Spirit had entered into him whilst he was listening to the Word.

**And the spirit entered into me WHEN HE SPAKE unto me...**

**Ezekiel 2:2**

Ezekiel said very clearly in this scripture that the Holy Spirit entered into him when he was being spoken to.

Peter, the apostle, also noticed this phenomenon. He noticed that the power of the Holy Spirit fell on people as he preached. Do you remember when Peter was preaching to the Gentiles? The Bible says that as he ministered the Word the Spirit of God fell on the people.

**While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.**

**Acts 10:44**

**If the gift of the Holy Spirit could fall on people whilst Peter was preaching then surely the gift of the Holy Spirit can fall on you when any other anointed man of God is preaching.** This is simple logic.

At 5 o'clock in the morning on the 1<sup>st</sup> of January, 1987 I decided to obey the call of God on my life. It was in the early hours of the first day of that New Year when I decided to take up the mantle and become a pastor. I knew that I had been

called and I had decided to obey and become a pastor.

At the time, I was in my fourth year of medical school. I began the church with a few nursing students and laboratory students in the Korle-Bu Teaching Hospital where I was studying medicine. I had no one to direct or guide me so I struggled quite a bit during that first year. By the end of 1987 many friends had expressed their lack of confidence in me and deserted me. I was criticized until I felt like killing myself, just to make my enemies happy. I remember looking at the ceiling fan as it twirled above my bed. I often thought of hanging myself on it. I wanted to vanish out of the view of all those who hated me and criticized me. I had very little guidance, but I was sincere and I had a lot of faith and many enemies. It is amazing how people hate you when you decide to follow the call of God.

This was the precarious and doubtful beginning of my ministry. I started out by faith and began teaching and preaching what I knew. A few nursing students responded. At the beginning the church met in a little classroom in the School of Hygiene. After awhile many people left and some stayed. The little church stabilized with about forty members. But something happened to me in 1988 that made a big difference to my ministry. It transformed the ministry from a little classroom full of nursing students to a ministry that impacts thousands of people around the world today.

## **What Happened to Me?**

Sometime during the middle of the year 1988, I had to fulfill what is called a community health rotation. Every class in medical school is divided into groups. Each group rotates through different fields of medicine throughout the year. That is why it is called a rotation. I had to complete four rotations in my final year, one each for surgery, medicine, specials and

community health.

During the community health rotation, I had to travel outside the city of Accra to a smaller town called Suhum, in another region of the country. Whilst there I lived in the Suhum Government Hospital for one month. I was to gain practical experience in running a hospital and working out on the field where conditions are different from the bigger cities.

Although I was fulfilling my medical requirements, as usual my mind was on the ministry. By the second week, I took advantage of a more relaxed timetable and decided to fast and pray. On my way out of Accra to Suhum, I had passed through a Christian bookshop and bought some Kenneth Hagin tapes. I felt that I just need something to soak in whilst I was in Suhum. I had been a great follower and admirer of Kenneth Hagin's ministry. Actually, I had already listened to those tapes many times but I thought I would just have something to listen to. No one had ever told me to listen to tapes. I just enjoyed doing it. I loved the Word and I loved the minister of the Word. No one had ever told me to listen to tapes over and over. I wasn't trying to memorize the message although I ended up remembering almost every sentence. Listening to tapes never replaced Bible study and personal quiet times for me. I wasn't losing my personality! I wasn't becoming a clone. I was being blessed tremendously!

One night I was praying, fasting and listening to one of these tapes that I had bought. I remember that day as if it was yesterday. I was using a small red Sony auto-reverse tape recorder. The message that was being played was something about dealing with demons. It was a message I had enjoyed listening to many times. The tape played nonstop throughout the night.

## Something Happened!

At about 3 a.m. in the morning I was kneeling by the bed praying. I could see the tape recorder situated at the other end of the room. Then suddenly, something literally jumped out of the tape which was playing and moved into my belly. I could feel it entering me. Then I heard a voice saying, "From now you can teach." I didn't know what that was but I thought to myself, "That's good, because I want to teach." **I didn't know at that time that I had received a major impartation of anointing through the channel of soaking in tapes.**

At that time, my church was comprised of about forty students. The Bible teaches that we should prove all things, so I decided to try out this new gifting. I was invited to teach at a Full Gospel Businessmen's breakfast meeting in Suhum. This was my first ministration after my impartation experience. I tell you, I noticed a difference. After the ministration someone asked me where my church was. He was surprised that I was an unknown minister. Inside me I knew that something had happened that was making a difference.

When I got back to the church after a month, I noticed a difference in my ability to teach and preach. The anointing had arrived and I began to build up. The first series I preached was about the prodigal son. I preached this on a weekday and the attendance and interest in the service began to increase steadily. I tell you, I noticed there was some life and Spirit in the ministry. It is difficult to describe it but when it's there you know it's there! The anointing is a bit like beauty – when you see it, you know it! You can't easily explain how or why you recognize beauty. But when you see beauty or anointing you know that it is there.

I have no reason to say what I am sharing except but to help you. My ministry has grown in leaps and bounds because of an anointing caught from soaking in the Word on a tape. Today, you are reading one of the several books that I have written under that same teaching anointing.

At the time, I did not have any biblical basis for what I had experienced, so I did not talk about it. Later, as I studied the Word of God, I realized that the mystery of impartation of anointing through the soaking of the Word is a reality. It is biblical! It is doctrinally sound and it is experientially real!

**Anyone who exposes himself to soaking in the Word through books and tapes is exposing himself to more of the anointing!** When you do that, only good things will happen to you.

On different occasions I have heard people describe how they have received an anointing as they sat in the congregation and received the ministry of the Word. One pastor described how he felt warm drops of anointing falling on his head as I spoke the Word at a Camp Meeting. I believe the Lord was anointing this man.

T. L. Osborne, the great evangelist, describes how God changed his ministry as he sat under the ministry of William Branham. It all happened in a moment and he was anointed to go out and be a great witness to the world. It is interesting that outsiders sometimes are better receivers than insiders. Do you remember the story of the Centurion whose servant was sick? He sent for Jesus because he knew that Jesus had the anointing and power to heal.

And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.  
And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of

the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this: For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue. Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof: Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

**Luke 7:2-7**

This man realized that there was anointing in the words of Jesus. So he sent another message to Jesus.

He said, "Don't bother to come all the way here. **Just stand there and say something.**"

In other words, there is no need for you to even lay hands or pour oil on my child, Just speak some words and the healing anointing will flow.

**He sent his word and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.**

**Psalms 107:20**

One night when I was ministering at a Miracle Wave Convention something astonishing happened. There were thousands of people present that night and the power of God was flowing. That night I remember that when I finished preaching the Word, I felt that God had already moved. It wasn't even necessary to do anything further. There was a lady sitting up in the balcony with her baby and husband.



## **The Angel Appears**

This lady suddenly experienced an open vision. Her eyes opened supernaturally and she could see me and everybody else on the stage. But she saw a huge angel standing on my left hand side suspended in midair.

She said, "As you were preaching you would say things like, 'I see you blessed!!', 'I see God answering your prayer!', 'I see you healed in the name of Jesus!', 'I see you owning a car!'" The angel would hand out blessings as I spoke and smaller angels would carry them to the people.

She said that some people had outstretched hands and were very receptive. The angels would go straight to them with the blessings. Whilst others were receiving others were dozing off and missing out on the spiritual impartation that was taking place. I believe that that angel goes around with me whenever I minister. I know that that "big guy" has been assigned to me. He's my ministering angel. Spiritual things are as real as physical things. The Bible teaches us that angels are ministering spirits that minister for us. They work for us and help us. That is why the angel was distributing spiritual parcels to those who were receiving the Word.

**Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?**

**Hebrews 1:14**

## **Levels of Receptivity**

Anyone who listens to tapes and reads books will receive to a greater or lesser extent. Some people are not impressed or touched by the message. Some others are even offended by it. As Jesus said, "Blessed is he that is not offended in me." Some people are excited by the message. Some cannot

remember anything they just know that it was a good message.

As you listen to a tape you learn the message. You learn the Word. You acquire the knowledge content. Some people stop at this point. But others go even further. I went further without even knowing what I was doing. Somehow it wasn't the knowledge content that I was after. If it was knowledge, I had virtually assimilated all the facts that were being shared after a few times of listening to the tape. My love for the Word made me expose myself to the anointing without even knowing it.

I remember being blessed by messages of a pastor of a huge church in Los Angeles, California. I had a few videos of his that I thoroughly enjoyed. I would watch these videos over and over. As I watched this pastor preaching in his church I desired to have a church like that and to preach as well as he did. One day, I was preaching in my church, walking up and down the aisles when the Spirit of God told me, "This is it!"

It suddenly dawned on me that I was walking in the steps of that pastor that I had watched and listened to for years. I was teaching and preaching like he did. I was pastoring a church which was as large as I had seen on the television. You see, when the anointing is on you you will do certain specific things in your ministry. Do you want to have a big church? Catch the anointing that is on someone who has a big church. Do you want to be an evangelist? Look around and see who God is using and follow that person. Listen to his tapes and read his books. The anointing will fall on you one day.

## **The Specificity of the Anointing**

The anointing is like your gun. It does certain specific things. You just have to use it and direct it where you want to. Every anointing has a way of working out itself to achieve specific results. The anointing that was on Elijah made him do certain things. Do you want to be a teacher of the Word? Then follow someone who has a teaching anointing. The anointing is very specific. The healing anointing is different from the teaching anointing which is different from the pastoral anointing.

Elijah miraculously caused three years of drought. He multiplied the meal and oil of a widow, caused the resurrection of a young boy and called fire from heaven. Elisha did similar things. He also caused years of drought, performed healings, and multiplied a widow's oil. It is interesting to note that Elisha did exactly twice as many miracles as Elijah did. Elijah did sixteen miracles and Elisha did thirty-two miracles! Elisha had a double portion of Elijah's anointing.

The anointing is a very specific substance that makes you achieve certain things. You can desire a specific minister's anointing. God may have put it in your heart to achieve certain things in the ministry. Elisha went for Elijah's anointing without any apologies to anyone.

If you catch the anointing which is on certain people you will do similar things because it is the same anointing. John the Baptist also carried Elijah's anointing. There were many similarities between John the Baptist and Elijah's ministry. Both of them had dramatic ministries and both of them confronted kings. Both of these men were familiar with deserts and solitude. They wore the same type of garments and lived simply. Both of them had their ministries terminated by queens.

## **Benefit From the Tapes**

In order to gain the maximum benefit from a tape, you must listen to it with a vision of eventually receiving an impartation of the anointing. Listen to the same tape several times. In my experience, this is different from listening to many different tapes of the same minister. When you want to get to Level F below, stay with the tapes you enjoy. Listen to tapes unconsciously and listen to them whilst praying and fasting. Allow yourself to receive the gift of God that is ministering to you. You must be open to the man of God who is ministering. You must receive him with admiration and with love, otherwise, you can get nothing from him or through him.

**But as many as received him, to them gave he power...**

**John 1:12**

## **Learn How to Preach**

You can learn how to preach and teach by listening to tapes. I have not been to Bible school and did not have the privilege of being taught how to deliver a sermon. But there are many ways of learning the same thing. When I was practicing medicine I learnt a little phrase from the surgical department. They said, "Watch one, assist one and do one." What does this mean? It means that if you want to learn how to operate you watch one, you assist one and then you actually do an operation yourself.

Everyone can learn how to preach by listening to preaching. The best thing is to listen to other singers all the time. The prophet Daniel studied what the prophet Jeremiah had taught. The prophet Jeremiah ministered from 685-616 B.C. and the prophet Daniel took over from 616-536 B.C. Daniel

said very clearly that he knew what he knew by studying the books written by Jeremiah. Why are you afraid to learn from somebody if great men like Daniel were blessed by prophets like Jeremiah?

**In the first day of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.**

**Daniel 9:2**

Open up your heart and become a learner and receiver. After all, we all learn from somewhere. **It is insecure people who are afraid to show that they learnt what they know from somewhere!** Become so receptive that you receive the knowledge of the Word! Open your spirit so that you learn how to preach yourself! Open your heart so that you receive the anointing! I want you to notice these levels of receptivity that I have listed below and ask yourself where you fit in!

**Level A:** The word has no impact. You do not understand the message. You probably did not even like the message.

**Level B:** The word has an impact on you. You are excited and think that it is a good message. However, you only retain 11% of what was preached. This is usually what happens when a person listens to a tape just once.

**Level C:** You absorb the word even further but cannot reproduce the message.

**Level D:** You absorb the word so much that you can

reproduce the message.

**Level E:** You begin to learn to how to preach and teach in the same anointed manner.

**Level F:** You absorb the word and at the same time begin to absorb the anointing and spirit of the message.

**Level G:** At this level, the transfer of an entire ministry gift takes place. Often an anointing which is on the speaker is transferred to you. Like John the Baptist and Elijah, similarities emerge between your ministries because the same anointing has been transferred.

## **NOTICE THESE SIGNS**

These are signs that you are on the road to catching the anointing.

1. You are able to follow the trend of the message; even when it is confusing and disorderly.
2. You receive additional lessons that are not the main message. This is an important sign of you catching the anointing on the minister. You begin to know the mind and the heart of the person you are listening to. Most of these lessons are unrelated to the topic that is being taught. You begin to learn so many little things such as principled character, how to speak, how to analyze scripture and how to overcome

problems.

3. You unconsciously begin to use certain phrases and points in these messages. Unknown to you, you begin to walk and think like the person you are listening to.
4. You are able to minister the message with the same results. E.g. Church growth, miracles, people commenting on the word that they were blessed, people buying your tapes and people wanting to hear part two and part three. This is different from dry imitation, when you become an exact replicate of what you hear, but do not get the same results.

## AVOID THESE MISTAKES

I am not teaching you not to study the Bible for yourself. I am not teaching you to neglect personal Bible study. That is a great mistake. I am an avid listener of tapes but I study the Word of God everyday. **I have personal quiet times everyday. Many of my messages are what I have learnt from my daily Bible study.**

- § Avoid the mistake of not reading the Bible and doing Bible study for yourself.
- § Avoid the mistake of thinking that it is a man that is going to anoint you. God anoints you through a man.
- § Avoid the mistake of only listening to tapes when you are going to preach. Listen to tapes all of the time. I

listen to tapes all the time.

- § Avoid the mistake of not doing further study on subjects or tapes you listen to
- § Avoid the mistake of preaching about things you do not practice. Do not preach about things that you do not understand or believe in.
- § Avoid the mistake of simply imitating and copying someone without understanding the whole mystery of catching the anointing through soaking in the word.
- § Avoid the mistake of leaving out the video dimension. The video dimension helps you to catch things that you cannot catch on a tape like posture, attire and gestures. Soaking in videos helps you to learn how to minister the Spirit and to minister with signs and wonders.

## **Ignore the Ignoramuses**

Listening to tapes over and over does not mean that you are engaging in mindless memorization. Some people call this, “Chew and pour.” I just laugh to myself when I hear such comments. The most difficult time for me in the medical school was the second year. During the second year we had to study physiology, anatomy and biochemistry. Of these three subjects I found biochemistry the most difficult because it involved a lot of tedious memorization.

I am not teaching you to become a copycat. I am teaching you how to catch the anointing. I am teaching you to walk in the steps of anointed people. When a young girl is learning



how to cook she is taught to follow a simple routine. As she does this over and over she is able to cook the food as well as her mother. With time she will develop her own variations and style. Would you call that daughter a mindless copycat? Would you say that she is engaging in senseless memorization? Certainly not! She is a humble learner.

Dear friend, the devil wants to keep you from the anointing. I have heard people speaking sarcastically about this method of catching the anointing. Someone said that I was producing clones. What is a clone? Why do some people try to confuse God's sheep with clever sounding phrases? Quite frankly, I would rather hear my dog bark in the morning than listen to such rubbish!

When a doctor is learning to be a surgeon he has to closely observe what his professor does. Then he assists his professor several times. Soon he gets an opportunity to do the procedure himself. He gingerly follows the procedure that he has seen his professor do. He makes a few mistakes but soon he can perform the operation perfectly. If you watch this new surgeon closely you will realize that he is doing exactly what his professor does. With time, he develops his own additions or improvements to what he has learnt. Has the professor produced a clone? Certainly not! He has trained another competent surgeon.

When Paul was training Timothy for the ministry, he wrote to him and said, "My son preach the same things that I have preached to you. Spend time sharing the same things with the faithful brethren that you have."

**Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, THE SAME COMMIT THOU TO FAITHFUL MEN, who shall be able to teach others also.**

## 2 Timothy 2:1,2

Paul told Timothy to preach the same thing that he had preached. Was Paul producing mindless clones? Watch out for people who try to redescribe godly things and make them appear stupid.

When you soak in tapes many good things happen to you. You learn how to preach and you catch the anointing. It is funny how some people see things. Someone once said that he did not want to listen to tapes because he did not want to “lose his personality”. How would you lose your personality by exposing yourself to the anointing and the influence that comes from special men of God? When the choir in my church sings a song by Andrae Crouch or someone else are you telling me that they have lost their personality? Do you know that they would have to rehearse the song for several hours in order to get it just right. As they soak in this music over and over and as they try to do exactly what they are hearing, are you telling me that they are losing their personalities? **As I said earlier, I prefer to listen to my dogs barking in the morning than to listen to foolishness!**

# **CHAPTER 7**

## **WHAT IT MEANS TO CATCH THE SPIRIT OF THE MINISTRY**

Your aspiration for church growth will naturally lead you to work with many different people. It is only understandable that in a larger ministry you will need more “hands on deck”. The act of recruiting new people often leads to the destruction of the ministry. Be careful that you do not end up destroying what you are trying to build. **It is important to recruit people who have what I call the spirit of the ministry.**

**And I will come down and talk with thee there: and I will take of the SPIRIT WHICH IS UPON THEE, and will put it UPON THEM and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee, that thou bearest not thyself alone.**

**Numbers 11:17**

Please notice the revelation that God gave Moses. He said, “I’m going to take of the spirit or anointing that is upon you and that same anointing will be transferred to other people.” It is only then that they will be able to work with you. It is only then that they will be able to help you.

God could have simply given these seventy people an anointing for leadership, but He didn’t. **God did not give them a general anointing for leadership! Neither did He give them a special anointing of management and wise judgement! He simply gave them Moses’ anointing.**

What was the spirit upon Moses? It was the special gift of ministry given to Moses to lead the people. This is what those seventy pastors received.

**There is an anointing on every ministry.** That is why people can start out in a ministry of their own and have only twenty people after ten years. Were these people to operate under a certain ministry they would not have only twenty people after ten years. They may have a thousand. This is because different ministries have different anointings over

them.

I am not saying that you do not have to start something new, not at all! I am saying that God gives certain gifts to certain men. Those who find themselves planted under such men find that they are catching the same spirit of ministry. They will find themselves doing great things or even greater things than he is doing.

## **There is a Difference!**

Catching the spirit of the ministry is a little different from catching the anointing. When you join a new church, you will notice that it is different from any other church. **Understand that every church is different and has its own culture.** Every minister has a peculiar anointing on his life. This leads to a unique ministry. When you join up with this unique ministry, you must adapt and flow with it. Understand that every church is different. When you join a church, you have to acclimatize and re-learn certain things. It is the senior pastor's duty to prevent anyone from becoming a minister without adapting fully to the culture of the church.

**It is the trainee's duty to learn, imbibe, observe and adapt to the spoken and unspoken philosophies of the church.** Study the culture. Flow with it. Do all you can to fit in. When you fit in, that peculiar anointing will also fit into you and operate through you. It is possible and it is necessary if you want to be fruitful in the context of a particular church.

If you do not adapt, the anointing will not be able to fit into you because it was meant for a particular type of vessel. You will run into problems if you choose to ignore the standards accepted and used by the general leadership. **When people do not operate under the same Spirit (anointing), they**

**create conflict.** The leaders become disunited and each one thinks he is right. The church begins to disintegrate behind the scenes and soon this comes into the open.

## **HOW TO CATCH THE SPIRIT OF THE MINISTRY**

To catch the spirit of the ministry you have to company with the leadership and the church. There is simply no other way. You have to know what they do, and watch them do it! You have to accept it in your mind and believe in it in your heart. The standards and principles in the church must become yours. They must no longer be “their” principles.

**When you think like the leadership thinks, then you have caught the spirit of the ministry.** The anointing makes you think in a particular way. The anointing makes you act in a particular way.

**I learnt long ago that I should not accept people into my ministry who do not really fit in as sons.** Someone may be a well-qualified minister with great credentials, but if he does not have the spirit of the ministry, it is no use taking on such a person. The few conflicts that I have experienced in the Lighthouse denomination have been through and from people who did not fully catch the spirit of this ministry. It looked as though they fitted in, but in reality, they were not a part of us.

After Jesus ascended into heaven, a replacement was sought for Judas. They chose someone who had the spirit of Jesus’ ministry. Someone who knew them through and through. They needed someone who had accepted the standards and philosophies of Christ. They did not want to

introduce somebody who would create confusion within their ranks.

**Wherefore of these men which have COMPANIED WITH US ALL THE TIME that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us...**

**Acts 1:21,22**

You will observe in the above scripture that they chose somebody who had been with them long enough to catch the spirit of the ministry. They didn't care whether the person had the gift of prophecy or the gift of leadership. It is better to be safe than sorry. Go for those you know and avoid unknown elements!

There are three groups of people I do not often consider for employment. These are not "bad" people! They are good people but they need to catch the spirit of the ministry.

- A Bible School Graduate Seeking Employment in the Church.

Graduating from a Bible school means very little to me. All it means is that you have a piece of paper showing that you have studied some courses. Those courses may be different from the courses I teach in my church. Even if they are the same, they may have a completely different orientation.

I ask such people to simply join the church and become a part of the church family. Then they must go through the ranks like every other church member. If and only if he is able to catch the spirit of the ministry can he be part of its leadership.

- An Experienced and Seasoned Minister

There is a saying, "You can't teach an old dog new tricks". This saying is not in the Bible but it is often true. When a tree is young, you can bend it. But when a tree is old, you must break it in order to get it to bend! Usually, people who have been in the ministry for years feel that they know all about the ministry. Such people have problems fitting in. After being a part of your system for a while, they will say, "I was a pastor before I joined you." They will say, "I was a minister in my own right before I came here." They will add, "I had a ministry before I came here and I just decided to place it under your ministry." **Such people do not fit in because they feel that they are not prepared to be trained or retrained.**

I have learnt from painful experience, to train up my own sons and daughters in ministry. They are to me like the disciples were to Jesus. I can trust them and I can leave my ministry in their hands wherever they are in the world. Jesus left his ministry to twelve men and they handled it perfectly. **When you have people who have caught the spirit of the leadership you can leave things with them and not worry. They will not rebel.**

- A Pastor of a Small Church Who Wants to Join a Larger Network

This is even more dangerous! When the church begins to grow under a new name and new anointing, the pastor will begin to have thoughts of breaking away. He will say, "I had a church with members before I joined up with you. I want to change the name back to what it was before." This often leads to painful splits and breakaways. At this point, no one will know who is really right or wrong.

**My policy is to encourage such individuals to continue independently in ministry.** If he insists, the way forward is for him to close down his church and join the bigger network as an ordinary member. With the process of time, such a person may become a minister within the network and start a church again. However, it takes a lot of humility to do something like that.

It is important for senior pastors to know when people have caught the spirit of the ministry. It is important for up-and-coming ministers to understand how to catch the spirit of the ministry.

## **EIGHT THINGS YOU MUST CATCH**

In every church, you must endeavor to catch the vision, principles, philosophy, standards, doctrines, procedures, emphasis and the anointing of the house. To illustrate this better I will just use Lighthouse Chapel International as a model.

### **The Vision of the House**

Generally speaking, the vision of Lighthouse Chapel International is one of soul winning and church planting. Many pastors do not have a vision for soul winning. We have a strong vision for soul winning. If you are not oriented towards the harvest, you will be a misfit in such a church.

Everyone is taught and motivated to save the lost. Everyone in the church is taught to be involved in practical ministry. No one is left out, including professionals and businessmen. **We believe that every member can be a minister.** It may sound strange, but that is our vision.



Some people think that vision is for prosperity. Others have a vision for dominion over the works of darkness. Others have a vision for eternal peace. Which is it that you desire to be an heir of? You must enlarge your vision and that does not mean you are wrong. We feel that this is the biblical pattern for the call to the prophetic and the poetic, rather than the judgementist that typifies. Any leader within our system must have these ideas as his own ideas.

# The Principles of the House

## The Standards of the House

One of our principles is that everything must be founded on the self-purification of the Bible. Ministers principles on these things that are not firmly based on the Holy Word of God compromise on these standards! We do not expect people who have principles of loyalty to people who break these principles cannot fit into our ministry. I am loyal to my Pastor and to the standards of our loyalty to me. We believe in gradual and complete devotion to the original vision of the highest position because of the lowering of standards that gay and lesbian priests and even bishops are now a part of church life. Some priests are officiating the marriages

## The Philosophy of the House

on homosexuality. This is Sodom and Gomorrah coming into the church. How did it get there? It got there by gradually changing the standards of the Church of God. We must do the work of ministry. We believe that the educated can also be in ministry.

## The Doctrines of the House

Establishment of the place are We believe is based on the Buildings bring stability and permanence. Church buildings projects allow church members acknowledge their money for being "put to good use". We also believe in frugality. There

Mills)

Another doctrine we have is what we call, Anagkazo. This Greek word means something to every leader in our church. It teaches about compelling souls to come to Christ. You cannot be a minister in our church if you do not understand and believe in Anagkazo.

## **The Procedures of the House**

The way things are done in every church is different. In our church, a person becomes a pastor by rising through the ranks. One must first be a shepherd before being promoted to a lay pastor. That is just the way things are done here. We have very few full-time ministers.

We believe that you must first be successful as a lay pastor before becoming a full-time minister. This may be different from the way you do things in your church, but if you want to be in a particular ministry, you must accept the procedures of that house.

You cannot be a leader in the church if you do not pay tithes, or what we call First and Best Fruits. That is just the way we do things. Every Lighthouse church takes two offerings on Sundays. In our church, you must have extensive counseling before getting married. These are just some of the procedures we do not intend to alter. Anyone who is going to be a leader of the church has to accept these procedures and flow with them.

The church has a system of small groups involving fellowships, ministries and chapels. This system has worked for us throughout the world, wherever Lighthouse has been established. That is the way we do things. That is our

procedure. Welcome to the house.

## **The Emphasis of the House**

Every minister has a peculiar emphasis. We emphasize the preaching and the teaching of the Word of God. Some emphasize prosperity and healing. Some emphasize the anointing. We emphasize the winning of souls and the establishing of the church. Mind you, we believe in miracles, and we experience great moves of the Spirit, but our emphasis is the Word. If you accept this emphasis then you can be with us.

## **The Anointing of the House**

This is the anointing that we have been talking about in the earlier chapters. Apart from getting the natural and physical aspects like the procedures and standards, you need to get this spiritual component.

**There is nothing like the anointing. Without it, you can do nothing in ministry. Once you have tasted the anointing and the difference it makes to ministry, you will not like to do anything without it.** If you are within a particular church, the principal anointing that you should desire is the anointing on your leader. This is because you are working under his ministry.

## **CHAPTER 8**

# HOW TO START A CHURCH

## Why People Fear to Start Churches

Many people are afraid of starting a church because they do not know how to pioneer a work. **The art of beginning a church is the art of witnessing, following-up and gathering sheep together.** You do not need to break up someone else's church to begin your own! How would you feel if someone was building his house next to yours and decided to break down your house to get some blocks for his? That is madness!

Unfortunately, this seems to be the only way that some people feel they can start a church. From today, do not be afraid of starting out in an honorable way. If God has really spoken to you, it will succeed!

## COUNT THE COST

**For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost...**

**Luke 14:28**

Carefully consider the implications of starting a church. It is not going to be easy! Not many people want to identify with a small thing. I learnt many years ago that there are two types of people in the world. There are those who push the canoe from the sand into the sea. Then there are those who jump into the boat when it is safely on the water.

When the canoe is on the sand, it is very difficult to push into

the water. When it is on the water it is safer and many more people jump in. That is why it is easier for a large church to grow.

When I began in the ministry I was despised and opposed! Looking back, I am surprised that I was able to survive the storms of beginning a church on my own. At certain times, I felt like giving up. Everyone in the world seemed against me. They called me names and ridiculed me.

When I carried a set of drums from my room in the medical hostel to a nearby classroom, I must have looked like a crazy zealot! "What does this person think he is doing with a few medical and nursing students?"

I had no help from any of the bigger churches of my day. Some of them ridiculed me whilst others even opposed me. There was no help or approval from any man of God.

## **DO NOT BECOME DESPERATE**

Do not become financially desperate in the early stages of ministry. Be careful not to become dependent on the church you are pioneering for your financial survival. That is a big mistake! If you do, you will become a desperate man, clutching at every straw for survival.

A small church usually cannot afford to pay the salary of a pastor, much less buy him a car. **My advice to anyone who is beginning a church, is to find a job and start the church as a lay person.** When people see that you are not ministering for financial gain, they will be more interested in your new church. Too many pastors are desperate for more and more offerings from their few members. Sixteen people

cannot look after you. Twenty one people cannot support your upkeep and your children's school fees. Don't be a desperate pastor! Get a job right now! At the right time, the church will have more than enough money to look after its pastors.

I had to invest a lot of my own money to get the church to work. Although I am now in full-time ministry, I was not paid for the first five years of the church's existence. There is another reason why you should not draw a salary in the early stages of a church. Money will be needed to buy equipment and pay other expenses like rent. If you siphon out the lifeblood of the church's money, it will not develop normally.

## **TWO OR THREE IS ENOUGH**

How many people are needed to start a church? The answer is in the Bible! Two or three!

**For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.**

**Matthew 18:20**

Some people have criticized me for having two or three people in a church. Well, such criticism comes from an ignoramus. **I prefer to hear my dogs barking in the morning than to listen to critical and inexperienced scoffers.**

I do not start my churches with half a section of another person's church. If I have one pastor who is ready to obey God, all I need to do is to send him and he will start the work. The Lighthouse Cathedral was started with as few as five people.

When I went to Zürich to start a church, I knew only one person. Today that church has several hundred people in it. One pastor who did not know anybody in South Africa, but was willing to do the work of God, started our church in South Africa. You do not need more than one person to start a church. I have churches that have only three people, and I am not ashamed to say it. Do not try to impress anyone, just do the work of God!

Sometimes people are afraid to pioneer a church because they do not know how to do basic Christian tasks. What do I mean by the basics? The basics are praying, witnessing and following up converts.

If you are truly called of God then the only person you need is yourself! All churches which began in this way have grown to become great trees. The Bible says that the kingdom of God is like a mustard seed.

**...The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.**

**Matthew 13:31,32**

What does that mean? Whereas an Old Boys Association or a Keep Fit Club may begin with quite a number of people, the beginnings of a church are like insignificant seeds. They can grow, and they will grow. Many of my pastors are surprised when their churches grow. They cannot believe that the church will work. The beginning looks so miserable yet that is how the kingdom of God is.



## **The Mega Church Had One Member!**

One day, one of my pastors went to church and only one person came. He told me that he was very discouraged and depressed. He led that one person in worship. Then he preached to that one person. Afterwards he took an offering from that one person and then closed the service. He narrated to me how he went back home to his apartment in the deepest and blackest depression of his life. I am happy to tell you that today his church is a Mega Church and is growing.

## **DON'T BE IN A HURRY**

There isn't any tree that grows from a seed into a large tree overnight. No human being grows to be six feet tall in one year. No two-year old grows into an eighteen-year old within six months. If you have a hasty spirit, you will not be successful in starting a church.

**He that hasteth to be rich hath an evil eye, and considereth not that poverty shall come upon him.**

**Proverbs 28:22**

In fact, when you are in a hurry, you are likely to cut corners, break someone else's church and criticize those ahead of you. You will commit dangerous sins in the early days of your fledgling ministry. Do not expect much within a year. Don't be surprised if you only have twenty people after two years. The mustard seed will surely grow into a Mega Church!

## PRAY FOR AND RECRUIT PILLARS

Pray for laborers. Ask God to give you helpers. Then go out and recruit pillars. Jesus called individuals to follow him. Jesus recruited Simon and Andrew. Then he also recruited James and John.

**Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother... And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.**

**Mark 1:16,17**

**And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother... And straightway he called them... and they left their father... and went after him.**

**Mark 1:19,20**

These people later became pillars in the church.

**And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be  
PILLARS...**

**Galatians 2:9**

Sometimes you need to travel quite far in order to convince certain important pillars to join your church. **Be extra careful that you do not break down somebody else's church in the process of building your own.**

Making an open invitation to all is different from coercing people to leave their church to join you. The very existence of a church is an open invitation. Remember that you will reap what you sow (Galatians 6:7). If you pressurize pillars

in another person's church to leave, it will happen to you one day.

One important aspect in recruiting people is to pray for laborers. Let it be your daily prayer topic. Ask God for workers and committed people. Pray for people who will be loyal to you in everything that you do. Pray for people who will support you.

**Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth LABOURERS into his harvest.**

**Matthew 9:38**

## **LAY A FOUNDATION OF PRAYER**

I recommend an average time of prayer and fasting of three weeks or more. Pray for the future of the church. Do not expect results next week. The answer to these prayers will be seen in the years ahead.

When I first came to Korle-Bu (the area in Accra where our church is located), I would go at ten o'clock every night with four other medical students to the beach to pray. We would pray up until midnight. As I stood on the rocks near the seashore, my prayer was simply, "Lord, let your will be done. Do whatever you want to do with my life." As the years have gone by, the Lord has answered this prayer beyond my wildest imagination.

I believe in laying a solid foundation of prayer and fasting at the beginning of every church. The church is a spiritual entity and not a social club. It must be established on scriptural and spiritual foundations.

Some useful scriptures in praying for church establishment and church growth are:

**...Thy will be done...**

**Matthew 6:10**

**Thy kingdom come...**

**Matthew 6:10**

**Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance...**

**Psalms 2:8**

**...enlarge my coast...**

**1 Chronicles 4:10**

**...increase them with men like a flock...**

**Ezekiel 36:37**

**...for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children...**

**Isaiah 66:8**

**...I travail in birth again...**

**Galatians 4:19**

## **BE A MOTIVATIONAL LEADER**

After gathering a few people into a room, you will need to greatly encourage them, including yourself. People will be thinking in their minds, "Are you out of your mind? Is this what you call a church?" You must learn to do what David did when faced with discouragement. Encourage yourself first.

**...but David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.  
1 Samuel 30:6**

Then you must encourage the people. Tell them that though the beginning seems to be small, the future is going to be great!

**Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end  
should greatly increase.  
Job 8:7**

Tell them not to despise the small start. Explain to them that the end is always better than the beginning. When they see that you are encouraged, they will be motivated to continue with the church.

**Better is the end of a thing than the beginning  
thereof...  
Ecclesiastes 7:8**

**For who hath despised the day of small things?...  
Zechariah 4:10**

Tell them that they are privileged to be founding members of a great church. Explain that the foundation of a building is the most important part of a building. Therefore, they are the most important members that the church will ever have. Tell them that Jesus always had a special place and reward for the apostles because they were his foundational members.

**And are built upon the foundations of the apostles...  
Ephesians 2:20**

Do not make the mistake of rebuking and shouting at them. Do not vent your frustration on your few members. It is not

their fault that the church is small in the beginning stages. Preach faith! Preach hope! Preach stabilization! Preach about a better tomorrow! People love to hear that tomorrow will be better than today. You must be bold and shameless in your preaching.

**I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is the friend, yet because of his importunity [shamelessness] he will rise and give him as many as he needeth**

**Luke 11:8**

In the above passage, the Greek word “Anaideia” translated importunity also means shamelessness. The shamelessly persistent person gets results. Let’s face it! There is some amount of shame in beginning a ministry with a few people. That is why people despise small beginnings!

**Shamelessness (Anaideia) must characterize all that you do when you begin a church.** Shamelessly invite people to join you on Sunday morning. When they see that you are not shy of your church, they will be interested in coming. Shamelessly advertise your church.

People will believe what you say about your church. If you have an assistant, he must say good things about the preaching and about the church in general. All of these things help to create a good atmosphere for church growth.

## **WITNESSING AND FOLLOW-UP**

This must be predominant in all of your church activities. You must boldly enter into the houses of your city and preach Christ to the people. You must shamelessly lead people to

Christ in their living rooms. Pray for them and invite them to church.

Stand on the street and talk to passers-by about Jesus Christ. If you cannot shamelessly do street evangelism, then you cannot be a pastor. Lead the congregation in inviting people to church every Sunday. Do not be depressed if most of the visitors do not come back. Most of them will not stay anyway. God will supernaturally bring the increase.

Pastors must realize that there is a spiritual principle of sowing and reaping. Whatever you sow is what you will reap.

**...for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.**  
**Galatians 6:7**

If you sow seeds through invitations and witnessing, you will reap from it one day. My experience is that after a crusade or an outreach we initially have very few results. However, after awhile we begin to have people coming from the very place we did the outreach. Usually they are not the people we witnessed to. But God divinely sends them to us from that place. Use all of the principles of anagkazo (For further study see Anagkazo by Bishop Heward-Mills).

## **AVOID THESE MISTAKES**

**Do not hurriedly appoint people to leadership positions.** Allow time to pass before you make definite appointments. Many of the people who are with you in the beginning will leave anyway. **Do not be discouraged because of fluctuating attendance.** Do not be discouraged because of a rotational shift of the members, i.e., half attend this week,

the other half next week. **That is how sheep behave. Take no notice of them!**

**Do not rent an expensive hall.** Do not keep the church's money in your house or in your personal account. One day somebody will accuse you of stealing, although you may have contributed a lot to the church. Do not count the money yourself but assign people to do so.

## **YOU DON'T NEED THESE THINGS**

Contrary to what people think, several things are not necessary when starting a church. You do not need a complimentary card or a briefcase to build a Mega Church! A constitution is not vital in the early stages. What is important is to have members and a regular congregation. A church logo is not important, neither is a church flag.

Initially, It may not be necessary to register a church. Many countries allow freedom of association and freedom of religion. Just build the church and fill it with people. Pray for them, preach the Word, visit the sheep and trust God! Since the greater one is in you, you cannot fail!



# **CHAPTER 9**

## **FIGHT FOR COMMITMENT**

### **TYPES OF COMMITMENT**

If you want your church to grow you must fight to have more committed members. Committed members are the building blocks of a large church. **The key to increasing in size is to have more and more very committed people.**

Let's consider for example if you are in a situation where you are building a house. Supposing you laid a hundred blocks on your building foundation everyday. At the end of the day you might look at the work done and say to yourself, "Things are getting better. The building is coming up nicely!"

How would you feel if you noticed that seventy of those blocks were missing every morning? You would feel very frustrated because your building project would progress at a much slower rate. The building would still develop, however at a much slower rate. This is because of the regular loss of the building blocks. In the case of a church, the building blocks are the members. The missing blocks are the uncommitted members who disappear ever so often.

In order to develop committed members, every pastor must know about the different levels of commitment each member may have. Do not be deceived by a large crowd. **A large crowd consists of people with different levels of commitment. You must press for the highest level of commitment possible from every one of your members.** Over the years, I have observed four main types of commitment.

## **Fair Weather Commitment**

The lowest type of commitment is Fair Weather Commitment. This consists of those who are committed when things are going well. The Bible says a rich man has many friends, but a poor man does not have many friends.

**Wealth maketh many friends; but the poor is separated from his neighbour.**

**Proverbs 19:4**

When I started out in ministry, I had few friends. When the ministry became large and successful, many people claimed to be my friends. Many spoke of imaginary assistance they gave me in my early days. Senior ministers have sworn that they never said negative things about me (although I know they did). When things are not going well, people don't want to know you. But when the sky is clear, they all claim to be your friends.

Fair weather church members are people who are committed only when things are going well. They form the crowds that come when the church is flourishing and successful. Such people fall away when a crisis or problem arises. You cannot rely on such people when building a Mega Church. People with fair weather commitment are usually not aware of their low level of commitment. Therefore, the pastor must preach and teach against being committed only when things are going well.

## **Situational Friendship Commitment**

The next type of commitment is what I call situational friendship commitment. Friends are committed to each other to some extent. There are also two levels of commitment between friends, situational friendship commitment and non-situational friendship commitment.

There are two types of friends in the world. There are friends, who are friends because the situation permits. In school, for instance, different situations bring people together and make them friends. Everyone has friends like that. You had to sit in the same classroom for some years and you became friends because of the circumstances. However, when you left school or didn't see them anymore, you stopped relating with them. I have many friends like that.

Some people are only committed to their church when the situation permits. They may live near the church or there may be no other church nearby. However, if another church were to start in the vicinity they would go there. You may have many people in your church, but they are only members because of their circumstances. Such people cannot be relied upon. You must press for a higher commitment.

Aim to get all of your members to be committed irrespective of their circumstances. That is non-situational commitment. They are committed to you irrespective of the situation. Some children come to the church because their parents do so, however, if their parents were not to come anymore they would stop coming to church.

## **Attack Sunday**

Our church was once attacked by a traditional practitioners. On that Sunday morning an armed mob of people invaded the church, threw rocks at the church and physically assaulted several of our church members and pastors. I believe they were hunting for me on that fateful morning. The attack so startled us that it has been ingrained in our memories. After the attack, we had to wash away streams of blood from the church grounds.

Many of our church members were hurt and the entire incident was broadcast on national television. As you would expect this caused the “fair weather” and “situational friendship” members to vanish for several weeks. Someone whose commitment is deep, will not be moved by such attacks.

On that Sunday, many cars were vandalized with their

windscreens smashed. However, the next Sunday, the committed members were back in church with their cars. They were members, whether they were attacked or not. In fact, some have expressed their commitment to die for the church if there is any further attack.

Members whose commitment is at the level of “fair weather” and “situational friendship” are not of much use to the church in times of crises. The pastor must preach to raise the level of commitment of all members.

## **Non-Situational Friendship Commitment**

When your church members have graduated to this level of commitment, they are not moved by hurts, separation, conflicts or distance. You can rely more on such people. The commitment is one of deep friendship. It is not affected much by circumstances. Pastors should aim at moving their members to at least this level. I have friends who I don't see often.

For instance, one of my university roommates “Dr. Nosh” is a non-situational friend. That means he's my friend whether I see him or not. We live in different parts of the world, yet our friendship is not affected by distance or separation. I know he's my friend and he knows I am his friend. He can depend on me and I can depend on him. Like Jonathan and David, their friendship became a bond between them.

**And Jonathan caused David to swear again, because he loved him: for he loved him as he loved his own soul.**

**1 Samuel 20:17**

## **Marital Commitment**

There is an even higher level of commitment – marital commitment. In marital commitment, the individuals are committed as though they are married. In marriage, there should be no thought of divorce, but rather a spirit of permanence. There are no more options left. You cannot decide to stay or leave. You must stay; it is as simple as that! You are in it for good. There may be conflicts, challenges and even disappointments, but this will have no ability to shake the commitment of a married couple.

Like everyone else, I have had challenges in my marriage. I have had happy times and not so happy times. Nevertheless, I never consider the option of divorce. That option has been ruled out by the Word of God and by my level of commitment. Nothing can and nothing should be able to separate a married couple. **Our commitment to Christ is at the marital level of commitment.** The Bible teaches that we are supposed to be married to Christ.

**Wherefore my brethren... that ye should be MARRIED TO ANOTHER, EVEN TO HIM who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.**

**Romans 7:4**

When the commitment to the church rises to the level of marital commitment, the Bible teaches that we will begin to bring forth fruit unto God. The higher the commitment, the more the fruit. **It is only when a man and woman have marital commitment that they can successfully bring forth fruit (children).**

This is the type of commitment I expect from all pastors, leaders and mature members in the church. I am committed to them for life and I expect them to be committed to me for life. When a church has a pastor who is unstable, the

congregation can feel the instability. The church members are not ready to give their best if they feel that the pastor is there for just a season.

## **The Temporary Associate**

One day I was visited in my office by a senior pastor and his associate. I asked him, "How is the ministry?"

"We're not doing badly," he said. "We are having a few struggles though."

They continued, "As you know, our church has been going through one crisis after another."

The senior pastor continued, "It has not been easy. One person after the other keeps leaving the church."

Out of curiosity, I asked the associate, "Do you have any plans of starting your own ministry one day?"

"Certainly!" he said. "I am just working with this man for awhile, then I will launch out on my own."

"Oh, I see."

I told him (in front of his associate), "If I were you, I wouldn't like to work with someone who is using me as a springboard to start his own ministry."

I warned him, "When this pastor eventually leaves you, it will cause a lot of pain and conflict in the church."

"Really!" he exclaimed.

I advised him, "I personally do not believe that your closest associate should have such a low level of commitment. I think a pastor in the church should have the highest level of commitment. I believe he should have what I call marital commitment."

"I only want to work with people who are committed. This is because I can then pour out my life into them."

I explained further, "Take a young man and a young lady who are courting each other. A decent young woman would not be prepared to undress and perform acts of great

commitment with her fiancée. However, if this young man takes his fiancée to the marriage altar and signs a legal contract, then he can expect the highest level of commitment (till death us do part) from her. That same decent young lady would then be prepared to give her utmost commitment and flow into the deepest level of involvement.”

“Do you understand what I am saying,” I said to this pastor. He seemed to understand what I was saying.

“I would not like to get deeply involved with people unless they guarantee me the highest level of commitment,” I added.

Not long after, this senior pastor called me saying, “Just as you predicted, my associate has left me suddenly and it has caused me a lot of pain.”

At the time I had had the conversation with him, he had about seventy members in his church. However, after the associate left the church, he was left with only twenty people. The lack of a high level of commitment from associates and pastors is very damaging to a church. The congregation follows what they see the pastors do. If they see shallow commitment, they in turn will have a low level of commitment.

Let’s be committed to one another. I am the type of person who gives my utmost to help people. I do not want to pour out my life and soul into people only for them to despise and destroy me.

**Preach marital commitment. Teach marital commitment. The commitment of your members will rise. They will become solid building blocks of your Mega Church.**

Anytime you speak to a church member, assess his or her level of commitment. Try to place him in one of these four levels. Then you must work on him or her for a higher level of commitment. If your members are very committed, no one can invite them away or steal them from you.



**For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

**Romans 8:38,39**

## **CHAPTER 10**

# **HOW TO DEVELOP DEVOTED MEMBERS**

A person goes through three stages when becoming established as a member of your church. As a shepherd, you must be able to distinguish between the different types of members that you have.

**...he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.**

**Matthew 25:32**

## **DEER STAGE MEMBERS**

When a person is initially converted, he behaves like a deer: untamed, swift-footed and difficult to keep in one place. You have to track them down through the mountains and the forest. They are difficult to handle. It is important to move your members out of this stage. When you visit them, they play “hide-and-seek” with you. Deer are nimble creatures.

### **The Deer and the Assistant Deer**

Seventeen years ago I visited a deer stage member called Adelaide. Somehow, she did not want to see her shepherd at all. This was one of the deer in my fellowship. I was trying to convert her from the deer stage to the sheep stage. I remember one evening when I knocked on her door in Volta Hall of the University of Ghana.

A voice from within answered, “Who is there?”

“It’s me Brother Dag. I’m looking for Sister Adelaide.”

After a few moments her roommate said, “Come in.” This roommate happened to be her sister Irene.

“Hello. We are looking for Adelaide. Is she in?”

The roommate smiled sweetly, "Sorry, she's not in."

"Oh, I see. Where did she go?"

"I'm not sure, she just went out."

"Alright, please tell her I came by to check on her."

"Okay," she smiled again sweetly. "When she comes back I'll tell her you were here."

Each room had its own balcony, and unknown to me Adelaide was hiding there. I was a shepherd who was dealing with a deer and an assistant deer. Only deer dodge and hide. However, I worked on them until they became sheep. Today, they are stable "sheep" members.

## GOAT STAGE MEMBERS

Goats are a little better than deer. They are far more homely and easily accessible. However, a goat is much more independent than a sheep. They do what they want to do and are less likely to follow. When a church member graduates from the deer stage, they move on to the goat stage. As soon as a deer sees a human being, it takes off, whereas a goat remains. **Goats are friendlier than deer, though they can often have traces of stubbornness.**

## SHEEP STAGE MEMBERS

Sheep are the best of the three groups. Your goal as a pastor should be to have your church full of devoted sheep. These people follow the shepherd. They stay together and move with the group. Such members are much easier to pastor.

Sheep are often devoted, committed, faithful, dependable and loving members. If your church is full of devoted sheep, you will be a happy pastor. They will stay near you always, and receive your ministration.

## **DEVELOPING DEVOTED MEMBERS**

**They DEVOTED themselves to the instruction given by the apostles and to fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(Moffatt translation)**

**And they CONTINUED STEADFASTLY in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(King James Version)**

**They DEVOTED themselves to the apostles' teaching and to the fellowship...**

**Acts 2:42  
(New International Version)**

The number one task of a shepherd is to transform the members from deer to devoted sheep. How is this possible?

**But we all... are CHANGED into the same image from glory to glory.**

## **2 Corinthians 3:18**

Now the word “change” comes from a Greek word metamorphoo, which means metamorphosis. The word metamorphosis always reminds us of a dramatic transformation that occurs inside a cocoon when a larvae changes into a butterfly. When you see a butterfly elegantly fluttering around, you have no idea what it used to be like. There has been a drastic and major change – metamorphosis.

It is this same kind of metamorphosis, that can take place in the members of a church. People change because of the ministry of the Word. They are transformed by the renewing of their minds. Loose and dodgy Christians can become devoted and committed zealots.

In this next section, I want to share with you a few keys on how to develop devoted membership. The first important thing is that you the pastor be devoted. Devotion is a spiritual thing, it can be perceived. There are three main areas in which you can develop devoted membership: who you are, what you say and what you do.

### **KEY #1 BE A DEVOTED PASTOR!**

The pastor must be devoted to his church and his church members. Devotion is a spiritual thing. It is transmitted sometimes by osmosis – from person to person. The unspoken commitment and sacrifice of the leadership is contagious, it passes from one member to another without speaking. Why do I say this? Because not all pastors are committed to their churches.

I began my ministry as a medical student. In 1987, I was already struggling as a pastor/medical student. The tradition for newly qualified doctors in Ghana is for them to travel to America to seek “greener pastures”. Medical doctors earn thousands of dollars in America, England and South Africa.

My fledgling church was full of people watching to see whether I would remain in Ghana or move out of the country. When the time came for the decision to be made, I declared boldly to my members that I was staying with them. I wasn't going to leave them. From that time, I noticed a dramatic change in the commitment of the members to the church.

The sheep can sense the pastor's commitment. No one wants to follow someone who will abandon him midstream. In addition to the senior pastor being devoted, associates and assistants must be equally committed and devoted. The assistant pastors must be devoted to the senior pastor as well as to the church members. The seed of devotion leads to a harvest of multiplied commitment from the church members.

## **KEY #2**

### **SAY POSITIVE THINGS ABOUT THE CHURCH**

Everybody wants to be part of a good thing. That is human nature. People are more likely to be devoted to something that is successful than to something that is failing. I have learnt that you can make your church flourish by using your mouth. If you want your church to grow, tell the members that they are part of a good church. Speak positively about the other pastors in the church. Do not criticize the pastors

of the church.

That is why we call the Lighthouse Chapel International, The Mega Church. I am aware that this worries some people. It is just our faith confession! We know we have a long way to go. We know that we are still learning. But we believe that we have a Mega ministry with a Mega impact in a lost and dying world!

## **KEY #3**

### **SAY POSITIVE THINGS ABOUT THE PASTORS**

**The associate pastor must say positive things about the senior pastor.** He must say things like, "This is some of the best teaching you can get anywhere in the world." You must tell the church, "We are blessed to have such a man of God as our pastor." Acts chapter two says that they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine (teaching). One version puts it this way,

**And they steadfastly persevered DEVOTING themselves constantly...**

**Acts 2:42  
(Amplified version)**

You can make your church members devoted to your teaching. Let them hear that it is the best they can get anywhere. The assistant pastor must constantly make the church aware of the precious gift that God has graciously given to them in their senior pastor.

## I am the Best Preacher for My Church

I believe I am the best preacher for my church. This is not vanity, it is biblical commonsense. I am their shepherd and I know what is best for my people. When God gives a woman a baby, he fills her breasts with milk for her baby. God does not fill another woman's breast with milk for that baby.

Similarly, God has filled my spirit with the Word of God for my sheep. My spiritual breasts are full of spiritual milk for my spiritual children. That is why I preach all the time to my church members. **I have other pastors, but I do ninety percent of the preaching and teaching. This is because I am the shepherd and God gave me the duty of feeding the sheep.**

Pastors ought to take charge of the pulpit and discharge their duties honorably. Thank God for visiting ministers. Many have ministered at my church and have been a blessing, but I am the best shepherd for my sheep.

In various ways, I make my church members devoted to my teaching and preaching. I let them know that it's the best thing for them. If your members are not devoted to your preaching and teaching they will be devoted to someone else's ministry, and your church will not grow.

I have watched how visiting preachers are appreciated more than a resident pastor. This is unfortunate! Visiting pastors are often hailed as superheroes, whilst their resident pastors are ignored. The church members should not be deceived into thinking that the visiting minister has more to offer than their own pastor. He does not! He may have something different but he does not have anything better! It is only because the pastor from the church fed the sheep so well that there is a congregation groomed enough to receive a



visiting minister.

One translation of Acts 2:42 says that they were devoted **“to the teaching of the apostles and to fellowship with another.”** In Bible times, the Christians were devoted to two principal things:

- Their pastors' teachings.
- Fellowshiping with one another.

Read Acts 2:42 for yourself! Read it from different versions of the Bible. It is crystal clear! Any simpleton should be able to understand these two strategic keys of church growth.

Get your church to be like the New Testament Church and you will have the thousands that are spoken of in the Book of Acts. **If you don't have an associate pastor who says good things about your teaching, then get one that does!**

## **KEY #4**

### **SAY GOOD THINGS ABOUT YOUR CHURCH MEMBERS**

In order to encourage inter-sheep relationships you must speak good things about your church members. Some people say things like, “I don't trust these church members.” “I don't want any church member in my house.” Although some church members may disappoint you, do not maintain a negative attitude towards all other members. That would be a big mistake!

I have heard Christians say, “I'd rather employ a Muslim than

a Christian.” That is unscriptural! The Bible teaches us to do good to Christians, especially your church members.

**Because we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, ESPECIALLY UNTO THEM WHO ARE OF THE HOUSEHOLD OF FAITH.**

**Galatians 6:10**

The fact that you have had unpleasant experiences with Christian men does not mean that you should marry an unbeliever. You are reacting in the wrong way. You are moving into foolishness!

Speak positively about Christians, especially your own church members. This will cause your church members to interact with each other. If you say evil things about them, new members will not form vital bonding relationships.

There is a principle at work here. **People are often attracted to the church by the pastor, but they often remain in the church because of the internal relationships they establish.** Never forget this! People stay in a church because of relationships they have in the church. It is the duty of the pastor to create interaction between members of the church.

This is a very important key to implement, if you really desire to have a large church. The Bible says that they were devoted to the fellowship. Members must be devoted to the fellowship of Christians in the same church. If you have members who hardly know each other, then introduce and influence them to develop relationships.

Encourage them to be committed to the church. Teach them that it is important to attend church all of the time. **Teach them not to make a habit of hopping from church to**

**church, just to see what is happening elsewhere.**

Explain to them that it is only the devil who goes “to and fro” (Job 1:7).

## **KEY #5 ENCOURAGE EMPLOYERS TO HIRE CHURCH MEMBERS**

Practically speaking, you can also encourage the members to be devoted to one another’s fellowship in many different ways. When I have a church member who is an employer in a strategic position, I encourage him to consciously help other members to get jobs. Do not think that this will happen naturally, the pastor’s involvement is important.

When one Lighthouse member secures a job in a company, you will often find several other members finding their way there. Nowadays, this often happens naturally without my involvement. However, in the beginning I had to encourage this interaction. Many people were put off by the bad behavior of some church members. Do not overreact to the disgraceful behavior that some church members put up when they are employed. Church members are human beings. Keep on recommending in the Spirit of love and forgiveness.

One employer said that he would not employ a member of the church because the church member would arrive to work late, claiming he went witnessing early in the morning. That is nonsense! Witnessing is not supposed to make you arrive late for work. I would encourage to sack such a person. Church members are supposed to be disciplined!

**KEY #6**  
**ENCOURAGE MEMBERS TO APPLY FOR**  
**WORK**  
**FROM WITHIN THE CHURCH FAMILY**

When you have a member who needs a job, direct him to other church members that can help him to get a job. This increases the members commitment because the sheep will see that you really care for them. The church then becomes an important family to belong to.

**KEY #7**  
**ENCOURAGE CHURCH MEMBERS TO**  
**MARRY EACH OTHER**

Have you ever noticed how a young lady seems so committed to a church? Many of them have relationships within that church. Often it is their fiancée that is the glue which fixes them to the church. They are cemented to the church by their relationship. This is what I call shepherdorial cement. As I said earlier, they may be attracted initially to the church by the charismatic man of God, but they remain because of the relationships they acquire within the church!

I repeatedly tell my church members that the person they want to marry can be found within our congregation. If they want a tall, short, fat, skinny, fair or dark person; they can find their choice within the congregation! Of course, it is not a sin to marry from outside your own church. Many people in my church do that! All I am saying is that I encourage my church members to intermarry.

Anytime one of our “daughters”, in whom we have invested, is married and taken to another church, we lose a church

member. However, if this member stays on in the church, she will contribute to church growth. The couple will also have children who will become members of our children's church, and eventually our adult assembly. You may want to argue with my theory, but it's working very well for me!

## **KEY #8**

### **ENCOURAGE MEMBERS TO SOCIALIZE AND FRATERNIZE**

The New Testament church was devoted to fellowshiping one with another! Sometimes people will accuse us of sticking to ourselves and not interacting with outsiders. However, that is not our intention at all! Our intention is also to interact with outsiders in order to win souls.

But make sure you encourage your church members to have their friends from within the church. **If your church members friends are within the church, they will have two reasons for coming to church.** Firstly, they will come for spiritual nourishment. Secondly, they will come to meet with their friends. You can easily lose members whose friends are mainly people outside the church.

## **KEY #9**

### **DEVELOP SMALLER CHURCH FAMILIES WITHIN THE BIG CHURCH**

My church is made out of many small groups. Some groups have ten members, five, and even others have fifty.

It is these small groups, called ministries and fellowships, which form the nucleus of family relationships in our church.

You may be surprised to discover that people are more committed to these smaller groups than to the big church. When there is a wedding or funeral, it is usually the concern of these smaller groups. Even when there is a social event, most of the friends are drawn out of these same groups.

## **KEY #10 BECOME A FATHER OR MOTHER TO YOUR CHURCH**

Some pastors never develop beyond being a teacher of doctrines and truths. Chicks gather around the mother hen because of her motherly security

**...I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings...**

**Matthew 23:37**

If you want your church to grow, develop fatherly or motherly attributes. Be everything to your sheep. Be a friend. Be a brother. Be a father. Show concern for your flock. Show interest in things that concern them. Be interested in their school. Ask for details concerning their businesses. Help them in their marriages. Correct them when they are wrong. Rebuke them and discipline them when they need it. Don't just give them good teachings. Become a mother or a father to your flock. **The anointing to be a father or mother is the anointing to gather.**

**To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak; I AM MADE ALL THINGS TO ALL MEN, THAT I MIGHT BY ALL MEANS SAVE SOME.**

**1 Corinthians 9:22**

# **CHAPTER 11**

## **RETENTION EVANGELISM**

## The population/Follow-up graph

One of the secrets of church growth is the secret of “retention evangelism”. Retention evangelism is the art of winning souls and retaining them. Every pastor must learn to keep what he already has at all costs.

**...Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

Jesus did not waste any of his blessings. He wanted to save as much as he could. The same applies to church growth. Our problem is not one of bringing new people to the church, but one of getting them to stay! If we can retain all the visitors and souls who come in through the front door, we will build a Mega Church for Jesus.

A Mega Church pastor is interested in what others despise. **Be interested in every single member.** Jesus collected the fragments. If the fragments were important to the Lord, then the fragments must be important to you. Every member, big or small, rich or poor, must be important to you!



**...Of them which thou gavest me HAVE I LOST  
NONE.**

**John 18:9**

Let me share with you three vital strategies for retaining church members.

## **FOLLOW-UP BRINGS RETENTION**

Many years ago, I learnt a simple truth which has stayed with me ever since. This truth has helped me greatly in the ministry. It is the secret of retention through follow-up.

My physics teacher once showed me a graph of the population of a chicken farm. The graph showed the population of chickens remaining constant at a low level for a long period. At a point, the chickens began to multiply and the farm population increased greatly. Something had happened to make the chickens multiply.

I then looked at the population of the world, which had remained constant up until the beginning of the twentieth century. At the turn of the century, the population of the world began to expand greatly.

The question was: "What caused the sudden increase of the chicken population on the farm?" The other question was: "What made the population of the world increase so radically?"

The answer was simple. When the chickens in the chicken farm received the right medication and stopped dying from epidemics, the number of chickens suddenly increased.

With the world's population, the pattern was the same. The reason for growth in the world's population was not the result of people having more babies. In fact, the number of births had been relatively the same. The reason for the growth was that a greater number of people were staying alive due to medical science.

Medical science has improved remarkably from the beginning of the twentieth century. Diseases that have killed human beings years ago are now treated with one injection. Children no longer die from tuberculosis and malaria as they used

There is a great revelation to be derived from these two graphs! **If we can prevent a large number of converts from dropping out, then the church will experience the growth of the chicken farm.** If we can stop the falling away of so many Christians, perhaps we will experience sudden accelerated growth like the world population did.

### The population/Follow-up graph

This can be the graph of your church's membership. The turning point, as you can see, is the point at which retention begins. I see your church multiplying greatly in Jesus' name!

Every successful pastor must have the picture of this Follow-up Graph firmly imprinted in his spirit. The follow-up ministry is important because without it, our fasting and praying for church growth is in vain. Without follow-up, all of our efforts are useless! Without follow-up, all evangelism is worthless. Let us not make fools of ourselves. If we evangelize and invite people to church, why don't we follow them up? I believe that every new convert must be followed-up.

## **THE ART OF FOLLOW-UP**

You must bear in mind that the follow-up ministry is both a physical and spiritual exercise. It consists of three main components: prayer, visitation and teaching. Always remember that the church is not a social club. It is a spiritual organism, which operates through prayer and the Word of God.

### **Pray for Visitors and Converts**

Pray that all visitors and converts will come back to the church. Declare that they will come back again next week. Prophecy that when they go back home, they will return next week with more people. Pray that when they return they will come back with their families. Pray that they will become established in Christ! You travailed for them to be born again, now travail for Christ to be formed in them!

**My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until CHRIST BE FORMED in you.**

**Galatians 4:19**

Without prayer, you are wasting your time. I really want to emphasize that prayer is important in order to achieve anything for the kingdom of God. **Pastors must emit spiritual energy whenever they speak or minister.** Lead your entire church in prayer for the establishment of visitors and converts in the church.

## **Visit New Converts and Visitors**

It is important to visit all new converts and visitors. This is an area where many of the church members can get involved.

**Churches are full of sleepy and lazy Christians who contribute nothing to the work of God.** One person cannot effectively visit that many people. However, one hundred trained workers can do a great deal more. I involve many people in following-up new converts.

There are three types of visits that church members must be trained to participate in.

### **IDL Visit**

This is done to **I**dentify and **L**ocate the homes of converts. I encourage church members to accompany new converts to their homes after the service. This first visit is used to locate their homes. Sometimes the official address does not correspond to the reality on the street. Physically going to homes to identify them is a powerful first step in the visitation process.

### **WELP Visit**

This visit is done to minister the **W**ord. You must **E**ncourage

the new converts. This second visit will demonstrate that you really Love them. Finally, you must Pray with them for the establishment of their soul and for their general welfare.

## **ABA Visit**

This involves **Anagkazo**, **Biazo** and **Anaideia** (for further study read "Anagkazo" by Bishop Heward-Mills). Sometimes you must visit your members and bring them physically with you to church. Demonstrate that you care by patiently waiting for them as they get ready for church. Then you take them to church. Many inactive Christians will become active if they find something to do in the church. Teach these three types of visitation for following-up new converts. You will discover how many more of your members will become active Christians.

## **Do Not Waste Your Time**

You will have to be careful not to waste your time on non-serious converts. The Bible teaches us that we should commit things to faithful people. In other words, do not waste too much time on unfaithful people.

**And the things that thou hast heard of me... COMMIT THOU TO FAITHFUL MEN...**

**2 Timothy 2:2**

The word faithful means constant and reliable. When a new convert says that he will be there and then does not show up, this may be a sign of unfaithfulness. **Learn to distinguish between the faithful converts and unfaithful converts. Then direct your time and investment to the faithful ones.**

On several occasions, I have wasted my time on non-serious converts (they probably weren't even born again). With time, I have learnt to distinguish between people who are serious with God and others who are just playing games. When you have many converts, you really have to learn to distinguish who is serious and who is not.

When you have more converts than lay workers, it is crucial that you determine who is serious and who is not. **If you are outnumbered, you should only follow-up those who are serious.**

## CONCENTRATE TO RETAIN

Retention evangelism requires concentration. In every city, there are many different churches and pastors. Many of these pastors and churches interact and end up having all sorts of conflicts. Unfortunately, in the real world, you will see competition between churches and pastors. There will always be one or two pastors fighting for supremacy over the body of Christ in their city.

Who is the father and leader of us all? Some will claim, "I am the father and leader of all Christians in this city." Others will take sides and join one faction or the other. I want to tell you right here, that your church will not grow if you involve yourself in these things.

Politics consumes both time and energy. **Church growth requires concentration.** The rays of the sun shine on us everyday, yet none of us catches fire. Were you to take a magnifying glass and concentrate the rays of the sun unto one spot, you could set a piece of paper on fire. The

principle at work here is the principle of concentration. When the rays of the sun are not concentrated, they have no power to light a fire.

**Direct your spiritual energy towards your calling.** Our principal goal must be to fulfill the call of God on our lives. A prophet relayed a vision he had had to a friend of mine. He saw a world famous man of God standing on a platform. Behind the platform were two electric generators. One of the generators was on and the other was off. The voice of God came loud and clear in this vision, "This man of God has neglected one half of his ministry." He had set aside the power and evangelistic dimension of his call and was only doing half of what he was called to do.

Two weeks after this revelation, this world famous man of God died suddenly. That was a real shock to everyone, including me. Failing to concentrate can cost you your church. It can cost you your ministry. It can even cost you your life!

## **DEVOTION BRINGS RETENTION**

Another essential method for retaining your membership is to teach devotion to the church. You must teach them to be devoted to the pastor's teachings. You must teach them to be devoted to one another's fellowship. We have discussed this at length in a previous chapter.

It is also very important for the pastor to be devoted to his members. When a pastor is devoted to his members it leads to retention. Anytime there is a wedding, funeral, baby dedication or some crisis in your church member's life; you have a chance to practice devotion. That is your golden

opportunity to devote yourself to your sheep. Stand by them at the graveside. Be there in their deepest sorrow. Attend their important events. This demonstrates your devotion to them. You are fulfilling a principle, whatsoever a man sows he shall reap. **You will reap the devoted membership of your church members.** Many years ago I heard a seasoned pastor say, "If you stand by your members in their time of need, they will stand by you in yours."



# **CHAPTER 12**

## **HOW TO HAVE PERMANENT CHURCH MEMBERS**

The Lord emphasized to me was the need to have permanent church members. I realized that many of the young church members were vacillators. **The best type of church member is a permanent church member.** A permanent member is unmovable, stable and dependable throughout the years. A very important characteristic of that member is that his mind and heart are saying, "I am here, and I am here forever."

I am no fool. Of course I know that not everybody is going to stay forever. Yet, it is important for people to have the mind of staying around forever. I am not God. If God, by His Spirit, would lead someone away from our church, there is nothing I can do about it. It is the same thing with marriage. No good person enters a marriage with the mind that "I am in this marriage for just a few years. Who would like to marry such a person?"

### **My Famous Announcement**

One day I told my church, "I have decided to go to America to study cardiothoracic surgery." I announced, "I am going to be a heart surgeon."

I went on to explain, "The course will last for about five years after which I will need to gain some experience on the job. That will last for another five years, making the trip a total of ten years."

The whole congregation was shocked. "Ooooooh," they said, "It can't be possible." They all looked very sad. "Why are you sad?" I asked, "Don't you want me to go away?"

I asked them, "How many of you would like me to be here in three years time?" Everybody raised their hands.

I asked again, "How many of you here would like me to be here in seven years time?" Again, they all raised their hands. "So you don't want me to go," I said.

They all shouted, "No!"

I began to laugh. Then I told them, "I was just joking. I'm glad you want me to stay! I realize that you want me to stay permanently!"

I went on, "If you would like me to be here in seven years time, I would also like you to be here seven years from now. Just as you want me to be your permanent pastor, preaching to you and praying for you, I also want you to be permanent members for me!"

**I believe in permanent members and permanent commitment.** I would strongly recommend all pastors to teach their congregations about being permanently joined to the church. Listen to me, faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God (Romans 10:17). What you teach your people is what they will believe. If you want them to be a permanent part of the ministry, teach them and they will be!

**The church members want a permanent pastor and we the pastors want permanent members.** I am going to give

you several reasons that you can share with any congregation as to why they should become permanent members of the church. If you teach these things, your members will stop jumping around from church to church.

## **REASON #1 THEY ARE PART OF A FAMILY**

**Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is name.  
Ephesians 3:15**

The first reason why people must be permanently part of the church is because they are part of a family. When every church member is taught that the church is a family, they will be less willing to leave. Every family has its problems! In every family, you have conflicts and misunderstandings. But there is simply no way you can leave your family. You are simply a part of that family whether you like it or not.

A misunderstanding with your uncle does not lead you to change your name. Teach the church members that misunderstandings and hurts should not make them change their churches. Family members belong together in a lifetime commitment. Church members must belong to the same family in a lifetime commitment.

## **REASON #2 THEY ARE PART OF A BUILDING**

**For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, YE ARE GOD'S BUILDING.**

## 1 Corinthians 3:9

The second reason why people need to be permanent is because they are part of God's building. The Bible clearly teaches that we are God's building. Every Christian must know that he is part of God's building, which is the church. You cannot easily remove the blocks of a building. Blocks are a permanent part of the structure. **How would you feel if you came home and your bedroom had moved to the next house?** Sections of buildings do not move around!

I teach my church to see themselves as permanent building blocks in the building called Lighthouse Chapel International. I tell them that I have never seen a building block walk out of a building before. Such an occurrence would be magical. I trust that there is no magician amongst the members.

## REASON #3 THEY ARE PART OF A GARDEN

**And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to my vineyard: [garden] I will take away the hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; and break down the wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down.**

**Isaiah 5:1**

Throughout scripture, we see believers being referred to as a garden. If we are like a garden, than each of us is like a plant in the garden. If you uproot a plant and then you replant it in

another spot, you endanger the life of that shrub. In fact, if you do this repeatedly you will kill the plant.

**It is a common fact that planting and replanting kills plants. God has no plan for planting and replanting His people in different churches every few years.** If every time your roots go a little deeper you move around you will kill yourself spiritually. I have noticed that Christians who are planted and replanted in different churches often do not survive spiritually.

When the Lord asked the devil where he had been, the devil replied, "I've been roaming in the earth." The devil does not sit still, he moves "to and fro" and "up and down" in the earth. If you move to and fro from church to church your lifestyle resembles the devil.

**And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going TO AND FRO in the earth, and from walking UP AND DOWN in it.**

**Job 1:7**

## **REASON #4 THEY ARE PART OF A TREE**

**I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.**

**John 15:5**

Another important revelation is that you are a part of a tree. Jesus said that He was the vine and we were the branches. Everyone knows that a branch cut off from the tree is dead.

Branches were intended to be permanently fastened to bigger branches or tree trunks.

**If you are indeed a branch, have no plans of moving anywhere.** People who move from church to church often do not flourish in the kingdom of God. They experience stunted growth and some even backslide and go to hell.

## **Pastor Turns Rasta**

Recently I was speaking with a prophet of God. He told me how the Lord had shown him a dream, how a pastor who had jumped from church to church had backslidden and had become a Rastafarian. This prophetic dream was predicting that the vacillating pastor was going to fall. This was a warning to the unstable pastor.

Cutting yourself off and attempting to reattach yourself is risky business. I believe in permanent membership. I teach permanent membership. I campaign for permanent members. My people want a permanent pastor, and I want permanent members.

## **REASON #5 THEY WILL FLOURISH IF THEY ARE PLANTED**

**Those that be planted in the house of the Lord shall  
FLOURISH in the courts of our God.**

**Psalms 92:13**

The next reason for permanent membership is so that you

will flourish. You will notice that I have a scriptural basis for each of these points. What I am sharing with you is sound biblical doctrine. I am not saying that there are no grounds for a person to leave a church (for further study see book “Ministerial Ethics” by Bishop Heward-Mills). Not at all! What I am saying is that you must teach people to be permanently attached and permanently planted for their own benefit. Sheep will follow and obey what their shepherd tells them.

The Bible tells us plainly that those who are planted will flourish. I have watched Christians and pastors who move around from place to place. **You cannot compare a planted member to a roving member.** Stay in one place. Develop roots and flourish!

As you remain in one place, you will develop businesses and business contacts. Members of the church will begin to rely on you for their business. You will develop lasting friendships that may help you during your lifetime. Staying in one place for only a couple of years does not allow you to develop the sort of relationships that you need for a blessed life.

## **REASON #6**

### **THEY CAN INVEST FREELY WHEN THEY ARE PERMANENT**

It is so nice to live in one's own house. It is very different from renting a house. When you live in your own house, you can invest freely. You can pour in freely. You can pour in your money, your time and your life. Why is this? Because it is yours and you are going to be there permanently. No one wants to spend any money on a house that doesn't belong to

him. After all, he is only going to use the place for a few months.

When we acquired our own church building, we invested freely into the structure. One day the contractor told me, “I want to build this building as perfectly as possible because I am going to be here for life.”

“I want the floor to be smooth and perfect because I intend to die as a member of Lighthouse,” he added.

He continued, “One day when I am dead and they are carrying my coffin into the church for the funeral service, I don’t want anyone to trip and fall over a crooked floor.”

I laughed. This was a joke but he was also making a serious point. He had planned to be there for life. In other words, he had opted for permanent membership.

Permanent members will be encouraged to give of their money freely. They know that they are building a church for their children’s weddings. They know that they will see the fruit of their investments.

## **REASON #7**

### **THEY WILL HAVE FAMILY TO CELEBRATE THEIR VICTORIES**

I preach faith and hope for the future. I teach my members that things are going to get better. Many poor people come to the church. As they hear the Word, their faith rises and they begin to see better things ahead.

If they are permanent members, they will live to celebrate their victories in the church. If they are not permanent, in the day of their victory they will have no one to rejoice with.



**Remember that joy shared is double joy and sorrow shared is half sorrow.**

**Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.**

**Romans 12:15**

They will have a family to rejoice with as you dedicate their new houses, new cars and new babies. You will stand together and remember how the Lord took them from the beginning and brought so far!

I have often reminisced with my friends about the ministry. We ponder over how the Lord has been kind to us. We laugh about things that threatened us some years ago. We say like the psalmist,

**When the Lord turned again the captivity of Zion, we were like them that dream. Then was our mouth filled with laughter and our tongue with singing: then said they among the heathen, The Lord has done great things for them.**

**Psalms 126:1,2**

Who will you sit down with to quote this scripture to one day? Will you have abandoned all the friends with whom you struggled in the early days? A permanent relationship will give you people to rejoice with in the day of rejoicing. Better days are ahead. I teach my church that our better days are yet to come. I want them to stay around to see the better days of this ministry.

I remember when I used to speak about miracles. It was more like a dream. Today we have real miracles abounding in our midst. The Lord has been good to us. We are seeing better days. When you are permanent you will have a family

to go through your mourning with you. Joy shared is double joy, but sorrow shared is half sorrow.

## **REASON #8**

### **THEY WILL SEE THE FRUIT OF THEIR LABOR**

It is important for Christians to know that harvest time is coming in the future. What is the use of laboring in a church for years, only to leave just before harvest time? Some of the people who were with me in the days of real struggles are no longer around to enjoy the blessings. That is a pity! That is the price you pay for not being permanent.

Anyone who is double-minded about their commitment becomes unstable in other areas of his life. The Bible states that such a person is unstable in all his ways. Be stable. Be permanent. Be blessed.

**A double minded man is UNSTABLE in all his ways.**  
**James 1:8**

## **REASON #9**

### **THEY WILL AVOID THE DECEPTION OF SHORT RELATIONSHIPS**

Short relationships are sweet whilst they last. There are no quarrels, no emotional disturbances, no worrying comments or misunderstandings. Long relationships have often been through much testing.

Long relationships that have survived the tests of time are better. Greater trust develops. You also know what to expect in the relationship. I prefer to work with someone I have known for a long time rather than with someone I have just met.

## **Joshua Made That Mistake!**

Joshua made the mistake of forming an alliance with someone he didn't really know. He thought the Gibeonites were ambassadors from a far country. Little did he know that they had lied to him in order to secure a peace treaty. He later discovered their true identity. But it was too late! He was already bound to the peace accord, although it was done under a cover of deception.

**...And Joshua said unto them, Who are ye? and from whence come ye? And they [Gibeonites] said unto him, From a very far country... And it came to pass at the end of three days after they had made a league with them, that they heard that they were their neighbours, and they they dwelt among them.**

**Joshua 9:8,9, 16**

What I am saying is that longer relationships are safer relationships. Permanent members will be able to develop genuine relationships with genuine people. As the years go by, the members will know whether they have a genuine pastor or not and they will be more committed.

**REASON #10  
THEY WILL HAVE CONSISTENT**

## **PASTORAL CARE**

The church, like a hospital, cares for you. Your permanent pastor can cater for you better because he has been with you for a long time and knows your history better. He is better equipped to minister to you.

Church members often leave churches when they think the pastor has discovered their secret sins. You must want your pastor to have access to your life so that he can minister in the area where you really need help.

### **REASON #11 THEY WILL BE REWARDED FOR FAITHFULNESS**

The next important for being a permanent member is that God will reward His children for faithfulness. Faithfulness means loyalty, constancy and permanence.

**Well done, good and faithful servant... enter thou into the joy of the Lord.**

**Matthew 25:23**

Please note in this scripture that the servant is recommended for his faithfulness. He is not recommended for his charisma or his gifting. Being a permanent member is part of the life of faithfulness. Be faithful. Be permanent. One day, Jesus will tell you, "Enter thou into the joy of the Lord." That is the day I am waiting for. I just want to hear Him say, "Well done, good and faithful (permanent and loyal) servant."

# **CHAPTER 13**

## **THE SECRET OF INDUSTRIALIZATION**

I like to think of the future and how things will be like in some years to come. I have often wondered what our church will be like in a few years. As I pondered over the future of the church, the Lord told me that one way I could secure the future was to develop a culture of industrialization.

God instructed me to industrialize my church. He showed me how our nation, at that time, was only importing goods from western countries and reselling them at a profit. "There is no future in this," the Lord said. "Have you noticed that the richest nations of the world are all involved in producing important products?"

I said to the lord, "Yes, I do."

God showed me that the richest nations of the world produce cars. The best cars come from the richest countries of the world. These countries are rich because they produce something. The church will be rich in souls if we begin to be

spiritually industrialized!

Just as the success of the nations of the world depend on them producing something, the success of the church depends on it producing souls. **An industry is an organized system of producing goods and services regularly.**

**An industry is a deliberate (intentionally) organized system. It comes out with a well-defined product on a regular basis.** It does not only produce its products when it is convenient. It does produce goods accidentally. An industry is also very profit-oriented. Any nation that does not establish industries is doomed to buy secondhand things forever. It is doomed to be at the mercy of those who produce goods and services.

When I speak of industrialization, I am not speaking of making money. I am talking about churning out souls deliberately and regularly. **I am a “businessman” for God, and my currency is human souls.** Your church will have reached an industrialized stage when it begins to churn out souls regularly and systematically. The important word here is regular. I know of some car factories that produce one car every three minutes.

Jesus said in **Luke 19:13, “Occupy (do business) till I come.”** That is, industrialize and commercialize with diligence until I come. In other words, Jesus expects us to take the business of soul winning as a very serious enterprise. Soul winning should be intentional and not incidental.

Many pastors are afraid of starting churches because they do not know how to win souls. Others don't know how to follow-up and establish converts in the Lord. They only know how to break churches and take away half of somebody's church

members. No industry turns out a car accidentally. It is a deliberate planned exercise. **It is time for us to deliberately win souls with the regularity of a factory.**

God showed me how to setup the church and ministry to deliberately and regularly win souls every month. My church is divided into chapels, ministries and fellowships. Each ministry is supposed to have a monthly regular outreach.

**The Lord showed me that it is important for the ministries to develop the habit of having a monthly outreach without needing a special exhortation to do so.** Car factories do not need a charismatic manager to preach about the importance of producing their product for the month! In contrast, churches and ministries seem to need a special emotional seminar on soul winning. Without this, everybody forgets about the harvest. Surely this is not an industrialized church.

That is why I initiated ministries and fellowships, so that we would win some souls every month. I am not directly involved in the winning of those souls. It is done at the ministry and fellowship level. I do not have to go and whip up enthusiasm for the winning of souls before it happens. It just happens automatically.

An industry is profit conscious.

**Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls [souls]:**

**Matthew 13:45**

An industrialized church is concerned about how many people are being converted every month. It is biblical to be interested in the number of souls that are being added to the church daily, weekly or monthly.

**...And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.**

**Acts 2:47**

It is interesting to note how many pastors rarely do altar calls. Many ministers do not care about lost souls. Instead, they care about how impressive they were and how powerfully they ministered!

After ministering at a convention, the host pastor said something to me that struck my heart. He said, "You are the only minister who made an altar call during this convention." I asked myself, "Have altar calls for salvation become obsolete?" How sad! The primary job of the church is being relegated to the background.

Salvation altar calls are compulsory in every service we have. I make altar calls at all weddings and funerals. Industrialize your church – regularly and deliberately conduct outreaches. I see you increasing as you industrialize your church!

When a church is industrialized, even when the charismatic leader is no more, the church will continue to grow on its own accord. Why industrialize? So that we may increase and not diminish.

**...Build ye houses, and dwell in them; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them; Take ye wives, and beget sons and daughters; and take wives for your sons, and give your daughters to husbands, that they may bear sons and daughters; that YE MAY BE INCREASED THERE, AND NOT DIMINISHED.**

**Jeremiah 29:5,6**



# **CHAPTER 14**

## **LOYALTY AND THE MEGA CHURCH**

My few years in the ministry have made me very aware of the consequences of having both loyal and disloyal people in ministry. I have noticed the impact that it has on churches and ministries. In the next few pages, I will share with you a few reasons why the subject of loyalty is very important especially in relation to building a Mega Church.

## **IT IS THE FOREMOST REQUIREMENT FOR EVERY MINISTER**

An inexperienced person is likely to think that the more gifted you are, the more qualified you are for the ministry. My experience has shown me that it is the faithful and loyal people in church who are most qualified to be leaders.

An inexperienced person would think that a friendly brother would make a good pastor. He may also think that someone with good oratory skills would make the best preacher. Do not make that mistake! The Bible teaches us that the cardinal requirement for leadership is faithfulness and not anything else.

**...it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.  
1 Corinthians 4:2**

I have many wonderful pastors who work with me in the ministry. Many of them are not overly friendly, flashy or particularly gifted. But time has proven that they are the best gifts that God has given to His church and to me.

## **TO FIGHT THE 5<sup>TH</sup> COLUMN**

Very early in my ministry I realized that the devil is an expert at destroying the church from within. If you are a good minister, called of God, and doing the right things, the devil will have very little opportunity to fight against you from inside. Like Jesus said,

**...the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in  
me.**

## **John 14:30**

You will realize that Satan often does not have the occasion to launch deadly attacks against you from outside. Jesus was saying that though the enemy was coming after him, Satan did not have any grounds to destroy him. There are many anointed preachers in this same category. Satan has no basis for which to overcome them so he has to use someone from within. In the case of Jesus, Satan used a traitor (Judas).

I recall reading the story of an army general who surrounded a large city with the aim of conquering it. This city was heavily fortified with a high and imposing wall and gate. The army general surrounded the city in readiness to attack.

A friend of the general came along and asked him, "Sir, how do you think you are going to overcome the defenses of this city? No one in recent history has been able to conquer this great city."

The army general smiled and said, "It's my 5th column. I'm depending on them to do the trick."

The general's friend was very interested and asked, "What is this 5th column? I thought you only had four columns."

The army general replied, "I do have a 5th column."

"Oh, I see. Is it a special commando unit or are they airborne paratroopers?" the man asked.

## **He Fought From Inside**

The general laughed, "No, it's none of these. My 5th column consists of my spies, agents, friends and supporters who are already within the city. You just wait. They will open those big gates from within and my armies will rush in."

This is the only way the enemy can destroy a successful and powerful ministry that is doing all the right things. It has to come from within. The 5th column is comprised of the disloyal, double-faced, double-tongued and discontented people within every ministry. If these people are allowed to wreck havoc as they so very well can, they will destroy the church.

## **I Have Experienced Treachery**

I remember years ago when I started out in the ministry, I experienced the effect of having a disloyal associate. This person, although officially standing on my right-hand side, did not believe in me and was always murmuring against me.

His home was the meeting place for all the discontented people in the church. Every time they gathered, they would discuss and criticize me. At times, they would talk about the way I preached. At other times, it was the way I sipped water in the middle of my sermons. Yet again, some felt I was not friendly enough. But the Lord revealed all these things to me. I prayed about it and asked the Lord what to do.

God told me, "Get rid of that guy!"

I said, "Lord, do you mean he must leave the church?"

And the Lord said, "I mean exactly that! Dismiss him otherwise you will never have peace and your church will never grow."

So I called for a meeting of the elders of the church. At the meeting I said, "I realize that Brother X is not in support of me. He's constantly full of bitter criticisms."

I said to Brother X, "I know that you do not believe in my leadership anymore. I trained you and brought you up, but today you are too big to remain under my authority."

I asked, "What do you think we should do?"  
Then the brother said, "Let's work things out."  
But the scripture that the Lord had shown me came floating up to my mind.

**Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease.**

**Proverbs 22:10**

I spoke up, pointed to my assistant and said, "You know as well as I do that it's not going to work. You don't believe in me anymore." I added, "From today, I have relieved you of all your duties in this church."  
He sputtered, "What," then said, "I will continue coming to church even though I may not have certain responsibilities."

## **Casting Out a Scorner!**

But I said to him, "No! You must leave! You are not part of us. Your presence in the church will only be destructive."

I tell you, it was no easy thing to dismiss a friend and associate of many years but it had to be done. The Old Testament showed us that when Abraham was in conflict with Lot, he directed Lot to go somewhere else! Abraham was saying, "If we are apart there will be peace and the work of God can continue."

A disloyal person breeds strife, hatred and murmuring. These disloyal sentiments are like smoke that fills an entire house. The only way to get rid of the smoke is to get rid of the fire.

If we want to have a large church, we need to minister with love and oneness. If we cannot be one, let's stop pretending.

You see, I encourage people to walk out of my church if their hearts are not with me.

**He that is not with me is against me...**

**Matthew 12:30**

I will beg you to leave, if I have to. I am serious about this. I will even give you money to pay for your transportation and snacks as you leave us! So that those of us who love one another and are confident about each other can stay together and continue working.

## **Deal with Imposters**

I don't know how to pretend. I simply do not know how to do it. In spite of that, there are many pretenders in the church. They pretend to love you and support you but in their heart, they despise you.

## **FOR THE LOVE OF GOD TO FILL THE CHURCH**

The church is supposed to operate with the power of love, unity and teamwork.

**By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.**

**John 13:35**

To minister as an effective leader you need to exhibit the love that Jesus spoke about. People are attracted by love. When they see leaders who flow together in genuine love, they are attracted. You must never forget that your church members are not blind. Neither are they deaf. They can see and feel

disunity and discord when it is there.

## **Still Waters**

One thing that every pastor must know about sheep is that they drink from still waters. If the water is murky and rough, the sheep will stay away. You see, they are not quite sure whether a crocodile is in the water or not!

**...he leadeth me beside the still waters.**

**Psalm 23:2**

Whenever there is treachery and distrust your church members become scared and wary and stay away.

## **TO HAVE A LARGE TEAM OF PASTORS**

One man can only do so much. One pastor can only be at one place at a time. He can only minister until his strength (which is limited) is exhausted. Because of this, anyone who wants to extend his ministry and bear much fruit has to learn to work with many other people. These people consist of the team that I am talking about.

**However, it would be better to work alone than with a team of disloyal, disgruntled, disunited and disaffected people.** In fact, it is not possible to have an effective team with such people. I believe I have only been able to do as much as I have done because of the team with whom I work.

## **TO HAVE A TRULY MEGA CHURCH**

As I am writing, there are Lighthouse churches all over the world – Accra, Toronto, Pretoria, New York and Geneva to mention a few. These churches are part of a network that is loyal to the headquarters of the church in Ghana.

People often ask me, “How do you sustain churches in all these different locations? What sort of controls do you have?” You see, much of the system depends on loyalty. The churches are pastored by ministers who are loyal to the Lord, me and to the Lighthouse vision.

**Without loyalty every network or denomination of churches constantly undergoes disintegration.** They frequently divide into splinter groups and smaller sub-churches.

## **A Major Church Split**

I remember the story of a branch church that disintegrated because of disunity among its ministers. Some longstanding seeds of disloyalty manifested shortly after a fundraising event in the local church. Because of this disagreement, the assistant pastor decided to resign and start his own church.

He was angry he returned all the money he had raised. The church members of course were very surprised that the money they had given to the church was being returned. This pastor then spread many hurtful stories about his denomination and its senior ministers. Naturally, this church virtually disintegrated following the pastor’s actions.

Dear friend, I can give you story after story of why churches (especially branch churches in big cities) constantly divide and break off. **What I can say for sure is that without**



**principled and loyal pastors the ministry of our Lord will always be limited.**

## **TO HAVE A LASTING CHURCH**

Any one person has only a few years of practical and effective ministry. Jesus only ministered for three and a half years but he extended his ministry and his influence through an effective and loyal team. Notice that Jesus' ministry has branched out into the whole world and has spanned almost two thousand years.

If I die now, Lighthouse Chapel International is going to live on! It does not depend on me. I have not built a church around my personality. The church will continue. None of us is indispensable. God can do without us. That is why we need to build a team of loyal successors.

## **IN ORDER TO REAP A FULL REWARD**

Those who benefit from the blessings of success are the faithful and loyal ones. One day we all hope to hear those famous words: Well done, good and faithful servant. Those who stick with you throughout the difficult times are different from those who come in when everything is working well.

Jesus himself told his twelve disciples that they would be treated differently from any other famous minister. They would have a special kingdom and their names would even

be written on the foundations of the New Jerusalem.

**And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles...**

**Revelation 21:14**

Even the great men of God we know of today, will not qualify for this special reward. Jesus gave a reason for this special reward – they had been loyal to him through the most difficult part of his ministry.

**Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations... I appoint unto you a kingdom...**

**Luke 22:28,29**

**You see, loyalty is most appreciated in hard times. In the good times, everybody seems loyal.** I appreciate very much the pastors who have stood with me throughout my ministry. They watched me rise and have supported me, even in my mistakes. To me they are different from others. Like Jesus said, they have a special reward!

Building a team of loyal associates is vital to having a Mega Church. It is important to study further and know how disloyalty develops and the stages through which it passes. A good senior pastor must know the signs of growing disloyalty and how to check them. All these are essential for building a truly Mega Church.

# **CHAPTER 15**

## **SPECIAL PRINCIPLES FOR CHURCH GROWTH**

The following are a few principles that I have discovered for building successful and large churches. The advice I would give you is to consider them and allow the Lord to give you a deeper understanding of what I am saying in this chapter

### **THE PRINCIPLE OF THE MULTIPLIED SENIOR PASTOR**

I have discovered that if you could multiply the senior pastor by twelve, it would mean that you had twelve pastors at work. Logically, you could do twelve times as much work. I taught my assistant pastors to do whatever I do. If I meet people after church, they should also meet people after church. If I am able to counsel ten people and twelve other pastors are able to counsel ten people, that makes it one hundred and thirty people who are being attended to.

There are some churches in which the senior pastor is a “superman”. He is the only one who does anything important – and that is a sure recipe to keep your church small. One person can only attend to a certain number of people. If you try to visit everybody, counsel everybody and help everybody

you will go crazy! There is a limit to what you can do. That is why I have many branches and many pastors. I believe that many of the people I preach to can also preach. I believe that many of the people who are receiving the Word now are capable of rising up into the ministry.

Do not be an insecure senior pastor. Don't be afraid to trust people. It is true that many people will betray your trust, but if you live in fear Satan will have access to your life and ministry. I have been hurt by some people, but I have decided to still trust others to help me. If they betray me one day, I will take it in stride and keep on trusting some others.

One of the reasons why some people cannot trust is because they do not believe that people can do a good enough job. In the medical field, young doctors are being trained all the time. Some people are always attended to by inexperienced student doctors under supervision. As the young doctors are allowed to have a go, they learn and soon they are just as good. It is the same thing in the ministry. People must be trusted with responsibilities under supervision. **They must be allowed to do important things.** This will multiply the number of capable pastors in the ministry.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MAXIMIZED SUNDAY USAGE**

This principle has been stretched to its fullest at the Lighthouse Cathedral in Accra. The principle of using Sunday to its fullest is effective because traditionally, people have dedicated Sunday to both resting and going to church. Since so many of the church members are available on Sunday, it is only wise to use Sunday to its fullest. Sunday is

a full working day for me. Jesus worked on Sundays and I would like to follow His example.

**And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day. But Jesus answered them, My father WORKETH hitherto, and I WORK.**

**John 5:16,17**

Sunday is a full working day for all lay pastors in our church. We work hard from Sunday morning until late Sunday evening. We are able to accomplish a lot of counseling on Sunday because people are free on Sundays. Visitation is also very effective on Sunday because many people are at home on Sunday afternoon. We conduct Bible schools for lay people on Sunday afternoons. Many people are able to attend because they don't have much to do on Sundays.

Decide to utilize your Sundays. I don't know what pastors are doing in their homes at two o'clock on Sunday afternoon when most of the church members are available to be ministered to. Take advantage of this opportunity. Lay pastors and shepherds will be able to do more work for the Lord.

Although some people find it difficult to accept, I emphasize to all the people I work with that Sunday is a full working day for me and my church. I am not an accountant or a computer programmer. My working hours are not Monday to Friday from nine to five. I work on Sundays and I rest on Mondays. We do not start work at eight o'clock in the morning. I see no reason to go to work at eight o'clock in the morning. We stay late in the evenings because that is when many lay people are available for us to minister to them.

Our office is usually closed on Mondays, and all of our staff,

except the security officers, have a day off. Pastors and churches must not allow the world to impose its schedule on us. When airplane pilots go to work at odd hours no one complains. Everyone accepts that their work demands a different type of work schedule. Pastors and non-pastoral people must realize that the work of the ministry is peculiar and goes with its own special working times.

Begin to consider what you can do with your Sundays. Think of how many more people you can attend to if your Sundays are used for ministry instead of being used for sleeping and having lunches in the afternoon.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF SMALLER SUB-DIVISIONS**

Smaller sub-divisions within the church allow for better pastoral care, which eventually leads to church growth. Questions that cannot be asked in a large Sunday service can be addressed in the small groups. The small groups become the family units to which church members belong.

I have several smaller groups within the church. I have always believed that every Christian can and should be actively serving the Lord. These smaller groups allow for all Christians to get involved.

As your church becomes Mega, it will remain small enough to meet the needs of all the people. As they say, "Large enough to include you, and small enough to know you."

Some people's churches are like large convention centers. People come in, hear the Word, and go away. No human being likes to feel like he is not known. People are not

numbers they are human beings. **Nobody wants to be reduced to a numbered article or a countable commodity.** People want to feel important. People want to feel necessary. People want to feel loved. You may preach a powerful sermon but they still need to belong to a little family.

Your church can be broken into cells, divisions or departments. Our church has chapels, ministries and fellowships. I am always encouraging my members to get involved in one ministry or the other. How can I know all these people who come to church? How can I know what they think or feel? How can I know their problems and how can I help them?

If you think that God is going to give you a word of knowledge about these people everyday, you are making a mistake. God expects you to breakup your church into smaller divisions so that people can receive adequate pastoral care.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF THE PERSON X ORIENTED CHURCH**

What on earth is a “person x” oriented church? I define “person x” as a new convert or a new member. **Most churches are oriented towards established members.** A “person x” oriented church is very concerned about new people and visitors.

Treat your visitors well. We make song sheets so that the new people can flow along during the praise and worship. After the service, we host a reception to allow our new members to feel at home. We also give gifts to new converts.

Recently, the Lord directed me to direct my most senior associates to handle all new converts. God told me that if new converts were important to me than I should allow senior ministers to take care of them rather than junior leaders. This has helped tremendously to establish many new people in the church. When a church is “person x” oriented, it is on the road to towards increase because growth will come through new members and converts.

**And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour...**

**1 Corinthians 12:23**

Most people think that growth comes because more people visit the church. This is not necessarily the case. Some people also think that growth takes place because more converts are won. History has shown that the population of this world has increased because people are being kept alive and not because more people are being born. If we want our churches to grow, we have to sustain and maintain our new members and converts.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF CATERING FOR GROUP A AND GROUP B MEMBERS**

Every church can be divided into group A and group B members. Group A members are the more reliable people; they attend church twice or more a week. They are often involved in other small group activities in the church life. Thank God for Group A members. We really appreciate their input.

**Group B members on the other hand, are the once-a-**



**weekers, non-small group members, early service lovers, short sermon lovers, mind drifters, day dreamers, bible forgetters, non note-takers, non tithe payers, clock-watchers and the church-near-me attendees.**

These group B members will form an important segment of your church, as it becomes a larger entity. You will have to accept them as part of the family. **You can choose your friends, but you cannot choose your brothers.** Not everybody is going to be a prayer warrior.

In fact, in a large church many of the people fall into group B. Love them anyway. Preach sermons that they can also appreciate. Pray for them. The Spirit of the Lord will work on them. Sometimes when you organize a social event like a beach party, the group B members will flood the place. Use such opportunities to minister to them.

If you try to filter out your group B members, you may be left with nothing at the end of the day. Jesus said that the harvest is plenteous but that the laborers are few. Jesus didn't say that there were few members, He said that there were few laborers (Group A members).

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MULTIPLE SERVICES**

Nobody ever told me that multiple services led to church growth. I discovered it almost by accident. Well, now I am telling you that multiple services lead to church growth.

We have seven different services every Sunday morning. It is very tiring and draining, but our church attendance is better because of these multiple services. As the church grows,

people with all sorts of needs come into the church.

Some pastors give the impression that they conduct multiple services because they have such a large crowd. This is true to some extent. But I do not have multiple services because the building can be filled four times over. Not all of the services are full. Each service has a different level of attendance. I have never seen multiple services where all of the services have the same attendance. **I conduct multiple services primarily to make a variety of convenient services available to my members.**

I am always amazed at why people will want to come to church at 6 o'clock in the morning. I always ask myself, "Can't they come to church a little later?" Human beings are so varied. **Once you are dealing with a large number of people you are dealing with variety.** If you don't make variety available, you will lose those for whom you have nothing to offer.

Accept the reality of variety and flow with it. You will notice that different types of people come to each service. Some of the services are more formal whilst others are more relaxed. The type of people who attend each service determines the type of atmosphere you get. We have services for the youth and for the children. We have services for different languages. We have several services for English speaking members. Each of these services is different and there are people to fit into all of these services. **God will bless your church as you provide variety for more people.**

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF DYNAMIC CHURCH SERVICES**

You must have a goal for each service you conduct. When

determining the goal of the service you must ask yourself, "What am I trying to achieve with this service?" Are you planning to raise the dead, to heal the sick, or to preach and teach? In the Lighthouse Cathedral, our Sunday morning services are teaching and worship services. We do not usually pray for the sick on Sunday mornings. We pray for the sick on other days.

How much time have you allotted for each service? How long should the service be? Our services are one and a half hours and two hours each. Within two hours, you can do everything that you need to do for a church service.

Many years ago I attended a church whose services began around eight o'clock in the morning and ended at about three o'clock in the afternoon. After attending twice, I decided that the service was too long. Today that church is non-existent. When your Sunday services are too long you will drive away all of your members. You cannot achieve everything on a Sunday morning. We conduct miracle services which can last for several hours. We have camp meetings at which I can preach for more than twelve hours in a day. At the last Shepherd's Camp Meeting I preached from 6:30 a.m. to 12:30 a.m. the next day with only two short breaks. I know how to do long meetings, but I'd advise you not to use your Sunday services for such things.

What type of meeting place do you have? Man looks on the outward appearance, so it is important to decorate your church nicely. Even if you do not own a church building, let your place of meeting attain a certain standard. **Remember that you have only one chance to give a first impression.** Make use of flowers, baskets, curtains or anything that would improve the physical appearance.

Sometimes the pastor does not have very good taste. How

can you know if you do not have good taste? He would then have to rely on others in the church to help with enhancing and brightening your corner. It is important that every church tries to acquire its own place of meeting. Owning your own facility introduces more stability to the church.

How do you present yourself? God looks on the heart, but man looks on the outward appearance. Man cannot see your heart. Man can only see your outward appearance. That is why your outward appearance is also important. We must seek to put up a good outward appearance in addition to preparing the right heart for the Lord. Everyone who plays a part in the service must be well dressed. Male pastors must be formally dressed and neatly shaved. Female pastors must be properly dressed and must not wear suggestive or indecent clothing. **In some churches the musicians look like agents from the world who have been temporarily contracted to help God.** These instrumentalists often come in with the attitude and culture of secular pop groups. That is why I insist on all my musicians dressing like pastors. If they cannot afford it then we buy clothes for them!

Altar calls should be made at every service. This important and good habit must be maintained at all costs. New converts and visitors must receive a warm welcome. Remember these are the “person x” members. The assisting pastor should take over and briefly emphasize the message of the senior pastor. He should also encourage the congregation to buy tapes.

Pastors must not run off after church. They must stay and mingle with the congregation for some time after the service. I question the call of someone who says he’s a pastor but does not want to mingle with his congregation after the service. The shepherd’s place is in the field amongst the sheep. **A true shepherd smells of sheep.** I remember

meeting a frustrated congregant in a church. This man had traveled many miles to attend a conference. He wanted to have a chance to say hello to the great man of God. He was so frustrated that he became bitter. I met him in a lift and he said to me bitterly, "Is this man a prime minister or a pastor?"

But I have been to other conferences where the men of God made the effort to stay around and mingle with the sheep. Some people just want to shake your hand. Give them the opportunity to get near if you can. A pastor's wife must help with the interaction and must be seen to be a warm and friendly person. All these things contribute to building the Mega Church we all desire.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF USING TECHNOLOGY AND RESEARCH**

As the number of passengers on different airlines has increased, their efficiency has improved. This is because they have used technology to help them in their work. Whilst the membership of most churches has increased over the past few years, the pastor's ability for handling larger crowds has not been developed.

In our church, we try to keep an accurate data and statistics department. We maintain accurate counts and figures of everything. We have developed our own pastoral care monitoring system which we call the Pastoshep.

In spite of the limitations due to limited addresses and telephone numbers in Ghana, our Pastoshep has become a reliable and technological method of assessing the work of all pastors and shepherds alike. Without being there to physically see what people are doing, my computer tells me

what everybody is doing. I decided long ago to allow technology to help me to do the work of God.

Too many pastors say things like, 'The whole of outside was full.' They say things like, "Thousands of people were here today." Whereas in reality just a few hundred were present. Let's have real numbers!

We sometimes do surveys in the church to find out different interesting things. For instance, we did a survey to find out how many members of the church had ever been visited by a pastor. The results of that study were certainly revealing!

## THE 80-20 PRINCIPLE

This rule teaches us that eighty percent of your increase comes from twenty percent of the people. This means that eighty percent of church growth is as a direct result of the work of twenty percent of your members. Therefore, it is important for every pastor to spend more time with the twenty percent who will bring church growth.

Often the leaders, teachers and pastors make up this twenty-percent. They are the most important people in the church. More time, personal interaction and prayer with this twenty-percent will give you amazing results that you never expected. Some pastors spend most of their time with the rich and influential. They do not know that they are spending time with the wrong group. **Spending time with rich people does not make your church grow.** It rather makes the rich people more important than they really are. It makes the rich people stubborn and difficult to pastor!

A church with a future will identify potential leaders and put them to work. When you do this, you are looking out for the

twenty percent who can bring about sustained church development.

When I visit our churches outside the headquarters, I spend more time with the leaders and pastors than with the rest of the church. Often I just minister in one service. Afterwards, I have various meetings, spending several hours with the pastors and shepherds. This style of activity does not come naturally. It is born out of the knowledge of the 80-20 Principle.

When you implement the 80-20 Principle, you may initially think that you are doing the wrong thing, but that is not the case. You will soon discover that this simple principle is a secret of church growth.

## THE PRINCIPLE OF THE SCHOLARLY PASTOR

By this, I simply mean that pastors should develop themselves academically. I have never been to Bible school; I only attended medical school. Yet, I have learnt so much about the ministry by reading.

I always have several books that I am reading at the same time. I believe in reading, studying and acquiring knowledge. How could I rise above the handicap of having no formal pastoral training? Only by reading!

There is a difference between ministers who read books and those who do not. **Those who do not read are no better than those who cannot read! Those who do not read are doomed to be ruled by those who do read.** Paul the apostle was a reader of books and parchments. He deemed

his books so important that he asked Timothy to bring them to him.

**...when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books,  
but especially the parchments**

**2 Timothy 4:13**

Prophet Daniel read the books that Jeremiah wrote.

**In the first year of his reign I DANIEL UNDERSTOOD BY BOOKS the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.**

**Daniel 9:2**

People like Daniel and Paul read books. It is no surprise that they went far in ministry. There are many ministers who also need some secular education. They would do well to educate themselves in important subjects like administration, law, medicine and history. Administration is important in a church because many aspects in the church have to be run in a secular way. Things have to be managed properly. Accounts have to be prepared. Salaries have to be determined and paid. People have to be employed and dismissed. Things simply have to be done properly. A good study of administration and management will do the church of God a lot of good.

The study of law is also important for pastors and churches. Churches enter into contracts and the law of contract becomes important. There are laws that affect property acquisition. The law of property becomes important to the pastor. There are laws that concern marriage. Pastors have to be well versed in the laws that exist. God does not want His ministers to be ignoramuses. I am not a lawyer, but I



know quite a bit about law because I have taken an interest in it for my own sake.

A good understanding of medicine is also important. A pastor, like a doctor, often deals with terminally ill people. There is no use in a pastor not appreciating the conditions of their members. It is important to have a basic understanding of what is going on around you. I have seen pastors declaring healing based on ridiculous and presumptuous premises. How absurd we sometimes look to the professionals of this world! They know we are completely unlearned in certain areas.

Another area that pastors need a bit of education in is history and politics. History shows the rise and the fall of tyrants. It shows trends which keep repeating themselves. The Bible says that there is nothing new under the sun. In fact, the Bible predicts that the past will repeat itself over and over again. For those of you who want to know the future – it is basically the past again.

**The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there anything whereof it may be said, see, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.**

**Ecclesiastes 1:9,10**

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF HAVING A POWER MINISTRY**

If you cut out all of the scriptures on healing and miracles

from your Bible, you will discover that your Bible is totally destroyed! You will be destroying the Word of God. When you take out the scriptures concerning the power of God, you are left with a book on philosophy.

It is not only the teaching and preaching which helps God's people. God's children also want to receive a touch of His power. **It is important to add on the power dimension of miracles, healings and deliverance.** The Holy Spirit wants to manifest Himself and bless the people of God. You will discover that your people love to be prayed for. It is important for you to pray for your sheep and minister God's power to them.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF PASTORAL INDIVIDUALITY: FULFILL YOUR CALL**

It is very important for every pastor to fulfill his individual call. Don't look to the crowd. Don't think about what others are doing.

Many years ago when I started out in ministry, many people laughed at me. One pastor ridiculed me as I encouraged my members to go out and witness door-to-door. He sneered at me and said, "What is witnessing? What is door-to-door witnessing? We have moved on into higher realms of ministry!"

I answered, "It is an important Christian activity."

I stressed, "No matter how big you become in the ministry it is important to preach the gospel from house-to-house."

Today, that pastor who scoffed at me is struggling at the bottom of the ministerial ladder. Please do not allow anyone to drown your convictions. Be a man of conviction. Follow

the plan that God has given to you. Comparison is one of the dangerous practices of certain ministers. Please do not compare yourself with anyone else, it is too dangerous.

**For WE DARE NOT make ourselves of the number, or COMPARE OURSELVES with some that commend themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.**

**2 Corinthians 10:12**

God told me not to compare myself with anybody. He showed me how certain ministers were uneducated and that His expectations of different people was varied. He also showed me that my background of prolonged education made Him give me a different standard. He told me that I would be wrong to compare myself with anyone else. The Lord also showed me that if I used other ministers as a standard that I may do far less for Him than I am supposed to. The Lord showed me that I would mistakenly think that I had “arrived” because I had used certain low standards that had been set by others. It is indeed a dangerous thing to compare yourselves with others. Paul said that he dared not compare himself with others.

## **THE PRINCIPLE OF MASSIVE ORGANIZED PRAYER**

Massive organized prayer involves gathering all of your leaders and/or members for intensive prayer. I do massive organized prayer on three levels. At the highest level, I frequently organize the senior ministers away from the city to pray for a few days.

At the level of cell leaders, we often decree what we call prayer sentences. Sometimes we “sentence” the shepherds to twenty hours of prayer within a three-week period. This means that they have to meet as a group and pray for twenty hours spread over three weeks. This is massive organized prayer – organizing prayer on a massive scale.

Finally, we involve the whole church in prayer. There are times we have all-night prayer and fasting meetings everyday for an entire week. I am always surprised when on a weekday the church is full at 2 a.m. Working people gather to pray intensively for church growth and breakthroughs.

There is no other way to make any progress in the ministry than to work in the realm of the spirit. The Bible says, “Epaphras was always laboring in prayer.” The principle of massive organized prayer is what you need to bring about a breakthrough in your ministry.

**Epaphras ...always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.**

**Colossians 4:12**

There are some people who see me as an administrator and a strategist. Anyone who knows me closely knows that as I write this book I do not even have a desk or an office. But I do have a study where I pray and I do have places where I spend time praying. There is no shortcut in the ministry. There is no other way than that which has been set by the Lord. There is no other example than that which has been set by Jesus. Peter said that he wanted to give himself to prayer and the Word. Prayer and the Word are more important than administration and strategies!

**But we will give ourselves CONTINUALLY TO PRAYER,**

and to the ministry of the word.

Acts 6:4

## THE PRINCIPLE OF USING LAY PEOPLE TO DO THE WORK

One of the great secrets of a large church is in the use of lay people or volunteer church workers. These volunteer workers can do most of the church work.

I have several pastors who are not paid a dime for all of their hard work. The Lord pays them Himself. They work very hard on Sundays and some evenings. They make huge sacrifices in their private lives in order to be pastors and shepherds. Many very big churches use this principle and are succeeding at it. May the Lord give you understanding and revelation concerning this vital principle.

**I am always saddened when I see a small church of one hundred people employing seven full-time pastors.** I often ask myself, "How much will one pastor be paid? Do the wives of these pastors work? Do they make enough money to survive?" Such environments are the breeding grounds for discontent and rebellious elements! Many church rebellions are related to money. When money is left out of the ministry, people are able to concentrate on the work of the Lord because they love God.

Many pastors in my church are doing well as lay pastors. If some of them were to come into full-time ministry, things may change. The church may be able to pay them enough but they may not be at the stage where they are ready for full-time ministry. New problems relating to salaries and income

levels may arise. These problems have the potential to disrupt the work of ministry.

I suggest this to every senior pastor: analyze the church conflicts you have ever had. Aren't most of them related to money? **Make use of unpaid people. They are the key to a peaceful and stable church environment!**

I see a ministry growing! I see your ministry growing! I see you rising up in the kingdom of God! I see you taking your place! I know the Lord is going to use you! He has determined to use you! The Mega Church is for you! The anointing is yours! Rise up with wisdom and possess what the Lord has placed before you!

*The*  
**Minister's**  
**Handbook**  
*of Ceremonies*

DAG'S TAPES &  
PUBLICATIONS



Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.



1st Printing 1998

2nd Printing 1999

**Copyright © 1998**

**Copyright © 1999**

A Lighthouse Chapel Publication

ISBN 9988-7798-3-6

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book.



# Contents

Naming Ceremony .....	5
Baby Dedication .....	15
Water Baptism .....	21
Engagement Ceremony .....	28
Dedication of Homes, Businesses, Shops, etc. ....	30
Standard Wedding Ceremony .....	36
Concise Wedding Ceremony .....	52
Office Blessing .....	65
Blessing a Marriage at the Engagement Ceremony .....	79
Renewal of Vows .....	86
Wake-Keeping Service .....	100
Funeral Service .....	105
Burial Service .....	111
Memorial & Thanksgiving Service .....	123

*(e) Ceremony should be performed extemporaneously*

*(r) Ceremony should be read as is written*

***PREAMBLE TO***  
***NAMING CEREMONY***

**T**he Naming Ceremony is a traditional event that takes place after the birth of a child. Some families are very traditional and abide by all customs relating to the date and time of the event. The pastor's role is basically to introduce a biblical and spiritual perspective to the occasion. This of course is only possible depending on what the family requests or allows.

***NAMING CEREMONY***

**1. OPENING PRAYER AND  
WORSHIP**

*~ He Is Lord*

*~ O Come Let Us Adore Him*

**2. REASON FOR OCCASION**

We are gathered here today with our brother and sister, Mr. and Mrs. ....(*Last name of parents*).... for two reasons:

- i. To rejoice over what God has done for them and
- ii. To give a name to their newly born baby.

The Bible is the basis for whatever we do, therefore, our scripture reading for today is:

### **~Luke 1:57-64~**

*Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.*

*And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.*

*And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John.*

*And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John.*

*And they marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.*

As was done in those days, we want to call on the father of the child to give us the name(s) he desires to give to the child and the meaning(s) of the name(s).

### 3. GIVING OF NAME BY FATHER

**Father stands up and mentions the full name of the child and the meaning(s) of the name(s).**

### 4. PROCLAMATION, SANCTIFICATION AND AFFIRMATION OF NAME ON THE CHILD BY PRAYER.

- i. Minister takes the baby and asks all to stand and join in prayer for the baby.
- ii. Minister prays laying hands on the baby, and anoints the baby with oil.

#### **PRAYER**

Father, in the name of Jesus, thine only begotten Son, we thank you for the name(s) that has been given today. We sanctify this name(s) and we declare that this child shall be called ....[name(s) of child].... From today I pray that he shall live up to the meaning(s) of this name(s).

**The Minister makes reference to the name(s) and prays for the child to fulfill the purpose of the name. (e.g., “John means ‘Jehovah is gracious’, May Jehovah God be gracious unto this child always.”)**

I anoint this baby with oil as a symbol of the Holy Spirit, that he may live under the influence and power of the Holy Spirit, all the days of his life. Amen.

### 5. SONGS

*~ Showers of Blessing*

~ Ebenezer

## 6. BLESSING OF CHILD

*Father, we thank you indeed for a good and perfect gift, the gift of a life. Thank you for blessing this family with this child. I cancel, I nullify, I reverse, and I reject every curse and every expectation of the enemy concerning the life of .... [name(s) of child] ....*

*I bring down the walls of opposition, resistance, and frustration that are lifted up against the life of this child. I superimpose the will of God over and against every plan, every projection and prediction of the enemy for your life.*

*I speak the blessing of God over your life.*

*May the goodness and the favor of God be your portion all the days of your life.*

*May you live to be a blessing to your parents.*

*May you live to be a blessing to your generation.*

*May you become what God has destined you to be. In Jesus' mighty name. Amen.*

## 7. CHARGE TO PARENTS

MINISTER: (To the parents.)

Do you promise to bring up this child in the ways of the Lord that he may not depart from them when he grows?

According to Deuteronomy 6:7, do you promise to teach him the Word of God when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up?

FATHER: *I do.*

MOTHER: *I do.*

BOTH PARENTS TOGETHER: *We do.*

**MINISTER:** Amen! Shall we clap for them. (Minister returns the baby to the parents.)

## 8. SONGS

*~ To God Be the Glory*

*~ Ebenezer*

## 9. PRESENTATION OF GIFTS

### **MINISTER:**

Now, as was done in the days of Jesus when he was born, wise men came from the east with precious gifts.

I will now hand over to the Master of Ceremonies as we receive gifts and presents for the baby.

## **10. MASTER OF CEREMONIES TAKES OVER**

## 11. CLOSING PRAYER (At the appropriate time.)

## ***PREAMBLE TO BABY DEDICATION***

**T**he dedication of babies is similar to the Naming Ceremony. This is usually conducted during a service in church.

The dedication takes place after the birth of the child. The minister's role in the Baby Dedication is to pray over the child and dedicate it to the Lord. This is done with the hope that when the child is of age he himself will come to know the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Minister commits the child into the Lord's care and presents the names and their meanings to the congregation.

The ceremony is usually done at the beginning of a service and it *must* be brief.

## ***BABY DEDICATION***

### **1. MINISTER WELCOMES THE FAMILY TO THE ALTAR**

**Minister introduces the family to the  
congregation.**



## 2. REASON FOR OCCASION

We are gathered here today with our brother and sister, Mr. and Mrs. ....(*Last name of parents*).... for three reasons:

- i. Rejoice over what God has done for them,
- ii. To give a name to their newly born baby and
- iii. To dedicate this child unto the Lord.

As the Bible teaches, we will call on the father of the child to give us the name(s) of the child and the meaning(s) of the name(s).

## 3. GIVING OF NAME BY FATHER

**Father mentions the full name of the child and the meaning(s) of the name(s).**

## 4. PROCLAMATION, SANCTIFICATION AND AFFIRMATION OF NAME ON THE CHILD BY PRAYER.

- i. Minister takes the baby and asks all to join in prayer for the baby.
- ii. Minister lays his hand on the child and prays.

## **PRAYER**

Father, in the name of Jesus, thine only begotten Son, we thank you for the name(s) that has been given today. We sanctify this name and we declare that this child shall be called ....[*name(s) of child*].... From today I pray that he shall live up to the meaning of this name(s).

**(The Minister makes reference to the name(s) and prays for the child to fulfill the purpose of the name(s), e.g., “John means ‘Jehovah is gracious’, May Jehovah God be gracious unto this child always.”)**

## 6. BLESSING OF CHILD

Father, we thank you indeed for a good and perfect gift; the gift of a life. Thank you for blessing this family with this child. I reject every curse and every expectation of the enemy concerning the life of .... *[name(s) of child]* ....

I bring down the walls of frustration that are lifted up against the life of this child. I superimpose the will of God for this child, over and against every plan of Satan.

I speak the blessing of God over this life.

May the goodness and the favor of God be your portion all the days of your life.

May you live to be a blessing to your parents.

May you live to be a blessing to your generation.

May you become what God has destined you to be.

In Jesus' mighty name. Amen.

## ***PREAMBLE TO WATER BAPTISM***

**W**ater Baptism is an important spiritual landmark in every Christian's life. It is one of the few ordinances that Christians are expected to perform. The pastor is expected to ensure that all Christians under his care have been duly baptized. It is also important to have a good understanding of the biblical and spiritual significance of this event. Water Baptism can be performed by those designated to do so.

### **NOTES ON BAPTISMAL ATTIRE AND PROCEDURE**

#### ***INSTRUCTIONS FOR LADIES:***

1. *Thick trousers must be worn (not transparent)*
2. *Ladies having their menstrual periods should not come for baptism.*
3. *Ladies are not to wear only underwear, underpants or underpants and bra.*
4. *No swimming costumes should be allowed.*
5. *No bare-chested ladies should be allowed.*
6. *All ladies must be fully covered.*
7. *All ladies must wear bras under their shirts.*
8. *Ladies and men must not change their clothes in the view of each other.*

#### ***INSTRUCTIONS FOR BAPTIZER:***

1. *The baptiser should not be bare-chested.*
2. *The baptiser must be fully and properly dressed.*
3. *A baptismal gown, trousers, a pair of big shorts, a t-shirt or shirt may be worn.*

### **INSTRUCTIONS ON IMMERSION:**

1. *Tell the candidate to hold nose and close eyes.*
2. *Baptiser holds candidate with one hand behind candidate, and the other hand on the forehead. Baptiser fully immerses candidate in water and raises him up again.*

# **WATER BAPTISM**

## **1. OPENING PRAYER**

## **2. REASONS FOR BAPTISM**

We are gathered here today to baptize these believers according to the Word of God. The basis for baptism is:

- i. To obey the Word of God.
- ii. It is one of the requirements after being Born Again.  
**Acts 8:36-38.**
- iii. It is an outward symbol of what has happened to you spiritually. **Colossians 2:12.**
- iv. To fulfill all righteousness.

## **SCRIPTURES:**

**(i)~Mark 16:16~**

*He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.*

**(ii) ~Acts 10:47,48~**

*Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord...*

**(iii) ~Acts 8: 36-38~**

*And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God ....and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.*

**(iv) ~Colossians 2:12~**

*Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.*

**(v) ~Matthew 3:15-16~**

*...Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending...*

## DIDATE

### 4. ASK THE BAPTISMAL CANDIDATE THE FOLLOWING QUESTIONS

- Are you Born Again?
- Have you received Christ as your personal Saviour?
- Do you believe that Jesus died for you on the cross and that He rose again?
- Do you believe that Jesus Christ will be coming again to take His church away?

**(If you get a negative answer to any of the following questions:**

- *Abort the Baptismal ceremony immediately*
- *Lead the individual to accept Christ as his Saviour*
- *You may continue to baptize the individual if he genuinely receives the Lord as Saviour)*

### 5. LEAD THE BAPTISMAL CANDIDATE IN THE FOLLOWING CONFESSION

- *I am a Born Again Christian. I believe that Jesus died for me and that He rose from the dead on the third day.*
- *By faith, I believe that all my sins are washed away in the blood of Jesus.*
- *I believe that my name is in the Book of Life.*
- *I am now looking for and expecting the return of my Mas-*

*ter and Saviour, Jesus Christ, who will come in the clouds to take away His own.*

- *As I go down into the water I identify myself with the death and burial of Jesus Christ. As I come up out of the water I identify myself with the resurrection of the Lord.*
- *I am being baptized to fulfill all righteousness as the Lord Himself did.*

6. IMMERSE THE BAPTISMAL CANDIDATE FULLY IN  
THE WATER

Ensure that he is fully submerged. (Ask him to hold his breath and his nose as he is immersed.)

7. AFTER CANDIDATE HAS CHANGED

Brief worship time. Thank the Lord.

8. CLOSING PRAYER

# ***ENGAGEMENT CEREMONY***

Engagements are usually family affairs. The pastor's involvement will very much depend on what the family requests or allows. The minister is not there to change customs and traditional practices, but to secure God's blessings in all that is done.

Typically, the pastor may be asked to do any of the following:

- a. An opening prayer.
- b. A prayer to bless the ring and other jewels after presentation.
- c. The closing prayer.

The pastor should therefore flow as the occasion demands.



***PREAMBLE TO  
DEDICATION OF HOMES, BUSINESSES,  
SHOPS, etc.***

**A**t varying times in the ministry, members will ask the minister to impart God's blessing on their new homes, businesses or shops.

The pastor's role is to bless, sanctify and dedicate the business or home into the Lord's hand. This dedication takes place on the actual site and is marked by the pouring of oil on the site as a symbol of the Holy Spirit's blessing.

***DEDICATION OF HOMES,  
BUSINESSES, SHOPS, etc***

1. OPENING PRAYER

2. WORSHIP

~ *To God Be the Glory*

~ *Ebenezer*

### 3. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS FROM HOME/BUSINESS OWNER

**The reason for the occasion.**

**A testimony of God's provision.**

### 4. SCRIPTURE READING:

~ Deuteronomy 8:2,7-18~

***And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no.***

*For the LORD thy God bringeth thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water... a land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees... A land wherein thou shalt eat bread without scarceness, thou shalt not lack any thing in it...*

***When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the LORD thy God for the good land which he hath given thee...***

***Beware that thou forget not the LORD thy God, in not keeping his commandments...***

*Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein...*

***and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied;***

***Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the LORD thy God... Who led thee... Who fed thee... And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth.***

***But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his cov-***

*enant* (**His Word and His work**)...

## 5. EXHORTATION BY MINISTER

The scriptural exhortation should center on:

- i. Thanking God for His divine provision.
- ii. An admonition to the individual to remember God in the times of blessing.

## 6. SONG

~ *To God Be the Glory*

~ *Ebenezer*

## 7. DEDICATION

- i. **Acknowledge that the work has ended by God's grace.**

~1 Kings 7:51~

*So was ended all the work that king Solomon made for the house of the LORD. And Solomon brought in the things which David his father had dedicated...*

- ii. **Explain that the ministers or elders of the church are assembled together to pray and dedicate the project.**

~1 Kings 8:1,3~

*Then Solomon assembled the elders of Israel and all the heads of the tribes, the chief of the fathers of the children of Israel... all the elders of Israel came, and the priests took up the ark.*

iii. Acknowledge God's faithfulness in completing the project.

~ 1 Kings 8:1,22-24~

***And Solomon stood... in the presence of all the congregation of Israel, and spread forth his hands toward heaven:***

***and he said LORD God of Israel, there is no God like thee... who keepest covenant and mercy with thy servants that walk before thee with all their heart... thou speakest also with thy mouth, and hast fulfilled it with thine hand, as it is this day.***

iv. Dedicate the project to the Lord, asking for God's presence to continually remain there.

~2 Chronicles 6:40-42~

***Now, my God ... arise, O LORD God, into thy resting place... O LORD God, turn not away the face of thine anointed...***

v. Ask for God's continued blessing in every undertaking.

~1 Kings 8:35-36~

***When heaven is shut up, and there is no rain... if they pray ... and confess thy name... Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants... that thou teach them the good way wherein they should walk...***

vi. Anoint the premises with oil and declare God's blessings on the project.

## 8. WORSHIP

~ ***We Thank You Lord***

~ ***To God Be the Glory***

## 9. CLOSING PRAYER

## 10. REFRESHMENTS

# **STANDARD WEDDING CEREMONY**

## **1. HYMN 1**

(Whilst Ministers file in and take their seats.)

## **2. BRIDAL MARCH**

(Whilst bridal party files in.)

## **3. BRIEF TIME OF WORSHIP**

## **4. INTRODUCTION**

(Whilst at altar; couple stands, congregation sits.)

**MINISTER:**

Dearly beloved, we are gathered here in the sight of God,  
and in the face of this congregation, to join together this  
m a n

and this woman in Holy Matrimony, which is an  
honourable estate, instituted of God Himself, signifying unto  
us the mystical union that is betwixt Christ and His Church.  
Which Holy estate Christ adorned and beautified with His  
presence in the first miracle which He wrought in Cana of  
Galilee. And is commended in Holy writ to be honourable  
among all men, and therefore is not by any to be enterprised  
nor taken in hand unadvisedly, lightly or wantonly. But

reverently, discreetly and soberly and in the fear of God, duly considering the causes for which matrimony was ordained.

**FIRST**, it was ordained for the increase of mankind according to the will of God, and that children might be brought up in the fear and nurture of the Lord, and to the praise of His Holy Name.

**SECOND**, it was ordained for a remedy against sin, and to avoid fornication; that such persons that have not the gift of self control might marry, and keep themselves undefiled members of Christ's body.

**THIRD**, it was ordained for mutual society help and comfort, that the one ought to have of the other both in prosperity and adversity.

Into which Holy estate these two persons present, come now to be joined.

## 5. LEGAL CHARGE

MINISTER:

I require and charge you both as you will answer at the day of judgement, when the secrets of all hearts will be disclosed, that if either of you know of any impediment why you may not be lawfully joined together in matrimony, ye do now confess it, for be ye well assured, that so many as are coupled together otherwise than God's Word doth allow, are not joined together by God, neither is their matrimony lawful.

MINISTER: (Bridegroom repeating after.)

***I do solemnly declare/ that I know not of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bridegroom)..../ may not be joined in matrimony to ....(Name of bride)....***

MINISTER: (Bride repeating after.)

***I do solemnly declare/ that I know not of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bride)..../ may not be joined in matrimony to ....(Name of bridegroom)....***

## **6. “I WILL” VOWS**

MINISTER: (To the Bridegroom.)

....(Name of bridegroom)...., wilt thou have this woman standing by your side to be thy wedded wife, to live together after God’s ordinance, in the Holy estate of Matrimony; wilt thou love her, comfort her, honour and keep her, and forsaking all others, keep thee only unto her, so long as you both shall live?

BRIDEGROOM: ***I certainly will.***

MINISTER: (To the Bride.)

....(Name of bride)...., wilt thou have this man standing by your side to be thy wedded husband, to live together after God’s ordinance in the Holy estate of Matrimony, wilt thou obey him and serve him, love, honour and keep him, and forsaking all other, keep thee only unto him, so long as you both shall live?

BRIDE: ***I certainly will.***

## **7. GIVING AWAY OF BRIDE**

MINISTER:

**Who giveth this woman to be married to this man?**

(Father stands, comes to the microphone and says:)

*I, ....(Name of father).... on this ....(date).... do freely and willingly give away my daughter ....(Name of daughter).... in marriage, with all my blessings.*

**(Father thanked and applauded by congregation.)**

## 8. EXCHANGE OF VOWS

(Instruct couple to face each other.)

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bridegroom)..../ according to the Word of God,/ leave my father and my mother /and I join myself to you,/ to be a husband to you./ From this moment forward,/ I shall love you,/ and I shall give myself to you,/ and we shall be one.*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bride)....,/according to the Word of God,/ submit myself to you,/ to be a wife to you./ From this moment forward,/ I shall love you,/ and I shall give myself to you,/ and we shall be one.*

## 9. INTRODUCTION TO RING SERVICE

**MINISTER:** May I have the rings please.

These rings are precious ornaments, made out of pure gold. May the gold in these rings remind you of how pure your marriage shall be. These rings are given as a token and a symbol of your love and trust.



When you see these rings on your fingers, let them remind you of your love. Let them always remind you of the vows and promises you have made to each other this day.

Remember that real love is as strong as death and many waters cannot quench it, neither can the floods drown it. If anyone would break up this union, it would be Satan. Therefore give him no place. Give him no place. This marriage is forever.

Let us pray.

#### 10. PRAYER OVER RINGS

MINISTER:

In thy name O Lord, we hallow and dedicate these rings that by thy blessing, he who gives it and she who wears it keeping true faith for one to the other, may abide together in thy peace, continue together in thy favour, live together in thy love, and finally dwell together in thine eternal Kingdom through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

## 11. EXCHANGE OF RINGS

**MINISTER:** To Bridegroom whilst giving him Bride's ring.

I want you to place this ring on her finger with these things in mind. You are the Head of this union. This woman stands by your side, not at your feet.

I want her to wear this ring in remembrance that she is your help mate. It is not a symbol of domination but a reminder of love. So place this ring on her finger, and as you do, say this to her:

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

(Mention first name of Bride three times)....*With this ring,/ I thee wed./ I give it as a token of my faith./ I believe with all my heart/ that this marriage is forever./ It is all my love and all my faith,/ in the name of Jesus.*

**MINISTER:** To Bride whilst giving her Bridegroom's ring.

I want you to place this ring on his finger with these things in mind. This man is your Head. You have been called to help and support him.

Stand by him in all things, spiritually, physically and socially knowing that two are better than one. Now place this ring on his finger and as you do, say this to him.

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

(Mention first name of Bridegroom three times)....*With this ring,/ I thee wed./ I give it as a token of my faith./ I believe with all my heart/ that this is forever./ It is my love, my sweet love,/ in the name of Jesus.*

## **12. BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM KNEEL FOR PRAYER, AND LAYING ON OF HANDS**

## **13. PRONOUNCEMENT OF MARRIAGE** (Couple stands.)

MINISTER:

For as much as ....(Name of bridegroom)...., and ....(Name of bride).... have consented together in holy wedlock, and have witnessed the same before God and this company, and thereto have given and pledged their troth either to the other, and have declared the same by giving and receiving of rings, I pronounce that they be man and wife together in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

## **14. SOLO**

(In His time He makes all things beautiful.)

## **15. REMOVAL OF VEIL AND SALUTATION OF BRIDE** [Ask the Bridegroom to remove the Bride's veil and salute (kiss) his Bride.]

## **16. COMMUNION**

MINISTER:

The couple will now receive Communion together. Hitherto they have come to the Lord's table as separate individuals but now they come as one flesh. The celebration of communion is to remind us all that it is because of what Christ has done for us that we are here in the first place. The Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread, and when he had given thanks broke it and said, take, eat, this is my body which is broken for you. This do in remembrance of me. After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, this cup is the new testament in my blood. This do ye, as oft as ye drink in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this bread and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till He come.

Let us pray.

(Bless the bread and the wine. Thank God for  
Jesus Christ's sacrifice.)

## **17. HYMN II**

## **18. SIGNING OF REGISTER & OFFERING**

## **19. BIBLE READINGS**

## **20. SERMON**

## **21. CHARGE AND BLESSING**

(Couple stands, congregation sits.)

## **MINISTER:**

*“I now charge you in the presence of God Almighty that you trust in the Lord with all your heart. Lean not on your own insight. In all your ways acknowledge him. And He will direct your paths”.*

*These blessings will come on you and overtake you, if you will hearken unto the voice of the Lord your God.*

***Blessed shall thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field.***

*Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store.*

***Blessed shall thou be when thou cometh in, and blessed shall thou be when thou goest out.***

***The Lord shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways.***

*The Lord shall command the blessing upon all that thou settest thine hand unto. The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself.*

***And the Lord shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body. And thou shalt lend unto many and thou shalt not borrow.***

***And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God.***

## **22. PRAYER OF BLESSING**

## **23. PRESENTATION TO CONGREGATION**

**MINISTER:** (To Bride & Groom:)

Please turn and face this congregation.

(To Congregation:)

Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you Mr./Dr./Rev./  
Pastor/etc. and Mrs./Dr. Mrs. ....(*Last name of bridegroom*)....

## **24. WEDDING MARCH**

## **25. COUPLE FILES OUT**

(Followed by ministers then families.)

***PREAMBLE TO  
CONCISE WEDDING CEREMONY***

**T**his ceremony is intended to take a shorter time than the standard wedding ceremony. It also presents an alternative set of vows, promises and proclamations. There are times when the couple may be late in arriving and a shorter ceremony may be more apt. There may also be mitigating circumstances which may make it necessary to have a short ceremony. Use this set of vows as the occasion demands.

# ***CONCISE WEDDING CEREMONY***

## **1. HYMN 1**

(Whilst Ministers file in and take their seats.)

## **2. BRIDAL MARCH**

(Whilst bridal party files in.)

## **3. BRIEF TIME OF WORSHIP**

## **4. INTRODUCTION**

(Whilst at altar; couple stands,  
congregation sits.)

**MINISTER:**



Dearly beloved, we are gathered here in the sight of God, and in the face of this congregation, to join together this man and this woman in Holy Matrimony, which is commended of the Apostle Paul to be honourable among all men.

Into which Holy estate these two come now to be joined.

## **5. LEGAL CHARGE**

I require and charge you both that if you know of any just cause why you may not marry, you should, with all sincerity say so now, not forgetting that any two coupled together in contradiction to the Word of God are not joined together by God, neither is such matrimony lawful.

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I solemnly declare/ that I do not know of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bridegroom).... / may not be joined in matrimony to ....(Name of bride)....*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I solemnly declare/ that I do not know of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bride).... / may not be joined in matrimony to ....(Name of bridegroom)....*

## **6. “IDO” VOWS**

**MINISTER:** (To Bridegroom.)

*....(Name of bridegroom)...., do you love ....(Name of bride).... and do you receive her now to be your wedded wife? Do you promise to honour and cherish her and forsaking all others, cleave only unto her as long as both of you shall live?*

**BRIDEGROOM:** *I do.*

**MINISTER:** (To Bride.)

*....(Name of bride)...., do you love ....(Name of bridegroom).... and do you receive him now to be your wedded husband? Do you promise to obey, honour and cherish him and forsaking all others, cleave only unto him as long as both of you shall live?*

**BRIDE:** *I do*

## **7. GIVING AWAY OF BRIDE**

**MINISTER:**

Who gives the bride away into marriage?

**BRIDE'S FATHER:** *I do*

**8. EXCHANGE OF VOWS** (Instruct couple to face each other.)

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bridegroom)...../ according to the Word of God,/ leave my father and my mother/ and I join myself to you,/ to be a husband to you./ From this moment forward,/ we shall be one.*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bride)...../ according to the Word of God,/ submit myself to you,/ to be a wife to you./ From this moment forward,/ we shall be one.*

## **9. INTRODUCTION TO RING SERVICE**

**MINISTER:** Made of gold, one of the purest metals, the ring suggests your commitment to unfailing purity and fidelity in your marriage. As you wear it, may you be continually reminded of this commitment. Also, a ring is a complete circle with no point of division. This demonstrates a commitment on your part to remain unseparated for the rest of your lives.

## **10. PRAYER OVER RINGS**

## **MINISTER:**

Father, we ask you to redeem these rings with the blood of Jesus, and bless them, that as they wear them, it will be a promise to keep their vows as long as they live. In Jesus' name.

## **11. EXCHANGE OF RINGS**

**(Presents ring to Bridegroom.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.) (Mention first name of Bride three times) ....(*Name of bride*)....*With this ring/ I commit all my love to you./ As I love the Lord,/ so do I love you./ I receive you as God's gift to me./ As God enables me,/ I will lead our home spiritually,/ physically/ and socially/ under the Lordship of Jesus Christ./ I will seek to support and encourage you/ through each challenge of life./ All that is mine is yours/ until death shall part us.*

**(Presents ring to the Bride.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

(Mention first name of Bridegroom three times)....(*Name of bridegroom*).... *With this ring/ I commit all my love to you./ As I love the Lord,/ so do I love you./ I receive you as God's gift to me./ I trust the Lord/ to enable me to be submissive to you/ as my spiritual head/ and leader of our home./*

*I will seek to support/ and encourage you/ spiritually,/ physically/ and socially/ through each challenge of life./ All that is mine is yours/ until death shall part us.*

**12. BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM KNEEL FOR PRAYER, AND LAYING ON OF HANDS**

**13. PRONOUNCEMENT OF MARRIAGE**  
(Couple stands.)

**MINISTER:**

For as much as ....(Name of bridegroom)...., and ....(Name of bride).... have openly declared their intention before God and this congregation, to keep all the vows they have made to each other today, it is my privilege as a minister of the gospel and by the authority vested in me by the Lord Jesus Christ, to pronounce from this day forward: **You are husband and wife.**  
**Amen**

**14. REMOVAL OF VEIL & SALUTATION** (Ask  
Bridegroom to remove veil and kiss his Bride.)

**15. HYMN II**

**16. SIGNING OF REGISTER & OFFERING**

**17. BIBLE READING**

## **18. SERMON**

## **19. CHARGE AND BLESSING** (Couple stands, congregation sits.)

*May the Lord bless you with the dew of heaven and the good things of above. May He bless you with the fatness of the earth, the corn, the oil, and the wine.*

*May the Lord bless you, multiply you and make you great in the land.*

*May your horn be exalted like the horn of the unicorn and may your marriage always be anointed with fresh oil. Be planted in the House of the Lord and flourish in the courts of our God. In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen.*

## **20. PRESENTATION TO CONGREGATION**

**MINISTER:** (To Bride & Groom:)

Please turn and face this congregation.

(To Congregation:)

Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you Mr. and Mrs. ....(*Last name of bridegroom*)....

## **21. WEDDING MARCH**

## ***PREAMBLE TO OFFICE BLESSING***

**S**ome couples encounter circumstances which do not allow them to have a full-blown wedding ceremony in the church. For instance, there may be financial hindrances preventing a regular wedding ceremony at the time. Also, publicly known immorality and pregnancies may necessitate such an event. Some couples also prefer a quieter ceremony.

It is under such circumstances that you may have to use this set of vows.

This ceremony is a little different from the regular ones as the couple may wish to have a standard wedding ceremony later on. This ceremony is held in the church office and must be brief.

## ***OFFICE BLESSING***

### **1. OPENING PRAYER AND WORSHIP**

(One of these two songs can be sung.)

- i. ~ *To God Be the Glory*
- ii. ~ *Showers of Blessings*

**2. INTRODUCTION** (Couple stands, a n d witnesses sit.)

**MINISTER:**

We are assembled today under the banner of the Lord to bless this marriage. The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord and He delighteth in his way. Except the Lord build the house, we know that we build in vain. We therefore, come before the Lord at this time:

- i. To acknowledge Him in this marriage as the Giver of all good things.



ii. To fulfill all righteousness as required by the laws of the land and the Church.

iii. To ask the Lord for His hand, His favour, and His blessing upon the marriage between ....(Name of bridegroom).... and ....(Name of bride)....

### 3. LEGAL CHARGE

#### MINISTER:

I require and charge you both that if you know of any just cause why you may not be legally married, you should, with all sincerity say so now, not forgetting that any two coupled together in contradiction to the Word of God are not joined together by God neither is such matrimony lawful.

#### MINISTER: (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I solemnly declare/ that I do not know of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bridegroom)..../ may not be joined in matrimony to/ ....(Name of bride)....*

#### MINISTER: (Bride repeating after.)

*I solemnly declare/ that I do not know of any lawful impediment/ why I ....(Name of bride)..../ may not be joined in matrimony to/ ....(Name of bridegroom)....*

### 4. “IDO” VOWS

**MINISTER:** (To Bridegroom.)

....(*Name of bridegroom*)...., do you, before God and all these witnesses choose ....(*Name of bride*).... as your wedded wife? And do you promise to love her as Christ loved the church and give yourself for her as long as you live?

**BRIDEGROOM:** *I do*

**MINISTER:** (To Bride.)

....(*Name of bride*)...., do you, before God and all these witnesses choose ....(*Name of bridegroom*).... as your wedded husband? And do you promise to submit yourself to him as unto the Lord and love him as long as you live?

**BRIDE:** *I do*

## **5. GIVINGAWAY OF BRIDE**

**MINISTER:**

Who gives the bride away into marriage to this man?

**BRIDE'S FATHER:** *I do*

## **6. EXCHANGE OF VOWS** (Instruct couple to face each other.)

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bridegroom)....,/ take you, ....(Name of bride)..../ to be my wedded wife; /to have and to hold/ from this day forward./ To care for and to encourage,/ in prosperity and adversity./ I promise to live for Christ./ I promise to love and trust you forever./ And with this commitment,/ I pledge to you my life.*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bride)....,/ take you, ....(Name of bridegroom)..../ to be my wedded husband;/ to have and to hold/ from this day forward./ To care for and to encourage,/ in prosperity and adversity./ I promise to live for Christ./ I promise to love and trust you forever./ And with this commitment,/ I pledge to you my life.*

## **7. INTRODUCTION TO RING SERVICE**

### **MINISTER:**

May I have the rings please.

These rings are symbols of your commitment of love.

They are made out of gold, expressing the purity that should always be in your marriage. You are going to exchange these rings in full awareness of the deep implications thereof.

## **8. PRAYER OVER RINGS**

### **MINISTER:**

Lord, we dedicate and sanctify these rings today. May they be symbols of true love and tokens of commitment between these two. Bless these rings now in the name of Jesus. Amen.

## **9. EXCHANGE OF RINGS** (Present ring to Bridegroom.)

### **MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I give this ring/ as a visible token of my love./ I give it to you/ as a visible token/ of my permanent commitment/ and dedication to you./ From today I am yours/ and you are mine./ I love you with all my heart/ and I will always love you./ In the name of Jesus. Amen.*

**(Presents ring to Bride.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I give this ring/ as a visible token of my love/ and I give it to you/ as my own life./ From today, I am yours/ and you are mine./ I love you with all my heart/ and I will always love you./ In the name of the Lord Jesus. Amen.*

**10. BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM KNEEL FOR PRAYER, AND LAYING ON OF HANDS**

**11. PRONOUNCEMENT OF MARRIAGE** (Couple stands.)

**MINISTER:**

For as much as ....(Name of bridegroom).....,and ....(Name of bride).... have openly declared their intention to keep all the vows they have made to each other today, it is my privilege as a minister of the gospel and by the authority vested in me by the Lord Jesus Christ to pronounce from this day forward, that your marriage is blessed by the Lord and you are husband and wife before man and before God. In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen.

**12. BRIDEGROOM SALUTES BRIDE**

(Ask the Bridegroom to kiss his Bride)

**13. HYMNS** (One of these two songs may be sung.)

i. ~ *To God Be the Glory*

ii. ~ *Showers of Blessings*

## **14. SIGNING OF REGISTER/OFFERING**

## **15. BIBLE READING (Optional)**

## **16. SERMON**

## **17. CHARGE AND BLESSING (Couple stands, witnesses sit.)**

### **MINISTER:**

*I want to speak a word of blessing and exhortation to you, as you move on as husband and wife.*

*You shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, and you shall bring forth your fruit in its season.*

*Your leaves shall not wither, and whatsoever you do shall prosper, if you shall hearken unto the voice of the Lord. Be a husband and wife that walk not in the counsel of ungodly people.*

*He is your glory and He shall be the lifter of your head. At thy latter end the Lord shall enlarge thee and shall have mercy upon thee.*

*Though thy beginnings be small, thy latter end shall be greatly increased. In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen.*

## **18. PRAYER OF BLESSING**

## **19. HYMNS**

(One of these two songs may be sung)

- i. ~ *Great is Thy Faithfulness*
- ii. ~ *How Great Thou Art*

## **20. PRESENTATION TO WITNESSES**

**MINISTER:** (To Bride and Groom:)

Please turn and face the witnesses herein gathered.

(To Witnesses:)

Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you Mr. and Mrs. ....(*Last name of bridegroom*)....

## **21. COUPLE RECESS**

**MINISTER:**

Shall we sing as they march out.

(One of these two songs may be sung)

- i. ~ *Great is Thy Faithfulness*
- ii. ~ *How Great Thou Art*



***PREAMBLE TO  
BLESSING A MARRIAGE AT THE  
ENGAGEMENT CEREMONY***

**T**he church does not recognize an engagement ceremony as marriage. We only consider the couple to be truly married after it has been blessed by the church and legally sealed.

A sound biblical policy is to encourage marriage and avoid fornication. This concept of blessing the couple at the engagement ceremony is in line with the policy of flexibility and encouraging biblical standards of holiness in our congregations.

We therefore conduct an engagement blessing when a couple wish to consider their engagement ceremony (customary marriage) as a full marriage. This is performed after the traditional ceremonies

between the families are completed. It must be anointed but brief, bearing in mind that the families have just sat through a lengthy customary event.

# ***BLESSING A MARRIAGE AT THE ENGAGEMENT CEREMONY***

## **1. ENGAGEMENT CEREMONY**

### **MINISTER:**

(Prays over ring prior to it being placed                      o                      n  
woman's finger.)

## **2. OPENING PRAYER FOR BLESSING CEREMONY**

## **3. HYMN/SONG**

*~ To God Be the Glory*

#### **4. REASON FOR OCCASION**

We want, at this time, to acknowledge the Lord especially in this marriage being established today.

According to the Word of God, ....(*Name of bridegroom*).... and ....(*Name of bride*).... have given tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom is due, and honour to whom honour is due.

We come at this time to acknowledge the hand of the Lord God Jehovah in all things. If the Lord doth not build the house we labour in vain. We therefore ask the Lord to build this house.

#### **5. SCRIPTURE READING**

#### **6. SHORT SERMON/ EXHORTATION**

#### **7. EXCHANGE OF VOWS (Couple facing each other.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I ....(Name of bridegroom)....,/ take you ....(Name of bride)..../ to be my cherished wife./ I promise you with all my heart/ to walk beside you/ in times of happiness/ and in times of great adversity./ I commit my love to you/ and I promise*

*to be faithful to you/ and to you alone/ until Christ comes./  
In the name of the Father,/ the Son,/ and the Holy Ghost. /  
Amen.*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I ....(Name of bride)....,/ take you ....(Name of bridegroom)..../ to be  
my cherished husband./ I promise you with all my heart/  
to walk beside you/ in times of adversity/ and in times of  
great happiness./ I commit my love to you/ and I promise  
to be faithful to you/ and to you alone/ until Christ comes  
again./ In the name of the Father,/ the Son,/ and the Holy  
Ghost./ Amen.*

## **8. PRAYER OF BLESSING** (Couple kneel for prayer.)

The Lord bless thee, and keep thee: The Lord make his face shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee: The Lord lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace. In the name of Jesus.

## **9. PRONOUNCEMENT OF MARRIAGE** (Couple stands.)

Today, ....(*Name of bridegroom*).... and ....(*Name of bride*).... have fulfilled all customary requirements and have also submitted their marriage to the Blessing of the Lord. I stand as a Minister of the Lord Jesus Christ to pronounce that this marriage is indeed blessed and sanctified of the Lord. And what God has put together, let no man or woman put asunder. In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen.

#### **10. SALUTATION OF BRIDE**

(Ask Bridegroom to kiss his Bride)

#### **11. CLOSING HYMN / SONG** (One of these two songs may be sung)

- i. ~ *To God Be the Glory*
- ii. ~ *Showers of Blessing*

#### **12. CLOSING PRAYER**

***PREAMBLE TO  
RENEWAL OF VOWS***

**T**his ceremony is performed by couples who wish to celebrate a longstanding marriage which has passed through the tests of time. As ministers we are servants of the people. If they wish to engage in an elaborate anniversary celebration of what the Lord has done for them, it is only appropriate to flow along and support them. Minister to them and speak the blessings of the Lord upon them that they may continue in happiness for many more years.

The vows in this section have been specially formulated to suit such an occasion.

***RENEWAL OF VOWS***

**1. HYMN 1** (Whilst Ministers file in and take their seats.)

**2. BRIDAL MARCH**

### **3. BRIEF TIME OF WORSHIP**

#### **4. INTRODUCTION** (Whilst at altar, couple stands and congregation sits.)

##### **MINISTER:**

Dearly beloved, we come to this house of worship to celebrate together the marriage of Mr. & Mrs. ....(*Last name of the bridegroom*)....

Marriage is honourable and it is fitting and proper that this marriage ceremony be celebrated in the presence of God.

God sanctified marriage when He brought together the first man and the first woman.

The Lord Jesus hallowed the occasion of marriage by His presence in His first miracle which He wrought in Cana of Galilee.

The Word of God teaches and speaks of the honour, the correctness, the sanctity, the holiness, and the blessedness of marriage.

All these are the portion of Christians who come to the marriage altar desiring to have a blessed and happy marriage.

The nearest place to heaven in this world is a Christ centered home. The nearest place to hell on earth is a house where hatred, bitterness, and quarrels prevail.

Except the Lord build a home of love, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost we know that we build in vain.

It is for this reason that these two persons come again to renew and affirm their love and commitment to this Holy estate of matrimony.

## **5. “I DO” VOWS**

**MINISTER:** (To the Bridegroom.)

....(*Name of bridegroom*)...., do you affirm your unconditional love and commitment to ....(*Name of bride*)....? Do you promise to continue living together after God’s ordinance in the Holy estate of matrimony; will you encourage her, honour and keep her, and not allow any circumstance to affect your faithfulness to her, so long as you both shall live?

**BRIDEGROOM:** *I do*

**MINISTER:** (To the Bride.)

....(*Name of bride*)...., do you affirm your unconditional love, submission and commitment to ....(*Name of bridegroom*)....? Do you promise to continue living together after God’s ordinance in the Holy estate of matrimony; will you encourage him, honour and keep him, and not allow any circumstance to affect your faithfulness to him, so long as you both shall live?

**BRIDE:** *I do*

## **6. DECLARATION OF WITNESS**

**MINISTER:**

Who stands as a witness to this renewal of vows between the couple?



(Witness stands, comes forward to the microphone and says)

*I ....(Name of father)...., confirm that I have freely and willingly given away my daughter in marriage with all my blessings.*

**OR**

*I ....(Name of witness)...., confirm that I have witnessed the renewal of marriage between Mr. and Mrs. ....(Last name of the couple).... in the House of God.*

## **7. RENEWAL OF VOWS (Couple facing each other.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bridegroom)....,/ having chosen you among all/ and having married you,/ this day renew my vows to you that;/ I will offer myself completely to you /as your wedded husband./ I promise to love you with all my heart/ and to be faithful./ I promise to stand by you always,/ in times of joy,/ in times of trials/ and in times of sorrow./ I dedicate our marriage and our home/ to the Lordship of Jesus Christ./ I pledge myself /and all that I am/ to this eternal covenant./ So help me God.*

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

*I, ....(Name of bride).... / having chosen you among all / and having married you, / this day renew my vows to you that; / In response to your love for me, / I will offer myself / in the beauty of submission / to you as your wife. / I also promise to love you / with all my heart / and to be faithful. /*

*I promise to stand by you always, / in times of joy, / in times of trial / and in times of sorrow. / I pledge myself / and all that I am / to this eternal covenant. / So help me God.*

## **8. INTRODUCTION OF RING SERVICE**

### **MINISTER:**

These rings are very precious and special. Today, we renew their purpose. Let them remain forever as a symbol of your love and commitment towards each other. Shall we pray.

## **9. PRAYER OVER RINGS**

### **MINISTER:**

Father, we ask you to redeem these rings once again with the blood of Jesus, and bless this couple with a fresh blessing that their love may be renewed as they wear them. Let them be a sign that these two shall by your grace keep their vows as long as they live. In Jesus' name.

## **10. EXCHANGE OF RINGS (Present ring to Bridegroom.)**

**MINISTER:** (Bridegroom repeating after.) (Mention first name of Bride three times)....(*Name of bride*)...., / *this ring is an expression/ of all I have promised you./ I give it with all my love/ and life-long commitment./ In the name of the Father,/ the Son,/ and the Holy Spirit./ Amen.*

(Present ring to Bride.)

**MINISTER:** (Bride repeating after.)

(Mention first name of Bridegroom three times)....(*Name of bridegroom*)...., / *this ring is an expression/ of all I have promised you./ I give it with all my love/ and life-long commitment. / In the name of the Father,/ the Son,/ and the Holy Spirit. / Amen.*

## **11. BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM KNEEL FOR PRAYER, AND LAYING ON OF HANDS**

## **12. PRONOUNCEMENT OF MARRIAGE**

(Couple stands.)

**MINISTER:**

For as much as Mr. & Mrs. ....(*Last name of bridegroom*)...., have openly renewed their vows to God and to each other today, and have declared their intention to keep and maintain this marriage, it is my privilege as a minister of the gospel and by the authority vested in me by the Lord Jesus Christ to pronounce that you are husband and wife afresh, in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost. Amen.

**13. SALUTATION OF BRIDE** [Ask

Bridegroom to salute (kiss) his Bride]

**14. COMMUNION**

The couple will now receive Communion together. This is to remind us all that it is because of what Christ has done for us that we are all here in the first place. The Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread, and when he had given thanks he brake it and said take, eat, this is my body which is broken for you. This do in remembrance of me.

After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, this cup is the new testament in my blood. This do ye, as oft as ye drink in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this bread and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till he come.

Let us pray.

(Bless the bread and the wine. Thank God for Jesus Christ's sacrifice.)

## **15. BIBLE READINGS**

## **16. SERMON**

## **17. CHARGE AND BLESSING** (Couple stands, Congregation sits.)

### **MINISTER:**

- *Trust in the Lord and do good, and He shall cause you to be established in the land and He shall provide for you.*
- *Delight yourself in the Lord and He shall give you the desires of your heart. Commit your ways unto the Lord and trust him and He shall bring it to pass.*
- *I bring down the walls of opposition and resistance that are lifted up against your life and your peace. I reverse, I nullify, I cancel, and I reject every unscriptural prayer and death wish against your life.*

- *I resist the desire of the enemy to see your downfall. I superimpose the will of God over and against every setback, every limitation, and every disappointment of your life.*
- *May your lives be extended. May your days be prolonged. May the rest of your years together be sweeter and better than the ones that are passed. May the blessing of God replace every curse.*
- *May a new day dawn upon your horizon. And may the goodness and favour of the Lord shine upon you in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen.*

## **18. PRAYER OF BLESSING**

## **19. PRESENTATION TO CONGREGATION**

**MINISTER:** (To Bride and Groom.) Please turn and face this congregation.

(To Congregation.)

Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you Mr. and Mrs. ....*(Last name of bridegroom)*....

***PREAMBLE TO***  
***WAKE-KEEPING SERVICE***

**M**any families lay the body of the deceased in state at home for a period. This is an important and sorrowful occasion for all families. It is necessary that the pastor is present to introduce a spiritual and encouraging mood into a usually depressed atmosphere. The presence of a choir singing praises to God is a very helpful addition to the pastor's role.

***WAKE-KEEPING SERVICE***

1. MINISTER GOES INTO DESIGNATED ROOM WITH FAMILY TO PRAY OVER THE BODY
2. **REASON FOR OCCASION** (At the wake service.)

Dear brethren, the Word of God instructs us to rejoice with them that do rejoice and to mourn with them that mourn.

As a church, we are also a family and consider our late ....(*Name of deceased*).... not just as a member of our church but as our brother/sister/father/mother. We really feel the loss together.

But as it is written, all things work together for good to them that love the Lord. In all things we must give thanks, for this is the will of God.

Tonight we come here to mourn with you all and also to comfort ourselves through our fellowship with the Holy Spirit.

Shall we bow our heads in prayer.

### **3. OPENING PRAYER**

### **4. PRAISE AND WORSHIP I**

### **5. SINGING/FILING PAST THE BODY**

### **6. EXHORTATION/PREACHING**

### **7. ALTAR CALL**

### **8. PRAISE AND WORSHIP II**



## **9. ANNOUNCEMENTS**

## **10. CLOSING PRAYER**

***PREAMBLE TO  
FUNERAL SERVICE***

**T**he Funeral Service may be held at the home of the deceased or in his church. However, some congregations meet in places which cannot be used as venues for funeral services. The pastor must therefore be flexible, and flow with whatever is appropriate.

The pastor must minister with a spirit of hope and encouragement. It is important to note that the family is already sad and depressed. There is therefore no need to deepen their sorrow any further.

However, it is an appropriate occasion to minister to people on the reality of heaven or hell and the need to be genuinely

‘born again’. **Every minister of God must use this opportunity to preach the Word of God to people who may otherwise never hear the Gospel.** An altar call for salvation is most appropriate, and *must* be made at every funeral service.

# ***FUNERAL SERVICE***

- 1. CONGREGATION PAYS LAST RESPECT**
- 2. OFFICIATING MINISTERS ENTER, FILE PAST THE CORPSE AND TAKE THEIR SEATS**
- 3. COFFIN IS CLOSED PERMANENTLY**
- 4. CONGREGATION STANDS**

## 5. HYMNI

### **LEAD US HEAVENLY FATHER**

*Lead us heavenly Father lead us  
O'er the world's tempestuous sea  
Guard us, guide us, keep us, feed us  
For we have no help but Thee,  
Yet possessing every blessing  
If our God our Father be*

*Saviour breathe forgiveness O'er us  
All our weakness Thou dost know  
Thou didst tread this earth before us  
Thou didst feel its keenest woe  
Lone and dreary, faint and weary  
Through the desert Thou didst go*

*Spirit of our God descending  
Fill our hearts with heavenly joy  
Love with every passion blending  
Pleasure that can never cloy  
Thus provided, pardoned, guided  
Nothing can our peace destroy.*

## 6. INVOCATION/OPENING PRAYER

## **7. SCRIPTURE READING I**

**(Revelation 14:12,13)**

## **8. SCRIPTURE READING II**

**(Revelation 20:11-15)**

## **9. HYMN II**

### **WHEN I SURVEY**

*When I survey the wondrous Cross  
On which the Prince of Glory died  
My richest gain I count but loss  
And pour contempt on all my pride*

*Forbid it Lord that I should boast*

*Save in the death of Christ my God  
All the vain things that charm me most  
I sacrifice them to His blood*

*See, from His head, His hands, His feet,  
Sorrow and love flow mingled down  
Did e'er such love and sorrow meet  
Or thorns compose so rich a crown?*

*Were the whole realm of nature mine  
That were an offering far too small  
Love so amazing, so divine  
Demands my soul, my life, my all.*

**10. BIOGRAPHY**

**11. TRIBUTES I - III**

**12. SONG I (By choir.)**

**13. OFFERTORY FOR FAMILY - SONG II (By choir.)**

**14. SERMON**

**15. ALTAR CALL/CLOSING PRAYER**

**16. CLOSING HYMN III**

**NOW THANK WE ALL OUR GOD**

*Now thank we all our God  
With hearts and hands and voices  
Who wondrous things hath done  
In whom this world rejoices  
Who from our mothers' arms  
Hath blessed us on our way  
With countless gifts of love  
And still is ours today.*

*All praise and thanks to God  
The Father now be given  
The Son and Him who reigns  
With them in highest heaven  
The one eternal God  
Whom heaven and earth adore  
For thus it was is now  
And shall be evermore. Amen.*

**17. THE BENEDICTION**

# **BURIAL SERVICE**

## **1. PROCESSION TO THE CEMETERY**

(Led by choir, then the coffin, officiating ministers, and all others in that order.)

## **2. COFFIN PLACED ON SIDE OF THE GRAVE**

## **3. MINISTER TAKES HIS PLACE AT HEAD OF THE GRAVE**

## **4. OPENING PRAYER**

## **5. OPENING HYMN**

### **BECAUSE HE LIVES**

*Because He Lives  
I can face tomorrow!  
Because He lives  
All fear is gone  
And now I know  
He holds the future  
And life is worth the living  
Just because He lives.*

*God sent His Son*



*They called Him Jesus;  
He came to love, heal and forgive,  
He lived and died to buy my pardon,  
An empty grave is there to  
prove my Savior lives.*

## **6. MINISTER INSTRUCTS THAT COFFIN BE LOWERED INTO THE GRAVE**

## **7. SCRIPTURE READING**

**(By assisting Minister)**

### **~Revelation 21:3-7~**

*And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.*

*And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*

*And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.*

*And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.*

*He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.*

## 8. HYMN II

### WHEN PEACE LIKE A RIVER

*When peace like a river  
Attendeth my way,  
When sorrows like sea-billows roll;  
Whatever my lot  
Thou has taught me to say,  
“It is well, it is well, with my soul.”*

*It is well (echo)  
With my soul, (echo)  
It is well, it is well with my soul.*

## 9. PRAYER OF COMMITTAL

### LET US PRAY.

(Alternatively, you may pray inspirat- ionally as  
led by the Spirit of God.)

*Heavenly Father, we come at this time to commit the  
body and the mortal remains of our brother/sister to the  
ground.*

We take comfort in your scripture which says “for the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first.”

After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord for ever. We therefore encourage ourselves with these words.

*As we commit this body into the ground we know that this is not a hopeless situation. We do it with HOPE and with faith in the name of Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.*

**10. COMMITTAL** (Minister takes shovel with soil in hand and says:)

- We look for the resurrection in the last day, and the appearing of the Lord Jesus, at whose second coming He shall judge the world.
- When the earth and sea shall give up the dead, and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds.
- And then shall come to pass the saying that is written:  
*Death is swallowed up in victory,*  
*O' death, where is thy sting*  
*O' grave, where is thy victory.*
- For as much as the spirit of our deceased brother ....(Name of deceased)...., has returned to God who gave it, we therefore commit the body of ....(Name of deceased).... to the ground and to the dust.

- From earth to earth. (While sprinkling dust.)
- From dust to dust. (While sprinkling dust.)
- From ashes to ashes. (While sprinkling dust.)
- In the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Amen.

## 11. FINAL PRAYER

## 12. HYMN II/CHORUS

~ *It is Well*

~ *Ebenezer*

## 13. INVITATION OF FAMILY TO SPRINKLE DUST SYMBOLICALLY

(Now invite three members of the family to sprinkle dust.)

## 14. PRESENTATION OF WREATHS

(Assisting Minister hands wreaths to  
 Officiating Minister to read out the names.)

## 15. VOTE OF THANKS

(By a member of the family.)

## 16. CLOSING HYMN & SONG

### LEAD KINDLY LIGHT

*Lead, kindly Light,  
Amid the encircling gloom  
Lead thou me on;  
The night is dark,  
And I am far from home,  
Lead thou me on.  
Keep thou my feet; I do not ask to see  
The distant scene;  
One step enough for me.*

*I was not e-  
ver thus, nor prayed that Thou Shouldst lead me  
on;*

*I loved to choose  
And see my path but now  
Lead thou me on.  
I loved the garish day and spite of fears  
Pride ruled my will  
Remember not past years.*

*So long Thy power  
Hath blest me; sure it still  
Will lead me on,  
O'er moor and fen,  
O'er crag and torrent, till  
The night is gone;*

*And with the morn those angel faces smile,  
Which I have loved  
Long since, and lost awhile.*

**FOREVER OH LORD**

*Forever, Oh Lord  
Forever, Oh Lord  
Thy Word is settled  
It's settled in heaven.*

**17. CLOSING PRAYER AND THE GRACE**

# **BURIAL SERVICE**

## **1. PROCESSION TO THE CEMETERY**

(Led by choir, then the coffin, officiating ministers, and all others in that order.)

## **2. COFFIN PLACED ON SIDE OF THE GRAVE**

## **3. MINISTER TAKES HIS PLACE AT HEAD OF THE GRAVE**

## **4. OPENING PRAYER**

## **5. OPENING HYMN**

### **BECAUSE HE LIVES**

*Because He Lives  
I can face tomorrow!  
Because He lives  
All fear is gone  
And now I know  
He holds the future  
And life is worth the living  
Just because He lives.*

*God sent His Son*

*They called Him Jesus;  
He came to love, heal and forgive,  
He lived and died to buy my pardon,  
An empty grave is there to  
prove my Savior lives.*

## **6. MINISTER INSTRUCTS THAT COFFIN BE LOWERED INTO THE GRAVE**

## **7. SCRIPTURE READING**

**(By assisting Minister)**

### **~Revelation 21:3-7~**

*And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.*

*And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*

*And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.*

*And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.*

*He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.*



## 8. HYMN II

### WHEN PEACE LIKE A RIVER

*When peace like a river  
Attendeth my way,  
When sorrows like sea-billows roll;  
Whatever my lot  
Thou has taught me to say,  
“It is well, it is well, with my soul.”*

*It is well (echo)  
With my soul, (echo)  
It is well, it is well with my soul.*

## 9. PRAYER OF COMMITTAL

### LET US PRAY.

(Alternatively, you may pray inspirat- ionally as  
led by the Spirit of God.)

*Heavenly Father, we come at this time to commit the  
body and the mortal remains of our brother/sister to the  
ground.*

We take comfort in your scripture which says “for the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first.”

After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord for ever. We therefore encourage ourselves with these words.

*As we commit this body into the ground we know that this is not a hopeless situation. We do it with HOPE and with faith in the name of Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.*

**10. COMMITTAL** (Minister takes shovel with soil in hand and says:)

- We look for the resurrection in the last day, and the appearing of the Lord Jesus, at whose second coming He shall judge the world.
- When the earth and sea shall give up the dead, and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds.
- And then shall come to pass the saying that is written:  
*Death is swallowed up in victory,*  
*O' death, where is thy sting*  
*O' grave, where is thy victory.*
- For as much as the spirit of our deceased brother ....(Name of deceased)...., has returned to God who gave it, we therefore commit the body of ....(Name of deceased).... to the ground and to the dust.

- From earth to earth. (While sprinkling dust.)
- From dust to dust. (While sprinkling dust.)
- From ashes to ashes. (While sprinkling dust.)
- In the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Amen.

## 11. FINAL PRAYER

## 12. HYMN II/CHORUS

~ *It is Well*

~ *Ebenezer*

## 13. INVITATION OF FAMILY TO SPRINKLE DUST SYMBOLICALLY

(Now invite three members of the family to sprinkle dust.)

## 14. PRESENTATION OF WREATHS

(Assisting Minister hands wreaths to  
 Officiating Minister to read out the names.)

## 15. VOTE OF THANKS

(By a member of the family.)

## 16. CLOSING HYMN & SONG

### LEAD KINDLY LIGHT

*Lead, kindly Light,  
Amid the encircling gloom  
Lead thou me on;  
The night is dark,  
And I am far from home,  
Lead thou me on.  
Keep thou my feet; I do not ask to see  
The distant scene;  
One step enough for me.*

*I was not e-  
ver thus, nor prayed that Thou Shouldst lead me  
on;*

*I loved to choose  
And see my path but now  
Lead thou me on.  
I loved the garish day and spite of fears  
Pride ruled my will  
Remember not past years.*

*So long Thy power  
Hath blest me; sure it still  
Will lead me on,  
O'er moor and fen,  
O'er crag and torrent, till  
The night is gone;*

*And with the morn those angel faces smile,  
Which I have loved  
Long since, and lost awhile.*

**FOREVER OH LORD**

*Forever, Oh Lord  
Forever, Oh Lord  
Thy Word is settled  
It's settled in heaven.*

**17. CLOSING PRAYER AND THE GRACE**

# **Name It!**

# **Claim It!!**

# **Take It!!!**

Dag Heward-Mills

DAG'S TAPES &  
PUBLICATIONS



Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the  
*KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.



A Lighthouse Chapel Publication

ISBN 9988-7798-5-2

**Copyright © 1999 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# Contents

## SECTION 1

<i>(Understanding what it means to Name It! Claim It!! Take It!!!)</i> .....	1
The Master Key to a Breakthrough .....	2
Developing Real Faith .....	8
Name It! .....	23
Claim It! .....	30
I Am, I Have, I Can! .....	47
How to Take It! .....	58

## SECTION 2

<i>(Practical Claims &amp; Positive Confessions)</i> .....	64
Introduction .....	65
Confessions for Securing Your Breakthrough .....	66
Confessions for Attaining Wisdom .....	67
Confessions for Mastering Your Marriage Situation .....	71
Confessions for Eradicating Marital Problems ....	75
Confessions for Entering Marriage .....	78



Confessions for Breaking Family Curses and Bondage .....	82
Confessions for Overcoming Wicked and Unreasonable People .....	86
Confessions for Experiencing Prosperity .....	89
Confessions for Obtaining a Mega Church .....	93
Confessions for Accomplishing Great Things in Ministry .....	97
Confessions for Achieving Pastoral Success .....	100
Confessions for Dominating in the Business World .....	103
Confessions for Overpowering Demons and Witchcraft .....	106
Confessions for Operating Successfully in Life .....	110
Confessions for Subduing the Opposition .....	112
Confessions for Crushing Spiritual and Physical Enemies .....	115
Confessions for Overcoming Disappointment and Emotional Problems .....	117

Confessions for Overcoming Complex Situations .....	121
Confessions for Bearing Much Fruit .....	125
Confessions for Improving Yourself in Prayer....	128
Confessions for Mastering the Word of God .....	131
Confessions for Cancelling Debts by Faith .....	135
Confessions for Developing Loyalty and Faithfulness .....	137
Confessions for Overcoming Persistent and Habitual Sins .....	140
Confessions for Developing a Righteous Lifestyle .....	143
Confessions for Victory .....	146
Confessions for Capturing Happiness and Peace .....	150
Confessions for Your Healing .....	153
Confessions for Travelling .....	162
Confessions for Sound Sleep .....	164

## OTHER TITLES BY THE AUTHOR

*Duality*  
*Beauty*  
*Frugality*  
*Born Again*  
*Anagkazo*  
*Poison*  
*Backsliding*  
*Ministerial Ethics*  
*The Strange Woman*  
*They went to Hell*  
*Loyalty & Disloyalty*  
*All About Fornication*  
*Forgiveness Made Easy*  
*The Beast of Prodigality*  
*Bearing Fruit after your own Kind*

For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to the address below:

DgTP  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle Bu, Accra  
Ghana

DAG'S TAPEs &  
PUBLICATIONs



# SECTION I:

*Understanding What it Means  
to*

*Name It! Claim It!! Take It!!!*

# *Chapter One*

## *The Master Key to a Breakthrough*

**Now the just shall live by faith...**

**Hebrews 10:38**

**W**hat does it mean to “Name It, Claim It and Take It”? “Name It, Claim It and Take It”, is simply a descriptive term for exercising your faith. Every Christian must have faith and must exercise it! Faith is the reason for breakthroughs and miracles in our lives. Faith is the reason for answers to prayer. Generally speaking, people who have faith are more prosperous than those who do not. I have noticed a difference between Christians who walk by faith and those who do not!

*Faith people also experience disappointments, sickness and other shortcomings. However, very generally speaking, I notice a trend of blessings, abundance and long life among those who believe for them.*

**Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.**

**Hebrews 10:38<sup>F.O.V.</sup>**

God is saying that if you draw away from faith, He will not be pleased with you. There are those who think that faith is not so important. They tend to draw away from the faith message and faith people. They feel that there must rather be an emphasis on patience, gentleness, holiness, etc. I believe these are important, and they all play special roles in the Christian life. *This, however, does not mean we should play down on the importance of faith to the Christian life.* The fact that the heart is important to the body does not mean that the kidneys are not equally important. Both are important, and both have special roles to play.

Faith is a very special virtue which has a key role to play in every Christian's life. The Bible says that without faith it is impossible to please God.

**But without faith it is impossible to please him:  
for he that cometh to God must believe that he is,  
and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently  
seek him.**

### **Hebrews 11:6**

It is interesting to note that the Word of God does not say that without love it is impossible to please God. The Bible does not say that without peace it is impossible to please God. The Bible is very clear on this fact: **WITHOUT FAITH IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO PLEASE GOD!**

Abraham's faith in God was considered as an act of righteousness. Abraham believed that El' Shaddai was able to give him a child in his old age. Abraham had his faults. He lied about his wife and surrendered her twice to unbeliever kings for their pleasure.

In spite of his lying and cowardly behavior, God was very pleased with Abraham because he had faith in His commandments.

Maybe by your standards, Abraham would have been disqualified. Perhaps in your opinion, Abraham was not a great guy. But he was a great man in God's sight. His greatness was as a result of his faith.

**And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore IT WAS IMPUTED TO HIM FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

### **Romans 4:21,22**

Dear Christian friend, God is happy, impressed and pleased when you believe in Him. When you believe that God will heal you, you make God happy! When you believe that God will prosper you, you make God excited. When you believe that your breakthrough is on the way, God is so pleased with you. When you have faith that you will live long, God is provoked to extend your life. **When you believe that God will give you increase and abundance, you excite the deep parts of El' Shaddai.** You make Him pour out the milk of His blessings into your life.

*I see you walking in the great blessings of Jehovah! I see you enjoying an abundant life in God! I see you free from sickness and disease! I see the power of curses broken in your life! I see that God is pleased with you because you believe in Him!*

From today, never doubt any part of God's Word. Accept that you are the champion He is speaking about. Flow with the message of prosperity, healing and abundance. Always remember that God is happy when you believe in Him.

God is not a God of poverty. Since I came to know the Lord I have not decreased in any way. I do not read about decrease, failure, setbacks and limitations in the Bible. I see only abundance, promotion and deliverance from my enemies. I see God lifting me up everyday! God did not bring you to Christ in order to demote and disgrace you. He brought you to Christ to lift and establish you in an abundant life. Jesus came that we might have life and have it more abundantly (John 10:10).

## **Jesus Blessed the Faith People**

Under the ministry of Jesus, several people experienced personal breakthroughs. Who were they? And why did they receive these miracles?

You will remember what Jesus said about the woman with the issue of blood. This was a woman who had suffered for twelve years without any breakthrough. She came up to Jesus and received an extraordinary miracle. What was the secret of her breakthrough? Jesus gave the answer in Mark 5:34

**...Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole...**

**Mark 5:34**



Blind Bartimaeus received his sight miraculously. He was a noisy fellow who disturbed the service. But Jesus took notice of him and healed him. What was his secret? His secret was faith in God. He had his healing by naming it, claiming it and taking it! Look at what Jesus said to Bartimaeus:

**...THY FAITH hath made thee whole.**

**Mark 10:52**

The sinful woman who poured an alabaster box of ointment on Jesus' feet also received a miracle of forgiveness. Why did Jesus forgive her? Jesus said to the woman,

**...THY FAITH hath saved thee; go in peace.**

**Luke 7:50**

Ten lepers were healed and only one came back to say thank you. The one who came back was made whole. Why did this leper receive an extra blessing? Jesus said the same words to him.

**...Arise, go thy way: THY FAITH hath made thee whole.**

**Luke 17:19**

Two blind men came to Jesus and asked for the mercy of God. Jesus touched them and healed them. What makes such nice things happen to some people? What were His words to these two men?

**...According to YOUR FAITH be it unto you.**

**Matthew 9:29**

Have you noticed that Jesus never said, "Thy love hath made thee whole"?

Jesus never said, “Thy holiness hath saved you.”

He never said, “According to your patience, be it unto you.”

Why did Jesus not say, “Thy good character hath made thee whole”?

Please do not misunderstand me! I am not saying that these virtues are not important! I am saying that it is the people’s faith that impressed Jesus. I am showing you that Jesus pointed out over and over that it was their *faith* that had brought the breakthrough. That is why the Bible says that without faith it is impossible to please God.

Have you ever thought of those men who broke through the roof of somebody’s house in order to bring their paralyzed friend to Christ? Perhaps they were experienced thieves who were used to breaking into people’s homes. Perhaps they were men who were used to jumping the queue and cheating others out of their rightful place. But the Bible tells us that Jesus noticed their faith and immediately responded to their needs.

**And WHEN HE SAW THEIR FAITH he said unto them, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.**

**Luke 5:20**

Jesus didn’t see their fault for jumping the queue or removing the tiles from somebody’s roof. He saw their faith! Jesus sees your faith! God sees your faith! It is time for you to rise up and believe the things that are written in the Word of God. According to your faith, it shall be done unto you!

## *Chapter Two*

### *Developing Real Faith*

**W**hen I was a younger Christian, the concept of having faith looked farfetched to me. After all, it seems unrealistic to command a mountain to move into the sea. Who could imagine such a thing? Even Jesus never transferred the mountains around Jerusalem to another location.

Faith has always seemed like something that emotionally strung people got involved with. It had looked like something that people who were not practical and down-to-earth got involved in. Faith people sometimes have the image of lazy Christians who are unwilling to work and just wish for good things to happen magically. But faith is none of these!

#### **What is faith?**

**Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.**

**Hebrews 11:1**

Faith is the assurance of things you are hoping for. Depending on your background, faith may seem more or less substantive. If you grew up in a critical and godless society, you will have less faith in the supernatural. In spite of this, when you are born-again, you are given a measure of faith from God.

**...God hath dealt to EVERY MAN the MEASURE OF FAITH.**

**Romans 12:3**

This means that everyone has some amount of faith. You may say, “I don’t believe in anything!” But that is not true! Every time you sit on a chair you are exercising faith in the chair. You believe it will not collapse, that is why you sit on it without thinking twice. Every time you sit in a car or an airplane, you are exercising faith in technology. You are also putting your faith in the driver or the pilot in the cockpit.

Whether you know it or not, you have a measure of faith. It is important to develop that faith. The subject of faith is a mysterious one and we have a lot to learn about it. I know of people who have exercised a lot of faith and this faith has resulted in many breakthroughs. There are also people who have seemingly exercised faith, without getting the same results. I do not have all the answers and neither does anyone. The Bible describes faith as a mystery.

**Holding THE MYSTERY OF THE FAITH in a pure conscience.**

**1 Timothy 3:9**

It is our duty to seek after the Lord and learn all we can from Him.

Every Christian is at a different level of faith. It is important to know that your faith can be at a higher or lower level depending on several factors. Before you can name it, claim it and take it, you must know what level of faith you are at! It is unreasonable to expect a three-year old boy to drive a real car! All he may be allowed to ride is a little tricycle, because he is just not capable of driving an adult's car!

This, however, does not make him inferior. All it means is that the boy is not mature enough to handle a real car. When he is older and mature enough, then he will be capable of handling bigger things.

There are many Christians who are believing God for things well beyond their level of faith. You must know the level of your faith. There are many things I do not pray for. There are things I have not exercised my faith about. I know I am not ready to move into certain levels of faith yet. One day when I am ready, I will. When I do exercise faith at that level, I believe I will get one hundred percent results.

## **TYPES OF FAITH**

The Bible speaks of different levels of faith. The Word of God teaches us that you can have little faith, great faith, growing faith, dead faith, weak and strong faith and even shipwrecked faith. All these descriptive terms tell us that the status of your faith can vary.

Notice the different scriptures that describe the levels of faith we can have.

### ***Little Faith***

**...O thou of LITTLE FAITH, wherefore didst thou doubt?**

**Matthew 14:31**

### ***Great Faith***

**...I have not found so GREAT FAITH, no, not in Israel.**

**Matthew 8:5-10**

### ***Weak Faith***

**And being not WEAK IN FAITH...**

**Romans 4:17-19**

### ***Strong Faith***

**He staggered not at the promise of God; but was**

## *Exceedingly Growing Faith*

**We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your FAITH GROWETH EXCEEDINGLY...**

**2 Thessalonians 1:3**

## *Increasing Faith*

**And the apostles said unto the Lord, INCREASE OUR FAITH.**

**Luke 17:5**

## *Full of Faith*

**...and they chose Stephen, a man FULL OF FAITH and of the Holy Ghost...**

**Acts 6:5**

## *Faith Unfeigned or Genuine Faith*

**Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of FAITH UNFEIGNED:**

**1 Timothy 1:5**

## *Unwavering Faith*

**But let him ask in FAITH, NOTHING WAVERING...**

**James 1:6**

## *Rich Faith*

**...Hath not God chosen the poor of this world  
RICH IN FAITH...**

**James 2:5**

## *Perfect or Mature Faith (Fully Developed)*

**Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and  
by works was FAITH MADE PERFECT?**

**James 2:22**

## *World Overcoming Faith*

**For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the  
world: and this is the victory that OVERCOMETH  
THE WORLD, EVEN OUR FAITH.**

**1 John 5:4**

## *Failing Faith*

**But I have prayed for thee, that THY FAITH FAIL  
NOT...**

**Luke 22:32**



## *Shipwrecked Faith*

**Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning FAITH HAVE MADE SHIPWRECK:**

### **1 Timothy 1:19**

When you look at all these types of faith, you realize that faith is a very variable condition. Do you have strong or weak faith? Are you full of faith? Is your faith dead or alive? These are important questions that you must ask yourself.

## **HOW TO IMPROVE YOUR FAITH**

You will notice that there are some types of faith that you should try not to have. Your faith must not be weak, little, dead or shipwrecked. Just as a weak or dead dog cannot guard your house, weak and dead faith can do you little good. If you are going to have a dog, get a strong one! If you are going to have faith, make sure you get living, strong and rich faith. But how does one go from little faith to great faith? How does one acquire exceedingly growing faith? What is the secret to acquiring the faith that brings breakthrough? The answer is in the Bible.

I am going to share with you Biblical methods for improving your faith. There are three simple ways to improve your faith: *hearing the right things, seeing the right things, and using it (your faith).*

## **Faith Comes by Hearing**

The principal way to improve your faith is by hearing. The Word of God teaches us that faith comes by hearing.

**So then FAITH COMETH BY HEARING, and hearing by the word of God.**

**Romans 10:17**

Whether you like it or not, what you believe in is determined by the things you hear. There are two ways by which every human being hears or listens to things: intentionally or unintentionally. Which ever way it is, your faith ends up being affected.

### ***Is it true?***

In Ghana, certain tribes are believed to have certain characteristics. Many people believe in these characteristics, even though sometimes they have no basis for doing so. There is a tribe in Ghana which is believed to be steeped in witchcraft and juju power. One person told me that when Satan was cast out of heaven, he fell into that region of Ghana and left his slippers there!

I know of people who refuse to rent their houses to people from that tribe, no matter how much they are willing to pay. Sometimes they have not even met anyone from that particular tribe, but because these sayings have been repeated over and over, people believe that they are true. Faith comes by hearing! I find it very interesting that although there are other regions and tribes which are equally

or maybe even more involved with witchcraft and occult activities, they do not receive as much attention!

My impression of people from this tribe I referred to is that they are easy going and very pleasant people. If I was to accept the things that have been said, perhaps I could not even flow with such people. I know of pastors who are even afraid to have crusades in such regions because they have heard so much about the black magic power of the region.

Perhaps they also believe that Satan fell into that region when he was cast out of heaven! You see, if such pastors had heard more about the power of God, they would probably have believed that the power of God is greater and better than any other power. No power of the enemy can stand up to the power and the blood of Jesus.

I also know young women who are desperate for husbands, but who would prefer to remain unmarried rather than marry men from certain tribes. Why is this? They have heard over and over, that certain groups of people have certain negative characteristics.

### ***Can you marry a boxer?***

When I was going to get married, my wife was very hesitant to get involved with me. She had heard so many negative things from her mother and aunts who had told her that the tribe which I came from were disagreeable. They told her stories of women who had married from my tribe and were beaten up by their husbands.

They went on to prove their theory by showing her that all the world famous boxers of Ghana were from that tribe!

My wife-to-be probably believed this because she had heard this from childhood. Whether you like it or not, faith comes by hearing! Even when you hear a lie, it has the power to make you believe. That is why some politicians are afraid of churches. They know that our people believe what we tell them. This is the reason why politicians try to control the media. They know that people believe what they hear, whether it is true or not.

Have you ever asked yourself why one of the first places to be captured in a military coup d'état is the broadcasting station? It is important for the new rebels to make everyone, especially the army, believe that there is a new government. The army has instructions to defend the government in power. The armed forces can only switch allegiance when they have been informed that there is a newly established government.

I once asked a Nigerian man, "What do you Nigerians think about Ghanaians?"

He immediately responded, "O we see you as people who are *poor* and *proud*!"

I thought to myself, "Perhaps this message that Ghanaians are 'poor and proud' is in the minds of many Nigerians." Maybe some have never even met any Ghanaian, yet they believe in their hearts that we are poor and very proud. Where does this notion come from? It comes from what they hear all the time.

I decided to ask several other Nigerians the same question. To my amazement, they all had the same impressions.

Where did they get these ideas from? How come they believe these things about Ghanaians? Faith comes by hearing!

What am I trying to say? All that I'm saying is that faith comes by hearing. What you keep hearing is what you believe. If you are in a church that believes in prosperity, you will believe that prosperity is a good thing and will gravitate towards it. If you are in a church which preaches that sickness and disease are sent from God to teach us humility, that is what you will believe. This is why Jesus said you must be careful about what you hear.

**And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear...**

**Mark 4:24**

When I first became a doctor, many people said, "Now that you are a doctor you will be able to minister to people both spiritually and physically."

What people don't realize is that for seven years, I heard all about the causes, progression and the outcome of every disease under the sun. Medical science teaches us that many conditions are hopeless. It teaches us how many situations are truly impossible and how the prognosis is often bleak.

After hearing such things for years, it is an uphill task to believe that God can and will undo the sicknesses that ravage the human race. I find it far easier to have faith when I don't know the medical implications of a thing.

Faith comes by hearing. You must be careful about what you hear.

## *Guard your ears*

If you hear that the economy is going down and therefore everyone is going down, you will believe and act accordingly. Money, which is a piece of paper, depends on the faith of the masses. As soon as the faith of people in money or in the banking system drops, the whole financial world can collapse. Whenever there is bad news in some major financial center, it sends ripples of fear into the minds of the millionaires of this world. They begin to scramble for their money. This is what causes stock markets and banks to go crashing down.

We must learn how important it is to guard our ears. You must not allow yourself to hear bad news and discouraging stories. Fear is a type of faith and it also comes by hearing. You must select your friends and walk with people who speak encouraging and positive words.

I once had some friends who didn't believe in me. They criticized me all the time. They saw no good thing in my ministry. I got rid of all those people and now I am surrounded by friends who say positive things.

It is also important for you to speak positively over your children. If you tell them, "You are daft", "You are stupid" and "You are bad", they will soon believe that they are daft, stupid and bad. I know of children who have been called "devil" by relatives until they eventually turned out to be human "devils".

This is why listening to tapes is such an important spiritual exercise. You must intentionally acquire preaching tapes and soak them in.

You must not listen to worldly music. You must surround yourself with Christian music. Music has a message and you will soon believe what you are hearing.

## **Faith is affected by what you See**

Although this statement is not in the Bible, it is also true. What is not explicit in scripture is often implicit in the Word! When Peter walked on the water, he did very well and his faith worked perfectly until he *saw* certain things.

**BUT WHEN HE SAW the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.**

### **Matthew 14:30**

He *saw* the wind and the waves and this had a terrible effect on his faith. What you *see* affects your faith! Peter's faith dropped drastically and he began to sink. Peter did not hear a message of doubt to disturb his faith level. He was not told anything to fill his heart with doubt. He just saw the wrong things! He saw the wind and the waves in action and that is what struck at his faith.

It is sometimes better to pray and believe God about things without seeing certain things. When you begin to observe the wind, waves and the water, your faith can fly out of the window!

## **Faith Comes by Using It**

Everyone has a level of faith. The more you use it, the more it increases. If you believe God for a bicycle and it happens, your faith will rise and you will have faith to believe God for a car. It is like lifting weights. You start from a lighter object and graduate upwards.

Jesus told the parable of the nobleman who gave a pound each to his ten servants. On his return from a long journey, he inquired from each of them how much they had gained by trading (using). You will discover from this parable that *using* of the one pound led to a natural increase in the number of pounds.

**He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.**

**And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.**

**But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.**

**And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had GAINED BY TRADING.**

**Then came the first, saying, Lord thy pound hath gained ten pounds.**

**And he said unto him, Well done, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in very little, have thou authority over ten cities.**

**Luke 19:12-17**



I find it easier to pray for the sick now. Sometime ago it was difficult to exercise my faith in that area of ministry. After doing it for some time, it takes less effort to believe God for miracles of healing in miracle services. Faith definitely increases as you use it. God has given us the principle of gaining by trading. You gain as you trade! You increase as you use it!

As you use these three principles, your faith will gradually move from weak to strong and from little to great! You will no longer have dead or shipwrecked faith. As you hear testimonies of great things that God has done, your faith for the same will rise. Your faith will become exceedingly growing faith.

# *Chapter Three*

## *Name It!*

**W**hat do you want from God? Just name it! I have discovered that God is our greatest friend. Traditionally, people have blamed the Lord for every bad thing that happened. Even in legal jargon, events like earthquakes, floods and tornadoes are called “Acts of God”. What does this mean? What are they trying to say? They are blaming God for the bad things which occur! What about the devil? If God does all these evil things, what does the devil spend his time doing?

Whenever something bad happens, people would say, “God is moving in a mysterious way, His wonders to perform.” In a certain sense, it is true that God is mysterious to us but, His real nature is revealed in the Word.

In Genesis Chapter One, God is known as “Elohim”, the Creator of the universe and the Creator of nature. In the life of Abraham, God reveals Himself as “El’Shaddai”. “El’Shaddai” is the God who goes against nature and blesses Abraham with a child in his old age. We see Him as the one who blesses His children giving them long life and prosperity.

How then do we blame Him for every bad thing that happens? The devil wants you to believe that God is fighting against you. The opposite is true! God is the best friend you have. The God you serve is the God of promotion and blessing. If God did not hold back Jesus Christ, what good thing will He withhold from us?

**He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?**

**Romans 8:32**

The Bible describes God as the sun and the shield who gives grace and glory. God is giving you beauty for ashes right now! He's making your life glorious as you name it and claim it!

**For the Lord God is a sun and shield: the Lord will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.**

**Psalms 84:11**

### ***Did God Try to Kill Jesus?***

I want you to remember an experience that the disciples had with the Lord. They were in a boat trying to cross the Sea of Galilee when a storm struck. What did Jesus do?

Did he stand up and declare, “*God moves in a mysterious way his wonders to perform*”?

Did he say, *“I don’t know why God has sent this storm to kill me, but He is working His perfect plan”?*

No, he did not! He rebuked the storm.

**...Then he arose, and REBUKED the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a great calm.**

### **Luke 8:24**

If God is the one who sent the storm to kill Jesus and the disciples, then Jesus actually rebuked God. By rebuking the storm, Jesus was disapproving of it. He was stopping the agents of destruction from shortening his life and ministry. Did Jesus rebuke God? Certainly not! The storm was not an “Act of God” sent to destroy them!

The Bible teaches us that it is the thief or the devil who comes to steal, to kill and to destroy.

**The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.**

### **John 10:10**

God does not come into your life to destroy you! El’Shaddai does not come into your life to kill you. He is here right now to prolong your life and to extend your days. Your duty is to know and to believe that God is your friend who is trying to help you. In actual fact, God is your very best friend.

**...and there is a friend that sticketh closer than a brother.**

Because God is such a good God, He wants you to name your blessings. Traditionally, we have thought that having nice things is sinful. To be a holy Christian means to be nothing and to have nothing. But God has a bountiful store of blessings waiting for those that believe. That is why His Word says you can ask for whatsoever you desire and you can receive it.

**Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.**

**Mark 11:24**

This scripture does not say, “Whatsoever things you *need*.” It does not say, “Whatsoever things *God desires for you*.” It says, “Whatsoever *YOU* desire.”

Please read it loud and clear! God is saying that you can have *your* desires. What do *you* desire? What is your wish? God wants you to name it! God wants you to ask for it! **The reason why many Christians do not have answers to their prayers is because they do not ask.** Often we think we are carnal if we ask for nice things. But the Bible is very clear on this.

**... ye have not, because ye ask not.**

**James 4:2**

If God did not withhold Jesus Christ from us, what good thing is He going to keep back from your life? (Romans 8:32)

One of the scriptures I love is John 15:7—

**If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.**

### **John 15:7**

Jesus was teaching us that God is prepared to give us what *we* want. He said that you shall ask what you will and not what God wills for you. God knows that you have a will. You can choose to serve Him or not! God wants to work with people who have chosen to and are willing to serve Him.

The fact that you are a Christian does not mean that you no longer have a will or a desire for certain things. God knows that and He encourages you to come to Him and ask for what you wish. This is the Word of God.

Of course, there are some conditions. John 15:7 says that if you abide in Him and His Word abides in you, you can ask for what you want! **When you abide in Christ your desires will line up with the Word of God.** I came to know the Lord years ago. My desire now is to win more people to Christ. I desire to experience church growth and the blessings of the Holy Spirit.

Somebody may ask, “Don’t you desire more money or cars?” The answer is no. If it was money I desired, I would simply practice medicine in America. That would be a simpler way of satisfying a desire for money.

The problem many people have is that they think it is impossible to have more spiritual desires than carnal ones. It is not! There *is* a certain level of spiritual maturity where carnal things do not mean so much to you.

**As you abide in Christ and His Word abides in you, you will desire things that are consistent with the Word of God. When you name them and claim them, you will receive them.**

When you have the right heart, wealth and riches cannot destroy you. All the patriarchs who served the Lord were blessed with abundance and wealth. The prosperity of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob often intimidated their neighbors and incited jealousy. The Bible says that Abraham was very rich. God had made him rich. In fact, at one time, Abraham wanted people around to know that it was not them who had contributed to his riches. Because of this he refused a large gift from the King of Sodom.

**And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand unto the Lord, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth. That I will not take from a thread even to a shoe latchet, and that I will not take anything that is thine, lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abram rich:**

**Genesis 14:22,23**

God was obviously prospering Abraham. Abraham knew that his prosperity was coming from one source – El' Shaddai. Remember that every good and perfect gift comes from above. Abraham's faith in God was not destroyed by his riches. The Bible makes it clear that it is the love of money and not money itself that corrupts.

**For THE LOVE of money is the root of all evil...**

**1 Timothy 6:10**

From today, begin to name all the things that you desire from your heavenly Father. He is standing by to respond to your faith. *Don't forget that God is impressed with people who believe in Him.*



































































































































































































































**~Other Speakers G-L: Greg Gordon:**

Jeremiah 8:4-12 (niv) - "Say to them, 'This is what the LORD says: "'When men fall down, do they not get up? When a man turns away, does he not return? Why then have these people turned away? Why does Jerusalem always turn away? They cling to deceit; they refuse to return. I have listened attentively, but they do not say what is right. No one repents of his wickedness, saying, "What have I done?" Each pursues his own course like a horse charging into battle. Even the stork in the sky knows her appointed seasons, and the dove, the swift and the thrush observe the time of their migration. But my people do not know the requirements of the LORD. "'How can you say, "We are wise, for we have the law of the LORD ," when actually the lying pen of the scribes has handled it falsely? The wise will be put to shame; they will be dismayed and trapped. Since they have rejected the word of the LORD, what kind of wisdom do they have? Therefore I will give their wives to other men and their fields to new owners. From the least to the greatest, all are greedy for gain; prophets and priests alike, all practice deceit. They dress the wound of my people as though it were not serious. "Peace, peace," they say, when there is no peace. Are they ashamed of their loathsome conduct? No, they have no shame at all; they do not even know how to blush. So they will fall among the fallen; they will be brought down when they are punished, says the LORD.

There is a sense of immediateness to this scripture that these very words are speaking some light into a Christian profession of religion we sadly find ourselves in that is veiled within a shroud of darkness and confusion. Many times we hear the prophet say words that are impressed upon his mind and heart by visions or images given in parables of sort, but here the prophet Jeremiah is spoken to by the LORD and is given words to say in directness of speech not in man's interpretation but speaking the very words of God in fear and trembling.

Do we reverence these words as the Words of the very living God that we must one day bring account to every deed done in these bodies? These words spoken by the LORD who is spirit and whose words are of spirit and truth which bring divine revelation to our spirits. Let those who are unregenerate and spiritually discerned stumble over them but let the child of God listen with a sense of expectancy that the LORD is speaking to our situation in which we find ourselves.

Why then have these people turned away? - You must ask yourself very pointedly have I turned away from God, have I ever gone through a duration of time in my life as a child of God that I did not redeem the time? Did I follow after a way contrary to God's plan for my life? Did I ever neglect my quiet time with God? Did I ever willfully choose to sin while under the pressing conviction of a jealous God who inhabits you? Surely you must contend that you have turned away once, twice, possibly many times but as much as you have turned away you have returned, as the scripture says: 'When a man turns away, does he not return? By God's mercy he has restored you in a multiplicity of ways and your entire life exhibits the divine working of God's forgiving grace in your experience of living in Christ. But surely you cannot keep on sinning against a grace which is abundantly extended to you again and again for it shall come a time when you will not return, your heavenly affections will be so calloused and the pleading of the Holy Spirit so muddled that you will be given into your sin, into your pleasures and wanton lusts, you will not return.

No one repents of his wickedness - Have you need of repentance? If you were to come into the presence of the Living God would you know of a surety that your walk was blameless? God in His mercy shows times of repentance and gives us ample warning and with strong crying, pleading His heart through the prophets and calls us back to Himself. But what happens to a people that hear the message of repentance and don't repent? Not only a message of repentance from a mere man in the conjecture of his mind, but a man speaking words of repentance as speaking the very words of God that are heavenly and from above. If I would ask you dear church 'are you wicked?' You would quickly retort 'no we are righteous in Christ' and you are right in your answer but shall you continue to do wickedly and act as though you are wicked being righteous in Christ? Shall we who are born from above act and behave as those who are accursed of God and enemies of God. Do you feel shameful of your condition that you know mares the Holy name of Christ and our being joined in union with Him. Repent of your acts of wickedness allow God who is Spirit search your heart and convict you of chaff in your heart that must be consumed and burnt away. For there will be a day in which you cannot repent of your wicked acts, there will be a time that God calls all things into judgement and you will stand before Him with all the Holy angels and you will give account.

But my people do not know the requirements of the LORD - Amongst many followers of Christ who are turning and returning constantly in a process of struggling with sin really don't know the requirements of God. There is a spiritual teaching and impartation of truth that the spirit of God gives regenerate men that allows them to

overcome sin and glorify God. God is a Holy God who desires for a Holy people, and not only desires but has made the provisions through Christ that we are to be Holy. It is not a promise for you to be holy and filled with the Holy Spirit but it is a implicit command, 'Be ye Holy', 'Be filled with the Holy Spirit'. Did not Jesus said to Nicodemus 'you are the leader of Isreal yet you don't know these things?' So the cause of much wickedness and turning away is due to spiritual leaders teaching falsities or rather not teaching the full counsel of truth to a people. Pastors, Leaders who have been placed in leadership by Christ Himself, do you teach people the full requirements of God? Do you feel shame in bringing your people away from God and allowing them to practice all wickedness while mainting and calling on the name of Christ?

I leave it to you dear saint. Read and re-read that passage of scripture as the Words of the very God Himself. Hear the echo of divine truth throughout the ages that calls you to Himself and out of falsehood and deceit that we find ourselves in.

# Poison

*Taming Your Tongue*

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7798-2-8

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**

**1<sup>st</sup> Printing 1998**

**2nd Printing 2001**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.



# ***Contents***

Introduction .....	1
The Poison of Lies .....	5
Flattery .....	16
Profane Language .....	24
Talebearing .....	27
Blasphemy .....	30
Foolish Talking .....	38
Expressing Doubt .....	41
Slander .....	44
Backbiting .....	48
Murmuring .....	52
Death and Life .....	55

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

# ***Introduction***

**...the tongue... is an unruly evil, FULL OF DEADLY POISON.**

**James 3:8**

The tongue is very vital to our lives as human beings. As a physical organ, it helps us to taste and speak. In the spiritual sense, the tongue controls our destiny, regardless of our status as Christians or unbelievers.

According to Proverbs 18:21, “***Death and life are in the power of the tongue...***” This means that the power of cancer, leukaemia, paralysis, long life, health and wealth are all embedded in the tongue. The tongue controls death and life!

God made us in his own image. And when God was in the process of creating the earth, He spoke with his mouth. He said, “**Let there be...**”, and there was!

These were creative words. They were spoken out of faith. These words created the world and brought life into being. The land and the host of animals were created. The sea, the fish, the mountains, the green grass, the waterfalls and the rivers that we see were all created by faith-filled words.

It can be argued that if human beings were made in God's image, then He has also made it possible that His image will possess this creative power. **What we should not forget is that He did not put this creative power in our feet, hands, hearts or kidneys. The creative power lies in our tongue.**

The tongue is a very powerful instrument. But unfortunately, we are often unaware of the power it possesses. It is dangerous to handle dynamite when you do not know what you are dealing with – it can kill you. Many Christians have been killed by their own tongues. We almost always take our words for granted. Many Christians pass negative comments on their own lives, without knowing the far reaching effects.

Whoever you are and whatever you do, your language must not be poisonous.

**...the tongue... is an unruly evil, FULL OF DEADLY POISON.**

**James 3:8**

The first thing to note about this scripture is that it was not written to unbelievers, but to Christians. According to the Bible, no man can tame his tongue. It takes the Holy Spirit to help the believer control his tongue.

The tongue is full of poison. Poison that can kill. It is this very poison that we will be learning about in the next few pages.

When a snake strikes you it poisons your blood stream. Some types of snake poison affect the nervous system. Other types affect the cardiovascular system. When the poison hits the nervous system, many of the nerves become paralysed and you may stop breathing and die.

When the other type of poison hits the cardiovascular system you may begin to bleed internally and externally. **Whichever type of poison it is, you better deal with it as fast as you can – or else you will be in big trouble. Poison kills!**

I remember in 1982, my class was in a laboratory at the university's zoology department for a lesson on snakes. (We had to learn about different snakes and their poisons, since we were medical students.)

A visiting lecturer brought out a huge viper from a glass container. He opened the mouth to expose the fangs of the snake. There were these two frightening and deadly fangs within the mouth.

The lecturer put his hand inside the mouth, near the fangs and squeezed some of the poison from the snake. (This is sometimes done to produce anti-snake serum to treat snakebites.)

But something went wrong during the demonstration and the viper wriggled itself loose and struck the hand of the lecturer. He had a little cut. We were so scared, because we knew this man could easily die. Luckily, he was

treated and he survived. Why were we so worried? Because we knew that the poison had the power to end the man's life.

Let's say a snake poisons someone you love – for instance your father. Your father is probably the one who pays your school fees. It means that within the mouth of a poisonous snake is the ability to stop you from going to school. Within the mouth of the snake is the ability to take away the father of a child or the husband of a wife! If a poisonous snake bites a pastor, it will take away the shepherd and scatter the flock.

These are the realities of poison. **Just as we took the poison out of that snake's mouth, we can also take the poison out of your tongue. It may be difficult, but it can be done.** But the question is "How do you remove this poison?"

First of all, you have to know what this poison is and how it works. Then you can find an antidote for it. Let's now begin to examine several important types of poison that are found in the tongue. Understanding these different types will help you to know how to deal with them.

## ***Deadly Poison #1***

# ***The Poison of Lies***

### ***LIES – THE DESTROYER OF YOUR CONSCIENCE***

**...the tongue... is an unruly evil, FULL OF DEADLY POISON.**

**James 3:8**

One thing I'm sure about is that many Christians do not know the effect that lies have on their lives. This is because lying is probably the commonest sin of all. Big lies, small lies, spoken lies, unspoken lies and half-truths are all lies. I once asked a congregation, "How many of you have been involved in the sin of lying?" Almost all the people present raised their hands. People simply do not know the damaging effect of lies on their souls.

**The first damaging effect of lies is that it sears your conscience.** You see, your conscience is the measuring rod that keeps you in line with God.

Your conscience is the still small voice that tells you when you are wrong. When your conscience is damaged, you no longer have that correcting and refining influence to keep you on the right track.

People with seared conscience are known to have committed terrible crimes against humanity. They are past feeling, and no longer care whom they hurt or offend. **A Christian without a good conscience is like a nation without a police force.** That Christian will commit greater and greater sins. He will start from ‘white’ lies to ‘small’ lies and then graduate to ‘bigger’ lies. From there he may actually begin to indulge in criminal acts.

**I once had an encounter with a classic Christian liar who had little or no conscience.** Some years ago, our church, the Lighthouse Chapel International used to rent the medical school canteen in Accra for church services. We needed some wooden chairs, and this gentleman was introduced to me as a good Christian carpenter who could do the job.

At the time, I was not experienced in dealing with these artisans. I trusted everybody, especially if they told me they were Christians. We paid this gentleman a large sum of money in advance.

He assured us, “I’ll do a great job for you. And by the way, I even did a similar job for another church.” (I found out later that this was not true.)

Some weeks later when it was time for delivery of the chairs, we went to his house to remind him.



He assured us, “Everything is on schedule and you will have your chairs in a week’s time.”

A week later, he appeared and said, “Listen, I’ll need some extra money to complete this chair project in another week or two.” Once again, this man was lying.

I said, “Alright, we’ll give you the extra money you need.” I didn’t know that this Christian was lying again. We found out later that he had not even begun the project.

A week later, there were still no chairs. So we decided to go to the shop to see for ourselves how far he had progressed with the work. I went along with my good friend, Dr. Nosh.

I said to Dr. Nosh, “Come on, let’s go and find out when we are really going to get our chairs.”

When we arrived at the shop we were told the carpenter was not in. We decided to look around for ourselves. To our surprise, there was not even a single chair in the shop. We thought we were in the wrong place.

We asked again, “Is this ‘Brother X’s’ workshop?”

“Yes it is!” they said. But there were only a few unfinished wardrobes standing around.

When we eventually saw this Christian carpenter we confronted him, “Look, where are our chairs?”

He calmly replied, “Everything is ready. You didn’t see any chairs in the shop because I have taken them to a workshop near Pantang Hospital (on the outskirts of Accra) to be dried.”

He further explained, “The wood was a bit wet, and needed to be treated and dried specially so that you would have a perfect job.

You see, I only want to give you the best.” He sounded so sincere, but he was lying. We didn’t know then that a Christian could lie so much.

Dr. Nosh asked, “Are you sure?”

He said, “Oh, yes.”

But by this time we had begun to suspect that he was lying. So Dr. Nosh decided to drive all the way outside Accra to check if our chairs were really being dried. I know this brother thought we would never find the time to verify if the chairs were there or not. Lo and behold, when my friend got there, the people had no idea what he was talking about.

“We don’t even know this man you are talking about. And we have never seen any such chairs,” they said.

We finally realised that we were dealing with a diabolical liar. He had been deceiving us all along, and we were not aware of it.

The church abounds in such Christian liars. Some unbelievers even have a better conscience than some Christians.

**Speaking LIES in hypocrisy; HAVING THEIR  
CONSCIENCE SEARED with a hot iron;**

**1 Timothy 4:2**

***LYING – THAT WHICH HARDENS YOUR HEART***

Lying is a dangerous folly, because you gradually believe your own lies. This is self-deception. This leads

us to the next damaging effect of a lying tongue – a hardened heart. The Bible calls it deceiving your own self.

**...deceiving your own selves.**

**James 1:22**

From the stage of self-deception, liars graduate into the deadly condition known as *hardness of heart*.

**Harden not your hearts...**

**Hebrews 3:8**

Many people are invited to church. They sit under the anointing and hear the Word of God, but do not respond or change their lives. Although some people are not born again, they convince themselves that they are Christians. Gradually, they develop the deadly condition known as ‘hardness of heart’. This is a stage where God can no longer reach you.

God tried to reach Pharaoh. Indeed, God tried harder than he had tried with any human being I have known under the sun. He tried every method. He sent Moses, and Aaron. These were preachers, pastors, prophets and men of God. They were also miracle workers who performed miracles of healing, miracles of supernatural lice, flies and frogs. All this, just to convince one man. **God had to kill every first born Egyptian before Pharaoh would listen to reason. By the time God finished trying to convince one man, he had destroyed a whole nation.** In other words, the condition of a man’s heart destroyed a whole nation. And even after God had destroyed the whole nation, Pharaoh was still not fully converted.

It is dangerous to hear the truth and lie to yourself that what you are hearing is not true. You may need some ‘Pharaohic’ treatment to change your mind. Haven’t you heard the testimonies of so many people who got converted after all their chickens died, or after armed robbers attacked them? **When you are deceiving yourself, simple methods of communication no longer work with you.** Counselling doesn’t work, preaching doesn’t work, teaching doesn’t work, and advice doesn’t work. What may now work are the ‘frogs and flies’ of Pharaoh.

### ***LIES – TOOLS OF SATAN***

**The INSTRUMENTS also of the churl [wretch] are evil: he deviseth wicked devices to destroy the poor with LYING WORDS...**

**Isaiah 32:7**

Lies are the instruments the devil uses to work great evil. Lies form an integral part of most wicked and bad things. There is a saying, ‘*All thieves are liars, all liars are thieves*’.

Most wicked activities cannot go on without a lie being told here or there. Dictators for example, cannot suppress entire nations without the propaganda of lies and deception, which they continually perpetrate. **Have you not noticed that wicked and undemocratic dictators do not allow a free and an independent press to operate?** They desperately need the assistance of diabolical lies to stay in power and oppress the masses.

Whenever you speak a lie, what you are actually doing is grasping one of Satan's favorite tools. You are joining hands with the devil and you are playing his game. Jesus calls him the father of liars.

**...for he is a LIAR, and the father of it.**

**John 8:44**

Some time ago, I experienced an attack against my church and ministry by some members in the community. We had entered into an agreement with the local government to develop a car park in exchange for building a community facility. As time went on, these people who felt they had a cause to fight attacked our property and broke into the contractor's storage shed. This led to their arrest by the police. However, whilst on bail they began a campaign of lies against me, against the pastors and against the church.

Although the entire project was intended to be a kind gesture to the community, it turned out to be one of the nastiest experiences for our church. As I said earlier, **evil does not work without the power of lies and deception.**

The problem with these individuals in the community escalated to the point where all sorts of high-ranking government officials got involved. These boys went 'behind our backs' and said several things to them, many of which were untrue.

As the situation got out of control, we had to go and see these government officials ourselves. I remember one office in particular, where these boys had already been with their version of the story. Their version, of course,

was tainted with lies. When we arrived at the office, we asked to see the Minister. We then had to wait for some hours, after which we were welcomed in politely and asked to narrate our story.

One of my associates was the spokesman for that day. He gave the background to our problems with our brothers from the community. The Minister listened quietly, giving an occasional nod here and there.

At the end of the narration, the Minister said, “Well, I understand your problems, and I can appreciate your difficulties, but there is something I also want to point out.”

He continued, “I hear there is one of your pastors who claims that he does not respect me because he says I am an uneducated person who has accidentally become a Minister of State.”

We were dumbfounded! He was clearly referring to one of my pastors. *What on earth is this man talking about?* I thought to myself.

He went on, “I hear this pastor also said in the church, that I was seen distributing machine guns at the market to quell a recent demonstration.”

By this time we were totally confused. We wondered, “What are these lies?”

I gasped, “This is not true! It is a complete lie and a fabrication.” I went on, “Everyone knows that we wouldn’t say anything like that!”

*How can this man believe such a lie?* I thought. But these liars had already influenced him.

I insisted that there was no truth in what he had been told. However, the Minister went on to outline his background as a professional and spoke at length, describing some of his achievements. He also pointed out to us he had been at home during those demonstrations in question, and could not have distributed any machine guns. Unfortunately, this man had been influenced by a lie. And this lie had a damaging effect on the church's image and our integrity.

Later on, another witness disproved these lies, but much damage and hurt had already been done. We were told later by a District Authority officer about the identity of the individual who had spread these lies. The liar is reported to have said, "I was only saying this to add some spice to our story."

**You see, their goal could not have been achieved without the help of lies.** This is the point I am trying to make. Evil cannot succeed without the help of lies. Lies are tools in the hand of the enemy. Lies are the weapons of Satan. Do not join hands with *diabolos* – the devil.

Through experience I have come to realise that about 90 per cent or more of Christians are involved in lying. The Bible is saying that other people's lives are destroyed because of your lies. There are believers who lie as easily as they breathe.

I trust people who speak the truth. No matter what you have done, or the sin you have committed, if you tell the truth you are on your way to receiving help.

In Isaiah 1:18, God says that, “come and let us reason together, though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be white as wool. Though they may be red as crimson, they shall be white as snow”. He wipes the slate clean. When you are wrong and you admit it, it changes your situation.

**He that covereth his sin shall not prosper...**

**Proverbs 28:13**

### ***LIES – THAT WHICH GENERATES GOD’S HATRED***

**These six things doth the LORD hate... a lying tongue...**

**Proverbs 6:16,17**

There are six things the Lord hates, and lying is one of them. He hates lies. Be honest when you discern that you have a problem. Get help while you can. I have done it before. When I was a young Christian I went to see my leaders and pastors to help me when I had a problem.

Be honest with yourself. Correct any lies you may have told. I have had people come back to me to recant their lies. On some occasions I have had some church members tell me, “Pastor, when I came to your office for counselling, I lied to you, but now I want to tell you the truth.” God will bless such people. That is the beginning of something new. By God’s standards it is always better to speak the truth and face the consequences. What is it that you have to say? Say it. Be bold, and be strong. That is the beginning of your redemption and your spiritual breakthrough.



God hates liars so much that He has decided to put them all together in one place – hell. Liars are lined up together with sorcerers, murderers, and abominable people and sent into hell. Most Christians will not have anything to do with sorcery and witchcraft, but I know many christians who would very easily tell lies.

**...the abominable, and murderers... and sorcerers... and ALL LIARS, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone...**

**Revelation 21:8**

## ***Deadly Poison #2***

# ***Flattery***

**For neither at any time used we FLATTERING words...**

**1 Thessalonians 2:5**

To flatter means to *excessively* praise someone *insincerely* in order to *gain favour* for yourself. Many leaders are surrounded by people who flatter them. They speak words which are not true in order to feed their ego. They make the leader feel that he is the greatest and the best. “There is no one like you,” they say.

**...A FLATTERING mouth worketh ruin.**

**Proverbs 26:28**

It is not only secular leaders who fall prey to flattering hypocrites. Christian leaders are also subject to the insincerity of such people. What then is the effect of flattery? The answer is destruction and ruin.

In Ghana, there are traditional chiefs and rulers who do not wield ‘real’ political power. During traditional gatherings such as festivals, there are official flatterers who double as linguists to hail the chiefs and say many great things about them. Some of the accolades are so fantastic that it just makes you wonder! Many of these chiefs are even made to feel like God Himself.

I want to show you some of the amazing words of praise that are showered on some of these chiefs. The first one is (and I’m using the Ashanti language here):

*konini, wo na wo twere ebo ma ebo pae.*

This means, **“Great warrior, you are the one who leans on a rock and it breaks.”** Let’s ask ourselves now, who can lean on a rock and make it break?

Another flattering phrase is:

*hene kɛse, wo na wo tia nsuo mu ma nsuo we.*

This also means, **“Great king, you are the one who steps in water and it dries up.”** Let’s ask ourselves again, who on earth can step in water and cause it to immediately dry up. Once again, human beings are made to feel ‘super human’.

Another amazing flattery is:

*Wo na wode kɛntɛn k nsuo trenɛɛ ano ɛde nsuo ba fie.*

This means, **“You are the one who goes to fetch water from the river with a basket.”** Imagine that! Fetching water with a basket! Who on earth can do that?

Another incredible utterance of flattery is:

*Wo na wode wo nsapan ekum gyata.*

This means, **“You are the one who kills the lion with your bare hands.”**

Think about that! Killing a lion with your bare hands. Only people like Samson could do that, and that by the anointing!

What is the effect of all this flattery? You see, flattery is one of the deadly poisons of the tongue. It makes you think that you are somebody you are not. **Flattery is an injection of pride. Therefore, flattery is a trap leading to a ‘fall’.** Because “pride goeth before a fall”.

It makes ordinary men think they are God. But no man is a god. All men are mortal. That is why great kings and princesses are here today and gone tomorrow. Mighty billionaires who have everything are also here today and gone tomorrow.

**Your fathers, where are they?... do they live for ever?**

**Zechariah 1:5**

Remember the story of Herod in the New Testament. He was a good speaker and a powerful orator.

**And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. AND THE PEOPLE GAVE A SHOUT, SAYING, IT IS THE VOICE OF A GOD, AND NOT OF A MAN.**

**And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms...**

**Acts 12:21-23**

This man attended a ceremony and was the main speaker. After his speech, people crowded around him and shouted his praises.

They told him, “We’ve never heard anyone speak the way you spoke today. It was just supernatural.”

They continued, “You know, if God Himself were to have spoken, He couldn’t have done any better than you did, O great Herod.”

They injected pride into him. Herod believed he was becoming God. The Lord had to prove immediately that he was a mere man. He died that very day.

I remember years ago, I asked one of my fathers in the ministry, “How are you able to overcome pride, when you preach so powerfully?”

He remarked, “I’ve noticed that when I finish ministering there are many people who give me all sorts of praises. After analyzing it for a while I realized that pride was being served to me on a silver platter.”

He continued, “Because of this, whenever I finish preaching and the Lord has moved powerfully, I quickly slip out to avoid being served with pride.”

You see, this man of God had learned that flattery was a deadly poison, which would eventually kill him. Remember, pride comes before a fall. Remember also that it was flattery that led to the execution of Herod.

When I preach, I do not look out for anybody to praise me. **When I first started out preaching, I was very interested in people's comments after my sermons.** The post-preaching comments had two effects on me. Most of the time they encouraged me. I realised that after some time that when nobody made a comment after the service, I was discouraged. Then the Lord spoke to me, "Do not look out for what anybody has to say. Just preach what I ask you to preach, whether they like it or not. You are doing your job!"

**With that attitude I was suddenly liberated, and have continued to preach successfully without looking for the praises of men.** After all, people will tell you what they know you want to hear. When people notice that you love their sweet words, they increasingly shower you with half-truths and lies. The flattery has begun and the fall is imminent!

**...with *flattering* lips and with a double heart do they speak. The Lord shall cut off all *flattering* lips...**

**Psalm 12:2-3**

I know of an aspiring presidential candidate who thought he was very popular. This man had people around him who told him he was the people's choice in several sections of the nation.

They told him, "The whole of the North and the whole of the West is for you."

"Really?" He marvelled.

“Oh yes. You have no challenger in these regions,” his aides replied.

Then they asked, “If only we could have some more money to go campaigning in another region, that whole area would fall to you.” So he dished out some more money to these political activists until they had ‘milked’ him of all his money. They flattered this poor aspirant into thinking that the whole country was in support of him.

This deluded and impoverished presidential aspirant eventually received very few votes. How disillusioned and shocked he must have been! Such are the rewards of flattery. And I know it is the same story for many such politicians. They are sweet-talked into spending all of their money, and they believe the lies that are told them. Flattery is indeed one of the deadly poisons of the tongue.

You must not only beware of being flattered. You must also take care not to become a flatterer yourself. Do not say things that you do not believe in your heart. There is a punishment reserved for flatterers. God says that he will cut off your lips.

**The LORD shall CUT off all *flattering* lips...**

**Psalm 12:3**

Do you want your lips to be cut off? If not, then stop lying to your leaders, telling them things that are not true. **Let us pray for our leaders, that they may be delivered from the host of flatterers, sycophants, liars, hypocrites and men-pleasers. These people are only seeking recognition and special favors.**

Many pastors flatter their congregations. They tell them things that are not true. That is dangerous. There are times when the pastor will have to speak some hard truths, and not pamper the congregation with soft sermons. In some cases, you may have a very dear church member living in sin, but in order not to lose him you alter and sugarcoat your messages. This is common, but very dangerous because it angers God and wears him out.

**...Wherein have we wearied him? When ye say,  
Every one that doeth evil is good...**

**Malachi 2:17**

Sometimes when I preach, people wonder what my political inclinations are. *Do I believe in the opposition party or do I support the ruling government?* **It would be dishonest of me to declare I am neutral. Nobody is.** I do have a stand. I believe that some political groupings may do a better – though not perfect – job than some others. (And I am entitled to my opinion under the Constitution!) However, there are many people who wonder where I really stand because of some of the things I say. You see, you cannot expect me to say your evil is good, just because I voted for you. The Bible says,

**Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil...**

**Isaiah 5:20**

I intend to preach the truth. I intend to call black, black, and white, white. You cannot expect me to say that lawlessness and injustice are right when they are not. The Word of God says,



**Woe unto them... that put bitter for sweet, and  
sweet for bitter!**

**Isaiah 5:20**

**He that saith unto the wicked, Thou art righteous;  
him shall the people curse, nations shall abhor him.**

**Proverbs 24:24**

You see, with time people see through your hypocrisy. People secretly admire leaders who are bold and truthful. The 'nation' in the above verse could also symbolize the church.

**...with FLATTERING LIPS and with a double heart  
do they speak.**

**Psalms 12:2**

## ***Deadly Poison #3***

# ***Profane Language***

***But shun profane and vain babbling: for they will increase unto more ungodliness.***

**2 Timothy 2:16**

Profane language is immoral, dirty, indecent, filthy, lewd, or unwholesome talk. The Bible instructs the Christian to reject profane, vain or godless chatter. As a believer, profane words must never be part of your language.

Some years ago when I was working at the hospital, there was a nurse who was loaded with profane jokes. She would speak obscenities and make lewd suggestions all day long. When we arrived on the ward, it wouldn't take her long to produce some off-colour story with sexual innuendoes.

There are many workplaces like that with indecent people who try to involve you in their godless chatter. But the Bible says that this godless chatter will only lead

to more ungodliness. **Profane language defiles the person speaking, and defiles the hearers as well.** The Word of God says,

***And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth...***

### **Revelation 21:27**

Understand one thing: death and life are in the power of the tongue. Spirituality and carnality are therefore under the control of the tongue. **You become more carnal and godless as you allow your tongue to keep speaking indecent things.** Remember that singing is almost the same as speaking. Songs are basically *words* with a melody.

When I was in the university there was a hall of residence which had a profane choir. They modified holy and beautiful hymns written by great men of God, replacing the original words with detailed descriptions of the sexual organs and the sexual act.

Many Christians who lived in the hall of residence which had this profane choir, have complained in later years that they found it difficult to sing some of these songs and hymns in church. They had heard the profane version for so long that during worship times, these obscene lyrics would immediately come to mind.

These students also had their own version of the Ghanaian national anthem. Some of you may just laugh it off. But this is no joke – this is one of the deadly poisons of the tongue.

*...neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God...*

**Leviticus 18:21**

I know that there are some Christians who need a ‘spiritual’ mouthwash. They are Christians all right, but their tongues need a bit of cleansing.

## ***Deadly Poison #4***

# ***Tale Bearing***

Tale bearing is another of the deadly poisons of the tongue. The Bible teaches us that it has the ability to separate best friends. When I look back on my life I remember some wonderful friendships I enjoyed. Today, some of these close friendships no longer exist – because of talebearing.

**Thou shalt not go up and down as a *talebearer* among thy people...**

**Leviticus 19:16**

Tale bearing is a principal cause of division in churches. The talebearer is the agent who brings about Satan's purpose for destroying God's people.

**Where no wood is, there the fire goeth out: So where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth.**

**Proverbs 26:20**

A talebearer can be likened to someone who goes from house to house to deliver his goods.

**...wandering about from house to house... tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.**

**1 Timothy 5:13**

The Bible makes it clear that when a talebearer is in your midst there is always trouble. A gossip within a group can easily destroy it, whether it has a spiritual purpose or not. Sometimes a talebearer will create division between two pastors in the church. He will also create division between pastors and members of the congregation. This is very common. Indeed, he can even separate husbands and wives.

**...mark them which cause divisions and offences... and avoid them.**

**Romans 16:17**

I have had very close friends who are no longer that close to me because of tale bearing. Some newsmongers came in between us and attributed things to me that I never said. When a talebearer becomes close to your friend, separation will gradually set in between the two of you.

Every Christian must be wary of such people. It is also important to examine your own life so that the Holy Ghost can deal with any tendency of tale bearing.

The Bible says in clear terms that the talebearer will be cut off from the inheritance of God's children.

I would describe one city in Europe, as a city of tale bearers. I know you will be wondering which city this is, but I will leave you to guess here. Where there are many talebearers there is a lot of talk, gossip, hearsay, and rumour mongering. Divisions are caused in churches in this city because of the existence of talebearers who have nothing better to do with their time. They have one story after another, which they peddle over the phone in the evenings. No wonder the work of God is stifled in this city.

**A TALEBEARER revealeth secrets...**

**Proverbs 11:13**

**The words of a TALEBEARER are as wounds, and they go down into the innermost parts of the belly.**

**Proverbs 18:8**

## ***Deadly Poison #5***

# ***Blasphemy***

To blaspheme is to speak in an irreverent way about God or sacred things. It also means to show contempt or irreverence for God.

**And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.**

**Mark 3:22**

Jesus was an anointed preacher in town. He ministered under the power and the unction of the Holy Ghost. He raised the dead, he cleansed the lepers and he cast out devils. Then a group of people accused him of being a false prophet using the power of demons. In other words, they were saying that Jesus was an occultist, or wizard. They claimed that Jesus was anointed of the devil to deceive people. They ascribed the power behind Jesus' powerful healing crusades to the devil, when it was really the Holy Spirit at work.



They unknowingly criticised the Holy Spirit and all that He stood for. This prompted Jesus to give a teaching on blasphemy, especially blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

**Verily, I say unto you, All sin shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever... But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation: Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.**

**Mark 3:28-30**

Through experience I have found out that it is not only unbelievers who make this mistake. Born again Christians also make the mistake of blaspheming with their tongues. Can a Christian blaspheme? Yes. Look at the definition of blasphemy again. **Blasphemy is not only speaking irreverently against God. But, blasphemy is also speaking irreverently about sacred things.**

Ministers of the gospel are in a certain sense, sacred. This is because they have been *set apart* to minister the holy things of the Lord.

It is a very common thing for Christians to speak irreverently against preachers they do not even know, when all they have just heard is a rumour or a publication filled with half-truths. **Whenever you accuse a minister or a healer of being a false prophet, deceiver, anointed of the devil, drug pusher, occultist or fornicator, you could be blaspheming.**

I have noticed some journalists and broadcasters who very confidently bunch up all men of God, and speak and write irreverently about them. If ordinary men would sue you in court for slander, do you not think that Jehovah Nissi will also take you to the High Court of the universe for defaming his church?

Every Christian must be very careful about the comments he makes about God's servants. *You* didn't appoint them, God did. You have no right to interfere with God's church. **I want to say here that some people are interfering with things that do not concern them.** I liken this interference to meddling in someone's marriage, when you have not been asked to.

When I wanted to marry, I chose a young lady from among all the others I could see. I preferred her to them, and that was my choice. Nobody has the right to discipline or correct my wife for me. If I think that there is anything wrong with her, I will deal with it myself, because *I* chose her. She is *my* responsibility, not yours.

Do not interfere with things that do not concern you. If I think my wife is so bad (and she is definitely *not* bad) that I need to get rid of her, it is entirely up to me to take that decision and implement it. Once again I say, it is *not* your responsibility. **Do not interfere where you have no jurisdiction.**

It is the same in the ministry. God has called that man of God. If God thinks that man of God is a charlatan and a hypocrite, then God who appointed him, will in his own way dismiss him. **You cannot dismiss another man's employee.** Why should you try to dismiss and destroy God's appointed servants through publications, broadcasts and poisonous words? You are making a

grievous mistake! This mistake is called blasphemy – *speaking irreverently about sacred things.*

Perhaps you might think you are just passing judgement on a man. But it may cost you your life, your business, your marriage, your future and even your children and the generations after you. Jesus said blasphemy against the Holy Spirit would not be forgiven.

**...but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven... neither in this world, neither in the world to come.**

**Matthew 12:31,32**

This also means blaspheming against things that are being done under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. Do not be in a hurry to pass judgement on things you do not fully understand. How mistaken we are when we think we are dealing with mere men, only to find out we are actually dealing with God!

I remember some years ago, a very good friend of mine was sitting in a church service and thought I was sitting right behind him. Unfortunately, the chairs were so tightly packed that the knees of the people in the rows behind were touching those in front of them.

During the service my friend thought, “Let me poke his knee with my pen.”

You see, this friend should first have checked out whether I was really sitting behind him. At the end of the service, imagine his embarrassment when he found out a complete stranger who had been receiving those ‘friendly pokes’!

I must say, I had a good laugh. This is the folly of mistaken identity.

You may think that you are dealing with man, but you will find out to your surprise and embarrassment that you are actually dealing with God.

What did Paul discover when he was struck down on the road to Damascus?

**...I am Jesus whom thou persecutest...**

**Acts 9:5**

He discovered that *it was actually the Lord he had been persecuting all along!* **Paul was a zealous and a moral person who thought he was fighting for a good cause.** But when he had an accident on the way to Damascus and developed blindness in his eyes, he began to think again.

**...it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks [thorns].**

**Acts 9:5**

Some people may need some of this ‘Pauline’ treatment in order to be cured of their interfering and blaspheming spirit. I can understand how people can mistakenly treat ministers as mere men. Apostle Peter experienced this same treatment.

Peter did some fundraising in his church, and received pledges and money in support of the ministry. However, two of his church members, Ananias and Sapphira came along with a lie about the amount of money they had pledged. They discussed it at home and fabricated a story they were going to tell the pastor. Listen carefully to Apostle Peter’s response,

## **...why hath Satan filled thine heart to LIE TO THE HOLY GHOST...?**

**Acts 5:3**

You see, they thought they were dealing with an ordinary human being, but they found out that in dealing with the *man of God* they were actually dealing with *God Himself*. This mistake cost them their lives. We all know Ananias and Sapphira died that same day. The cause of their death was not tuberculosis, heart failure, systemic lupus erythematosus, buruli ulcer, ventricular fibrillation or polycythaemia rubra vera. The cause of death was simply lying to a man representing the Holy Spirit.

A man of God told the story of what happened to a critic who visited his church. He said this skeptic sat in the congregation and kept thinking to himself that the preacher was a con man and a liar. Then the Lord opened his eyes, and he saw a huge and a tall angel standing behind the man of God.

Whenever the man of God walked to the side, the angel would also move in the same direction. At times as he was ministering, the angel would whisper into his ear. The preacher at those points would smile and continue ministering. (The preacher himself was unaware of the presence of the angel.) This sceptic was very surprised to discover such heavenly involvement and support for this pastor he thought was a charlatan.

This vision was an eye-opener for a potential blasphemer. Listen to me, friends. Be careful what you say about men of God. You have no idea of the spiritual approval they may have from heaven.

Some Christians may even die before their time because of blasphemy. With their own mouths, they cut their lives short. You may think that because someone is a controversial figure he must be doing something wrong. **But I have discovered that the higher you go in ministry or public life, the more controversial you appear to outsiders.** People have all sorts of amazing impressions and ideas about public figures.

Although I have always believed in miracles and healing, there was a time I was not actively ministering to the sick. When the Holy Spirit started to work miracles and amazing healings through my ministry, I was very surprised to hear a rumour that I had been to India, to acquire some 'powers'. I laughed in amazement. I have never been to India and I am not aware of any powers that can be acquired there. The only power that I know of is the power of the Holy Ghost. But once again, I realised that each time the Holy Spirit is at work there are people who will allow themselves to be used to blaspheme.

I know many ministers who have become known as controversial figures because of the gospel. The more they did God's work, the more controversial they became.

Everywhere Paul went, he was considered a controversial person. The crowds did not like him in most of the cities he ministered. At one point, soldiers had to escort him away because the crowds were so angry with him. People were filled with so much hatred for him.

**...they caught Paul and Silas... And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men... exceedingly trouble our city.**

**Acts 16:19,20**

Paul, also experienced much blasphemy in his ministry.

**And when they opposed... and BLASPHEMED, he shook his raiment, and said... Your blood be upon your own heads...**

**Acts 18:6**

Perhaps, if Paul had lived in our time, he would have hit the headlines in the tabloids time and time again. Many Christians would have said, "If you were really doing the right thing you would not have so much trouble all the time."

As a minister or Christian, do not be too concerned about having people think and speak well of you all the time. Jesus said,

**Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you!...**

**Luke 6:26**

Jesus is our example-setter. Jesus is our Commander-in-Chief. We take instructions from him. If anyone speaks against us, he will have the Holy Spirit and Jehovah El' Shaddai to reckon with.

## ***Deadly Poison #6***

# ***Foolish Talking***

**Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking...**

**Ephesians 5:4**

Foolish talking is simply the talk of a fool. A fool says all that he is thinking, but wise people learn to say what is appropriate in every situation. Foolish speaking can cost you your life.

Remember the story of Joseph when he had a dream. He dreamt that his father and his brothers were bowing down to him. Obviously, he didn't create his own dream. It was a dream in which the Spirit of God was showing him the future.

**And Joseph dreamed a dream, and he told it his brethren: and they hated him yet the more.**

**Genesis 37:5**

Joseph made the mistake of blurting out all of the vision and plan of God at the wrong time. And more especially,



to the wrong people. That was foolish talking. This foolish talk led eventually to his being kidnapped and taken hostage.

There are things God reveals that you must not tell anyone. Keep them in your heart. At the right time they will come to pass. I have many things in my heart that I have not yet spoken about – it would be too dangerous.

There are many other forms of foolish talking. One common type is the endless chitchat of some ladies. You must realise that in the multitude of chatting you are likely to say something wrong. You are likely to speak a wrong word and sin.

**For in the multitude of... many words there are also divers vanities...**

**Ecclesiastes 5:7**

The women who God commends have what we call a ‘quiet spirit’.

**... a meek and QUIET spirit... is... of GREAT PRICE.**

**1 Peter 3:4**

I believe that much speaking, especially about godless things, drains the anointing. Jesus said,

**...the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit [anointing], and they are life.**

**John 6:63**

What this means is that the words Jesus spoke actually contained the anointing. This also means that the more he ministered and spoke, the more the anointing was being

imparted. **That is why anyone serious about ministry, will conserve the anointing instead of dissipating it through godless chatter.**

The last form of foolish speaking I want to consider is speaking without giving glory to God. We must be careful to give glory to God and acknowledge him in all that we say.

I remember the story of a man who escaped from an earthquake in San Francisco. He was interviewed on television. The interviewer asked him how he managed to escape with his life after being buried for three days in the rubble.

This man foolishly said, “I was able to survive under the rubble of this earthquake because of my strong will power.”

How foolish!

A week later, this same man who claimed he had strong will power had a heart attack and died suddenly. Tell me, where was his will power during the heart attack?

Instead of giving glory to God for saving his life, he was talking about his will power. How foolish! The Bible says,

**There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit; neither hath he power in the day of death...**

**Ecclesiastes 8:8**

Let us be careful to give God the glory for the things He does for us. Foolish and empty talk only reveals our emptiness and ignorance.

## ***Deadly Poison #7***

# ***Expressing Doubt***

The expression of doubt through our words is one of the things God hates. If you study the Bible carefully, you will find out that the Lord becomes very angry with doubting children. He wants us to trust and believe in Him. He wants us to follow Him, and know that it is well with us because he is Jehovah – the one who keeps covenants and promises.

In the Book of Hebrews, there is a question:

**But with whom was he grieved forty years?...**

**Hebrews 3:17**

Was it the adulterers? Was it the idolaters? Was it the thieves? No. It was *those who did not believe*. You may be surprised, but God may be angry with you because of your lack of faith in his ability to bless you.

Remember the story of the twelve spies. Ten of them said, “We cannot do it. It is not possible!” I call them the “Cannot-Do People”.

**...the men that went up with him said, WE BE NOT ABLE to go up against the people... And they brought up an EVIL REPORT...**

**Numbers 13:31,32**

Notice here, that the words *we be not able*, are described by the Bible as *evil*. Words of doubt are one of the deadly poisons of the tongue. Observe that the ten spies poisoned the minds of multitudes of people with their ‘impossibility attitude’. There are some people who are filled with phrases like this:

We can't make it!  
It's too late!  
It's not possible!  
It hasn't been done before!  
It will be controversial!  
What will people say?  
It's too expensive!  
We don't have enough money!  
We don't have enough time!  
We have never done this before!  
We don't do things like this here!  
I know this thing will end in a disaster!  
I'm pulling out!  
I'm scared!  
Let's be reasonable!  
We've always done it this way!

However, there is another group of people who will say:

Go for it brother!

It's a great idea!

Nothing is impossible!

It can be done!

It's not too late!

I'll make time for it!

We can make an extra sacrifice!

We will go the extra mile!

We can work overtime!

The lack of money cannot stop us!

Let's try it anyway!

I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me!

These are the types of words that Jesus wants to hear us say. We are a 'Can-Do people'. We can make it. God is on *our* side!

**I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.**

**Philippians 4:13**

## ***Deadly Poison #8***

# ***Slander***

To slander is to utter maliciously untrue statements about someone. It also means to defame, vilify, misrepresent, and denigrate another. In other words, to slander is to lie.

Once upon a time, there was a young lady who was in a relationship with a good friend of mine. When her relationship with my good friend was disintegrating, she came along and began to narrate a long story about how evil her fiancé was. She said incredible things about this brother, making him out to be unfaithful and treacherous. However, I knew this brother and I knew that her story was calculated to discredit him.

I remember very clearly in my office, telling this young lady, “Listen, you better forgive this brother. You are simply too bitter. Secondly, these stories you have just told me about him are very damaging.”

I pleaded with her, “Please, do not repeat these stories anywhere else! You will be destroying my friend’s image and credibility. Do you understand what I’m saying?”

“Yes.” she nodded tearfully. “I will not repeat this anywhere.”

A few days later I came across somebody who had talked to this young lady. I realised that this young lady had spread her story as far and as wide as she possibly could. She even went to the extent of going to the lecturers of this young man to tell them how my friend had mistreated her. Obviously, my friend suffered a lot from this girl’s slanderous stories.

After some weeks, this lady recovered from her bitterness. She came to see me in my office and said something that I have never forgotten.

She said, “Do you remember all the things I told you about Brother X? They were not true.”

I was startled, “You mean it?”

She said, “Yes. It wasn’t true.”

So I asked, “Did you tell anyone else?”

She admitted, “I told many people in church. But Pastor, I want you to do me a favour. Could you please announce in church that all the things I said were not true?”

She was actually asking me to announce that her slanderous stories were not true!

But it was too late. The damage had already been done. And she would have to sort that out with God.

**Slander is destructive, and usually irreversible. It paints a picture that cannot be unpainted.** It is difficult

to erase from the minds of people the impressions and feelings that are conveyed by slanderous publications and stories. There are many ministers who go around this life wearing the images that are created for them by the secular press. The slanderous rumours of wicked people contribute to an unfortunate image of many well-meaning Pastors.

**There are many people who will not go to heaven because they can no longer receive from certain men of God.** They cannot even stand the sight of some pastors because of all the negative stories and slander that is spread about God's people.

Do you remember that Peter the Apostle began his ministry with a slanderous story surrounding him? It was rumoured that he had stolen the body of Christ from the tomb, and was claiming that Jesus had actually risen from the dead.

Do you realise that this story alone could keep many people from believing in Peter's message of the risen Christ? **Do you know that in his time, many people saw Peter as a grave looter and a liar?** The Bible actually tells us that people were paid to propagate this slanderous lie. They regarded him as an unemployed fisherman and a charlatan who was capitalising on other people's insecurities and making a business out of the church. Such is the effect of slanderous poison, even today.

There are some places that I have found difficult to minister in, because of the slanderous stories spread by a renegade pastor. In fact, I have discovered to my surprise that pastors are best at slandering other pastors



and helping to destroy other ministries. Don't be a destroyer. Satan is the one who comes to destroy. Lay hands on your tongue, if necessary. And make sure there is no poison in your tongue.

## ***Deadly Poison #9***

# ***Backbiting***

Backbiting means to be ‘bitten in the back’. That is, to slander someone in his absence. Being bitten in the back is different from being bitten in the front. This is because of the surprise element and the absence of protection for one’s back parts. The Bible teaches us in Ephesians chapter 6 about the protective armour of God. However, you will notice that there is no armour for the back parts of the Christian. That is why backbiting is so painful.

**Backbiting, one of the poisons of the tongue is very common in divided, strife-filled churches.**

Many people cannot develop trusting relationships because they are not sure about what is said about them behind their backs. And where there is no trust there is no relationship and no unity. I don’t want to have any friends I’m not sure about. A true friend is someone who says the same positive things about you, whether you are present or absent.

Wherever there is backbiting there is no trust, and strong relationships cannot be built. Once, someone asked me why a certain group of ministers did not seem to be united. Then, I didn't really know why. **But with time I came to discover it was the poison of backbiting that kept everyone apart.**

I remember being at a meeting with some senior pastors. We had a cordial discussion and I thought to myself, *We are such good friends.*

I mused, "There is such love and unity amongst this group of ministers."

A few days later, I met one of the ministers who was present at the meeting, in his home.

He said to me, "How do you find Pastor X?" (Referring to another minister who was also at the meeting.) Then he continued to say some awful things about Pastor X. Meanwhile, a few days earlier we had been happily chatting together with him. I began to feel terrible. Initially, out of respect I didn't say anything.

But as the cynical and sarcastic comments flowed from this man, I interrupted and said, "Why are you saying what you are saying? **How can you say this about Rev. X when we just had a meeting with him?**"

I went on, "With all due respect, I don't think it is right to say this about someone who thinks you are his friend."

**The north wind driveth away rain: so doth an angry countenance a BACKBITING TONGUE.**

**Proverbs 25:23**

You see, people get to know the things you have said about them with time. Because very few things are secret. In the process of time everybody loses confidence in meetings and relationships. If I have something to say I will tell you to your face. **I don't believe in pretending to be your good friend, smiling at you, then turning around in your absence to stab you in the back. That is backbiting!** A painful bite in the back!!!

Pastors need the operation of the gifts of the Spirit to identify backbiters. I remember some years ago there was a young lady who would minister beautifully before I preached. I trusted her as one of my loyal and dedicated church members.

One day, as I slept, the Spirit of the Lord gave me a dream. In the dream, I was fighting with her. We were trading punches like common street fighters. Our arms were flailing in the air. Then I suddenly woke up and couldn't believe what I had just dreamt about.

The Spirit of the Lord told me, "This seemingly loyal lady whom you think is one of your trusted people is a slanderous backbiter. She joins others to speak much evil against you. But when she sees you she is full of smiles and encouraging words."

Within the next few days, what I had seen in the dream came to light. The Lord had revealed this to me to protect me from the poison of this person's tongue.

One minister friend recounted how the Lord gave him a revelation about his associate pastor.

He said to me, “My associate sounds very humble and loyal. For many years this man has been by my side, apparently supporting and helping to build. I could hardly believe that the Lord was revealing something negative about this particular pastor.”

He went on, “I had a dream. In this dream somebody attacked me in my house. I rose up to defend myself. This attacker had a dagger with which he was trying to stab me. As I struggled with my assailant, I reached out to grasp a black hood he had over his face.

Up to this point I didn’t know who my assailant was. Finally I was able to lift the hood. Lo and behold, it was my associate.

I shouted ‘Hey! Pastor X. Is it you? Are you trying to kill me?’ “

Then he woke up. From that point, further revelations came out concerning this associate. He had been secretly spreading dissension and dissatisfaction amongst the congregation and other leaders.

This was affecting church growth, he told me. And it was this discovery that led to the eventual removal of this backbiting associate. My friend’s church was thus saved from decline.

You see, backbiting poisons relationships and churches with mistrust and suspicion.

**...God gave them over to a reprobate mind...  
BACKBITERS, haters of God, spiteful...**

**Romans 1:28,30**

## ***Deadly Poison #10***

# ***Murmuring***

**Do all things without murmurings and disputings:  
Philippians 2:14**

I believe the church is an army. We have a mission and a vision. The church is not just an institution to organize weddings and funerals for people. The church is a powerful tool in the hands of the Lord for the harvesting of souls in this lost and dying world.

**And the LORD shall utter his voice before his  
ARMY...**

**Joel 2:11**

How can we save the lost when we are not disciplined? How can we save the lost when we cannot take instructions without murmuring? What sort of army goes to battle with complaining and disputing ranks? An Army Officer in my church told me, “There is a saying in the army, ‘Obey before you complain’.”

Murmuring is the undertone disagreement and protest over an issue or situation by discontent people. It is something that every Christian must avoid at all costs. Christian leaders must keep murmuring to a minimum. **Identify murmuring as one of the enemies of progress in the work of the Lord.**

Remember that the children of Israel were rapidly streaming out of Egypt and into the Promised Land. God was blessing them, and things were getting better. But when they encountered some difficulties they began to complain, and this murmuring led to the termination of their progress.

I recall being invited to minister in a large church. This church had once been a leading ministry in that city. However, at the time I spoke there, it was no longer at the forefront.

I told them, as the Spirit directed me, “It is because of your continuous murmuring that the progress of your church has halted. The Lord had great plans for you. But murmuring destroyed it all.”

I continued, “It is very common to hear of leaders and members from this congregation making all sorts of unsavoury remarks about their church and senior pastor.”

I revealed that it was this very well known characteristic that was responsible for their decline. **Controversial though it may sound, I told them to leave the church if they could not remain in it without murmuring.**

From experience, I would prefer not to have any murmurers in my church, even if they are wealthy or

influential. I submit that the only good murmurer is an absent murmurer!

**NEITHER MURMUR YE, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed...**

**1 Corinthians 10:10**

The poison of murmuring destroys many a potential Christian leader.

Many years ago I attended a meeting of a church group to which I belonged. At the close of the service the pastor decided to take a second offering. When he announced it, I immediately turned to the person sitting by me and murmured, "Why take a second offering? It's not necessary." She said nothing but gave me a look I will never forget.

Suddenly my heart smote me and I realised I had done something wrong. I felt so bad that I had complained, even though it was unknown to the pastor. After the service I went up to the pastor and said, "I have something to tell you. Can I please speak with you privately?"

He said, "Okay, what's the matter?"

**Then I confessed that I had murmured against him when he had decided to take an extra offering.** The pastor was very surprised, but touched.

He put his hand on my shoulder and said these words which I will never forget, "God is going to use you!"

I felt better after this and I believe that the words of this man of God were a blessing to me. They have come to pass after many years!



## ***Conclusion***

# ***Death and Life***

**DEATH and LIFE are in the power of the tongue...**

**Proverbs 18:21**

When we talk about death we are thinking of funerals, mortuaries, buying of coffins and death certificates. We imagine standing by graves weeping and sobbing our hearts out. But the tongue apparently controls this terrible thing called death. Can you believe that?

Well, the law of gravity works, whether you believe in it or not. Our personal beliefs do not affect these laws at all.

You can speak either ‘death’ or ‘life’ into your life. You can also speak death into your marriage, or speak life into it. If your marriage is dying, decide to speak life into it. Say positive things about your husband. Think about all of his good sides, and find something positive to say. You are speaking life into your marriage.

There are some pastors who speak death into their ministries and churches. They are always complaining about one thing or the other. I do not complain about the ministry. I consider it a privilege to be a minister.

A pastor's wife once said mournfully to her husband, "Now that we are in the ministry, we have no privacy. The church members think that everything comes directly from the offering. We have lost our self-respect."

But I said to her, "Do not complain about the ministry. Be glad and see the many positive aspects of it. People's lives are being changed. You are involved in the most worthwhile job of all."

I told her, "Apart from everything on this earth when you get to heaven you will have an extra reward."

I went on, "Say to yourself, 'I'm glad I'm in the ministry. I'm glad I have an opportunity to serve the Lord. I'm in the best job of all.'" Then she brightened up. You see, you can speak happiness and joy into every aspect of your life.

You may think that this is just a theory, but I tell you these are the words of Almighty God. This is the Word of the living God.

Death and life *are* under the control of the tongue.

Let us decide not to destroy our lives with any of the "poisons" we have discussed in this book.

**Let the words of my mouth... be acceptable in thy sight, O LORD...**

**Psalm 19:14**

Life is precious. Our churches are precious. Our pastors are precious. Our husbands and wives are precious. Our nation is also precious. Let us not kill and destroy what God has given us with our tongues. May we like Isaiah say,

**The Lord God hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak...**

**Isaiah 50:4**

## *PRINCIPLES OF LEADERSHIP*

# *Principles Of Leadership*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*PARCHMENT HOUSE*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-98-3*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*

## ***Contents***

<i>1. Be Decisive! It Is The Greatest Attribute Of A Leader .....</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>2. Know About The Power Of Habits And Develop Good Habits .....</i>	<i>12</i>
<i>3. Know Where You Are! Know Where You Are Not! And You Will Know Where To Go! .....</i>	<i>19</i>
<i>4. Become Self-Motivated. Do Not Expect Direction Or Encouragement From Outside .....</i>	<i>21</i>
<i>5. Be Flexible, Rigidity Is Costly! .....</i>	<i>25</i>
<i>6. Command Your Troops! .....</i>	<i>27</i>
<i>7. Balance Your Priorities .....</i>	<i>30</i>
<i>8. Live By The Logical Laws Of Teamwork .....</i>	<i>32</i>
<i>9. Get Angry Sometimes .....</i>	<i>35</i>

10. <i>Control The People You Lead By The Power Of Teaching</i> .....	37
11. <i>Be A Great leader, Go The Extra Mile</i> .....	39



## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn't get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn't it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*

*For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to:*

*Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa*

Website:

*[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)*

E-mail:

*[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)*

# *1*

## *Be Decisive! It Is The Greatest Attribute Of A Leader*

Decisiveness is truly the greatest attribute of a leader. Many people cannot take decisions. Only real leaders face up to realities and take important decisions. *The failure to take a decision is the failure to lead.* Well-run businesses often take hard decisions to lay off employees when they realize that they have to. This type of decision is not easy and has far reaching consequences. Failure to take a decision can lead to the destruction of all that you are building.

### **FOUR REASONS WHY YOU MUST BE DECISIVE**

#### *1. God Is A Decisive God*



We are supposed to be imitators of God, who is known for His ability to take far reaching decisions.

**Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;  
Ephesians 5:1**

## ***2. All Great Leaders Are Decisive***

We are to follow the example of people who through faith and patience have accomplished great things.

**That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who  
through faith and patience inherit the promises.  
Hebrews 6:12**

## ***3. A Failure To Decide Is A Failure To Lead***

Leadership is eighty percent decision taking and twenty percent implementation. That is why the failure to decide is a failure to lead.

## ***4. Failure To Decide Is The Same As A Decision To Do Nothing***

How can you follow someone who has decided to do nothing? You might as well follow a little child around the playground. That is the same as doing nothing.

# **TEN DECISIONS OF JEHOVAH**

***1. When The Earth Was Without Form, Void And Covered With Darkness, God Took A Decision To Create Heaven And Earth***

**And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.**

**Genesis 1:2**

***2. When God Realized That Man Was Lonely, He Took A Decision To Create A Woman***

**And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.**

**Genesis 2:18**

***3. When The Earth Was Full Of Wickedness, God Took A Decision To Kill All The Human Beings And Leave Only Noah And His Family Alive***

**And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.**

**Genesis 6:5-7**

***4. When God Saw Noah's Sacrifice, He Took A Decision Not To Destroy All Living Things Anymore***

**And the Lord smelled a sweet savour; and the Lord said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done.**

**Genesis 8:21**

***5. When God Saw The Homosexuality In Sodom And Gomorrah, He Took A Decision To Eliminate That City Forever***

**And the Lord said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.**

**Genesis 18:20,21**

***6. When God Saw That The Israelites Were Suffering So Much In Egypt, He Took A Decision To Rescue Them From The Hand Of Pharaoh***

**And it came to pass in process of time, that the king of Egypt died: and the children of Israel sighed by reason of the bondage, and they cried, and their cry came up unto God by reason of the bondage.**

**And God heard their groaning, and God remembered his covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob. And God looked upon the children of Israel, and God had respect unto them.**

**Exodus 2:23-25**

- 7. *When God Was Taking The Children Of Israel Out Of Egypt Into Canaan And They Began To Complain, God Immediately Took A Decision To Keep Them In The Wilderness For Forty More Years***

**When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in their heart; and they have not known my ways. So I swore in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.**

**Hebrews 3:9-11**

- 8. *When God Saw That Lucifer Was Rebellious, He Took A Decision To Cast Him Out Of Heaven***

**Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that**

**behold thee.**

**Ezekiel 28:17,18**

- 9. When God Realized That The Israelites Did Not Want To Be Ruled By A Prophet, He Took A Decision To Change The Style Of Leadership From Judges To Kings***

**And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them.**

**1 Samuel 8:7**

- 10. When God Saw That All Of His Creation Was Going To Be Lost Through Sin, He Took A Decision To Send His Son To Win Them Back***

**For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.**

**John 3:16,17**

Many pastors fail to get rid of disloyal elements within their ranks. When you fail to take the hard decision to remove traitors you will be destroyed. Are you a leader? Are you aspiring to be a leader? If so, then welcome to the world of taking difficult decisions.

## **SIX KEYS FOR DECISION TAKING**

### ***1. Be Brave***

You need courage to take good decisions. King David instructed Solomon to be strong. He knew that Solomon would need strength to be decisive. David knew that decisiveness was the greatest attribute Solomon would need.

**I go the way of all the earth: be thou strong  
therefore, and shew thyself a man;**

**1 Kings 2:2**

Because I am a leader, I understand the importance of this instruction. Without strength, you cannot be decisive. A church needs a strong leader to move it forward. Democracy and committees are not helpful; what you need is strong leadership.

Solomon went ahead and eliminated his brother Adonijah, who had earlier tried to take the throne from him. The first act of strength that Solomon performed was to eliminate all possible traitors and wicked elements in his kingdom.

Some of you are too weak to get rid of that bad man in your life. That is why you will never be a successful leader. Decisiveness is the greatest attribute of a leader. You need strength to obey the voice of the Lord.

When God told me to be a pastor, it took a lot of strength to forge ahead into God's will. No one supported or helped me. When I started out in ministry, I found myself surrounded by people who didn't believe in me. I had to get rid of the scoffers in my life and I did just that! I remember telling one gentleman, "From today, you are no longer part of this church."

I continued, "Do not come to the church anymore. Your services are not needed!"

This brother was taken aback but it was a very necessary step for my own survival. No one can prosper if disloyal scorners surround him. You need an environment of encouragement and peace.

## ***2. See Ahead***

Know that the decision you are taking now will turn out for good. Solomon knew that eliminating his brother Adonijah would turn out for the good of the whole nation. If Solomon had not seen ahead he would not have taken that decision. A bad manager cannot see that if he does not take the hard decision of cutting the work force, for instance, the whole company will close down.

### ***3. Consider The Consequences Of Failing To Take A Decision***

Abraham was very close to his nephew Lot. One day he had to face the painful reality that his nephew's presence in his life was causing more harm than good. Being a good leader, he took the decision and separated from his nephew. The consequence of failing to take this decision would have been strife. And it was not worth it.

**And Abram said unto Lot, Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee, and between my herdmen and thy herdmen; for we be brethren. Is not the whole land before thee? SEPARATE THYSELF, I PRAY THEE, FROM ME: if thou wilt take the left hand, then I will go to the right; or if thou depart to the right hand, then I will go to the left.**

**Genesis 13:8,9**

Notice that it was after this decision that God gave him specifications of the lands and blessings that were his.

**And the Lord said unto Abram, after that LOT WAS SEPARATED from him...**

**Genesis 13:14**

### ***4. Move Quickly When All The Relevant Information Has Come In***

Do not take decisions based on part of the available information. You will make disastrous mistakes when you do that. Solomon was advised by his father to get rid of



Joab. The only information that Solomon needed was his father's instruction. Joab was someone who had disobeyed David on several occasions. David asked Solomon to eliminate Joab.

**...let not his hoar head go down to the grave in peace.**

**1 Kings 2:6**

When the opportunity presented itself, Solomon executed Joab. When the information came in, Solomon took the decision to immediately execute Joab. David also asked Solomon to deal with Shimei. Shimei was someone who cursed King David when he was running away from Absalom.

**...thou hast with thee Shimei... hold him not guiltless...**

**1 Kings 2:8,9**

You will notice that after Solomon fulfilled his father's instructions the kingdom of Israel became established under his rule. The decisiveness of Solomon at the beginning of his reign took him very far.

**...And THE KINGDOM WAS ESTABLISHED in the hand of Solomon.**

**1 Kings 2:46**

Because Solomon was decisive his kingdom was established. Once the information came in, he took the decision and implemented it.

## ***5. Implement Decisions That Have Been Taken***

Solomon asked Shimei not to cross the brook Kidron. He told Shimei that if he crossed the brook, that would be his last day on earth. When the information came that Shimei had crossed the boundary, Solomon implemented the hard decision that he had already taken. The decisiveness of Solomon was at work.

#### ***6. Surround Yourself With Godly People Who Give Good Advice***

Don't make the mistake of Rehoboam.

**And Rehoboam went to Shechem: for all Israel were come to Shechem to make him king. And it came to pass, when Jeroboam the son of Nebat, who was yet in Egypt, heard of it, (for he was fled from the presence of king Solomon, and Jeroboam dwelt in Egypt;) That they sent and called him. And Jeroboam and all the congregation of Israel came, and spake unto Rehoboam, saying, Thy father made our yoke grievous: now therefore make thou the grievous service of thy father, and his heavy yoke which he put upon us, lighter, and we will serve thee. And he said unto them, Depart yet for three days, then come again to me. And the people departed. And king Rehoboam consulted with the old men, that stood before Solomon his father while he yet lived, and said, How do ye advise that I may answer this people? And they spake unto him, saying, If thou wilt be a servant unto this people**

this day, and wilt serve them, and answer them, and speak good words to them, then they will be thy servants for ever. But he forsook the counsel of the old men, which they had given him, and consulted with the young men that were grown up with him, and which stood before him: And he said unto them, What counsel give ye that we may answer this people, who have spoken to me, saying, Make the yoke which thy father did put upon us lighter? And the young men that were grown up with him spake unto him, saying, Thus shalt thou speak unto this people that spake unto thee, saying, Thy father made our yoke heavy, but make thou it lighter unto us; thus shalt thou say unto them, My little finger shall be thicker than my father's loins. And now whereas my father did lade you with a heavy yoke, I will add to your yoke: my father hath chastised you with whips, but I will chastise you with scorpions. So Jeroboam and all the people came to Rehoboam the third day, as the king had appointed, saying, Come to me again the third day. And the king answered the people roughly, and forsook the old men's counsel that they gave him; And spake to them after the counsel of the young men, saying, My father made your yoke heavy, and I will add to your yoke: my father also chastised you with whips, but I will chastise you with scorpions. Wherefore the king hearkened not unto the people; for the cause was from the Lord, that he might perform his saying, which the Lord spake by Ahijah the Shilonite unto Jeroboam the son of

**Nebat. So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to thine own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents.**

**1 Kings 12:1-16**

## **TWO COMMON MISTAKES OF LEADERS**

***1. Failure To Take An Obvious Decision***

***2. Failure To Implement A Decision That Has Been Taken***

# 2

## *Know About The Power Of Habits And Develop Good Habits*

A habit is something that you do without thinking about it or intending to do it. Every good leader has many good habits. These good habits are what has made him into what he is.

### **TWO HABITS OF JESUS**

#### ***1. Going To Church Regularly***

Did you know that Jesus had good habits? The Bible teaches us that He had a habit of going to church on the Sabbath day.

**And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, AS HIS CUSTOM WAS, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.**

## **Luke 4:16**

### ***2. Going On Prayer Retreats***

Jesus also had a habit of going to a particular garden for retreats. It was a place that he went often. And everyone knew His habit of praying in the garden.

**When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for JESUS OFTTIMES RESORTED THITHER WITH HIS DISCIPLES.**

**John 18:1-2**

### **Daniel's Habit**

Daniel prayed at specific times of the day. It was something he was used to. It was one of the greatest secrets of his life.

**Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, AS HE DID AFORETIME.**

**Daniel 6:10**

# **TEN THINGS EVERY LEADER SHOULD KNOW ABOUT THE POWER OF HABITS**

***1. A Habit Is An Act That Is Repeated Easily Without Thinking About It Or Planning To Do It***

***2. A Habit Is An Act That Becomes Your Custom Whether You Are Conscious Of It Or Not***

***3. A Habit Is Often An Insignificant Act That Seems To Have No Power To Affect The Future***

This is why many people do not recognize the concept of having good habits as a powerful tool for future accomplishments.

***4. A Habit Can Either Be Good Or Bad, Natural Or Spiritual***

Spiritual habits are things like morning prayer and having a daily quiet time. Natural habits are things like brushing your teeth and having your daily bath.

***5. Good habits are repeated as easily as bad habits***

***6. Bad habits lead to consistent failure and defeat without the person realizing what is happening***

***7. Good habits lead to consistent success and victory without the person even realizing what he is doing***

***8. Bad habits are easy to form but difficult to live with. Good habits are difficult to form but easy to live with***

***9. Every successful leader has a number of good HABITS that have brought him to success***

Many years ago, a friend of mine taught me how to have a quiet time with God every morning. I developed that as a personal habit and it has been my greatest secret as a Christian and later as a minister. Almost all the things I preach about come as a result of this good habit.

***10. Habits Are A Safety Procedure For Leaders***

This is because even when a leader is under pressure, he will do certain good things habitually, naturally and easily. When under pressure, the leader may not have time to think of what to do or how to act. It is a good habit of prayer or quiet time that may lead him out of difficulty. Just like Jesus, I also have a place I often go to pray. I also often go with my pastors. This habit helps keep me spiritually protected even when I am not aware of danger.

## **TWENTY GOOD HABITS EVERY LEADER SHOULD DEVELOP**

***1. Read Your Bible Everyday Of Your Life***

In the day of crisis it is that Bible reading that may save you.



## ***2. Have A Personal Quiet Time With God Everyday***

Let NBNB (No Bible, No Breakfast) be a principle that you adopt.

## ***3. Pray For A Minimum Of One-Hour Everyday Of Your Life***

Develop the habit of praying before you eat.

## ***4. Fast At Least Once A Week***

For example, you could choose Fridays as a day of fasting.

## ***5. Constantly Listen To Preaching Tapes In Your Car Or Your Home***

## ***6. Constantly Have A Book That You Are Reading***

As soon as you finish one book, immediately begin reading another. This is a very good habit that will unconsciously increase your knowledge and learning.

## ***7. Play Only Christian Music In Your House Or Car***

Never allow worldly music to be played in your presence, even if it is coming from the radio. This habit will make you create a Holy Spirit friendly environment around you all the time. The Holy Spirit will come to you because God inhabits praise and worship. You will also unconsciously drive away evil spirits without intending to do so. “And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that David took

an harp, and played with his hand: so Saul was refreshed, and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him. (1 Samuel 16:23).

***8. Do A Lengthy Fast At The Beginning Of The Year To Commit The Rest Of The Year Into God's Hands.***

***9. Have At Least One Long Prayer Time At Least Once A Week***

***10. Let Your Closest Friends Be Members Of The Same Sex***

***11. Chat With Your Wife Everyday***

I have discovered that a woman's greatest need is to be talked to, even if it is about "nothing". Women are born with a gift of talking. One of their gifts is chatting. Fifteen minutes of chatting would do every woman a world of good.

***12. Play And Talk With Your Children***

If you spend half as much money on your children and twice as much time with them they will turn out better.

***13. Have Sex Regularly With Your Spouse***

You can do this at least every other day or as your strength permits.

***14. Rest Once A Week***

I rest on Mondays. I have learned that it is an important day for me. I have discovered that the work never ends.

***15. Witness To Every Unbeliever You Meet***

Do this whether you have prayed or not. Do not let an unbeliever get away from your presence without hearing the gospel. This habit will lead to many people being saved without you ever planning a salvation crusade.

***16. Do Not Borrow Money***

Some people have the habit of borrowing money every time they are in need. You must develop the habit of not borrowing money.

***17. Set Aside Some Time To Specially Wait On God Every Few Months***

Whenever I do this, I go away for a few days and spend time with the Lord. This is one of the great secrets of my life.

***18. Saving Money***

Save a little money every month

***19. Develop The Habit Of Not Watching Much Television***

Television takes up the time that would have been used reading, praying, having a quiet time, talking with God, chatting with your wife or children. Television is also a bad influence. People get ideas of divorce and other evils from watching television.

## ***20. Pay Your Tithes Every Month***

Let the first ten percent of your income be assigned to God.

Do you consider yourself to be a leader? What good habits do you have? Develop a life filled with many good habits. Don't forget that every successful leader has some secret good habits that make him lead successfully.

# 3

*Know Where You Are! Know Where  
You Are Not! And You Will Know  
Where To Go!*

**And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall  
make you free.**

**John 8:32**

The truth will tell you where you are and where you are not! The truth will also tell you where to go. Many pastors need to start telling the truth about the size of their congregations. It is time to stop making wild guesses about the number of people in our churches. When you know the actual number of souls you are ministering to, you will be motivated to work harder.

One day I asked my data officer to tell me how many people were in church. When he gave me the figure, I was depressed for one week. I realized that our church was very small. I had a long way to go! If you cannot tell yourself the truth, you cannot be a good leader.

Many businesses do not make any profit at all! When you add up the real costs of their operations, you discover that they are actually making a loss. If managers were honest, they would take the necessary hard decisions. That is what leadership does.

**Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved?...**

**Luke 13:23**

Jesus answered and told him that there is a narrow gate and few people are entering through that gate. This was the truth. Leaders need to deal with reality. Without real figures, a Chief Executive cannot take sound financial decisions. Every leader must ensure that he has the real picture.

# 4

## *Become Self-Motivated. Do Not Expect Direction Or Encouragement From Outside*

**...but David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.**

**1 Samuel 30:6**

Everyone looks up to the leader for encouragement, but who encourages the leader? A true leader is someone who knows how to encourage himself whenever it is necessary. I do not look to the outside for motivation. I have learnt that I have to motivate myself. I cannot depend on external factors to encourage me.

There are many times I have been absolutely discouraged and dejected in ministry. There are times I have problems that I have no one to talk to about. Like David, I have had to learn to encourage myself in the Lord.

You cannot encourage your followers until you have learnt to encourage yourself. David experienced a crisis and he had no one to talk to. He had no choice but to encourage himself.

**And David's two wives were taken captives, Ahinoam, the Jezreelitess, and Abigail the wife of Nabal the Carmelite. And David was greatly distressed; for the people spake of stoning him, because the soul of all the people was grieved, every man for his sons and for his daughters: BUT DAVID ENCOURAGED HIMSELF IN THE LORD HIS GOD.**

**1 Samuel 30:5,6**

## **SEVEN STEPS TO ENCOURAGING YOURSELF**

### ***1. Develop A Personal Relationship With The Holy Spirit***

Hear him speaking to you personally. You will do this by faith. You must be able to say that God has spoken to you. When you are all alone and there is no one to speak to, the Holy Spirit will be the guide that you need. That is what He is there for! Be constantly aware of the Greater One in you. You have overcome because He is in you.

**Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.**

**1 John 4:4**



In my darkest moments, I have found the Holy Spirit to be someone who speaks to me personally. Jesus described the Holy Spirit as *another* Comforter.

**And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;**

**John 14:16**

Jesus was the first comforter. He was available to speak to. He was there to answer questions. He was there to give guidance. Today, the Holy Spirit does this job. Leaders are often lonely people. I pity any leader who does not have the Holy Spirit as a personal friend to talk to.

## ***2. Receive Living Messages From God By The Simple Reading Of Scriptures***

When the Bible becomes a living message from God to you, you will always have a source of direction and encouragement. When I'm in need of encouragement or direction I believe that whichever part of scriptures I read at that time will be God's message to me. This makes the Bible my greatest tool of self-encouragement and motivation.

## ***3. Remember Other Problems That God Has Delivered You From***

When you remember what the Lord has done in the past you will be encouraged. Jesus expects us to remember the things He has done for us in the past to encourage ourselves. Notice how he was angry with the disciples for not remembering the past miracles.

**Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven. And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?**

**Mark 8:18-21**

#### ***4. Make Positive Confessions***

Your faith must speak when you need encouragement. Faith is the opposite of depression. Faith is a shield. Your faith is a God given weapon meant to stop attacks. That is why the Bible calls faith a shield that quenches the fiery darts. In my book, *Name it! Claim it! Take it!*, I have written a whole lot of positive confessions that will help every leader. (See *Name it! Claim it! Take it!* by Dag Heward-Mills).

#### ***5. Learn To Listen To Appropriate Tapes And Get Fired Up Again***

#### ***6. Play The Right Music At The Right Time***

#### ***7. Avoid Depressive And Discouraging Personalities Who Only Draw You Back Into The Darkest Gloom***

Remember that joy cometh in the morning.

# 5

## *Be Flexible, Rigidity Is Costly!*

**To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**

**1 Corinthians 9:22**

A true leader exhibits flexibility. Being flexible does not mean that you compromise in things you believe in. A leader must not be rigid. An old rigid tree will be broken, but a young supple tree can be bent over. Paul said that he became all things to all men so that he might save them all. Are you prepared to do anything to achieve good results? There are times that you may have to vary your dressing to flow with the people around. You are not always right, you know!

In certain cultures, people are not punctual. When you say the program starts at six o'clock, they will leave their homes at six and be there for seven. If you are very rigid with your timing, you may end up preaching to empty chairs and closing your service as the majority of people walk in.

A pastor must be flexible with ignorant baby sheep. Sometimes sheep will ask you to counsel them about things you have just preached about. The message is very clear but they still want you to talk to them. There are times you have to be flexible and accommodate these sheep. Without being flexible you will not be able to flow in a miracle service where the Holy Spirit has the liberty. If you really want to keep your service to two hours, you may miss certain moves of the Spirit.

*A leader tries new things.* Try new ways of evangelism. Be open to methods that you did not invent. Listen to young people who have fresh ideas. Do not rigidly think that God only speaks through a grey-haired sixty-year-old prophet. Flexibility will allow you to receive from a twenty-year-old anointed youth.

Are you a leader? Then you must be flexible and open to new ideas.

# 6

## *Command Your Troops!*

**For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?**

**1 Corinthians 14:8**

There are times that making suggestions and giving advice will not work. You must give a clear command to the troops. The Centurion said to Jesus, “I say to one ‘Go’, and he goeth. I say to another ‘Come’, and he cometh.” He was just showing Jesus that he was a leader. A leader is often a commander. If you are too weak to give a command you cannot be a leader. Leaders must give advice and make suggestions. But a leader must also give commands. There are times that you have to say, “Go!”

**I Gave A Command**

One night the Lord revealed that a certain pastor in my outfit was disloyal to me. He said to me, “Give a clear command.” I will never forget that night, as the Spirit of God ministered very clearly to me. I could not sleep because the Spirit of God was talking to me. I was wide-awake in the middle of the night. All that the Lord told me was to give a clear command. He told me that after I give the command, the disloyal element would be made manifest.

The next day I called two pastors to my office. I told them, “I have given you suggestions and advice before. But now I am explicitly instructing you to move out of this city into the following towns.” I continued, “In other words I am transferring you.”

You see, I had taken my place as a strong leader of my church. I said to them, “I am transferring you out of this city.”

One of the pastors agreed to go after clarifying a few points. The other pastor smiled and said, “Well, I have been to that town before and I have even worked there. I would be happy to go there, but I think that this is a good opportunity to inform you of my decision to resign.”

When I heard that, I said to myself, “The cat is out of the bag.”

This young man had been hatching a plan for some time. He had not had the courage to disclose it. I had known that his heart was not with me. Giving the strong command had brought out what was in him.

**Be strong and of good courage...**

## **Joshua 1:6**

Pray for strength and courage to be a good leader. Giving advice is very different from giving commands. Giving suggestions is very different from giving commands. There is a time to advise and a time to command. Giving commands will establish your position as a leader and will expose disloyal elements within your ranks. Develop the art of commanding. Of course, you must not go about commanding everyone. You can only command your own troops.

# 7

## *Balance Your Priorities*

**A false balance is abomination to the Lord: but a just weight is his delight.**

**Proverbs 11:1**

Leadership is the ability to know what comes first and what comes second. Every leader has a home, a family, a church, a business, a school and the list goes on. What comes first? A leader knows that God always comes first. Almost every seasoned leader will tell you that the family is of utmost importance. Some people place so much emphasis on the family that they neglect God. Others neglect their families in the name of serving God. Both of these are wrong. And the leader is the one who rises up and creates the perfect balance.

Maintain the right balance between all the priorities that God has given you. Nobody wants to get to heaven only to hear that they neglected a whole area of ministry.



Do you consider yourself a leader? Then maintain the right balance between all the priorities that God has given to you. We will be glad to follow your example. Nobody wants to get to heaven only to be told that they neglected a whole area of ministry. Even within the offices of ministry, it is important to balance your different callings. Perhaps you are an evangelist and a pastor, you must balance the two and ensure you fulfil each one to its utmost. I believe God has put me in the office of a teacher. That is my first priority! I love evangelising and I love pastoring. But God has directed me to put the first things first!

# 8

## *Live By The Logical Laws Of Teamwork*

### **FOURTEEN LAWS OF TEAMWORK**

#### ***1. Everybody In The Ministry Team Should Know What You Are Trying To Do***

When people understand what you are trying to do, it helps them to flow in the vision.

#### ***2. Everyone In The Ministry Team Must Know What He Is Expected To Do***

This allows you to know who to blame when things go wrong and who to praise when things work out.

***3. Everyone In The Ministry Team Must Know What Every Other Member Of The Ministry Team Is Supposed To Be Doing***

That is why you must have meetings with individuals and then meet them in a group so that others would know what is going on.

***4. Everyone Must Have A Complete Section In Which He Has Full Control***

Delegate people to do things. Give them control over the section you have delegated to them.

***5. Give A Lot Of Praise And Recognition To Your Ministry Team Members In Public***

If you want somebody to repeat something good, praise him for that thing.

***6. Give Criticism And Rebuke To Your People In Private***

If you want to correct somebody, do not do so in front of their subordinates. It will weaken their position of authority in the sight of their subordinates.

***7. As A Ministry Team Member My Criticism Must Be Constructive***

***8. As a ministry team leader accept responsibility for everything and anything that goes wrong***

Take the blame and share the glory.

***9. Do Not Complain About Or Condemn Your Team Members***

***10. Decide Always To Give Advice On How To Do Things Better***

***11. Treat Everybody As Very Important***

When you see someone who doesn't look important, be nice to them. They may not look important but treat them as important.

***12. Reposition And Relocate People Until They Are In The Place They Function Best***

***13. Give People Jobs According To Their Personalities***

Some people are light-hearted and merry, others are moody and strict. There is a job that suits everyone.

***14. Forgive And Overlook The Mistakes Of Team Members***

# 9

## *Get Angry Sometimes*

**And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.**

**Matthew 21:12,13**

If you are a leader, you will become happy with the things that make God happy. You will also become angry with the things that make God angry. You see, Jesus got angry when He saw the evil that was being perpetrated by backslidden worshippers. They had converted the church into a business centre.

Most people are only capable of natural fleshly anger. But the Bible speaks of anger that is different. That is what I call holy anger.

**Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:**

**Ephesians 4:26**

In this scripture, Christians are actually instructed to get angry sometimes. The important thing is not to sin whilst you are angry. Holy anger is the anger that rises within you against the devil, sin and wickedness in the world. Holy anger is the anger that rises against injustice and oppression.

When holy anger comes upon you, you are expected to take certain decisions. Just as Jesus threw out the moneychangers from the temple, there is a time to throw certain people out of your organizations. Many businesses and companies fail because they fail to act appropriately in righteous anger. Leaders must know how to operate in righteous biblical anger.

# 10

## *Control The People You Lead By The Power Of Teaching*

Do you consider yourself to be a leader? I advise you to study the art of communicating, teaching and preaching. Even a businessman needs to make his subordinates understand what he is trying to achieve. You see, people relate with you on the basis of your words.

Solomon was a king but he taught the people. He knew that his control of the people would be through his teaching.

**And moreover, because the preacher [King Solomon] was wise, he still taught the people knowledge; yea, he gave good heed, and sought out, and set in order many proverbs.**

**Ecclesiastes 12:9**

Teaching is the art of shaping people into what you want. People are not easy to lead. Everyone comes around with his own opinion and his own set of ideas. Teaching moulds the people into what you want. Through the power of teaching you can get people to do almost anything. *Without the power of teaching, you would hardly be able to lead anyone anywhere.*

**A bishop then MUST be... apt to teach;**

**1 Timothy 3:2**

The authority to lead people is found in your ability to teach them. A leader must be able to impart information in a simple and easy to understand style. Even if your office is not that of a teacher, you must learn how to teach.

## **How I Led My People Into the Miracle Ministry**

When I began operating in the miracle ministry, I realized that many of the pastors were not flowing with me. It was something new. Without even knowing what I was doing, I launched into a series of teachings on the power of the Holy Spirit. I taught about the anointing! I taught about healing! I taught about why miracles were necessary! These teachings helped tremendously. Today, the whole church is ever ready for a miracle session.

If you want to lead people along a certain road, you often have to teach them first. King Solomon was wise, that is why he taught his people knowledge. Are you a wise leader? Then teach your people knowledge!



# 11

## *Be A Great Leader, Go The Extra Mile*

**And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.**

**Matthew 5:41**

Every true leader goes the extra mile for his followers. This may mean a little more sacrifice and a little more time. One extra mile for somebody you love is never too much. It is not uncommon to find the leader of a company in the office well after his closing hours. He is going the extra mile.

When I became a pastor, I often went the extra mile without being asked to. The extra mile is the mile you are not supposed to go. The extra mile is the mile you are not really required to do. That is why it is called the extra mile!

My car was used as the church bus. My stereo sound system was used as the church equipment. My private room was used as the church office. These were not things that I was required to do, but I did them gladly because that is what a natural leader does. Without even being asked, you will do extra things.

For your church or business to work, somebody has to put in the extra effort. Do you consider yourself a leader? Are you going the same number of miles that everybody else does? Remember that a true leader is often doing extra miles.

# **Principles of Success**

Dag Heward-Mills

**A LIGHTHOUSE CHAPEL PUBLICATION**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

A Lighthouse Chapel Publication

ISBN 9988-596-05-7

**Copyright © 2000 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# ***Contents***

Was David Successful? .....	1
Davidic Principles of Success #1-4 .....	3
Davidic Principles of Success #5-8 .....	11
Davidic Principles of Success #9-12 .....	21
Davidic Principles of Success #13-16 .....	32
Davidic Principles of Success #17-19 .....	42

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to  
*Pastor Kingsley Gyasi*  
& *his dear wife, Joyce* —

Thank you for a great work done in South  
Africa. The foundation you laid is still strong!

For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to this address:

Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle Bu, Accra  
Ghana

# ***Chapter One***

## ***Was David Successful?***

Was David a successful person? David was one of the most respected kings of all time. He was also a great psalmist and prophet. Above all, he was a man after God's own heart. Surely, that is a description of success. I believe that David achieved great success in his lifetime. You can read the scriptures for yourself.

**And he died in a GOOD OLD AGE, FULL OF DAYS, RICHES, and HONOUR: and Solomon his son reigned in his stead.**

**1 Chronicles 29:28**

David had a long and eventful life. At the end of his life, he was rich, he was respected and he even had a successor—his own son, Solomon.

What an interesting description: full of age, full of riches, full of honor, and with a successor. David, however, did not get to this point easily. He suffered and struggled through many situations. Often, David came to crossroads and had to take important decisions. Many of the things he did as a young man contributed to his eventual outcome as a successful person.



The holy scriptures teach us to learn from the examples of those who have gone ahead of us.

**That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.**

**Hebrews 6:12**

The Bible is a practical book, it does not shield the mistakes of people, neither does it cover up the faults of mighty men. David is a person we can learn from today. In this book, I will share with you a few secrets that I believe helped David to become one of the most respected kings and prophets of all time!

# ***Chapter Two***

## ***Davidic Principles of Success #1 - 4***

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF A SMALL BEGINNING***

**And Eliab his eldest brother heard when he spake unto the men; and Eliab's anger was kindled against David, and he said, Why camest thou down hither? and with whom hast thou left those few sheep in the wilderness?...**

**1 Samuel 17:28**

David's brother made a derogatory remark about David's work. He spoke critically of the few sheep that David was handling.

In ministry, I have noticed that people do not want to begin in a small way. The only thing many know how to do is to "break the legs" of the pastor under whom they are working. Through deception, they draw away an entire section of the church and then use those people to start their own ministry.

A minister once approached me and sneeringly spoke of a Lighthouse church that had just a few members. I realized that this man of God did not know how to begin a church. He did not realize that the thousands of people who are attending Lighthouse Chapel today, grew out of three or four original members.

Do not be afraid of small beginnings, God will lift you up. You will benefit from all the experiences you have had in your small beginnings. It was when David was looking after the few sheep that he had a fight with a bear and a lion. It is because he was used to fighting impossible situations that he was able to take on Goliath.

When you have preached a thousand times to a hundred people, you will not wet your pants in fright when God lifts you up to minister to a crowd of one thousand.

I have preached so many times, that preaching is now much easier for me. I have preached in difficult atmospheres. I have ministered in hostile environments. I have preached to powerful politicians. I have ministered where people despised me. I have preached when people jeered and hooted at me. I've also ministered where they have cheered me on. There is hardly any atmosphere that I have not experienced. Many of these experiences were in small settings. This has helped me prepare for the ministry I have today.

### ***Don't Rush Success***

Why are you in a hurry to be successful? It is easier to make mistakes in front of a small crowd than a large one. Practise your business and ministry with small crowds.

If you make a mistake with a hundred dollars, it will be easier for you to recover than if you make that same mistake with a hundred thousand dollars.

Any businessman who is able to succeed with a small amount of money can succeed with a larger amount of money. Smallness is a necessary stage in the kingdom of God. It is a necessary stage for every business executive. It humbles you and makes you trust in God.

**Jesus taught us three principles of progress:**

*The Principle of Being Faithful with Small Things (Luke 16:10).*

*The Principle of Being Faithful with Another Man's Things. (Luke 16:12)*

*The Principle of Being Faithful with Money (Luke 16:11).*

You cannot circumvent any one of these laws. Start small and harden your forehead. Avoid people who would laugh at you and despise you. Stay with those who believe in you. Do not tell people what you are doing if they do not respect you. You can make it! God is on your side! God is with you! The Greater One is with you and in you!

Do not run away from small beginnings. They are God's training ground for you. That is how King David got his education—in the school of small beginnings!

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF DOING MENIAL JOBS WITH JOY***

**And David came to Saul, and stood before him: and he loved him greatly; and he became his ARMOURBEARER.**

**1 Samuel 16:21**

When studying the life of David, you soon learn that though he became king, he first performed many menial jobs. In his father's house, he was a shepherd. Whilst at the king's palace, he did the work of a musician, servant, errand boy and armourbearer. He wasn't even a soldier! There are so many Christians who want to start out on top! But the only job that begins at the top is grave digging!

If you study the background of many great people, you will discover that they once served at the lowest level in their profession. I have done nearly every kind of menial job in the church. I was a drummer, organist, cleaner and odd job man. All these have helped me to be a better leader. Do not shy away from menial jobs.

*The best leader is someone who has been a follower for many years. Because you have done menial jobs, you are more reasonable with your subordinates. You understand what they are going through and do not give impossible commands. Some leaders do not know the implications of their instructions. They just say, "Get this done!" You must understand that getting certain things done may have far-reaching implications.*

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF TURNING AWAY FROM THOSE THAT DESPISE YOU***

**...ELIAB'S ANGER WAS KINDLED AGAINST DAVID, and he said, Why camest thou down hither? and with whom hast thou left those few sheep in the wilderness? I know thy pride, and the naughtiness of thine heart; for thou art come down that thou mightest see the battle. And David said, What have I now done? Is there not a cause? And HE TURNED FROM HIM TOWARD ANOTHER...**

**1 Samuel 17:28-30**

This scripture describes the persecution David faced from his brothers. Eliab, obviously intimidated by David, hurled insults at him just when he was about to fight with Goliath. The world has two types of people: those who believe in you and those who have no confidence in you. Learn to turn away from people who despise you.

When I began my ministry in 1987, many people despised me. Up until today, there are groups of people who think evil of me. They speak evil about me in their homes.

**That they may SHOOT IN SECRET at the perfect: suddenly do they shoot at him, and fear not. They encourage themselves in an evil matter: they commune of LAYING SNARES PRIVILY...**

**Psalm 64:4,5**

I can always tell when someone despises me at heart. Rejection is a spiritual thing.

**Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try [test] the spirits whether they are of God...**

**1 John 4:1**

Every leader should learn to detect the spirit of critical and hateful people. Rejection is a spiritual thing and can be discerned spiritually.

I once spoke to a doctor in the USA. I told him, “You have never believed in me. When we were medical students in Accra, you despised me.”

He answered, “How did you know?”

“What you are saying is true,” he continued, “Somehow in those days, I didn’t like what you were doing. But now, I have come to appreciate your ministry.”

I had always known that this fellow despised me. Though he never said much to me, I knew it in my spirit. Just like David, I turned away from him and “flowed” with those who believed in me. No one can flourish in an environment of despidement.

In some churches, professionals are neither regarded nor respected as far as the ministry is concerned. If you are a lawyer, doctor or accountant, the ministers may consider you incapable of ministry work. I advise such people to attend a church where they can be involved in ministry without being despised. Some fulltime ministers simply do not recognize the role of lay people.

In some places, poor and uneducated people are despised. It is important to turn away from an enviroment where you are despised. You can only flourish where people respect and love you.

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF CHOOSING AND STAYING WITH WHAT YOU HAVE TESTED***

**And Saul armed David with his armour... And David said unto Saul, I CANNOT GO WITH THESE; FOR I HAVE NOT PROVED THEM. And David put them off him. And he took his staff in his hand, and chose him five smooth stones... and his sling was in his hand: and he drew near to the Philistine.**

**1 Samuel 17:38-40**



This was the turning point in David's ministry. He had an opportunity to have his greatest breakthrough – *it was a matter of do or die!* As he went forth, he was to make one of the most important decisions of his life; to wear Saul's armor or not! He decided against wearing Saul's armor and opted for his slingshot with just five smooth stones. In this act, you see the principle of choosing what you have tested.

### ***Marry the Person You Know!***

I marvel at the behavior of certain Christian men. They behave normally up until the time they are about to get married. Instead of marrying someone whom they know, they go for a mysterious personality who nobody knows. They choose a young lady who they themselves know very little about. David refused to use Saul's armor because he hadn't tested it. How can you marry someone you hardly know?

Surely there are some nice people in the church whom you can marry! It is important to marry someone who has a good reputation in the church. There are Christians who are infected with HIV. If you make a mistake, you could end up marrying an infected person!

### ***Your Slingshot Will Lead You to Victory***

One of the most important decisions I took in my life was in choosing whom to marry. The lady I decided to marry was someone I had known for years. I knew her character and background. I knew a lot about her. If you really plan to

win the battle against Goliath, don't use Saul's armor! That may be the prescribed and ordained method, but using that which is familiar to you will help you to be victorious!

In business, every field is different. I have been a sand and stone contractor and a transport business owner. I am familiar with those two areas of business. If I were to conduct business, I would not try to export pineapples. I would stay with what I know. **Stay with the five smooth stones that have brought you victory in the past. If you use them in the day of your greatest challenge, you shall prosper!**

I know many of my church members from my secondary school days. They've also known me throughout the years. If you are a church member or a pastor, go for someone that you've known for a number of years. Choose someone whose character you can vouch for.

# **Chapter Three**

## ***Davidic principles of success # 5-8***

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF MINISTERING TO OTHERS***

**And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that DAVID TOOK AN HARP, AND PLAYED WITH HIS HAND: SO SAUL WAS REFRESHED, and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him.**

**1 Samuel 16:23**

If you want to be successful in this life, decide to be a blessing to others. This will unlock gates for blessings to flow into your life. *The most successful people in the world have often played a vital role in someone else's life.* Perhaps they were doctors who saved the sick. Maybe they were pastors who ministered to the needs of the people. Perhaps they produced something that benefited millions of people.

David took advantage of the opportunity to minister to Saul. Whenever evil spirits came to torment Saul, David refreshed him by playing the harp and singing unto the Lord. He suddenly became useful to Saul and his kingdom. Are you useful to anyone? **Your value rises with your usefulness!**

There are some Christians who just say, “Give me, give me, give me.” When are *you* going to start giving something? When are *you* going to be a blessing to somebody? Jesus is so valuable to all of us because He saved our souls by giving His life.

David’s value rapidly increased after he helped Saul in his time of demonic affliction. Take up your opportunity of counseling people and sharing the Word of God. Take up the responsibility of ministering to others. I notice how people shy away from doing God’s work. They feel it will be a bother. They feel it will keep them away from succeeding in their secular field. What a mistake! They don’t realize that as they help others, they become more valuable to society. The more valuable you are, the more important you will be.

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF FELLOWSHIP AND NON-ISOLATION***

**But all Israel and Judah loved David, because HE  
WENT OUT AND CAME IN BEFORE THEM.**

**1 Samuel 18:16**

Fellowship is a very important part of success. The more you interact with godly people, the more godliness will

rub off unto you. The more you interact with successful people, the more successful you will become.

David did not isolate himself. He kept in touch and that helped him immensely. Ministers are often tempted to isolate themselves permanently from other ministers. This is because many people who should be your brothers are often your competitors and rivals. In spite of this, it is helpful to interact and to fellowship. In fact, the Bible teaches us that this is a sign that you are a Christian.

**We know that we have passed from death unto life, because WE LOVE THE BRETHREN. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.**

**1 John 3:14**

If you are doing well in life, you will often be found fellowshiping.

**But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, WE HAVE FELLOWSHIP ONE WITH ANOTHER, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

**1 John 1:7**

Don't stay away. Relate with people ahead of you. Befriend successful people. You will become a blessed person because you have made the right associations.

***THE PRINCIPLE OF AVOIDING***

## ***ARROWS OF HATRED***

**And the evil spirit from the Lord was upon Saul, as he sat in his house with his javelin in his hand: and David played with his hand. And Saul sought to smite David even to the wall with the javelin; but he slipped away out of Saul's presence, and he smote the javelin into the wall: and David fled, and escaped that night.**

**1 Samuel 19:9,10**

Anyone who God has blessed will begin to have arrows of hatred and jealousy thrown at him. You may do good and only good, but you will be hated because of your success. This is part of life. It is your duty to avoid the arrows of hatred.

### ***Arrows of Hatred***

Recently, our church was attacked by an armed mob of assailants. On a previous attack, my office was bombed and burnt down. These people seemed to have secret, powerful backing because anytime the police arrested them; they were promptly released with orders from "above". These arrows or bombs were being thrown at the church. All of these attacks were manifestations of hatred against the church and my ministry. On numerous occasions, these violent attacks were shown on national television.

When our problem became a national issue, many people advised me to go on television or radio talk shows to explain our side of the problem. But I knew in my spirit that that would be a mistake! Many people just wanted me to make the mistake of saying something wrong so they could criticize me. When David had one spear thrown at him, he decided to run away. Perhaps this is the reason why David lived to a good old age.

When you see one arrow of Satan, you should know that there are many more out there primed to destroy you. If you sit in the same place, the next arrow will get you. There are times when it is wiser to run away than to stand and fight. One time the Pharisees wanted to kill Jesus. When Jesus got to know of it, he withdrew himself from that area.

**Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him. But WHEN JESUS KNEW IT, HE WITHDREW HIMSELF from thence...**

**Matthew 12:14,15**

Young Christian men must know that they attract the arrows of Satan because of the gift of God in their lives. In fact, the Bible teaches that because of the anointing on your life, young ladies will be attracted to you.

**Because of the savour of thy good ointments  
[anointing] thy name is as OINTMENT [anointing]**

**poured forth, therefore do THE VIRGINS LOVE THEE.**

### **Songs of Solomon 1:3**

Young lady, because you are beautiful, many wicked and adulterous men are interested in you. Run away from those arrows immediately, otherwise, your whole life may be destroyed.

The Bible teaches that precious ministers are sought for by the devil. Anyone who is a precious instrument of God will be hunted after!

**For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and THE ADULTERESS WILL HUNT FOR THE PRECIOUS LIFE.**

### **Proverbs 6:26**

Years ago, some sisters were interested in me because of my gift. I didn't even know the danger I was in. Many sisters in Christ I ministered to were hearing wedding bells in addition to the Word of God. I would go around from house to house and room to room sharing the Word of God. Little did I know that some sisters were falling in love with me because of the anointing.



One day, the Lord instructed me to enter a relationship (unto marriage). All along I had been saying, “I will not marry for at least ten more years.”

But the Lord spoke to me and said, “Your life is precious. You are walking in danger that you don’t even know about.”

He continued, “You don’t know about the intricacies of a woman’s heart and mind.”

“Enter a relationship now,” He said.

This is when I discovered the scripture in Ecclesiastes 7:26. I have never forgotten it since then. God was actually telling me to escape from spears and arrows.

**And I find more bitter than death the woman, whose heart is SNARES and NETS, and her hands as BANDS: whoso pleaseth God shall escape from her; but the sinner shall be taken by her.**

**Ecclesiastes 7:26**

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF ADAPTING FOR PROGRESS***

**And David said unto Ahimelech the priest, The king hath commanded me a business, and hath said unto me, Let no man know any thing of the business whereabout I send thee, and what I have commanded thee... Now therefore what is under thine hand? GIVE ME FIVE LOAVES OF BREAD IN MINE HAND, OR WHAT THERE IS PRESENT.**

**1 Samuel 21:2,3**

In the passage of scripture above, you will realize that David acted like a *poor* man. In the scripture quoted below, David pretended to be a *mad* man.

**And David arose, and fled that day for fear of Saul, and went to Achish the king of Gath. And he changed his behaviour before them, and FEIGNED HIMSELF MAD in their hands, and scrabbled on the doors of the gate, AND LET HIS SPITTLE FALL DOWN UPON HIS BEARD.**

### **1 Samuel 21:10,13**

Was he really mad? No. He was the king's son-in-law. He was from a good family. He was certainly not out of his mind. However, for that occasion, David had to behave like a mad man in order to survive.

I constantly marvel at how some Christians are unable to adapt in order to breakthrough in life. You may have to do without a car for a season so that you can have fewer bills to pay.

You may have to live in a smaller apartment so that you can save some money.

Many people want to impress the outside world at all costs. There are many that thought our church, the Lighthouse Chapel International, was non-existent for about ten years. We hardly advertised and rarely spent money on expensive outward things.

There were times I would arrive unnoticed in my old Renault car. People took no notice of me. Long ago, our church could have bought ten Mercedes-Benz cars of different colors for me if I wanted. But I have not seen the need for such a purchase. We have rather invested that money in church buildings and evangelistic projects.

Today, people think that Lighthouse Chapel is rich. Years ago, I compared the income of our church with the income of other churches and I noted that it was relatively lower. The leadership of the church was prepared to adapt to a lower standard of living so that the ministry could move ahead into prosperity.

### ***I Adapted to Student Living***

When I started our church in Geneva, I lived in a students hostel. I also lived in that hostel anytime I was in Geneva. I lived in the hostel and bathed in a common bathroom with the rest of the boarders. There were all sorts of weird looking people around the bathroom everyday.

One person once commented, “I find it amazing that you Lighthouse pastors live like school boys or students when you come to Europe.” I just smiled. Instead of paying

outrageous hotel bills, we adapted ourselves to student life and saved a lot of money.

It amazes me that when someone is successful, people hate him all the more. They call him names. They say that he is proud. But they never look closely enough to see what is making that person successful. Apostle Paul said, “I adapt to all men in order that I may win some people to Christ.”

**To the weak became I as weak... I AM MADE ALL THINGS TO ALL MEN, that I might by all means save some.**

### **1 Corinthians 9:22**

David adapted. Paul adapted. Why can't you adapt?

Years ago, I took note of something a prominent minister did. His church was going through some hard times. The income had dropped and the membership was falling. This man of God, who had been used to a certain upper-class lifestyle, did not realize that he had to quickly adapt to the prevailing conditions. I heard that he had rented a huge mansion with several bedrooms. The rent was enormous. I thought to myself, “How will this man pay his rent?”

But that was not all. He had a perfectly functioning Toyota, but he decided to sell it and use a Mercedes-Benz. I learnt that the Mercedes-Benz gave him no end of problems. In the end, this man of God was left without a car and was eventually ejected from his large house. However, his crisis only deepened! This pastor began to hire taxis and could not pay the bills. Soon he owed money to several taxi drivers. Today, after having a large

church in his city, he is left with about twenty people in his congregation.

Perhaps, if this man had adapted he would still be successful in ministry today. There is no need to impress anyone with a car or a house. It is not the car that is important, it is the one who is in it that matters!

# ***Chapter Four***

## ***Davidic Principles of Success # 9-12***

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF BEHAVING WISELY WHEN YOU ARE BLESSED***

**And David BEHAVED HIMSELF WISELY in all his ways; and the Lord was with him. Wherefore when Saul saw that he BEHAVED HIMSELF VERY WISELY, he was afraid of him. Then the princes of the Philistines went forth: and it came to pass, after they went forth, that David BEHAVED HIMSELF MORE WISELY than all the servants of Saul; so that his name was much set by.**

**1 Samuel 18:14,15,30**

At different times of your life, God will bless you and lift you up. Many people think that problems belong to those who are poor and defeated. You will notice that David's problems did not begin until after he killed Goliath. After one breakthrough came a host of problems. But the

Bible says that David behaved himself wisely. It is important to walk in wisdom when the Lord has promoted you.

Anytime I go to Takoradi, a city in Ghana, my wife points out some buildings to me; buildings which were inherited by a certain family. Although their father left them a lot of wealth and property, that family is now penniless and at the mercy of others. Although they inherited a lot of money, it did not benefit them. Perhaps they did not know how to handle their new found riches. They misused what they inherited until they had to sell all their properties to pay their debts.

The problem with many Christians is that they do not know how to behave themselves when they are blessed. Some young ladies backslide as soon as they get married. They forget that God gave them their husband. They no longer attend all-night prayer meetings. They want to stay away from the church. Never forget that the Lord gave you everything you have. Learn to behave wisely everytime the Lord blesses you!

### ***Let's Not Bother Tonight***

One Christian lady told me of how she backslid after her marriage. She and her husband were serious Christians who used to be at every meeting.

She told me: "It is my fault. At a point during our marriage, I stopped coming for prayer meetings with my husband."

She told me how one night when she was lying in bed with her husband, he turned to her and said, “Is it not time for the all-night?”

She told him, “Oh let’s not bother tonight.”

She did that a few times until her husband backslid spiritually. Why do people fall away when they are blessed by God? Why do you have to stop going for all-night prayer meetings just because you are married? It is time to know how to behave wisely after the breakthrough comes.

Remember the testimony of the prodigal son. Many people think that it was only the younger brother who received an inheritance. Study your Bible carefully. You will see that both of them received an inheritance. Both of them were blessed equally by their father.

**... A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And HE DIVIDED UNTO THEM HIS LIVING.**

**Luke 15:11,12**

Why is it that some people go wild after receiving a blessing? They no longer attend church, they no longer serve God, they no longer do the right things. This prodigal boy received an inheritance. He spent his money on harlots and riotous living. **With experience, I have seen that many people do not prosper because they do not use the opportunities that God gives them wisely.**



Some African countries are plagued with governments that enrich themselves upon arrival in office. Like vampires, they drink the blood of the nation's wealth and leave peanuts for the nation's masses. Any nation that has vampires in

leadership is doomed. These governments must behave wisely, and understand that they are fortunate to be in power.

**Woe to thee, O land, when THY KING IS A CHILD,  
and THY PRINCES EAT IN THE MORNING!**

#### **Ecclesiastes 10:16**

This scripture teaches that blessings abound for those that can wait to take their benefits at the right time. This is the principle of delayed rewards. If you buy that expensive car at the wrong time of your life, repairing it and buying fuel for it will be like drawing blood out of your body. It will cost you your life.

I believe in the best for myself, but I wait for the right time to enjoy the blessings that are legitimately mine.

Apostle Paul said that many privileges were his to enjoy. Yet he explained, "I have used none of these things."

**Have we not power to eat and to drink? But I HAVE USED NONE OF THESE THINGS: neither have I written these things, that it should be done unto me: for it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void.**

## **1 Corinthians 9:4,15**

Although Paul was blessed to have the support of the Church, he deliberately avoided using many of these privileges. A privilege will turn into a snare if you jump into it too quickly.

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF SEEING PEOPLE IN THE RIGHT WAY***

**And he said unto his men, The Lord forbid that I should do this thing unto MY MASTER, the Lord's anointed, to stretch forth mine hand against him, seeing he is the ANOINTED OF THE LORD. David also arose afterward, and went out of the cave, and cried after Saul, saying, MY LORD THE KING... Moreover, MY FATHER...**

## **1 Samuel 24:6,8,11**

In this passage, David spoke about King Saul to his subordinates. What struck me about David's speech was the way he referred to the king. At one point he called him, "My lord." At another point he called him, "My king", "My master", and even "My father."

He could have called him a *demon-possessed man*. He could have referred to him as the *demoniac*. We all know that Saul had a problem with evil spirits. We all know that

King Saul was a fallen man of God. Everyone knew that the anointing had departed. Yet, David gave Saul the honor and referred to him in a spiritual and honorable way.

Some people think that titles are not important. I think that titles have a role to play, especially in a big organization. Whatever you think about titles, one of the good things they do is that they help you to see whom you are dealing with. They help you to remember at all times who you are and who you are not!

Because David constantly reminded himself that he was dealing with the anointed king, it was difficult for him to strike the Lord's anointed. **As you associate with a man of God, familiarity may make you forget whom you are with.** David never forgot that Saul was his master. David never forgot that Saul was his father-in-law. David did not allow himself to forget that he was dealing with an anointed man of God. This, I believe was one of the secrets of David's success.

If David had killed Saul, it would have been because he felt justified to kill a demonized and fallen man of God. He would have thought that he was helping God to eliminate this disgraceful man. Of course, killing a raving lunatic is perceived as different from killing God's servant. However, David never allowed himself to see Saul in the wrong way.

Notice that David's respect for Saul's office was maintained until the very end. When David heard of Saul's death, notice how he spoke of Saul. He referred to him as the mighty.

**How are the MIGHTY fallen in the midst of the battle! O Jonathan thou wast slain in thine high places.**

**2 Samuel 1:25**

David went on and described Saul as the *beauty of Israel*.

**THE BEAUTY OF ISRAEL is slain upon thy high places: how are the mighty fallen!**

**2 Samuel 1:19**

This is remarkable considering how Saul had deteriorated in life. I believe that years later, this act of seeing King Saul in the right way saved David's life.

David had taught his men that kings and other anointed people are not to be murdered. The unspoken message that came through David's actions was loud and clear. **Do not touch the Lord's anointed, no matter what!** Years later, when David himself made a mistake and killed Uriah, he opened the door for a possible retaliatory act. Uriah the Hittite was one of the mighty men of God. You will find him listed as the last of David's mighty warriors.

**These be the names of THE MIGHTY MEN whom David had... URIAH THE HITTITE: thirty and seven in all.**

**2 Samuel 23:8,39**

Since David had killed one of these mighty men, the other mighty men could have retaliated. They could have justified the murder of King David saying, “He’s a fallen man of God.” They could have said, “We know him. He’s an adulterer and a murderer.” But David had taught them by example, not to strike at the Lord’s anointed.

In today’s world, it is important to perceive the Lord’s anointed as they truly are. It is important both in private and in public to refer to your pastor in an honorable way. If you call him “Joe Diggy” when you speak about him in private that is what he will be to you. If you refer to him as “my pastor” or “my father”, that is what he will be to you. You must realize that faith comes by hearing. What you hear yourself say repeatedly affects your faith. *Remember that God will often bless you through a man of God. God’s method is to use men as channels and vessels of blessing.*

Paul said, “Henceforth, know we no man after the flesh.” In other words, I do not see people through the eyes of my flesh anymore.

**Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.**

## **2 Corinthians 5:16**

If you see someone as a friend, classmate or an equal, then that is what he will be to you. The most important way to relate with a person is spiritually.

**The reason why many wives cannot receive from their husband pastors is because they see them as marriage mates, lovers, equals and so on. Learn to keep a spiritual perspective of the people you are dealing with. It will keep you on safe ground all the time.**

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF NOT VIOLATING FATHERS***

**And he said unto his men, THE LORD FORBID THAT I SHOULD DO THIS THING UNTO MY MASTER, the Lord's anointed, to stretch forth mine hand against him, seeing he is the anointed of the Lord.**

### **1 Samuel 24:6**

One of the spirits at work in the world of ministry tries to cut off fathers from children. Surprisingly, many fathers do not flow with their children. One of the secrets of success is to honor both your natural and spiritual fathers, until the very end.

God knows that many fathers do not live up to standard. However, He expects a certain honor to flow from children to the fathers. Just accept it! The promise is clear. If you honor your father it will be well with you and you will live long on the surface of the earth.

**HONOUR THY FATHER and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; that IT MAY BE WELL WITH THEE, and THOU MAYEST LIVE**

## **LONG ON THE EARTH.**

### **Ephesians 6:2,3**

There are many fathers who can and do provoke their children greatly. Children should be careful not to retaliate, even under extreme provocation.

**And, ye fathers, PROVOKE NOT your children to wrath...**

### **Ephesians 6:4**

I have been provoked many times by fathers, both in the natural and spiritual. It has been one of my greatest commitments to honor these fathers in the midst of betrayal and direct attacks. It is not easy to honour some fathers, but I believe that it leads to God's blessing and favor.

David's father was throwing spears at him. David's father was trying to kill his son-in-law. I have had people who were supposed to be my fathers, try to destroy me in ministry. Unbelievable things occur in the ministry! I see them as great temptations of the devil. I believe that David stood at the crossroads of his life when he had the opportunity to kill Saul. Overcoming that temptation was one of the greatest breakthroughs of his entire ministry.

That is why this story is given so much prominence in the Bible. Decide not to attack a father in this life. Do not destroy your future. No matter how evil a father may seem to be, leave him to God!

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF LISTENING TO ADVICE***

**And David said to Abigail, Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, which sent thee this day to meet me: And BLESSED BE THY ADVICE, and blessed be thou, which hast kept me this day from coming to shed blood, and from avenging myself with mine own hand.**

**1 Samuel 25:32,33**

In this scripture, you see David about to make a mistake. He was going to attack innocent people. Nabal had been very ungrateful to David for his services. It was the advice of Abigail that saved the day. Once again, if King David had shed blood in his early days it could have become an embarrassment and curse to him. This would have followed him throughout his reign as king.

David said to Abigail, **“Blessed be thy advice.”** Thank God for people who give good advice. Be open to people’s advice. *Even when your enemy is speaking, take note of what he is saying.* Advice is one of the cheapest ways to move ahead in life.



There are many people who advise me. I have lawyers, architects, engineers, doctors and businessmen who make a great input into my life. I am the leader, so I have to take the decision. However, I want to know what everybody thinks before I take the decision. Sometimes even children can give you good advice. **There is a mystery about good advice.** The one who is advising sees the issues very clearly and simply. Often, the one who is receiving the advice does not believe that things are as simple as that. Open your spirit to be able to see when good advice is coming your way.

# ***Chapter five***

## ***davidic principles of success # 13-16***

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF ALLOWING GOD TO WORK THINGS OUT***

**And David said to Abishai, DESTROY HIM NOT:  
for who can stretch forth his hand against the  
Lord's anointed, AND BE GUILTLESS?**

**1 Samuel 26:9**

David said something that I think every one should learn from. In this passage, David reveals his inner thoughts. He said, "Even though King Saul is fighting against me, I will not kill him myself." However, David was not stupid! He knew that for the prophecies to come to pass, Saul had to die. However, he was not going to be the person to kill Saul.

**The Lord forbid that I should stretch forth mine  
hand against the Lord's anointed: but, I pray thee,  
take thou now the spear that is at his bolster, and**

**the cruse of water, and let us go.**

### **1 Samuel 26:11**

He gave several options about how the prophecy concerning his kingship would happen. There was no way that David could become king as long as there was a king on the throne. David gave three options about how his dream of kingship and freedom could come to pass.

**David said furthermore, As the Lord liveth, THE LORD SHALL SMITE HIM; or HIS DAY SHALL COME TO DIE; or HE SHALL DESCEND INTO BATTLE, AND PERISH.**

### **1 Samuel 26:10**

First, he said that the Lord would strike Saul down supernaturally. The second possibility was that Saul would eventually die naturally. David said, “His day shall come to die.” The third possibility was that the king could be killed in a battle. It is interesting to note that the Lord worked out the plan for David’s kingship through the third option. Saul was indeed killed in a battle. The point that I am making is that David did not get involved in the implementation of God’s master plan. He left it to God and kept his hands clean!

Everyone could see that God was doing His own thing. We need to trust God for His perfect plan to materialize. *When you get involved and try to help God, you create Ishmaels who rise up to challenge your Isaacs.*

**And Moses said unto the people, Fear ye not, STAND STILL, AND SEE THE SALVATION OF**

**THE LORD, which he will shew to you today: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen today, ye shall see them again no more for ever. THE LORD SHALL FIGHT FOR YOU, and ye shall hold your peace.**

### **Exodus 14:13,14**

Pastors must know that if God wants certain people to be in their churches, there is no need to steal them from another congregation. Perhaps the Lord will bring them to your church through one circumstance or another. Just leave it to God. Do not get involved in any unethical dealings with another pastor's church members.

If God wants you to marry that man, it will work out. Ladies, there is no need to throw yourself unto a man for him to notice you.

After four years of marriage, one man told his wife, "You forced yourself unto me! I never even had the chance to think about it properly." Perhaps this man would have found her anyway. But because she forced herself unto him, he was wondering whether he made the right decision. It is time to allow God to work things out himself. Keep your hands clean!

### ***THE PRINCIPLE OF NOT ALLOWING REBELS INTO YOUR LIFE***

One of the interesting events of David's life was when he put to death the man who claimed to have killed Saul in battle.

**And David called one of the young men, and said, Go near, and fall upon him. And he smote him that he died. And David said unto him, Thy blood be upon thy head; for THY MOUTH HATH TESTIFIED AGAINST THEE, SAYING, I HAVE SLAIN THE LORD'S ANOINTED.**

## **2 Samuel 1:15,16**

Another remarkable event, was when he executed the men who killed King Ishbosheth.

**When one told me, saying, Behold, Saul is dead, thinking to have brought good tidings, I took hold of him, and slew him in Ziklag, who thought that I would have given him a reward for his tidings: And DAVID COMMANDED HIS YOUNG MEN, AND THEY SLEW THEM, and cut off their hands and their feet, and hanged them up over the pool in Hebron. But they took the head of Ishbosheth, and buried it...**

## **2 Samuel 4:10,12**

Everybody knew that King Saul's existence prevented David from fulfilling his dream of becoming king. The people who claimed to have killed Saul and his son Ishbosheth thought they were doing David a great favor. I believe that one of the major secrets of David's success was to eliminate those people immediately. Once a "king killer" always a "king killer". **Remember that he who criticizes others**

**to you, will criticize you to others.** David knew that these people would be dangerous to have around him. They had the ability to kill their leaders.

**I have learnt that a person who is loyal to someone else is likely to be loyal to me.** Years ago, a pastor joined me from another ministry. He had faithfully served another minister in London for about ten years. Due to certain circumstances, he was forced to leave London and settle in another country. That was when I met him. He made a decision to work under my ministry. The one thing that impressed me about this man was that he never spoke negatively about the church he had belonged to for the previous ten years.

Although he was greatly impressed with our ministry, there was no time when a sarcastic or disloyal statement came from his mouth about his former pastor. This is a very important sign indeed. It means this person is likely to behave in the same way towards a new “boss”. Do not think that you are special. If a man throws his wife outside the gate and you happen to be the new mistress, do not think you will receive any better treatment.

Be careful of wicked, erratic, and disloyal people. What they did to another, they will do to you one day. David prevented his own assassination by immediately eliminating traitors and rebels. **A person with traitorous tendencies can practise them on any new master.** Move with loyal people. Stay with the few whom you can trust. It is better to have a few loyal people than many treacherous and dangerous people around you.

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF BEING LED BY THE SPIRIT***

**Therefore DAVID ENQUIRED OF THE LORD, saying, Shall I go and smite these Philistines? And the Lord said unto David, Go and smite the Philistines, and SAVE KEILAH. Then DAVID ENQUIRED OF THE LORD YET AGAIN. And the Lord answered him, and said, Arise, go down to Keilah; for I will deliver the Philistines into thine hand.**

**1 Samuel 23:2,4**

One of the common phrases in the books of First and Second Samuel, is; “David enquired of the Lord”. The principle of David inquiring of the Lord for direction is one that is important for all of us today.

David defended the people of Keilah and delivered them from evil. When King Saul heard that David was in the city of the people of Keilah, he decided to attack. Naturally, you would have thought that the people of Keilah would protect David from Saul. David as a matter of routine inquired of the Lord.

**THEN SAID DAVID, Will the men of Keilah deliver me and my men into the hand of Saul? And the**

**Lord said, They will deliver thee up.**

**1 Samuel 23:12**

To his surprise, the Lord told him that the people who he had just saved would betray him and hand him over to Saul. David must have been surprised when the Lord told

him, “These people will be ungrateful to you. They will hand you over to Saul for your execution.”

**Do you realize that once again, David saved his life by this act of inquiring of the Lord? That is why I call these things, principles of success.** If David had not had these principles, his life would have been cut short. If David had not developed the habit of waiting on the Lord, he would have died as a young man. David’s ministry would have ended years earlier if he had not used these important principles.

There are times that the Lord has shown me things that are contrary to my understanding. The ministry is a supernatural vocation. The fact that you use your mind to take decisions does not mean that you should not listen to the Holy Spirit. I use my mind a lot, but I also rely on the supernatural guidance of the Holy Spirit. Thank God for our minds. But the Holy Spirit is leading us everyday of our lives.

**For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.**

**Romans 8:14**



If it were not necessary for God to lead us by His Spirit, He would not waste His time. Listen to the voice of the Holy Spirit and you will walk into success.

## ***THE PRINCIPLE OF HAVING A PASTOR***

**That the king said unto NATHAN THE PROPHET [his pastor], See now, I dwell in an house of cedar, but the ark of God dwelleth within curtains. And Nathan said to the king, Go, do all that is in thine heart; for the Lord is with thee. And it came to pass that night, that the word of the Lord came unto Nathan, saying, Go and tell my servant David, thus saith the Lord...**

### **2 Samuel 7:2-5**

David had a pastor. He had someone who could speak into his life spiritually. Having a pastor is different from belonging to a church. People may belong to a church but have no shepherd over their lives. Is there anyone who can speak into your life?

There are many people in my church. I have found out that some of them want to receive counsel, whilst others do not. I do not just advise every “Tom, Dick and Harry” in the church. I speak to those who make it clear that they want that input.

David consulted his pastor, Nathan, when he wanted to build a temple. Nathan gave him good advice. Pastor Nathan later brought a specific word from the Lord concerning the temple. Later, when David fell into adultery, Pastor Nathan had the confidence to minister to the king. He knew that the king would not be offended. He knew that the king would receive it as the word of the Lord.

**And the Lord sent Nathan unto David... And David's anger was greatly kindled against the**

**man; and he said to Nathan, As the Lord liveth, the man that hath done this thing shall surely die... And Nathan said to David, THOU ART THE MAN... And DAVID SAID UNTO NATHAN, I HAVE SINNED AGAINST THE LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The Lord also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die.**

**2 Samuel 12:1,5,7,13**

I know that there are some people in my church who are living in the wrong way. I have even known of people with more than one wife. But I also realize that some of these people are not open to receive the pastor's counsel. I just preach and teach generally. If they make themselves open to a direct ministration from me, I will certainly tell them what the word of God says. **Everybody needs help but not everybody wants help!**

David could have reacted by arresting Nathan. He could have told Nathan that he was having bad dreams and becoming too suspicious. Jeremiah the prophet was arrested several times because of the prophetic word he gave.

**Now Pashur the son of Immer the priest, who was also chief governor in the house of the Lord heard that Jeremiah prophesied these things.**

**Then Pashur smote Jeremiah the prophet, and put him in the stocks...**

### **Jeremiah 20:1,2**

I once attended a government function. At this meeting, one of the government officials said the government wanted to hear the prophetic voice of the Church.

When this government official said that I thought, "Does this man know what he's saying? Would the Church not be branded as an enemy or "opposition" if it speaks out against wrongdoing in the government?" It is easy to say, "We want to hear the prophetic voice of God." But do we really want it?

Even Jesus withheld certain instructions from his disciples. He said to them, “I have many things to say but you cannot bear them so I will not say them.”

**I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.**

**John 16:12**

Your ability to receive certain rebukes from the Lord is seen by the way you handled the earlier word you received. David had already demonstrated that he would be obedient to the voice of the Lord. That is why his pastor was bold enough to speak to him.

# ***Chapter Six***

## ***davidic principles of success # 17-19***

### ***PRINCIPLE OF BEING QUICK TO SEE AND ADMIT MISTAKES***

It is interesting to note that God describes David as a man after his own heart. We all know that David was far from being perfect. Could it be that God was not looking for perfection? I believe that what makes us great in God's sight is the manner in which we deal with our mistakes. Almost every person in the Bible made mistakes. From Adam to Peter, the Bible is cluttered with stories of impeachable offences. Yet, God has been merciful to his children.

When Saul made a mistake, he was confronted by the pastor of his day. Notice how Saul argued with the prophet Samuel. He insisted that he had not done anything wrong.

**Wherefore then didst thou not obey the voice of  
the Lord, but didst fly upon the spoil, and didst**

**evil in the sight of the Lord? And SAUL SAID unto Samuel, YEA I HAVE OBEYED THE VOICE OF THE LORD... And Samuel said... Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice... Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king.**

### **1 Samuel 15:19,20,22,23**

He argued that he had done the right thing. The evidence was there, yet he denied any wrongdoing. Compare this to David. When David was confronted by the pastor of his day (Nathan), he immediately said, "I have sinned." He admitted his wrongdoing, although no one could have even proved it.

**Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in his sight? Thou hast killed Uriah... and hast taken his wife to be thy wife... And DAVID SAID UNTO NATHAN, I HAVE SINNED AGAINST THE LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The Lord also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die.**

### **2 Samuel 12:9,13**

From my experience with handling people, I know that these two types of people are found in every day life. Decide to be a David who sees and admits faults easily. Remember this: *Failure to admit faults is a manifestation of pride and stubbornness.* God does not like proud people. The Bible says that he resists the proud!

## ***PRINCIPLE OF BEING MERCIFUL***

**And David said, Is there yet any that is left of the house of Saul, THAT I MAY SHEW HIM KINDNESS for Jonathan's sake?**

**2 Samuel 9:1**

David said, "Is there anyone I can show kindness to?" God had blessed him. David remembered where he had come from. How many of us remember what God has done for us? We say that the Lord has been good to us, but do we remember the vessels through whom God blessed us?

David called on an old friend's son and showed him great kindness.

**Now when Mephibosheth, the son of Jonathan, the son of Saul, was come... And David said unto him, Fear not: for I WILL SURELY SHEW THEE KINDNESS FOR JONATHAN THY FATHER'S SAKE...**

**2 Samuel 9:6,7**

The Bible tells us in Proverbs 3 that showing mercy is a key to finding favor and understanding from God.

**Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find FAVOUR and GOOD UNDERSTANDING in the sight of God and man.**

**Proverbs 3:3,4**

If you want to receive the mercy of God in your lifetime, learn to be merciful. One of the great keys in helping us to

be merciful people is to remember what we ourselves have been through.

I once discussed with some medical student friends what their plans were for the future. One of them indicated that he would return to the medical school as a wicked lecturer. Even though he had suffered at the hands of unreasonable lecturers, he himself was intending to do worse. I always wonder why people forget what it is like to be “under”.

David did not forget what it was like to be “under”. He called for those below and tried to lift them up to where he was. He raised up Mephibosheth, Jonathan’s son, to sit at his table. It is time to remember those who are down and below! God will bless you as you help others to come to where you are!

I wrote this book because I want to share with you what God has given to me. I want you to come up to the table that the Lord has prepared for all His children.

## ***PRINCIPLE OF BEING RELIGIOUS***

David was a very religious person. He did not leave spiritual things to the prophets and pastors alone. Although he was a king, his heart was in spiritual matters. You can see the type of person he was from the psalms he wrote. David spoke of living in the temple of God. He thought of staying in church for long hours.



**For A DAY IN THY COURTS is better than a thousand. I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness.**

**Psalm 84:10**

**I WAS GLAD when they said unto me, Let us go into the house of the Lord.**

**Psalm 122:1**

David organized the transfer of the Ark of the Covenant to Jerusalem. It was very important to him that these things were done. I believe that making God a central figure in your life is vital to success. David wanted to build a temple. He wanted to build a church. How many politicians and people of power think about building the church? How many would say that they'd like to stay in church for long periods?

People with wealth and influence often fight against the church. They lift themselves up as proud and arrogant elements capable of destroying the church. Learn a lesson from David. His heart was in the church. His vision was to build God a grand temple. This is what I mean by being religious. No matter your profession, you can make God the center of your activities. God is not blind. He will see and reward you because you love Him.

Psalm 91 tells us that because you have set your love on God, He will remember you in your time of trouble. He will lift you up and establish you. Let Jesus be the center of your life and you will enjoy the blessings of Jehovah.

**Because HE HATH SET HIS LOVE UPON ME,**

**therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I WILL BE WITH HIM IN TROUBLE; I WILL DELIVER HIM, AND HONOR HIM. With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.**

**Psalm 91:14-16**

In conclusion, remember that not many people succeed in this life. It is wise to notice and to study the few that succeed. It is wise to learn from them and to tap their secrets. Hebrews 6:12 teaches us to follow those who inherit the promises of God. David was one such person. My prayer is that you would experience success as you follow the principles that guided David!



# **Secrets of Success**

Dag Heward-Mills

**A LIGHTHOUSE CHAPEL PUBLICATION**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

*Quotations from John Hagee's Final Dawn Over Jerusalem have been used with permission from Thomas Nelson Inc. Publishers.*

A Lighthouse Chapel Publication

ISBN 9988-596-03-0

**Copyright © 2000 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book.

# ***Contents***

Decide to Succeed! .....	1
The Secret of Obeying God .....	13
The Secret of Believing God's Word .....	23
The Secret of Family Service to God.....	27
The Secret of the Tithe .....	30
The Secret of Intercession.....	41
The Secret of Sacrifice .....	46

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to my late father,  
Nathaniel Heward-Mills —  
He was a great father and a great blessing.

For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to this address:

Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle Bu, Accra  
Ghana



# ***Chapter One***

## ***Decide to Succeed!***

If you are a little observant, you will notice many examples of people who are successful. Some of these people are Christians, some are not. There are also many biblical examples of successful people. It is our duty as Christians to learn from all these examples.

Someone may ask, “Why should an unbeliever be successful since he doesn’t believe in God?” Dear friend, God has established certain principles. Anyone who abides by them will experience success. From today, I want you to understand that success is not an accident.

There is a road that leads to failure, and another that leads to success. I am writing this book so that you will learn the principles that made people like Abraham successful. *One of the things that I do in order to succeed is to observe successful people.*

I once spoke with some friends who were launching out for the first time in the music industry. After listening to their music, I told them that their music was nice but that I didn’t think it would sell. Then I showed them the music of some very successful singers. I sat down with them and

played the music of these successful artistes. I said to my friends, “Do what these successful musicians did, and you will get to where they are!”

This is such a simple principle yet it escapes most people. Many people prefer to obey instructions if they sound complicated. People have little confidence in simple sounding words. Do you want to be a successful pastor? It is difficult and yet it is easy. It is easy because all you have to do is to follow closely someone who has succeeded in that field. It is also difficult because it is sometimes not so easy to follow someone else.

**In order to succeed, you must understand the very nature of a principle.** Principles are not changed by circumstances. They are not altered with time. They are not even affected by your prayer and fasting. Principles are invisible rules that must be obeyed. *If you break a principle, the principle will break you!*

The law of gravity is one such principle. If you jump off the roof of a seven-story building, you will die! You will die even if you are a Christian. You will die even if you are a spiritual person!

You can fast for seven days without eating or drinking water. You can pray seven hours a day for seven days. But if you break the principle and jump off a seven-story building, you will break your neck and die. You may even ask your pastor to anoint you with oil before you jump – this will not change anything.

I believe in anointing people with oil, but I also believe in the reality of a principle. It is a reality which many

Christians do not want to face. They feel that because they are Christians, they don't have to study to pass exams. No matter who you are, you have to study hard if you want to pass your exams. It is a principle that applies to prayerful and non-prayerful Christians.

### ***Some Ministers Don't Understand Principles***

I have watched many anointed pastors destroy their gift as they broke principles of administration and management. In fact, some of the most anointed ministers are the ones who break the principles of administration. Please understand the nature of a principle. **The principle does not care who you are. It is in force whether you like it or not.**

I often wonder when I see young pastors breaking certain principles in ministry. A young pastor, in his zeal to establish his own ministry, breaks someone else's church, speaking evil of the senior pastor. Time and time again, this same pastor who has broken the principles, is then destroyed by his own mistakes.

If you break somebody's house down in order to build your own, you will reap what you sow. This is the law of the Bible (Galatians 6:7).

## *The Troubled Marriage*

If you are a young person, you have an opportunity to apply the principles of success to your life. Someone came to me once and said, “My wife is evil.”

I said, “How come?”

He said, “She has evil spirits.”

“Oh, I see.”

Their marriage was virtually broken down. I questioned him further, “Do you want to be married?”

“Yes, but my wife and her entire family have evil spirits.”

So I asked, “What are we going to do about this?”

“I need deliverance and so does she.”

I said to him, “What you need is good counsel from the Word of God.”

As I spoke with him, I realized that he had not been faithful to his wife. He had had multiple extra-marital affairs.

“You are not being faithful to your wife,” I told him. “That is what is breaking your marriage. I don’t know how you got your information about evil spirits. What I know is what the Word of God says and what the principles in the Bible teach us.”

He still asked whether he needed deliverance. But I insisted, “You shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free. When you walk in the Word of God, it will establish you. When you keep to the principles in the Word of God, they will help you have a wholesome marriage.”

**Dear friends, you may be delivered from leviathan spirits or jupiter demons but if you do not keep to the principles in the Word of God, your deliverance will have little effect.**

Happy marriages are built on the solid foundation of biblical principles!

Many of you reading this book are young enough to start applying the principles of success. If you start early, you will live to reap the fruits of a godly life. There is hope for the future. We can do well and we will succeed in our generation.

### ***No Fast Road To Success***

Everyone wants a quick way out! I'm sorry to inform you that there is no quick road to success. It seems to me that it is the nature of man to desire a quick fix. That is why the miracle and deliverance ministry is very popular today.

People do not want to live right. They don't want to serve God. They don't want to pray everyday. They do not want to read their Bibles. They don't want to change their lives and they don't want to do what is right. Folks just want things to work out instantly.

Applying principles in your life is not a formula that leads to instantaneous answers. A principle is something you abide by, which in the process of time yields results.

Ask any successful person you know whether he attained success overnight. The next time you see President Mandela, ask him how long it took him to become the president of South Africa!

In Ghana, many successful people have been persecuted for their success. Some have even been to prison. It seems that there is a very long road to success and there is simply no short cut. Principles must be obeyed and they will eventually bring you to success.

## ***Success Means Prosperity***

**One facet of being successful is being prosperous.** Poverty does not help anyone. The devil has made us believe that a spiritual person is a poor person. The fact that some priests take oaths of poverty only goes to emphasize the notion that there is some virtue in abject poverty.

When I read the Bible, I do not see any such doctrine. **In fact, the people God walked with often turned out to be rich.** It is obvious that Satan has done a good job in making us all believe that poverty is more spiritual than prosperity.

Poor people are often frustrated people. Someone once said that he doesn't trust poor people because they don't show their true character. I have noticed that many people change when they become prosperous. What does this mean? It means there was something hidden in them, which was exposed when they became prosperous. I believe God wants you to prosper in this life.

You are of little use to God if you live on Discouragement Avenue next to Disappointment Alley. When frustration and despair are your next-door neighbors, you cannot achieve much in life.

**God wants to give you more money than you can use, but He wants you to love Him more than money.** Money is not evil! It cannot be evil! It is when you love money more than you love God, that you are in danger of backsliding.

It is the love of money that is evil.

**For the love of money is the root of all evil...**

**1 Timothy 6:10**

No one can tell me that a television is an evil thing. It is not! However, if you use your television to watch evil films, then it has become an instrument of the devil in your life.

God wants us to be successful. He wants His children to be rich and prosperous. God wants His people to build houses and to own cars. God's will for you is to have an abundance of all things. God wants you to live in a nice house and have a nice garden. What do you lose by believing this? Nothing!

**BUILD YE HOUSES, and dwell in them; and  
PLANT GARDENS, and eat the fruit of them;**

**Jeremiah 29:5**

If God told the Israelites to build houses and to plant gardens under the Old Covenant, then He is telling us to do the same. The New Covenant is a better covenant!

Some time ago, I realized that unless I speak prosperity in a firm and confident way, it will not come into the hands of God's people. **God has impressed upon me to confidently speak about riches and prosperity because it is His will.** I know that many people will still remain in poverty, but through a strong message of prosperity, many people's faith will be lifted up to receive from the Lord.

He wants you to be a millionaire, and even a billionaire. I am not saying that if someone is poor, he is out of the will of God. There will always be poor people amongst us, but it is our duty as preachers to speak the general truth of the Word of God. **The general truth of God's Word is explicitly and implicitly prosperity, riches, breakthrough, happiness, peace and success.** Receive it because that is God's desire for you.

**Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest PROSPER and be in HEALTH, even as thy soul PROSPERETH.**

### **3 John 2**

Decide to be someone who will build a house during your lifetime. Decide to be someone who will own a car. Decide to be someone who will help other people financially. Decide today for prosperity and riches. Decide that you will accomplish something in this life. God does not want you to borrow money; He wants you to be a giver. Don't believe the lies of the devil. I'm not saying this to you because I want money from you. I could have a lot more



money practising medicine. I am saying this because I want to help you. I am saying this because God has sent me into your life to help you climb out of darkness.

**God is telling me to tell you that prosperity is for you now!** No matter who you are or where you live in this world, prosperity can be yours by faith. I see you having a breakthrough in your financial life. I see you living long and prospering. I see you without debt. I see you with great riches. I see you getting stronger and stronger. I can see you in your house. I see you standing in the garden you have planted. I see you owning many cars. That is God's plan for you!

### ***Medical Oppression***

When I was in medical school, I noticed two types of lecturers. Some lecturers were kind and taught us what we needed to know. They provided all sorts of support to help us pass our exams. On the other hand, there were some lecturers who were extremely wicked to the students. They would ask unreasonable questions during examinations and fail students unnecessarily.

I have personally watched friends drop out of the medical school after repeatedly failing oppressive exams. One lecturer once told me, "To be honest with you, the standards we demand from you students are higher than they should be at the undergraduate level." Under the oppressive and wicked lectureship of certain doctors, I watched two students attempt suicide. One of them succeeded. It was a great tragedy for our school!

I always wondered why some of these lecturers were so unreasonable and mean to their students. I often asked myself, “Do these people not have children who will one day be medical students?” “What do these lecturers benefit from intimidating and threatening students?”

In stark contrast, there were very kind lecturers who would spend a lot of time with the students. In particular, I remember one gynaecologist who spent a lot of time teaching us on the wards. When the exam time came, he was very concerned that his students passed. He helped us a great deal.

### ***Their Frustration Led to Their Wickedness***

As I inquired into the background of some of these lecturers, I found a general pattern. Many of the wicked lecturers were frustrated doctors. Some of them did not even own cars. Some of them came to work in ambulances! They were fetched from their homes by ambulances which carted dead bodies from the wards to the mortuary.

Many of them were impoverished with low salaries and very poor working conditions. Can you really expect pleasantness from a frustrated and disappointed person?

Their frustration was being passed on to the students. Many of the pleasant doctors were a bit more prosperous. The poverty and deprivation of highly educated lecturers was showing up in an unusual way. A frustrated person tends to frustrate other people!

Dear friend, poverty and frustration are not good things. God plans for us to succeed. He intends that we do well. What did Jesus say? He said that we should ask for whatever we want so that our joy may be full.

**Hitherto have you asked nothing in my name: ask and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.**

**John 16:24**

When we are joyful, we are strong. What does the Word of God say? The joy of the Lord is our strength!

**... for the joy of the Lord is your strength.**

**Nehemiah 8:10**

## ***Follow After Success***

**If you want to succeed, follow successful people.** I study about pastors who are successful and try to do what they are doing. I did not have the opportunity to go to a Bible school. All I have learnt in the ministry, I learnt through the observation of other successful ministers.

I studied the pastor of the largest church in the world. I studied anointed teachers who taught the Word. I read books written by ministers ahead of me. In my own city Accra, I read the books written by other successful pastors. I am no fool! I know that God has given everyone a gift and I intend to tap what I can from them!

## ***Choose God's Way***

It is time for you to succeed in life. I remember the testimony of a young man who wanted to succeed. Instead of obeying simple principles that are in the Word of God, he felt that there could be a shorter way. After deliberating on what to do, he went to see a fetish priest. The priest was going to lead him to success.

The fetish priest described what he was going to do. He was going to take a chicken and pluck off its feathers. He continued, "I will put the chicken in a room for seven days without food or water."

"Then you will put your hand in a bowl and pick as many large grains of corn as can fit into your hand. You will then drop them on the floor for the chicken to eat."

Then the fetish priest explained, “When the chicken eats the grains of corn, whatever number of grains are left will

be the number of years you will live after I make you successful.”

He continued, “You will see the chicken walk out on its own into a fire I have prepared for it outside.”

This young man thought to himself, “Wow! Is that how my end will be? Will I walk into the fire just like this chicken walked into the fire? Suppose the chicken leaves only three grains of corn, does that mean I will live for only three more years?”

This brother decided against using the fetish priest’s method of success but rather choose God’s methods. Today he is a successful man of God.

**Friends, success is not an accident! It is not just good fortune. It is the ability to follow principles and secrets of the Word of God until it brings you to a place of victory.**

## ***Chapter 2***

# ***The Secret of Obeying God***

It is time to study about a successful Bible character. Let us look closely at the life of father Abraham. What did Abraham do that made him such a great man? The Bible teaches that we should follow after people who have successfully inherited God's promises.

**That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.**

**Hebrews 12:6**

The first question we have to ask ourselves is, "Was Abraham successful?" I believe he was. The Bible teaches us a number of important truths about him.

**And Abram went up out of Egypt, he, and his wife, and all that he had, and Lot with him, into the south. And Abram was very rich in cattle, in silver, and in gold.**

**Genesis 13:1,2**

banks, properties and in stocks. Abraham was a person who knew God. The Lord spoke to him many times and answered his prayers.

Abraham also fought and won some battles in his lifetime. Finally, Abraham died at a good old age having seen the mercies of God throughout his life. Even in the New Testament, when Jesus told the story of Lazarus and the rich man, he mentioned that Lazarus was taken to Abraham's bosom. That meant that Abraham was still an important person even after his life on earth. **Some people are only important in this life. In the next world, they become insignificant to society.** They are banished to hell to be punished for their sins.

If Abraham were alive today, people would be asking him for an interview. You should want to ask Father Abraham, "How did you do it? What were the secrets of your success? How did you become so famous and prosperous?" You should want to ask Father Abraham, "Why did God choose you and speak to you?"

Although we are not living in the days of Father Abraham, we have in the Bible an accurate account of his life and his success. By studying the Bible, we can learn some of his secrets and principles. Instead of waiting for some false prophet to ask you for the teeth of a lion and the tail of a tiger in order to succeed, join me now and let us learn the secrets of Abraham's success.

## *Obedience of Abraham*

**Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.**

### **Genesis 12:1-3**

The first time we hear of Abraham in the Bible, the Lord was giving him an instruction. God told him to leave his country and travel to a strange land. Abraham immediately obeyed the Lord. This first and great principle is something that every believer needs to accept.

If you obey God, it will bring blessings to your life. God told Abraham that He would bless him and that everybody who blessed him would also be blessed. God told him that he would make a great nation out of him. **Notice that all the blessings of Abraham were on the condition that he obeyed God's command.**

There are many people in the world, and God has a blessing for everyone. However, the key that makes the blessing manifest is obedience to God. Abraham took the decision of a lifetime. He decided to leave his family and his country and launch out in obedience to God. In our lives, we are likely to make two or three of such decisions. These are decisions that change the entire course of our lives.



**Remember that greatness is dependent on obedience to the voice of God.** Blessings are reserved for those who *hear and obey*.

**And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt HEARKEN diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to OBSERVE AND TO DO all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all the nations of the earth:**

**And ALL THESE BLESSINGS SHALL COME on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.**

**Deuteronomy 28:1,2**

### ***Disobedience Leads to a Curse***

There are many people who cry and say, “It is difficult to obey God.” I want you to know that it is more difficult to disobey God. Anyone who disobeys the Lord will experience curses and frustrations in his life.

Remember the story of Adam. God put him in a garden and told him that he could eat the fruit of every tree except one.

**Adam disobeyed God and look at where we are today! Adam was cursed and the entire human race was cursed with him.**

All men are now cursed to sweat and struggle in their lives in order to make a living. I know of no human being on the earth that is exempt from this curse. The poor man gives several hours of hard labor and is rewarded with very little. Yet, he has to continue the hard work in order to survive. The rich man works twelve hours a day, seven days a week in order to maintain his riches. He sweats as much as the poor man but in a different way. All of us are struggling under this curse.

Women have been cursed to desire husbands, although their husbands will rule over their lives. I have rarely seen a woman who does not want a husband.

**Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.**

### **Genesis 3:16**

Husbands rule and dominate their wives, yet women still want to be married! Women were also cursed in childbirth. A woman will tell you that there is no pain like the pain of childbirth. Where did all these things come from? They are a result of Adam's disobedience. He disobeyed God and his life became frustrated. But we see a second Adam, Jesus Christ.

**For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**

### **Romans 5:19**

Jesus was obedient to His Father. One act of obedience has brought so much blessing to the human race. A lost and dying world now has a life in Jesus Christ. God has highly exalted Jesus and given him a name above every name. Exaltation comes through obedience. **If you want to be promoted in your life, begin to obey the Lord. Promotion comes through obedience to the Word of God.**

As I said, a person will probably take two or three of such major decisions in his lifetime. A good example of a major decision is the decision of whom to marry. *If you obey God concerning marriage, your life will be relatively peaceful.* If you marry the wrong person, unhappiness will follow you like a never-ending stream.

**Many people do not obey God when they get to the crossroads of marriage.** They listen to the flesh and to the opinions of friends. One thing that will influence your state of happiness more than anything else is your marriage. You can never escape the reality that you are married. When you come home, you meet your marriage partner. When you go out, everything you do will be related to the fact that you are married. If you obey the Lord, God will establish you with His blessing.

## *I Obeyed the Call to Ministry*

Another such decision is the decision to obey God and do His work. On the 10<sup>th</sup> of March 1989, I qualified as a medical doctor. After seven years of hard labor, I had arrived at a point where many people in the world would have liked to be. I was now a medical doctor! Nevertheless, the Lord spoke to me to leave the medical practice and do His work full-time. I obeyed Him and that decision has changed my life completely.

One day whilst standing in Jerusalem, I wondered, “How did I get to be in this place?”

The Lord told me, “It is because you are following my voice that I brought you here.”

You do not know the far-reaching effects of obedience to the Lord. Sometimes I stand in church and see all the people whose lives have been changed and I wonder; “Would these people have been saved if I was a practicing doctor in a small clinic somewhere?” Sometimes we don’t have any idea of the effects of our obedience.

I think that many people will not know the effects of their disobedience to God until they get to heaven. **I think some people will get to heaven and be told, “There are thirty seven thousand people who were supposed to be in heaven through your ministry! They are all in hell right now, because you refused to obey my call.”**

They will answer, “Oh, I thought it was just a little teaching in Sunday school that you wanted me to do. I felt that if I didn’t do it someone else would be able to do it.”

That little thing that God wants you to do has a snowballing effect. It will lead to the salvation of many souls. Just do it and be blessed! Obedience is the first key to Abrahamic success.

## ***Obey Fully***

When you do decide to obey God, do not obey him partially. Do not add on things which God did not ask you to do. God did not call Abraham *with* Lot. He called

Abraham *alone*.

**Look unto Abraham your father, and unto Sarah that bare you: FOR I CALLED HIM ALONE, and blessed him...**

**Isaiah 51:2**

Abraham made the mistake of taking Lot with him. This caused many problems for Abraham.

**You see, we do not always understand the rationale behind God's instructions.** God was trying to separate Abraham from his family. He was trying to set up a special line and a special person through whom he would bless all the nations of the earth.

The mistake Abraham made is the same mistake many people make when they are launching out in business or ministry. They long to take people with them. They try to

form partnerships which God has not ordained. *As far as ministry is concerned, God does not call a group of people. He calls a man.*

**And I sought for A MAN among them...**

**Ezekiel 22:30**

The Bible doesn't say that God sought for a group of men. God deals with us as individuals. God sought for a man.

### ***Going With A Partner***

Years ago in Ghana, there were not many vibrant Charismatic churches. However, there were many vibrant singing and drama ministries. With the passage of time,

God began to call some of the members of such groups into the pastoral ministry. Many of the leaders of these ministries were led to establish churches.

However, some of these people made the mistake of launching out as a *group* into the Church world.

**So Abram departed, as the Lord had spoken unto him: AND LOT WENT WITH HIM...**

**Genesis 12:4**

That was a big mistake! God was not calling a group. He was calling the individuals. Many people who were generally called to be successful pastors had their ministries stifled by the people they took along with them. You see, many of these people who were taken along, felt that they had equal power and an equal say with the leader. **Executive committees ran the singing and drama ministries, but a committee does not run a church.** A church needs a strong leader supported by wise and loyal assistants.

If you read the Bible, you will notice that there was a time when the servants of Lot quarreled with the servants of Abraham. Lot did not tell his servants that they were even privileged to be with Abraham. He did not remind his followers that it was Abraham who was called and that he was just taken along by the grace of God.

Abraham had to settle the dispute. Abraham took the initiative to separate from Lot. When Abraham asked Lot to choose one section of the land, he took the best part and left Abraham, the real leader, with the leftovers. **Sometimes when you do things as a *group*, the people around do**

**not realize who the real leader is. They think that it is the group effort that is making things work.**

Dear friend, it was only after Lot was separated from Abraham that God began to fulfill Abraham's call.

Often, when people are launching out in business they should really do it alone, but they go in for partnerships. I have watched many partnerships break up very painfully. If God wants you to set up a garment factory, go ahead and do it! Believe God to be able to accomplish it.

**Sometimes when you get yourself involved with partners who are like Lot, they forget that you are the one who had the vision.** The time may come when they will even drive you out of the business you created. Just decide to obey God and to obey Him fully. If God has called you alone, go alone. He will bring people to help you. Don't be afraid! Strength is not in numbers; it is in God.

Promotion does not come because you are part of a group. Promotion will come because God has called you. Promotion will come because you are obedient!

**For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south.**

**But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.**

**Psalm 75:6,7**



## *Chapter 3*

# *The Secret of Believing God's Word*

**And HE BELIEVED IN THE LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness.**

**Genesis 15:6**

The Bible teaches us that Abraham believed in God. That is one of the most notable things about him. He is called the father of all those who believe. Because Abraham had faith in God, God was pleased with him.

In the ministry of Jesus Christ, many people were healed. Jesus often told those who were healed, “Your faith has made you whole.” It was the use of faith that brought the miracles to these individuals. **In order to experience the success that Abraham did, you need to operate in faith.** How is it going to be possible for you to own a car? How is it going to be possible for you to own a house? How much does a car cost? A good car costs thousands of dollars.

Many people who are reading this book, earn less than one hundred dollars a month. This is the reason why we need faith. You must know how to believe even when it

seems impossible. What do you have to lose? Faith will bring you many blessings!

People talk about riches and the power of the occult. What about the power of God? You must choose to believe that God's power will destroy the power of the enemy. As you read this book, I can show you several reasons why you may not be alive next week. You will find out that there are many reasons why you could be dead by next week. But why think about that? Why live in fear? Why not exercise faith in the goodness of God?

### ***Hospitals Can Be Frightening***

In my short medical experience, I saw many frightening things. I remember one day, I saw a young lady who had a fever. She was just twenty-four years old. Initially, we thought she had malaria. After giving her several doses of chloroquine (an anti-malaria drug), we realized that she was not getting better.

We soon discovered that the fever was due to leukemia (a deadly cancer of the blood). Right there I realized that not every fever was malaria and not every fever was curable. This young lady was on her way to her grave and it was just a matter of time.

Later, I saw a patient on the ward who had abdominal discomfort. This was a successful businessman in the prime of his life. When his tummy was examined, it was discovered that his liver was as hard as a stone. He had cancer of the liver and was on his way to his grave. It was just a matter of time before all these people died!

I remember seeing the dead body of a young man who lived with a doctor in the apartments nearby. He was driving the doctor's car when it went out of control, somersaulted and crashed, killing him. It was indeed frightening.

When you see evil all around you can easily be frightened. But you must be able to say with David,

**Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.**

#### **Psalm 23:4**

Choose to believe that God will keep you.

When you have faith in God's protective power, you please the Father. Believe that God will give you long life. Believe that you will live to a good old age. Believe that you will live to see your children and your children's children! Believe that although a nice car costs thousands of dollars, you will have one! Expect that you will also have a nice car to give away to someone one day!

Abraham was ninety years old. He had stopped committing love with his wife. He was an old man when God told him that he was going to have a child. **The possibility of Abraham having a child was nil, but he believed God. God was so happy with Abraham because he believed.** God gets really excited when you have faith in His promises!

**...WITHOUT FAITH it is impossible to PLEASE HIM.**

**Hebrews 11:6**

Read through the Bible and see how people looked foolish when they believed God. Do not be afraid of looking odd when you step out in faith. By faith are we saved! I promise and predict that in spite of everything, God will select you and superimpose His purpose on your life. **I see God superimposing His blessings on your life in spite of contrary evidence and contradictory circumstances!** God will do this because of your faith.

The more you exercise faith, the more you will prosper. But the more you are blessed, the more people will speak against you. The more you prosper, the more people will hate you. Ignore their hatred, keep on and make sure that you please God with your faith. Faith was one of Abraham's key principles for a successful life.

# *Chapter Four*

## *The Secret of Family Service to God*

One of the reasons why God chose Abraham and blessed him was because God knew that Abraham would command his entire family to serve Him. Look at Genesis 18:19 carefully and you will see that God was about to destroy Sodom and Gommorah. The Lord thought, “Should I inform Abraham about this? Should I speak to him?”

Many people would like God to speak to them. Why did God speak to Abraham? The answer is in the Bible.

**For I know him, that HE WILL COMMAND HIS CHILDREN AND HIS HOUSEHOLD after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which he hath spoken of him.**

**Genesis 18:19**

I would not like to bring a child into the world that would end up in hell.

**If you are going to be successful, you must be concerned that your household serves the Lord.** It is more important that your children serve the Lord than that they have a good education. God said, “I know Abraham. He’s going to bring his children to Sunday school. He’s going to make them study the Bible.”

Your children should attend Sunday school and learn about David, Abraham, Joshua and Jacob. They must know all the stories of Jesus Christ. They must learn about Absalom, Lucifer and Judas. It is not just mathematics and science that are important!

*You cannot attend church and leave your children languishing at home watching evil films on television.* God wants you to ensure that your entire household is serving Him. God worked with Abraham because He was confident that Abraham would make his entire family serve the Lord.

If you are a young man, you must marry a Christian. Some people marry women who are not even Christians. Some men just marry a wife because she is fair and beautiful. Yes, she is a fair and beautiful barrel, but she may be an empty barrel. You must marry someone who has the Word and the Spirit.

God said, “I know Abraham, he’s going to marry a believer. He’s going to bring them to church.” **God wants you to attend church with your spouse.**

Some Christian men allow their wives to get out of control. They come to church on their own whilst their

wives stay at home. They say, “She didn’t want to come, so I left her.”

Not so with me! I am the head of my house and I lead the way. Everything in my house is under the influence of the Holy Ghost. **You’ve got to keep your household under control: servants, visitors and even the dogs and cats must serve the Lord.**

I have some relatives who come from abroad with their live-in girlfriends. Although I have guest rooms, I don’t permit them to stay with me. I don’t want people to come into my home and openly practice adultery. I want my whole house to follow the Lord.

Some of you women are married to non-Christians or lukewarm Christians. That means you are the automatic spiritual head of the household. You must use wisdom to ensure that your home has the right spiritual atmosphere.

Your husband may concern himself with educating the children in science and math. **You must make sure that they have a good spiritual education.** Your husband may just watch cartoons with them, but you teach them the Bible. Cartoons cannot help a child become what he is supposed to be.

Ensuring that the whole household serves the Lord was one of Abraham’s secrets of success.

# ***Chapter 5***

## ***The Secret of the Tithe***

**For the Lord God is a sun and shield: the Lord will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.**

**Psalm 84:11**

**He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?**

**Romans 8:32**

The verses we read above tell us that God is going to freely give us everything we desire. If God did not hold back His only son, do you think there is anything else that He will withhold from you? Satan, the master liar, has deceived the whole world. Many people think that success, riches and prosperity are evil things. He has led us to think that it is good to be poor. Unfortunately, the Church has perpetrated this lie. It is not unusual for the Church to perpetrate lies. It is a historical fact that the Church has believed wrong things for centuries.



## ***Church Father Perpetrated a Lie***

I want to prove to you that the Church can sometimes make mistakes and champion the teaching of wrong doctrines. We all know that Martin Luther was a great man who brought about the Great Reformation. It was interesting for me to learn about some of the things he taught concerning Jews.

His theories about Jews surprisingly gave support to Hitler's Third Reich during the Second World War. The Germans had fuel to emphasize what they felt about Jews. Hitler's government developed a theory that they used to exterminate six million Jews.

Read this little passage below of what Martin Luther said about Jews,

*\*Luther – who at one time wrote of the Jews, “We are aliens and in-laws, they are blood relatives, cousins, and brothers of our Lord” – changed his views when the children of Israel did not convert to his reformed Christianity and join his assault on the Roman church. Luther said of the Jews, “All blood kindred of Christ burn in Hell, and they are rightly served, even according to their own words they spoke to Pilate.”*

*Moreover, “The only Bible you have any right to,” he told the Jews, “is that concealed beneath the sow's tail; the letters that drop from it you are free to eat and drink.” What a crude insult to the people of God!*

*The most vicious, hateful statements Luther ever wrote are found in his tract “On the Jews and Their Lies.” In this work he wrote, “Know this, Christian, you have no greater enemy than the Jew.” His tract called for the enslavement of the Jews because they were children of the devil and should never touch a Christian's hand. Luther demanded that their synagogues be burned to the ground, their books destroyed, their homes laid*

*waste, their cash and treasure of silver and gold be taken from them, their rabbis be forbidden to teach, and “their tongues be cut out from their throats.” He also advised that “young and strong Jews and Jewesses be given the flail, the ax, the hoe, the spade, the distaff, and spindle, and let them earn their bread by the sweat of their noses as is enjoined upon Adam’s children. We ought to drive the lazy bones out of our system...”*

*“If, however,” Luther continued, “we are afraid that they might harm us personally, or our wives, children, servants, cattle, etc., then let us apply the same cleverness [expulsion] as the other nations, such as France, Spain, Bohemia, etc., and settle with them for that which they have extorted from us, and after having divided up fairly let us drive them out of the country for all time.”*

*“To sum up, dear princes and nobles who have Jews in your domains, if this advice of mine does not suit you, then find a better one so that you and we may all be free from this insufferable devilish burden – the Jews.”\**

These words were spoken by Martin Luther himself. This is his opinion of Israelites and how they should be treated. Many people believed these things and applied them. But you and I know that they are not right. Is it not amazing, that Church leaders can convincingly teach things that are erroneous? Is it not surprising that the whole nation of Germany believed in this theory? Is it not amazing that such ideas can be propagated and wholly accepted by the Church?

Sometimes the Bible says one thing and Church leaders say the opposite. For example, the Bible says that Jesus became poor that we might be made rich. This is not my own idea. We are reading from the B-I-B-L-E.

**For we know that the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.**

## **2 Corinthians 8:9**

The Bible says I wish above all things that you will prosper and be in health (3 John 2). Many people who prosper are made to feel as though they are doing something wrong. In many societies, people think that because someone is successful and wealthy, he must be up to some kind of evil.

**The fact that you are a pastor or an ordinary Christian does not mean that you have to be poor.** Poverty is not from God. Poverty is one of the curses in Deuteronomy 28. To be rich is better than to be poor. The Bible says that the Lord is a sun and a shield, and no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.

Begin to approve of success from within your heart. Do not hate successful people. *You can never become something that you hate.* You can never be blessed with something that you fight against. If you hate something, you cannot have it!

Years ago the Lord told me to respect certain Christian leaders in my city. He told me to bless them and warned me never to fight against them. He showed me that I would

never become an important Christian leader in my city if I fought senior Christian leaders.

Do not let the devil deceive you. The Bible calls Satan “that old serpent that deceiveth the whole wide world” (Revelations 12:9). If Satan can deceive the whole wide world, he must be very good at deception. Do not let success be taken out of your hand.

### *Secret of the Tithe*

The secret of the tithe is truly a secret. In every church, there is always a small percentage of people who tithe. You may also have noticed, that it is only a small percentage of people who prosper. I call it a secret because it is hidden from many people.

You read in Genesis 14 that Abraham paid tithes to Melchizedek.

**And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him [Melchizedek] tithes of all.**

### **Genesis 14:20**

Melchizedek was a priest of the most high God. He represented God and the Church. All successful people, who have walked with God, know that it is God who gave them what they have. Once, David was giving an offering. He said something very important; “I’m only giving You what You first gave me.”

**But who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able to offer so willingly after this sort? for all things come of thee, and of thine own have we given thee.**

### **1 Chronicles 29:14**

When you realize that it is God who gives you something, you will always want to acknowledge Him.

Nebuchadnezzar the king got to a place in his life where he began to boast about what he had. God does not like people who boast about things which were given to them. God does not like it when people boast about things which they acquired by grace. God struck him down with a disease that made him think that he was an animal. For seven years, he played in the grass like an animal. When he came back to his senses, he gave glory to God.

**Wherever you are in life, remember that God has made you what you are.** Are you intelligent? Are you skilled? Are you beautiful? Everything is from God.

**For who maketh thee to differ from another? and WHAT HAST THOU THAT THOU DIDST NOT RECEIVE? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?**

### **1 Corinthians 4:7**

When God elevates you to a position of influence and authority, please remember that you are there by the grace of God. Every powerful position has an expiry date.

Belshazzar— another king, learnt this lesson the hard way. He was so happy in his palace that he sent for drinking glasses from the church!

**Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand.**

**Daniel 5:1**

He just didn't want to drink wine. He wanted to drink wine from the holy vessels. He wanted to desecrate the Church. He ridiculed churches and pastors.

**Belshazzar, whiles he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem; that the king... and his concubines, might drink therein.**

**Daniel 5:2**

That was a mistake! He drank wine from the holy vessels.

**Then they brought the golden vessels that were taken out of the temple of the house of God which was at Jerusalem; and the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, drank in them. They drank wine, and praised the gods of gold, and of silver, of brass, of iron, of wood, and of stone.**

**Daniel 5:3,4**

Every position you hold in this life is by the grace of God. If you do not decide to give glory to God, He will divinely *displace* and *replace* you.

One of the ways a successful person can give glory to God is by acknowledging the grace of God. Do you have Power? Money? A Husband? A Wife? Cars? A Position? You must remember that these things are from the Lord. Abraham knew that secret. He knew that he had to acknowledge God for his success in life so he gave tithes. He gave a significant chunk of his money to the Lord.

**And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave them tithes of all. And the king of Sodom said unto Abram, Give me the persons, and take the goods to thyself. And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand unto the Lord, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth.**

**Genesis 14:20-22**

I want you to notice a great blessing that came unto Abraham after he paid his tithes. God was stirred to give more blessings to Abraham.

**After these things [paying his tithes] the word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward... And behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but HE THAT SHALL COME FORTH OUT OF THINE OWN BOWELS SHALL BE THINE HEIR.**

#### **Genesis 15:1,4**

This was the first time that God specifically told Abraham that he was going to have his own special child which would *not* be his servant's child. Abraham had everything in the world but he didn't have a child. **God knows what you don't have. He knows where your need is greatest. He gave Abraham what he could not buy with money.**

Abraham was a great man, he was successful and rich but he didn't have everything. He didn't have a child. He was so powerful that he had his own private army. His private army had just fought and won a war. How many people on earth today have their own private armies? Abraham had wealth, prestige and long life but he didn't have a child.

Please read your Bible and see for yourself whether what I am saying is true or not. In Genesis 14 Abraham paid his tithes and then in Genesis 15, in the very next few verses,



God told him that he was going to have his miracle. **God blesses those who pay tithes.** Miracles are for those who obey the principles of God's Word.

Go into a church and find out those who have been paying tithes consistently for years. Their lives are different from those who have not been paying tithes. Come to the Lord and honor Him every month.

**HONOUR THE LORD WITH THY SUBSTANCE,  
and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: So  
shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses  
shall burst out with new wine.**

**Proverbs 3:9**

God gave you the job you have. Successful people know that and respect that fact! The first fruit is for the Lord. Paying a tithe is not something that you must be reminded of. The fact that you are alive must remind you to pay tithes. **When you give tithes to God, you become more spiritual.** It makes you more committed. When your treasure is in the house of the Lord, you become interested in the church.

**For where your treasure is, there will your heart  
be also.**

**Matthew 6:21**

I think that the reason why some people have difficulties in giving to the Lord is because they do not believe or understand that it is more blessed to give than to receive. *If it is more blessed to give than to receive, then those who give have an advantage over those who receive.* If it is more blessed to give, then those at the receiving end are at a disadvantage (relatively speaking).

The so-called developing world has been receiving aid from Western powers for years. What has it done for us? Very little! The more people give to us, the more our poverty deepens. When we rise up and give, the Word of God teaches us that we are moving into a realm of blessing. Many people grapple with this reality to their own destruction.

Some time ago, there was a terrible earthquake in Japan. Ghana made a donation of Golden Tree Chocolates to help the Japanese earthquake victims. Someone may ask, “What will these chocolates do to help the earthquake victims?” Probably not much! But it makes Ghana a giving nation. At least we gave something. **Giving helps a nation to rise out of poverty into prosperity.** Learn this secret now and become a giver.

Even if you have a little, you can still give something. God calculates your giving in relation to what you have in total. God wants you to give in relation to what you have.

**And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites... and [Jesus] saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath**

**cast more in than all they which have cast into the treasury: For all they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in ALL THAT SHE HAD, even all her living.**

**Mark 12:42-44**

I see you rising out of poverty, as you become a giver. I see you tithing. I see you paying your first and best fruits to the Lord. I see you joining that small group of people who are successful in this life.

Listen to me, God doesn't need your money! He doesn't need our little offerings. Whether you pay your tithes or not, the Church will go forward. God is just trying to help you. Abraham knew that God needed nothing from him. The Word of God says that the silver, gold and cattle belong to the Lord. If God wants to make meat stew, He will not ask you for meat!

God is the one trying to reach out to you. God wants to bless you. As you read this book, enter the realm of divine approval and divine promotion. I see God giving you divine promotion. I believe with all my heart that the Spirit of God and of success is coming upon you.

Divine promotion and elevation are yours for the taking. Go forward and never go backward. God is taking you from the minimum to the maximum, and from the negative to the positive. God is taking you forward. This is one of the principles of success – the principle of the tithe.

# ***Chapter 6***

## ***The Secret of Intercession***

The Bible shows us that Abraham interceded for Sodom and Gomorrah. When Abraham prayed for Sodom and Gomorrah, he was fulfilling a divine principle. Most Christians are engrossed with their own problems. Women who are married to unfaithful husbands are constantly praying for them.

Many wives are consumed with the problems of their troubled marriages. They want to be prayed for and anointed over and over again. But the problems never seem to go away.

Abraham had his own problems but he prayed for Sodom and Gomorrah. Abraham didn't have a child. He may have been suffering from incurable azospermia or oligospermia. The doctors had no solutions to his medical problems.

Abraham also had family problems. He had so much wealth and he didn't have anyone to inherit it. There were only servants to inherit his life's work. He had no children. Abraham also had marital problems because of a maid he had slept with.

In spite of all this, Abraham found time to intercede for Sodom and Gomorrah.

His prayer was so sincere and intensive that God agreed to answer his prayers. This prayer was so significant that it was recorded in the Bible.

**And Abraham drew near, and said, Wilt thou also destroy the righteous with the wicked? And he said, Oh let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak yet but this once: Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for ten's sake.**

**Genesis 18:23,32**

I believe that this is one of the keys to Abrahamic success. Forget about your problems and make God's kingdom and God's problems your concern. You will begin to experience supernatural breakthroughs in your life. You will not even understand why God is blessing you.

**When you begin to pray for others, you have graduated into another level of Christianity.** I rarely pray for myself. I know that many successful Christians rarely pray for themselves. They are always praying for and counseling other people.

Most Christians think; "When everything is okay and God has blessed me, I will start to pray for other people." But what you don't realize is that there is a divine order that must be followed. They are trying to put the cart before the horse,

but the cart cannot go before the horse. Seek *first* the kingdom of God. After putting the kingdom of God first, you can *then* tackle your own kingdom.

In the Lord's prayer, the first topic is 'Thy kingdom come and thy will be done'. The first prayer is not, "Bless me, give me and help me Lord!"

I often counsel people who need God's help; "Get involved in the work of God. Bury yourself in God's work! Pray for other people! Let other people's problems become your concern!" You will be surprised how things will take a dramatic turn.

**When God sees that you want to build *His* house, He will be interested in building *your* house.** Many years ago I heard a great man of God say, "If you build a house for God, God will build a house for you." I have found this to be a true and reliable statement. God wants people who concern themselves with His work. Paul said about Timothy,

**For I have no man likeminded, who will naturally care for your state. For all seek their own not the things which are Jesus Christ's.**

### **Philippians 2:20,21**

Notice from this scripture, an age-old problem: Everybody was looking out for his own welfare. Nobody really cared about God's work. Everybody is thinking about *himself* and *his* problems. If you make God's kingdom your primary concern and intercede for people like Abraham did,

you will attract God's supernatural blessings. As I have served the Lord these twenty years, I have made the Lord's kingdom the most important thing to me.

In 1985, while in the third year of the medical school, I took a decision for the Lord. I decided not to seek for academic laurels anymore. I had just finished the second year and had concluded that it was not worth striving for earthly crowns. I remember telling my beloved (fiancée), "From now, I am not interested in qualifying with a distinction from this school."

"I don't want any prizes. All I want to do is pass my exams." I added, "From now on, I'm going to build God's kingdom and the church."

It was from that point onwards that I began to develop into a pastor and eventually established Lighthouse Chapel International. It is interesting to note that when I took the decision not to seek great academic laurels, I ended up getting distinctions and winning awards.

You see, in the kingdom, the way up is the way down. In the kingdom, the way to get is to give. In the kingdom, the way to solve your problems is to solve God's problems.

Have you ever read about Job? He had more problems than any of us? Job had friends who needed spiritual help. Job decided to pray for his friends and look at what happened!

**And THE LORD TURNED THE CAPTIVITY OF  
JOB, WHEN HE PRAYED FOR HIS FRIENDS: also  
the Lord gave Job twice as much as he had before.**

**Job 42:10**

Who got the blessing when Job prayed? Who was being prayed for? It was the friends of Job who were being prayed for. But when God moved, it was *Job's* problems that were solved! Is that not amazing? Job got the blessing when he made intercession for his friends. **Isn't that interesting?**

**You pray for *others* and *you* get the blessing!** This is an eternal principle.

This is one of the principles of success. Husbands, wives, businesspeople, please turn your attention to the things of God. In Abraham's day, God's major concern was the deplorable state of the nation Sodom and Gomorrah. Abraham made that *his* problem and prayed earnestly about it. Because of this, God blessed Abraham above all men in his generation.

This is one of the keys to a successful life on this earth. Seek first the kingdom of God! Intercede for others! Help other people! Build God's church! Build a house for God and God will build a house for *you*!



# ***Chapter 7***

## ***The Secret of Sacrifice***

God had blessed Abraham with a child. After this, Abraham faced the ultimate test. God asked him to sacrifice his only son. That was a very big request from the Lord. God wanted to see whether Abraham was ready to give up everything for Him.

I believe that God wants to have you as His own. I do not think that it is only Abraham who was tested in this way. I believe that every Christian will have an “Isaac” that God will ask for one day. Will they be prepared to give up their Isaac? You can only give up your “Isaac” if you are fully surrendered to God.

When you begin to walk with God, He will ask you about all the “Isaacs” in your life. He may start with music. Next, He may ask you to give up some friends. Then He may ask you to give more time to Him. Perhaps I should warn you, do not let anything become too precious to you. Anything that becomes too precious will attract the attention of the Lord and He may ask for it. God wants to be the only God in your life. Our God is a jealous God. He hates the very smell of idols.

**Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.**

**1 John 5:21**

### *A Vision of Gold*

Many years ago, when I started out in ministry, the Lord gave me a vision. I was walking on a long and winding path. On this path were heaps of some substance. They looked like heaps of sand. As I kept walking on the path, I got closer to one of the heaps and discovered that it was a heap of gold. I immediately heard the voice of God telling me, “Don’t stop! Keep on walking!”

Then God told me, “This is the road of ministry for you. As you walk on it, you will meet many of such heaps of gold.”

He said to me, “Don’t stop at the gold. The gold is not important.”

He continued, “There are many such heaps further along. Why should you stop at one of them and settle there?”

Since that time, money has in a certain way, lost its importance to me. I only see money as a tool. I see it as something I will meet along the way. It is not something I must search for and pile up.

God gave me that vision to help me to see Him as being more important than anything else is. I realized that just following the Lord in itself would lead to a supply of all my needs. As soon as something becomes too precious to you, it becomes a potential idol. The Lord did not want Abraham to replace the love of God with the love of Isaac.

Dear friend, Abraham was about to become the father of many millions of children. Before God could trust him with such a blessing, He had to make sure that the blessing would never replace his love for God.

**Before God can bless you in a special way, He needs to be sure about you.** Don't hold back anything from the Lord! Give it all to Him and He will make you a great and successful person in this life!



# 7

## **Great Principles**

**Dag Heward-Mills**

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

Parchment House

ISBN 9988-596-12-X

**Copyright © 2002 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# ***Contents***

Introduction .....	1
Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body .....	3
The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked .....	11
The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy .....	22
After You are Born Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow .....	28
After You are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed .....	37
After You are Saved, Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control .....	41
After You are Born Again, Your Mind is Still Open to All Kinds of Thoughts; You Must Learn to Think On the Right Things .....	48

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to the Association of  
Ordained Ministers and their wives:  
Rev. Ishmael and Olivia Sam, Rev Jacob and  
Kezia Godwyll, Rev Hamish and Annie Oddoye  
— you are the original team!





## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*





For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to:

Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa

*Website:*

[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)

*E-mail:*

[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)

# *Chapter One*

## *Introduction*

There are many people who do not understand the concept of salvation in Christ. They do not understand what exactly has happened to them in Christ.

A lack of understanding often leads to confusion and sometimes backsliding. I wrote this book to bring understanding to your life. I have broken the process of salvation into seven “easy to understand” principles. These principles are key to your understanding of what christianity is about.

## THE PRINCIPLES

- \* *Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body*
- \* *The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked*
- \* *The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy*
- \* *After You are Born Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow*
- \* *After You are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed*
- \* *After You are Saved, Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control*
- \* *After You are Born Again, Your Mind is Still Open to All Kinds of Thoughts; You Must Learn to Think on the Right Things*

After you understand these principles, you will know why there is no religion that offers what Christianity offers you. Christianity offers a *change* and a *recreation* of the wicked heart of man. Christianity is not a new set of rules. You do not get to heaven by obeying the “Do’s” and “Don’ts” of human beings. Christ will change your heart and give you power to control your body and renew your mind.

As you study these principles, I pray God gives you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him.

## *Chapter Two*

### *Man is a Spirit, Has a Soul and Lives in a Body*

That fact that a human being is actually a spirit living inside a physical body is one of the lesser known truths. When Paul wrote to the Thessalonians, he wrote that God should affect them in all three areas: spirit, soul and body.

**And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole SPIRIT and SOUL and BODY be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23**

A human being is not just a piece of meat. When Princess Diana died, many people in this world reflected on the reality of spiritual issues. One day, I had a chat with a man in the lobby of a hotel. He asked me what I do and I told him that I was a pastor. “Oh, I see,” he said.

“Do you believe in God?” I asked him.

“Actually, I had just been thinking about this.”

He continued, “When Princess Diana died, I wondered whether I was just a piece of meat.”

I told him, “You are not just a piece of meat. There is more to you than a piece of meat.”

When people speak in a very proud and arrogant fashion it is because they are not aware how real eternal things are. I will never forget my first day as a medical student in the dissection laboratory of the University of Ghana Medical School. It was about 2 o'clock in the afternoon when we were ushered into a large air-conditioned room containing twelve white marble tables. On each of these tables was a dead human being lying stark naked.

The dead bodies were those of ten men and two women. My friends and I gathered around one of the tables. There were stools around each table and I sat down staring at the dead body that lay before me. On the chest of this human being was a plaster with a name inscribed. The name of our cadaver was Cornelius. I wondered to myself, “Who was Cornelius during his lifetime? What did he do for a living? How did he come to lie before us, ready for eighteen months of intensive dissection?”

As we sat there, our Anatomy lecturer came in. He happened to be a Christian. He said to us, “Go ahead and touch them, don't be afraid!” But in spite of his encouragement, many of us were scared by the whole scene.

This Anatomy lecturer said something that has stayed with me since then. He said, “This scene should make everyone of you seriously consider what life is all about.”

He added, “If life just consists of the physical, then even goats are better. Because when goats die, they can be eaten, but human beings cannot be eaten.”

I thought about that statement and I realized that life must consist of more than what we see physically. Man is a spirit. The Bible says that God is the Father of spirits.

**...shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the FATHER OF SPIRITS, and live?**

**Hebrews 12:9**

## **Man is a Spirit**

If God is the Father of spirits, then we His children are spirits. That means that our bodies are just containers of the spirit. The Bible also describes the body as a house.

**For we know that if our EARTHLY HOUSE of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.**

**2 Corinthians 5:1**

When Lazarus of Luke 16 died, the Bible teaches us that he was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom.

**And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom...**

**Luke 16:22**

Nothing was said about Lazarus' funeral. He was a poor man. Probably, no one even noticed that he had died. His body was probably thrown into a mass grave.

I once passed by an unmarked grave. I saw three men

throwing dead bodies from the back of a pick-up truck into a mass grave. I went up to the car and asked, “What are you doing?” They were hospital officials who had been sent to bury unclaimed bodies. I immediately remembered Lazarus and said to myself, “These are modern day Lazaruses”.

But that is not the end of the story. After the body of Lazarus died, his spirit lived on!

Lazarus himself— the *real* man, was carried into Abraham’s bosom. Remember also the testimony of the rich man. He had everything in life. He had better health care so he lived longer than Lazarus. Notice that the beggar died before the rich man did. However, it came to pass that he also died. He probably had a grand funeral.

Years ago, I attended a funeral of someone whose funeral was very grand indeed. Dignitaries traveled from all over the country to attend the funeral. Special invitation cards were issued for the funeral. The corpse had several changes of clothing during the night. The most amazing part of the funeral was that a new road was actually constructed in the town to enable everybody to attend the funeral in comfort. I don’t know if you are aware of the cost of constructing a road— it is very expensive!

No expenses were spared for the funeral of this great rich man. This funeral also reminded me of the rich man in Luke 16. But the story does not end there. The Bible says in hell, he lifted up his eyes. The man still had eyes even though he was in hell. He cried to Father Abraham that he should allow Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water to cool his tongue.

**And in hell he lift up his EYES, being in torments, and SEETH Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he CRIED [mouth/voice] and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his FINGER in water and cool my TONGUE; for I am tormented in this flame. Luke 16:23,24**

Notice that different parts of the body have been mentioned. The picture of a man is being painted in this scripture. This is interesting because the Bible describes the spirit of a man as the hidden man, the inward man or the inner man. The body is actually the outward man, and the spirit is the inner man. Notice the terms “inner man”, “inward man”, or “hidden man” in the scriptures.

**For I delight in the law of God after the INWARD MAN:**

**Romans 7:22**

**... strengthened with might by his Spirit in the INNER MAN... Ephesians 3:16**

**But let it be the HIDDEN MAN of the heart...**

**1 Peter 3:4**

Dear friend, the Lazarus who was in Abraham's bosom was the real Lazarus. That was the soul and spirit of Lazarus. The rich man who was languishing in hell was not the rich man who had been buried at that lavish funeral. It was the soul and the spirit of the rich man that was experiencing the fires of hell. You can verify for yourself, whether the body



stays in the grave or not! The mortal remains of human beings remain on earth long after the spirit has departed to eternal life or damnation.

I know that many Christians are not aware of this great reality that they are spirit, soul and body. Many Christians wake up in the morning and spend a long time bathing, brushing their teeth and getting ready. Many ladies spend over one hour getting ready to go out. After that they may have a good breakfast or lunch. Then these born-again Christians walk out of the door without even saying a prayer. They do this because they are not aware that they are more than a body. It is because they are not conscious that they are spirits living in a body that they spend all their time on the body only.

When a person becomes aware of his spirit and soul, he spends time building up and developing the spirit.

Many governments are not aware that a human being is made up of more than just a body and mind. They stress on education and physical fitness but they leave out the *real person*. Man is a spiritual being first of all! The body is just a mortal container of the human spirit.

It is time for Christians to be aware of the spirit that dwells in them. It is time for us to develop the human spirit. You can develop your human spirit by praying.

**He that speaketh in an unknown tongue EDIFIETH [builds up, charges] HIMSELF; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church.**

**1 Corinthians 14:4**

This scripture speaks about buiding up yourself spiritually. The Bible says that when you speak in tongues you build up, charge and edify yourself spiritually. It is good to do bodily exercises. We are not against that! But what about spiritual exercises? Be conscious of your spirit within. You are a spirit, you have a soul and you live in a body.

## **The Soul of Man**

But what is a soul? The Bible makes it clear that the soul is different from the spirit.

**For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of SOUL and SPIRIT...**

### **Hebrews 4:12**

There is a dividing asunder (demarcation) between the spirit and the soul of a man. So what exactly is the soul of a man? There are no clear definitions of the soul in the Bible. What we have are descriptions of soulish activities. These help us to define what the soul of man is.

There are so many words in the Bible that are used to describe the activities of the soul. A soul can be said to be rejoicing (Psalm 31:7). The soul can magnify and bless the Lord (Psalm 103:2). The soul can be downcast (Psalm 42:5). The soul can be grieved (Judges 10:16). The soul can be discouraged (Numbers 21:4). The soul can be joyful (Psalm

35:9). These are just a few of the emotions that the soul expresses. We can therefore conclude that the soul is a part of man that experiences thoughts and emotions.

You will realize that the soul of the rich man was alive in hell. The rich man had thoughts, feelings and emotions even though he was dead and in hell. That is why he could remember Lazarus. The rich man thought things were still the same as when he was alive on earth. That is why he wanted to send Lazarus like a messenger, to proceed all the way from heaven to hell to serve him some water. Apparently the soul of the man had gone into hell, even though his body was still buried on earth.

The rich man remembered his five brothers and pleaded with Father Abraham to prevent them from coming to join him in hell. He pitied anyone who would ever come to hell. The soul of the rich man had perished in the lake of fire and he could remember, think and feel as though he was on earth.

What did Jesus say about the soul? He said, “What shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his soul?” It is the soul that goes to hell. Your spirit and your soul will suffer in hell if you are not born again!

**For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and LOSE HIS OWN SOUL?**

**Mark 8:36**

Never forget this reality. You are a spirit (the inner man). You have a soul (feelings, thoughts and emotions). You live in a body (the house of flesh). This is the first great principle I am sharing with you. When you know who and what you are, you will live your life in the right way and with the right attitude.

## *Chapter Three*

# *The Spirit of an Unsaved Man is Dead and Desperately Wicked*

When a person is not born-again he has what I call an unsaved spirit. There are many different ways the Bible describes a non-Christian. The Bible calls him an unbeliever, a sinner and an unregenerate person. It is important for you to be aware of the condition of the human spirit.

**The heart [unsaved spirit] is DECEITFUL above all things, and DESPERATELY WICKED: who can know it?**

**Jeremiah 17:9**

There are some people who distinguish between unbelievers. They say, “This is a good unbeliever and this is a bad one.” It is true that there are differences between people. But the Word of God makes it abundantly clear that anyone who is not a believer has an unregenerate spirit and is capable of many evil things.

The fact that an unsaved man is in a terrible spiritual condition is made abundantly clear in Romans chapter one.

The Bible says that God's wrath is being released against the wickedness of men.

**For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men...**

### **Romans 1:18**

The human race has forsaken the living God and therefore God has given them up to become dead and darkened in their spirits.

**... When they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, AND THEIR FOOLISH HEART WAS DARKENED.**

### **Romans 1:21**

The heart of the unsaved person is darkened and degenerate. God has gone a step further and given up mankind so that they may follow their own desires and perverted feelings.

**Wherefore GOD ALSO GAVE THEM UP TO UNCLEANNES through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.**

### **Romans 1:24**

Not only is the spirit of the unsaved man darkened with death but the mind of the unsaved human race has also degenerated into a depraved condition.

**And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, GOD GAVE THEM OVER TO A REPROBATE MIND to do those things which are not convenient.**

### **Romans 1:28**

As you read this passage further, you will discover that the sinful human race is filled with every conceivable evil. The long list of evil characteristics are there for your reading.

**Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:**

### **Romans 1:29-31**

This principle that an unsaved spirit is desperately wicked is manifest all around us. God has warned against marrying non-Christians because a non-Christian has an unregenerate spirit and is capable of many evil things. One of the things that an unbeliever is filled with is covenant breaking (Romans 1:31).

Most unbelievers do not stick to their word. It is very rare to find an unbeliever who is faithful to his marriage covenant. One man told me, “I have never seen a faithful unbeliever husband before.”

As I grew up in life, I came to discover that covenant breaking was a part and parcel of unbelievers’ lifestyle. They say, “*I will*” and “*I do*”, but *they won’t* and *they don’t*. This is the reason why God says Christians should not marry unbelievers. Many young ladies think that the pastors are trying to punish them by telling them not to marry unbelievers. **God is trying to prevent your heart from being broken by a covenant breaker!**

Do not be deceived by the dignified appearance of the unbeliever. The nature of an unsaved person is described in detail for you in Romans 1:29-31. Believe the Bible more than you believe your eyes. The Bible is the Word of God and is profitable for our instruction. The wicked nature of an unbeliever will manifest sooner or later. Shakespeare wrote in *MacBeth*, “There is no art to find the mind’s construction in the face.”

No one teaches a child to be wicked. Wickedness comes naturally to many little children. Why do children lie, cheat and steal without being taught to do so? It is because the unsaved spirit is at work again. Everyone is born into sin. That is why we sin so naturally and effortlessly even as children. Our spirits are born in sin and wickedness.

**Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**

**Psalms 53:3**

**Who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?**

**Proverbs 20:9**

**All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way...**

**Isaiah 53:6**

**But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags...**

**Isaiah 64:6**

When I was in secondary school, I couldn't understand the manifestation of wickedness in some of the students. They devised all sorts of unbelievable punishments. When I was in form one, I experienced torture at the hands of senior students. These senior students were not KGB torture specialists. They were just seniors with an unsaved nature.

They could mash chloroquine tablets (a bitter anti-malarial drug) in gari (processed cassava) and give it to people to eat. They had punishments called "tower of liberty" and "monkey dance" which would make all your muscles go into spasms. I was once forced to do a "monkey dance" until I was virtually paralyzed. I couldn't walk for some hours.

Punishments were devised in which you would be sent to collect twenty buckets of manure from a farm two kilometers away. After doing this twenty times, you would have walked eighty kilometers with a heavy load.

Where did all these ideas come from? They originated from the depraved and wicked heart of the unsaved man.

**For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God...**

**Romans 3:23**

I ask myself, "If such people were to come into political power what would they do to their enemies?"

All over the world, the depraved and perverted nature of the human race is manifest. When I hear of the atrocities committed during wars I wonder, "What is happening to the human race?" Wickedness abounds in the heart of man because the heart of the unsaved man is dead and



desperately wicked. This is not something that affects just White people or Black people— it is the nature of all mankind.

**The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?**

**Jeremiah 17:9**

During the Liberian Civil War, we heard of people being fed to the lions. One Liberian refugee told me how the rebel soldiers would throw children into a well. When the well was full of children, they would pour kerosene on top of the screaming children and light a fire. The soldiers would burn a whole well of little children. These are real things that actually happened!

Why are human beings so wicked and evil at heart? Why is it that when the opportunity presents itself, we see incredible acts of savagery?

**The good man is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men...**

**Micah 7:2**

A Lebanese man described something that he experienced during the war in Lebanon. He said, “One group would capture some prisoners that belonged to another faction. Then they would amputate the legs and arms of the captives and put the trunk (head, chest and abdomen, without legs and arms) of the people in a car and dispatch them to their homes.” He told me how a friend’s brother’s arms and legs were amputated and how terrible an experience it was. He continued, “The limbless man

was in such a pitiful condition that my friend had to shoot his own brother to end the torture.”

These acts of barbarism are manifestations of a depraved and reprobate human race. Why is the world filled with homosexuals? Why do millions of people commit fornication and adultery on a daily basis? Why does stealing, killing and injustice abound everywhere? The world has got over five billion greedy, corrupt, degenerate and selfish people.

God has given up the human race to its perverted way of life. It is this unsaved and degenerate people that Jesus came to the earth to save.

**But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.**

#### **Romans 5:8**

This is why Jesus said a man has to be born-again because the first time round, we were born in sin and we were conceived in evil.

**Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.**

#### **Psalms 51:5**

Why do you have to do your O’level exams again? Because the first time round, you didn’t do well.

Another term for born-again is regeneration. When you are born-again, your essential nature is changed. That is why the Bible says when a man is in Christ, he is a new creature. God has to make a new creation out of the old corrupt man.

When a man dies, there is no way you can keep him at home. No matter how much you love your brother, when the condition called *death* lays its icy hands on him you have to part company. The dead person must go to the mortuary and then to the grave. Husbands and wives who love each other have to part when death comes to lay hold on one of them. Why is this? The body of your loved one is dead. It begins to decay and degenerate. There is therefore no way by which you can stay together.

Do you remember what God told Adam and Eve? He said, “in the day that you eat this fruit you will die.” When Adam and Eve sinned, they died. The condition of spiritual death entered their spirits and there was no way God could fellowship with them anymore. He had to drag them out of the garden and separate them from Himself.

The whole human race is separated from God because of sin. Salvation breaks the wall that separates mankind from God.

**...and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us... that he might reconcile both unto God...**

**Ephesians 2:14,16**

Before a man is born-again, he is estranged from God. His nature is essentially evil. **He may look good on the outside, but essentially, he has a corrupt and wicked nature.**

**The good man is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men...**

**Micah 7:2**

That is why democracy and the rule of law are important. When one man with such a nature has unlimited power, he does many evil things.

In every nation where there is a military dictator, inconceivable atrocities take place. People are arrested and disappear into “thin air”, whilst hard-earned properties are arbitrarily confiscated. Stories of torture, brutality and murder abound. Viciousness in secret and in the open, has always been the order of the day with tyrannical rulers.

**A tyrant is simply an unsaved man who has unlimited power.** That is why governments are supposed to have three different *independent* arms: the executive, the legislature and the judiciary. There is supposed to be a separation of powers. This is to prevent one group of “unsaved men” from having too much power over other human beings.

The law is supposed to protect the average citizen from the political powers that be. However, it is unfortunate that in many cases the executive controls the legislature *and* the judiciary, thereby giving absolute power to a few people. As Lord Acton (1834-1902) said in a letter to Bishop Mandell Creighton, “*Power tends to corrupt and absolute power corrupts absolutely.*” When Judges are afraid for their lives and their jobs, they often cannot make unbiased decisions.

## **Christianity and other Religions**

The difference between Christianity and every other religion is simple. Christianity claims to change the

essential nature of a man. Jesus makes you a new creation. You become a brand new creature with a brand new heart. In the Old Testament, the prophets predicted that the day would come when God would take out the stony heart and replace it with a heart of flesh.

**A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an HEART OF FLESH.**

**Ezekiel 36:26**

When a man is in Christ, he is a new person. He is regenerated. He is born again. When we speak of being born-again, we do not mean going into your mother's womb again. It is your spirit, the inner nature, that is born again. There is a rebirth of the human spirit.

**...that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

**John 3:6**

## **Outward Changes are not the Answer**

Obedying a set of rules does not change your heart. Coming to Christ and being born-again is what affords every man the opportunity to have a new heart.

If you take a pig and wash it, bathe it and dress it up in a wedding suit, all you have is a dressed up pig. This same pig will return to the filth which it is used to because that is its essential nature.

**I believe with all my heart that it is only a change in the unsaved nature of a man that can bring about a**

**change in this world.** New Year's resolutions and obeying rules do not change anything because the spirit of the unsaved man is dead and desperately wicked. No one toys with a dead thing. Dead things must be separated from living things. The only hope for a dead and wicked human spirit is the miracle of rebirth in Jesus Christ.

## *Chapter Four*

### *The Spirit of a Saved Man is Righteous and Truly Holy*

When a man is born-again, the spirit within is changed. We have learned in the previous chapter that the unsaved spirit is desperately wicked and corrupt. What about the new creation? What about a man who has experienced the miracle of being born again? The new creation is righteous and truly holy. In other words, a man who is saved has undergone a radical transformation of the heart. His spirit is now a new creation in Christ. He is not a renovated and repainted version of an old thing. He is brand new. He is indeed newly created in God.

**Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold all things are become new.**

**2 Corinthians 5:17**

So what happens next? What are we supposed to do now that we are born or created again?

**And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in RIGHTEOUSNESS AND TRUE HOLINESS.**

### **Ephesians 4:24**

This scripture makes us know that we are actually righteous when we are born-again. What God is telling us is that we must put on (act like) the new spirit which is created in righteousness and true holiness. Many times we come to God and say things that are not true. In an attempt to sound humble, we tell the Lord that we are sinners and we are not worthy to approach His throne. But that is not the case anymore. You are not a sinner anymore! You *were* a sinner. You are not unworthy anymore. You *were* unworthy some time ago. But now that you are born again, you are the righteousness of God. You are God's workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto good works— Ephesians 2:10.

Please do not insult God's new creation. Do not think you can impress God with self-demeaning prayers.

It is time for you to acknowledge what God has done to your heart. The Bible says we are the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus.

**For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.**

### **2 Corinthians 5:21**

If we are the righteousness of God, that means that we cannot be more righteous than we are today. The righteousness of God is the highest form of purity and



“sinlessness”. God is describing the status of your new spirit.

Somebody once said, “I don’t feel any different now that I’m born-again!” This is not about feelings but about realities that have taken place. Can you feel your liver? Or your small intestines? Obviously not! But they exist within you!

If surgery was performed and your appendix was taken out, the doctors would inform you that they had removed a part of your intestine. Although you cannot feel that a part of your large intestines has been removed, you are supposed to accept the fact of what took place in your abdomen during the surgery. After the surgery, you are supposed to listen to the doctors’ advice on how to live after such an operation. Sometimes the doctors will tell you not to eat certain types of food anymore, because that part of the intestines which digests such food has been taken out. You are told how to live after the surgery. In the same way, God tells you how to live after being born again or recreated. Being born-again is a spiritual operation in which God recreates your spirit. He takes out the old hardened and depraved heart and puts in a new righteous spirit. You don’t feel it, but it is real. You are supposed to be aware of what has taken place and acknowledge it.

**That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.**

**Philemon :6**

The Bible teaches us to acknowledge the good things that are in us because we are Christians. We are not

supposed to go around saying negative things about ourselves. If you say, “I am a bad person,” you are hurting yourself. If you say, “I’m stupid!” or “I am a sinner” you are saying something that is contrary to the Word of God. It’s time to acknowledge good things about yourself.

**...by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.**

### **Philemon 6**

Acknowledging good things will make your faith come alive. Say to yourself, “I am the righteousness of God”, “I’m a new person!”, “I can make it!”, “I am holy”. These confessions will take you out of sin into a life of practical holiness. There is always something on the inside that must work on the outside. Righteousness on the inside is working on the outside.

**Any born-again Christian who lives in sin is living contrary to his new nature.** If you continue in sin, it is by your own choice because the power of sin is broken and God has given you a new nature. It is no longer natural to do evil, it is against your very nature as a new creation.

Before you get born-again, there are evil things you do without even noticing. After you’re saved, something within tells you, “This is wrong! Don’t do it!” That is the new man crying from within. The Bible says, “Put on the new man.” Act like a new person because you are new.

I became a medical doctor on the 10<sup>th</sup> of March 1989. On the 11<sup>th</sup> of March I didn’t feel any different, in fact, I still felt like a student. I had to tell myself, “Hey, you are now a doctor. Act like one! Stop acting like a student and act like Act like it and walk in the newness of life.” who you really are!” This is what God is saying to His “new creation” children, “You are new, righteous and truly holy.

**Lie not one to another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed...**

**Colossians 3:9,10**

Remember this: righteousness is not a feeling. You do not work to gain righteousness. It is impossible to attain God's standards by your own efforts.

**... all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags...**

**Isaiah 64:6**

Today, if you are born-again, you have been instantaneously transformed into a righteous, new man. You cannot be more righteous than you are after you are born again (we are talking of the righteousness of God Himself).

You can only increase your faith in your inherited righteousness. You can only practice more and more of your true nature. When you are conscious of your righteousness in Christ, you will become as bold as a lion.

**The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the  
RIGHTEOUS ARE BOLD AS A LION.**

**Proverbs 28:1**

Through righteousness, you will rule and dominate in this life. I see you dominating the enemy through righteousness! I see you overcoming your adversaries through the gift of righteousness in Christ Jesus! Your right standing with God is truly a gift from your Heavenly Father. It is something you can never earn through human effort.

Stand up now and become a world overcomer! You are no longer under condemnation!

**...much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the GIFT OF RIGHTEOUSNESS SHALL REIGN in life...**

**Romans 5:17**

## *Chapter Five*

# *After You are Born-Again, Your Spirit is a New Born Baby and It Must Grow*

When you get saved, something great has happened, spiritually speaking. There is no doubt about this. However, we must understand exactly what has happened. A spiritual baby has been birthed into the world. The Bible calls new converts spiritual babies. They are not born as spiritual giants or spiritual adults! They are just babies in spirit! When somebody is born into this world, he starts life as a baby. It is important that he matures into an adult.

**As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, THAT YE MAY GROW thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

There are times when people have the wrong impression about what Christianity offers. The evangelist preaches and says, “Tonight is your night! Your life will never be the same again after today.” He goes on, “After tonight, every yoke shall be broken in your life.” He declares, “All

you who are heavy laden must come to Jesus and He will give you rest!” This gives a feeling of an instantaneous breakthrough.

But Christianity is not an instantaneous cure to all the ills of man! Being born-again is just the beginning of a long process. Being born-again is like being born into this world. You must go through all the stages of growth and development. Without growth, the effect of Christ on your life is often not seen. There is very little difference between an unbeliever and a baby “born again” Christian who has not bothered to grow. That is why we ask all converts to go to church and receive the Word so they can grow in the faith. If Jesus had not grown out of the baby stage to an adult man of 30 years, we would not have been saved by Him! Growth is important to bring out the true nature of the body.

You must go through three important stages of development. Every Christian goes through these three stages whether he knows it or not! These are: the baby stage, the childhood stage and then the mature adult.

## **THE SPIRITUAL BABY**

**As NEWBORN BABES, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

Let’s talk about the baby stage. When a Christian is at the baby stage of his development, he has all the characteristics of a natural baby. All babies cry a lot. If you want to know if there is a baby in the house, just stand

outside the gate and sooner or later you will hear some cries.

**A spiritual baby is easily offended.** Anyone who is easily offended is an immature spiritual baby. Little things offend him and he is always upset about one thing or the other. All churches have a lot of babies who are offended when the pastor does not say “hello” or visit them. Life is full of offenses. Those who offend you are often those close to you. Ask yourself: am I easily offended? Do I always have something to complain about? Perhaps you are a spiritual baby!

**Baby Christians, just like natural babies, are unable to help or control themselves.** A baby defecates anytime, anywhere and in front of anyone. There are no controls whatsoever. A spiritual baby is unable to control his fleshly appetites. He continues to live in sin. He lives according to the dictates of his flesh and does whatever he feels like doing. As you mature, you still have certain feelings but you don’t yield to them unless it is appropriate. If you are living in immorality and have no control over your flesh, then you are probably a spiritual baby. A spiritual baby cannot help himself. He needs someone to counsel him and pray for him. Do *you* always need someone to pray for you? Can you not pray for yourself? Can you not read the Bible and seek for understanding yourself? If you cannot, then perhaps you are a baby in Christ!

## THE CHILDHOOD STAGE

**That we be henceforth NO MORE CHILDREN,  
TOSSED TO AND FRO, and carried about...**

**Ephesians 4:14**

There are some important childhood characteristics you must know about. Ask yourself: Do I behave like this? Am I a spiritual child or am I a mature Christian? **A child is unsteady and unstable.** It is difficult to hold the attention of a child for more than a few minutes. The attention span of a child is very short. Because of this, they are unstable and unreliable. Any Christian who is carried about by every new “a la mode” pastor is a child. If you move around from church to church every few months, you are immature.

**The pastor in each church cannot keep the attention of that childlike Christian for more than a few months or years.** A man who constantly changes his mind about who he wants to marry is a child at heart. He is unsteady, tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine and prophecy. Any Christian who can be made to leave his church because of a prophecy delivered to him by the new prophet is simply a child.

There are many childlike Christians in the Church today. Nothing satisfies them for more than a few minutes. Initially they are excited by the good word. After this, they feel they need special prayers and anointing. After that, they are convinced that a holy bath is what will solve their problems. Nothing seems to satisfy them and they are always sniffing for something new. They come into the church full of praises for the church and its pastor.



After a few months, they have changed their mind about what they said initially.

**Another sign of a childlike Christian is that he engages in fruitless playful activity. He does not contribute to the home in any way.** My Children contribute nothing to the upkeep of the home. They eat food everyday without knowing where the food comes from. In fact, my children have never asked where the food on the table comes from. They are just happy to enjoy the provision!

A Christian who is in the childhood stage does not contribute to the growth of the church. He witnesses to no one and he invites no one. He does not support financially and does not pay his First and Best Fruits (tithes). Ask yourself this question, “How much money does your child contribute to the upkeep of your home?” Nothing! Is he a part of your home? Certainly! He just plays and makes the house dirty, but contributes nothing. If you are part of a church but contribute nothing to make the church grow and prosper, you are a playful child who is enjoying good sermons free of charge. You are certainly a part of the church but you contribute nothing! You win no souls! You invite no one to church! You only come to church when you feel like it. Indeed you are a spiritual child!

## **SPIRITUAL ADULTHOOD**

**But strong meat belongeth to them that are of FULL AGE...**

**Hebrews 5:14**

When you reach the stage of maturity, you begin to love the meat of the Word. Bible study and the teaching of the Word are what enchant your spirit. Because the church is comprised of many babies and children, you will discover that a large number of Christians are not interested in the teaching of the Word. They want something dramatic and spectacular. Crowds of people gather when there is a sensational minister in the house.

A mature person understands the deep things of the Word of God. A mature person knows that he cannot live on signs, wonders and miracles. He knows that it is the Word that matters.

Another important feature of a mature person is that he is skilful in the Word of God.

**...everyone that useth milk is UNSKILFUL IN THE WORD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS: for he is a babe.**

**Hebrews 5:13**

To be skilful in the Word means that you are able to share the Word of God effectively with others. When you become skilful in the Word, you begin to teach and preach! Do not make a mistake, every Christian is supposed to develop until he is able to preach and teach. It is not only pastors who are supposed to preach the Word of God. Preaching and teaching is characteristic of the mature stage of Christian development.

**For when THE TIME YE OUGHT TO BE TEACHERS ye have need that one teach you...**

**Hebrews 5:12**

There is a time when every Christian must be a teacher of God's Word. Let this be your goal from today. Decide to be someone who is involved in teaching and preaching the Word of God. Keep on growing spiritually until you are able to preach and teach the Word of God. Move on from there to the higher realms of ministry that God has for You!

## HOW TO DEVELOP YOUR SPIRIT

“Developing your spirit” is another way to describe growing in spirit.

The mind is developed in schools and colleges. Thousands of dollars are spent to develop the minds of the human race. That explains why we have taken such strides in science and medicine. A lot of money and time is also used to develop the body. There are keep fit clubs and gyms everywhere. The body is being developed into grotesque muscular giants. **But dear friend, you are more than a body. You are more than a mind!** You are a spirit living in a body and you have a mind. You must also develop your spirit. The question is, “How do you develop your spirit into maturity?”

The first key to developing the human spirit is the Word.

**...desire the sincere milk of THE WORD, THAT YE MAY GROW thereby:**

**1 Peter 2:2**

Allow the Word of God to enter your spirit through your Quiet Time, Bible study and Bible reading. Every Christian must have a Quiet Time everyday. I have a Quiet Time

with the Lord everyday. I benefit greatly from spending time with the Lord every morning. Many of the revelations that the Lord has given me came to me during my Quiet Time.

Moses was a man who had a Quiet Time with the Lord. Moses went up to the mountain early in the morning to meet with the Lord. He took two tables of stone to write down the revelations that God would give him. You need to have a Moses type of Quiet Time. Spend time early in the morning alone with the Lord.

**...Hew thee two tables of stone... And be ready in the morning, and come up in the morning... and present thyself there... And no man shall come up with thee...**

### **Exodus 34:1-3**

A Quiet Time of Bible study and prayer is the most consistent way to feed your spirit. Your spirit does not grow unless it is fed on the Word of God.

Another good way of taking in the Word is by listening to tapes. The second best way by which I have fed my spirit over the years is through listening to preaching tapes.

**So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.**

### **Romans 10:17**

I listen to tapes all the time and I am blessed because I do. God has given pastors and teachers to perfect the saints. You can receive the Word through these anointed men of God.

Another way that you can develop your spirit is by praying in tongues. Every Christian must develop the art of spending hours praying in the spirit. The Bible says you build up yourself in the faith when you pray in the Holy Ghost. Praying in the Holy Ghost is the same as praying in tongues.

**But ye, beloved, BUILDING UP YOURSELVES on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost.**

**Jude 20**

Pray in tongues for an hour everyday and see what will happen in your spiritual life over the next three months. I guarantee you a change in your spiritual life if you will do this simple exercise. The Bible teaches us that you are spiritually charged and built up when you speak in tongues.

**He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself...**

**1 Corinthians 14:4**

The Word and prayer will cause you to develop in the spirit and to become a giant for the Lord. Walk in these two keys of spiritual growth and nothing will be held back from you. I see God taking you out of your hiding place! I see Him placing you before kings and prominent men as you develop your spirit!

## *Chapter Six*

### *After You Are Saved, Your Mind is Still the Same; It Must be Renewed*

**And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the RENEWING OF YOUR MIND, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.**

**Romans 12:2**

When you are born-again, your spirit is totally changed. **God gives you a new *heart* and not a new *mind*.** It is therefore the duty of every Christian to renew his mind. If you do not renew your mind, you will be a person with a new spirit and an old mind. There are many Christians who are genuine new creations but still have unrenewed minds.

If you belong to a good church which constantly preaches and teaches the Word of God, your mind will be renewed. There are many people who think that they know all there is to know in the Word of God. No one knows everything!

The unconscious, incompetent person is pitiful because he does not know that he does not know!

Every Christian must decide to be a constant learner of the Word of God. He must never stop learning. You will always discover things that you do not know. Years ago I heard a pastor giving a testimony of his life. He spoke about how he got born-again. Before he was saved, he was a pornographer by profession. That means he was someone who acted in pornographic films and posed for pornographic photographs. Sex was his work and he didn't see anything wrong with it.

He told us one day, "After I got born-again, I continued to live in fornication."

"I slept with one girl after the other and I never thought twice about it. It never occurred to me that there was something wrong with sleeping with someone you're not married to."

He continued, "I thought I was being a loving person to many girls. After all, love is a commandment from God."

One night, he was in bed with one of the girls when suddenly, a huge black figure appeared at the foot of his bed and he woke up in great fright. He was terrified and thought to himself, "Something is not right!"

The next day he decided to read the Bible and discovered where the Word of God says fornication is wrong.

**But fornication, and all uncleanness... let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints...**

**Ephesians 5:3**

Believe it or not, this man was born-again but because of his background, he did not even know that fornication was a sin.

It could be that because of your background you are not even aware that certain things are sin. I know many Christians who are prejudiced or even racist. There are pastors who are racist in their thoughts and decisions. Without even realizing it, we carry on doing wrong things although we are genuinely born-again in our hearts. That is why we need the Word of God to renew our minds.

**...be ye transformed by the RENEWING OF YOUR MIND...**

**Romans 12:2**

It is actually the renewing of our minds that brings about a visible transformation.

When I became a Christian, I thought God wanted us to be poor. Somehow, my background taught me that poverty was more righteous than being prosperous. If you read the Bible, your mind will be renewed and your attitude will change. Transformation comes when the mind is renewed. The real change we look for in Christians comes through a renewal of the mind in the Word of God.

**See your mind as a computer which has to be programmed. Whatever you feed into the mind is what will come out.**

There are many Christians who do not tithe simply because their minds are polluted with wrong ideas. Some people think there is no need to do any such thing. Some think the pastors are just using the money for their



extravagant lifestyles. However, every Christian who has his mind renewed will find himself being transformed in the area of his finances.

Even though you are born-again, your mind is still the same. It *must* be renewed with the Word of God.

## HOW TO RENEW YOUR MIND

You mind will be renewed by receiving the Word. The old thoughts and ideas will be cleared out as you receive the Word. Jesus Himself said,

**Now ye are clean through the WORD which I have spoken unto you.**

**John 15:3**

Your mind is also renewed by joining the right church and learning the right things. As you receive the Word through your pastor, you will gradually experience a change in your mind.

**That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the WORD...**

**Ephesians 5:26**

That is why it is so important that you choose the right church to attend.

It is true that you are a new creation, but you also need a renewed mind. It is the renewed mind that will make you live out the new life. When people see the new life, they will know that something real has happened to you!

## *Chapter Seven*

### *After You Are Saved Your Body is Still the Same; You Must Keep It Under Control*

**But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection...**

**1 Corinthians 9:27**

When you get saved, you must know that your body is the same old body. When you come forward to the altar and give your life to Christ, you do not change physically. If you were tall and skinny before salvation, you will still be tall and skinny after salvation. If you had long hair before you got born-again, you'll still have long hair after salvation. What does this mean? Does it mean that nothing has happened to you? Not at all! Your spirit is recreated in God.

The body is still the same and you must realize this all important fact. Sometimes people give their lives to Christ and they believe that everything is going to be different from then. However, when they get home, they begin to feel the old feelings they felt before salvation.



They experience lust within their bodies. They feel the old feelings of jealousy, hatred and anger. Now because they do not know this truth (that the body is unchanged), the devil begins to tell them, “You are not a real Christian”, “You are not saved”, “You cannot be born-again!”

Satan continues to harass you and says, “If you were really born-again, such a thought or feeling would never occur to you.”

The devil tells you, “None of the Christians sitting in this church has the kind of thoughts you have.”

But that is a lie! We all have thoughts and feelings that we don’t want to have even though we are born again. Everyone who is born-again still has the flesh to contend with. Even Paul was worried about his flesh. He knew that his body was still the same. He knew that his flesh could disgrace him one day so he said, “I keep my flesh under control”.

**...I KEEP UNDER [control] MY BODY and bring it under subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.**

### **1 Corinthians 9:27**

Paul is the one who had personal revelations of Jesus Christ. Paul wrote half of the New Testament. He had so many visions and revelations of Jesus Christ. Very few people have had such spiritual experiences. Paul was one of the greatest apostles with signs and wonders following him. He raised the dead and the bites of snakes had no effect on him.

Yet, this great man was worried about his flesh. He felt his flesh could disgrace him at any time. That is why he

kept his flesh under constant control. Notice what he said in the book of Romans. He declared that there was nothing good in his flesh. Even though he was born-again, his flesh (body) was still the same.

**For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing...**

### **Romans 7:18**

No matter who you are, you still have a body to keep under control. Have you ever seen a spirit smoking or drinking alcohol? Certainly not! Spirits don't smoke. It is the flesh that drinks and smokes. Have you ever seen a spirit committing fornication? Surely not! It is the flesh that does all these evil things! That is why the Bible teaches us to present our bodies as a living sacrifice.

The works of the flesh are listed in Galatians chapter five.

**Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have...**

### **Galatians 5:19-21**

These works are not the works of Satan or evil spirits. They are the works of the flesh. Look at the list again. Adultery, fornication, witchcraft, hatred, wrath, murder, drunkenness, envyings and the list goes on. Mind you, these are not the works of unbeliever's flesh. These are the works of the flesh. Do you have flesh? Of course you do!

You have a body and so do I. That means that both you and I are capable of this list of horrible deeds. The flesh is a real burden that we are saddled with through this life.

That is why we have no confidence in the flesh.

**... and have no confidence in the flesh.**

### **Philippians 3:3**

That is why we must be merciful to Christians who fall into sin, because when we consider our own selves, we realize that we experience similar temptations and feelings in our flesh. You are capable of everything you see listed in Galatians 5:19-21.

**Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.**

### **Galatians 6:1**

One day when Jesus comes, we shall be changed. Our bodies shall be transformed into immortal and incorruptible bodies. We will no longer be capable of sin.

**...We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed... for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption and, this mortal must put on immortality.**

### **1 Corinthians 15:51-53**

One day I went to visit a friend of mine. He was a hardened sinner who was not interested in being born-again. I sat with him in his bedroom and we chatted for many hours. At a point, the Holy Spirit made a way for me to witness to him about Christ. That was his day of salvation. For the first time, he listened to me as I preached to him. When I finished, he asked me, “What must I do?”

I said, “Let us pray and I will lead you to the Lord.”

After I led him in the sinner’s prayer, he looked at me and said, “Dag, thank you very much. I feel I am a changed person.”

Then I thought, “If I have been able to lead my friend to the Lord, why don’t I lead him to receive the baptism of the Holy Spirit? I decided to do just that. I laid hands on him and to my surprise he received the Holy Spirit and began to speak in tongues fluently.

Suddenly something else happened. When I touched him, he was “slain in the Spirit” and fell on his bed. He continued to bubble in tongues for some time. After about an hour, I decided to leave and come back to see him later.

About five hours later, I returned to his house to visit him. When I got to the gate his sister told me that she didn’t think he was home, but I went to his apartment anyway. When I got there, something told me to pause at the door before going in. I stood at the door and what did I hear? My new convert was fornicating in the bedroom with his girlfriend. Oh dear! So soon after a wonderful salvation experience and the Holy Ghost baptism! I was aghast!

Less than five hours ago this man had received Christ and was gloriously filled with the Holy Spirit. I personally ministered to him and heard him speak in tongues, and saw him “slain in the Spirit”. How could he return so quickly into fornication? I asked myself, “Was this man

really born-again?” Does being born-again have any effect on a person? The answer is: yes, it does!

If anyone was ever born-again and filled with the Holy Spirit, this friend of mine was. But the reality was that his body was still the same and was capable of committing all the sins of the flesh.

As a baby Christian, my new convert had yielded his flesh to all the old sins. His flesh had once more engaged itself in sin, because it had not been affected by the “Born again” experience. His flesh was still the same!

**Never forget this! Even though you are born-again, your flesh is still the same, you must keep it under control otherwise it will lead you into sin.**

## **CONTROL YOUR FLESH**

There are some practical ways by which you can keep your body under control. Firstly, be aware of the potential evil that is in your flesh. Spend time fasting on a regular weekly basis. Do not give opportunities to your flesh.

**...only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh...**

**Galatians 5:13**

The reason why boarding schools have separate houses for boys and girls is because the school authorities do not want to give occasion and opportunity to the flesh. If you expose yourself to certain things, you will fall. If I expose myself to certain things, I will fall. What we need is wisdom to help us stay far away from dangerous enticements of the flesh.



Secondly, The Bible did not say we should fight youthful lusts. God said very clearly, “Flee youthful lusts”. If God knew we could have won the fight for fleshly control, he would have told us to fight. When God says run, then you must run! Don’t stand and fight. Flee for your life! Your body is still the same. Don’t trust yourself to your flesh; there is no good thing in your body.

Give no place to the devil and give no opportunity to your flesh!

**Neither give place to the devil.**

**Ephesians 4:27**

who would attend my funeral and I worked out every detail in my mind.

Dear friend, fear is an oppressive spirit that works through the mind. Whether it is worry, fear, or lust, you must learn to cast down wrong imaginations. You must learn to capture your thoughts and make them obedient to the Word of God. You must resist the devil.

**...and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ...**

### **2 Corinthians 10:5**

You must resist the devil in your life. When the Word of God says you must resist the devil, it means that you must resist the thoughts and suggestions that come from the pit of hell. The Bible tells us exactly what to think about. It tells us to think of things that are pure, holy and peaceful.

**Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.**

### **Philippians 4:8**

## **CONTROL YOUR THOUGHTS**

One of the best ways to control your thoughts is to listen to preaching tapes. Christian music and videos are good tools to help in controlling the thoughts. Do not give place

to the devil. You give place to the devil when you allow evil thoughts to settle in your mind. They will oppress and obsess you until you become possessed.

## **A NEW UNDERSTANDING OF SALVATION**

**Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom and with all thy getting, get understanding.**

**Exalt her, and she shall promote thee... a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee.**

### **Proverbs 4:7-9**

Have a new understanding of the concept of salvation through these seven great principles. Read this book over and over again. God will give you a new understanding that will make you grow in grace. In all your getting, get understanding. Wisdom is the principal thing. People who understand what is happening are the people who will experience God's victory. I see you blessed as you understand these seven great principles!





# **The Strange Woman**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7797-5-5

**Copyright © 2002 Parchment House**  
**3rd Edition**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

## **PREFACE**

I first noticed the phrase, ‘Strange Woman’ in the Bible some years ago. I was then a young Christian growing up in the Lord. I often wondered to myself, “what is a Strange Woman?”

We understand a strange woman to be an unusual person. But what is unusual about this person? What unusual things does this person do?

This book is all about that. I believe that God will use this book to deliver the unsuspecting Christian from her deadly traps. I realise that the devil can recognise the precious life from afar. He knows when God’s hand is on you, so he targets you. One of the devil’s most successful agents is this strange woman.

My prayer is that this book will deliver us all from one of the oldest strategies of the devil.



# ***Contents***

Strangeness .....	1
Types of Strangeness .....	4
Signs of the Strange Woman .....	6

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

## **Chapter One**

# **Strangeness**

*And why wilt thou... be ravished with a strange woman?*

*To keep thee from the evil woman... the ...strange woman.*

*That they may keep thee from the strange woman...*

*Prov. 5:20, 6:24, 7:5.*

Although our topic is 'The Strange Woman', it also recognises that a man can be 'strange'. I am only using the female gender because the story in Proverbs 7, depicts a woman who is strange.

**This is a very important topic, because it is necessary for every Christian to go to heaven with the testimony that he or she was never involved in fornication.**

A condition which predisposes to fornication and adultery is 'strangeness'.

**Strange people are those whose behaviour in a certain sense sows the seeds of fornication in others.**

An innocent brother or sister, or even a man of God who has otherwise lived a pure life, can easily fall prey to these *strange* people because they are not only in the world, but they also abound in the church, even the charismatic church.

The Bible calls her "the *strange* woman". Some people call her the prostitute, but I prefer to call her the *strange* woman.

A lot of people have had sex, even though they never planned to do it. Some even hate the other person for making them do it.

There are some men who hate certain women, because when they looked back after the experience, they realised that there had been a master plan to get them!

There are some ladies who lost their virginity when perhaps, they were too young to even know what was happening to them!

Later on after the sex act, they realized that somebody had taken advantage of them and slept with them! There are even some young girls who became pregnant without knowing what happened.

**Some of these people's predicament was caused by those the Bible calls "strange" people.**

As Christians we do not fight against flesh and blood, but the Bible has described these strange people in graphic detail. **God wants us to know who they are, and to recognise this attitude in ourselves if perchance, we have any of this "strange" behaviour.**

Fornication is not an easy sin to deal with. Often those who get involved in fornication have a hard time overcoming it psychologically. **Sometimes they are unable to ever overcome it. This therefore makes it a favourite area of attack by the devil.**

Fornication is not only present in the world, but also in the Charismatic churches. A man of God said, "Out of a church of 500 people there are at least 20 ladies who are ready and willing to immediately go to bed with their pastor if he says so."

Recently, in a Charismatic church in Accra, a visiting preacher made an altar call: he asked for ladies who had come to the church with the intention of enticing and tempting the head pastor to come up stage.

The response was amazing! Many ladies came and were prayed for. All these were strange women, hunting for the precious life of the pastor.

## *Chapter Two*

# *Types of Strangeness*

There are four types of strange women and men.

### 1. THE CONSCIOUS TYPE

This type of strange women are the ones who know exactly what they are doing. They are conscious of what they are and what they are doing. **Their aim is to entice men, and to lead people into sexual affairs.** There are also men like that, who intentionally cause others to commit immoral sins.

## 2. THE UNCONSCIOUS TYPE

This group is not aware of the fact that they behave like strange women, even though they are actually behaving ‘strangely’.

## 3. THE SECULAR TYPE

The people in this group are known all over the world as prostitutes. Prostitution is one of the oldest professions in the world. Prostitutes are usually seen on dark streets and corners trying to entice people.

## 4. THE CHURCH TYPE

They are in the church, known as believers and yet they behave ‘strangely’. Charismatic churches are full of strange women.

The Bible says she hunts for precious lives (Prov. 6:26). There are many precious souls in church, from good Christians to good pastors.

They are the ones these strange women in the church are looking for!

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***Signs of The Strange Woman***

It is important for every Christian to be delivered from the snares and traps of strange people.

In the Bible, particularly the Book of Proverbs, God has given us some of the signs by which we can identify a strange person and avoid her. I want to show you 20 signs of the strange woman.



## 1. SHE MOVES IN A PARTICULAR GROUP

*A young man... passing through the street near her corner...*

*Prov. 7:7,8*

This story in Proverbs tells us that the naive young man went to *her corner*. The strange woman had a corner.

**Strange people have their special corners.** They also have special groups of friends who congregate with them at these special places. Everybody has a friend. There is basically nobody without a friend. I have my friends, who are mostly pastors.

In Ghana we say, “Birds of the same feather flock together”, and “Show me your friend and I will show you your character.” These sayings are not in the Bible, but they are true.

**People flow together in groups.**

**Like-minded with like-minded.**

**Friends with friends.**

The secular strange women have their special corners. The Red Light District is a popular corner for strange people. These are places where you are sure to find them.

My wife told me about a group of strange girls she knew when she was in school. This particular group of girls were all involved with married men, and they frequently met to compare notes. Sometimes one of them would be heard asking, “Have you asked him for the shoes?” Another would

also say, “I have told him to buy me the plane ticket.” They had something in common, therefore they stuck together and influenced each other.

**Strange people always move in special groups.**

## 2. SHE OPERATES AT SPECIAL TIMES

Proverbs 7:9 says she operates **“in the twilight, in the evening, in the black and dark night.”**

**The secular strange women operate in the dark and black night.** The evenings are times when evil can flourish. It is rare to find them at their corners in the afternoon. But in the night they abound.

If you are a young man, you must not be in the company of certain people at certain times. **If you are in a relationship, there are certain times that you should not be with your beloved — (fiancee).** If you are a married man, you are not supposed to be at certain places with certain people at certain times. A married lady should never have a twilight dinner with her boss. Never!

In the church situation, **strange people usually don’t attend evening Bible teaching meetings.** They are more regular at Sunday services, because that is when a lot more people come to church, and they can show off their best clothes. **You will never see such people at prayer and fasting meetings,** especially if it is going to last all night, or several hours.

**They will however be the first to get ready if the church is going to the beach or some place to have a good time.**

Some of these people are bold enough to say they only go to church to trap a Christian man or lady!

### **3. SHE HAS SPECIAL DRESSES**

**...there met him a woman with the attire of an harlot...**

*Prov. 7:10.*

The Bible didn't say she was a harlot, but that, she came with the *dress* of a harlot. If you are a Christian there are certain dresses that you are not supposed to wear. A believer ought to dress decently. **If you are not a prostitute but you often dress like one, then you have one of the characteristics of a strange woman.**

**Strange women often dress in suggestive and revealing ways.** It is not only the dress that speaks, but their pose also says volumes. You can immediately see they are after something. If you dare come to church with such a dress, then there is no doubt that you are strange.

Some of the dresses expose half of their breasts. But a woman's breasts are not meant for public display. **I know of only two reasons why breasts were made:**

1. For breast feeding, and
2. For husbands to enjoy!

**Ladies, always dress decently — do not dress in suggestive or revealing way!**

Make-up helps to enhance the beauty of women, but there is a limit. At a point the make-up becomes too much and other messages are loudly sent across.

**Every Christian should look beautiful, but we should be careful not to cross the line into ‘strangeness’.**

The Bible says temptation shall surely come but **woe to him through whom the temptation comes.**

#### 4. SHE HAS A HISTORY

*...many strong men have been slain by her...*

*Prov. 7:26.*

As Christians, we should not just set eyes on people, fall in love and marry. No! There is more to Christian marriage than love at first sight!

During a pastoral visit to New Jersey, I became acquainted with an elderly African-American woman. In her house she pointed out photographs of her children to me. She said she was blessed with sons who were all preachers. However, she said she had lost one of her sons recently.

She said her son, a pastor in New York had gotten married to this beautiful lady. Before the marriage they had done the AIDS tests, but both were negative. So he went ahead and married her. However, some months into the marriage the lady developed full blown AIDS, with terrible diarrhoea, weight loss and all the usual symptoms.

This old lady told me how she tried to make her son break up the marriage. He refused, and also died a few months after his wife. **Dear friend, this pastor married someone who probably had a bad history**, - a strange woman! And he didn't even know it. He paid for it with his life.

Another Christian brother had a beautiful wedding, but later when he was alone at home with his wife, the Spirit of God revealed horrible things about his wife to him. He suddenly realised that she was not what he thought she was. He was shocked to find out that she had slept with many pastors and mighty men.

I am not saying that you shouldn't marry somebody who has a history per se. But you must know about her past life in order to guard yourself.

**You should remember that a strange person can display that character even in marriage.**

## 5. SHE IS LOUD

*She is loud...*

*Prov. 7:11.*

Some strange women are loud, which makes them easily noticeable. There are various ways of being loud. It could be verbally or in appearance. You notice such people either through their loud dressing or loud laughter and giggling.

**There is a type of dressing that literally shouts, making all eyes turn to look at you.** In the church, there are those you just can't help but notice. They probably want you to notice them anyway. But remember, **“She who strikes you has already been struck!”**

When I was in Achimota School, there were times when we had to walk from the eastern compound to the western compound. On some occasions I had to walk behind a group of girls. I often walked faster and overtook them. But as I walked a few metres ahead of them I would hear them giggling.

I had no idea what they were laughing about. I would often change the way I walked, but the giggling and laughter would only grow louder.

After a few of such experiences, any time I saw these girls on the way, I would make no effort to overtake this loud and strange group.

On the contrary, a woman with a *meek* and *quiet* spirit is considered precious in the sight of God.

## 6. SHE IS STUBBORN

*She is ... stubborn.*

*Prov 7:11.*

**One of the characteristics of the strange woman is stubbornness. She will not obey instructions, and does not take advice.**

The Bible says the wife should submit to her husband. The word submit means to yield, bend, agree, or to obey. A good wife is supposed to yield, but if she is a strange woman, she will be stubborn. **God's order is for the husband to lead, and the woman to follow.**

But in these days of women's liberation and the Beijing Conference, you have all sorts of women rising up to fight every established authority!

Dear women, you are not wiser than God. No matter what you think and know, and no matter the theories you come up with, there can be only one head in a home. Any animal with two heads is abnormal and a freak.

**A strange woman is a dangerous person to marry. She is stubborn in the church, stubborn at home and stubborn at work.** She always has a reason or an excuse for not doing what she ought to do.

Pharaoh was so stubborn that God had to speak to him through flies, frogs, deaths, tragedies and disaster!

You don't need to go through similar experiences. Don't be too hard and don't be too stubborn. These are traits of a strange woman.

## 7. SHE IS NOT HOMELY

*... her feet abide not in her house.*

**Prov. 7:11.**

Strange people do not like staying at home. A woman is supposed to be 'homely', to be able to take care and manage the home.

*... that the younger women marry... guide the house...*

*1 Tim. 5:14.*

This also means the wife must know how to cook and supervise people in the house. There are some Christian sisters who don't know how to cook, because they are always in church, and are never at home. They are always on the loose.

In fact, it's a tragedy to marry a woman who cannot cook! When your stew is set before you, you will not be able to tell the difference between that and soup! This is often the fate of the men who marry strange women. They are condemned to a life of eating in misery everyday.

To me, part of the attraction of going home after a hard days' work is my wife's food.

## 8. SHE WANTS A MAN

*Now is she without, now in the streets, and lieth in wait at every corner.*

*Prov. 7:12.*

When a woman wants a man she is always outside in the streets, lying in wait at every corner for an opportune time to strike. Such women can only be satisfied when they are with one man or another.



In the Proverbs 7 story, the strange woman acts as if she was lying in wait for this particular man.

However, if the naive young man refuses her, she will lie in wait for the next man and tell him the same story — as if she was waiting particularly for him.

## 9. SHE GETS PHYSICAL

*So she caught him and kissed him...*

*Prov. 7:13.*

Strange people like to touch others. They often hug, kiss and press some part of their body against the people they're after. When you are walking with them, they never want to leave you. They always want to hold or hug you.

The strange woman knows that generally, a man can be sexually aroused by sight. She is also aware that a man will find it difficult to resist a woman's touch. **In order to conquer her victim totally she will cause him to yield by touching him.**

Some Christian brothers also have the habit of holding sisters. After shaking their hands, you have no business hanging on to people's hands!

## 10. SHE IS BOLD AND UNLAWFULLY FAMILIAR

*she kissed him... with an impudent face.*

*Prov. 7:13.*

The strange woman is very bold and unlawfully familiar with the man she wants to have an affair with.

Why do you talk to somebody about intimate things, when you are a just an acquaintance?

**Strange people try to get close — in fact too close for comfort.** Unless you are at a certain level of closeness with the person, you don't even have the right to comment about their hair or body. As soon as you become unlawfully familiar with somebody, you have crossed borders.

You are out of your territory. **And this is the speciality of strange people.**

## 11. SHE IS NOT ASHAMED

*Now is she without, now in the streets.*

*Prov. 7:12.*

She comes out in the open, into the street to solicit, and is not shy or ashamed of her behaviour.

I was in Geneva once with one of my associate ministers, and we were talking seriously with a brother in a restaurant. This happened to be near a place where prostitutes lurk, and there was this prostitute who was such a nuisance, we had to usher her out.

Initially, she did not want to go out, so we called the police, and eventually she was driven away.

Later on we were busy talking, when one of the other prostitutes came along in a coat. She stood right in front of the whole restaurant, and opened up her coat to reveal her body.

Believe it or not, she was *stark naked* under her coat! **She had no shame.**

Unknown to us, when the first one went out, she told all the other prostitutes that we had sacked her and so this other strange woman had come to defy us. **Strange women have no shame.**

**If you are a woman, and you don't mind exposing your body, your breasts, your thighs, or any part of your body, then you are *strange*!** You may think you are being fashionable, but in reality, you are just what the Bible calls strange. Unfortunately, there are born again Christians who are not ashamed to expose themselves this way.

## 12. SHE IS FULL OF FLATTERY AND LIES

*With her much fair speech she caused him to yield,  
with the flattering of her lips she forced him.*

*Prov. 7: 21.*

There are many young ladies who would never have fornicated, but for the words of a man. **Words can put pressure on you and force you to act.**

He may have said, “I love you. You are everything to me. Look, I’m going to marry you anyway, so if you love me, show it! I love you that’s why I want to sleep with you. I just want to express my love for you.”

So with these and other such lies, the man talked his way through.

A pastor in a church I used to attend often said that if any man tells you he loves you and he wants to express his love to you, *tell him to buy you chocolates!*

**On the other hand there are women who also flatter men, especially powerful men.** Some are very experienced in praising pastors. She will tell you that you are such an anointed man of God. **With such seemingly harmless words, a strange woman can work her way into an unsuspecting man of God’s heart.**

Faith comes by hearing, so when you continue to hear such words, you will eventually believe and yield.

### 13. SHE APPEALS TO YOU THROUGH FOOD

*I have decked my bed with coverings of tapestry...*

*Prov. 7:16.*

The word ‘bed’ in the Hebrew is *Arsi*, which refers to a dining couch, and not a sleeping bed.

She was saying that she had laid the table. So this strange woman was appealing to the young man through food. **Such strange people will often invite those they target to eat**

**with them.** If you are a young single brother, you may be exposing yourself to such strange people if you just go about eating all over the place.

A pastor, visiting his members must remember that his business with them concerns the salvation of their souls. You are not supposed to go around eating from home to home.

To some extent the saying is true that, “*The way to a man’s heart is through his stomach.*”

Food is good, but it can be used to trap you.

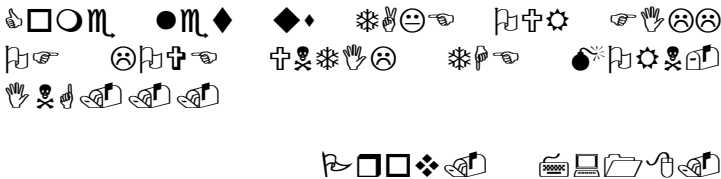
*Eat not the bread of him that hath an evil eye...*

*Prov. 23:6.*

**Sometimes your stomach can contribute to your fall.** As a Christian, a Pastor, and a husband, I do not go out to lunch with just anybody.

Once, I saw a Christian brother who already had a fiancée, sitting with another lady over a candle light dinner. I was very surprised, because he was inviting trouble for himself. I really did wonder about his fiancée. Was she safe?

14. SHE APPEALS TO HIM THROUGH PREPAREDNESS  
FOR SEX



Many wives are not prepared for sex— or do not want it. So it is an exciting thing for a man to meet a woman who wants to have sex with him. **If a woman comes to a man and indicates that *she* wants to have him, it appeals to him greatly.**

Many husbands pray that their wives would come up to them and say, “Honey, I want you now!”. **Some Christian wives could learn a lesson or two from this strange woman!**

## 15. SHE APPEALS BY MEANS OF HER MARRIAGE

*The good man is not at home, he is gone on a long journey...*

*Prov. 7:19.*

There are some men and women who are married and yet the marriage makes no difference to them. **This strange woman said that her husband was not at home, and showed her readiness to sleep with another man in his absence.**

This was a really strange woman.

Friend, the fact that you are married does not protect you from having an affair. Often people ‘loose guard’ because the person trying to be familiar is already married.

**This is one of the avenues the devil uses to ensnare people.**

I know people who are married, and yet in spite of this, they sleep around with any lady they meet.

The fact that you are a Christian does not mean you cannot fornicate or commit adultery. Being born again does not insulate you from falling to strange people. Never make that mistake — greater people, more religious than you and I have fallen!

**Wives and husbands should be particularly conscious of these traps, because as we continue to live in this world, we are constantly exposed to these temptations.**

If a man is satisfied at home, he will not have to go out somewhere else to look for satisfaction. **Lack of satisfaction at home is a major cause of adultery.**

## 16. SHE APPEALS THROUGH RELIGION

*I have peace offerings with me ... I have payed my vows.*

*Prov. 7:14.*

**She said, “I am also a believer.”** She was using every means to convince him that she was also a believer—just like him. There are many strange believers in the churches, even the Charismatic ones. **She said she had paid her tithes.**

This was a very cunning strange woman who knew that her victim was a religious person. **She knew that she could never come near him unless she behaved like a spiritual person.**

So she presented herself as someone who was obedient to God's commands: she had already paid her vows and made her peace with God.

## 17. SHE CAPTIVATES WITH HER BEAUTY AND EYES

*Lust not after her beauty... neither let her take thee with her eyelids.*

*Prov. 6:25.*

She is beautiful, and she knows it. Beauty is a very variable thing, it can be up or down, more or less depending on what you do.

**She enhances her beauty in a striking way.** You must not allow yourself to be taken in by her eyelids. When you make eye contact with somebody, you can speak to the person. It is a form of communication. That is why I look at peoples' faces when I am preaching. I am communicating with them.

**The strange woman with practice over the years knows how to effectively communicate her carnal intentions to a man.**

The Bible warns us not to lust after her. So if you notice that she is beautiful, that should be the end of the story. Don't lust after her beauty!



The dictionary defines lust as **animal desire for sexual indulgence.**

## 18. SHE IS NOT STRAIGHT FORWARD

*... the lips of a strange woman... smoother than oil:  
her ways are moveable...*

*Prov. 5:3,6.*

A strange woman is not straightforward, all her ways are moveable and shaky. Ecclesiastes 7:26 says,

**I find more bitter than death the woman, whose heart is snares and nets...**

There was a certain strange lady I knew, who always sat at the back of the church. I remember coming to church one day to find her sitting all alone at the back, praying in tongues loudly.

**As a pastor if you can't identify the strange women you can easily fall prey to them.**

These are the ones who will always come to the pastor with their numerous problems. They are also easily given to tears. If you are not experienced, you will take out your handkerchief and try to comfort her, **only to find your comforting turning into something else!**

The Bible says her heart is full of ideas and traps. When you are a young man you sometimes don't know when you are walking in the midst of them. Some ladies come to church and in no time at all, a young man proposes to them. Sadly,

many young men are looking for the most beautiful face. A young man can easily fall into these traps, and end up marrying a strange woman.

In the same way, Christian ladies are impressed by the outward appearance of strange men, and accept their proposal, **only to be taken on a strange tour!**

## 20. SHE IS ATTRACTED TO GREAT MEN

*...many strong men have been slain by her.*

*Prov. 7:26.*

Years ago my pastor friend told me to be careful not to be enticed by women who would be attracted to me. I was then an instrumentalist in a musical group we both belonged to.

**When you play instruments, stand on stage, or are a leader, you are likely to be an attraction to strange women.**

Over the years I have come to realize how true his advice was.

Each classification of great people—pastors, singers, businessmen, Heads of States, and so on—have their own kind of strange women who are attracted to them. Therefore, if God is raising you up, you must beware of these strange people.

**It is my prayer that God will deliver you from the snares of strange people!**



# **Strategies for Prayer**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-596-09-X

**Copyright © 2002 Parchment House**  
**1st Printing 2000**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to  
*Pastor Jonathan Botchway*  
*& his dear wife Karen, my sister —*  
It is good to have a family like you!

# ***Contents***

Daniel's Principles of Prayer .....	1
The Timothy Prayer Formula .....	16
The Ephesians Prayer Formula .....	25
The Lord's Prayer Formula .....	36



For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

# **STRATEGIC PRAYER**

## **Discover the Formulae for Hours of Prayer**

### **CHAPTERS**

- 1. Daniel's Principles of Prayer*
- 2. Timothy's Prayer Formula*
- 3. The Ephesians Prayer Formula*
- 4. The Lord's Prayer Formula*

Chapter 1  
***DANIEL'S PRINCIPLES OF  
PRAYER***

*Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.*

***Daniel 6:10***

*You will notice from this scripture that Daniel prayed three times a day. An important phrase used in this verse is “as he did aforetime”. That means that Daniel had been praying these prayers on a regular basis. Daniel was just not praying because he was in trouble.*

*Many times when people become prosperous they stop going for prayer meetings and eventually backslide. Not so with Daniel! He was the Prime Minister of his country, second in authority only to the king. He was a successful man who had risen from slavery to the high office of Prime Minister. He was*

*one of the most respected and feared men in the nation. He was a major politician of the day. He was a civil servant. Yet, he prayed three times a day, everyday.*

*What were the principles that guided Daniel to have such an unusual and consistent prayer time? Here they are, read them and let them become your principles. You too can have the success that Daniel had. I want you to read through, study and analyze the following principles that I believe guided Daniel in his life.*

## ***PRAYER IS VERY IMPORTANT***

*Someone once said that it is more important to know how to pray than to have a degree from the university. There are many important things in this life. It is important to be educated. It is important to have money. It is important to have a good marriage. But, it is very important to have a good prayer life.*

*Let this enter your spirit. In all your getting, get prayer. In all your activities, make room for prayer.*

## ***NO ONE IS EVER TOO BUSY, TOO BLESSED OR TOO SUCCESSFUL TO PRAY***

*I know you have a busy life and I know that you are an important person. However, I do not think that you are busier than Daniel was. Daniel was a Prime Minister, a leader in the nation. Many people think that Heads of State and Ministers of government have a relaxed enjoyable life, flying all over the world. That is not true!*

*I myself, am the head of a large organization and I know that that is not the case. **The higher you go the greater responsibility you have.** There is so much hard work involved in staying on the cutting edge of life and ministry. Did you know that successful executives like Daniel are so stressed out that they are prone to diseases like stomach ulcers and heart attacks? These conditions are more common with very busy people because of the hard work that they do.*

*Daniel was one such person. He was a Prime Minister, yet he felt that he was not too busy to pray three times a day. **If you think you are too busy to pray, then you are deceiving yourself.** If you do not pray, it is because you do not want to pray. It is because you do not think that prayer is important now! Daniel was successful, yet he prayed. Why was he able to pray three times a day?*

*I have watched people in the church rise out of poverty into mega blessings. When they were poor, they had a lot of time to attend prayer meetings. But when they were blessed, they felt everything was all right. No! Everything is not all right! **Your state of blessing is not the signal to stop praying.***

## **PRAYER IS THE SOURCE OF OUR POWER AND OUR PROTECTION**

*You must realize that it is prayer which generates the power of God on our behalf. Jesus knew the power of prayer. That is why he spent long hours in prayer.*

*Maybe you are a successful businessman, and you think that you don't need any of this spiritual "stuff". Perhaps you are a politician and you think your protection must come from fetish or occult powers. Let me tell you right now, there is power in*

*prayer. We don't need any other power when you have the power of prayer. There is protection for us when we pray. The last part of the armor of God is in prayer.*

*In Ghana, many people become afraid when they prosper. They feel that somebody may try to kill them spiritually. You have nothing to fear when you are a prayerful person like Daniel. Many people wanted to kill Daniel. These people did not only think about killing Daniel, they actually organized a plot to eliminate him. Through the power of prayer, Daniel was protected from the lions. I see all the lions in your life scattering away in fear! I see your prayer power rising! I see you going forward because of a new found prayer life!*

***...that Jesus... praying, the heaven was opened.***

**Luke 3:21**

*I see the heavens opening over your life! Never forget this! The heavens opened when he prayed. Both physical and spiritual blessings rain upon you when you are a prayerful person.*

## ***PRAYER IS IMPORTANT TO ACQUIRE AND SUSTAIN THE BLESSINGS OF GOD***

*Do you have anything that you are proud of? Have you achieved anything in this life? Let me tell you that it is by the grace of God. By the power of prayer, you will achieve many greater things. It is by prayer that you will sustain what God has placed in your hands.*

*I know of people who were given thousands of dollars as gifts. Today, that money has disappeared into thin air. God may give you something but it also takes the grace of God to sustain and live in that blessing. Are you the pastor of a great ministry?*

*Let me tell you, it takes prayer to sustain you in the ministry. Why do you think Jesus kept running away to pray?*

*There is a law of degeneration in the world. Everything is decaying. Your business is decaying. Your church is decaying. Your very life is decaying. It takes the power of God, through prayer, to preserve everything God has given to you.*

## ***FOR PRAYER TO BE EFFECTIVE IT MUST BE HABITUAL***

*A man called Dostoyevsky said, “The second half of a man’s life is made up of the habits he acquired in the first half.”*

*Pascal said, “The strength of a man’s virtues is made up of his habitual acts.”*

***If you are going to be a great person in this life, you need to have good habits.*** *An action becomes a habit when it is repeated without planning or thinking. You do it whether you are conscious of it or not! It becomes your custom!*

*Habits can be either good or bad. Remember that good habits are repeated as easily as bad habits. A good habit will lead to consistent breakthroughs without planning for it. Bad habits lead to consistent failure without planning to fail. If you decide to develop a habit of prayer, you are developing a habit for success.*

*Jesus went to church on the Sabbath because it was his habit. The Bible tells us that Jesus had habits or customs.*

***...as HIS CUSTOM [habit] was, he went into the synagogue***

*on the sabbath day...*

**Luke 4:16**

*Daniel had a custom of praying three times a day. Life in the secular world is not designed to include prayer time. Work starts early in the morning and continues late into the night. Weeks may pass before you even think of prayer. For many people, it is only an impossible situation that reminds them of the need for prayer. Dear friend, it is important for you to include prayer in your life.*

*God is not a spare tire! What is a spare tire? A spare tire is something that is never used, except in emergencies. God is no fool. Whatsoever a man sows, he will reap. If you have time for God on a regular basis, He will have time to bless you on a regular basis. Only the mercy of God makes Him listen to some of our prayers.*

*Develop your prayer life until it happens spontaneously. Develop your prayer life until you pray habitually without even thinking of what you are doing.*

## ***I Made Time to Pray***

*When I was a medical student, I was very busy with my coursework. There was no time to pray at all. But because I made prayer part of my Christian life, there was no way I could do without it! I had to somehow include it on my schedule. I decided to pray late at night. I was so sleepy that I had to walk just to stay awake. Prayer was so important to me that I could not leave it out of my life.*

*One night, I was out walking on a field praying. I started to head for home and I fell asleep whilst walking and praying. Can you imagine being asleep whilst walking on a field? It*



*was only when I walked into the Spanish Department building of the university that I woke up from my sleep. I believe that God saw my earnest desire to keep praying in spite of an impossible medical school schedule.*

**Prayer Must Continue No Matter What is Happening in our Lives  
Both in Troubled Times and in Times of Peace**

*Why do we wait for trouble before we pray? Would you take someone as a serious friend if he only called you in times of serious trouble? In time of peace, he had no time for you. God is looking for someone who will fellowship with him in both good and bad times.*

*The more I preach, the better I become at it. The more you pray, the better you will become at it. In times of crisis, you will find yourself rising up to the occasion and delivering powerful prayers that get results.*

## **EVERY NATION NEEDS LOTS OF PRAYER AND PRAYERFUL LEADERS**

*There is not doubt that the world is ruled by wicked spirits in high places. The earth is covered with human beings at war with each other on a daily basis. Famine, war, epidemics and disasters abound. You just have to keep your eyes on the international news and you will hear about the next major disaster.*

*Dictators of all shapes abound in many nations. Like snakes, which shed their skin, many dictators of yesteryear have a new “look” but are still tyrants and despots at heart. Many nations*

*leaders are actually under the influence of evil spirits that make them do the things they do. They cling to power instead of honorably allowing others to have a chance at leadership. Like vampires, they drink the blood of the nation's wealth and stack it away in secret places.*

*Charismatic leaders like Hitler lead entire nations into initial prosperity, and then eventual destruction through war. I always remember how things changed in South Africa after President DeKlerk replaced President Botha. A new leadership led to the release of Nelson Mandela and the end of apartheid.*

## ***IT IS IMPORTANT TO PRAY FOR LONG PERIODS OF TIME***

*Years ago, the only prayers I knew about were those that the priests read out to us in church. The longest I could pray was thirty to forty seconds when I recited the Lord's prayer. There were three prayers I knew how to pray: the Lord's prayer, Hail Mary and a prayer to the angel of God. However, as I grew in the Lord I learnt how to pray for myself. I can now pray for several hours at a go.*

*I always remember the first time I prayed for three hours. I was a student in Achimota School (Prince of Wales College). I was in the midst of a crisis and I needed the intervention of the Lord. I can also remember the first time I prayed for seven hours. I was a sixth former in the same Achimota School. I prayed from ten a.m. to 5 p.m. I enjoy praying for long hours.*

*Praying for thirty minutes is almost like not praying to me. Don't misunderstand me, I am not saying that God does not hear short prayers. I am saying that I have developed the art of praying for long hours like Jesus did. Jesus prayed for*

*three hours in the garden of Gethsemane.*

*And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and PRAYED... And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What could ye not watch with me ONE HOUR? He went away again the SECOND TIME, AND PRAYED... And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And he left them, and went away again, AND PRAYED THE THIRD TIME, saying the same words.*

*Matthew 26:39,40,42-44*

*That is no big revelation. Jesus was surprised that the disciples could not pray for one hour.*

*And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?*

*Matthew 26:40*

*Jesus prayed all night before he chose his disciples.*

*And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God. And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: and of them HE CHOSE TWELVE, whom also he named apostles;*

*Luke 6:12,13*

*Long prayer may not be an explicit instruction in the Bible, but it is implicit throughout. In later chapters I will teach you what to pray about when you decide to pray for long hours.*

***IT IS IMPORTANT TO ENTER YOUR  
CLOSET FOR EFFECTIVE PRAYER***

*Many Christians can only pray when they are in a group. They cannot stay in a room on their own and pray for one hour. That is a great handicap. **There is a difference between praying alone and praying with a group of people.** Both of these types of prayer are important.*

If you can pray for three hour on your own then you can pray for three hours with other people. It is easier to pray in a group. Each time, you expand your ability to pray alone, you are expanding your ability to chalk great successes in prayer.

Everyone must develop the ability and the formulae for praying four times a day: ‘morning’, ‘afternoon’, ‘evening’ and ‘all-the-time’

*There are four important times to pray: morning, afternoon, evening and all the time.*

*Jesus prayed in the morning and so do I.*

***And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.***

***Mark 1:35***

*What is so important about morning prayer? Prayer in the morning is very good because you meet God before you meet the devil. God anoints you to overcome every mountain that you will encounter in your life.*

*Prayer in the afternoon signifies prayer in the midst of activities. When you pray in the afternoon, it signifies that in the heat of the day and in the thick of the battle, you recognize*

*God as the most important force in your life. God will bless you for afternoon prayer. I see you praying in the afternoon!*

***And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.***

**Mark 6:46**

*Take some of your lunch breaks and spend some of the time praying instead of eating. The prayer will do more good for you than that plate of rice!*

*It is also important to pray in the evenings. When the Bible says "watch and pray", it does not mean keep your eyes open when you pray. What it actually means is, stay awake and pray.*

***And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.***

**Mark 6:47**

*When Jesus prayed in the garden of Gethsemane, he was surprised that the disciples could not stay awake and pray for just one hour.*

***And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God.***

**Luke 6:12**

*There is something about praying in the night that is different than praying during the day. It is just a different experience. I have heard stories that witches are very active around 2 a.m. in the night. Perhaps when you pray in the night you are tackling the forces of darkness in a different way. After all, they are called the forces of darkness (night).*

*The fourth important time to pray is “all-the-time”*

***Pray without ceasing.***

***1 Thessalonians 5:17***

*Prayer is intended to be a never-ending stream of communication with your heavenly Father. He has given us the baptism of the Holy Spirit and the gift of speaking in tongues. I pray all the time. My wife tells me that sometimes I pray when I am sleeping.*

***Pray without ceasing.***

***1 Thessalonians 5:17***

*You can pray on the bus on your way to work. You can pray softly to yourself when you are in the office. You can pray when you are in the shower. God is happy when His children are constantly in touch with Him.*

*I have a friend whose wife calls him on his mobile phone at least seven times a day. When I'm having a meeting with him, his wife will call at least twice during the meeting. She's just keeping in touch, and I think it's a nice thing.*

***You can even pray when you are committing love with your husband or wife.*** *After all you are doing something holy and pleasing to God. I see you praying without ceasing! I see you praying in the morning and in the evening! God is changing your life because of your newfound prayer lives! Your marriage, business and ministry will never be the same by the time you finish reading this book!*

*When like Daniel, you decide to pray for long hours, you will discover that you will need to have a pattern or formula for prayer. You need something that will guide you in your prayer life. In these next chapters, we will study the formulae for*

*prayer.*

- ◆ **Prayer is Very Important.**
- ◆ **No One is Ever Too Busy, Too Blessed or Too Successful to Pray.**
- ◆ **Prayer is the Source of Our Power and Our Protection.**
- ◆ **For Prayer to Be Effective it Must be Habitual.**
- ◆ **Prayer Must Continue No Matter What is Happening in our Lives Both in Troubled Times and in Times of Peace.**
- ◆ **Every Nation Needs Lots of Prayer and Prayerful Leaders.**
- ◆ **Prayer is Important to Acquire and to Sustain the Blessings of God.**
- ◆ **It is Important to Pray for Long Periods of Time.**
- ◆ **It is Important to Enter Your Closet for Effective Prayer.**
- ◆ **Everyone must develop the ability and the formulae for praying four times a day: morning, afternoon and all the time.**

Chapter 2  
**TIMOTHY'S PRAYER  
FORMULA**

*Someone may ask, "What do I pray about for one hour? I don't have anything to say after five minutes!" I have had that experience before. Many Christians begin to look at their watches after one and a half minutes of prayer. Somehow, it seems there is nothing left to say. That is why you need a prayer formula.*

What is a prayer formula? A prayer formula is something that gives you a guideline for prayer. *When you read through the Bible it tells you what exactly to pray about. I call this these prayer formulas. I want to share with you a few of these with you to help you develop a powerful prayer life.*

**TIMOTHY'S PRAYER**

*Timothy's prayer is a prayer that I have used many times.*

***I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour;***

***1 Timothy 2:1-3***

*This scripture tells us exactly whom we must pray for and the types of prayers we must pray. It tells us to pray for all men*



*and specifically for leaders, Heads of State and anyone who has some form of authority over our lives. This prayer formula does not teach us to curse our leaders or to wish them evil.*

***There are four types of prayers we are to offer for each person who is in authority: supplications, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks.*** We are to take each leader and pray that God would supply their needs. We are to thank God for their lives. We are to pray generally for them. Finally, we are to intercede for them.

Anyone who prays this Timothian prayer will experience four blessings from the Lord. You will experience a quiet life, a peaceful life, a godly and an honest life. *Whoever you are, this prayer formula applies to you. There is someone, who has some form of authority over your life.*

*In my country, I have a President and a parliament who rule in the affairs of our nation. One way or the other, the decisions they take affect everyone. Recently, the electricity in our country was cut off. We had no power. Our church activities were greatly affected. Whether we like it or not, the decisions taken by those in charge of electricity were affecting us. **The Word of God says that prayer is important if we want to continue a godly life.***

*Years ago, I was going to a broadcasting station to do a recording with a Christian group. When I got to a place called Danquah Circle, I realized that there was not a single car or human being in sight. This is normally a very busy area. When I heard the sound of heavy artillery, I decided to retreat to my home for dear life's sake. It happened that there was a military takeover in the capital city of Accra. Some soldiers had decided to overthrow the military government of the day. Because of this coup d'etat, our Christian recording for television could not take place.*

*Dear friends, where we do not have peace and stability the work of God will not go on. As I write this book, I have a pastor and a church in Freetown, Sierra Leone. I keep watching the news to see what is going on there. I heard a new war was starting there. If there is war over there, I cannot keep a pastor stationed there. How will I explain to the pastor's wife if something happens to him?*

## ***Kings and Princes***

*There are certain parts of Africa which are no go zones. Missionary and church work has ground to a halt because it is not safe to be there. This is why God tells us to pray for kings and people in authority. If you study Ezekiel, you will find out that although there was a King of Tyrus in the natural, there was also a King of Tyrus in the spiritual.*

**Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus... Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus...**

*Ezekiel 28:2,12*

*It is clear that this prince of Tyrus is a human being because it says,*

**...THOU ART A MAN and not God, though set thine heart as the heart of God...**

*Ezekiel 28:2*

*However, in verse twelve of the same chapter, the Bible says,*

**Son of man take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus...**

**Ezekiel 28:12**

*This time the Bible says,*

**Thou hast been in Eden in the garden of God...**

**Ezekiel 28:13**

*It continues in verse 14,*

**Thou art the anointed cherub [angelic  
being]...**

**Ezekiel 28:14**

*This king of Tyrus was not a man; it was an angelic being. I am convinced that there are evil spirits that rule the nations.*

*When Jesus was tempted in the wilderness, one of the offers that Satan made to him was that he would give him all of the kingdoms of the world. If Satan could not have given the kingdoms of the world to Jesus, it would not have been a temptation. It was a real temptation to Jesus because Satan was actually the one in control of the kingdoms of the world. You cannot give something that you do not have!*

*You and I can see that the world is headed towards eventual annihilation. There will probably be a nuclear war one-day. Some people sing, "He's got the whole world in His hands." I do not believe that is true. If the Lord had the whole world in His hands, the world would not be in the mess that it is. If Jesus was ruling this world, there would not be wars in Rwanda, Burundi, Angola, Ethiopia, Eritrea, Central African Republic, Liberia, Sierra Leone, Democratic Republic of Congo, Congo Brazzaville, Bosnia, Afghanistan, Israel, Palestine and the list goes on!*

*If Jesus were in control of this world there would not be such injustice and wickedness throughout the world. The Bible tells us clearly that Satan is the god of this world.*

*In whom the GOD OF THIS WORLD hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.*

*2 Corinthians 4:4*

For some reason, Satan seems to have legal control over the nations of this earth. **Before God can intervene in the affairs of men, He has to be invited by a legitimate citizen of this world.** You and I are legitimate members of the world community. If the Lord gets involved without a legal invitation, Satan can accuse Him of the crime of illegal takeovers, such as happened with Iraq and Kuwait.

*God is waiting for our invitation through prayer. When we invite Him to build our nations in freedom, justice and peace He will do just that. Whenever Christians pray for leaders, there is a change.*

*Once Abraham's wife was illegally taken by the King of the day. God appeared to the king, Abimelech and said, "You are a dead man. You have taken somebody's wife to be your own." The king was scared. God told him, "Tell Abraham to pray for you."*

*Now therefore restore the man his wife; for he is a prophet, and HE [Abraham] SHALL PRAY FOR THEE, and thou shalt live: and if thou restore her not, know thou that thou shalt surely die, thou, and all that are thine.*

*Genesis 20:7*

*Why didn't God just deliver Abimelech on the spot? After all, He knew the prayer that Abraham was going to pray. But no, God has to wait for the invitation of men before getting involved in the affairs of this world.*

There are three main reasons why we need to pray for those in authority. *First, we have to pray that the decisions of the nation will not be based on selfish and political desires only. The second reason is that the nature of all men is to grab and take as much as they can. We have to pray against corruption. Thirdly, we must pray for peace and freedom so that we may go about our Christian duties without any hindrance.*

***We need to pray that our leaders will truly love the nation.***  
*How can you know when a leader loves the nation?*

***For he loveth our nation and hath built us a synagogue.***  
***Luke 7:5***

*When a leader loves the nation, he will build the nation and not his personal empire.*

## ***You Must Pray for Your Boss***

*If you do not pray for those who have authority over you, your life may become frustrated. The Bible tells us that the heart of the king is in the hand of the Lord, and He turns it whichever way he wants.*

*In Genesis chapter forty you will find a very interesting story. There was a king who had a butler and a baker. The butler was in charge of everything in the home. The baker made biscuits, cakes and pies that the king enjoyed eating. Something happened in the workplace that angered the king with both the butler and baker.*

*Joseph had a dream. In the dream, it was predicted that the baker would lose his life. Both the lives of the butler and the baker were in trouble. Their lives depended on the one who had authority over them. Everything depended on how*

*Pharaoh thought. Depending on the decision of the Pharaoh, someone would live and someone would die. In this case the baker died.*

***There are times when your life depends on what someone thinks about you.*** *The more you pray Timothy's prayer, the more favorable the thoughts of your boss will be towards you. I see you having favor in all that you do! I see the heart of the king having mercy for you!*

*Many young people must pray for their fathers in order to have the favor of God. I remember when I was in university, I asked my father for a car. I realized that my father was spending a lot of money on horse racing. You see, my father had one of the largest horseracing stables in the country. He employed many people and bought horses from all over West Africa. I thought to myself, "If this man wants to, he can buy a brand new car for me."*

*One day, my father decided to buy a car for me. My prayers for him made the Lord turn his heart in my favor. I received a brand new car when I was in fifth year medical school. I rejoiced and used that car for the glory of God. I was the first church member of Lighthouse Chapel International to own a car. My car became the church bus and the church taxi. And I was happy to do it, because I knew that the Lord had provided.*

*God can bless you through those who are in authority above you. As you pray, for them I see God giving you favor! Things are changing to your favor! I see God turning the heart of every king in your life! They will not decide to kill you anymore. They will decide that you must live! I see many blessings rising up to embrace you! **As you pray for fathers, bosses and presidents, you will experience only godliness, peace and quietness.***

*From today, every wife that prays for her husband will experience quietness in the house! From now, your unbeliever husband will allow you to go to church! He will not stop you from going to all-night prayer meetings. Your unbeliever husband will not oppose your Christian life anymore because you are praying for him!*

# **CHAPTER 3**

## **Ephesians Prayer formula**

*Many people are looking for a quick blessing. There is no quick blessing in the world. You have to learn how to pray and pray effectively. As you use these prayer formulae's you will climb to greater heights in prayer. The First Ephesians Prayer Formula has six important steps.*

***The first step to the 1<sup>st</sup> Ephesian Prayer Formulae is to give thanks with a grateful heart.***

***The 2<sup>nd</sup> step is to pray for wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him.***

***The 3<sup>rd</sup> step is to pray for the eyes of your understanding to be enlightened.***

***The 4<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know your calling and the hope of your calling.***

***The 5<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know the riches of the inheritance of the saints.***

***The 6<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know the power of God.***

*Many people gloss over Ephesians chapter one. They think it is too complicated to understand. However, God reveals to us a major formula for prayer in this chapter. I call it the First Ephesians Prayer. There are six topics to be dealt with by anyone who wants to use this formula.*



## **GIVE THANKS**

*First of all, you must give thanks. Many people have become hardened and ungrateful. It is nice to meet a few grateful people in this world. The first thing is to spend some time thanking the Lord in prayer.*

## **CRY TO THE LORD FOR REVELATION**

*The second important topic is to cry to the Lord for revelation. This is one of my favorite prayer topics. You can know something, but until it is revealed to you, you don't really know it! There is a difference between "head" knowledge and "revelation" knowledge.*

### **Revelation Knowledge**

*I have always known that it is dangerous to drive very fast. I have seen large billboards that declare, "The speed that thrills is the speed that kills." One day I traveled to Tamale in the northern region of Ghana. I was driving at about 120 kilometers per hour when suddenly a cyclist crossed my path. I soon found myself somersaulting in the air. After that experience, I had revelation knowledge about driving too fast!*

*I remember one night I was on a highway driving about eighty kilometers per hour when suddenly three cars overtook me with the speed of a bullet. Such was their speed that it looked as though my car was stationary. I smiled and thought to myself, "There was a time no car ever overtook me on a highway. These people do not have revelation knowledge."*

***There is a difference between knowing something and having a revelation about it. The more I pray for revelation, the more I understand the Word of God. The cardinal thing that has taken me forward in my walk with God has been the revelation I have had in his Word. When you have revelation you change. A cardinal sign of revelation is a change in your life.***

*Every year I have a deeper and progressive revelation of God and His Word. Listen to me dear pastor. Spend hours praying for wisdom and revelation. God anoints people who know Him. When I say know Him, I am talking about those who have a revelation of His Word. The things I am sharing with you in this book are things I know by revelation. They are more real to me than facts from a history book.*

*I often tell my lay pastors that this life is short and that the only thing that is worth doing is the work of the ministry. Jesus himself said to “lay up for yourself treasures in heaven”. The revelation of this scripture is deep in my heart. Although many people know this scripture, it has not been revealed to them. That is why I could give up a lucrative medical career for the ministry. I believe I will one day reap great heavenly rewards which are more available than any amount of dollars.*

*That is why I could give up a quiet life of wealth and privacy in exchange for a public, often criticized role of being a spiritual leader. I have a revelation of the truth. Vanity of vanity, all is vanity (Ezekiel 3).*

## ***The Lawyer Received Revelation***

*I once visited a dying man in the hospital. He was a young and successful lawyer struck down in the midst of his years with a deadly disease. I will never forget something he said to us, “If God would raise me up from this bed I will serve Him.*

*Even if it means I have to be a full-time preacher.”*

*As this man lay dying, he realized how futile everything in this world really was. He suddenly had revelation knowledge about many things that are written in the Bible. Somehow we read the Bible but we do not get the revelation of it. When you pray for the Spirit of Revelation, things which you have read over and over will come alive to you in a different way.*

## ***PRAY FOR UNDERSTANDING***

*The next step in the Ephesians prayer formula is to pray for understanding. When you have understanding, you know why you should obey the Word of God. I often pray for the Spirit of understanding. When you have understanding, it helps you to obey God's instructions. Because I ask for understanding, God often shows me many reasons for His Word.*

*That is why I can preach “Twenty-five Reasons Why We Should Have a Mega Church”. I teach “Twenty Reasons why Poverty is a Curse”. I once taught, “Fifty-five Reasons why we Should Win Souls”. Believe it or not, each of those reasons were different. “Ten Reasons Why Should Not Commit Fornication”, “Ten Reasons Why You Should Love Your Husband”. When you have the Spirit of understanding you will know why God is speaking to you the way He is.*

*There are many Christian wives who are unwilling to commit love with their husbands. The reason is they do not have understanding about the duties of a wife. I notice how the revelation of the importance of the duties of a wife comes alive when a woman is struck with the reality of an adulterous husband.*

## ***PRAY ABOUT YOUR CALLING***

The next step in the Ephesian prayer is to pray about your calling. Every Christian is called to a ministry.

***For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.***

**Ephesians 2:10**

*Christians were not recreated for nothing. God intends every one of us to fulfil our divine call. We are called to do good works. We are called to be unmovable, steadfast, always abounding in the work of the Lord. I watch modern day Christians attend Sunday service after Sunday service. Christianity has become for many people a kind of ritual. Just attend church, sing songs and listen to a thirty-minute sermon. There is more to the calling of God than that.*

When I became a Christian, I joined a vibrant ministry that went around preaching the Word. Christianity has always been an experience of soul winning and establishing Christians in the Lord.

### ***The Taxi Driver Didn't Believe Me!***

*I was once chatting with a taxi driver in London. He asked me where I was coming from. I said, "I've just flown in from Amsterdam."*

*He said, "Oh, there are a lot of girls there, did you have a good time."*

*I answered, "Oh no! I'm a Christian. We don't do that!"*

*He exclaimed, "Are you sure Christians don't do that? Do you*

*really believe that stuff? Do you actually believe in heaven?" He went on, "If heaven is really so nice then why don't we all commit suicide and go there right now."*

*Unfortunately I had got to the end of my journey and couldn't explain the hope (the reason) of my calling as a Christian. This taxi driver brought up a very valid point. **If we are all just waiting to enter heaven, why don't we just go there right now?** But Christians are not expected to kill themselves. Christians have an important calling to save souls and to establish people in the Lord.*

*We cannot just rush to heaven now! The hope (reason) for our calling is to bear fruits and win souls in this life. That is why we are still here and haven't left for heaven yet. According to Revelations 14:13, your works will follow you into heaven.*

***...Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and THEIR WORKS DO FOLLOW THEM.***

**Revelations 14:13**

*What you do on earth will determine how your stay in heaven will be. If you know why Christ has saved you, you will have a lot to do for him here on earth.*

## ***TO KNOW THE RICHES OF YOUR INHERITANCE CHRIST***

*The next step in the Ephesians prayer is to know the riches of our inheritance in Christ. This means we need to know what we have inherited because we are Christians.*

*When my father died, he left properties for his children. A few*

*months after he died, we assembled in Court to listen to the reading of his will. We all wanted to know what the riches of our inheritance were. We took the time to find out what we had inherited. I did not know what my father had given to me. I had to go to the Court to find out for myself.*

*It is sad to say that many Christians do not bother to find out what God has in store for them. When you begin to discover what God has in store for you, you will be amazed. **We need to pray to know what God has given to us.***

### ***Are We to Be Poor?***

*Many people think that Christians are supposed to be poor. They think that pastors, in particular, are supposed to be impoverished. There are people who want ministers to come crawling to their doorstep to beg for a tin of sardines and a loaf of bread. Is this what we have inherited from our heavenly Father? No, certainly not!*

*I do not intend to be poor because I am a minister. I am sorry if that offends you, but I cannot see it in my Bible. Apostle Peter wanted to find out how he would benefit from following Christ, so he asked,*

**Lo, we have left all, and followed thee...**

***Mark 10:28***

*In other words, how do we benefit from serving you? Jesus answered him clearly. That answer applies to all of us,*

***...There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's. BUT HE SHALL RECEIVE AN HUNDREDFOLD NOW IN THIS TIME, houses, and***

*brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands,  
with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.*

**Mark 10:29,30**

*The heritage of Christians and ministers is not lack and poverty. But if you don't find out or pray about it you will live in the darkness of that deception all the days of your life.*

## ***TO KNOW THE GREATNESS OF GOD'S POWER***

*The last part of the Ephesians prayer is to pray to know the greatness of God's power. There are certain Christians who don't want anything to do with the power of God. In the last days, the Bible teaches that some people will have a form of godliness but deny the reality of power.*

*One of the things you need to pray about is to know the power of the Holy Spirit. **There are two types of churches in the world: teaching churches and power churches.** Some churches emphasize the teaching and have nothing to do with the power of God. That is a mistake! You cannot take away miracles from the Bible. Without the miracles of the Bible all we are left with is philosophical literature.*

*It is because people do not believe in the power that they are frightened by weird looking witches and fetish priests. We need to pray for the power until we experience it. You will not taste of God's power unless you pray for it! Thank God for nice teachings on Sunday. Thank God for good administration. There is a power dimension to Christianity and God wants you to experience it.*

# **CHAPTER 4**

## **THE LORD'S PRAYER FORMULA**

One of the things that struck the disciples about the Lord Jesus was his ability to pray for long hours. They wanted to know what strategy, formula or trick he used in order to stay in prayer for such long hours. That is why they approached him and said, "Lord, teach us to pray." They needed to have sort of guideline in their prayer lives.

Jesus sat them down and gave them eight steps to his personal life.

### ***GIVE THANKS AND WORSHIP THE LORD***

Jesus taught us that the first step is to say thank you and to worship the Lord. The first thing to do in this prayer formula is to spend time giving thanks to the Lord. For most people thanksgiving lasts for approximately forty-five seconds.

*However, we need to be grateful to the Lord for all that He has done for us. Thank Him for allowing you to see that day. Many people die everyday, it could have been you. The fact that you are alive is a miracle. Thank Him for your pastor and your church. Thank Him that you can read this book. I have members in my Bible school who cannot write. During the classes, they have to record what is said on tape. They simply do not have the ability to read or write. I thank God for the fact that I am in the ministry. The fact that you are reading my*



*book is a miracle of God.*

*Some people can only see problems. God is touching your eyes right now! He is opening your eyes to see His blessing all around. In this first step of prayer, you must think of how great things the Lord has done for you.*

### ***A Sad Visit***

*I recently visited a friend of mine. He lived virtually on the street. He had become a drug addict. He had no food or money. I took some money out of my pocket and gave it to him. Tears welled up in my eyes. I thought of how pathetic this young man's condition was. I realized that it could have been me. Somehow, by the grace of God I came to know the Lord. I could have been smoking marijuana. After all, I saw many people doing it when I was young. I could have been dead and buried long ago.*

*I have been in near-fatal car crashes. I have been in planes that almost collided with other planes on the runway. On two different occasions, I have been in aircraft that landed and had to do an emergency takeoff in order to avoid a collision on the runway. But I'm still here and I know I have something to thank God for.*

*My friends if you cannot find something to thank God for at least ten minutes then you have an ungrateful spirit. This first step of the Lord's prayer formula should last about ten minutes.*

***PRAY FOR THE KINGDOM OF GOD TO  
COME***

The next important step in the Lord's prayer formula is to pray for the kingdom of God to come. This step is my favorite step. I can spend three hours here. But if you don't have much time, you can spend just ten minutes on this. Please note here that the order is very important. The first thing is to pray for the church and the kingdom. Ask God to bless the church.

*I teach my children to pray for church growth all the time. When the church grows it means more people are being saved everyday. Everybody is developing his personal kingdom. People are developing their financial strength. Most people do not really care about the church. Every Christian must first pray for the church to develop and grow.*

*Pray for your pastors instead of criticizing them. Men of God are human beings just like you. Pastors make so many mistakes everyday. Unfortunately, our mistakes are publicized. Pray that God will protect His leaders from attacks of all sorts.*

## ***GOD'S WILL BE DONE***

*The third step is to pray for the will of God to be done. This can also take another ten minutes. Anyone who prays that God's will should be done in his life, cares for himself. If you love yourself, pray that the will of God should be done. I have come to believe that God's will is better than my will or anybody else's will.*

*Nobody knows the future, but God knows what He has in store for you. Jesus prayed for three hours in the garden of Gethsemane that the will of God be done. After you have prayed this prayer you can relax and allow events to unfold. When Judas and the Pharisees came to arrest Christ, he did not resist. He believed and accepted that the events that were*

*happening were the will of God, and indeed they were. Those events were leading him to his greatest victory over Satan.*

*If you want to have peace and confidence in this life, spend time praying that the will of God will come to pass in your life.*

## ***My Evening Prayer***

*Many years ago, I was a young medical student. I had no idea that I would be where I am today. In 1985, during the first term of my third year, I spent many hours praying that the will of God be done. Our school is near the Atlantic Ocean. Every night at 10 p.m. I went along with four other friends to the beach. I clearly remember standing on the rock and the sand praying, "O Lord, let thy will be done."*

*As I stood on the dark shores of Ghana, I remembered how missionaries came to our nation and sacrificed their lives. I lifted up my hands on the beach and said, "Use me Lord. Let your will be done." I cried to the Lord and said, "You brought me here. I don't know the future. Whatever you want to be done, let it come to pass." I believe that today I am walking in the answers of those prayers. For several weeks, I have prayed those same prayers.*

*Begin to spend time praying to God for His will for you. Do you think God's will, will happen naturally? Certainly not! If it was going to happen naturally why would you spend time having to pray about it? The very fact that Jesus taught us to pray about it means that it is not automatic that God's will – will happen.*

*I see your future unfolding in a positive way! I see God lifting you up as you pray about His will! I see you marrying the right person as you spend time praying for the will of God to*

*be done!*

## **OUR DAILY BREAD**

*The next step is to pray for our daily bread. Jesus taught us to pray for our daily needs. That means we are to pray about our jobs, marriages and everything that concerns us.*

*Some years ago I felt I was too spiritual to marry. No one can be more spiritual than God. Don't be too spiritual to ask God for your physical needs. Ask him for a house. Ask him for bread. Do you want a husband? God is doing it right now as you read this book. Pray to the Lord for yourself. Spend some minutes mentioning your needs to the Lord. If you spend another ten minutes asking the Lord for your daily needs God your life will change dramatically.*

***When it comes to prayer don't depend on anyone, depend on yourself.*** *Don't expect somebody to pray for you. Many times, people who you think are praying for you are actually sleeping.*

*God is giving you a formula for prayer. Operate in it and walk in your blessings.*

## **PRAY FOR FORGIVENESS**

*The next step is to pray for your forgiveness. We all need forgiveness of our sins. There are two types of sins: sins of commission and sins of omission. We must be aware of our sinful nature as we approach the throne of grace. Appropriate the blood of Jesus for yourself. Ask the Lord to see you only*

*through the eyes of the blood.*

*One of the first sins of commission are the sins of the mouth: lying, flattery, backbiting, gossip, etc. Another arena of sin is the mind. Many of us have committed murder, adultery and stealing in the mind. Our minds are often polluted with sin. We must come before the Lord and pray for mercy. As we ask the Lord for mercy we must see whether we have forgiven the people around us.*

*Sometimes I listen to the way people condemn those who have made a mistake. It makes me sad! Are we not all human? Are we not all subject to the same temptations? Is it not by the grace of God that we survive?*

*When we come to this part of the prayer, we must correct any judgmental or arrogant attitude. **One of the important sins to confess is the sin of omission.** There are people who go to hell because a neighbor did not witness to them. There are friends who die and go to hell because we never told them about Christ. As we come before the throne, God sees all our mistakes. If we act as though we are perfect, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. Spend another ten minutes asking the Lord to have mercy on your life.*

## ***PRAY AGAINST TEMPTATION***

*The next important step in the Lord's prayer is to pray against temptation. We are all human beings. When I hear of great men of God falling, I become so frightened. I wonder about myself. Many times I just pray that I will make it safely to heaven without disgracing the Lord. It is important for you to pray against temptations in your life. You may not know, but prayer strengthens you against temptations.*

## ***Fasting Without Prayer is Dieting***

*On the night of betrayal, Jesus told and gave the disciples an eternal command, "Pray in case you fall into a temptation." Many years ago, I remember fasting for three days. By the third day, I was so weak that I couldn't rise out of the bed. This was the first time I had fasted for three days without any food at all. Because we hadn't prayed, I was almost unconscious.*

*Some months later I decided to try this fast again. This time I decided to wake up at 4 a.m. and spend a couple of hours in prayer before the day began. By the third day of the fast, I felt as though I had something to eat. There was a great difference between the two fasts. I had such strength because I had been more prayerful. **My Christian friend, prayer is a supernatural act and provides strength even when your flesh is weak.** Spend about twenty minutes praying against temptations in your life.*

## **PRAY THAT GOD DELIVERS YOU FROM EVIL**

*The seventh step is to pray that God should deliver you from evil. It is important for you to pray against the evils in this world. Cover yourself with the blood of Jesus. In the days of Israel, they would sprinkle the blood of lambs over the lintels and doorposts. This was to prevent any evil from coming into the home. We are to do the same thing now but in a spiritual way.*

*How do you sprinkle the blood? You sprinkle the blood of*

*Jesus with your words. Apply the blood of Jesus over every part of your home and family. Place an injunction over every flying witch. Declare that your household is a no-fly-zone for every witch, wizard or evil being. Cancel every enchantment, spell, charm or lamentation that has been taken up against you. Declare that you will live and not die. Bind Satan and his agents. Have faith in God. Command angelic beings and the forces of heaven to be on guard around you. God will keep you as you pray against evil in your life.*

## ***THANK HIM AND GIVE HIM GLORY***

The final thing to do in the Lord's prayer is to thank Him and to give Him glory. For thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory. Thank Him over and over. Declare that He is more powerful than the walls of opposition in your life. Declare that every mountain of impossibility is possible because of His power and His glory.

*Lift up your hands and speak about his glorious power in your life. Declare that every serpentine agenda for your life cannot happen because of the power, kingdom and the glory of God. Thank Jehovah that He has time for you to listen to your prayer. Thank Him that is well with your soul. Thank Him that it is well with you.*

*If you follow these steps, you will have at least an hour and a half of effective and fruitful prayer everyday.*

# **Strategies for Prayer**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**



Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-596-09-X

**Copyright © 2002 Parchment House**  
**1st Printing 2000**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to  
*Pastor Jonathan Botchway*  
*& his dear wife Karen, my sister —*  
It is good to have a family like you!

# ***Contents***

Daniel's Principles of Prayer .....	1
The Timothy Prayer Formula .....	16
The Ephesians Prayer Formula .....	25
The Lord's Prayer Formula .....	36

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

Rest of the world:

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

Website:

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

Parchment House

# **STRATEGIC PRAYER**

## **Discover the Formulae for Hours of Prayer**

### **CHAPTERS**

- 1. Daniel's Principles of Prayer*
- 2. Timothy's Prayer Formula*
- 3. The Ephesians Prayer Formula*
- 4. The Lord's Prayer Formula*

Chapter 1  
***DANIEL'S PRINCIPLES OF  
PRAYER***

*Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.*

***Daniel 6:10***

*You will notice from this scripture that Daniel prayed three times a day. An important phrase used in this verse is “as he did aforetime”. That means that Daniel had been praying these prayers on a regular basis. Daniel was just not praying because he was in trouble.*

*Many times when people become prosperous they stop going for prayer meetings and eventually backslide. Not so with Daniel! He was the Prime Minister of his country, second in authority only to the king. He was a successful man who had risen from slavery to the high office of Prime Minister. He was*

*one of the most respected and feared men in the nation. He was a major politician of the day. He was a civil servant. Yet, he prayed three times a day, everyday.*

*What were the principles that guided Daniel to have such an unusual and consistent prayer time? Here they are, read them and let them become your principles. You too can have the success that Daniel had. I want you to read through, study and analyze the following principles that I believe guided Daniel in his life.*

## ***PRAYER IS VERY IMPORTANT***

*Someone once said that it is more important to know how to pray than to have a degree from the university. There are many important things in this life. It is important to be educated. It is important to have money. It is important to have a good marriage. But, it is very important to have a good prayer life.*

*Let this enter your spirit. In all your getting, get prayer. In all your activities, make room for prayer.*

## ***NO ONE IS EVER TOO BUSY, TOO BLESSED OR TOO SUCCESSFUL TO PRAY***

*I know you have a busy life and I know that you are an important person. However, I do not think that you are busier than Daniel was. Daniel was a Prime Minister, a leader in the nation. Many people think that Heads of State and Ministers of government have a relaxed enjoyable life, flying all over the world. That is not true!*

*I myself, am the head of a large organization and I know that that is not the case. **The higher you go the greater responsibility you have.** There is so much hard work involved in staying on the cutting edge of life and ministry. Did you know that successful executives like Daniel are so stressed out that they are prone to diseases like stomach ulcers and heart attacks? These conditions are more common with very busy people because of the hard work that they do.*

*Daniel was one such person. He was a Prime Minister, yet he felt that he was not too busy to pray three times a day. **If you think you are too busy to pray, then you are deceiving yourself.** If you do not pray, it is because you do not want to pray. It is because you do not think that prayer is important now! Daniel was successful, yet he prayed. Why was he able to pray three times a day?*

*I have watched people in the church rise out of poverty into mega blessings. When they were poor, they had a lot of time to attend prayer meetings. But when they were blessed, they felt everything was all right. No! Everything is not all right! **Your state of blessing is not the signal to stop praying.***

## **PRAYER IS THE SOURCE OF OUR POWER AND OUR PROTECTION**

*You must realize that it is prayer which generates the power of God on our behalf. Jesus knew the power of prayer. That is why he spent long hours in prayer.*

*Maybe you are a successful businessman, and you think that you don't need any of this spiritual "stuff". Perhaps you are a politician and you think your protection must come from fetish or occult powers. Let me tell you right now, there is power in*



*prayer. We don't need any other power when you have the power of prayer. There is protection for us when we pray. The last part of the armor of God is in prayer.*

*In Ghana, many people become afraid when they prosper. They feel that somebody may try to kill them spiritually. You have nothing to fear when you are a prayerful person like Daniel. Many people wanted to kill Daniel. These people did not only think about killing Daniel, they actually organized a plot to eliminate him. Through the power of prayer, Daniel was protected from the lions. I see all the lions in your life scattering away in fear! I see your prayer power rising! I see you going forward because of a new found prayer life!*

***...that Jesus... praying, the heaven was opened.***

**Luke 3:21**

*I see the heavens opening over your life! Never forget this! The heavens opened when he prayed. Both physical and spiritual blessings rain upon you when you are a prayerful person.*

## ***PRAYER IS IMPORTANT TO ACQUIRE AND SUSTAIN THE BLESSINGS OF GOD***

*Do you have anything that you are proud of? Have you achieved anything in this life? Let me tell you that it is by the grace of God. By the power of prayer, you will achieve many greater things. It is by prayer that you will sustain what God has placed in your hands.*

*I know of people who were given thousands of dollars as gifts. Today, that money has disappeared into thin air. God may give you something but it also takes the grace of God to sustain and live in that blessing. Are you the pastor of a great ministry?*

*Let me tell you, it takes prayer to sustain you in the ministry. Why do you think Jesus kept running away to pray?*

*There is a law of degeneration in the world. Everything is decaying. Your business is decaying. Your church is decaying. Your very life is decaying. It takes the power of God, through prayer, to preserve everything God has given to you.*

## ***FOR PRAYER TO BE EFFECTIVE IT MUST BE HABITUAL***

*A man called Dostoyevsky said, “The second half of a man’s life is made up of the habits he acquired in the first half.”*

*Pascal said, “The strength of a man’s virtues is made up of his habitual acts.”*

***If you are going to be a great person in this life, you need to have good habits.*** *An action becomes a habit when it is repeated without planning or thinking. You do it whether you are conscious of it or not! It becomes your custom!*

*Habits can be either good or bad. Remember that good habits are repeated as easily as bad habits. A good habit will lead to consistent breakthroughs without planning for it. Bad habits lead to consistent failure without planning to fail. If you decide to develop a habit of prayer, you are developing a habit for success.*

*Jesus went to church on the Sabbath because it was his habit. The Bible tells us that Jesus had habits or customs.*

***...as HIS CUSTOM [habit] was, he went into the synagogue***

*on the sabbath day...*

**Luke 4:16**

*Daniel had a custom of praying three times a day. Life in the secular world is not designed to include prayer time. Work starts early in the morning and continues late into the night. Weeks may pass before you even think of prayer. For many people, it is only an impossible situation that reminds them of the need for prayer. Dear friend, it is important for you to include prayer in your life.*

*God is not a spare tire! What is a spare tire? A spare tire is something that is never used, except in emergencies. God is no fool. Whatsoever a man sows, he will reap. If you have time for God on a regular basis, He will have time to bless you on a regular basis. Only the mercy of God makes Him listen to some of our prayers.*

*Develop your prayer life until it happens spontaneously. Develop your prayer life until you pray habitually without even thinking of what you are doing.*

## ***I Made Time to Pray***

*When I was a medical student, I was very busy with my coursework. There was no time to pray at all. But because I made prayer part of my Christian life, there was no way I could do without it! I had to somehow include it on my schedule. I decided to pray late at night. I was so sleepy that I had to walk just to stay awake. Prayer was so important to me that I could not leave it out of my life.*

*One night, I was out walking on a field praying. I started to head for home and I fell asleep whilst walking and praying. Can you imagine being asleep whilst walking on a field? It*

*was only when I walked into the Spanish Department building of the university that I woke up from my sleep. I believe that God saw my earnest desire to keep praying in spite of an impossible medical school schedule.*

**Prayer Must Continue No Matter What is Happening in our Lives  
Both in Troubled Times and in Times of Peace**

*Why do we wait for trouble before we pray? Would you take someone as a serious friend if he only called you in times of serious trouble? In time of peace, he had no time for you. God is looking for someone who will fellowship with him in both good and bad times.*

*The more I preach, the better I become at it. The more you pray, the better you will become at it. In times of crisis, you will find yourself rising up to the occasion and delivering powerful prayers that get results.*

## **EVERY NATION NEEDS LOTS OF PRAYER AND PRAYERFUL LEADERS**

*There is not doubt that the world is ruled by wicked spirits in high places. The earth is covered with human beings at war with each other on a daily basis. Famine, war, epidemics and disasters abound. You just have to keep your eyes on the international news and you will hear about the next major disaster.*

*Dictators of all shapes abound in many nations. Like snakes, which shed their skin, many dictators of yesteryear have a new “look” but are still tyrants and despots at heart. Many nations*

*leaders are actually under the influence of evil spirits that make them do the things they do. They cling to power instead of honorably allowing others to have a chance at leadership. Like vampires, they drink the blood of the nation's wealth and stack it away in secret places.*

*Charismatic leaders like Hitler lead entire nations into initial prosperity, and then eventual destruction through war. I always remember how things changed in South Africa after President DeKlerk replaced President Botha. A new leadership led to the release of Nelson Mandela and the end of apartheid.*

## ***IT IS IMPORTANT TO PRAY FOR LONG PERIODS OF TIME***

*Years ago, the only prayers I knew about were those that the priests read out to us in church. The longest I could pray was thirty to forty seconds when I recited the Lord's prayer. There were three prayers I knew how to pray: the Lord's prayer, Hail Mary and a prayer to the angel of God. However, as I grew in the Lord I learnt how to pray for myself. I can now pray for several hours at a go.*

*I always remember the first time I prayed for three hours. I was a student in Achimota School (Prince of Wales College). I was in the midst of a crisis and I needed the intervention of the Lord. I can also remember the first time I prayed for seven hours. I was a sixth former in the same Achimota School. I prayed from ten a.m. to 5 p.m. I enjoy praying for long hours.*

*Praying for thirty minutes is almost like not praying to me. Don't misunderstand me, I am not saying that God does not hear short prayers. I am saying that I have developed the art of praying for long hours like Jesus did. Jesus prayed for*

*three hours in the garden of Gethsemane.*

*And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and PRAYED... And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What could ye not watch with me ONE HOUR? He went away again the SECOND TIME, AND PRAYED... And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And he left them, and went away again, AND PRAYED THE THIRD TIME, saying the same words.*

*Matthew 26:39,40,42-44*

*That is no big revelation. Jesus was surprised that the disciples could not pray for one hour.*

*And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?*

*Matthew 26:40*

*Jesus prayed all night before he chose his disciples.*

*And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God. And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: and of them HE CHOSE TWELVE, whom also he named apostles;*

*Luke 6:12,13*

*Long prayer may not be an explicit instruction in the Bible, but it is implicit throughout. In later chapters I will teach you what to pray about when you decide to pray for long hours.*

***IT IS IMPORTANT TO ENTER YOUR  
CLOSET FOR EFFECTIVE PRAYER***

*Many Christians can only pray when they are in a group. They cannot stay in a room on their own and pray for one hour. That is a great handicap. **There is a difference between praying alone and praying with a group of people.** Both of these types of prayer are important.*

If you can pray for three hour on your own then you can pray for three hours with other people. It is easier to pray in a group. Each time, you expand your ability to pray alone, you are expanding your ability to chalk great successes in prayer.

Everyone must develop the ability and the formulae for praying four times a day: ‘morning’, ‘afternoon’, ‘evening’ and ‘all-the-time’

*There are four important times to pray: morning, afternoon, evening and all the time.*

*Jesus prayed in the morning and so do I.*

***And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.***

***Mark 1:35***

*What is so important about morning prayer? Prayer in the morning is very good because you meet God before you meet the devil. God anoints you to overcome every mountain that you will encounter in your life.*

*Prayer in the afternoon signifies prayer in the midst of activities. When you pray in the afternoon, it signifies that in the heat of the day and in the thick of the battle, you recognize*

*God as the most important force in your life. God will bless you for afternoon prayer. I see you praying in the afternoon!*

***And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.***

**Mark 6:46**

*Take some of your lunch breaks and spend some of the time praying instead of eating. The prayer will do more good for you than that plate of rice!*

*It is also important to pray in the evenings. When the Bible says "watch and pray", it does not mean keep your eyes open when you pray. What it actually means is, stay awake and pray.*

***And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.***

**Mark 6:47**

*When Jesus prayed in the garden of Gethsemane, he was surprised that the disciples could not stay awake and pray for just one hour.*

***And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God.***

**Luke 6:12**

*There is something about praying in the night that is different than praying during the day. It is just a different experience. I have heard stories that witches are very active around 2 a.m. in the night. Perhaps when you pray in the night you are tackling the forces of darkness in a different way. After all, they are called the forces of darkness (night).*



*The fourth important time to pray is “all-the-time”*

***Pray without ceasing.***

***1 Thessalonians 5:17***

*Prayer is intended to be a never-ending stream of communication with your heavenly Father. He has given us the baptism of the Holy Spirit and the gift of speaking in tongues. I pray all the time. My wife tells me that sometimes I pray when I am sleeping.*

***Pray without ceasing.***

***1 Thessalonians 5:17***

*You can pray on the bus on your way to work. You can pray softly to yourself when you are in the office. You can pray when you are in the shower. God is happy when His children are constantly in touch with Him.*

*I have a friend whose wife calls him on his mobile phone at least seven times a day. When I’m having a meeting with him, his wife will call at least twice during the meeting. She’s just keeping in touch, and I think it’s a nice thing.*

***You can even pray when you are committing love with your husband or wife.*** *After all you are doing something holy and pleasing to God. I see you praying without ceasing! I see you praying in the morning and in the evening! God is changing your life because of your newfound prayer lives! Your marriage, business and ministry will never be the same by the time you finish reading this book!*

*When like Daniel, you decide to pray for long hours, you will discover that you will need to have a pattern or formula for prayer. You need something that will guide you in your prayer life. In these next chapters, we will study the formulae for*

*prayer.*

- ◆ **Prayer is Very Important.**
- ◆ **No One is Ever Too Busy, Too Blessed or Too Successful to Pray.**
- ◆ **Prayer is the Source of Our Power and Our Protection.**
- ◆ **For Prayer to Be Effective it Must be Habitual.**
- ◆ **Prayer Must Continue No Matter What is Happening in our Lives Both in Troubled Times and in Times of Peace.**
- ◆ **Every Nation Needs Lots of Prayer and Prayerful Leaders.**
- ◆ **Prayer is Important to Acquire and to Sustain the Blessings of God.**
- ◆ **It is Important to Pray for Long Periods of Time.**
- ◆ **It is Important to Enter Your Closet for Effective Prayer.**
- ◆ **Everyone must develop the ability and the formulae for praying four times a day: morning, afternoon and all the time.**

## Chapter 2

# **TIMOTHY'S PRAYER FORMULA**

*Someone may ask, "What do I pray about for one hour? I don't have anything to say after five minutes!" I have had that experience before. Many Christians begin to look at their watches after one and a half minutes of prayer. Somehow, it seems there is nothing left to say. That is why you need a prayer formula.*

What is a prayer formula? A prayer formula is something that gives you a guideline for prayer. *When you read through the Bible it tells you what exactly to pray about. I call this these prayer formulas. I want to share with you a few of these with you to help you develop a powerful prayer life.*

## **TIMOTHY'S PRAYER**

*Timothy's prayer is a prayer that I have used many times.*

***I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour;***

***1 Timothy 2:1-3***

*This scripture tells us exactly whom we must pray for and the types of prayers we must pray. It tells us to pray for all men*

*and specifically for leaders, Heads of State and anyone who has some form of authority over our lives. This prayer formula does not teach us to curse our leaders or to wish them evil.*

***There are four types of prayers we are to offer for each person who is in authority: supplications, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks.*** We are to take each leader and pray that God would supply their needs. We are to thank God for their lives. We are to pray generally for them. Finally, we are to intercede for them.

Anyone who prays this Timothian prayer will experience four blessings from the Lord. You will experience a quiet life, a peaceful life, a godly and an honest life. *Whoever you are, this prayer formula applies to you. There is someone, who has some form of authority over your life.*

*In my country, I have a President and a parliament who rule in the affairs of our nation. One way or the other, the decisions they take affect everyone. Recently, the electricity in our country was cut off. We had no power. Our church activities were greatly affected. Whether we like it or not, the decisions taken by those in charge of electricity were affecting us. **The Word of God says that prayer is important if we want to continue a godly life.***

*Years ago, I was going to a broadcasting station to do a recording with a Christian group. When I got to a place called Danquah Circle, I realized that there was not a single car or human being in sight. This is normally a very busy area. When I heard the sound of heavy artillery, I decided to retreat to my home for dear life's sake. It happened that there was a military takeover in the capital city of Accra. Some soldiers had decided to overthrow the military government of the day. Because of this coup d'état, our Christian recording for television could not take place.*

*Dear friends, where we do not have peace and stability the work of God will not go on. As I write this book, I have a pastor and a church in Freetown, Sierra Leone. I keep watching the news to see what is going on there. I heard a new war was starting there. If there is war over there, I cannot keep a pastor stationed there. How will I explain to the pastor's wife if something happens to him?*

## ***Kings and Princes***

*There are certain parts of Africa which are no go zones. Missionary and church work has ground to a halt because it is not safe to be there. This is why God tells us to pray for kings and people in authority. If you study Ezekiel, you will find out that although there was a King of Tyrus in the natural, there was also a King of Tyrus in the spiritual.*

**Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus... Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus...**

*Ezekiel 28:2,12*

*It is clear that this prince of Tyrus is a human being because it says,*

**...THOU ART A MAN and not God, though set thine heart as the heart of God...**

*Ezekiel 28:2*

*However, in verse twelve of the same chapter, the Bible says,*

**Son of man take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus...**

**Ezekiel 28:12**

*This time the Bible says,*

**Thou hast been in Eden in the garden of God...**

**Ezekiel 28:13**

*It continues in verse 14,*

**Thou art the anointed cherub [angelic  
being]...**

**Ezekiel 28:14**

*This king of Tyrus was not a man; it was an angelic being. I am convinced that there are evil spirits that rule the nations.*

*When Jesus was tempted in the wilderness, one of the offers that Satan made to him was that he would give him all of the kingdoms of the world. If Satan could not have given the kingdoms of the world to Jesus, it would not have been a temptation. It was a real temptation to Jesus because Satan was actually the one in control of the kingdoms of the world. You cannot give something that you do not have!*

*You and I can see that the world is headed towards eventual annihilation. There will probably be a nuclear war one-day. Some people sing, "He's got the whole world in His hands." I do not believe that is true. If the Lord had the whole world in His hands, the world would not be in the mess that it is. If Jesus was ruling this world, there would not be wars in Rwanda, Burundi, Angola, Ethiopia, Eritrea, Central African Republic, Liberia, Sierra Leone, Democratic Republic of Congo, Congo Brazzaville, Bosnia, Afghanistan, Israel, Palestine and the list goes on!*

*If Jesus were in control of this world there would not be such injustice and wickedness throughout the world. The Bible tells us clearly that Satan is the god of this world.*

*In whom the GOD OF THIS WORLD hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.*

**2 Corinthians 4:4**

For some reason, Satan seems to have legal control over the nations of this earth. **Before God can intervene in the affairs of men, He has to be invited by a legitimate citizen of this world.** You and I are legitimate members of the world community. If the Lord gets involved without a legal invitation, Satan can accuse Him of the crime of illegal takeovers, such as happened with Iraq and Kuwait.

*God is waiting for our invitation through prayer. When we invite Him to build our nations in freedom, justice and peace He will do just that. Whenever Christians pray for leaders, there is a change.*

*Once Abraham's wife was illegally taken by the King of the day. God appeared to the king, Abimelech and said, "You are a dead man. You have taken somebody's wife to be your own." The king was scared. God told him, "Tell Abraham to pray for you."*

***Now therefore restore the man his wife; for he is a prophet, and HE [Abraham] SHALL PRAY FOR THEE, and thou shalt live: and if thou restore her not, know thou that thou shalt surely die, thou, and all that are thine.***

**Genesis 20:7**

*Why didn't God just deliver Abimelech on the spot? After all, He knew the prayer that Abraham was going to pray. But no, God has to wait for the invitation of men before getting involved in the affairs of this world.*

There are three main reasons why we need to pray for those in authority. *First, we have to pray that the decisions of the nation will not be based on selfish and political desires only. The second reason is that the nature of all men is to grab and take as much as they can. We have to pray against corruption. Thirdly, we must pray for peace and freedom so that we may go about our Christian duties without any hindrance.*

***We need to pray that our leaders will truly love the nation.***  
*How can you know when a leader loves the nation?*

***For he loveth our nation and hath built us a synagogue.***  
***Luke 7:5***

*When a leader loves the nation, he will build the nation and not his personal empire.*

## ***You Must Pray for Your Boss***

*If you do not pray for those who have authority over you, your life may become frustrated. The Bible tells us that the heart of the king is in the hand of the Lord, and He turns it whichever way he wants.*

*In Genesis chapter forty you will find a very interesting story. There was a king who had a butler and a baker. The butler was in charge of everything in the home. The baker made biscuits, cakes and pies that the king enjoyed eating. Something happened in the workplace that angered the king with both the butler and baker.*

*Joseph had a dream. In the dream, it was predicted that the baker would lose his life. Both the lives of the butler and the baker were in trouble. Their lives depended on the one who had authority over them. Everything depended on how*



*Pharaoh thought. Depending on the decision of the Pharaoh, someone would live and someone would die. In this case the baker died.*

***There are times when your life depends on what someone thinks about you.*** *The more you pray Timothy's prayer, the more favorable the thoughts of your boss will be towards you. I see you having favor in all that you do! I see the heart of the king having mercy for you!*

*Many young people must pray for their fathers in order to have the favor of God. I remember when I was in university, I asked my father for a car. I realized that my father was spending a lot of money on horse racing. You see, my father had one of the largest horseracing stables in the country. He employed many people and bought horses from all over West Africa. I thought to myself, "If this man wants to, he can buy a brand new car for me."*

*One day, my father decided to buy a car for me. My prayers for him made the Lord turn his heart in my favor. I received a brand new car when I was in fifth year medical school. I rejoiced and used that car for the glory of God. I was the first church member of Lighthouse Chapel International to own a car. My car became the church bus and the church taxi. And I was happy to do it, because I knew that the Lord had provided.*

*God can bless you through those who are in authority above you. As you pray, for them I see God giving you favor! Things are changing to your favor! I see God turning the heart of every king in your life! They will not decide to kill you anymore. They will decide that you must live! I see many blessings rising up to embrace you! **As you pray for fathers, bosses and presidents, you will experience only godliness, peace and quietness.***

*From today, every wife that prays for her husband will experience quietness in the house! From now, your unbeliever husband will allow you to go to church! He will not stop you from going to all-night prayer meetings. Your unbeliever husband will not oppose your Christian life anymore because you are praying for him!*

# **CHAPTER 3**

## **Ephesians Prayer formula**

*Many people are looking for a quick blessing. There is no quick blessing in the world. You have to learn how to pray and pray effectively. As you use these prayer formulae's you will climb to greater heights in prayer. The First Ephesians Prayer Formula has six important steps.*

***The first step to the 1<sup>st</sup> Ephesian Prayer Formulae is to give thanks with a grateful heart.***

***The 2<sup>nd</sup> step is to pray for wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him.***

***The 3<sup>rd</sup> step is to pray for the eyes of your understanding to be enlightened.***

***The 4<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know your calling and the hope of your calling.***

***The 5<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know the riches of the inheritance of the saints.***

***The 6<sup>th</sup> step is to pray to know the power of God.***

*Many people gloss over Ephesians chapter one. They think it is too complicated to understand. However, God reveals to us a major formula for prayer in this chapter. I call it the First Ephesians Prayer. There are six topics to be dealt with by anyone who wants to use this formula.*

## **GIVE THANKS**

*First of all, you must give thanks. Many people have become hardened and ungrateful. It is nice to meet a few grateful people in this world. The first thing is to spend some time thanking the Lord in prayer.*

## **CRY TO THE LORD FOR REVELATION**

*The second important topic is to cry to the Lord for revelation. This is one of my favorite prayer topics. You can know something, but until it is revealed to you, you don't really know it! There is a difference between "head" knowledge and "revelation" knowledge.*

### **Revelation Knowledge**

*I have always known that it is dangerous to drive very fast. I have seen large billboards that declare, "The speed that thrills is the speed that kills." One day I traveled to Tamale in the northern region of Ghana. I was driving at about 120 kilometers per hour when suddenly a cyclist crossed my path. I soon found myself somersaulting in the air. After that experience, I had revelation knowledge about driving too fast!*

*I remember one night I was on a highway driving about eighty kilometers per hour when suddenly three cars overtook me with the speed of a bullet. Such was their speed that it looked as though my car was stationary. I smiled and thought to myself, "There was a time no car ever overtook me on a highway. These people do not have revelation knowledge."*

***There is a difference between knowing something and having a revelation about it. The more I pray for revelation, the more I understand the Word of God. The cardinal thing that has taken me forward in my walk with God has been the revelation I have had in his Word. When you have revelation you change. A cardinal sign of revelation is a change in your life.***

*Every year I have a deeper and progressive revelation of God and His Word. Listen to me dear pastor. Spend hours praying for wisdom and revelation. God anoints people who know Him. When I say know Him, I am talking about those who have a revelation of His Word. The things I am sharing with you in this book are things I know by revelation. They are more real to me than facts from a history book.*

*I often tell my lay pastors that this life is short and that the only thing that is worth doing is the work of the ministry. Jesus himself said to “lay up for yourself treasures in heaven”. The revelation of this scripture is deep in my heart. Although many people know this scripture, it has not been revealed to them. That is why I could give up a lucrative medical career for the ministry. I believe I will one day reap great heavenly rewards which are more available than any amount of dollars.*

*That is why I could give up a quiet life of wealth and privacy in exchange for a public, often criticized role of being a spiritual leader. I have a revelation of the truth. Vanity of vanity, all is vanity (Ezekiel 3).*

## ***The Lawyer Received Revelation***

*I once visited a dying man in the hospital. He was a young and successful lawyer struck down in the midst of his years with a deadly disease. I will never forget something he said to us, “If God would raise me up from this bed I will serve Him.*

*Even if it means I have to be a full-time preacher.”*

*As this man lay dying, he realized how futile everything in this world really was. He suddenly had revelation knowledge about many things that are written in the Bible. Somehow we read the Bible but we do not get the revelation of it. When you pray for the Spirit of Revelation, things which you have read over and over will come alive to you in a different way.*

## ***PRAY FOR UNDERSTANDING***

*The next step in the Ephesians prayer formula is to pray for understanding. When you have understanding, you know why you should obey the Word of God. I often pray for the Spirit of understanding. When you have understanding, it helps you to obey God's instructions. Because I ask for understanding, God often shows me many reasons for His Word.*

*That is why I can preach “Twenty-five Reasons Why We Should Have a Mega Church”. I teach “Twenty Reasons why Poverty is a Curse”. I once taught, “Fifty-five Reasons why we Should Win Souls”. Believe it or not, each of those reasons were different. “Ten Reasons Why Should Not Commit Fornication”, “Ten Reasons Why You Should Love Your Husband”. When you have the Spirit of understanding you will know why God is speaking to you the way He is.*

*There are many Christian wives who are unwilling to commit love with their husbands. The reason is they do not have understanding about the duties of a wife. I notice how the revelation of the importance of the duties of a wife comes alive when a woman is struck with the reality of an adulterous husband.*

## ***PRAY ABOUT YOUR CALLING***

The next step in the Ephesian prayer is to pray about your calling. Every Christian is called to a ministry.

***For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.***

**Ephesians 2:10**

*Christians were not recreated for nothing. God intends every one of us to fulfil our divine call. We are called to do good works. We are called to be unmovable, steadfast, always abounding in the work of the Lord. I watch modern day Christians attend Sunday service after Sunday service. Christianity has become for many people a kind of ritual. Just attend church, sing songs and listen to a thirty-minute sermon. There is more to the calling of God than that.*

When I became a Christian, I joined a vibrant ministry that went around preaching the Word. Christianity has always been an experience of soul winning and establishing Christians in the Lord.

### ***The Taxi Driver Didn't Believe Me!***

*I was once chatting with a taxi driver in London. He asked me where I was coming from. I said, "I've just flown in from Amsterdam."*

*He said, "Oh, there are a lot of girls there, did you have a good time."*

*I answered, "Oh no! I'm a Christian. We don't do that!"*

*He exclaimed, "Are you sure Christians don't do that? Do you*

*really believe that stuff? Do you actually believe in heaven?" He went on, "If heaven is really so nice then why don't we all commit suicide and go there right now."*

*Unfortunately I had got to the end of my journey and couldn't explain the hope (the reason) of my calling as a Christian. This taxi driver brought up a very valid point. **If we are all just waiting to enter heaven, why don't we just go there right now?** But Christians are not expected to kill themselves. Christians have an important calling to save souls and to establish people in the Lord.*

*We cannot just rush to heaven now! The hope (reason) for our calling is to bear fruits and win souls in this life. That is why we are still here and haven't left for heaven yet. According to Revelations 14:13, your works will follow you into heaven.*

***...Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and THEIR WORKS DO FOLLOW THEM.***

**Revelations 14:13**

*What you do on earth will determine how your stay in heaven will be. If you know why Christ has saved you, you will have a lot to do for him here on earth.*

## ***TO KNOW THE RICHES OF YOUR INHERITANCE CHRIST***

*The next step in the Ephesians prayer is to know the riches of our inheritance in Christ. This means we need to know what we have inherited because we are Christians.*

*When my father died, he left properties for his children. A few*



*months after he died, we assembled in Court to listen to the reading of his will. We all wanted to know what the riches of our inheritance were. We took the time to find out what we had inherited. I did not know what my father had given to me. I had to go to the Court to find out for myself.*

*It is sad to say that many Christians do not bother to find out what God has in store for them. When you begin to discover what God has in store for you, you will be amazed. **We need to pray to know what God has given to us.***

## ***Are We to Be Poor?***

*Many people think that Christians are supposed to be poor. They think that pastors, in particular, are supposed to be impoverished. There are people who want ministers to come crawling to their doorstep to beg for a tin of sardines and a loaf of bread. Is this what we have inherited from our heavenly Father? No, certainly not!*

*I do not intend to be poor because I am a minister. I am sorry if that offends you, but I cannot see it in my Bible. Apostle Peter wanted to find out how he would benefit from following Christ, so he asked,*

**Lo, we have left all, and followed thee...**

***Mark 10:28***

*In other words, how do we benefit from serving you? Jesus answered him clearly. That answer applies to all of us,*

***...There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's. BUT HE SHALL RECEIVE AN HUNDREDFOLD NOW IN THIS TIME, houses, and***

*brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands,  
with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.*

**Mark 10:29,30**

*The heritage of Christians and ministers is not lack and poverty. But if you don't find out or pray about it you will live in the darkness of that deception all the days of your life.*

## ***TO KNOW THE GREATNESS OF GOD'S POWER***

*The last part of the Ephesians prayer is to pray to know the greatness of God's power. There are certain Christians who don't want anything to do with the power of God. In the last days, the Bible teaches that some people will have a form of godliness but deny the reality of power.*

*One of the things you need to pray about is to know the power of the Holy Spirit. **There are two types of churches in the world: teaching churches and power churches.** Some churches emphasize the teaching and have nothing to do with the power of God. That is a mistake! You cannot take away miracles from the Bible. Without the miracles of the Bible all we are left with is philosophical literature.*

*It is because people do not believe in the power that they are frightened by weird looking witches and fetish priests. We need to pray for the power until we experience it. You will not taste of God's power unless you pray for it! Thank God for nice teachings on Sunday. Thank God for good administration. There is a power dimension to Christianity and God wants you to experience it.*

# **CHAPTER 4**

## **THE LORD'S PRAYER FORMULA**

One of the things that struck the disciples about the Lord Jesus was his ability to pray for long hours. They wanted to know what strategy, formula or trick he used in order to stay in prayer for such long hours. That is why they approached him and said, "Lord, teach us to pray." They needed to have sort of guideline in their prayer lives.

Jesus sat them down and gave them eight steps to his personal life.

### ***GIVE THANKS AND WORSHIP THE LORD***

Jesus taught us that the first step is to say thank you and to worship the Lord. The first thing to do in this prayer formula is to spend time giving thanks to the Lord. For most people thanksgiving lasts for approximately forty-five seconds.

*However, we need to be grateful to the Lord for all that He has done for us. Thank Him for allowing you to see that day. Many people die everyday, it could have been you. The fact that you are alive is a miracle. Thank Him for your pastor and your church. Thank Him that you can read this book. I have members in my Bible school who cannot write. During the classes, they have to record what is said on tape. They simply do not have the ability to read or write. I thank God for the fact that I am in the ministry. The fact that you are reading my*

*book is a miracle of God.*

*Some people can only see problems. God is touching your eyes right now! He is opening your eyes to see His blessing all around. In this first step of prayer, you must think of how great things the Lord has done for you.*

## ***A Sad Visit***

*I recently visited a friend of mine. He lived virtually on the street. He had become a drug addict. He had no food or money. I took some money out of my pocket and gave it to him. Tears welled up in my eyes. I thought of how pathetic this young man's condition was. I realized that it could have been me. Somehow, by the grace of God I came to know the Lord. I could have been smoking marijuana. After all, I saw many people doing it when I was young. I could have been dead and buried long ago.*

*I have been in near-fatal car crashes. I have been in planes that almost collided with other planes on the runway. On two different occasions, I have been in aircraft that landed and had to do an emergency takeoff in order to avoid a collision on the runway. But I'm still here and I know I have something to thank God for.*

*My friends if you cannot find something to thank God for at least ten minutes then you have an ungrateful spirit. This first step of the Lord's prayer formula should last about ten minutes.*

***PRAY FOR THE KINGDOM OF GOD TO  
COME***

The next important step in the Lord's prayer formula is to pray for the kingdom of God to come. This step is my favorite step. I can spend three hours here. But if you don't have much time, you can spend just ten minutes on this. Please note here that the order is very important. The first thing is to pray for the church and the kingdom. Ask God to bless the church.

*I teach my children to pray for church growth all the time. When the church grows it means more people are being saved everyday. Everybody is developing his personal kingdom. People are developing their financial strength. Most people do not really care about the church. Every Christian must first pray for the church to develop and grow.*

*Pray for your pastors instead of criticizing them. Men of God are human beings just like you. Pastors make so many mistakes everyday. Unfortunately, our mistakes are publicized. Pray that God will protect His leaders from attacks of all sorts.*

## ***GOD'S WILL BE DONE***

*The third step is to pray for the will of God to be done. This can also take another ten minutes. Anyone who prays that God's will should be done in his life, cares for himself. If you love yourself, pray that the will of God should be done. I have come to believe that God's will is better than my will or anybody else's will.*

*Nobody knows the future, but God knows what He has in store for you. Jesus prayed for three hours in the garden of Gethsemane that the will of God be done. After you have prayed this prayer you can relax and allow events to unfold. When Judas and the Pharisees came to arrest Christ, he did not resist. He believed and accepted that the events that were*

*happening were the will of God, and indeed they were. Those events were leading him to his greatest victory over Satan.*

*If you want to have peace and confidence in this life, spend time praying that the will of God will come to pass in your life.*

## ***My Evening Prayer***

*Many years ago, I was a young medical student. I had no idea that I would be where I am today. In 1985, during the first term of my third year, I spent many hours praying that the will of God be done. Our school is near the Atlantic Ocean. Every night at 10 p.m. I went along with four other friends to the beach. I clearly remember standing on the rock and the sand praying, "O Lord, let thy will be done."*

*As I stood on the dark shores of Ghana, I remembered how missionaries came to our nation and sacrificed their lives. I lifted up my hands on the beach and said, "Use me Lord. Let your will be done." I cried to the Lord and said, "You brought me here. I don't know the future. Whatever you want to be done, let it come to pass." I believe that today I am walking in the answers of those prayers. For several weeks, I have prayed those same prayers.*

*Begin to spend time praying to God for His will for you. Do you think God's will, will happen naturally? Certainly not! If it was going to happen naturally why would you spend time having to pray about it? The very fact that Jesus taught us to pray about it means that it is not automatic that God's will – will happen.*

*I see your future unfolding in a positive way! I see God lifting you up as you pray about His will! I see you marrying the right person as you spend time praying for the will of God to*

*be done!*

## **OUR DAILY BREAD**

*The next step is to pray for our daily bread. Jesus taught us to pray for our daily needs. That means we are to pray about our jobs, marriages and everything that concerns us.*

*Some years ago I felt I was too spiritual to marry. No one can be more spiritual than God. Don't be too spiritual to ask God for your physical needs. Ask him for a house. Ask him for bread. Do you want a husband? God is doing it right now as you read this book. Pray to the Lord for yourself. Spend some minutes mentioning your needs to the Lord. If you spend another ten minutes asking the Lord for your daily needs God your life will change dramatically.*

***When it comes to prayer don't depend on anyone, depend on yourself.*** *Don't expect somebody to pray for you. Many times, people who you think are praying for you are actually sleeping.*

*God is giving you a formula for prayer. Operate in it and walk in your blessings.*

## **PRAY FOR FORGIVENESS**

*The next step is to pray for your forgiveness. We all need forgiveness of our sins. There are two types of sins: sins of commission and sins of omission. We must be aware of our sinful nature as we approach the throne of grace. Appropriate the blood of Jesus for yourself. Ask the Lord to see you only*

*through the eyes of the blood.*

*One of the first sins of commission are the sins of the mouth: lying, flattery, backbiting, gossip, etc. Another arena of sin is the mind. Many of us have committed murder, adultery and stealing in the mind. Our minds are often polluted with sin. We must come before the Lord and pray for mercy. As we ask the Lord for mercy we must see whether we have forgiven the people around us.*

*Sometimes I listen to the way people condemn those who have made a mistake. It makes me sad! Are we not all human? Are we not all subject to the same temptations? Is it not by the grace of God that we survive?*

*When we come to this part of the prayer, we must correct any judgmental or arrogant attitude. **One of the important sins to confess is the sin of omission.** There are people who go to hell because a neighbor did not witness to them. There are friends who die and go to hell because we never told them about Christ. As we come before the throne, God sees all our mistakes. If we act as though we are perfect, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. Spend another ten minutes asking the Lord to have mercy on your life.*

## ***PRAY AGAINST TEMPTATION***

*The next important step in the Lord's prayer is to pray against temptation. We are all human beings. When I hear of great men of God falling, I become so frightened. I wonder about myself. Many times I just pray that I will make it safely to heaven without disgracing the Lord. It is important for you to pray against temptations in your life. You may not know, but prayer strengthens you against temptations.*



## ***Fasting Without Prayer is Dieting***

*On the night of betrayal, Jesus told and gave the disciples an eternal command, "Pray in case you fall into a temptation." Many years ago, I remember fasting for three days. By the third day, I was so weak that I couldn't rise out of the bed. This was the first time I had fasted for three days without any food at all. Because we hadn't prayed, I was almost unconscious.*

*Some months later I decided to try this fast again. This time I decided to wake up at 4 a.m. and spend a couple of hours in prayer before the day began. By the third day of the fast, I felt as though I had something to eat. There was a great difference between the two fasts. I had such strength because I had been more prayerful. **My Christian friend, prayer is a supernatural act and provides strength even when your flesh is weak.** Spend about twenty minutes praying against temptations in your life.*

## **PRAY THAT GOD DELIVERS YOU FROM EVIL**

*The seventh step is to pray that God should deliver you from evil. It is important for you to pray against the evils in this world. Cover yourself with the blood of Jesus. In the days of Israel, they would sprinkle the blood of lambs over the lintels and doorposts. This was to prevent any evil from coming into the home. We are to do the same thing now but in a spiritual way.*

*How do you sprinkle the blood? You sprinkle the blood of*

*Jesus with your words. Apply the blood of Jesus over every part of your home and family. Place an injunction over every flying witch. Declare that your household is a no-fly-zone for every witch, wizard or evil being. Cancel every enchantment, spell, charm or lamentation that has been taken up against you. Declare that you will live and not die. Bind Satan and his agents. Have faith in God. Command angelic beings and the forces of heaven to be on guard around you. God will keep you as you pray against evil in your life.*

## ***THANK HIM AND GIVE HIM GLORY***

The final thing to do in the Lord's prayer is to thank Him and to give Him glory. For thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory. Thank Him over and over. Declare that He is more powerful than the walls of opposition in your life. Declare that every mountain of impossibility is possible because of His power and His glory.

*Lift up your hands and speak about his glorious power in your life. Declare that every serpentine agenda for your life cannot happen because of the power, kingdom and the glory of God. Thank Jehovah that He has time for you to listen to your prayer. Thank Him that is well with your soul. Thank Him that it is well with you.*

*If you follow these steps, you will have at least an hour and a half of effective and fruitful prayer everyday.*

# Supernatural Power

Dag Heward-Mills

**A LIGHTHOUSE CHAPEL PUBLICATION**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

A Lighthouse Chapel Publication

ISBN 9988-596-07-3

**Copyright © 2000 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# ***Contents***

The Natural and the Supernatural .....	1
How to Experience the Supernatural .....	21
Laws of the Supernatural .....	43

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to the first miracle Team  
that worked with me at miracle services:

Thank you for believing in the Healing  
Anointing!

For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to this address:

Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle Bu, Accra  
Ghana

# **THE SUPERNATURAL**

## **CHAPTERS**

1. The Natural and the Supernatural
2. How to Experience the Supernatural
3. The Laws of the Supernatural



# **CHAPTER 1**

## **THE NATURAL AND THE SUPERNATURAL**

I became a born-again Christian in the Scripture Union whilst I was in secondary school. In those days, the emphasis was on the Word of God. We learnt many important things in the Scripture Union. We learnt how to have a personal “quiet time”. We learnt how to study the Bible. We learnt about the importance of the Word of God. We also learnt of the integrity of the Word of God.

Because of such teachings, I had been solidly founded on the Word of God. I do not agree with or flow in anything not founded in the Word. I want things to be Bible-based, otherwise, it is just not good enough. I am grateful to God for this foundational background because that has kept me on the right track up until today.

Of the many things I am constantly learning of in the ministry, one of them is on the realm of the supernatural. The Bible is a supernatural book. There is a supernatural dimension to Christianity. **Cut out the supernatural events from the Bible**

**and you are left with a book on philosophy.**

It is this very attitude of sticking to the Word that has brought me to the supernatural. You cannot avoid the supernatural if you study the Bible. I am always surprised that there are people who do not believe in miracles and yet are committed Christians. Is it intentional blindness to what is so obvious?

The Bible directs us to a God who is Spirit. The Bible teaches us about angels that cannot be seen in the natural. The New Testament is full of instructions concerning the Holy Spirit. In spite of this, many Christians are left out of the blessings of the supernatural.

Jacob made a very important statement.

**And Jacob went out from Beersheba, and went toward Haran.**

**And he lighted upon a certain place, and tarried there all night, because the sun was set; and took of the stones of that place, and put them for his pillows, and lay down in that place to sleep.**

And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.

**And, behold, the Lord stood above it, and said, I am the Lord God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed;**

**And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.**

**And behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.**

**And Jacob awaked out of his sleep, and he said, SURELY THE LORD IS IN THIS PLACE; AND I KNEW IT NOT.**

**Genesis 28:10-16**

Jacob had come to a place, made himself a pillow and lay down to sleep. He had a supernatural experience during the night. When he awoke in the morning he said, “The Lord was in this place, and I knew it not.”

This is the testimony of many believers. The Lord is with them and they don’t even know it. Angels stand by our side and they are not even aware of it. The Holy Spirit speaks to us and we don’t even know it.

It is my prayer, that by the time you finish reading this book, you will say, “The Lord was in this place and I knew it!” You will say, “The Holy Spirit was here and I felt him.”

**Surprisingly, the greatest barrier to the supernatural is not demons.** The greatest hindrance to receiving the supernatural is not witchcraft power. It is a state of naturalness, if I may use that word.

**But THE NATURAL MAN RECEIVETH NOT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.**

**1 Corinthians 2:14**

The Bible states in very clear terms, that the natural man cannot receive the things of the Holy Spirit. This is because they are foolish unto him. What does it mean to be natural? To be natural means to be a normal human being. It speaks of thinking normally, as a human being should. It is being logical, intelligent, calculating and analytical. The word natural speaks of employing all normal human faculties. **It is interesting that it is this very “natural”**

**attitude that cuts us off from supernatural things.**

## **I Could Not Receive**

Many years ago, I was desirous of receiving the Holy Spirit baptism. I wanted to be baptized and speak in tongues like everybody else. I was a born-again Christian but I had not received the Holy Spirit and did not speak in tongues. You must realize that speaking in tongues is a very supernatural thing.

## **Unholy Laughter**

I remember once going to a meeting where people were being prayed for to receive the Holy Spirit. Instead of entering the meeting, I observed from outside. All of a sudden, I began to laugh. Hearing them speaking in tongues, lead me to laugh uncontrollably. It sounded so ridiculous. I laughed so hard that I thought I had sinned against the Holy Ghost.

Later that year I finally decided that the Holy Spirit was for me! I told a few people that I knew someone in town who could pray for us to receive the Holy Spirit. I remember travelling all the way to town to locate the brother who had agreed to come and pray for us.

## **How I Received**

One Saturday this minister decided to attend our meeting and pray for us. As we gathered in the classroom, I was very hopeful and expectant. After preaching on the baptism of the Holy Spirit this brother prayed for us. He asked those who had received the Holy Spirit to raise up their hands. After looking about the room, I realized that almost everybody had received, except me.

I couldn't believe it! I said to myself, "I organized this meeting. I brought this man from town to pray for us. Yet others who have no interest in the Holy Spirit have received." I just couldn't understand it. To my left and to my right people were speaking in tongues but I couldn't. I was very discouraged. The man of God encouraged us to pray in his absence and told us that God would fill the rest of us with the Holy Spirit. I prayed for several weeks, but to no avail.

One morning while lying on my bed, I routinely asked the Lord to fill me with His Holy Spirit. Before I realized it, I heard a beautiful language coming out of my spirit. I was speaking in tongues. I was so happy that I didn't stop praying in tongues for three hours. I was afraid that the Holy Spirit would go if I stopped praying.

The question is: "Why did it take me six weeks before I received the Holy Spirit?" The answer is in the Bible – the natural man receiveth not! **If you are very critical, analytical and judgmental, you are being natural. When you are natural, you will not and cannot receive.**

The Bible says that supernatural things are foolishness to people who are natural. Who can receive the supernatural? The answer is spiritual people.

The opposite of being natural is being spiritual or spiritually mature. A truly mature Christian is a spiritual person. A mature person knows God. I'm not talking about academic knowledge of the Bible. Academic knowledge of the Bible does not make you spiritual. As you know, people study Bible knowledge in school yet are unbelievers.

**And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto CARNAL, EVEN AS UNTO BABES IN CHRIST.**

## 1 Corinthians 3:1

Paul is saying here that he could not speak to them as spiritual people but as carnal.

## MOVING OUT OF THE NATURAL STATE

But strong meat belongeth to them that are of FULL AGE [**mature**], even those who by reason of use have their SENSES EXERCISED TO DISCERN both good and evil.

## Hebrews 5:14

In this scripture, the Bible declares that strong meat from the Word belongs to mature Christians. It goes on to explain that mature Christians are those who have their senses exercised to discern or distinguish good from evil.

I have always wondered what this verse meant. One of the laws of interpretation of the Bible is simply to accept the literal meaning of the words you read. This verse simply says that Christians who become mature have their senses alert. The word “senses” is derived from the Greek word, aishtheterion, meaning “organs of perception”.

**God has given you organs of perception.** You are expected to use these organs of perception to maneuver in this life. Here, the Bible is giving us an additional but very important revelation. It is telling us that these organs of perception can also be used to detect or discern spiritual things.

## What are the Organs of Perception?

What are the organs of perception? They are the eyes to see, the ears to hear, the nose to smell, the skin to feel and the tongue to

taste. If we accept this scripture at face value, then it is telling us that our eyes and ears can be used, if they are spiritually alert enough, to discern between good and evil things.

I told the Lord, “We need more than one scripture to form a solid basis for this revelation.” The Lord took me to the book of Matthew 13.

**Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.**

**And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:**

For this people’s heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

**But BLESSED ARE YOUR EYES, for they see: AND YOUR EARS, for they hear.**

**For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.**

## **MATTHEW 13:13-17**

Jesus made many astounding statements. He said, “Blessed are your eyes and blessed are your ears.” What does this mean? Jesus was speaking about their organs of perception, (aishstheterion).

Jesus had just finished teaching them the Word of God yet many could not understand what he was saying. When he said, “blessed are your eyes” he meant blessed are your eyes because they see

visions, revelations and the supernatural. When he said, “blessed are you ears” he meant that they heard a little further, the voice of the Holy Spirit and the voice of God. Some could even hear the voices of angels.

At another point in the passage, Jesus said these people have waxed gross in their heart. The word “heart” comes from the Greek word, kardia, meaning thoughts and feelings. Their thoughts and feelings, which were organs of perception, had become gross (dull, stupid, fat and inattentive).

## **THE SUPERNATURAL MOVES THROUGH YOUR ORGANS OF PERCEPTION**

This is the principal revelation I want to bring to your understanding. The supernatural operates through your eyes, ears, thoughts and feelings.

**Some of the thoughts that flash in your mind are from God.** They are the voice of God ministering direction to you. Jesus made it clear that the Holy Spirit would minister to Christians through their minds.

**But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and BRING ALL THINGS TO YOUR REMEMBRANCE** [mind], whatsoever I have said unto you.

**John 14:26**

### **“God Spoke To Me...”**

This scripture is saying that the Holy Spirit brings things to your mind. Have you ever-heard great men of God say, “God spoke to



me?” Have you heard mighty evangelists saying, “The Spirit of God said something to me last night?” I am sure you have wondered, as I did, that God seems to physically “live” in the houses of these men of God. God seems to speak to them all of the time, but never to me. They always say, “God spoke to me.”

My brother, Jesus said, that the Holy Spirit would bring things to your mind. However, if your heart (kardia – thoughts and feelings) have waxed gross (fat, stupid, dull and inattentive) you will never know when the Holy Spirit speaks into your mind. You will not know the difference between your own thoughts and those from the Holy Spirit.

### **Supernatural or Spectacular?**

Learn something right here! **The supernatural is not always sensational, dramatic or spectacular.** The supernatural concerns things that are not natural. My experience in the supernatural is that God uses my organs of perception of feeling, thinking, seeing and hearing. He will do the same for you. It may not be spectacular or thrilling, but it certainly is supernatural.

### **Don't Miss the Supernatural**

The supernatural is often mistaken for the natural. Because of that, the supernatural passes us by and we do not even realize it. Do you remember the call of the prophet Samuel?

The boy Samuel was in the temple of God ministering. After lying down to sleep one night, he heard a voice. **The voice sounded so much like the voice of his senior pastor that he immediately got up and went to see Pastor Eli.** The prophet Eli said, “I didn’t call you, so go back.” He heard this same supernatural voice three times and thought he was hearing a human

voice.

**...Samuel was laid down to sleep; That the Lord called Samuel: and he answered, Here am I. And the Lord called yet again, Samuel... And the Lord called Samuel again the third time...**

**1 Samuel 3:3-4,6,8**

If the supernatural voice were not similar to a natural voice, then why would Samuel have made the same mistake three times? It was the experienced prophet, Eli, who guided Samuel to receiving the supernatural.

Therefore Eli said unto Samuel, Go, lie down: and it shall be, if he call thee, that thou shalt say, Speak, Lord; for thy servant heareth. So Samuel went and lay down in his place. And the Lord came, and stood, and called as at other times, Samuel, Samuel. Then Samuel answered, Speak for thy servant heareth.

**1 Samuel 3:9,10**

### **The Widow Couldn't "See"**

Many things you have experienced are supernatural. The supernatural is both real and biblical. In the ministry of the prophet Elijah, you see a widow to whom he ministered.

He prophesied that she and her household would lack no food throughout the period of the famine. That prophecy came to pass! However, secretly she did not believe that the supernatural had occurred in her life.

When her child died and Elijah brought him back to life, she made a very significant statement. She said, "Now I know that you are a man of God."

**And Elijah took the child, and brought him down out of the chamber into the house, and delivered him unto his mother: and Elijah said, See, thy son liveth. And the woman said to Elijah, Now by this I KNOW THAT THOU ART A MAN OF GOD, and that the word of the Lord in thy mouth is truth**  
**1 Kings 17:23,24**

This means that all along she didn't really believe that she was experiencing the supernatural. It looked so ordinary to her.

### **I Had a Supernatural Call**

I have been in the ministry for many years. God has used me to do many things for which I am grateful. For example, you are reading a book that I have written. That alone should tell you that God is using me to some extent. However, I did not experience thundering and lightning and have not seen Jesus in person.

The call of God on my life has simply been a conviction. A conviction to serve Him. A conviction to do my best. A conviction to obey the desires that He has placed on my heart. The Bible is true when it says many are called. Many, many, many people are called.

**For MANY ARE CALLED, but few are chosen.**  
**Matthew 22:14**

Many people do not respect the visions they see. Many have had dreams, which they take no notice of. Paul said, I was obedient to the heavenly vision. One night, God spoke to me and told me, "Respect your dreams from today." I told the Lord, "But I don't have spectacular dreams!"

The Lord told me to look in the Book of Daniel. So I opened my Bible and He showed me that even King Nebucannezer, an

unbeliever, respected his dreams greatly. As a result, he was able to receive an instruction from the Lord.

His dream revealed a mighty tree being cut down. If you had a dream where you just saw a tree, would you take much notice of it? Probably not! You may take more notice of a dream where cows were chasing you, birds were flying, and snakes were appearing all over the place.

What did Elijah experience? He experienced the still small voice of God. When God spoke to him He was not in the fire, wind, etc., it was in the still small voice.

**And he said, Go forth, and stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake: And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire A STILL SMALL VOICE.**

**1 Kings 19:11,12**

I believe I have a very supernatural ministry. The things I do and have been able to accomplish have been divinely and supernaturally orchestrated.

## **YOU CAN FEEL YOUR HEALING**

When the Lord began to use me in the healing ministry, I soon realized that people were actually being healed in the service. Coming from a faith background, I used to sing the song, "I'm not moved by what I feel. I'm only moved by the Word of God." This song is true. We are only moved by the Word of God!

However, you will notice that Jesus could feel tangible healing power flowing out of his body. The Bible tells us that he knew in himself that healing virtue had gone out of him. How did he know that? He knew because he felt it. One version of the Bible says, “Jesus became aware that power had gone out of him.” Another version says, “And Jesus perceived, that power had gone out of him.”

The question that Jesus asked was “Who touched me?” Perhaps the feeling of the power was like an unusual touch. The disciples asked him, “You can see this crowd jostling you and pressing in on all sides. How can you ask who is touching you?” **Jesus’ organs of perception (feelings) were alive spiritually.** He could feel power flowing out of him. He could distinguish between the touch of the crowd and the release of supernatural power.

It is interesting to note that the woman also felt that she was healed. She also felt the power of God flowing into her. The Bible says,

**...and SHE FELT in her body that she was healed...**

**Mark 5:29**

In my experience, people often claim to feel the power of God when they receive healing. Some people feel an intense heat or warm sensation. Others feel a surge of electric power. Many feel the wind of the Holy Spirit, like a blowing breeze. While some do not even feel anything per se, but just sense that they are healed. Friends, the power of God is real.

## **THE SHRINKING TUMOR**

I remember a lady who had a lump on her body. During the miracle and healing prayer time, she placed her hand on the lump and God healed her. She later testified on stage that when she

placed her hand on it, she felt the lump actually shrinking beneath her palm. She was amazed and so were we!

### **The Disappearing Gallstones**

There was a lady in one of our miracle services, scheduled to undergo major surgery to remove gallstones. She was suffering greatly from cholecystitis. During the healing time, she placed her hand on her abdomen as we prayed. She felt the power of God go through her body. She later testified on stage that she felt she was healed.

The Bible commands us to, “Prove all things.” After returning to the doctor, the new x-ray showed that the gallstones had disappeared. The doctors had no explanation for this. There was a scan before the miracle time that showed the stones. After the miracle service, there were no stones. By the supernatural power of God a miracle had occurred.

**And Jesus, IMMEDIATELY KNOWING in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?**

**Mark 5:30**

## **CHAPTER 2**

# **HOW TO EXPERIENCE THE SUPERNATURAL**

**And Jesus went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.**

**And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,**

**And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,**

**When she heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment.**

**For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.**

**And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.**

**And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?**

**And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?**

**And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.**

**But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.**

**And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.**

**Mark 5:24-34**

**HAVE FAITH IN THE EXISTENCE OF THE**

## SUPERNATURAL

The first step to experiencing the supernatural is to have faith in the supernatural. You must believe in the existence of supernatural things.

The natural man will have done all of his tests and analysis. As a doctor, I also believe in scientific testing, but there is a limit to that which scientific tests can prove. You cannot use a scientific test to understand the origin of this world. You cannot use your mind to analyze about the origin of God.

There is a point at which, sense-knowledge ceases to be useful.

**When you arrive at the frontier of human knowledge, step out in faith and believe in the existence of the supernatural.**

## HAVE FAITH IN SUPERNATURAL METHODS

Another thing you must believe in, are the methods of the supernatural. Being a medical doctor myself, I can understand the difficulty some people would have in the workings of the Holy Spirit. If somebody has a tumor, you operate on the person and cut it out. This is easy to appreciate. However, you must believe that with the laying on of hands, power can be transmitted which will cause sicknesses to vanish.

Believe in the methods of God. Believe in the spoken word. It is funny how unbelievers sometimes believe in the methods of the supernatural more than Christians.

## The Spoken Word

In Luke chapter seven, we read the account of Jesus' encounter with the Centurion whose servant was sick. Jesus began to rush to



the man's house to pray for the servant.

**Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.**

**And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick, and ready to die.**

**And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.**

**And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this:**

**For he loveth our nation and he hath built us a synagogue.**

**Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof:**

**Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but SAY IN A WORD, AND MY SERVANT SHALL BE HEALED.**

**For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.**

**When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.**

**And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.**

**Luke 7:1-10**

However, Jesus was stopped "in his tracks" by the Centurion. The Centurion's message was simple, "I believe in the spoken word. Just stand there and say something. Speak words into the atmosphere. My servant who is some distance away will receive his healing." That was a supernatural method!

**He sent his word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.**

**Psalm 107:20**

### **“Stand There and Say Something!”**

In one of our miracle services there was a lady who had had miscarried several times. Under the anointing, I spoke out from the platform and said, “There is a woman who has been having miscarriages.” Then I said, “Receive your child now!” This lady later testified, “I felt something sharp enter into me. It was almost like an injection. So I turned around to see if anyone was there, but there was no one.”

She went on and testified how from that moment she received her pregnancy and carried it through the nine months. She later carried her baby unto the stage and testified in front of the congregation how the Lord had ministered to her. I am talking about supernatural methods. Before you can receive the supernatural, you must believe in supernatural methods.

### **Laying on of Hands**

A foundational method of the supernatural is the laying on of hands. Things happen when hands are laid on people. I remember a man of God laying hands on me. I felt something like waves of oil coming over me. There was a supernatural impartation of the anointing.

If you believe that the contact of the man of God’s hand with your body will bring about a supernatural transfer of spiritual goods, it will be done unto you according to your faith.

### **The Wind of the Holy Spirit**

Do you remember when Jesus breathed on his disciples and said, “Receive ye the Holy Ghost?”

And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost.

**John 20:22**

Do you remember when the Holy Ghost came into the upper room as a mighty rushing wind? The Holy Spirit operates like a wind. Recently, at one of our miracle services, I was laying hands on all of the people who had come to the altar. One of my pastors later testified, “I had never felt what I felt on that Friday.”

He went on, “As you approached me, a wind began to blow on me. It was a supernatural wind.”

He marveled, “The Holy Spirit is so real.”

I believe in ministering the Holy Spirit through breathing. The Holy Ghost is real.

## **The Anointing Oil**

I believe in the anointing oil. In Mark chapter six, Jesus sent his disciples out to anoint people with oil and pray for them.

**And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and gave them power over unclean spirits;**

**And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:**

**But he shod with sandals; and not put on two coats.**

**And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.**

**And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be**

**more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.  
And they went out, and preached that men should repent.  
And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.**

**Mark 6:7-13**

In James chapter five, the Bible calls for elders and pastors to pray for us and anoint us with oil. There must be something in the oil, when you believe in it.

**Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:**

**James 5:14**

There is something in the oil!

Just a few weeks before Archbishop Benson Idahosa died, he visited me at my headquarters in Accra. A team of other ministers accompanied him. At a point during the tour of our facility, he asked me to kneel down. He then anointed me with oil, and prayed for me.

Suddenly, I felt a burning sensation on my head, where he had anointed me with oil. Initially, I thought that a chemical in the oil was burning me. Later, I found out that it was just ordinary anointing oil.

I believe that the Holy Spirit was imparted to me on that day. My friend, you may not have experienced what I have, but you can if you really want to. As soon as you begin to have faith in the methods of the supernatural, they will come alive to you.

**Anointed Cloth and Anointed Garments**

Do not think that things in the Bible are far-fetched. I have seen many of the things in the Bible happen right before my own eyes. Believe in the transfer of anointing through cloth. If you do not believe in it, it will mean nothing to you and you will not be blessed through this supernatural method.

**And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs [cloth] or aprons [cloth] and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.**

**Acts 19:11,12**

The Bible says that there were times when everyone wanted to touch the hem of Jesus' garments so that they would be made whole.

When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment. For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

**Mark 5:27,28**

Does it sound foolish to you? If it does, than you are natural. I agree that it sounds foolish! How can a piece of cloth do anything for you? **As you become more spiritual, you will be more open to receive through these supernatural methods of the Holy Spirit.**

I believe in teaching. I teach all the time. I preach the Word of God, all the time. However, I cannot be greater than Jesus. He believed in teaching more than I do. The Bible records him going about teaching and preaching in all the villages

**And Jesus went about all Galilee, TEACHING in their synagogues, and PREACHING the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease**

among the people.

**Mark 4:23**

Despite all of this, he also went about performing miracles. Take a pair of scissors and try cutting out the miracles in the Bible and you will only destroy the Word of God.

## **Which is the Best Method?**

Someone may ask, “Which is the method that God is going to use to touch my life?” The answer is simple. The Lord will flow with whichever method you believe in. **The best method for you is the method you believe in most.**

I have noticed that people believe very much in the anointing oil, and it works for them. I want us to study the testimonies of three different people who were healed under the ministry of Jesus.

Jairus, the ruler of the synagogue, received a miracle for his twelve year-old daughter. When he met Jesus, he specifically requested that Christ should come all the way to his house and lay hands on his daughter.

And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet, And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and LAY THY HANDS ON HER, that she may be healed; and she shall live.

**Mark 5:22,23**

You will notice that Jesus responded to the faith of this man. He went to the man's house with Peter, James and John. Laid hands on the daughter as the man had requested, and the miracle occurred.

**AND HE TOOK THE DAMSEL  
BY THE HAND, AND SAID  
UNTO HER, TALITHA CUMI;  
WHICH IS BEING  
INTERPRETED, DAMSEL, I  
SAY UNTO THEE, ARISE. AND  
STRAIGHTWAY THE DAMSEL  
AROSE, AND WALKED; FOR  
SHE WAS OF THE AGE OF  
TWELVE YEARS. AND THEY  
WERE ASTONISHED WITH A  
GREAT ASTONISHMENT.**

**MARK 5:41,42**

Look at the testimony of the woman with the issue of blood. She did not bother to ask the Lord for the laying on of hands. She did not even want to be prayed for. Her confidence was in her ability to get near enough to touch the clothes of the Savior. God honored her faith. As soon as she touched the hem of Jesus' garment, the power of God flowed through Jesus into her body. She was healed instantly of her plague.

For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole. And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague

Why didn't Jesus have to pray for her or anoint her with oil? There was no need. Her belief in that method was sufficient.

Look again at the testimony of the Centurion's servant. The Centurion's servant had developed a critical or terminal illness. He also needed a miracle. The Centurion contacted some elders of the Jews so that they would speak to Jesus on his behalf.

Notice something very interesting here. The faith of the Jews was in Jesus physically coming to the Centurion's home to minister healing. Jesus immediately agreed to flow with the method the Jews believed in. However, when he was a short distance from the Centurion's house he received a message from the Centurion. "Don't bother to come all the way. There is no need to waste your time. Just stand there and say something."

**Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but SAY IN A WORD, AND MY SERVANT SHALL BE HEALED. For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.**

**Luke 7:7,8**

Jesus marveled at how this Centurion had faith in healing through a remote command. Again, he flowed with the request of the miracle seeker.

**Jesus will flow with whatever you desire.** I have learnt to flow with whatever people believe in. If they believe in laying on of hands, I lay hands. It is better to do that since that is where their faith will work! If they believe in the wind of the Holy Ghost, then that will work for them. God is not restricted to one method. He is a merciful father.



## **HAVING FAITH IN THE MAN OF GOD**

I have often wondered, ‘Did Jesus ever pray for anyone who did not get healed?’” If you are normal, you must have prayed for someone who did not receive. I have prayed for people who did not receive anything. This often worried me about the reality of the supernatural. It is natural to be worried about it if there are no results.

But, I have good news for you! You and I are not the only people who could not get miraculous results in certain cases. Even Jesus was restricted! He once ministered in his hometown and received very few results. Why was that? Why was the supernatural not coming forth in Jesus’ ministry? It was because they did not believe in him as an individual.

**AND HE WENT OUT FROM  
THENCE, AND CAME INTO  
HIS OWN COUNTRY; AND HIS  
DISCIPLES FOLLOW HIM.  
AND HE COULD THERE DO  
NO MIGHTY WORK, SAVE  
THAT HE LAID HIS HANDS  
UPON A FEW SICK FOLK,  
AND HEALED THEM. AND HE  
MARVELLED BECAUSE OF**

# THEIR UNBELIEF. AND HE WENT ROUND ABOUT THE VILLAGES, TEACHING.

**MARK 6:1,5**

Several natural questions were raised about his background. They referred to him as a carpenter. Did you know Jesus was a carpenter before he entered full-time ministry? They called up the history of his family. They discussed his family. They discussed his background.

**And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?**

Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

**But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.**

**Mark 6:2-4**

These are natural questions. I want to emphasize that these are not evil questions. They are normal. Anyone who stands for a high office will be subject to scrutiny, discussion and analysis. This is human nature. However, such human behavior can cut us off from the supernatural. **The supernatural cannot flow when you receive the man of God in the wrong way.** Paul said, "Henceforeth I know no man after the flesh."

**Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea,**

**though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now  
henceforth know we him no more.**

**2 Corinthians 5:16**

The Bible does not say that Jesus would not do many great works. Neither does it say that Jesus had decided not to do great works in his hometown.

**And HE COULD THERE DO NO MIGHTY WORK, save  
that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.**

**Mark 6:5**

Mark 6:5 says unambiguously that Jesus COULD NOT do any great works there. He was incapable of the supernatural in his hometown. The natural analysis, questioning and scrutiny of the people brought about this situation. It was also brought about by an attitude of, "Let's see if you can do it again. Let's see if it is real." They said to themselves,

**...WHATSOEVER WE HAVE  
HEARD DONE IN  
CAPERNAUM, DO ALSO HERE  
IN THY COUNTRY. AND HE  
SAID, VERILY I SAY UNTO  
YOU, NO PROPHET IS  
ACCEPTED IN HIS OWN  
COUNTRY.**

**LUKE 4:23,24**

You say you are a miracle worker, perform and let us see! That is why men of God often get greater results when they travel around the world. I know great men of God who never attempt to minister in a certain way until they are out of their own churches.

## **HAVE FAITH THAT THIS IS IT!**

When the Holy Spirit arrived on the day of Pentecost, there was a great uproar in the city. Some people thought that the people speaking in tongues were drunk. Others thought that the disciples were mad. I am sure there was a large group of people who just didn't know what was happening.

Apostle Peter, at the Lord's prompting, rose up in the midst of the confusion and boldly declared, "This is that!" What did he mean by "this is that"?

But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But **THIS IS THAT** which was spoken by the prophet Joel.

Acts 2:14-16

This is that which was spoken of the prophet Joel. **One of the greatest keys to flowing in the supernatural is to believe that what you are seeing is what you have believed for.** Peter could have doubted that he was seeing what the prophet Joel had spoken of. Instead, he boldly declared that he was seeing the supernatural.

The prophet Eli had to point out to Samuel this same truth. He had to tell Samuel, "This is that!" The voice you are hearing is the Holy Ghost.

When you have “this is that” faith you will be able to accept the supernatural happenings in your life. When you hear the voice of the Spirit speaking to your mind, you will no longer say this is just a thought.

One time while ministering, a young lady began to scream, twist and squirm. She had to be held down by four strong men. As I ministered to her she suddenly became still and collapsed to the ground. I wondered to myself, ‘What has happened now?’ The Holy Spirit said to me, “This is that!” This is Acts 8:5-8 reenacted.

**THEN PHILIP WENT DOWN  
TO THE CITY OF SAMARIA,  
AND PREACHED CHRIST  
UNTO THEM. AND THE  
PEOPLE WITH ONCE  
ACCORD GAVE HEED UNTO  
THOSE THINGS WHICH  
PHILIP SPAKE, HEARING AND  
SEEING THE MIRACLES  
WHICH HE DID. FOR  
UNCLEAN SPIRITS, CRYING  
WITH LOUD VOICE, CAME  
OUT OF MANY THAT WERE  
POSSESSED WITH THEM:**

# **AND MANY TAKEN WITH PALSIES, AND THAT WERE LAME, WERE HEALED. AND THERE WAS GREAT JOY IN THAT CITY.**

**ACTS 8:5-8**

That was evil spirits coming out of people screaming and tearing them to the ground. This is what occurred, after Jesus prayed for someone oppressed by an unclean spirit.

**And they brought him [the child] unto him: and when he saw him, straightway THE SPIRIT TARE HIM; AND HE FELL ON THE GROUND, AND WALLOUED FOAMING. And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child. And oftentimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.**

Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

**And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.**

**When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.**

And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

**Mark 9:20-27**

After ministering to a young boy, he screamed, convulsed and fell down as though dead. What was happening? Some modern analysts would have said, “This is postnatal sleep. This is a temporary relief.” But Jesus said, “This is it. He is healed.”

God told me, “This is that which Jesus experienced.” When the lady screamed and jumped around, the Holy Spirit told me, “This is what Jesus saw.”

### **We Had Cast Out All But One**

Many years ago in secondary school, I was involved in casting out thirty-six demons from a young student. For four hours, we struggled trying to deliver the girl from evil powers. Of the thirty-six demons, all had fled with the exception of one. We were left with only one to cast out! We commanded the spirit to go out but somehow we could never bring ourselves to believe that this girl had actually been delivered.

The patron of the Scripture Union was called in. He was an older and experienced Christian. After arriving, he said to the spirit, “I command you to come out in the name of Jesus.” After that he asked the girl (just as we had been doing), “What is your name?” She responded normally just as she had been responding to us. He then turned to us and said, “She is alright.” “What!” I thought, “Is that all?”

You see, this older Christian believed that this was that! This was the deliverance! She was free. Her freedom was proved in the weeks following. After believing that this is that, you must prove all things.

**PROVE ALL THINGS; hold fast that which is good.**

## 1 Thessalonians 5:21

Accept supernatural things but prove them. Flow with them, but test them. I like to call people and ask them, “How come you fell under the power when I prayed for you?”

### It Only Happens to Women?

During one miracle service, I asked a pastor, “Have you ever fallen under the power?”

“Yes!” he answered.

“Were you surprised?” I asked

“Very much!”

“Why were you surprised?”

He laughed and said, “I thought it only happened to women.” He continued, “When you called me forward to pray for me, I said to myself, ‘This thing will never happen to me.’ I came up there with a posture of resisting any such fall. But before I could realize it I was on the floor.”

The power of God hit him and he had no more defenses. He experienced for himself the reality of the anointing.

### IF IT’S REAL, IT’S REAL!

On lady told me, “You have prayed for me many times and I have never fallen under the power. I didn’t believe much in it.” I myself could sense that she didn’t believe much in the power of God.

When you lay hands on people you can sometimes tell whether they are receiving or not. **Some come up with such a natural attitude that you can see that they are cut off from the supernatural. Like Jacob, God is in the room, but they don’t even know it!**

When it got to this lady’s turn to be prayed for, the power of God



went through her and she fell to the ground.

She told me later, “I was so surprised.”

I asked her to stand up again and I prayed for her a second time.

She fell right to the ground like a domino. I sensed that she was surprised so I wanted her to be doubly sure that the power of God was real. I prayed for her the third time. She crumbled to the ground for the third time.

Then I asked the ushers to lift her up again.

She narrated, “After the third time she had decided that this will never happen again!”

“I will not allow myself to fall again.”

I didn’t know what was going on in her mind, but I decided to pray for her again. As soon as my hand touched her, she crumbled vertically to the ground. She lay on the ground as someone unconscious for several minutes. She was later assisted to her seat. I saw her staggering away, helpless under the power of God.

My friend, the supernatural is real. When you move out of natural human thinking, you will begin to receive and experience the supernatural power of God.

## **CHAPTER 3**

# **LAWS OF THE SUPERNATURAL**

Every field of endeavor has its rules and bylaws. You must learn the rules of the supernatural if you want to operate in it. The way God does things is sometimes different from the way we would.

For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

**Isaiah 55:8,9**

Supernatural healing is different from natural healing. One of the biggest questions facing all miracle ministries is, ‘Why is everyone not healed?’ Another question is: “Why do some people seem to have all the blessings and others have no blessings at all?”

The existence of these questions in your mind can keep you away from experiencing the supernatural. Please remember that there were questions in the mind of Jesus’ hometown. They questioned his background as well as his source of power. Generally speaking, they were questioning the validity of his ministry.

## **THE LAW OF DIVINE SELECTION**

There is an interesting account of when Jesus visited a hospital. There were many sick people there yet he healed only one patient.

**NOW THERE IS AT  
JERUSALEM BY THE SHEEP  
MARKET A POOL, WHICH IS  
CALLED IN THE HEBREW  
TONGUE BETHESDA, HAVING  
FIVE PORCHES.**

**In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.**

**For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and**

troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever the disease he had.

## **AND A CERTAIN MAN WAS THERE, WHICH HAD AN INFIRMITY THIRTY AND EIGHT YEARS.**

When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

### **JOHN 5:2-9**

The Bible tells us that Jesus did not attempt to have a miracle service in the hospital. Jesus singled out one man and ministered to him. The descriptions we have from the above verses tell us that there were several very ill people in the same place. My natural mind tells me that if God were to come into a hospital in person, where there are many ill people, he would heal everyone and discharge all of them from the hospital.

My dream has always been that if God were to give me a miracle ministry I would go into a big hospital, minister to everyone and discharge them from the hospital. However, that is not the case.

**Jesus had a miracle ministry but he did not discharge everyone from the hospital.** He discharged only one person. The question is why? The answer is, "I don't know!"

The supernatural operates by the law of divine selection. Jesus spoke about this law in Luke chapter 4. He said, that there were many widows in the days of Elijah the prophet, however, only one widow received a miracle. God knows about the masses of human suffering and He cares. It seems to me that when God is ministering, He selects out of the masses and ministers to some.

There were many sick and dying lepers in the days of Naaman the Syrian. Jesus again spoke about how Naaman was divinely selected for a miracle. Some people may say it is because of their faith. Others may say it is because of the anointing on the man of God. Some other Bible teachers can give us twenty-five reasons why people don't get healed. What I would simply say is that there is a law of divine selection. We do not understand everything. Nobody does! The Bible says that we are looking through a glass dimly. We neither see or know everything!

**FOR NOW WE SEE THROUGH  
A GLASS, DARKLY; BUT  
THEN FACE TO FACE: NOW I  
KNOW IN PART; BUT THEN  
SHALL I KNOW EVEN AS  
ALSO I AM KNOWN.  
1 CORINTHIANS 13:12**

As the song goes, "We will understand it better by and by." Somebody may ask the question, "Why then do pastors preach as if everyone is going to be healed?" They ask, "Why do evangelists raise our hopes when we may not get healed?"

Dear friend, there is no other way to raise up the faith of people except you stand boldly and speak in faith. Any pastor who begins his sermon by saying, “Some will not be blessed in this miracle service,” is not raising up the faith of the people.

**If you want miracles, you have to preach faith. If you want the power of God, you have to preach about the power of God.** Jesus preached about the anointing. He said, “The spirit of the Lord is upon me.” He spoke about how God had anointed him. When you preach about the anointing, the anointing will flow. When you talk about healing, healing will happen. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word (Romans 10:17).

As a pastor who cares for his sheep very much, I pray for miracles and breakthroughs for my people. I once prayed for a group of ladies who had not been able to have children. Some of them became pregnant and now have their children. Some years later I prayed again and some that had not been able to have children still did not have any children. Some who already had a child, were blessed with supernatural pregnancies.

I would ask myself, “Oh God! Why don’t you share this thing evenly? So many don’t have any children at all, why don’t you at least answer their prayers and give at least everybody one child?” Jesus made it very clear in his sermon. There are many sick people like Naaman, who need help. There are many more poor people like the widow of Sarepta, who need a financial miracle. But God will have His own way of ministering to them.

When it comes to the supernatural move of the Holy Spirit, you can often not tell what God will do. We do know that He will do something. But we do not always know “who” He will do it for and why He will do it.

## **THE LAW OF HUMILITY**

When you study the testimony of the woman with the issue of blood, you will realize that she had been through many things.

**AND A CERTAIN WOMAN,  
WHICH HAD AN ISSUE OF  
BLOOD TWELVE YEARS, AND  
HAD SUFFERED MANY  
THINGS OF MANY  
PHYSICIANS, AND HAD  
SPENT ALL THAT SHE HAD,  
AND WAS NOTHING  
BETTERED, BUT RATHER  
GREW WORSE,  
MARK 5:25,26**

The Bible records that she had been bleeding in this manner for twelve years. It declares that she had suffered at the hands of several doctors. She had been humiliated time and time again by different doctors. Even with modern medicine, women with gynecological problems have humiliating experiences at the hands of different doctors. I wonder what it was like two thousand years ago.

By the time this woman came to Jesus, she had no confidence in herself. She had no hope in man. She had no trust in human

medicine. She had been completely softened by the experiences of life. This had made her humble and open to receive. The Bible says that God resists the proud, but He gives grace to the humble.  
**God gives miracles and blessings to humble people.**

When you are proud, you often don't know it. Experiences of life can calm you down and allow you to begin to trust in the grace of God. Don't be worried by the difficult times you are going through. Perhaps, you are on the road of humility. God is breaking down your resistance. He is causing you to be ready and open to receive grace. Your day for a miracle is around the corner.

This woman did not even want to meet Jesus. All she wanted to do was to touch the tip of Jesus' trousers. That is humility indeed! Humble yourself in the sight of God and He will raise you up!

**Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:**

**1 Peter 5:6**

## **THE LAW OF REPEATED AND SUSTAINED MINISTRATION**

I have also thought that if God ministers to you, you should instantly recover. This is a natural expectation. However, I have come to see that there is often a need for repeated and sustained ministration to the same person. You will see this law in operation many times in the Bible.

A common example, is when Naaman was asked to dip himself in the River Jordan seven times. He was asked to bath seven different times in the same river. The question is why not once? Why not three times? Why not six times? The answer is, "I don't know." God wanted to bless Naaman after the seventh ministration.

**AND ELISHA SENT A  
MESSENGER UNTO HIM,  
SAYING, GOD AND WASH IN  
JORDAN SEVEN TIMES, AND  
THY FLESH SHALL COME  
AGAIN TO THEE, AND THOU  
SHALT BE CLEAN. THE  
WENT HE DOWN, AND  
DIPPED HIMSELF SEVEN  
TIMES IN JORDAN,  
ACCORDING TO THE SAYING  
OF THE MAN OF GOD: AND  
HIS FLESH CAME AGAIN  
LIKE UNTO THE FLESH OF A  
LITTLE CHILD, AND HE WAS  
CLEAN.**

**2 KINGS 5:10,14**

Elijah prayed for rain seven times. On seven different occasions, he sent his assistant to look at the clouds.



**...And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees. And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go again SEVEN TIMES.**

**1 Kings 18:42,43**

There was no sign of rain until after the seventh prayer.

**And it came to pass at the SEVENTH TIME, that he said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand...**

**1 Kings 18:42-44**

After that session, Elijah's assistant noticed a very small cloud in the form of a man's hand. I see God giving you a miracle. I see the miracle appearing after several ministrations. Do not be tired of being prayed for. Greater men had to pray seven times and were not angry with God.

When Elijah prayed for a dead boy, he prayed three times.

**AND HE STRETCHED  
HIMSELF UPON THE CHILD  
THREE TIMES, AND CRIED  
UNTO THE LORD, AND SAID,  
O LORD MY GOD, I PRAY  
THEE, LET THIS CHILD'S  
SOUL COME INTO HIM**

**AGAIN. AND THE LORD  
HEARD THE VOICE OF  
ELIJAH; AND THE SOUL OF  
THE CHILD CAME INTO HIM  
AGAIN, AND HE REVIVED.**

**1 KINGS 17:21,22**

He lay on the boy three times and prayed. Is this just a mystical ritual? No it is not! It is the law of sustained and repeated ministrations at work.

Do you remember when Joshua led the people of God around the walls of Jericho? They had the greatest breakthrough of their lives. But it came only after the seventh round of ministration.

**And it came to pass at the SEVENTH time, when the priests blew with the trumpets, Joshua said unto the people, Shout; for the Lord hath given you the city. So the people shouted when the priests blew with the trumpets... that the wall fell down flat...**

**JOSHUA 6:16,20**

The walls of opposition in your life are crumbling right now in the name of Jesus! Keep up the sustained ministration. You may be anointed seven times, before your miracle will finally come. I see the walls of hindrance to your marriage crumbling before the mighty anointing of the Holy Ghost. Walls erected by the devil and his agents cannot keep you out of his blessings.

**As you read this book, the power of God is flowing into you to bring the gates of wickedness and the high things in your**

**life crashing down.** Receive a divine blessing from the Lord right now!

Study the ministry of Jesus. He prayed for a blind man in Mark 8:24

**AND HE COMETH TO  
BETHSAIDA; AND THEY  
BRING A BLIND MAN UNTO  
HIM, AND BESOUGHT HIM TO  
TOUCH HIM. AND HE TOOK  
THE BLIND MAN BY THE  
HAND, AND LED HIM OUT OF  
THE TOWN; AND WHEN HE  
HAD SPIT ON HIS EYES, AND  
PUT HIS HANDS UPON HIM,  
HE ASKED HIM IF HE SAW  
OUGHT. AND HE LOOKED  
UP, AND SAID, I SEE MEN AS  
TREES, WALKING. AFTER  
THAT HE PUT HIS HANDS  
AGAIN UPON HIS EYES, AND**

# **MADE HIM LOOK UP; AND HE WAS RESTORED, AND SAW EVERY MAN CLEARLY. MARK 8:22-25**

After the first ministration, the man saw men as trees. **Even Jesus had to minister a second time before the miracle finally came through.** Someone may ask, “If he was truly the Son of God why did he have to pray twice?” That was the law of repeated ministration at work.

If you have the time, study about the Holy Spirit in the New Testament. The disciples did not receive the Holy Spirit only once. In John 20:24, Jesus breathed on them and said receive ye the Holy Ghost. That was their first anointing.

**And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, RECEIVE YE THE HOLY GHOST.**

**John 20:24**

Later in Acts 2, the disciples received a baptism of the power of the Holy Spirit.

**And THEY WERE FILLED WITH THE HOLY GHOST, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.**

**Acts 2:4**

In Acts 4, the Bible says that they were filled with the Holy Ghost again.

**And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and THEY WERE ALL FILLED**

**WITH THE HOLY GHOST, and they spake the word of God with boldness.**

**Acts 4:31**

If the first filling was enough, then why did the Bible show this three times? This was the law of repeated ministration. I love praying for my church members – it is very biblical. One day, something will happen and their lives will never be the same again.

### **THE LAW OF SPIRITUAL TIMING**

It is a known fact that we all need a blessing from the Lord. It is important to understand the law of the timing of miracles. Why did Jesus come into the earth only two thousand years ago? The Bible says when the time was right, God sent his son.

**BUT WHEN THE FULNESS OF  
THE TIME WAS COME, GOD  
SENT FORTH HIS SON, MADE  
OF A WOMAN, MADE UNDER  
THE LAW,  
GALATIANS 4:4**

Jesus was a gift of God to the Jews, but in the day of their divine blessing, they did not receive it. **It is important for you to recognize the time of your visitation.** Just as you have a time when you do certain things. God has a time in his timetable when he is going to bless you with certain gifts.

## **God's Timing is Best**

In 1988, God placed me in the office of a teacher. At another time, he placed on me the anointing to pastor. He then gave me an anointing to minister prophetically and later an anointing to minister miracles. Why didn't he do it all at once? God had a time for your breakthrough. As you flow with Him, you will come into special days for your life and you will be truly blessed.

Do not be angry with God because He is keeping to His schedule. God may not come when you want Him to come. But He will come in time. Be a man or woman of understanding. You will have your miracle baby. You will have your healing. You will have your financial breakthrough. Trust in the Lord with all your heart and understand the time. When it is your time, walk in it and be blessed.

## **PROPHECY FOR YOUR BREAKTHROUGH**

For there shall come a time, saith the Lord, when you will not seek for miracles but you will seek for my wholeness. When you seek after me, I will add unto you all things that are necessary.

Fear not my little flock, for I have laid a table for you in the presence of your enemies. Do not be afraid of the enemies you see all around you.

For in that day, saith the Lord, I will pour out my anointing so strong that you will taste of my goodness and my mercies. Those that despise you will stand and declare, "The Lord has done great things for them."



## *THE SUCCESSFUL LEADER*



# *The Successful Leader*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-99-4*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*

## ***Contents***

<i>1. Everything Depends on the Leadership .....</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>2. Rally People Around You .....</i>	<i>6</i>
<i>3. Choose Hard And Difficult Things Instead Of Nice And Easy Things .....</i>	<i>12</i>
<i>4. Readily Embrace New Ideas.....</i>	<i>15</i>
<i>5. Value People .....</i>	<i>18</i>
<i>6. Spend Any Amount Of Money And Time To Get A Book .....</i>	<i>21</i>
<i>7. See Ahead! Prepare For the Future! .....</i>	<i>26</i>
<i>8. Always Learn New Things.....</i>	<i>29</i>
<i>9. Know Your Strengths And Flow In Them! .....</i>	<i>31</i>
<i>10. Be Ready For A Long Fight! .....</i>	<i>34</i>
<i>11. Count Your Pennies! .....</i>	<i>36</i>
<i>12. Tell The Truth .....</i>	<i>38</i>
<i>13. Don't Loose Your Focus .....</i>	<i>40</i>

## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth*

### **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

### **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

### **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

### **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

### **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse,*

### **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

### **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

### **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

### **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

### **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues*

### **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

### **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

### **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

### **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

### **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has*



## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*

*For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to:*

*Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa*

Website:

*[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)*

E-mail:

*[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)*

## **TABLE OF CONTENTS**

1. *Everything Rises or Falls on Leadership*
2. *Decide to Become One of the Few Good Leaders in this World*
3. *Rally People Around You*
4. *Interact with the Great and the Small*
5. *Choose Hard and Difficult Things Instead of Nice and Easy Things*
6. Readily Embrace New Ideas
7. Value People
8. Know About the Power of Habits and Develop Good Habits
9. Spend Any Amount of Money and Time to Get a Book
10. Start Humble and End Humble
11. *Build Something if You Are a Leader!*
12. See Ahead! Prepare for the Future
13. *Take Your Privileges at the Right Time and for the Right reason*
14. Always Learn New Things
15. *Know Your Strengths and Flow in Them!*
16. Be Ready For a Long Fight!
17. *Know Where You Are! Know where you Are Not! And You Will Know Where to Go!*
18. Don't Give Up Your Source of Power!
19. Count Your Pennies
20. *Be Constantly Aware of Your Life's Vision*
21. *Strive For Excellence*
22. *Tell the Truth*
23. *Maintain Personal Integrity*
24. *Concentrate*

## *About the Book*

### **Introduction**

# 1

## EVERYTHING RISES AND FALLS ON LEADERSHIP

*For, behold, the Lord, the Lord of hosts, doth take away from Jerusalem and from Judah the stay and the staff, the whole stay of bread, and the whole stay of water,*

*The mighty man, and the man of war, the judge, and the prophet, and the prudent, and the ancient,*

*The captain of the fifty, and the honourable man, and the counsellor, and the cunning artificer, and the eloquent orator.*

*And I will give children to be their princes, and babes shall rule over them. And the people shall be oppressed, every one by another, and every one by his neighbour: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honourable.*

*When a man shall take hold of his brother of the house of his father, saying, Thou hast clothing, be thou our ruler, and let this ruin be under thy hand:*

*In that day shall he swear, saying, I will not be an*

***healer; for in my house is neither bread nor clothing: make me not a ruler of the people.***

***As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and to destroy the way of thy paths.***

**Isaiah 3:1-7,12**

*In this scripture, God predicts a mighty judgement on Jerusalem and on Judah. God had determined to punish and destroy those nations. How was He going to do it? The scriptures make it very clear. God was going to take away all kinds of leaders from the community. The community was going to be left leaderless. Almighty God knows this principle very well: no leader, no progress! No leader, no development! No leader, no blessing! No leader, and no deliverance! God knew that the community would fall into judgment if He removed leaders from their midst. This is because everything rises and falls on leadership.*

*Almighty God was unleashing one of the most terrible punishments anyone, nation or group of people could ever have. That is to have no leaders. If you look closely at this scripture, you will see that God was predicting the removal of every type of leader from the community,*

*...the Lord doth take away... the mighty man, the man of war, the judge, the prophet, the prudent, the ancient, the captain of fifty, the honourable man, the eloquent orator...*

*If you study this list closely, you will come to the frightening realization that the community is left without anyone who can lead the people in any aspect. Pastors were taken away. Politicians were taken away. Senior citizens were taken away. Wise people were taken away. They were all taken away*

*from the community. This is what I call a headless society. A body without a head is no body. A church without a true leader is truly pathetic! A nation without a real leader is cursed! Truly every nation rises and falls based on its leaders.*

*This was probably one of the most severe judgments that God could give to his people – the removal of all kinds of leaders. As you know, nature abhors a vacuum. And in place of real leaders Jehovah predicted the rise of bogus leadership,*

**And I will give CHILDREN to be their princes, and BABES shall rule over them...**

*These children and babies represent incapable and useless leaders. It is obvious that a baby cannot rule his own bowels, how much more rule a nation. Some years ago I asked a friend who he would vote for in the upcoming elections. He hesitated, so I asked a more direct question. I asked, “Will you vote for President X?”*

*At that point he responded and said, “If I had to choose between your four-year old son, David, and President X, I would certainly prefer to vote for your four-year-old son.”*

*He continued and said, “I would rather vote for a goat to be our President than for that person.”*

*It is obvious that neither my son or a goat would be able to help our nation very much. To have the leadership of children or babies, or as this person said, a goat, is certainly a curse.*

*What would be the result of having such inappropriate and flunkey leaders? The Bible has the answers.*

**The people shall be oppressed, everyone by another and eve-**

**ryone by his neighbour: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient,**

*Have you not seen this picture anywhere? Oppression, injustice, intimidation and the proliferation of all sorts of evil. What gives rise to rebels in Africa and thousands of young people in a drug culture in Europe and America?*

*Almost every bad situation within the church can be attributed to the lack of a good leader. Church splits and scandals are often the result of a lack of strong leadership. The scripture we read above tells us how God was going to curse the land by taking away leaders. Churches rise and fall on leadership. With a good strong leader a church will grow into a mega church. With bad leadership churches don't go anywhere even if the pastor is very anointed. You sometimes see an anointed minister who has bad leadership qualities. His ministry usually falls into chaos because of bad leadership qualities.*

*Leadership is an art. It is a secular subject which is necessary for ministers of the gospel to understand. The ability to write and read is not a spiritual thing it is a secular skill which needs to be learned. Without that ability you are going nowhere in this world. Same thing for leadership! Without the knowledge and skills of leadership your ministry is going nowhere.*

### ***Africa without leaders***

A debate I often get into with friends is about the state of the African continent. I often marvel at the lack of development and the level of poverty in Africa. And ask myself, "What is it? Can we



not build our own roads? Why do we need a foreign company to build roads and toilets for us?" It would be very unusual to go to a European country and find foreign companies engaged in building roads or toilets in that country. Why is there so much suffering and sickness in developing countries?

There are many theories that have attempted to explain the condition of poor and unstable nations. Some people say that there is a curse on the Black man. Others claim that it is a lack of democracy. And some even think that there is a curse on the African continent. I believe that the principal reason for the poor state of affairs is the lack of good leaders.

Whenever there is a good leader, you will notice a great deal of development and you will notice prosperity. The absence of leaders can be seen clearly in two worlds. You will notice the absence of leaders in the natural or secular world. You can also notice the absence of leaders in the spiritual or church world. When there is a lack of leadership in the Church world you will notice the same signs of a lack of development of ministry, poverty, lack of teaching and a lack of knowledge, and the proliferation of sin.

## **Churches without leaders**

*In a nation where there is little or no good leadership, you will notice the rise of false leaders, rebels and pirates. In the Church, the lack of true leadership gives rise to the proliferation of sin and evil doers as well as false church leaders. The lack of real leaders in a church causes many people to lose their souls, die and go to hell. How can this be?*

*A real leader in the church will lead the congregation to*

*win souls and do missionary work. Whenever the church's leadership stopped concerning itself with the lost and dying souls, false religions and alternative faiths crept in and took over.*

*This is why I am writing this book. There is a need for leaders in every sphere of life. There is a need for genuine leaders in the secular world. There is a genuine need for leaders in the church world. It is my prayer that God will raise you and many others up to be true leaders for your generation! Truly, everything rises and falls on leadership!*

# 2

## DECIDE TO BECOME ONE OF THE FEW GOOD LEADERS IN THIS WORLD

*It is obvious that there are not many good leaders around. If there were many real leaders, you and I would know it immediately! I believe that there are many reasons why there are few leaders.*

### **Four Reasons Why People Avoid Leadership Responsibilities**

#### *1. Many People Do Not Know That They Are Leaders.*

No one has told them so! They don't even know that they have the capacity to lead. Some people think that few people are born to lead. I do not believe that few people are born to lead. I believe that many people are born with the ability to lead but many people are not prepared to pay the price to become leaders.

**So the last shall be first, and the first last: for MANY BE  
CALLED, but few chosen.**

**Matthew 20:16**

**For MANY ARE CALLED, but few are chosen.**

**Matthew 22:14**

The Bible teaches us that many are called to service. Anyone who yields himself to the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ becomes an automatic leader. *A minister of the gospel has to demonstrate leadership qualities and abilities all the time.* If you believe that you are called to the ministry, then you are called to leadership. That is why this book is very important for your life. So that you would be a good leader for the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul wrote to Timothy and told him to do certain things. He said that if you say these things, you will be a good minister. There are good ministers and bad ministers. Decide to be a good minister!

**...thou shalt be A GOOD MINISTER of Jesus Christ...**

**1 Timothy 4:6**

If you are going to be effective in the ministry, you must study leadership. Whenever I go into a bookshop, I find myself gravitating towards the leadership section. I have read countless books on leadership. I have studied this all-important subject. I want to be a good leader. Certain things do not drop on you like ripe mangoes from a tree. You have to study and discover all that there is to learn.

## **2. People Fear That They Will Be Accused And Hated.**

*Leaders are often accused of being ambitious. They are often accused of having bad motives. I was very surprised when I heard of some people of being in the ministry for money. But God spoke to me and told me that it was inevitable that I should be accused. Every good leader has many enemies. The nature of good leadership is that it charts out a course and maintains the direction. This means that you may cross over and hurt certain*

*people.*

*And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me,  
cannot be my disciple.*

*Luke 14:27*

Many years ago I told a brother that I did not want to be a leader in the fellowship. I told him that I was a quiet person and that I enjoyed my privacy. Because of this, I told him that I did not want to preach or lead. But God had another plan for me and today I am a leader in God's house. Becoming a leader will cost you your valued life. I have very little private life left. Most people know a lot of things about me. I am discussed in the people's homes and cars. Like all leaders, I am praised by some and criticized by others. This is the lot of a leader. This is why some people shun leadership. But Jesus said that you should take up the cross and follow Him. Christianity involves sacrifice. It is worth becoming a leader within the church.

### **3. People Do Not Want To End Up Disgraced And Hated As Many Prominent Leaders Have.**

*There are many leaders who have ended up in disgrace after taking up the mantle of leadership. Others have experienced terrible hurts and bitter experiences. Some have been crucified by the people they led.*

*I have personally watched how leaders been rewarded with evil for many years of service. I have seen several (and I mean several) churches throw out their pastor after he has led them for many years. I have seen pastors ridiculed and humiliated by members whom they have ministered to for years at great expense. I have watched pastors being rejected over*

*issues like cars and houses. How sad! We all know how Jesus was crucified after three and a half years of ministry. That was His reward for being a shining light to His people.*

*In my country, I have seen several Heads of State come to unnatural deaths after ruling the nation for some years. We have seen judges being murdered in “cold blood” after delivering judgments they thought was right. Who then would like to be a leader in such an environment? When you study the fate of the leaders around, it is only natural that people shun leadership and choose a quiet life of peace and anonymity. I can understand why somebody would stay away from the world of lying politicians and corrupt leadership.*

*In this book, I am urging you to take up the mantle of Christian leadership. I am urging you to take up the call to leadership in the church. It is worth it! The challenges are very similar to secular leadership. The accusations are often the same. But it is worth it!*

*Secular leaders work for human rewards like money and fame. But these are perishable rewards. When you work for Jesus you receive an everlasting reward.*

***...Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.***

**1 Corinthians 9:25**

*There are many times that I have experienced the pains of being in leadership. But when I think of the rewards that await those who faithfully do the will of God I become encouraged. I know that one day I will be glad about everything.*

*Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

*For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.*

*Hebrews 12:2,3*

#### **4. People Think That They Are Not Good Enough To Be Leaders.**

*Some people think that they are not morally up to the standard. Others think that they have no leadership qualities. Others feel that they have too many personal problems to become leaders. They cannot imagine being saddled with other people's problems.*

*I have good news for you today! God does not work with perfect people. He works with willing people. He looks at the heart and He understands your human weakness. If Jesus was looking for perfection, I can assure you that none of the disciples would have qualified for leadership positions in the church. Take Peter, for example, he betrayed the Lord Jesus three times a few weeks before he was ordained. He swore and cursed as though he had received no training. Yet, the Lord used him. Take the other disciples, who argued over their position in heaven. "Who would be the greatest," they asked.*

**And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.**

**Luke 22:24**

After arguing over who would be the greatest, they all de-

sented Christ when He needed them most. Would you trust such people? Would you use such people? Yet the Lord did! You do not have to be perfect to become a leader. If that was the case, then there would be no leaders in the world or in the church. This does not mean that there are no standards. God expects the highest standards of character and morality. And yet, He works with imperfect people.

*God looks at the heart. Make sure that your heart is right and God will be able to use you.*

*...for the Lord seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.*

*1 Samuel 16:7*

## **5. Most People Are Too Selfish To Be Leaders.**

*They care only about themselves. They are happy to have salvation. They are happy to have the Holy Spirit. They are happy to have prosperity. But they couldn't care a less about anybody else. "Once I am okay," they think, "Everything is okay." That is a spirit of selfishness.*

*A selfish person cannot be bothered to go through any training or sacrifice in order to become a leader. He will not expend any energy to help another soul. If Christ had decided to stay in the comfort of heaven, where would you be today? He rose out of the grave and you cannot even get out of bed. I rebuke that spirit of laziness and selfishness. Thank God for the gift of the missionary. Thank God for people who traveled away from their homes into foreign cultures just because they wanted to help somebody.*



# 3

## ***RALLY PEOPLE AROUND YOU***

*...Rezon, the son of Eliadah...*

*And he gathered men unto him, and became captain over a band...*

**1 Kings 11:23,24**

This man Rezon became a leader in his time. The Bible tells us that he gathered people unto himself. Every true leader is able to rally a team of people around himself. Jesus gathered a team of twelve people around Himself. He lived with them and fellowshiped with them for three and a half years. Decide to be a gathering point for people. Whatever is offensive and whatever scatters people in your personality must be dealt with if you take leadership seriously. Learn how to speak without offending and scattering people.

### **25 Steps To Rally People Around**

*1. Make People Feel That You Really Want Them Around You.*

2. Appreciate The People Around You. *Rejoice with the people around you over their little successes and breakthroughs. Their joy will increase when they feel there is another person rejoicing with them.*

3. Genuinely Admire Peoples Cars. *Cars, houses and clothes represent peoples choices and achievements. If you admire and respect peoples choices and achievements you are admiring them personally! They will naturally warm up to you!*

4. Genuinely Admire Peoples Houses.

5. Genuinely Admire Peoples Furniture.

6. Commend People About Their Dressing.

7. Show People That You Respect Them No Matter Whom They Are Or What They Have. *People will warm up to you once they know you respect them. In this world, many people are not respected. Generally speaking, Black people are often not respected by White people. In my opinion, Europeans and Americans do not respect Africans. Some tribes are also despised and hated. People are looking for someone who genuinely respects them in spite of where they come from, who they are or how much money they have. Anyone who has this ability to respect people, no matter who they are, will have people rallying around him.*

8. Be Conscious Of People Who Have Inferiority Complexes And Treat Them Carefully.

9. Never Tease Someone Who Does Not Like Being Teased. *There*

*are some people who hate being teased. Often this is because of a complex they had from childhood.*

*10. Call People By Their Names Soon After You Have Met Them. No one likes to feel that he is a mere number. People will warm up to you when they realize that you know them by name. They will be even more touched if you call them by their pet name.*

*11. Show Interest In Peoples Personal Lives. Ask about their homes, jobs and schools. People need to feel that the leader has a genuine interest in their lives.*

*12. Show An Interest In Peoples Aspirations, Visions And Goals. When you are only interested in your vision and goal people will silently withdraw from you. When they sense that you have an interest in making them successful they will rally around you.*

*13. Offer Food And Drinks To Visitors Whenever You Can. When I was in university I visited many people on campus. I always remember a particular lady called Adelaide Baiden. Whenever we would go to her room she would offer us something to eat. Many times she and her roommate shared their supper with us. This made her room a natural rallying point. If you want to be a natural rallying point, learn to offer food and drinks to visitors anytime you can.*

*14. Listen To Peoples Problems. Learn the art of listening rather than talking. When you allow people to talk about themselves they psychologically feel that they are closer to you. This makes them rally around you.*

*15. Let The Conversation Centre Around Others And What They Are Doing Rather Than Yourself And What You Are. It is vain to*

*have self-centred conversations. If your conversations are all about yourself, your achievements, your vision, etc. people will soon be tired of listening to you and move away.*

16. *Be An Encourager.* Always notice when somebody has made an effort to achieve something. Perhaps they sang a song or did a new hairstyle. Even if you didn't like it, appreciate the effort that was made. There is no need to say that you didn't like what they did. All you need to do is to notice the effort and appreciate it.

17. *Say Thank You For Everything.* *It is better for people to think that you are saying thank you too much than for them to feel that you are ungrateful.*

18. *Smile.* *People gravitate around smiling and friendly people. We know that we are not perfect and we do not need a stern, frowning person to remind us of our failings. People need someone to encourage them that in spite of their failings, they are accepted.*

19. *Do Not Be Partial.* *One of the first things that people notice about leaders is when they are partial. The Bible says that it is not wise to be partial. "But the wisdom that is from above is... WITHOUT PARTIALITY..." (James 3:17). Even little children notice when their parents are partial toward one child. No one wants to follow someone who is biased and partisan without cause. What about if you fall into his bad books without knowing it? It is difficult to live in a country where the head of state begins to dislike you because of unsubstantiated tales. It is difficult to work in an organization where the boss can begin to dislike you based on a new feeling he has.*

20. *Give Gifts Whenever There Is An Opportunity, Give A Gift.*

A gift makes room for a man. “A man’s gift maketh room for him, and bringeth him before great men.” (Proverbs 18:16). This means that a space is created within the person’s heart for you. You will be accepted and the person will rally around you.

21. Mourn With People Who Are Mourning. *Times of sorrow are some of the most remembered times in peoples lives. If you remember them during that period they will never forget you. I have had people joining my church simply because I was by their side when their parents died.*

22. Go The Extra Mile To Help Someone. *Whenever you help someone in need he remembers you. People see when you make the extra effort and it touches their heart. When you ask them to rally around you for a cause, they will be there because they remember how you helped them. I assure you of this one thing: if you do not sow a seed of help in someone’s life, no one will help you in the future.*

23. Be Friendly, Greet People In A Pleasant Way. *Be easygoing, be sociable: shake hands, hug them, give a pat on the back, be affable and pleasant. Warmth is attractive. A cold and crisp person is not a natural rallying point.*

24. Be Concerned When Listening To People’s Problems. *When listening to people’s problems, your facial expression must show deep concern and interest. Try to pick up the details and show that you are following the story.*

25. Notice Peoples Absence. *People are offended when they find out that you did not even notice when they were away. How could they important to you if you did not even notice their absence.*

*These twenty-five steps will make you a natural rallying point and a natural leader.*

# 4

## INTERACT WITH THE GREAT AND THE SMALL

*A good leader will interact with two main groups of people: the great (humanly speaking) and the small (humanly speaking). Humanly speaking, the great people are the nobles, the rich, the influential and powerful people of society. There are not many of such people in the church.*

*For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:*

*1 Corinthians 1:26*

*The “small” speak of the poor, the down-and-out, and the people of little material substance.*

### **Four Reasons Why It Is Important To Relate**

## **With The Great**

*1. Jesus Interacted With Great People. Jesus interacted with Nicodemus privately. Jesus honoured several invitations to dine with influential and powerful people. These interactions were so important that they were recorded in the Bible.*

**There was a man of the Pharisees, named NICODEMUS, A RULER OF THE JEWS:**

**The same came to Jesus by night...**

**John 3:1,2**

**When the even was come, there came A RICH MAN OF ARIMATHAEA, NAMED JOSEPH, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:**

**Matthew 27:57**

*2. Great People Have Their Role To Play In The Church. Some of them will play vital roles for the church such as Joseph of Arimathaea, who acquired the body of Jesus. This was an important fulfilment of scripture.*

*When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph...*

*And when Joseph had taken the body [of Jesus], he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,*

*And laid it IN HIS OWN NEW TOMB, which he had hewn out in the rock:...*

**Matthew 27:57,59,60**

*3. Great People Are Used By God To Finance The Gospel. If you think that everyone will contribute the same amount of money*

*to the work of God, then you are ignorant and inexperienced. God raises up certain people so that the income of some churches is far more than other poorer ones. This creates a necessary balance so that the work of God can go on among both poor and rich people.*

**As it is written, He that had GATHERED MUCH had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack.**

**2 Corinthians 8:15**

4. The Contribution Of One Influential Person Can Result In The Salvation Of An Entire Nation. *Esther's strategic relationship with the king was the one factor that saved the entire nation of Israel from being wiped out by Haman. Her uncle reminded her that she was strategically placed for the salvation of an entire nation.*

***...who knoweth whether thou art come to the kingdom for such a time as this?***

**Esther 4:14**

*A Christian billionaire once told me of how he used his relationship with the president of a country to secure the permission for open-air crusades that had hitherto been banned in that country.*

## **Three Reasons Why it is Important to Relate with the Poor**

1. The Principal Calling Of Christ Was To The Poor. *When Jesus spoke of the anointing on His life He was specific about whom His anointing would affect. He specifically said that He had*



*been anointed to preach the gospel to poor people. We are Christ's body and that same anointing is on us.*

**The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath ANOINTED ME TO PREACH THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,**

**To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.**

**Luke 4:18,19**

2. Most People In The World Are Poor, Therefore Our Ministries Must Reach The Poor. *If we are to bear much fruit, a lot of the fruit will be among the poor people.*

3. The Sign Of A Higher Anointing Is That We Are Ministering To The Poor. *Today, most ministers are excited if they are able to visit with the president of a country. They gladly take pictures with presidents and publish them in their monthly magazines. There is nothing wrong with this. However, when Jesus was asked whether the great messianic ministry had arrived on earth, he replied that poor people have the gospel preached to them. It takes a higher anointing to minister to poor people.*

**And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?**

**Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see:**

**The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and THE POOR HAVE THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO THEM.**

**Matt 11:3-5**

## **Three Reasons Why it is Difficult to Minister to the Poor**

*1. The Poor Cannot Pay For The Gospel. Almost every ministry to poor people must be pre-financed. Books must be paid for, crusades must be paid for, salaries must be paid by others, etc.*

*2. The Poor Do Not Understand The Gospel. Poor people have many problems. Their reasoning is affected by the many problems that surround them. Poor people are often frustrated and desperate. They cannot understand why God will give heaven to us when things are so bad on earth. Can He not first make some changes on earth? How can there be a solution to my problems through Bible study?*

*3. The Poor Sometimes See You As The Cause Of Their Problems. In my dealings with poor people I have learnt that many of them actually see their help as the source of their problems. Many poor people are also too proud to receive help.*

## **Five Types of People You Cannot Help**

*1. People Who Do Not Accept The Biblical Solution To Their Problems.*

*2. People Who Do Not Think That They Have A Problem.*

*3. People Who Feel Too Proud To Receive Help.*

*4. People Who Think You Are Their Problem.*

*5. People Who Think That You Are The Cause Of Their Problem.*

# 5

## CHOOSE HARD AND DIFFICULT THINGS INSTEAD OF NICE AND EASY THINGS

**Now is my soul troubled; and what SHALL I SAY? FATHER, SAVE ME FROM THIS HOUR: but for this cause came I unto this hour.**

**John 12:27**

*By choosing hard and difficult things instead of nice and easy things you will make yourself a natural leader. Most people choose nice and easy things. That is why most people are on the broad and easy way that leads to hell.*

If you choose things that are hard and difficult instead of things that are nice and easy, you will move forward very rapidly in life. A leader needs to move forward so that he can be one-step ahead. It is only when you are a step-ahead that you are truly a leader.

*Many of the things that will take you forward in life are hard and difficult to do. Yet, these are the most important things for you. Prayer is one of these things. Bible study is one of the important things you need to do. Fasting is an important habit that every Christian should cultivate. Yet these are things we all do not like doing. A true leader can make people do these very things. I often lead my people into fasting and prayer. It is difficult for me, and it is difficult for them. Yet we do it! How am I able to make hundreds of people fast and pray for several gruelling hours? By doing it myself and letting them see me do it!*

## ***Seven Hard and Difficult Things You Must Do to Stay Ahead***

1. *Have A Daily Quiet Time.*

2. *Read The Bible Everyday.*

3. *Pray For Hours Every Day.*

4. *Fast Regularly.*

5. *Learn Things That Are New To You. In the ministry I have had to learn new things that I was not naturally inclined to. It is doing some of these difficult things that have taken me forward. For instance, going into the healing ministry was probably one of the most difficult things I have ever done. It was hard and difficult! But I am forever grateful I took those hard and difficult steps. The healing ministry has given me a level of visibility I would not have had without it. I see my ministry becoming more and more Christ-like because I took that hard and difficult*

*step. Anytime I share about doing hard and difficult things, I always remember the healing ministry. It is not easy to pray for the sick, even after years of doing it*

6. Educate Yourself Constantly By Reading Books.

7. Obey Whatever God Tells You To Do. *Obedying God is one of the most vital keys to moving forward. I cannot explain the power that is released when you obey God. Jesus Christ achieved His purpose by obeying God. It was hard and difficult, but He did it! It would have been nice and easy to stay in heaven where He belonged. Jesus grimaced at the thought of obeying His instructions. Yet He composed Himself. Notice the words of Jesus as he pondered on the cross that lay before Him. Jesus steeled Himself and resolved to go through with it. Decide to be like Jesus – choose what is hard and difficult rather than what is nice and easy and you will find yourself in a good place.*

**Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.**

**John 12:27**

# 6

## ***READILY EMBRACE NEW IDEAS***

*Your leadership will be stunted if you are not prepared to embrace new ideas. The world is constantly changing. Old systems and approaches no longer work. Computers have refashioned the way we do things. Seasons change. Needs change. And people change. That is why God constantly introduces fresh and new things.*

*I am very open to new ideas. I do not mind changing things I have been doing in a particular way for a long time. I find that God is a God of positive change! God is a God of improvement!*

*I notice how people laugh at me when I suggest new ideas. I have observed with amazement how some architects, engineers, technicians, builders, lawyers, accountants and pastors are resistant to new concepts. I notice how they quietly sneer and giggle amongst themselves as they listen to me expound some new idea. "We don't do things this way" "It has not been done before!" "We are not in America." "If we had what they have in Europe, we could have done it." "You know, they have much more equipment abroad." "It is not possible in Ghana." "It's not realistic." I have heard these statements and sensed these messages even when they are not voiced out.*

Africans sat on their continent whilst Europeans explored the world and discovered us. Why did we wait to be discovered in Africa? Why didn't we explore new horizons? Why didn't Africans explore new territories and discover the Europeans? Openness to new ideas is a secret to moving ahead as a leader. No wonder Europeans are ahead in almost every sphere of life (except spiritually).

*God is a God of change. He is doing new things. Embrace new ideas with honesty. Try a new method. A new way of doing things may be the key to pushing you out ahead of everyone else in your field. When I practiced the lay ministry I didn't do it because I saw others doing it. I did it because it needed to be done even though it was new. I am following my Heavenly Father who is a God of new things. Be like your heavenly Father. There is no better mentor.*

## **Five Examples Of New Things That God Does**

1. God Does New Things. *New projects, new schemes, new ideas, new plans.*

***BEHOLD, I WILL DO A NEW THING; now it shall spring forth; shall ye not know it? I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.***

**Isaiah 43:19**

2. God Gives New Languages To His People.

***And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; THEY SHALL SPEAK WITH NEW***

**TONGUES;**

**Mark 16:17**

3. God Gives Brand New Instructions To His Servants. *Every instruction has an expiry date.*

***A NEW COMMANDMENT I GIVE UNTO YOU, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.***

**John 13:34**

4. God Makes Us Into Brand New People Who Have Never Existed Before.

***Therefore if any man be in Christ, HE IS A NEW CREATURE: old things are passed away; behold, ALL THINGS ARE BECOME NEW.***

**2 Corinthians 5:17**

5. God Makes New Agreements And He Issues Fresh Calls To Service. *If you are open you will hear His voice.*

***In that he saith, A NEW COVENANT, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.***

**Hebrews 8:13**



# 7

## **VALUE PEOPLE**

*People are attracted to where they are valued. Many organizations undervalue the people they have. Every person who feels undervalued will move away.*

*Every developed nation values its citizens. What you respect will come towards you. What you attack will run away from you. People are the most valuable thing a leader has. A nation that attacks its leaders will be void of leaders. A nation that attacks its wealthy citizens will be poor. All the rich people will run away to friendlier countries where wealth is not a hazard.*

### **Why You Must Value People**

1. *Because People Are More Valuable Than Money.* Invest in people financially and educationally. Pay people well and spend time teaching and training them.

2. *Because People Are More Valuable Than Buildings.* See them as gifts from God.

3. Because People Are More Valuable Than Computers. *Try not to lose the people that God gives you. Do everything to prevent the loss of even one person. People can sense it when you value them. “While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.” (John 17:12).*

4. Because People Are More Valuable Than Cars. *See people as being worth more to you than objects and projects. Jesus saw His followers as gifts from God. “I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.” (John 17:6).*

### ***The Nation That Does Not Value Its Citizens***

I know a country that does not value its doctors that is why most of them have left that country. I know a country that does not value its nurses that is why many of them have left and are leaving that country. I know a country that does not value its leaders that is why almost every one of their former presidents are dead. I know a country that does not value its churches that is why the government can attack the church. If a country places more value on athletes and beauty queens than professionals and nation-builders, do you think that these professionals and nation-builders will be attracted to the nation?

### ***The Church That Values Its Members***

If you are a leader of a church you must value the different

types of people that are in your congregation. If you place value on them, then you will attract more of their kind and your church will grow. Leadership is the art of valuing people that are given to you. Be like Jesus and see your followers as gifts from above.

## 8

# ***KNOW ABOUT THE POWER OF HABITS AND DEVELOP GOOD HABITS***

*A habit is something that you do without thinking about it or intending to do it. Every good leader has many good habits. These good habits are what has made him into what he is.*

### **Two Habits Of Jesus**

*1. Going To Church Regularly. Did you know that Jesus had*

*good habits? The Bible teaches us that He had a habit of going to church on the Sabbath day. “And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, AS HIS CUSTOM WAS, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.” (Luke 4:16).*

2. *Going On Prayer Retreats. Jesus also had a habit of going to a particular garden for retreats. It was a place that he went often. And everyone who knew His habits of praying in the garden. “When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples. And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for JESUS OFTTIMES RESORTED THITHER WITH HIS DISCIPLES.” (John 18:12).*

### ***Daniel’s Habit***

*Daniel prayed at specific times of the day. It was something he was used to doing. It was one of the greatest secrets of his life.*

**Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, AS HE DID AFORETIME.**

**Daniel 6:10**

## **Seven Things Every Leader Should Know About The Power Of Habits**

*1. A habit is an ACT THAT IS REPEATED EASILY without thinking about it or planning to do it.*

*2. A habit is an ACT THAT BECOMES YOUR CUSTOM whether you are conscious of it or not.*

*3. A habit is often AN INSIGNIFICANT ACT THAT SEEMS TO HAVE NO POWER to affect the future. This is why many people do not recognize the concept of having good habits as a powerful tool for future accomplishments.*

*4. A habit can EITHER BE GOOD OR BAD, NATURAL OR SPIRITUAL. Spiritual habits are things like morning prayer and having a daily quiet time. Natural habits are things like brushing your teeth and having your daily bath.*

*5. GOOD HABITS ARE REPEATED AS EASILY AS BAD HABITS.*

*6. BAD HABITS LEAD TO CONSISTENT FAILURE AND DEFEAT without the person realizing what is happening.*

*7. GOOD HABITS LEAD TO CONSISTENT SUCCESS AND VICTORY without the person even realizing what he is doing.*

*8. Bad habits are easy to form but difficult to live with. GOOD HABITS ARE DIFFICULT TO FORM BUT EASY TO LIVE WITH.*

*9. EVERY SUCCESSFUL LEADER HAS A NUMBER OF GOOD HABITS THAT have brought him to success. Many years ago, a friend of mine taught me how to have a quiet time with God every morning. I developed that as a personal habit and it*

*has been my greatest secret as a Christian and later as a minister. Almost all the things I preach about come as a result of this good habit.*

#### **10. HABITS ARE A SAFETY PROCEDURE FOR LEADERS.**

*This is because even when a leader is under pressure, he will do certain good things habitually, naturally and easily. When under pressure, the leader may not have time to think of what to do or how to act. It is a good habit of prayer or quiet time that may lead him out of difficulty. Just like Jesus, I also have a place I often go to pray. I also often go with my pastors. This habit helps keep me spiritually protected even when I am not aware of danger.*

### **Twenty Good Habits Every Leader Should Develop**

- 1. Read your Bible everyday of your life. In the day of crisis it is that Bible reading that may save you.*
- 2. Have a personal quiet time with God everyday. Let NBNB (No Bible, No Breakfast) be a principle that you adopt.*
- 3. Pray for a minimum of one-hour everyday of your life. Develop the habit of praying before you eat.*
- 4. Fast at least once a week. For example, you could choose Fridays as a day of fasting.*
- 5. Constantly listen to preaching tapes in your car or your home.*
- 6. Constantly have a book that you are reading. As soon as you finish one book, immediately begin reading another. This is a very good habit that will unconsciously increase your knowledge and learning.*
- 7. Play only Christian music in your house or car. Never allow*

*worldly music to be played in your presence, even if it is coming from the radio. This habit will make you create a Holy Spirit friendly environment around yourself all the time. The Holy Spirit will come to you because God inhabits raise and worship. You will also unconsciously drive away evil spirits without intending to do so. "And it came to pass, when the evil spirit from God was upon Saul, that David took an harp, and played with his hand: so Saul was refreshed, and was well, and the evil spirit departed from him. (1 Samuel 16:23).*

8. Do a lengthy fast at the beginning of the year to commit the rest of the year into God's hands.

9. Have at least one long prayer time at least once a week.

10. Let your closest friends be members of the same sex.

11. Chat with your wife everyday. *I have discovered that a woman's greatest need is to be talked to, even if it is about "nothing". Women are born with a gift of talking. One of their gifts is chatting. Fifteen minutes of chatting would do every woman a world of good.*

12. Play and talk with your children. *If you spend half as much money on your children and twice as much time with them they will turn out better.*

13. Have sex regularly with your spouse. *You can do this at least every other day or as your strength permits.*

14. Rest once a week. *I rest on Mondays. I have learned that it is an important day for me. I have discovered that the work never ends.*

15. Witness to every unbeliever you meet. *Do this whether you have prayed or not. Do not let an unbeliever get away from your presence without hearing the gospel. This habit will lead to many people being saved without you ever planning a salvation crusade.*

16. Do not borrow money. *Some people are in the habit of borrowing money every time they are in need. You must develop*

*the habit of not borrowing money.*

*17. Set aside some time to specially wait on God every few months. Whenever I do this, I go away for a few days and spend time with the Lord. This is one of the great secrets of my life.*

*18. Saving money. Save a little money every month.*

*19. Develop the habit of not watching much television. Television takes up the time that would have been used reading, praying, having a quiet time, talking with God, chatting with your wife or children. Television is also a bad influence. People get ideas of divorce and other evils from watching television.*

*20. Pay your tithes every month. Let the first ten percent of your income be assigned to God.*

*Do you consider yourself to be a leader? What good habits do you have? Develop a life filled with many good habits. Don't forget that every successful leader has some secret good habits that made him.*



# 9

## ***SPEND ANY AMOUNT OF MONEY AND TIME TO GET A BOOK***

### **Eight Reasons Why Leaders Love Books**

1. *He knows that the information in a book may make the difference for his life's work.* That is why a leader is prepared to pay any amount of money for a book.
2. Reading a book puts you in direct contact with the author of the book. *Authors of books are usually great men who have a lot to share. A leader knows that he may not have the opportunity to meet with certain people, so he makes use of the books they have written.*
3. A leader knows that authors are workers and researchers for him.
4. A leader knows that many years of experience can be transmitted through one book.
5. A leader knows that a book is a patient teacher.

6. A leader knows that he can catch an anointing from a book.
7. A leader knows that if you can't read you can't lead.
8. The greatest leaders of all time were readers. *Biblical examples of this were Paul and Daniel.*

*Daniel the prophet was a leader and he was an avid reader. Daniel was somebody who read Jeremiah's books.*

**In the first year of his reign I DANIEL UNDERSTOOD BY BOOKS the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.**

**Daniel 9:2**

An avid reader worth emulating was Paul. Paul sent for his books and his parchments. They obviously were very important to him.

**The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, AND THE BOOKS, but especially THE PARCHMENTS.**

**2 Timothy 4:13**

Reading is one of the most essential habits of every leader. If you do not read, please do not try to lead anyone. Reading is essential for leadership.

**Ten Reasons Why Every Leader Must Be A Reader**

1. Read for intellectual growth. *You will develop your mind greatly as you read. Many minds need some more development.*

2. Read for spiritual growth. *As you read, you will find out that your spirit is affected greatly by the written Word of God. You must have communion with other great leaders through their books.*

3. Read to develop a preaching and teaching style. *You will definitely pick up some tips as you read from the messages of great men.*

4. Read to improve your language. *Whether you speak English or French, reading always improves your language. The best way to learn the English language is to read English books. If you want to improve your vocabulary, please start reading now!*

5. Read to have fellowship with great minds and great people. *Reading is a form of private interaction between yourself and another person. You can receive an anointing as you read a book.*

6. Read in order to learn how to write. *You will write a book one day. You will have to write letters to people. Learn how to write by reading.*

7. Read to acquire new information. *Most people think that acquiring new information is the only reason why you should read a book. But this is only one of many reasons why you should be a reader Ignorance is one of the greatest enemies of mankind. If you do not read, your ignorance is self-inflicted and inexcusable.*

8. Read to develop your leadership abilities. *Anyone who spends more money on books than on food and clothes is destined for leadership.*

9. Read because a person who does not read is no better than a person who cannot read.

10. Read so that you will be in the top twenty percent of society. *Do you know that the top twenty percent of every society buys all books? Join the top twenty percent of society today and be a winner and leader.*

***"If religious books are not widely circulated among the masses in this country and the people do not become religious, I do not know what is to become of us as a nation. And the thought is one to cause solemn reflection on the part of every patriot and Christian. If the truth be not diffused, error will be; if God and His Word are not known and received, the devil and his works will gain the ascendancy; if the evangelical volume does not reach every hamlet, the pages of corrupt and licentious literature will."***  
*(Daniel Webster p 41 quote on religious books)*

# 10

## ***START HUMBLE AND END HUMBLE***

*Most leaders start out humble, many end up proud, full of themselves and of their achievements.*

*Pride goeth before a fall and is the self-destructive button that becomes prominent in many leaders lives. Two of the greatest leaders that ever lived started humble and ended humble. Learn from their example.*

*1. Jesus started humble and ended His ministry in humility. Jesus Christ started His ministry in a manger. “And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.” (Luke 2:7). Jesus Christ ended His ministry on a cross. “And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.” (Luke 23:46).*

*2. Paul went through four stages of progressive humility.*

## **Four Stages of Paul's Humility**

1. *He declared that he was not behind any of the apostles. "...for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles..." (2 Corinthians 12:11).*

2. *As he progressed he felt that he was the least of the apostles. "For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God." (1 Corinthians 15:9).*

3. *After some more time, Paul thought that he was the least of all saints. "Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints..." (Ephesians 3:8). As you can see, Paul's estimation of himself was diminishing as he became more experienced in ministry. The higher you go in the Lord, the more you realize how dispensable you are. You discover that it is God's grace that is at work and not your own efforts.*

4. *At the end of his ministry, Paul decided he was the chief of sinners. "...Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief." (1 Timothy 1:15). This was not because Paul had committed some grievous sin. Paul had always been the chief of sinners. In his maturity, Paul was becoming more conscious of that reality.*

## **Don't Let Your Achievements Make You Proud**

*Do not let your achievements change your opinion of yourself. Nebuchadnezzar made an awful mistake when he walked on the rooftop of his castle. He thought that he had achieved great things by his own strength.*

**At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon.**

**The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty?**

**While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee.**

**Daniel 4:29-31**

*When Nebuchadnezzar developed an elevated opinion of himself, God punished him. If you are a leader, do not make foolish statements about your achievements. I have heard political leaders make very foolish statements after being in power for some time. Some leaders even think they will live forever. But you can be very easily removed. Ask your fathers and ancestors whether they lived forever.*

**Your fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live for ever?**

**Zechariah 1:5**

## **Do Not Laugh At Other Leaders**

*Maintain a humble opinion of yourself because you are mere flesh. Do not laugh at another leader who is in difficulty. History has taught us that judgmental leaders are prone to fall. Do not mock when other leaders fall into sin. What was David's reaction when Saul was killed in battle? Did he say, "It serves him right?" No, he did not! Mourn with those that mourn and pray for them. Notice the words of a great leader as he lamented*

*over the fall of another great leader.*

**The beauty of Israel is slain upon thy high places: how are the mighty fallen!**

**TELL IT NOT IN GATH, PUBLISH IT NOT IN THE STREETS OF ASKELON; lest the daughters of the Philistines rejoice, lest the daughters of the uncircumcised triumph.**

**Ye mountains of Gilboa, let there be no dew, neither let there be rain, upon you, nor fields of offerings: for there the shield of the mighty is vilely cast away, the shield of Saul, as though he had not been anointed with oil.**

**2 Samuel 1:19-21**



# 11

## **BUILD SOMETHING IF YOU ARE A LEADER!**

*Many people think that it takes wealth and riches to build a house. From experience, I know that it is not money per se but wisdom. People who are able to rally their resources together and wisely apply them often become builders. Often such a person is a leader. Have you built a house? Have you built a church? What you build will testify of your leadership. Decide to build something for God in your lifetime.*

***THROUGH WISDOM IS AN HOUSE BUILDED; and  
by understanding it is established:***

***And by knowledge shall the chambers be filled with all  
precious and pleasant riches.***

**Proverbs 24:3,4**

Leadership qualities make a pastor acquire a church building for his church. Buying buses or instruments for your church is different from building a church facility. A wise manager would acquire properties for his company. I can assure you that it takes the strength of leadership to build a nation. Weak leaders cannot build anything! Decide today to be a builder. A husband who builds a house for his wife and children is a true leader.

*The first president of Ghana, Kwame Nkrumah, is often hailed as a great leader. One of the things he did was to build*

*many things for the nation. For instance, he built the Akosombo Dam, which generated the largest manmade lake in the world. The things he built testify to the fact that Ghana once had a great leader. **Leadership is manifest by the presence of buildings.** A good leader leaves something behind.*

*Western countries have well developed infrastructure that testify of the kind of leadership they have enjoyed. African countries that have been ruled by illiterate dictators and vampire-style despots, have very little infrastructure. Truly, buildings and development are a sign of good leadership. Solomon was a wise leader.*

**I made me great works; I builded me houses; I planted me vineyards:**

**I made me gardens and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kind of fruits:**

**I made me pools of water, to water therewith the wood that bringeth forth trees:**

**Ecclesiastes 2:4-6**

Because I have been involved in building, I can understand why most people shy away from it. But I believe that God has called you to build. Nehemiah, one of the great leaders of the Bible, motivated the people of God to rise up and build. His famous sermon was simple – arise and build!

**...The God of heaven, he will prosper us; therefore we his servants will ARISE AND BUILD...**

**Nehemiah 2:20**

# 12

## **SEE AHEAD! PREPARE FOR THE FUTURE**

*A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished.*

*Proverbs 22:3*

*A leader is someone who sees ahead. A leader is someone who has the future in mind. The leader can see the evil ahead. The leader can see growth and expansion ahead.*

### **Three Things A Leader Should See Coming**

*1. See the growth ahead. A true leader knows that the population is going to grow. This means that the potential souls are going to increase. This also means that we are going to need larger buildings and facilities. We will also need more workers. Build with the future in mind. Train people with the future in mind. Jesus predicted that His church would grow. He could see it coming! “And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.” (Matthew 16:18).*

*Ghana’s first president saw many years ahead and built a*

*huge hydroelectric dam for the nation. This dam produced electricity many times in excess of the needs of little Ghana. He was seeing ahead. Then open your eyes and see ahead. Know that things will get better as the years go by.*

*2. See the evils ahead. There are some evils that will come whether you want them to or not. Jesus promised that temptations would come. "Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!" (Matthew 18:7). Betrayal will come as the years go by. Temptations will come. Satanic attacks will come. Know that good times and bad times are sure to come. The marriage vows say: "for better or for worse, in prosperity and in adversity". A real leader can virtually predict the ways things will go. Ask God for wisdom to see ahead. By wisdom, you can predict the future.*

*3. See the changes ahead. Years ahead, the Lord directed me to plant churches in different parts of my city. I realized that the city was expanding. It could take people more than two hours to move from one end of the city to the other. I felt that many of the people who lived far away would soon stop coming to church. So I began what I call The Metropolitan Churches. That was one of the most strategic moves I ever made. I have retained many of the people God gave me by establishing almost a hundred churches in the city.*

*Businessmen need to see ahead. Some of you are engaged in businesses that will soon be unprofitable. I have often advised businessmen to diversify because I could see a change coming which would make their current line of business obsolete. I have watched as people who owned great businesses deteriorated until there was nothing left. A leader is someone who sees ahead.*

# 13

## TAKE YOUR PRIVILEGES AT THE RIGHT TIME AND FOR THE RIGHT REASON

*There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler:*

***FOLLY IS SET IN GREAT DIGNITY, and the rich sit in low place.***

***I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth.***

**Ecclesiastes 10:5-7**

*A leader must be a humble person but he must also be confident. The Bible teaches that it is foolishness when a leader refuses to sit in the appropriate place reserved for him. When it is time to take your privileges, you had better take them or you will be considered a fool. Leadership is not only sacrifice. Leadership is not only responsibility. Leadership goes along with certain privileges and blessings.*

### **Obedience is More Important Than Sacrifice**

*God's call is to obedience and not sacrifice per se. There are times when obedience will mean you have to sacrifice. If you sacrifice when God has not asked you to do so, you will*

*separate yourself from God. Do not forget how Saul was separated from God because he sacrificed things that God had not asked him to. “And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king.” (1 Samuel 15:22,23).*

## **When Princes Must Sit on Horses**

*There is a time when princes must sit on horses and servants must walk upon the earth. “I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth.” (Ecclesiastes 10:7). Do not be shy to earn money for all the hard work you put in. I feel sorry for ministers of the gospel who are treated like beggars who don’t deserve anything. I know of churches where the pastors are not given money, but all of their domestic needs are taken care of. Church members come to inspect whether there is enough soap and toilet paper in the house. How pathetic! Do the pastors not have enough common sense to buy their own toilet paper?*

## **The Error**

*I have watched church after church enter into crisis because a car was being bought for the pastor. Special funds were raised and the pastor’s car became a controversial church matter. When people work at other institutions, is the purchase of a car a special project? Is it not their due? Why are pastors*

*treated like undeserving idlers?*

*I work hard as a minister of the gospel. I deserve to be paid well. The Bible teaches that they that preach the gospel must live off the gospel.*

***Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live off the gospel.***

**1 Corinthians 9:14**

## **Sowing Without Reaping**

*“The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.” (2 Timothy 2:6). I must be able to have a good car for my safety and comfort. I must be able to build a house. There is nothing wrong with that! But there is something wrong when a man sows and does not reap. Everybody knows that! A leader must know when it is time to take his place and enjoy his benefits. It is a mistake to refuse your privileges and blessings when it is your turn. I didn’t call it mistake, the Bible did! The Bible calls it the ERROR that proceedeth from a ruler!*

## **When Princes Eat in the Morning**

*Some nations have had leaders who begin their rule by drinking the lifeblood of the nation. Before a nation can blink, the leaders have siphoned out everything.*

*I recently visited a wealthy African nation that produces large amounts of oil. Would you believe that this nation, one of the largest producers of oil in the world, had severe petrol*

*shortages? It was amazing! There were very long queues in every city I visited. Fuel was sold only on the black market.*

*It was later reported that the head of state of that nation had a billion dollars in petty cash. What is a president doing with a billion dollars of petty cash? These vampires have lined their pockets whilst the masses of the nation struggle to make ends meet. Is it not ironic that a nation that supplies a significant percentage of the world's oil, suffers from fuel shortages? This is what the Bible calls "princes eating in the morning". The prince represents the leader and the morning represents the wrong time.*

**Woe to thee, O land, when thy king is a child, and thy princes eat in the morning!**

**Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness!**

**Ecclesiastes 10:16,17**

*Dear friend, when a nation or church has an opportunist at the helm of affairs get ready for frustration and poverty.*

*In our church, we have a policy that puts the church before the pastor. What do I mean by this? We believe the church must come before the pastor's welfare. This means that the church building is constructed and the church is given a sound footing before the pastor benefits.*

## **When Princes Eat in Due Season**

Privileges become blessings only when they come at the right



time. When they come too soon, it destroys everything. Some people buy cars that they cannot even afford to maintain. Someone once said, “Don’t buy a car unless you can afford to maintain three of the same thing.” Some people live in houses that they cannot afford to maintain. Why worry yourself? Why do you try to impress people? Be yourself and do not rush to possess certain privileges. As the Lord lifts you up, you will receive everything you need at the right time.

**He hath made every thing beautiful in his time...**

**Ecclesiastes 3:11**

*Beauty is only beauty within the context of the “right time”. Have you ever noticed that when you look at pictures taken twenty years ago, you often look odd? Why is this? Because they have been taken out of their “time”.*

## **His Time is the Right Time**

*That car or home will only be a real blessing when it comes at the right time. If it comes too soon, it will not be a blessing. It will cause problems for you. Everyone is happy when a married woman gets pregnant. It is a blessing to be pregnant. However, when an unmarried teenager becomes pregnant, we are not happy. Why is this? Because the pregnancy has been taken out of its context of the “right time”.*

*Are you a leader or a hungry vampire? Wait patiently to take your privileges at the right time. Do not rush; you will only destroy yourself, your business, your church or your nation. Do not kill the hen that lays your golden eggs. Keep it alive so that it can lay golden eggs for you for many more years!*

# 14

## ***ALWAYS LEARN NEW THINGS***

**Better is a poor and a wise child than an old and foolish king,  
who will no more be admonished.**

**Ecclesiastes 4:13**

*How can I stop learning new things? If what you know now is all that you will ever know then I pity you. A true leader is a true learner. I learn so many new things every year that I get amazed. That is why the Bible teaches that to the making of many books there is no end.*

*Many people feel that they know everything. This is unfortunate! No true leader thinks like that. I sometimes listen to pastors criticizing other ministers and I get amazed. I listen quietly in amazement. The person they were criticizing was someone who I learnt a great truth from. No wonder people are not promoted. I have realized that I can learn things from people in my own city. I can learn things from spiritual leaders as well as secular leaders.*

*Do you consider yourself a leader? Then decide to never stop learning. What I want you to understand is that learning does not only take place by reading books. You can learn a lot from the things around you. You can learn a lot from the people that you see everyday. You can learn a lot from some fellow ministers. You can learn a lot from rival companies and businesses. Never stop learning new things!*

# 15

## KNOW YOUR STRENGTHS AND FLOW IN THEM!

No one was created “jack of all trades”. I have tried almost every field of ministry. I realize that I can do well in many areas. I play musical instruments quite well. I think that I am not bad as a singer. I am good at leading worship. I am absolutely thrilled by evangelism. Prophecy and the prophetic ministry intrigue me. I pastor churches and train leaders. I have founded many things in my short life. But which of these is my real calling. I recently asked the Lord what do you want me to do? The Lord made it clear to me that I was stand in the office of a teacher.

*There are many things that I like to do, but I intend to stay with what God called me to do. A true leader knows where his strength lies. A leader can do many good things. **When you discover your strengths, flow in them and become a great leader.***

*Many people live and die without developing their strengths in ministry. Do not be a pastor because everyone is pastoring a church. Do not be a prophet because that is the latest fad in town.*

*I started my ministry as a layperson. Most of my workers are lay people. One of my strengths is the lay ministry. If I had followed what everyone else was doing, I would have destroyed*

*my special ministry. You may be influenced by many people but make sure you do what God has called you to do.*

*Stay in the area which makes you unique. Develop it and become strong. I know many businessmen who jump from one thing to another without developing their strengths. By the time they have discovered the pitfalls and loopholes in one area of business, they are jumping into the next. They think the next business is going to bring a quick return. There is no such thing as a quick fix.*

*Most people who become millionaires are people who decided early in life what they were going to do and stayed with it. Successful people are often people who have been doing the same thing for a long time. Hopping around from country to country will not help you to prosper. Decide where you want to live and stay there until you become strong!*

*Apostle Paul fought a good fight and ran his race. It is time for you to run your race.*

**I have fought a good fight, I have finished MY course, I  
have kept the faith:**

**2 Timothy 4:7**

*Forget about somebody else's race. What does God have in store for you? What is your course? Is it the course of business? Then do not stray into politics! What is your course? Is it the course of ministry? Then do not stray into politics! Many ministers shorten their lives by doing things that they were not supposed to do. Are you a leader? Then stay on course and then everyone will see the gift of God upon your life. You will become a respected leader.*

# 16

## ***BE READY FOR A LONG FIGHT!***

**I have fought a good fight...**

**2 Timothy 4:7**

*Leadership is one long fight. Paul said that he had fought a good fight. His whole life was full of fighting. I remember a conversation I had with a pastor. He told me what his wife had asked him the day before.*

*I asked, "What did she say?"*

*She asked him, "You at all, when will you have peace?"*

*His wife was wondering when the fight would be over.*

*Dear Christian friend, if you consider yourself to be a leader, get ready for one long fight! If you are not fighting the devil, you will be fighting demons. If you are not fighting demons, many unbelievers will fight you. If you are not fighting unbelievers, you will be fighting Christians who hate you.*

*Do you call yourself a leader? Brace yourself for a long fight! It's a good fight. The fight for eternal crowns and the fight to hear Him say, "Well done, good and faithful servant."*

**I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I  
have kept the faith:**

**2 Timothy 4:7**

# 17

## **KNOW WHERE YOU ARE! KNOW WHERE YOU ARE NOT! AND YOU WILL KNOW WHERE TO GO!**

*And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

**John 8:32**

*The truth will tell you where you are and where you are not! The truth will also tell you where to go. Many pastors need to start telling the truth about the size of their congregations. It is time to stop making wild guesses about the number of people in our churches. When you know the actual number of souls you are ministering to, you will be motivated to work harder.*

One day I asked my data officer to tell me how many people were in church. When he gave me the figure, I was depressed for one week. I realized that our church was very small. I had a long way to go! If you cannot tell yourself the truth, you cannot be a good leader.

*Many businesses do not make any profit at all! When you*



*add up the real costs of their operations, you discover that they are actually making a loss. If managers were honest, they would take the necessary hard decisions. That is what leadership does.*

*Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved?...*

**Luke 13:23**

*Jesus answered and told him there is a narrow gate and few people are entering through that gate. This was the truth. Leaders need to deal with reality. Without real figures, a Chief Executive cannot take sound financial decisions. Every leader must ensure that he has the real picture.*

# 18

## ***DON'T GIVE UP YOUR SOURCE OF POWER!***

*Every leader derives power from something. Jesus knew that His source of power was prayer. That is why He never stopped praying. That is why He prayed so earnestly in the garden of Gethsemane.*

*The apostle Peter knew that his source of power was in prayer and in the Word. That is why he refused to give it up!*

**...It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.**

**But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.**

**Acts 6:2,4**

*Every leader must know the source of his power. Many politicians know that their source of power is popular opinion. That is why they will sacrifice everything to maintain popular opinion. I have watched many politicians sacrifice their families and friends so they could have popular support.*

*Years ago, I spoke to a Christian who was involved in politics. He was helping our church. He did help us to a point. Then one day he told me, "Bishop, the way this matter is going I cannot help you anymore."*

*This was a Born Again, tongue speaking Charismatic Christian. He was even a leader in his church. He continued, "If this matter goes any higher, I'm afraid I cannot support the church anymore."*

*I looked at him as he explained, "You know, politics is my life. If this goes against me politically, I will lose my job. And that means a lot to me."*

*A few weeks later, the matter escalated. This Christian politician took sides against the church and helped politicians to attack the church. This was unfortunate, but it reflected a deep truth. This man thought his power came from politics and not from God. He remained loyal to what he thought was giving him power.*

*Many politicians think that the secret of their power is in popular support. This makes them sacrifice their principles, morals and even their faith. A Christian leader must know that his strength comes from God. Even politicians are mistaken when they think that their strength comes from people. Ultimately, God rules in the affairs of men.*

*Every minister of the gospel must be aware that his strength is from the Lord and not from money or people.*

*When a leader does not treasure his source of power, he will lose it. Samson played around with his source of power. Eventually, he lost everything.*

**That he told her all his heart, and said unto her, There hath not come a razor upon mine head; for I have been a Nazarite unto God from my mother's womb: if I be shaven, then my strength will go from me, and I shall become weak, and be**

**like any other man.**

**Judges 16:17**

*Are you a leader? Find out what is the source of your strength, treasure it, protect it and do not give it up for anything!*

# 19

## ***COUNT YOUR PENNIES***

**When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.**

**John 6:12**

*A frugal person is someone who counts his pennies. Every leader is going to need a lot of money to help him fulfil his vision. How is this money going to come? By being frugal! Years ago I wrote a book on frugality. It was something that I had taught in my church. I believed that it was a key that had helped me greatly in ministry.*

*I recently read a book on millionaires in America. I was surprised to find out that a study on millionaires had shown that the most common characteristic of wealthy people was frugality. I read this book many years after I taught and wrote on frugality. You see, the principles are the same. A frugal person is someone who counts his pennies.*

*There is no limitless amount of money sitting anywhere. Many rich people are cash strapped. Very few people have anything to spare. Years ago, when our church began a building project we asked a multi-millionaire to help us with some money. Someone even offered a building as security for a loan. But the millionaire was not moved by our request. He was not even moved by the offer of the building as security. No one helped us. The Spirit of God spoke to me and said, "You will accomplish*

*this vision if you count your pennies.” True to His word, we counted our pennies and we accomplished the vision.*

*Neither a wasteful person nor an extravagant person can accomplish much. Are you concerned about impressing people? Then you are not a good leader. Are you concerned about showing off expensive things? Then you are not a leader. A leader knows that in order to get to his goal he is going to have to count his pennies.*

*Why did Jesus ask the disciples to gather the crumbs? Was He trying to humiliate the disciples? Was He trying to keep the environment clean? No, He said very clearly that He was preventing losses. “When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, THAT NOTHING BE LOST.” (John 6:12).*

*The best way to become rich is to minimize your losses. If you are the leader of a company, your duty is to minimize your losses and prevent stealing. If you can do these two things, your company will prosper naturally. If you are a political leader, aim at reducing corruption. If the money that was stolen from African nations were to be recovered, we would no longer need loans from the IMF or the World Bank.*

# 20

## BE CONSTANTLY AWARE OF YOUR LIFE'S VISION

**Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.**

**John 18:37**

*Jesus knew why He was in this world. Even in times of great stress, He explained His life's purpose. A leader is someone who is constantly aware of his purpose. I am constantly aware of what God has called me to do. Everyday of my life is spent trying to fulfil the calling of God on my life. When you are aware of what you are supposed to do, you are guided aright into spending your time appropriately.*

*If you only remember that you are a pastor when you arrive in church, then you are probably not a real pastor. When I was a layperson working in the hospital I was constantly aware of my calling into the ministry. Even when Jesus was a child, He said, "I must be about my father's business."*

**And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye**

**not that I must be about my Father's business?**

**Luke 2:49**

*Dear leader, what is your life's purpose? Are you a businessman trying to make money? Then why does your business run like a charity? Why do you not cut your expenses and begin to make profits? Are you a minister of the gospel? Then don't be taken up with the love of money. God did not call you to acquire great wealth. He called you to serve in the ministry. Do the ministry even if you have to live in poverty.*

*God gave me a dream. In the dream, I saw myself walking on a long road. Along this road were many heaps of gold. As I walked on the path, I would pass by these heaps of gold. The Lord specifically told me, "Do not stop at any of these heaps. There are many heaps of gold on this road. There will be no need for you to stop by any of them."*

*You see, God was showing me that I should stick with my vision. He was telling me not to deviate into business or the search for money. Are you a leader? Then let your vision fill your heart and mind so that you will not deviate from your original calling. If you are a minister, remember that it is souls, souls and more souls. Not money, money and more money!*



# 21

## ***STRIVE FOR EXCELLENCE***

*Excellence is the attainment of the highest level of quality and perfection. Being excellent means becoming a person of distinction. A true leader is someone who wants to distinguish himself in his field. The blessings of the Lord are to make you the head and not the tail.*

**And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them:**

**Deuteronomy 28:13**

*God had plans for His people to attain the highest levels of excellence. That is why He said you would be above only. Excellence is not an accident. It is something you must strive for. If you want to work for eight hours a day, you are not likely to achieve distinction in this life. **People who distinguish themselves in this life often work for more than sixty hours a week.** Excellence demands hard work. Excellence in ministry, government or business does not come by osmosis. It comes by diligence.*

*To become excellent you must emulate excellent people. **Life is too short to discover everything yourself. Life is too short not to learn from your fathers and seniors.** Excellence*

*in the practice of medicine has been achieved by constantly building upon what our predecessors have learnt. That is why today, we are able to transplant hearts. If the heart surgeon used his time to discover which direction the blood flowed, he would be taking us back to the eighteenth century.*

*Be humble and depend upon the discoveries of others. God does not want you to be mediocre. Insist on the highest standards. You can be an excellent businessman. You can have a high yielding factory. Your church can be the best in the city. Decide today for excellence. Read the books that excellent people have written. Read the books. Listen to the tapes. Excellence is yours for the taking!*

# 22

## TELL THE TRUTH

*And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

**John 8:32**

*The very nature of leadership is truth. The truth will tell you where you are and will tell you where you are not! The truth will also tell you where to go. There are many pastors who need to start telling the truth about the size of their congregations. It is time to stop making wild guesses about the number of people in your church. When you realize that actual number of souls that you are ministering to, you will be motivated to work harder.*

One day I asked my data officer to tell me how many people were in church. When he gave me the figure, I was depressed for at least one week. But I realized that in spite of what I had achieved, I had a long way to go. If you cannot tell yourself the truth, you cannot be a good leader.

*It is unfortunate that there are many businesses that do not make any profit at all! When you add up the real costs of your operations you may discover that you are actually making a loss. However, we may even have to shut down your business or layoff some workers. That is true leadership.*

*Are you a leader? Do you want to know the truth? Do you tell yourself the truth?*

**Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved?...**

**Luke 13:23**

*Jesus answered and told him there is a narrow gate and few people are entering through that gate.*

# 23

## ***MAINTAIN PERSONAL INTEGRITY***

*Integrity is wholeness. It means being totally or completely sound. To have personal integrity means you are upright, sincere, loyal and pure. You need personal integrity to be a good leader.*

*Your integrity is shattered by lies and deception. The reason why very few of us believe in politicians is because their integrity has been greatly compromised by the deceptions of past political leaders.*

*Are you sound? Are you whole?*

# 24

## CONCENTRATE

*Many people do not know that great achievers are people who have concentrated on one thing for a long time. Concentration is the key to great achievement. Do you consider yourself a leader? You must learn the art of concentration. Concentrate on your vision. Concentrate on your church. Concentrate on your work and you will have great results.*

*Often when I begin to pray, I switch off all phones. This helps me to concentrate on the Lord. When I was in university, I had the opportunity to join several Christian groups. I decided to flow with a particular ministry. I realized that I could not divide my time amongst the many Christian ministries on campus. By the time I left university a new group had been formed which exists up until today.*

*When you concentrate on one thing, people will accuse you of being proud or unfriendly. They will say that you are inward looking and unpatriotic. They will say that you are anti-social. Take no notice of them. Concentrate on what you are doing. Wisdom is justified of her children. Never forget that concentration brings growth and keeps you from strife. When Jesus went away He left clear instructions about what the Church was supposed to do.*

*Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?*

*Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.*

*Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.*

*But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;*

*And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;*

*The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,*

*And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

*Matthew 24:45-51*

*Not long after His departure, the Church had deviated into all sorts of things that were not instructed by Christ. In the name of good works and being socially acceptable, the Church has divided its attention into four main areas: health, education, relief services and Christian teaching. It is no wonder why other religions are said to be growing at a faster rate than Christianity. If the Church were to concentrate on their God given goal, they would be called all sorts of names.*

*Some of my pastors and churches have come under criticism because we tend to concentrate on what we are doing. Statistics have proved, to the surprise of many, that excessive cooperation between churches does not lead to growth in the Body of Christ. This comes as a surprise to the proponents of unity in the Body. Remember that unity is different from union. What people often call unity is actually the physical union of congregations.*

*A leader understands the essence of concentrating on one thing until he has achieved it. A leader can distinguish between*

*relevant and irrelevant issues. I have realized that the faster I work the more energy I have. Slow work makes you tired. I apply the principle of urgency and concentration to everything I do. I bring all my forces to bear until I conquer it. The more you suspend your projects for other things, the more depressed and unhappy and discouraged you will be.*

Are you a leader? Decide to concentrate on one thing at a time. Put away useless socializing, empty chatting and excessive television watching. Concentration will bring you great success. Paul did it and so can you!

**...but this ONE THING I DO, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before...**

**Philippians 3:13**



# **They Went to Hell**

Dag Heward-Mills

**A Parchment House Publication**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **A Parchment House Publication**

Published and distributed by DgTP.

ISBN 9988-7797-6-3  
3rd Edition

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book.

## **PREFACE**

People have all sorts of theories concerning the future. In this book, I share with you details given by the Bible of what happens after death. I think that every Christian must be aware of what happens after death.

Why do we postulate when we do not have reliable information?

When I was in secondary school, I didn't gamble with my life. I took every single exam seriously, and made sure I passed. I intended to have a good life in the years ahead. In the same way, I do not intend to gamble with my life now. I do not intend to toy with the issues of life after death.

Friend, I don't want to go to hell. I intend to go to heaven. This book is meant to save you from gambling your life away. Why go to hell when you can go to heaven? I once met someone who asked whether I could prove what I said to him in a test tube.

However, I can show you from the Book of Books what will happen. I hope this book will answer that question: Where did they go? And I hope it will also show you where YOU must go.

# ***Contents***

The Great Mystery .....	1
Beyond The Grave .....	3
Hell Is Real .....	7
Automatic Candidates For Hell .....	9
Where Is Hell? .....	13
Different Departments In Hell.....	16
Hell: A 'Big-Shot Society' .....	19
Hell Is Expanding .....	22
Why Men Go To Hell .....	24
Is A Transfer Possible? .....	27
Escape From Hell .....	29
Use Me Lord! .....	31

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

*Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa*

Rest of the world:

*Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ*

Website:

*[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)*

Parchment House

## ***Chapter One***

# ***The Great Mystery***

All over the world, funerals are held everyday. (You probably attended one not long ago!)

One sight which is common in every city, every town, every village, is the funeral procession or burial service.

In my home city of Accra, Ghana, cemeteries get very busy on weekends. And though we'd rather not think about it, funerals are a constant reminder that in the midst of life, death is ever present with us.

During memorial services, glowing tribute is paid to the dead (even if they were bad people!). We sob and show our grief with mournful church music in the background.

While attending a funeral at Mankessim (a small town on the south coast of Ghana), I had the opportunity to learn about some of the elaborate rituals performed for the dead. The corpse had several changes of clothing (more like a fashion show!). First, it was wrapped in Kente- a rich, colorful, handwoven cloth. Then it was dressed in a suit. Afterwards, in a Freemason's uniform, etc. Infact, there was a superfluous show of belated affection as friends and relations fussed over the corpse, stumbling over themselves to pay their last respects. A new road leading to the funeral grounds had even been constructed. (As you can see, funerals in Africa are BIG events!)

Now like this man, many people known to us have died. Expired. Passed away.

But... wait a minute!

**Where did all these departed souls go?** I mean our friends, relations and loved ones who died. *Where did they go?* Think about it.

Did they just slip into their graves to 'rest in peace'? Or did they vanish mysteriously elsewhere?

What happened to the victims of war in Bosnia, Rwanda and all the other war-torn parts of the world? And what happened to the many AIDS victims who died?

**Can anyone tell me where our ancestors are right now?**

One thing we know for sure is, they are no longer with us. *So where did they go?*

In this book I intend to answer these questions.

## *Chapter Two*

# *Beyond The Grave*

As a medical doctor, I have probably seen more people dying than the average man. With our high mortality rate, death is not a rare sight in some Ghanaian hospitals.

I remember my horror when, as a new medical student, I first entered the mortuary. The place was filled with the stench of death, and all around me were naked bodies of men, women and children. Some were young, others were old. Most had been struck down in the prime of life. **Rich and poor lay side by side, all pride and dignity forgotten in this helpless state.**



**(Really, I think everybody should at one stage in life, visit a mortuary. Then maybe we would realize the uselessness of this temporary life.) As the Bible says, “All is vanity”.**

As medical students working in the Accident Centre, we could encounter up to ten fatalities from one road accident alone. It was very distressing, and made one wonder *where* all these souls were going.

When a man dies, his spirit leaves his body. Without the spirit the body is dead. When Jesus died on the cross, the Bible makes us to know that He *yielded up* the ghost. This means that He *gave up* the spirit. His spirit came out of his body.

Likewise, we learn in the seventh chapter of Acts that when Stephen was being stoned to death, he said, “Lord Jesus, *receive my spirit.*”

**We can see here that when a man dies, his spirit moves from one point to another.** The spirit cannot be affected by physical death. So although the body itself decomposes and returns to dust, the spirit lives on eternally.

I have seen people die on the wards very often. You can almost see their spirits coming out of them as they gasp for their last breath. One minute they are alive, the next minute... they ‘Pop off’. Gone!

**But where do their spirits go?** Let’s go beyond the grave and find out where they went. You see, according to God’s Word, there’s an appointment we must all keep *after* death.

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***Hell Is Real***

If there are only two destinations beyond the grave after death, then there *cannot* be a third place — ‘purgatory’. Here, a soul is supposed to be kept for a while, until he’s purged from his sins and carried to heaven. That is just another lie of the devil! Hell is not a reform school. According to Mark 9:43-48, it is a place:

*....where the worm dieth not, and the FIRE IS NOT QUENCHED.*

Here, our judge Himself warns us about hell and it’s unimaginable horrors, and offers us a wonderful and better alternative — heaven. He said:

*... I go and prepare a place for you... that where I am, ye may be also.*

*John 14:3.*

**One reason why we can believe in the existence of hell is that Jesus Himself preached more about hell than many other subjects! For example, in Luke chapter sixteen, Jesus recounts the story of the rich man and Lazarus in graphic detail. Notice that this is no parable.**

In fact, Jesus began by saying, “**There was** a certain rich man...” In other words, **there existed a particular person**, not a figment of His own imagination. It goes on to say that the rich man died, and was buried.

*And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torment...*

*Luke 16:23.*

Note that though his body had been buried, he could still see, hear and *feel* tormented. All this was happening in *a particular place* — a “place of torment” (verse 28).

**These events actually occurred somewhere. And that place is real.**

## ***Chapter Four***

# ***Automatic Candidates for Hell***

My wife Adelaide and I have tried to set a godly example in our home, doing our best to bring up our children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

But right from their infancy, I observed to my amazement a naughtiness which could not have come out of a godly atmosphere of love and peace.

Who taught them to be so stubborn and disobedient? Who taught them to lie? Where did they pick it up from?

The Bible explains that sin came into the world (and our children) through Adam.

You see, Adam was the father of the entire human race. **And when he sinned, he passed on that sinful nature to all his descendants like a hereditary disease — a family trait.**

*Wherefore, as BY ONE MAN SIN ENTERED into the world, and death by sin; and SO DEATH PASSED UPON ALL MEN, for that all have sinned.*

*Rom. 5:12.*

This is why you don't have to teach a child how to lie. He just lies naturally. It comes automatically. Children steal and cheat automatically. They're self-willed and disobedient by nature. It just happens. And you did the same thing when you were a child, because we are all born in sin. We take after our forefather Adam. In fact, sin is a family trait of the entire human race. That is why the Bible says:

*For ALL have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.*

*Rom. 3:23.*

Now, we know from God's Word that the wages of sin is death — everlasting separation from God. Another word for 'wages' is payment or salary.

Your salary is your entitlement - what you are entitled to. Which means what you get for what you've done.

**And what we get for being sinners is eternal separation from a righteous God.** That is why man in his natural condition is considered *spiritually* dead, instead of being *spiritually alive* to the things of God.

Have you noticed that all over the world the dead are separated from the living? Even cemeteries are usually located out of town to separate the living from the dead.

Think about all your loved ones who have died in the past. In spite of all the love you had for them, you could no longer share your home with them because they had developed a condition called 'death'.

They were buried in the graveyard, out of sight. **And you left them there, because their condition made it impossible for you to have fellowship with them.**

That's exactly how it is with God. Spiritually dead man is separated from a Holy God. Unless he is **born again** spiritually, and reconciled to God through Christ, man is headed for hell. God's Word explains it simply:

*Therefore as sin came into the world through one man, and death as the result of sin, SO DEATH SPREAD TO ALL MEN [no one being able to stop it or to escape its power] because ALL MEN SINNED.*

*ROM. 5:12 AMP.*

Adam's sin turned men into natural born sinners, which resulted in a death sentence being passed on all men. **This makes us all automatic candidates for hell. In other words, every unsaved soul is bound to end up in hell, from the President to the poorest man in the village.**

So you see, it's very easy to arrive at this fearful destination. Even if we just sit down, doing nothing (just minding our own business), we will still end up there.

It's automatic. Our 'Adamic' nature ensures that.

Jesus, in his compassion for mankind urged men to believe on Him and flee from sin so that we would not perish, but have everlasting life.

**Unfortunately, most people have not accepted this invitation, and have died in their sins, passing away into hell.** Alas, multitudes have literally poured into hell over the years.

Multitudes? You mean *masses* of people?

Yes, I'm afraid so. Jesus said:

*Enter ye in the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and MANY THERE BE WHICH GO IN THERE AT.*

*Matt. 7:13.*

## ***Chapter Five***

# ***Where Is Hell ?***

You might ask, “If there’s such a place as hell, then *where* exactly is it?”

Well, according to God’s Word, hell is *beneath* us. It’s specific geographical location is underground. Down under. **Below us.** Isaiah says:

*Hell from BENEATH is moved... to meet thee...*

*Isaiah 14:9.*

In a book I read, a man of God gives a very vivid testimony about dying and going to hell. He had been stricken with an incurable heart disease which kept him bedfast most of the time.



Doctors gave him only a few months to live. And the illness got worse till it came to a point where he knew he was dying. Mind you, he had been baptized and had been going to church all his life, **but was not saved.**

He goes on to say that after death laid it's icy hands on his body, he felt his spirit (his real self, the inner man) coming out of his body. He could see his lifeless body on the bed. **Then he began to go *down*.**

As he went down into the pitch darkness it became hotter and hotter. When he could go no further, a fearsome, beastly creature emerged from the darkness. The foul, demonic monster grabbed his hand to receive him. Then it begun to pull him through the thick darkness toward the unbearable heat.

Suddenly, a voice boomed from above. He did not understand the language. But the hand released him immediately, and his spirit sort of floated back up to the earth and into his body. This happened two more times, and each time his spirit was released to go back to the surface and into his body.

Some months later his heart failed again, and he died. But this time he was born again. **So, when his spirit came out of his body, he begun to go *up* instead of down.** This was sheer bliss — a totally different experience from his descent to hell.

Just then, he heard a voice saying, “Go back to the earth! Your work is not done!”

**I believe this testimony by this man, because it lines up with scripture.**

In Isaiah 14:15, the Bible talks about being “cast *down* to hell.” So does Psalm 55:15.

And while Ezekiel 32:27 talks about going *down* to hell, Paul is even more specific in the fourth chapter of Ephesians:

*Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the LOWER PARTS OF THE EARTH?*

*Eph. 4:8-9.*

### **The lower parts of the earth!**

Just think about it.

So all this ‘descending’ and ‘going down’ leads *somewhere* after all!

Where? The lower parts of the earth, that’s where!

Dear friend, hell is not (as some have foolishly supposed) a gathering of all departed rock and reggae stars for an endless ‘jam’. Mind you, there’s no electricity in hell, though there are many ‘wailers’.

In fact, the only thing like singing in hell is *groaning*, *weeping* and *gnashing* of teeth!

Hell cannot be just a state of mind. To dismiss it as an empty threat would be very risky indeed. **Hell actually exists.** It is a tangible, physical place. And its location is down under— in the lower parts of the earth. **Even as you read this, some people you know are crying for help that will never, ever come.**

## ***Chapter Six***

# ***Different Departments in Hell***

The souls of men who die without Christ are not just flung into hell indiscriminately. Hell is divided into different areas, prepared for different classifications of people. Yes, in the midst of the darkness, torment, pain, screaming, and all the horrors in the furnace, there *is* some order.

**First, there's a sort of 'reception' area.**

*Hell from beneath is moved to MEET thee at thy coming.*

*Isaiah 14:9.*

And here, we're not talking about polite receptionists in an air-conditioned office!

When the perished soul arrives in hell, he is probably met by the most repulsive, foul-smelling, reptilian beasts at the gates of hell. Then he is assigned to the part of hell where the punishment most fits the crime.

*For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the LOWEST hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains.*

*Deut. 32:22.*

Notice the expression here: **lowest hell**. That is the superlative of the word 'low' as in:

Low

Lower

LOWEST

They're not the same. There's a progression here. One level differs from the other.

Now let's look at it again this way:

Low hell

Lower hell

LOWEST HELL.

So you see, there are *different levels* in hell. And the lower the level, the greater the torment.

**God is a just God, with a fairer sense of justice than all of us put together.** Therefore, the severity of the punishment will be proportional to the sins committed.

For example, those who have caused the death of so many people through wars, murder and witchcraft, may get a more severe punishment than say, pickpockets or petty thieves.

Even in our earthly legal system there's a sense of fairness in the administration of justice. **We pronounce different judgements for different crimes.** Even our prisons have different areas, solitary confinement and so on. That is probably the way it is in hell.

**There are various departments reserved for different groups of people.** Now, let's discover what classes of people are predominant in hell.

## **Chapter Seven**

# ***Hell: A ‘Big-Shot’ Society***

*Hell from beneath is moved to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even ALL THE CHIEF ONES OF THE EARTH, it hath raised up from their thrones ALL THE KINGS OF THE NATIONS.*

*Isaiah 14:9.*

Observe from the text above that hell has become the *permanent address* of many **CHIEF ONES** and **KINGS OF THE NATIONS**. This refers to kings, emperors, presidents, statesmen, film stars, business tycoons — the high and mighty in the society. The wealthy and the influential. The great leaders in history.

## **The chief ones of the earth.**

**Basically, hell is a ‘big-shot’ society, full of high class and noble people.** This is not to say, of course, that there are no poor people there. But the well known disregard for the things of God by rich people, has over the centuries populated hell with them.

While the Bible makes it clear that the poor are generally rich in faith, not many noble people have chosen the Way to salvation. And why should they? **With all the comforts of affluence, the rich and powerful see no need for God.** No wonder Jesus said the rich would find it hard to get to heaven — because of the deceitfulness of riches.

So where are all the heads of state, pop stars, great philosophers, business magnates and other famous world figures who have died? Well, according to the Bible **most of them are in hell.**

And, while we hold state funerals for them and erect monuments in their honour, the old-timers of hell will be saying to the newcomers: **Art thou also become like us?**

*... art THOU ALSO become as weak as we? art thou become like unto us? THY POMP IS BROUGHT DOWN to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee.*

*Isa. 14:10,11.*

**I have to say this, that those who are far from God in this life, will still be far from God after death.**

Unfortunately, our glowing tributes will not change their destination. Neither can their wealth or their achievements buy them a place in heaven.

It should not be surprising then, that hell's roll call will sound like a Who's Who of the rich and famous.

A 'big-shot' society indeed.



## ***Chapter Eight***

# ***Hell Is Expanding***

*Therefore HELL HATH ENLARGED  
HERSELF, and OPENED HER MOUTH  
WITHOUT MEASURE...*

*Isa. 5:14.*

I remember that during my years as a medical student, housing for new doctors was woefully inadequate. So the authorities began the construction of new blocks of flats, to accommodate the increasing number of newly-qualified doctors. Thus, with the inflow of many more doctors, the Doctors' Flats begun to expand.

**In a similar way, hell is currently undergoing some major rehabilitation and extension works.** What for? In order to cater for the multitudes who, alas, are streaming in.

Let's take another look at the Bible's report on the project:

*THEREFORE HELL HATH ENLARGED HERSELF, and OPENED HER MOUTH WITHOUT MEASURE: and their glory, and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoiceth, shall descend into it.*

*Isa. 5:14.*

**The mouth of hell is probably the main gate of hell.** This is also being worked upon. It is being enlarged! **How alarming!** This means hell is expecting much more human traffic! Dear friend, preparations are being made for you if you are not a Christian. **This should make you sit up!**

This should also make the Church of God sit up. It should shake us out of our slumber. It should make everybody sit up, especially those living in sin.

## ***Chapter Nine***

# ***Why Men Go To Hell***

As a teenager, I regularly attended church and gave offerings. But I never heard anything about being born again. Never! Instead, I was made to understand that if I recited three ‘Hail Marys’ and the Lord’s prayer once a day, I would make it to heaven.

However, if I had died, I would have perished in hell, inspite of all my good intentions. What a shame!

**Ignorance is sending more people to hell than we imagine. I mean, people are simply not in the know!**  
No wonder Isaiah says:

*Therefore my people are gone into captivity  
BECAUSE THEY HAVE NO KNOWLEDGE: a n d  
their honourable men are famished, and their  
multitude dried up with thirst. Therefore hell hath  
enlarged herself and opened her mouth without  
measure...*

*Isa. 5:13,14a.*

Nobody in their right minds would go to hell if they really knew what it was all about. After all, most people want to serve God. That's why they practice religion. (Actually, religion is man's *search* for God. But Jesus is *the only way* to God. Anyone who desires to do business with God can only do so through Jesus — John 14:6, 1Tim. 2:5.)

**Today, many churches are full of sincere people seeking God.** But without the proper teaching from the pulpit about God's plan of salvation, many churchgoers will be disappointed at the last trumpet.

Speaking of the Jews, Paul testified that they indeed had a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge.

*For BEING IGNORANT of the righteousness that God ascribes (**which makes one acceptable to Him in word, thought and deed**), and seeking to establish a righteousness (**a means of salvation**) of their own, they did not obey or submit themselves to God's righteousness.*

*Rom. 10:3 AMP.*

What is God's prescription for finding heaven and avoiding hell? Jesus said :

*Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.*

*John 3:3.*

My dear friend, **YOU MUST BE BORN AGAIN!** There is no other option. You must receive Christ as your personal Saviour. **Being Born Again is not a new idea, being propagated by some young churches.** It is a fundamental, biblical instruction given by Christ to everyone! I know of course, that many people are sincere — but mistaken. And I am sad to say that sincerity alone will not save anybody.

I also believe that every single Christian (especially pastors) will also give account to God, for withholding vital information about the reality of hell from others. **If souls are perishing because of ignorance, then those with knowledge will definitely be held accountable.**

## ***Chapter Ten***

# ***Is a Transfer Possible?***

*AND IN HELL... BEING IN TORMENT... HE CRIED...*

*Luke 16:23,24.*

One big-shot found himself in hell. From a distance he saw a former hustler relaxing in heaven.

One thing I'm sure about is that this man was very surprised to find himself in hell and conscious, even after death.

In his desperation, he sent a telex to Abraham asking for a possible transfer!

**But Abraham explained to him** that transfer out of hell was not going to be possible! **Hell is a permanent situation!**

**As the anguish of this man worsened, he sent another telex asking for a drop of water,** not even a glass.

Dear friend, make sure you don't get into hell, because once you are there, there is no way out!

## ***Chapter Eleven***

# ***Escape from Hell***

Dear Friend, as you read this, ask yourself — am I headed for hell? Or am I headed for heaven? Are you going to burn in the fires, flames, and fumes of hell? You have a chance now to escape from hell! Take this chance and give your life to Christ. Simply and sincerely accept Christ as your Saviour now.

If you want to be Born Again, please pray this prayer with me:



Dear Lord;

I don't want to go to hell. I realize I am a sinner. Please forgive me. Please come into my heart and be my Saviour. I accept and receive you NOW as my Master. I will obey your Word from today. Please help me to serve you from now on. Thank you Jesus.

**Amen!**

## *Chapter Twelve*

# *Use Me, Lord!*

Dear reader, it's time for you to prevent someone from going to hell. God will not send any angels to evangelize the world whilst we are here.

We've played enough Christian games. **Today I challenge you to become a roadblock to hell.**

**What I am sharing with you is coming from my heart to yours. The harvest is truly great and the labourers are truly few.** Let us arise and warn the world that there is a heaven to gain and a hell to avoid.

Let us prayerfully say:

**Father use me. Lord may my life, my words and my actions prevent others from going to hell.** If you can use anything Lord, please use me.

**Amen.**





















































































**TRANSFORM YOUR  
PASTORAL  
MINISTRY**

**DAG HEWARD-MILLS**

## **PARCHMENT HOUSE**



UNLESS OTHERWISE STATED, ALL SCRIPTURE  
QUOTATIONS ARE TAKEN FROM THE KING JAMES  
VERSION OF THE BIBLE

PARCHMENT HOUSE

ISBN 9988-596-17-0

COPYRIGHT © 2000 PARCHMENT  
HOUSE

1<sup>ST</sup> PRINTING 2000

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED UNDER INTERNATIONAL  
COPYRIGHT LAW. WRITTEN PERMISSION MUST BE  
SECURED FROM THE PUBLISHER TO USE OR REPRO-  
DUCE ANY PART OF THIS BOOK, EXCEPT FOR BRIEF  
QUOTATIONS IN CRITICAL REVIEWS OR ARTICLES.

## **DEDICATION**

*I dedicate this book to Rev. Eddy Addy.*

*Thank you for your loyalty and friendship through the years.*

# **CONTENTS**

## **Part I** **REAL MINISTRY**

*Why You Should Avoid a Pseudo Ministry*  
*13*

*How You Can Achieve Excellence in Ministry*  
*17*

## **Part II** **PRAYER**

*10 Reasons Why Every Minister Should Pray*  
*21*

*18 Facts About Spiritual Warfare*  
*31*

*20 Ways to Know Your Enemy So You Can Defeat Him*  
*37*

*5 Ways For Pastors To Pray Effectively*

**44**

***6 Reasons For Praying Strategic Bible Prayers***

**47**

***7 Examples Of Praying Fervently***

**51**

***7 Signs Of Fervent Prayer***

**55**

***9 Steps To Praying For A Long Time***

**58**

***3 Steps To Understanding Intercession***

**62**

***20 Reasons Why Every Pastor Needs An Intercessor***

**63**

***How To Intercede Against The Law Of Degeneration***

**65**

***How To Intercede Against The Law Of The World***

**67**

***How To Intercede Against The Law Of The Flesh***

**68**

***How To Intercede Against The Law Of The Elements***

**69**



*How To Intercede Against The Law Of Humanity*  
70

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of Nature*  
72

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of The Devil*  
74

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of Time*  
76

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of Creeping  
Things* 78

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of Things De-  
termined* 80

*How To Intercede Against The Law Of The Stars*  
82

*How To Intercede About The Laws Of God*  
84

*7 Signs That Show That You Are Engaged In  
Travailing Prayer* 86

*32 Reasons Why I Pray In Tongues*  
88

## **Part III**

# **VISITATION**

***12 Reasons Why Pastors Must Visit Their Sheep***  
**93**

***3 Secrets Behind The Power Of Visitation***  
**95**

***8 Guidelines For Fruitful Visitation***  
**97**

***10 Rules For Visitation***  
**99**

***7 Tips That Make Visitation Easier***  
**102**

***5 Visits That Have Life-Changing Power***  
**104**

***5 Visits That Bring A Permanent Change***  
**107**

***5 Visits That Establish Church Members***  
**110**

## **Part IV**

# **TEACHING**

*15 Keys To Becoming A Successful Teacher Of The  
Word* *115*

*4 Reasons Why Every Pastor Should See The Con-  
gregation  
As God's Garden*  
*119*

*7 Reasons Why A Pastor Should Teach In Series*  
*121*

*4 Keys To Augment Your Teaching Ministry*  
*122*

*7 Reasons Why Listening To Tapes Will Transform  
Your Preaching Ministry*  
*123*

*How To Establish A Doctrine In The Church*  
*125*

*9 Reasons Why Pastors Should Preach The Word Of  
God 127*

*7 Reasons Why You Should Teach Your Leaders  
132*

*Why You Must Avoid “Pseudo Word” And Doctrines  
Of Devils 134*

## **Part V**

# **INTERACTION**

*8 Reasons Why Interaction Is Important For Every  
Church 138*

*How To Interact With People  
141*

*8 Ways You Can Make People Feel Special  
143*

*How To Encourage Interaction Between Church  
Members 146*

*P.V.T.I.*

*148*



**PART I**  
**REAL MINISTRY**

# **CHAPTER ONE**

*why you should avoid a pseudo ministry*

In the Old Testament, true ministry was typified by the gold in the temple. Every important object in the temple was covered with pure gold. The Lord gave the design of the temple to Moses.

**And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring me an offering... And let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them... And thou shalt make a mercy seat of pure gold... And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee. And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat...**

**Exodus 25: 1,2,8,17,21,22**

This is what God wanted His temple to look like. No man has the right to introduce his own variations into God's master plan. When King Solomon built the temple, he followed God's plan to the letter.

**And the oracle in the forepart was twenty cubits in length, and twenty cubits in breadth, and twenty cubits in the height**

**thereof: and he overlaid it with pure GOLD; and so covered the altar which was of cedar. So Solomon overlaid the house within with PURE GOLD: and he made a partition by the chains of GOLD before the oracle; and he overlaid it with GOLD. And the whole house he overlaid with GOLD, until he had finished all the house: also the whole altar that was by the oracle he overlaid with GOLD... And within the oracle he made two cherubim of olive tree, each ten cubits high... And he overlaid the cherubim with GOLD... And the floor of the house he overlaid with GOLD, within and without.**

**1 Kings 6:20-23, 28,30**

**And Solomon made all the vessels that pertained unto the house of the Lord: the altar of GOLD, and the table of GOLD, whereupon the shewbread was, And the candlesticks of pure GOLD, five on the right side, and five on the left, before the oracle, with the flowers, and the lamps, and the tongs of GOLD, And the bowls, and the snuffers, and the basons, and the spoons, and the censers of pure GOLD; and the hinges of GOLD both for the doors of the inner house, the most holy place, and for the doors of the house, to wit, of the temple.**

**1 Kings 7:48-50**

Many years later, another king substituted the gold with brass. Brass looks very much like gold. It is “close and parallel”, but it is not gold. King Rehoboam brought brass into the Lord’s house. It may have looked like the real thing but God was not pleased with it. Brass is an alloy consisting of copper and zinc. In reality, brass is very different from pure gold! Many people are deceived when the real is substituted for the pseudo. That is why I am writing this book.



**So Shishak king of Egypt came up against Jerusalem, and took away the TREASURES of the house of the Lord and the treasures of the king's house; he took all: he carried away also the shields of gold which Solomon had made. Instead of which king Rehoboam made shields of BRASS, and committed them to the hands of the chief of the guard, that kept the entrance of the king's house.**

**2 Chronicles 12:9-10**

Through this book, I want to help you to keep the gold in the temple. You must not substitute anything for real biblical ministry. As is the case with many professions, lay people do not really know what the professional does. Lay people do not really know, for example, what a pilot or doctor knows. It is important for everyone who is getting into the ministry to know what it is all about!

I realise that many people like to create a mystical air about what they do. They do this to enhance their image within the profession. However, the Lord has urged me to teach you what a pastor's real duties are. In this book, I will not attempt to cover every detail of a pastor's work. I am only going to share the main things with you.

It is my prayer that you will believe in the simplicity of the ministry. I realise that people often prefer complicated doctrines to simple truths. They feel that the more complicated the message is, the more likely it is from God. But the greatest truths are often simple enough for the common man to grasp.

In the Book of Acts, Peter and the other apostles arrived at a crossroad of ministry. At that crossroad, they had to decide

which direction to take. **They had to decide whether they were going to be real ministers or secular administrators.** But they chose real ministry!

**Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should LEAVE THE WORD OF GOD, AND SERVE TABLES.**

**Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But WE WILL GIVE OURSELVES CONTINUALLY TO PRAYER, AND TO THE MINISTRY OF THE WORD.**

**Acts 6:2-4**

You must be able to differentiate between *true ministry* and *pseudo-ministry*. A pseudo-ministry is not the real thing! Like brass, which is a poor substitute for gold, it is close and parallel to the real thing. There are many things that look like true ministry, but are not.

For instance, being a church administrator makes you busy around the ministry. Many pastors are actually administrators. They are seen to be busy in and around the church office. Psychologically, they feel that they are working for God. After all, the rest of the world is in offices and behind computers. People seem to have something important to do from nine to five everyday. They go out there as secretaries, security men, computer programmers and so on. If the pastor is not seen to be doing something similar, he feels unemployed. I have had people ring me at home at eleven o'clock in the morning. They would ask if I were still asleep. They assume that a pastor sleeps all week.

Dear ministers of the Gospel, do not be moved by people's

opinions. Do not yield to worldly pressures. It is the prince of the power of the air who governs and directs the world. Everything in the world is controlled from the Spirit realm. Satan is a clever being and has deceived the whole world. But this deception must not come into the church.

**Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:**

**Ephesians 2:2**

The world has been deceived into thinking that there is no life after death. “Eat, drink and be merry for tomorrow we die! When you die you are dead like a dog! Heaven is on earth and hell is on earth! Life is what you make it!” These subtle slogans have influenced the masses to live their lives chasing after money and pleasure.

When this kind of thinking enters the church, people feel that only secular (non-spiritual) things are of importance. Even pastors are under pressure to buy computers and sit in offices like everyone else. But we are not “everyone else”! We are shepherds of God’s flock! Shepherds are “dirty” people who live among the sheep. Shepherds are people who give their lives for the sheep. A shepherd is not an armchair executive!

When you declare that your work is prayer, you immediately look queer! Government officials have the audacity to suggest that the church spend its time doing more “fruitful” things. Indeed! What is more fruitful than prayer? Why should we listen to unbelievers tell us how to do our job? Why should godless men teach the church her duties?

*The church has come under so much pressure that many ministers have set aside the Great Commission. The Great Commission is our principal instruction from the head of the church.*

**Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always even unto the end of the world. Amen.**

**Matthew 28:19,20**

Read it for yourself! It is in black and white! There is no mention of social, health or educational work. **Health and education may be by-products of the Great Commission but a by-product must not become the main product!**

Today, large sections of the church are mere hospitals, schools, relief organisations and social clubs. This is unfortunate! You will notice that secular health organisations and educational institutions do not set aside their jobs to preach the Word of God! Satan smiles approvingly as the ministers of the Gospel metamorphose into politicians, social workers and health workers. The gold of ministry has been substituted with brass!

This attitude filters down to the ordinary Christian. One day, a young student brought me a report from the university.

He said, "Pastor, God is moving on the campus!"

I said, "Really, what is happening?"

He said, "God is working!"

So I asked, "How is God moving? What is He doing?"

He said to me, "People are passing their exams!"

I was taken aback. “*Exams?*”

Although I didn’t voice it out, I thought to myself, “When God moves, people get saved and filled with the Spirit.” Passing exams is a blessing from God but it is not the *move of God*. Let us not get confused about God’s work. Let us understand what the Bible teaches about ministry. Let’s not mistake brass for gold. Let us avoid the judgement of Rehoboam by bringing only gold into the temple.

It is my prayer that as you read this book you will understand what pastors, shepherds and church leaders are supposed to do. It’s time to move away from “pseudo-ministry”. We cannot hasten the return of the Lord Jesus Christ with something that looks like the real thing but is not.

## Three Reasons

In summary, these are the three reasons why we should avoid a pseudo ministry:

1. **The church is the only institution that is mandated to preach the Gospel and make disciples of every nation.** No one else will do our job for us!
2. **We must not try to impress the world by doing things that they want us to do.** God is the one who called us and He is the one we must seek to please.
3. **We can only defeat Satan and his cohorts with *real* ministry!** A pseudo ministry has no place in this great end-time battle.

*I have a little code that will help you and I to remember the humble duties of a God ordained pastor. And it goes like this:*

*P for prayer, V for visitation, T for teaching (counseling and preaching) and I for interaction. (P.V.T.I.)*

# CHAPTER 2

## HOW YOU CAN ACHIEVE EXCELLENCE IN MINIS- TRY

You can achieve excellence in ministry! Your ministry does not have to be mediocre. However, you must realize that excellence must be achieved by *God's standards*, and not *human standards*. In this short chapter, I want to show you four keys that brought excellence to Jesus' ministry.

Jesus Christ is the greatest example for all of us. He is given to us so we can see what God looks like. In every situation we have the best example to follow.

Who being the brightness of his glory, and the EXPRESS IMAGE of his person...

Hebrews 1:3

***Remember this! When you don't know what to do, do what Jesus did. Jesus is the good shepherd (John 10:11). He is the best example of a pastor you could ever have. Are you a good pastor? Who endorses your ministry – God or man? Would Jesus say "Well done, good and faithful servant" to you?***

## **Jesus the Model of Excellence**

Since Jesus is the example of excellence, let us look at Jesus for direction in ministry. I want us to look at four main areas of the good Shepherd's ministry: prayer, visitation, teaching and interaction (PVTI). A good understanding of these four aspects of Jesus' ministry will transform your pastoral ministry.

### ***1. Prayer***

**And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there PRAYED.  
Mark 1:35**

### ***2. Visitation***

**And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they ENTERED INTO THE HOUSE of Simon and Andrew, with James and John...  
Mark 1:29-31**

### ***3. Teaching***

**And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may PREACH there also: for therefore came I forth.  
And he PREACHED in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.**



**Mark 1:38,39**

***4. Interaction***

**Now as HE WALKED BY THE SEA OF GALILEE, HE SAW SIMON AND ANDREW his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.**

**And JESUS SAID UNTO THEM, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.**

**Mark 1:16,17**

These scriptures show us that Jesus was a man of prayer, a man of preaching, a man of visitation and a man who interacted with the people.



# **PART II**

# **PRAYER**

# **CHAPTER THREE**

## ***10 reasons why every minister should pray***

Prayer is the foundation for every real ministry. Prayer is actually *the ministry*. Anyone who discovers this reality will have a great and fruitful ministry. Let me give you ten reasons why every minister should pray.

### **THE TEN REASONS**

#### **1. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER IS A GREAT ACT OF FAITH**

*Prayer is one of the greatest acts of faith. I never used to think so! I always used to think that praying was different from exercising faith. But now I realise that prayer demonstrates and releases faith. The reason for this is simple; whenever you pray, you are declaring that you do not have faith in the arm of flesh. Have you not noticed that every time you begin to pray, one hundred different “things to do” come to your mind?*

*Something tells you to make a call. Something says to you ‘get up and go’. Something tells you to organise that meeting so that you have good success. When you decide to pray, you are saying that prayer will have a greater effect than all those physical things you have to do. In other*

***words, you are saying that God's direct intervention is the most important thing for your ministry. That is faith in the arm of God.***

*And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, SHALL HE FIND FAITH on the earth?*

*Luke 18:1-8*

***After this great lesson on prayer, Jesus asked an important question. Will I find faith on earth? He was asking: 'will I find people on earth who pray?' In other words, Jesus wondered whether he would find this expression of faith (prayer) when he returned to the earth.***

## **Prayer is an Expression of Faith**

Do you want to be a great man of faith? A man of faith is a man of great exploits. Become a great man of faith by becoming a man of prayer. Prayer is one of the greatest expressions of faith in God.

**But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.**

**Hebrews 11:6**

As you can see, you cannot please God without faith. That means you cannot please God in the ministry without prayer. You do not please God by being an administrator, accountant or computer wizard. You please God by praying and demonstrating faith in Him.

## **2. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER MAKES YOU INTO A MAN OF AUTHORITY**

**And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: For he taught them AS ONE HAVING AUTHORITY, and not as the scribes.**

**Matthew 7:28,29**

You will notice that Jesus was a man of authority. *Authority* can be explained as “*Not-easily-defined, invisible, magnetic aura that surrounds a man of God.*” Authority emanates from your closeness to God. The closer you are to a person, the more confidently you speak about him. You will have more authority when you speak of him.

For instance, when a great man dies, his death may not be announced immediately. There are different reasons for this. For instance, one of the heads of state of Nigeria, General Aguiyi-Ironsi, was assassinated on the 28<sup>th</sup> July 1966, but it was not

announced until 14<sup>th</sup> January 1967. However, if you were close to the family you would have been able to speak *authoritatively* about whether he was dead or alive. If you said that the person was dead, people would believe you because of your closeness. *The closer you are, the more authority you have.*

The more you pray the closer you are to God. If you are close to God it means you have more authority with God and with man. As you pray people will not be able to explain that invisible magnetic aura that surrounds you. You will have a following without even understanding why people follow you! You will have a crowd without being able to explain why! Your teaching will have more power! Your instructions will be obeyed! All these are the results of ministerial prayer that make you into a man of authority.

## **How Jesus Became a Man of Authority**

Jesus was not introduced to this world by anyone. He was not appointed as a teacher by anyone. In fact, his background was questioned and many had reservations about his parentage. But Jesus knew the secret of having authority with man. He went into the wilderness and waited on God.

**And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.**

**Luke 4:14**

The word “power” is translated from the Greek word

*dunamis. Dunamis means “miraculous power, ability, abundance, strength, violence, mighty wonderful work and enabling power.”* Jesus had become a man of authority! He had new strength, abundance and power. This new invisible magnetic aura around Jesus was derived from prayer. The response to his first sermon in Nazareth was amazing.

**AND ALL BEAR HIM WITNESS AND WONDERED at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth.**

**Luke 4:22**

Jesus had equally great results in Capernaum. People were simply amazed with his preaching and ministry.

And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days. **AND THEY WERE ASTONISHED** at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

**Luke 4:31,32**

Where do you think this authority and success came from? Where did all these crowds come from? Why were people suddenly listening to this thirty-year-old man? This is what I call the *“not-easily-defined, invisible, magnetic aura that surrounds a man of prayer.”* Perhaps you don’t have anyone to introduce you in ministry. Like Jesus, you can become a man of authority and receive recognition.

### **3. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER MAKES YOU A MAN OF ANOINTING**

When you are close to someone, something rubs off on you. Whenever you spend time in prayer, you are spending time talk-



ing to God. The more you talk to someone, the closer you become to the person. The closer you are to someone, the more things rub off on you. Do you want some of God's glory to be on you? Do you want the anointing to be on your life?

I wish I could offer you an easier way but only prayer will bring you close to God.

The example of Moses tells it all. Moses went into the mountain and stayed in the presence of the Lord for a long time.

And Moses went into the midst of the cloud, and gat him up into the mount: and Moses was in the mount forty days and forty nights.

Exodus 24:18

You will notice that Moses was a man who spent long hours with the Lord. After being so long on the mountain, the glory of the Lord was evident on him. Dear pastor, this is what will happen to you when you spend hours with the Lord. There will be glory on your life and ministry.

**But if the ministration of death written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold THE FACE OF MOSES FOR THE GLORY of his countenance...**

**2 Corinthians 3:7**

#### **4. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER BINDS DEMONIC ACTIVITIES IN YOUR MINISTRY**

Dear pastor friend, a church is not a secular organisation.

You need to bind the devil for several important reasons:

- a. You must bind his activity that causes divisions and disloyalty amongst leaders.
- b. You must bind his influence that causes backsliding, immorality and sin in your members.
- c. You must bind the demons that cause poverty, depression and oppression in your members.
- d. You must bind the spirits that raise accusations and slander against the church.

Whether you like it or not, Satan assigns demons to attack and destroy the church. I suggest you read my book, *Leadership and Loyalty* to get a fuller revelation of the activity of demons against your ministry.

**If you do not bind the devil he will bind you in your own church.** You will be unable to minister. No one will receive from you and you will wonder what is going on. The devil will scatter your congregation time and time again. There will be a complex network of stories, accusations, slander and discussions that constantly divide the church. Rise up today and bind Satan and demons in your church.

## **5. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER CREATES AND GIVES BIRTH TO NEW DIMENSIONS IN MINISTRY**

**...for as soon as Zion travailed, SHE BROUGHT FORTH HER CHILDREN.**

**Isaiah 66:8**

A very important revelation about prayer is the fact that prayer has a creative potential. If you are starting out in ministry, you will need to pray until something that doesn't exist comes into existence. Creating something is different from maintaining it.

Many people can maintain what has been created but it takes a man of prayer to create new things.

*If you are sent out to do a pioneering work, be a man of prayer. A man of prayer is a man who creates new spiritual dimensions. The Apostle Paul was a man of prayer. He said,*

**My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until CHRIST BE FORMED IN YOU.**

**Galatians 4:19**

Paul had to travail for Christ to be formed in these Christians. Paul did not try to do it by any other means. **Forming committees, organising meetings, having Bible studies and showing love does not create new dimensions.** I have been involved in establishing new churches, fellowships and ministries for many years. From my experience I can give you a little suggestion. The first suggestion is, PRAY. The second suggestion is also to PRAY. And the third is to PRAY!

## **6. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER IS THE FIRST APOSTOLIC COMMAND TO EVERY MINISTER**

The apostle Paul had a lot of good advice and teaching for his son Timothy. He was taught about every conceivable subject in the ministry. Paul taught him about Bible study, about

training of pastors and even about how to handle rebels. However, a good analysis of Paul's instructions to his son Timothy will reveal that the first command was to pray.

**I exhort therefore, that FIRST OF ALL supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men. For kings and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour.**  
**1 Timothy 2:1-3**

This scripture is usually referred to when the church is being taught about praying for the government. I agree that this verse is teaching us to pray for our leaders. But I want to draw your attention to the fact that it was the first major instruction that Paul gave to Timothy. And it was an instruction to pray. The first chapter of First Timothy does not contain any major commands to Timothy. In this all-important letter, the apostle found it important first of all to tell Timothy to pray.

A minister has many things to do, but FIRST OF ALL he must pray!

## **7. PRAY BECAUSE THE APOSTLES REFUSED TO GIVE UP PRAYER WHEN THEY WERE UNDER PRESSURE FROM ADMINISTRATIVE DUTIES**

**Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.**

**Acts 6:2-4**

When the early church grew the apostles came under pressure to become administrators.

The mystery of ministry is this – when you pray you will give birth to many souls and much fruit. These new fruits will demand care and time from you. Their needs will overwhelm you. You will have a genuine burden to help them. As you become engaged in helping these ones, you will find less time to pray. As you pray less, your ministry will plateau or decline. **Your greatest duty therefore, is to be able to balance the need to look after the souls and the need to pray.** I find myself struggling with this all the time.

Peter and the other apostles took the right decision and preserved their ministries. The baton has been handed over to us. Our greatest need is to spend hours in prayer. Let us not succumb to the pressure that wants us to neglect our great responsibility of intercession. If we neglect prayer, who will do it?

What is the difference between the living sections and the dead sections of the church today? It is prayer! The section that is alive is where the blood of Jesus is flowing and where

people are being saved. Medically speaking, a person is alive when his heart beats and the blood flows through the body. A person is also declared to be alive when the doctor can hear air blowing through the lungs.

Spiritually speaking, when the blood of Jesus is flowing through the body and people are being saved, we can say that the church is alive. When the Holy Spirit is blowing through the body we can also say that the church is alive.

There are many churches where nobody is ever saved or filled with the Spirit. These are the dead parts of the church. There have always been dead parts of the church. Do you want your church to die? Do you want to be classified as a dead church? I hope not!

**I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest,  
AND ART DEAD.**

**Revelations 3:1**

One of the hallmarks of what people call revival is prayer. Where do you hear shouting and prayer all night long? Where do you hear of long prayer meetings with people speaking in tongues? In such places you will see people being saved and filled with the Holy Spirit continually.

Do not take the subject of prayer lightly! Prayer is the lifeline to your ministry. That is why the apostles did not give up the ministry of prayer even when they were under pressure.

## **8. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER WAS THE GREATER PART OF CHRIST'S MINISTRY**

## **1 unit of preaching: 571.4 units of prayer**

Think about it. Jesus preached and taught for three and a half years. Since then, He has been interceding for us. Three and a half years of teaching compared to two thousand years of prayer! This gives us a ratio of one unit of preaching for every five hundred and seventy one units of prayer That is an amazing ratio! **Most ministers have more than ten units of preaching to one unit of prayer!**

Perhaps you didn't know that Jesus is still carrying out His ministry towards us. The Bible teaches very clearly that Jesus is our shepherd and that He cares for us. Consider if you were a pastor caring for a congregation who had to travel abroad. Would your heart not be with the people you had left behind? Would you not pray for them? Would you not send messengers to them? Would you not send gifts to the congregation to help them along their way? This is exactly what is happening to Jesus. He keeps sending messages, gifts and blessings to us. Notice these revealing scriptures.

**Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing HE EVER LIVETH TO MAKE INTERCESSION for them.**

**Hebrews 7:25**

**...it is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, WHO ALSO MAKETH INTERCESSION FOR US.**

**Romans 8:34**

Jesus is alive! He is able to save us to the uttermost. In

other words, He is rescuing us from every extreme and distressing situation. We are being saved to the uttermost because of Jesus' prayer. Salvation is affecting every part of our lives because of Jesus' intercession. Think about how your converts would be saved to the uttermost if you prayed like Jesus prayed.

## **Greatness in Ministry Depends on Intercessory Abilities**

Even in the Old Testament, predictions were made about the great ministry of Jesus because he was going to be an intercessor. Intercession truly makes you into a great man of God. I have rarely seen a great man of God who is not a man of prayer. The cycle is like this: *man of prayer means man of faith means great man of God.*

**Therefore will I divide him A PORTION WITH THE GREAT, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bear the sin of many, and MADE INTERCESSION for the transgressors.**

**Isaiah 53:12**

Do you want to be numbered among the great and strong in God's army? Move away from debates, arguments and endless discussions. Become an intercessor today.

## **9. PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER RELEASES CAPTIVES**



If your eyes were opened spiritually you would suddenly see millions of people in spiritual captivity. They are captive to demon powers that are loose on this earth.

**...to preach deliverance to the captives.**

**Luke 4:18**

In my opinion, the people experiencing the strongest oppression are the people who live in Europe. Our duty as ministers is to *weaken* the grip of these demonic powers over the souls on this earth. At best our spiritual warfare can dislodge, displace or temporarily relocate demonic forces so that God's kingdom can gain ascendancy for a season.

**...pulling down of strongholds.**

**2 Corinthians 10:4**

*The demons in the madman of Gadara wanted to stay in the area and they got their way in the end. Jesus only relocated them within the Gadara community. The Bible teaches that the devil has a right to be around. There is no use in trying to cast the devil out of the earth. Satan has a lease period that he is exploiting to the fullest. He reminded Jesus that he had a lease and a right to be around. He reminded Jesus that it was not yet time for them to be put out of the earth.*

*...Jesus, thou Son of God art thou come hither to torment us BEFORE THE TIME?*

*Matthew 8:29*

A time will come when Satan will be permanently removed from the earth. We will not have to do that job. It will be done by a mighty angel from heaven. Our duty is just to weaken the

stronghold so that some captives can escape. We can weaken the stronghold of the devil by prayer.

This is why the devil said: “have you come before the time?”. The devil can also read and write and he sees his future judgement in black and white. When this happens he will no longer have the power to deceive and to destroy the people on this earth. Read it for yourself.

**And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and SHUT HIM UP, and set a seal upon him, that he should DECEIVE THE NATIONS NO MORE, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season...  
Revelations 20:1-3**

## **One Thousand Years Later**

**...And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**

**Revelations 20:10**

For now, the only thing we can do is to weaken the grip and hold of satanic power on the souls of men. When this grip is weakened, the captives will walk away in freedom. When you pray, the power of the devil to hold unbelievers is weakened. Our greatest weapon is prayer. That is why nothing hap-

pens when there is no prayer. That is why a lot happens when people pray! That is why the devil is doing everything to prevent you from praying.

**For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the PULLING DOWN OF STRONGHOLDS.  
2 Corinthians 10:4**

Because the devil knows that we have no weapons in the natural, he often tries to keep us operating in the natural realm. What a mistake it is to function mainly in the natural, a realm where we are unarmed and ‘weaponless’! May the Lord open your eyes to understand this revelation of prayer!

## **10.PRAY BECAUSE PRAYER AVAILETH MUCH**

**Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.  
James 5:16**

The Bible teaches that prayer has great effects. Almost every Christian knows this famous scripture on the power of prayer. The term “availeth much” is a little blind to us. Here are ten different definitions of this expression.

### **To avail much means:**

- a. To succeed*
- b. To prevail*

- c. To overcome*
- d. To be able to do something*
- e. To be strong against an opposing force*
- f. To be helpful*
- g. To make an impact*
- h. To strike an impression*
- i. To be effective*
- j. To accomplish much.*

I also enjoy these translations of the scripture – James 5:16

**Tremendous power is made available through a good  
man's earnest prayer.**

**James 5:16 (Philips Translation)**

**The prayer of a righteous man can bring powerful results.**

**James 5:16 (Olaf M Norlie Translation)**

The prayer of a righteous man – makes tremendous power available – dynamic in its working.

**James 5:16 (Amplified Translation)**

**An upright man's prayer, when it keeps at work is very  
powerful.**

**James 5:16 (Williams Translation)**



# **CHAPTER FOUR**

## ***18 facts about spiritual warfare***

Spiritual warfare is the art of fighting against spiritual forces on the earth. These forces have captured the souls of millions. Like the Bible says, the devil has deceived the whole world. We may not be able to get rid of him now, but we will definitely weaken his grip on the masses through our prayer. We know that one day he will be dealt with permanently.

**And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and SHUT HIM UP, and set a seal upon him, that he should DECEIVE THE NATIONS NO MORE, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season...**

**Revelations 20:1-3**

**...And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.**

**Revelations 20:10**

***Let me now share with you  
twenty facts you should know  
about our battle with the***

*demonic hordes on this earth.*

## ***1. OUR PRINCIPAL ENEMY IS SATAN AND NOT OTHER HUMAN BEINGS***

He is the leader of the hordes of demonic forces on this earth. Satan is a powerful being who fell from a glorious estate.

**How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet.**  
**Isaiah 14:12-19**

## ***2. SATAN, AN INTELLIGENT BEING, HAS RESORTED TO THE WARFARE OF DECEPTION, TRICKS AND FANTASTIC SCHEMES***

Satan, who is our principal enemy, knows that he does not stand a chance against the might of the church.

**Put on the armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the WILES of the devil.**

**Ephesians 6:11**

### ***3. IN ORDER TO DEFEAT OUR ENEMY WE MUST KNOW AS MUCH AS WE CAN ABOUT HIM***

*This is one of the most important rules of war. This is where secular armies engage in reconnaissance and intelligence work. Without this knowledge you will be defeated easily. Ask the US Army what happened to them in Vietnam.*

### ***4. SATAN HAS A CONTAGIOUS NATURE/CHARACTER WHICH HE PASSES ON TO HIS FOLLOWERS***

*A lot of information about our enemy can be gleaned by analysing the twenty names and titles of Satan. Know your enemy so that you can defeat him.*

### ***5. SATAN HAS A RIGHT TO BE ON EARTH***

He told Jesus that. He showed Jesus the nations of the world and offered them to Him. Jesus did not tell the devil that he was



lying. He knew that the devil had the power to hand over the nations of the world. He did not argue about that. If it was not so, Jesus would not have been tempted.

**And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.**

**Luke 4:6**

## ***6. THE DEVIL KNOWS THAT HE HAS A LEASE ON THE EARTH***

*This lease will expire soon and the devil knows it. Our enemy in spiritual warfare is the devil. Satan is aware of the expiry date on his lease.*

**And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us BEFORE THE TIME?**

**Matthew 8:29**

## ***7. IT IS NOT OUR DUTY TO RID THE EARTH OF SATAN AND HIS DEMONS***

Even Jesus did not try to do that! You do not try to get a tenant out of your house before the lease expires. You know that he will fight you in court. Our duty as ministers is to *weaken* the grip of demonic powers over the souls on this earth. At best our spiritual warfare can dislodge, displace or temporarily relocate demonic forces so that God's kingdom can gain ascendancy for a season.

**...pulling down of strongholds.**

**2 Corinthians 10:4**

## **8. SATAN IS A VERY WICKED LESSEE**

*A lessee is a person who holds a property by lease. Satan is the god of this world for a period. The Bible tells us that the whole world lies in Satan's wicked arms because of this.*

**And we know that we are of God, and THE WHOLE  
WORLD LIETH IN WICKEDNESS.**

**1 John 5:19**

The property that Satan the lessee has is trembling under his evil tenancy. One day that power will be broken forever.

## **9. EVEN THOUGH WE CANNOT GET RID OF THE DEVIL PERMANENTLY, WE CAN ENGAGE HIM IN DIFFERENT KINDS OF WARFARE**

We can *wrestle* with him (Ephesians 6:12). We can *cast* him out of people (Mark 5:13). We can *bind* him (Matthew 18:18). We can *pull down* or weaken his strongholds (2 Corinthians 10:4). We can *fight his deception* with the Word (Hebrews 4:12).

## **10. SATAN'S MAIN STRATEGY IS TO CAPTURE THE WORLD INTO GROUPS OF "STRONG-**

## ***HOLDS” WHICH THINK IN A CERTAIN WAY***

*The devil’s strategy is to make the world think in a certain way so that he can lead them into self-destruction. The great philosophies of this world: humanism, atheism, communism and Marxism are manifestations of the imaginations of the devil. It is these imaginations (trends of thinking) that lead masses of people into self-destruction.*

(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) **CASTING DOWN IMAGINATIONS**, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.  
**2 Corinthians 10:4,5**

## ***11. MINISTERS MUST UNDERSTAND THE ROLE OF THE WORD IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE***

The church must destabilise and weaken strongholds on territories, nations, people and churches. All ministers must ensure that the Word of God gains pre-eminence. As the Word of God increases, Satan loses his grip over the souls. Read this amazing scripture and believe in the power of the Word.

**And the WORD of God INCREASED; and the number of the DISCIPLES MULTIPLIED in Jerusalem greatly...**  
**Acts 6:7**

**As the Word of God increases, the number of Christians will multiply.** That is why I write books and preach as hard as I can and as many times as possible. I know what it does to the

kingdom of darkness.

## ***12. CHRISTIAN LEADERS MUST USE THE TWO-PRONGED WEAPON OF PRAYER AND THE WORD TO DEFEAT SATAN IN SPIRITUAL WARFARE***

The ministry of prayer and the ministry of the Word is real ministry. That is the two-edged weapon that God has given to us. The apostles practised this! They refused to be drawn away from the ministry of the Word and prayer.

**Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables. But we will give ourselves continually to PRAYER, and to the MINISTRY OF THE WORD.**

**Acts 6:2,4**

## ***13. THE BEST EXAMPLE OF SPIRITUAL WARFARE WAS CHRIST JESUS***

***He taught and he prayed.***

**And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. And Simon and they that were with him followed after him. And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee. And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for**

therefore came I forth.  
Mark 1:35-38

*If we want to have the  
results that Jesus had, we must  
use the methods that He used.  
And his methods were praying  
and teaching.*

***14. APART FROM WEAKENING STRONGHOLDS  
MINISTERS CAN ALSO DISLODGE, DIS-  
PLACE OR TEMPORARILY RELOCATE DE-  
MONIC FORCES, SO THAT GOD'S KINGDOM  
CAN GAIN THE ASCENDANCY***

In the ministry of Jesus, he relocated demons from people's bodies into swine.

**And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea.  
Mark 5:13**

***15. ANYTIME YOU DEFEAT (WEAKEN OR DIS-  
LODGE) THE DEVIL YOU CAN EXPECT A  
COUNTERATTACK***

When Jesus defeated the devil in the wilderness, the Bible says that Satan relocated for a season. The devil did not leave him forever. If you were the devil would you leave your enemy forever? No! You would retreat, regroup and attack again an

other day.

**And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him FOR A SEASON.**

**Luke 4:13**

## ***16. WEAPONS THAT WEAKEN AND DISLODGE DEMONIC FORCES ARE PRAYER AND FAST- ING***

Jesus taught that demons could be dislodged by prayer and fasting.

**Howbeit this kind GOETH NOT OUT BUT BY PRAYER  
and fasting.**

**Matthew 17:21**

## ***17. THE WEAPON THAT WEAKENS AND TOR- MENTS SATAN IS THE WORD***

You will notice how the demon shouted out when Jesus taught the Word.

**And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out, Saying, LET US ALONE; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?**

**art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.**

## **Mark 1:23-25**

In this story, Jesus did not pray or bind the devil. But the devil said, “Stop it! You are tormenting me! You are hurting me!” The Bible describes the Word of God as a sword. Anytime you are speaking words, you are releasing swords into the atmosphere. Every pastor must use this great sword to achieve success in ministry.

## ***18.EVERY MINISTER MUST BE CAREFUL OF OPERATING IN THE NATURAL***

The Bible has warned us that we have no weapons in that realm.

**(For the weapons of our warfare ARE NOT CARNAL, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) 2 Corinthians 10:4**

Because the devil knows that we are disarmed in the natural world he tries to keep us occupied in human, secular and natural things. That is why many ministers of the Gospel today are teachers, administrators, managers, etc. Be careful not to fall into this trap.





# **CHAPTER FIVE**

## **20 WAYS TO KNOW YOUR ENEMY SO THAT YOU CAN DEFEAT HIM**

*In order to defeat your enemy you must know as much as you can about him. This is one of the most common rules of war. This is why secular armies engage in reconnaissance and intelligence work. Reconnaissance is the art of discovering the strengths, weaknesses, plans and location of the enemy. Without this you cannot even start your war.*

One of the ways by which we can know our enemy is to do a quick analysis of his names and titles. After all, a name speaks volumes about a person. Study the following twenty names or titles of Satan and you will know what you are dealing with.

### **1. DEVIL**

**Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a DEVIL?**

**John 6:70**

The word ‘devil’ comes from the Greek word *diabolos*. This

is where the English word diabolical comes from. *Diabolos* reveals the essential nature of this evil being. It means to be *inhumanly cruel* or *wicked*. It also means to be *outrageous* or *disgracefully bad*.

## 2. SATAN

**Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and SATAN came also among them.  
Job 1:6**

This comes from a Hebrew word *Satan*, which literally means adversary. It speaks of being *diabolical* or *hellish*. This name was first used in the Book of Job. It described a very wicked being who murdered the entire household of Job and destroyed his business.

Satan is the archenemy of both God and man. In this interesting passage, Satan is spoken of as a real person who seemed to have access to heaven. He also seemed to have power to accuse the brethren and to seek their destruction.

## 3. ACCUSER OF THE BRETHREN

**And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the ACCUSER OF OUR BRETHREN is cast down, which accused them before our**

**God day and night.  
Revelations 12:10**

*This title explains the relentless accusations and slander that are hurled against God's servants.*

#### **4. ADVERSARY**

**Be sober, be vigilant; because your ADVERSARY the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:  
1 Peter 5:8**

*This name reveals the antagonistic nature of Satan as he fights against everything we do. No wonder there is such resistance, hostility and unfriendliness to the Gospel.*

*Satan's agents, the unbelievers, are often in tune with the spirit of opposition to the church and its leaders. Many nations have laws that are hostile to the establishment of churches. Even though churches have brought so much health and educational benefits to nations, political leaders have no choice but to oppose the church.*

#### **5. ANGEL OF THE BOTTOMLESS PIT**

**And they had a king over them, which is the ANGEL OF THE BOTTOMLESS PIT, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name**

**Apollyon.**

**Revelations 9:11**

This name reveals the final destination of Satan and his cohorts. This can explain the frantic efforts of the devil to capture every corner of this earth. We must rise up now and counteract this desperate devil at every turn.

## **6. *BELIAL***

**And what concord hath Christ with BELIAL? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?**

**2 Corinthians 6:15**

Belial means worthless. Satan is out to degrade you. Just observe someone who is under the influence of the devil. You will notice how worthless he becomes.

The devil degrades young men into becoming drug addicts, school dropouts, smugglers, etc. Belial turns young ladies into prostitutes with no sense of worth.

## **7. *BEELZEBUB***

**But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by BEELZEBUB the prince of the devils.**

**Matthew 12:24**

This means the “Lord of the flies”. A lord of flies is obviously a supervisor of disease and death. Satan is the author of the famine, disease and death that plague millions today.

## **8. GOD OF THIS WORLD**

**In whom the GOD OF THIS WORLD hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.  
2 Corinthians 4:4**

“He’s got the whole world in his hands.” That’s the song we all learnt in Sunday school, but is that really the case? If he’s got the whole world in his hands, then why are there so many wars and famines everywhere? Why is there such unhappiness in the world? Why is half of the world very rich and the other half very poor?

Certainly, this would not happen under the management and leadership of Jehovah. You see, Satan is actually the god of this world. Where Jehovah is in full control (heaven), the streets are made of gold and the people live in absolute bliss.

One day when the Lord takes over the rulership of this world, there will be a different kind of earth with love, peace, and joy.

## **9. MURDERER**

**Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a MURDERER FROM THE BEGINNING, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.**

## **John 8:44**

*This is an appropriate title for the devil. He is a murderer. He is a killer and the author of all the bloodshed in this world. When he possesses a head of state this president may lead his nation into senseless wars which achieve nothing.*

As the fathers, husbands and brothers of multitudes are slaughtered, the murderer is living up to his reputation.

## ***10.PRINCE OF DEVILS***

**But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the PRINCE OF THE DEVILS.**

**Matthew 12:24**

*This title shows us the organised nature of the forces of darkness. Demons are organised into armies. They have an overall commander who is known as the prince of devils. As we move into spiritual warfare we are battling against an organized and intelligent enemy.*

## ***11.PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR***

**Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR, the spirit that now worketh in the children**

**of disobedience:  
Ephesians 2:2**

This reveals Satan's control over the atmosphere and airwaves in any nation. Look closely at the radio and television waves of any nation. You will notice how Satan has dominated these fields. It is important for Christians to fight for the control of the airwaves. We must fight for the control of the arts, culture and the music of our nations. This is the domain of the prince of the power of the *air* and it is our duty is to dislodge him.

## ***12. PRINCE OF THE WORLD***

**Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the PRINCE  
OF THIS WORLD cometh, and hath nothing in me.  
John 14:30**

This reveals Satan's rulership of the world and the systems of the world. As the world develops everything becomes more and more godless. I recently told a friend; "when I am in Europe I feel as though I am in Sodom." I said to him, "Europe is Pergamos revived!" Pergamos was the seat of Satan and the headquarters of demonic activity (Revelations 2:13).

## ***13. THE OLD SERPENT***

**And THE SERPENT said unto the woman, Ye shall not  
surely die:  
Genesis 3:4**

**And the great dragon was cast out, that OLD SERPENT,  
called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole  
world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were  
cast out**

**with him.  
Revelations 12:9**

In the beginning, he was described as a serpent. In the end, he was described as a serpent. Snakes are some of the most dangerous creatures we know about. With one stroke, they can kill a human being. Yet, snakes manage to live near human beings without being detected. This is exactly how Satan works.

He is in the church and the people don't even know it. He is nearby causing damage and yet he is unseen.

As we battle against the devil, we must be constantly aware that even though he is invisible, he is real. Anytime I walk through tall grass I am conscious of the fact that there may be dangerous snakes nearby. Every pastor must be conscious of the fact that there may be invisible demonic activity nearby.

#### ***14. THE TEMPTER***

**And when THE TEMPTER came to him, he said, If thou  
be the Son of God, command that these stones be made  
bread.  
Matthew 4:3**

Satan is the author of temptation! He creates situations that test our resolve to obey God. He tempted Jesus and he will tempt you and I. But God will come to your rescue. He will provide a way of escape for every temptation.

#### ***15. UNCLEAN SPIRIT***



**When the UNCLEAN SPIRIT is gone out of a man, he  
walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth  
none.**

**Matthew 12:43**

The word unclean is used to describe the devil many times. This is because that is what the devil is. We are fighting a being that has a contagious nature that wants to make you unclean.

The word unclean is translated from the Greek word *akarthartos*. It means impure, lewd, foul and unclean. It is a general term for Satan since his presence makes everything impure. Pure relationships are described as impure when unclean spirits get involved. Pure friendships become impure when the accuser points his finger at them.

## ***16. THE WICKED ONE***

**When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and  
understandeth it not, then cometh the WICKED ONE,  
and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This  
is he which received seed by the way side.**

**Matthew 13:19**

The wickedness of the devil is unparalleled. Occasionally, human beings who have been greatly influenced by Satan display flashes of this hellish character. The wars of Sierra Leone, the genocide of Rwanda and Kosovo testify to the wickedness of Satan. This is the enemy we seek to dislodge and weaken. In the name of Jesus we will defeat the wicked one.

## ***17.LUCIFER***

**How art thou fallen from heaven, O LUCIFER, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.**  
**Isaiah 14:12-15**

Lucifer is the name given to the angelic being that fell from grace. Lucifer is described in great detail in the Book of Ezekiel.

**Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.**  
**Ezekiel 28:13-15**

You can see that he was an awesome being! The descriptions of his glory show us the kind of creature he is. If such a

being is corrupted, you can understand the kind of monster that would be unleashed.

Satan's ability in the field of music (pipes and tabrets) is described in this passage. No wonder he has captivated millions through the power of unwholesome music.

### ***18.FATHER OF LIES***

**Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for HE IS A LIAR, AND THE FATHER OF IT.**  
**John 8:44**

When Saddam Hussein invaded Kuwait and declared war against the rest of the world, he frightened America by saying, "We're going to have the mother of all battles." When someone is described as a "mother" or "father", it tells us something important. If Satan is the father of lies then he is the parent and creator of all forms of deception. Satan's power to deceive is unparalleled.

### ***19.ABADDON***

**And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless PIT, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is ABADDON, but in the Greek tongue hath his name**

**Apollyon.**

**Revelations 9:11**

This is the angel of the abyss. In the Book of Job this word is translated destruction. *If you can't have it – destroy it!* This is the very nature of the devil. Some heads of state that cannot have power any longer, delight in destroying the entire nation through war. They get this idea from their master Abaddon.

***20.PRINCIPALITIES, POWERS, RULERS OF DARKNESS,  
WICKED SPIRITS***

**For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.  
Ephesians 6:12**

In this scripture, Paul groups the four main agents of Satan's outreach. Principalities represent spirits that dominate geographical areas. It is obvious that different kinds of spirits occupy different geographical areas. Amsterdam, for instance, has a principality of immorality. There is a saying that good boys go to heaven and bad boys go to Amsterdam.

Powers are beings that exert control over individuals. Another name you could give to them is "spirits that influence". Wicked spirits in high places speak of wicked entities that exist in the heavenlies. It was such a being that opposed the angel who was returning to Daniel with an answer to prayer (Daniel 10:13).

Rulers of the darkness speak of the spiritual beings that

control the darkness in the world. The underworld and the unbelievers are all under influence without even knowing it.

# **CHAPTER SIX**

## **5 WAYS FOR PASTORS TO PRAY EFFECTIVELY**

*...The EFFECTUAL fervent prayer of a righteous man  
availeth much.*

*James 5:16*

*Not all prayers are effective prayers. Some prayers are what I call doodling and dawdling prayers. It is important to pray effectively in the ministry. You might as well be out there doing something less spiritual if your prayers are not going to work! You might as well say “twinkle, twinkle little star”, if your prayers are not going to work.*

*I want to share with you five steps to praying effectively.*

### *1. Pray Bible Strategic Prayers*

*Let your prayers be guided by the Word of God. Pray the prayers that are recorded in the Word of God. For instance Ephesians 1:17-19 contains one of the most powerful prayers a minister should pray. I have prayed this prayer for myself for many years. I suggest that you do the same.*

*Another important prayer is found in Ephesians 3:15-19. This ‘Bible strategic prayer’ will make you pray to be grounded in love. This is very important for every pastor. Pastors make great sacrifices for the ministry but if they*

***don't have love, they will lose their heavenly rewards. It is God's will that you reap the full benefits of your ministry in Heaven.***

*... though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.*

*1 Corinthians 13:3)*

***In a later chapter, I will share in more detail on why your prayers must be guided by the Word of God. Become a Word person. Trust yourself to God and His Word. Believe in the Word more than you believe in yourself.***

## ***2. Pray fervently***

***Praying fervently is one of the conditions for effective prayer. To pray fervently means to pray ardently, with passion and feeling. The word fervent means passionate, enthusiastic, zealous, fanatical, impassioned, keen, avid, burning, ardent and eager.***

***If someone is watching you pray, he should be able to describe your prayer with one of the words you just read. If that is how your prayer is, I assure you that you will have great results. Certainly, doodling and dawdling do not show fervency in prayer!***

## ***3. Pray in Tongues***

***Every minister should spend several hours praying in tongues. Tongues is a gift that God has given to us. The Apostle Paul was very proud of his gift of tongues.***

***He boasted: "I thank God that I speak in tongues more than you all." (1 Corinthians 14:18) By this gift we can speak to God in a supernatural way. The gifts of the Spirit are not intended to be unnecessary ornamental appendages that may or may not be used. Use what God has given to you and you will be blessed in ministry.***

#### ***4. Have Discussions with the Holy Spirit***

***Prayer should be a two-way affair. If you want to develop in ministry you are going to have to learn to speak to the Holy Spirit. You need to hear His voice as well. The Holy Spirit is to us what Jesus was to His disciples. Somebody to talk to when you need to. Ministers who engage in conversations with the Holy Spirit are often very advanced in their walk with God.***

**I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.**

*John 14:18,26*

***Take your prayer a step further. Speak to the Holy Spirit and hear Him speak back to you. You will have supernatural direction like you never imagined.***

#### ***5. Pray for a Long Time***



Two-minute prayers are different from hours of prayer. There is no scripture that says that if you do not pray for long hours God will not hear you. However, Jesus, the ultimate minister prayed for long hours. The example of Jesus is compelling enough to follow.

**And in the morning, rising up A GREAT WHILE BEFORE DAY, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.**

**Mark 1:35**

**And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and CONTINUED ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God.**

**Luke 6:12**

As you can see, Jesus prayed for several hours. Paul was also someone who prayed for hours. Notice what he said in his letter.

**NIGHT AND DAY PRAYING EXCEEDINGLY that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith.**

**1 Thessalonians 3:10**

# **CHAPTER SEVEN**

## **6 REASONS FOR PRAY- ING STRATEGIC BIBLE PRAYERS**

In this chapter I want to share how you can make your ministry of prayer effective. The lesson here is simple. Pray what I call Bible strategic prayers! What do I mean by Bible prayers? Bible prayers are prayer outlines that can be found in the Word of God. There are several prayer topics that are outlined in the Word.

### ***a. The Lord's prayer***

**After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.**

**Matthew 6:9-13**

### ***b. First Ephesians Prayer***

Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power.

Ephesians 1:16-19

*c. Second Ephesians Prayer*

For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

Ephesians 3:14-19

*d. Timothy's Prayer*

I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may

**lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour.**

**1 Timothy 2:1-3**

I am not saying that these are the only things you should ever pray about. But I believe that if you make this your main prayer line you will see a change in your ministry. For further insight on this subject, see my book on *Strategic Prayer*.

I want to give you six reasons why you should stick to Bible prayers.

## **6 Reasons For Praying Strategic Bible Prayers**

1. *Human beings are corrupt in our minds, thoughts and in our hearts.* Very often our desires are corrupted by our corrupt human estate. No matter how spiritual a man of God is, he is at his best, still a man!

**For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.**

**1 Corinthians 15:53**

2. *We do not know what to pray for as we ought.* No matter how spiritual we become we are unable to see things clearly.

**...for WE KNOW NOT what we should pray for as we ought...**

**Romans 8:26**

**For now we see through a glass DARKLY...**

## 1 Corinthians 13:12

This verse teaches us that we do not see things clearly. When you see a vision, what is actually happening is that you are *being drawn towards the spirit world*. The further out you are drawn, the clearer the vision becomes. In some cases, you are actually drawn out of your body. Like the apostle Paul said, he knew a man who was caught up to the third heavens.

**I knew a man in Christ... such an one CAUGHT UP to the third heaven... How that HE WAS CAUGHT UP into paradise...**

**2 Corinthians  
12:2,3,4**

This man didn't even know whether he was in or out of his body. Most people are not drawn out very far and their visions are often a blurred picture that they are not certain of. In reality, a lot of what people call visions and prophecies are just impressions of things they see vaguely.

We need the help of the Holy Spirit to guide us, even in prayer. When we pray in tongues, the Holy Spirit controls our prayers. However, the Holy Spirit has already given us guidance for prayer through the words of Jesus and the letters of Paul. **If we follow these guidelines it will almost be equivalent to praying in tongues because the Word will guide us on what to pray for.**

3. *Pray Bible strategic prayers because our ways are not His ways.*

**For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your  
ways my ways, saith the Lord.  
Isaiah 55:8**

No matter how spiritual we become we are still human beings in a container of flesh. I have found God teaching me things that I thought I knew. I would have raised the dead many years earlier in my ministry, but His ways were not my ways. I prayed and fasted that God would use me to raise the dead father of a good friend. But God didn't seem to take any notice of me. I felt let down and disgraced. I had gone out there in faith, declaring that the dead would rise in the name of Jesus!

Unfortunately for me, my ways are not His ways. If that dead man had been raised, my entire life and ministry could have been ruined. God had His way and His way was to protect me and gently introduce me to real ministry.

Almost twenty years later, when a lady stood on my crusade platform testifying that her dead child had been raised as I ministered, I felt no emotion at all. I felt that if God wanted to raise the dead, it was entirely up to Him. I knew that I was an observer on the crusade platform. If this had happened twenty years earlier, perhaps I would have backslidden out of pride.

This is why we must pray more of Bible strategic prayers. God knows things that we do not know. Let us trust ourselves to His wisdom.

4. *You must pray strategic Bible prayers to avoid missing the target.*

The Bible teaches that many prayers miss the target. When

your arrow misses the target, it means that it did not get where you intended it! Why should you pray without your prayers getting to the Father? Why should you pray without your prayers having the desired effect? It's time to stop missing the target.

**Ye ask, and receive not, because YE ASK AMISS...**

**James 4:3**

Why do so many prayers miss the target? Once again, it's because we are human. We cannot see clearly so we miss the target by miles. Trust yourself to Bible strategic prayers.

5. *Bible strategic prayers cover all relevant areas that are important to your life.*

If you go through the Lord's prayer, you will discover that every important area is covered. Under the Lord's strategic prayer, you pray for your daily needs, forgiveness, and protection for the work of God.

The Pauline prayers in the Book of Ephesians are a little more difficult to understand. The topics themselves seem to be mystical. Perhaps that is why they are even more important for us. You may never know the effect of praying for the Spirit of revelation and wisdom (Ephesians 1:17). For example, the second Ephesians prayer (Ephesians 3:17) teaches that we should be rooted and grounded in love.

Naturally speaking, it does not occur to most of us to pray that we will be established in Christian love. But when you

understand that all good works that are performed outside Christian love amount to zero, perhaps you will understand why the Holy Spirit gave us that prayer. Notice this verse in 1 Corinthians 13:3.

**And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it PROFITETH ME NOTHING.**

**1 Corinthians 13:3**

It's a good thing for you to serve God, even paying the ultimate price for the ministry. However, in one stroke of a pen we are warned that without love all our good deeds will amount to zero.

*6. Bible strategic prayers prevent you from leaving out vital areas of prayer.*

When you pray these prayers you will cover all-important areas of your life. Perhaps you do not feel like praying for your government. There are some governments that one would naturally curse rather than pray for. However, if you follow the biblical pattern of prayer, you will pray for them rather than curse them.

**I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.**

**1 Timothy 2:1,2**

Deliver yourself from leaving out a vital area of prayer by following these biblical strategic prayers.



# ***CHAPTER EIGHT***

## **7 Examples of Praying fervently**

- 1. Elijah's ardent prayer as he bent over asking for rain, remains the most well known example of fervent prayer.**

**And Elijah said unto Ahab, Get thee up, eat and drink; for there is a sound of abundance of rain. So Ahab went up to eat and to drink. And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and HE CAST HIMSELF DOWN UPON THE EARTH, AND PUT HIS FACE BETWEEN HIS KNEES. And said to his servant, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, Go again seven times. And it came to pass at the seventh time, that he said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand. And he said, Go up, say unto Ahab, Prepare thy chariot, and get thee down, that the rain stop thee not. And it came to pass in the mean while, that the heaven was black with clouds and wind, and there was a great rain. And Ahab rode, and went to Jezreel. And the hand of the Lord was on Elijah; and he girded up his loins, and ran before Ahab to the entrance of Jezreel.**  
**1 Kings 18:41-46**

This is the classic example of fervent prayer that was spoken of by James. I see you praying fervently to release the rain

of God's blessing on your ministry! Look at the example of Elijah as he prayed to God for rain.

## **2. Hannah's tearful emotional prayer for a child also yielded fantastic results.**

**So Hannah rose up after they had eaten in Shiloh, and after they had drunk. Now Eli the priest sat upon a seat by a post of the temple of the LORD. And she was in bitterness of soul, and prayed unto the LORD, and wept sore. And she vowed a vow, and said, O LORD of hosts, IF THOU WILT INDEED LOOK ON THE AFFLICTION OF THINE HANDMAID, AND REMEMBER ME, AND NOT FORGET THINE HANDMAID, BUT WILT GIVE UNTO THINE HANDMAID A MAN CHILD, THEN I WILL GIVE HIM UNTO THE LORD ALL THE DAYS OF HIS LIFE, AND THERE SHALL NO RAZOR COME UPON HIS HEAD. And it came to pass, as she continued praying before the LORD, that Eli marked her mouth. Now Hannah, she spake in her heart; only her lips moved, but her voice was not heard: therefore Eli thought she had been drunken. And Eli said unto her, How long wilt thou be drunken? put away thy wine from thee. And Hannah answered and said, No, my lord, I am a woman of a sorrowful spirit: I have drunk neither wine nor strong drink, but have poured out my soul before the LORD. Count not thine handmaid for a daughter of Belial: for out of the abundance of my complaint and grief have I spoken hitherto. Then Eli answered and said, Go in peace: and the God of Israel grant thee thy petition that thou hast asked of him. And she said, Let thine handmaid find grace in thy sight. So the woman went her**

**way, and did eat, and her countenance was no more sad.  
1 Samuel 1:9-20**

Hannah was in serious trouble. She desperately needed a breakthrough. She didn't just doodle and dawdle. To doodle and dawdle means to hang around, loiter, waste time and to make wavy impressions. She was dead serious about what she wanted from God. Dear pastor, fervent prayer will make you give birth to a new dimension in ministry.

**3. Jacob's all-night wrestling prayer yielded tremendous results.**

**And Jacob was left alone; and there WRESTLED A MAN  
with him until the breaking of the day.  
Genesis 32:24**

Jacob was blessed and so was his seed. Several thousand years have gone by but the fruit of this fervent prayer is evident for all to see. Israel still stands as one of the most favoured nations on the earth.

**4. Moses' burning prayer for victory over Amalek, is  
another example of fervent prayer.**

**Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in Rephidim.  
And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go  
out, fight with Amalek: to morrow I will stand on the top  
of the hill with the rod of God in mine hand. So Joshua  
did as Moses had said to him, and fought with Amalek:  
and Moses had said to him, and fought with Amalek: and  
Moses, Aaron, and Hur went up to the top of the hill.**

**And it came to pass, when MOSES HELD UP HIS HAND, THAT ISRAEL PREVAILED: and when he let down his hand, Amalek prevailed. But Moses' hands were heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon; and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun.**

**Exodus 17:8-12**

When your children's lives are at stake you cannot afford to laze about. Doodling prayers never helped anyone!

- 5. David's passionate request that the Holy Spirit be not withdrawn from him was another example of a fervent prayer**

**Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions. Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me. Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, and be clear when thou judgest. Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me. Behold, thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part thou shalt make me to know wisdom. Purge me with**

**hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoice. Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit in me. CAST ME NOT AWAY FROM THY PRESENCE; AND TAKE NOT THY HOLY SPIRIT FROM ME.**  
**Psalm 51:1-11**

David knew what it meant if the Holy Spirit were to leave him. He couldn't afford to have that happen.

God does listen to passionate fervent prayers. He looks disdainfully at Christians who while away time just waiting for the prayer meeting to end.

## **6. The New Testament Church prayed fervently for the power of the Holy Spirit to be upon their leaders.**

**And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them. And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: By stretching forth thine hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus. And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.**

## **Acts 4:23,24,30,31**

God heard their prayer and look at the results. When a church begins to pray fervently there are always results. Sometimes, I look at people who claim to be having a prayer meeting. Some of them are sleeping and others are just whiling away the time. How would you feel if someone fell asleep whilst talking to you? You would think that he is either disrespectful or very uninterested in you.

### **7. Jesus prayed passionately for the will of God to be done in his life.**

**Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared.**

**Hebrews 5:7**

The evidence of this was when he began to sweat blood. Fervent prayer always works. The ministry of Jesus was a great success! You will have great success in your ministry when you learn how to pray fervently. **Whenever you don't know what to do, do what Jesus did.** Jesus shouted when he prayed! Jesus prayed until he was sweating! Read it for yourself!

**And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.**

**Luke 22:44**

# *CHAPTER NINE*

## **7 SIGNS OF FERVENT PRAYER**

Since fervency in prayer is so important to achieve results, how can you know that you are praying fervently? I want to show you seven signs of fervent prayer. As usual, the best examples are in the Bible.

### **1. The Posture**

The ministry of Elijah has the most famous example of fervent prayer. It is interesting to note his posture when he prayed.

**And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he CAST HIMSELF DOWN upon the earth, and put his FACE BETWEEN HIS KNEES.**

**1 Kings 18:42**

Begin to observe yourself and those around you at prayer meetings. What is their posture? Your posture speaks volumes about the kind of prayer you are engaged in.

### **2. A Lifted Voice**

When Jesus was on earth He prayed with loud cries and tears. Are your prayers soft or loud? Jesus prayed with strong cries and tears. I prefer to follow the example of Jesus!

**Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with STRONG CRYING and TEARS unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared;  
Hebrews 5:7**

There are no meaningless details in the Bible. These things were written for our example. Let us learn from the heroes of faith.

### **3. Weeping**

Several Bible characters wept whilst they prayed. Our Lord Jesus was the best example. Jesus offered up prayers *with* tears. There is nothing wrong with weeping whilst you pray. Jesus prayed fervent prayers and was heard by His Father.

Another famous prayer warrior was Hannah. Hannah was the mother of Samuel. The Bible describes her prayer time in graphic detail.

**And she was in bitterness of soul, and PRAYED UNTO THE LORD, AND WEPT SORE.  
1 Samuel 1:10**

### **4. Exhaustion**



Physical energy may be exacted from you when you pray. Jacob prayed all night. That must have been tiring. Jesus also prayed till everyone around Him fell asleep.

**And he cometh (after praying) and findeth his disciples asleep...**

**Matthew 26:40**

Moses prayed so hard that people had to help him lift up his hands.

**But Moses hands were heavy: and they took a stone and put it under him, and he sat thereon and Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands...  
Exodus 17:12**

## **5. Quiet Groaning**

**And it came to pass, that she continued praying before the Lord, that Eli marked her mouth. Now Hannah, SHE SPAKE IN HER HEART; ONLY HER LIPS MOVED.  
1 Samuel 1:12**

This was definitely an example of fervent prayer. This woman prayed passionately for a child. There was no shouting or screaming. The Bible says that Eli could not hear what she was praying about. He even thought she was drunk. This is what I call quiet groaning.

Jesus was another example of someone who groaned in prayer.

**When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, HE GROANED IN THE SPIRIT, and was troubled.**

**John 11:33**

## **6. Inner Determination**

Determination is not easily manifested. It is a quiet resolve to pray until something happens. Anyone who is determined to pray until something happens is a passionate or fervent prayer warrior.

**And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I WILL NOT LET THEE GO, EXCEPT THOU BLESS ME.  
Genesis 32:26**

People who come for prayer meetings without a determination to receive something from God often doodle and dawdle until the meeting is over. Be determined to get answers for all your prayer requests!

## **7. Desperate Language**

*If you study the prayers of David as recorded in the Psalms you will find the language of a desperate man. David was a man who was looking for God's help. A man reaching out frantically for the hand of God. Remember this: God listens to every word you say. The words*

*you speak matter! Look at one example of King David's prayers.*

**In thee O Lord, do I put my trust; LET ME NEVER BE ASHAMED: deliver me in thy righteousness. Bow down thine ear to me; DELIVER ME SPEEDILY: be thou my strong rock, for AN HOUSE OF DEFENCE TO SAVE ME. For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name sake lead me, and guide me.**

**Psalm 31:1-3**

# ***CHAPTER TEN***

## **9 STEPS TO PRAYING FOR A LONG TIME**

- 1. Accept the fact that prayer that is less than one hour is *not* significant prayer for a minister.**

**Could you not watch with me for ONE HOUR?  
Matthew 26:40**

For as long as I can remember, I have always considered short prayer insignificant. I have always felt that unless I spent a long time in prayer, I would not accomplish much. This has been a good psychological guide for me. It has made me spend many hours of my life in prayer.

When you believe that prayer for less than an hour is not enough, you will never be satisfied with five and ten minute prayers. This will gradually propel you into lengthy periods of prayer. You will not lose anything by praying for long periods of time!

- 2. Always pray with a clock or a watch in view.**

As soon as you begin to pray, look at the time. When you do that, you will be compelled to spend a decent period of time in prayer. When you do not look at your watch you will think

that you prayed longer than you actually did. You will tell yourself, “Oh, I must have prayed for two hours” when you only prayed for ten minutes.

Unless you are experienced in prayer, you will make wrong judgements about the length of time you have prayed. Nowadays, I can tell when I have prayed for an hour. Initially, I would pray for ten minutes and think it was an hour. This is why you need to keep an eye on the clock.

### 3. Pray with preaching tapes.

I always pray with some kind of preaching or music in the background. There is a principle I want you to understand. **The speed of preaching/music is a hundred times faster than the speed of silence.** This means that time runs a hundred times faster when there is some kind of background preaching or music.

Have you ever been there when people were asked to observe a minute’s silence? Have you noticed how long the period of silence was? Did you know that they never really spend a *whole minute* of silence? This is because of the principle I just shared with you: *the speed of preaching/music is a hundred times faster than the speed of silence.* When you pray with the sound of preaching or music in the background, time runs much faster! Before you know it, you would have accomplished several hours in prayer!

The sound of the preaching of the Word of God creates a very conducive atmosphere for spiritual things. Dear friend, we are constantly bombarded with the secular environment of our jobs,

of godless friends and of television. This kind of atmosphere actually prevents prayer. The environment in our homes is often anti-prayer. You need something that will keep you in a prayer mood for at least one hour. Sometimes the message on the tape will spur you on to continue in the Spirit! Try it and you will never be the same again.

#### **4. Pray with music in the background.**

**...Now bring me a minstrel. And it came to pass, when the minstrel played, that THE HAND OF THE LORD CAME upon him.**

**2 Kings 2:15**

Godly music creates a beautiful worship environment. The Bible calls it the hand of the Lord. I always play music or preaching tapes when I am praying. Dear friend, the very atmosphere of our world is charged with demonic entities. The prince of the power of the air and his cohorts pollute the very air we breathe. It is difficult to pray in such an environment. This is the reason why many Christians do not pray for long hours. They are operating in a difficult atmosphere.

**But there is good news: You can have your own little church service wherever you are!** The Spirit of the Lord can move over you in your car. This has happened to me many times. I consider my car as a prayer closet. Invest whatever it takes to create the right prayer atmosphere.

The Spirit of the Lord will come upon you as you stay in the environment of anointed minstrels.

## **5. Pray with a preaching video**

Sometimes, the sound of preaching or the sound of music is not enough to get you into the right flow for prayer. At times, you need to have the video dimension. Sometimes both seeing and hearing are needed to create the right atmosphere for successful prayer. I often pray with a preaching video. I receive great blessings when I operate in the right environment.

## **6. Pray 90% of your prayer in tongues**

Tongues are a gift from God. This gift helps you to pray whilst your mind is inactive.

**For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.**

**1 Corinthians 14:14**

As you pray in tongues for hours, your spirit man will be edified and charged up.

## **7. Read the Bible and other Christian books as you pray.**

Because I pray in tongues for long periods, my mind is free for reading. I constantly read whilst I spend hours in prayer. My spirit prays to the Lord while my mind concentrates on the Bible that I am reading. This helps me to pray even longer hours.

## **8. Disconnect your phone.**

**The telephone is a favourite tool that is used by the devil to interrupt your prayer.** With the feeling that you might receive an important call lingering in your mind, you are unable to switch off your phone. Most of us are unable to switch off our phones.

Needless interruptions break up our precious hour of prayer into thirty minutes of piecemeal five-minute sessions. I don't know if it happens to you. But as soon as I am getting into deep fellowship with the Lord, the phone rings! Sometimes it is so painful to receive an unnecessary call at the wrong time.

I have decided that if I am serious about praying I must disconnect my phone. The world can wait. Everything can wait until I finish talking to my Lord. When I do not disconnect my phone, it means only one thing: I am not serious about the prayer time!

## **9. Issue a 'do not disturb' notice.**

Since you do not live on an island, you are going to need the co-operation of the people who live with you. If you are going to have an effective prayer life, people must know when you are praying. Just as they wouldn't disturb you if you were in the bathroom, they must not disturb you when you are in prayer! Do not be ashamed to let your friends and people at home know that you are in prayer and should not be disturbed.

Whilst in school, I was particularly impressed with a friend's ability to issue strong "do not disturb" notices. I always re-



member the notice he put outside his box room to ward off other students. It read something like this,

### **Notice**

*If you knock on this door  
and receive no response from within  
do not continue knocking or call for me.  
If you do anything which contradicts this simple instruction  
Be it known unto you  
that this door will not be opened unto you  
No matter who you are!!!*

Such notices are very good! I once had to warn the workers in my house. I told them that if they called me whilst I was in prayer, I would dismiss them immediately. This gave me great freedom for prayer in my own home.

# **CHAPTER ELEVEN**

## **THREE STEPS TO UNDERSTANDING INTER-CESSION**

The word intercede comes from the Latin word ‘*intercedere*’. This word means *to intervene, interfere or to mediate*.

**And he saw that there was no man, and wondered that there was no intercessor: therefore his arm brought salvation unto him; and his righteousness, it sustained him.**

**Isaiah 59:16**

God has called every minister to *interfere* with Satan’s plans to destroy the church. We have to rise up and *intervene* as the hordes of demons destroy young Christians. We must *interfere* with every demonic agenda to destroy the kingdom of God.

1. To intercede means *to come between so as to modify the course of events*.

Satan’s plan is to lead entire nations to hell. By the power of intercession, we will modify the course of history. People who should have gone to hell will be saved. **Powerful men of**

**intercession are constantly modifying the course of events.**

2. To intercede means *to be situated between things*.

God has called every minister to be situated between the devil and God's people. **That is what a shepherd does. He is situated between the wolves and the sheep.** The wolves and jackals do not have access to the sheep because of the shepherd's presence.

**And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none.**

**Ezekiel 22:30**

Intercession means to stand in the gap. It means to become an obstacle to Satan and his agents. Dear man of God, you are doing a good work. Dear missionary, your presence in that nation stands as a veritable rock of protection for many souls. Do not give up! Keep up the good work! Pray for the people God has given to you! *You are the last barrier between those precious souls and the enemy.*

# **CHAPTER TWELVE**

## **20 REASONS WHY EVERY PASTOR NEEDS AN IN- TERCESSOR**

When you understand what intercession does, you will never stop praying for ministers. Our existence on this earth is constantly under threat. Although we don't realise it, we are in danger from so many things. Intercession comes in as a blockade between you and those perils. Sometimes we are so vulnerable and we don't even know it!

Remember that to intercede means *to intervene, interfere or to mediate*. Intercession means to come between so as *to modify the course of events*. An interceding person becomes *situated between things*.

When Paul listed the dangers he had been through as a minister, he was actually making a list of things that he needed intercession for.

**Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more; in LABOURS more abundant, in STRIPES above measure, in PRISONS more frequent, in DEATHS oft. Of the Jews five times received I FORTY STRIPES save one. Thrice was I BEATEN with rods, once was I STONED, thrice I**

suffered SHIPWRECK, a night and a day I have been in THE DEEP; In JOURNEYINGS often, in perils of WATERS, in perils of ROBBERS, in perils by mine own COUNTRYMEN, in perils by the HEATHEN, in perils in the CITY, in perils in the WILDERNESS, in perils in the SEA, in perils among FALSE BRETHREN; In WEARINESS and PAINFULNESS, in watchings often, in HUNGER and THIRST, in fastings often, in COLD and NAKEDNESS. Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches. Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?  
**2 Corinthians 11:23-27,29**

The twenty dangers that the apostle Paul encountered are actually the twenty reasons why every minister needs prayer.

## **Twenty Dangers That an Apostle Encounters**

1. Labours more abundant (long hours of work)
2. Stripes above measure (unbearable physical afflictions)
3. Prisons more frequent (political and governmental harassment)
4. Deaths oft (near death experiences)
5. Forty stripes save one (special personalised intimidation)
6. Beaten with rods (having rubbish thrown at you)
7. Once stoned (mob attacks, breaking of walls and political hatred)
8. Shipwrecked three times (the danger of car, train and plane crashes)

9. The deep (the danger of drowning)
10. Journeyings often (the danger of travelling and accidents)
11. Perils of waters (the danger of eating and drinking things you're not used to)
12. Perils of robbers (theft of church properties, offerings, mobile phones)
13. Perils in the city (prostitution, immorality, muggings, armed robbers)
14. Perils in the wilderness (the danger of being a foreigner)
15. Perils of the sea (more dangers for the travelling minister)
16. Perils among false brethren (spies in the church, secret service agents everywhere, disloyal people)
17. In hunger (no money for food)
18. In thirst (no money for drinks)
19. In cold (danger of inadequate heating, risk of catching infections)
20. In nakedness (no appropriate clothes, winter coats, etc.)

# **CHAPTER THIRTEEN**

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF DEGENERATION**

Man's need for an intercessor is not always apparent. Throughout the Bible there have always been men who stood in the gap for other men. We often think that intercession just prevents *the devil* from attacking Christians. Intercession deals with much more than that. It deals with certain laws that are in place in the earth today. When you understand these things, you will always want to pray for your church members.

Remember again the definitions of intercession: to intercede means *to intervene, interfere or to mediate*. Intercession means to come between so as *to modify the course of events*. An interceding person becomes *situated between things*.

**Intercession deals with the law of decay in the  
church**

**Yet I have planted thee a noble vine, holy a right seed:  
how then ART THOU TURNED INTO THE  
DEGENERATE**

**PLANT of a strange vine unto me?  
Jeremiah 2:21**

Whether we like it or not, there is a law of degeneration at work in the earth. Everything we create begins to decay the day after it is completed. Every building decays as the years go by. Our bodies gradually degenerate as the years go by. Just look at your picture ten years ago and you will understand what I am talking about. Wealth does not remain in one place forever. You may be rich today but your wealth may decay into nothing after ten years. There are cities that were very wealthy years ago. Today, these places have degenerated into large slums.

*To degenerate means to gradually become of a lower type. It is a gradual falling off to a lower form of development.*

The church is no different. We are all under this law of degeneration. This is why shepherds are advised to look to the state of their flocks. If you leave a vibrant fellowship of Christians for three years without investing into it, it will decay. And that without remedy! You have to invest into it spiritually.

**Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, and look  
well to thy herds. For RICHES ARE NOT FOREVER;  
and doth the crown endure to every generation?  
Proverbs 27:23,24**

The degeneration of a church can be defined as: “*to sink below a former or normal condition or character*”. Degeneration also means *to deteriorate from a former standard*. This law of degeneration is at work in your church, and in your members. It affects all of us. This is why you need to intercede for your people. The law of degeneration is making the zealous



ones less zealous. The law of degeneration is working on the sweet prayerful Christians. It is making them lose interest in prayer. The law of degeneration is working against the holy Christians. It is making them to deteriorate into immoral backsliders. Dear pastor, you cannot sleep anymore. The law of degeneration is at work in your church. You need to rise up and intercede!

Have you noticed how people start their Christian lives with such a zeal for witnessing and preaching the Word? Not long after, you hardly find them in church. What has happened? The law of degeneration!

This is why it is so important to keep intercession and prayer alive in the church!

# ***CHAPTER FOURTEEN***

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF THE WORLD**

### **Intercession deals with the law of the world**

**Love not the WORLD, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the WORLD, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the WORLD passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever.**

**1 John 2:15-17**

The world has a pervasive influence on the church. Much of the church has become worldly and secular. This happens because the church is “plum in the middle” of the world.

Intercession needs to go on so that the church does not become worldly. The things that are in the world, the lusts of the flesh and the lust of the eyes, stick themselves on to ministers without our even knowing it.

Man needs an intercessor! Demas needed an intercessor. He fell in love with the world and backslid. Fewer of our church

members will backslide when we intercede for them. Intercession deals with the law of the world.

**For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present  
world...**

**2 Timothy 4:10**

# ***CHAPTER FIFTEEN***

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF THE FLESH**

### **Intercession deals with the law of the flesh**

Man has a need for an intercessor! The law of the flesh works against everything spiritual. Paul was afraid of his own flesh. He said he knew that there was nothing good in his flesh.

**For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.**  
**Romans 7:18**

At one point, Paul said that he had lost confidence in his flesh.

**For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.**

**Philippians 3:3**

Dear friend, if Paul had lost confidence in his flesh, what should we do? The flesh is ready to take you to hell. The flesh is working against church growth. The flesh is working against the

very life of the church. Your flesh is working against your spiritual progress.

The flesh makes the church members *desire* the wrong things and *do* the wrong things. It is the flesh that makes church members lazy. It is because of the flesh that most church members do not come to church every Sunday. When a pastor thinks of his children in the Lord, his heart must burn with interventionary prayer. *Father, help your children! Don't let them fall by the wayside.*

**But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.**

**1 Corinthians 9:27**

Another need for intercession is in the area of sickness and disease. Intercessory prayer prevents disease from fastening its hold on people. Remember that it is easier to prevent diseases than to treat them. Intercessory prayer will prevent the pastors from conducting unnecessary funerals.

## ***CHAPTER SIXTEEN***

# **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF THE ELEMENTS**

## **Intercession deals with the law of the elements**

What are the elements? The elements are the earth, the wind, the fire and the water. Whether you know it or not, these elements can turn against your existence. We need intercession so that these elements are kept at bay. When the elements turn against you, your ministry could be over. This is what happens when there are earthquakes, fires, floods and storms.

During Jesus' ministry on earth, He had to deal with the elements. The elements were trying to end His life and ministry.

**And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him. And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea: and there was a great calm. But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!**

**Matthew 8:23-27**

The disciples were amazed at how the elements responded to prayer commands. As you intercede for your people, they will be protected from any antagonistic elements in the earth. Sometimes it's the elements that bring about plane crashes, car pileups and other disasters. I see you rising up with the spirit of intercession for your people! Your ministry will be transformed.



# ***CHAPTER SEVENTEEN***

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF HUMANITY**

### **Intercession deals with the law of humanity**

The law of humanity deals with human nature. Here, we deal with two main areas:

- a. The reality of human *nature*.
- b. The reality of human *error*.

The human nature of ingratitude, forgetfulness and wickedness is well known. You do not have to look far to see a real war taking place. The wickedness in human nature is there for everyone to see. The genocide and brutal killings are evident.

Jesus was aware of how human beings could turn against Him.

**But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.**

**John 2:24,25**

When the tide of human nature turned against Christ, his miracles did not mean much anymore. They murdered him within forty-eight hours. Do not underestimate the evil that is in man.



Our intercessory prayer works against the tide of human ungratefulness and forgetfulness in ministry. Dear pastor, when you pray for your congregation, it will help them not to forget the love you have bestowed on them.

Human error is often the cause for human disasters like the Titanic sinking or the Paddington train crash in London or the Concorde disaster. Intercessory prayer will intervene to prevent human error from eliminating you.

As a doctor, I have seen other doctors make mistakes. I have watched people die as a result of human error. I once watched a consultant gynaecologist perform a major operation (laparotomy) on a young eleven-year-old girl. He thought she had a tumour in the lower abdomen. When they opened her up, all she had was compact faeces in the colon. This poor girl had been subjected to a major operation because the doctor did not examine her properly. All that this poor little girl needed was some medicine to make her go to the toilet!

Other patients have died because surgeons forgot to remove some swabs or scissors from the abdomen before closing up. Even when medicine is being practised, intercessory prayer is needed for protection against human error. This is why we pray for people when they are receiving any kind of medical treatment.

I watched a documentary called *Flights from Hell*. On this documentary, a pilot discovered that one of the wheels on the undercarriage was not coming out. This was because somebody (human error) had forgotten to remove the chock from

the undercarriage. I watched the plane undergoing amazing manoeuvres to get the wheel out. In the end, the plane was forced to land on one wheel. It was a very lucky escape for everyone on the flight.

***On another of these Flights from Hell, there was a flight from Bogota, Columbia to New York City. When the pilot got to New York, he was asked to go into a holding position and wait for his turn to land. He was kept in the air for over an hour. The tragic thing about this story was that the pilot failed to communicate to the air traffic control tower that he was running out of fuel and how he urgently needed to land.***

Can you believe that the pilot circled with this plane until *every drop* of fuel was finished and then crashed just outside the airport? Who ever heard of a jetliner crashing because it ran out of fuel? It was later established that the pilot failed to communicate the urgency of his situation (human error) to the control tower. I tell you, the people in that plane needed intercessory prayer very badly. The passengers were in the hands of a very dangerous man.

Intercessory prayer will intervene to protect your people from human *error* and human *nature*.



have been at the mercy of nature. I would have subjected myself to the dangerous elements of nature.

The psalmist teaches about how blessed it is to have nature working in your favour. He predicts that anyone who walks in the Word of the Lord will have the seasons and the cycles working normally for him. When a woman is unable to have a child, a very natural process has been interrupted.

**Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.**

**Psalms 1:1-3**

Bacteria and viral infections are a further distortion of nature. Bacteria, if you like, are like microscopic wild animals that can kill you. When they cross your path, nature has begun to work against you.

Intercession is needed to prevent the forces of nature from consuming you. Intercessory prayer can even stop what people may call “natural deaths”. Intercessory prayer leads people into the Word, so that they can have the blessings of Psalm 1.

When a person is ungodly, he falls into the hands of nature, and nature blows him away. Read it for yourself!

**The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which THE**

**WIND DRIVETH AWAY.**

**Psalm 1:4**

# ***CHAPTER NINETEEN***

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF THE DEVIL**

### **Intercession deals with the law of the devil**

The law of the devil teaches that there is a devil out there. This devil and his agents are actively working against our lives. I have seen the devil twice! On both occasions he was trying to destroy me. Suddenly my eyes were open and I was able to see my enemy clearly. This is what happened to Paul in Macedonia.

He was harassed by a demon for several days. Suddenly the Lord gave him a manifestation of the gift of discerning of spirits. This allowed him to know exactly what he was dealing with. He cast out the devil and that was the end of the harassment.

**And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit of divination met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying: The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which show unto us the way of salvation. And this did she many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the**

**same hour.**

**Acts 16:16-18**

## **I Saw the Devil**

On both occasions when I had a manifestation of discerning of spirits, the devil was at my right hand side. On one occasion, I saw the devil as a little monkey sitting on my bedside table. I was so surprised to see the devil so close! Suddenly, I was able to deal with this thing that was trying to eliminate me. If I had not dealt with that demon I may not be alive today.

## **I Saw the Devil Again**

On another occasion, my eyes were open to the spirit realm and I saw an eight-foot tall, blackened sooty figure suspended on the right side of my bed. I was startled and jumped out of bed and began to pray. The Lord had suddenly shown me the source of a severe and prolonged attack I had been experiencing in my ministry. I rose out of bed and the rest is history.

On both these occasions, the devil came very close to eliminating me. This is what is happening to pastors. This is why pastors need intercessors to pray for them.

This is what is happening to your church members. The enemy is after their souls. Intercede for them! Intervene in the situation! Get in the way and stand between the devil and the sheep that God has given to you! Transform your ministry by intercessory prayer.





# ***CHAPTER TWENTY***

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF TIME**

**Intercession deals with the law of “time”**

**To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted; A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up; A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance; A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing; A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away; A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak; A time to love, and a time to hate; a time of war, and a time of peace.**

**Ecclesiastes 3:1-8**

The law of time teaches us that there is a time for everything. In your life, there will be a time to sow and a time to reap. There will be times of rejoicing and there will also be times of sorrow. There will be times when you will be up and other times when you will be down!

As the events of time unfold in your life, will you survive each season? When the time for prosperity comes, will you backslide or will you remain in the Lord? The children of Israel were warned of a time of prosperity. Moses warned them not to forget their God at that time. People simply need intercession because they enter into a new time or period of their lives.

*Many people fall away in the day of their prosperity. Pastors need to pray for their congregations so that the little children (sheep) will not fall away in their time of temptation.*

The Bible speaks of an evil day. An evil day is a day when things are not good. Intercession for believers will help them to stand in an evil day.

**Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.**  
**Ephesians 6:13**

If you are not praying for your people, when they enter into an evil day, they will fall! It is the duty of pastors and shepherds to constantly intercede for the sheep. **Every sheep is in a different time of his life.** God is expecting you to pray for your people because every one of them is in a different season of his existence.

Some people are in the season of temptation and death. They don't stand a chance unless you intercede for them!



Let me give your four things that creep upon all churches:

- a. Deception (e.g., the churches of Europe)
- b. Wrong attitudes (e.g., laziness, complacency and unbelief)
- c. Familiarity (e.g., not appreciating the gift of God in your midst)
- d. Shifting of priorities (e.g., becoming health and educational organisations instead of being missionary societies)

## **Deception is a Creeping Thing**

How do you think the church in Europe degenerated from being a vibrant, missionary-minded society to becoming an atheistic and godless organisation? It did not happen over night. The spirit of deception crept on the church slowly. Deception is a creeping thing.

Familiarity is one of the most dangerous creeping things that invade the church. Without even realising it, the church does not hold their pastor in esteem. Of course, they claim they do, but in reality they do not!

## **Familiarity is a Creeping Thing**

I noticed as familiarity crept into my own ministry. What are the signs of this creeping familiarity? One of the things is a failure to appreciate the pastor. You will notice how the congregation responds to visiting preachers just because it's

something new.

I notice the level of response I receive when I am outside my church. I notice that the level of response I receive is higher outside my own church. The miracles are more and the receptivity is higher. This is one of the most natural phenomena in Christian churches today. Intercessory prayer is necessary to keep out these spiritual creepers. Intercessory prayer will fight that creeping familiarity that kills the flow of the Spirit.

# ***CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO*** **HOW TO INTERCEDE AGAINST THE LAW OF THINGS DETERMINED**

**Intercession deals with the law of things  
determined**

**Seventy weeks ARE DETERMINED upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression and to make an end of sins and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.**

**Daniel 9:24**

Daniel had been praying for his people. He wanted God to move on their behalf. Suddenly, he had an angelic visitor who gave him an astonishing message. You see, Daniel was trying to bring about a change in the situation of his people. However, it was not to be so.

Daniel was informed that the divine laws of heaven had determined a seventy-week punishment for the people of God. There was nothing he could do about it. By this scripture I am drawing your attention to what I call *determined things*. These are things that cannot be changed. They will happen whether

you pray or not!

Intercessory prayer helps you to handle determined things. Do not misunderstand me; there are many things that are changeable. If they were not changeable there would be no point in praying. What I am showing you is that there are some things that are unchangeable (determined things).

War is sometimes decreed on certain nations. There is nothing you can do about it. If it is unchangeable the Lord will tell you that it is unchangeable and then He will show you what to do. Daniel was informed that seventy weeks of all sorts of punishments were definitely going to happen to Israel. There was nothing he could do about it.

Death is often one of those determined things. Look at this amazing scripture. It tells us that there is a definite time for you to depart from this earth. Because of this, there is no need to worry about death anymore.

**Is there not an APPOINTED TIME to man upon earth?...**  
**Job 7:1**

Job described the life of a man as the days of a hired servant. When the contract is over it's over.

**...are not his days also like the day of an HIRELING?**  
[contract worker]

**Job 7:1**

There's nothing you can do about it. The difference here is that you don't know the last day of your contract. That is why you must be ready all the time.

And that is why you must not be afraid. **When intercession cannot change a determined thing, intercession shows you how to live with it or prepare for it!**

Even Julius Caesar knew that! He said that death “will come when it will come.”

*Cowards die many times before their deaths;  
The valiant never taste of death but once.  
Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,  
It seems to me most strange that men should fear,  
Seeing that death, a necessary end,  
Will come when it will come.*



# ***CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE*** **HOW TO INTERCEDE** **AGAINST THE LAW OF** **THE STARS**

## **Intercession deals with the stars**

Traditionally, born again Christians stay off the subject of stars. The Bible does not teach us to study stars or to use them for guidance. However, I want to mention what I call the influence of the stars.

I would like to show you a couple of scriptures that indicate that the stars have some influence on the events on earth. For instance, Jesus' birth was shown to the wise men from the east by a star.

**Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? For we have seen HIS STAR in the east, and are come to worship him. ... When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, THE STAR, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over**

**where the young child was. When they saw THE STAR they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.**

**Matthew 2:1,2,9,10**

The influence or significance of stars was acknowledged in scripture in the birth of Christ. All I am trying to say is that there is some meaning and some import to these stars. It looks as though there is something arranged and determined over there.

Notice these scriptures

**Canst thou bind THE SWEET INFLUENCES of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth in his season? Or canst thou guide Arcturus with his sons? Knowest thou the ordinances of heaven? Canst thou set THE DOMINION THEREOF IN THE EARTH?**

**Job 38:31-33**

*The Orion* referred to in this scripture is the constellation of stars known as the giant.

*The Pleiades* is the name given to seven stars in the constellation Taurus.

*The Arcturus* is a constellation of stars in the northern hemisphere called the great bear.

*The Mazzaroth* are twelve signs of the zodiac.

The zodiac is a belt of the heavens including all apparent positions of the sun, moon, and planets as known to ancient astronomers, and divided into twelve equal parts (signs of the zodiac).

The scripture above speaks of the *sweet influence* of

Pleiades. This is the influence of the stars on the events on the planet earth. It asks the question, "Can thou set *the dominion thereof* in the earth?" The dominion in the earth refers to the influence and control that this constellation of stars has on the affairs of men. I believe that through the power of intercessory prayer, every negative influence of the Mazzaroth or the Pleiades will not prevail!

Perhaps you did not know that there are so many factors in play that threaten our existence. God is giving you many more reasons to become a practising intercessor. Every heavenly decree that is written in the stars against you will be changed in your favour as you intercede.

# **CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR**

## **HOW TO INTERCEDE ABOUT THE LAWS OF GOD**

### **Intercession deals with the laws of God**

The law of God speaks of God's ability to implement judgement or mercy. In any given situation, Almighty God has two options – *judgement* or *mercy*. However, the Bible makes it clear that God prefers the *mercy* option. God prefers showing mercy to passing judgement!

**Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? He retaineth not his anger forever, because HE DELIGHTETH [PREFERS] IN MERCY.**

**Micah 7:18**

The Word teaches that God has no pleasure in the death of the wicked.

**...as I live, saith the Lord God, I have NO PLEASURE in  
the death of the wicked.**

**Ezekiel 33:11**

When God passes out a judgement, it is often very severe

and irreversible. Because our God is a God of justice, He has no option but to pass out judgements when they are due.

Abraham and Moses are two examples of people who stood in the way of God's judgement. When Sodom and Gomorrah deserved the judgement of fire, it was Abraham who prevented the wrath of God. His intercessory prayer is the greatest example of how God listens to a man.

**Why would God listen to a mere man? God wants to have a reason to choose mercy and to avoid judgement.** Any good leader with a heart for God is always looking for an opportunity to avoid judgement and to show mercy.

**And Abraham drew near, and said, Will thou also destroy the righteous with the wicked?**  
**Genesis 18:23**

Unfortunately, Abraham was not able to secure the release of Sodom and Gomorrah from God's judgement. God could not find even five righteous people in the city. The Lord tried to avoid judgement but it didn't work!

Moses, however, was able to secure deliverance for Israel.

**Therefore he said that he would destroy them, had not Moses his chosen STOOD BEFORE HIM in the breach, to turn away his wrath lest he should destroy them.**  
**Psalm 106:23**

Dear minister, God has called you to stand in the breach.

As you stand in between God's judgement and the people, you will save many lives. Become an intercessor! You will save nations!

# **CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE**

## **7 SIGNS THAT SHOW THAT YOU ARE EN- GAGED IN TRAVAILING PRAYER**

**My little children, of whom I TRAVAIL in birth again...  
Galatians 4:19**

**Epaphras... always LABOURING FERVENTLY for you  
in prayers...  
Colossians 4:12**

Travailing prayer is the prayer that gives birth to new things. If you want to give birth to new dimensions in your ministry, you will have to go into travailing prayer. Stories have been told of people who engaged in travailing prayer until there were holes in the ground where they knelt to pray. Many of the revivals in times past were birthed by travailing intercessors.

*Travailing prayer is the prayer that labours passionately until the baby is born. So what is travailing prayer, and how can I know whether I am engaged in travailing prayer or not? In this chapter, I want to give you some signs to look out for. These signs will tell you whether you are engaged in travailing prayer*

*or not.*

Women who have had children can best teach travailing prayer. They will describe the experience of the labour room in graphic detail! *Just as there is no baby without the labour, there will be nothing new spiritually except you labour in prayer.*

## **Seven Signs of Labour Ward Prayer**

**...For as soon Zion travailed [laboured] she brought forth her children.**

**Isaiah 66:7**

### **1. Long hours of prayer**

**Most women experience labour for several hours. After several hours of pain, the woman will give birth to a new baby. Praying for a long time gives birth to new churches and ministries.**

### **2. Suffering**

When women are in the labour ward they suffer all sorts of afflictions. Without the suffering, there is no breakthrough. When you engage in travailing prayer you may have to fast and sacrifice other pleasures. This is part of your labour experience. I tell you, the rewards are great!



### **3. Pain**

There is a lot of pain involved in having a baby. The pain of fasting and the pain of sacrifice are part of travailing prayers.

### **4. Shame**

Perhaps as you fast and pray you may not look very attractive. You may lose some weight from fasting and waiting on the Lord.

Someone once told me mockingly, “Do you think that you’ll go to heaven by being a skeleton?” I had been fasting and praying for the establishment of a new fellowship. I looked like a rake and my friends mocked at me! However, I saw the birth of a new Christian fellowship and that gave me great joy. One day I will also reap my reward in heaven.

### **5. Tiredness**

You can get very tired as you pray fervently. If you are lazy, you cannot engage in travailing prayer. Travailing prayer is different from Bible study and listening to tapes. It involves the physical effort of praying for hours. Moses became so tired that he had to have people hold up his hands.

### **6. Hunger**

This is part of the price you pay as you wait on God. Do you think a woman in labour gets up every five minutes to have a snack? Certainly not! She endures the hunger until it is all over. Ask any woman who has had a child and she will tell you

that what I am saying is true.

## **7. The New Baby**

Labouring prayers always give rise to something new. As time passes, you will see that new thing in your hands and give glory to God. Perhaps it will be a new church or a new fellowship. Perhaps it will be a new phase in your ministry. It is not easy to labour in prayer, but it is worth it!

# ***CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX***

## **32 REASONS WHY I PRAY IN TONGUES**

**I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all.  
1 Corinthians 14:18**

In my opinion the ability to pray in tongues is probably the best gift that God gave to ministers. In this chapter I want to share with you why praying in tongues is very important and helpful for every minister. Each of the thirty-two reasons has a biblical foundation and I want you to think about them for your own benefit.

**For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. [My mind is a blank - TCNT]  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)**

1. When I pray in tongues I charge myself up like a battery  
(1 Corinthians 14:4)
2. **When I pray in tongues I am immediately  
inspired by the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:4)**
3. When I pray in tongues I am praying from my heart  
(spirit) (1 Corinthians 14:14)
4. When I pray in tongues my prayer is dictated and

directed by the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:4)

5. When I pray in tongues I operate instantly in the spirit realm (1 Corinthians 14:1)
6. When I pray in tongues other people do not understand what I am saying (1 Corinthians 14:1)
7. When I pray in tongues devils do not understand what I am saying (1 Corinthians 14:1)
8. When I pray in tongues I can hear the voice of the Spirit by interpreting my prayer (1 Corinthians 14:13)
9. When I pray in tongues I can pray for long hours like Jesus (Mark 1:35; Luke 6:12)
10. When I pray in tongues I can practise intercession for souls, families and nations (Ephesians 6:18)
11. When I pray in tongues I can speak to myself and to God. This helps me to concentrate on God everywhere I am (1 Corinthians 14:28)
12. When I pray in tongues I give thanks and praises very well (1 Corinthians 14:17)
13. When I pray in tongues it is a sign to the world that Christ is in me (Mark 16:17)
14. When I pray in tongues I have taken the first step into supernatural things (Acts 2:4)

15. When I pray in tongues I am exercising faith  
(Galatians 3:5)
16. When I pray in tongues I am doing what great men  
like Paul did (1 Corinthians 14:18; Hebrews 6:12)
17. When I pray in tongues I can pray against my enemies  
(in their presence) without their knowing what I am  
saying
18. When I pray in tongues I can pray and think  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)
19. When I pray in tongues I can pray and study  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)
20. When I pray in tongues I can pray and read my Bible  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)
21. When I pray in tongues I can pray and read other books  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)
22. When I pray in tongues I can pray and listen to tapes  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)
23. When I pray in tongues I can pray and watch videos  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

24. When I pray in tongues I can pray and have my bath  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

25. When I pray in tongues I can pray and dress up  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

26. When I pray in tongues I can pray and walk  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

27. When I pray in tongues I can pray and write  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

28. When I pray in tongues I can pray and cook  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

29. When I pray in tongues I can pray and work in the office  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

30. When I pray in tongues I can pray and do my hair  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

31. When I pray in tongues I can pray and drive my car  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)

32. When I pray in tongues I can pray and wait for the bus  
(1 Corinthians 14:14)



**PART III**  
**VISITATION**



# ***CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN***

## **12 REASONS WHY PASTORS MUST VISIT THEIR SHEEP**

Pastors, visitation will transform your pastoral ministry! Visitation gives rise to explosive church growth. Visitation is all about going to people's homes and workplaces in order to minister to them. Ministering to people in their home settings is one of the greatest keys to an effective ministry.

Visitation is an essential part of real pastoral ministry. Visitation is not pseudo-ministry. It is the real thing. Regardless of how much you pray you must still visit the sheep. Read your Bible and you will discover that God expects pastors to visit their sheep.

Dear pastor, choose to have more than a preaching centre where the sheep gather. Do not conduct yourself as an arm-chair executive or a Prime Minister. Be a real shepherd who seeks the lost sheep wherever they may be found. That is real pastoral ministry.

**Therefore thus saith the Lord God of Israel against the  
pas**

**tors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and  
driven them away, and HAVE NOT VISITED THEM:  
behold I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith  
the Lord.  
Jeremiah 23:2**

## **12 Reasons Why Pastors Must Visit Their Sheep**

1. Every church member *needs* a visit
2. Every church member *deserves* a visit
3. Every church member *expects* a visit
4. The more visits a sheep has, the more healthy it will be
5. A visit makes a sheep a permanent church member
6. God expects every pastor to visit the sheep
7. Every sheep needs a repeated visit from the same pastor
8. Every sheep needs visits from other pastors and shepherds
9. The sin of neglect is the failure to visit
10. Totally neglecting the sheep is the sin of abandonment
11. Many of the sheep will fall away without visitation
12. The church will not grow without visitation

Not every problem can be solved in the church service. Many problems cannot be solved by a phone call.

When you take care of God's flock you will realize how many problems people have. The Book of Ezekiel tells us that many sheep were diseased, broken and driven away.

**The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was SICK, neither have ye bound up that which was BROKEN, neither have ye brought again that which was DRIVEN AWAY, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered.**  
**Ezekiel 34:4,5**

The preaching from the pulpit cannot solve all the problems of the sheep. Sheep must be sought out. "...neither have ye *sought* that which was lost." (Ezekiel 34:4).

The members of your church deserve a visit because Jesus died for them. He gave His life for them. Today, people are concerned with building their companies, businesses, houses and empires. No one cares about the sheep. Jesus asked Peter on three occasions, "Do you love me?" Peter said, "Of course I do!" That would have been our response too. But Jesus made it clear that if you love Him, you should feed His sheep.

Sometimes, people need repeated visits because one visit is not enough to solve the problem. There are times that I have visited someone and nothing happened. There were times when

someone else visited the same person and there was a breakthrough!

Failure to visit the sheep is neglect! In some cases, it is actually abandonment. Do not be surprised when the wrath of God comes upon shepherds.

**Cursed be he that doeth the work of the Lord deceitfully,  
and cursed be he that keepeth back his sword from blood.  
Jeremiah 48:10**

# **CHAPTER TWENTY-**

## **EIGHT**

### **3 SECRETS BEHIND THE POWER OF VISITATION**

Visits have life-changing power! Many pastors do not know the secret behind the power of visitation. In this chapter, I want you to understand why visitation, in the ministry of a pastor, is so powerful!

#### **Visitation is a Powerful Mixture of Three Forces**

- 1. Visitation is an expression of LOVE***
- 2. Visitation involves the ministry of the WORD***
- 3. Visitation involves the ministry of PRAYER***

The *Word* of God is powerful and life changing. The Bible says that it brings light where there is darkness. It is therefore no surprise that it has a powerful effect on people.

*Prayer* is also powerful. The Bible says that it availeth much. That means it has great effect.

But the Bible also says that *love* never fails! There are many spiritual weapons that we use all the time. No weapon has been described as “never failing”. This makes love a very powerful weapon.

Sometimes, we minister the Word but the people don’t feel loved. **In visitation, there is a mixture of the Word, prayer and love.** The person who is being visited feels loved. For you to have gone to his home, you must really love him! The act of journeying to someone’s house at an odd hour demonstrates great love. You cannot demonstrate love in words alone.

**My little children let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in DEED and in truth.**

**1 John 3:18**

Loving in deed involves going to people’s homes. Loving in deed involves knowing the real life situations that people live in.

Sometimes the person who is being visited does not even hear the words that you speak. **What remains with him is the fact that you cared enough to come.**

Dear minister, do not underestimate the effect of this powerful mixture – the Word, love and prayer!

# ***CHAPTER TWENTY-NINE***

## **8 GUIDELINES FOR FRUITFUL VISITATION**

1. Every visit must accomplish something
2. Every visit must begin with a relaxing social segment
3. Pastors must remember that shepherding visits are not social outings
4. Every pastoral visit must be a spiritual event with a spiritual impact
5. Every pastoral visit must include the ministering of the Word
6. A visit becomes effective when the power of God is released through prayer
7. Every pastoral visit must end with a powerful prayer
8. A visit must have a powerful lasting impact

**He came unto his own... But as many as received him, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:**

## **John 1:11,12**

Jesus accomplished a lot in His three-year visit to the earth. You will notice that Jesus did not waste time doodling in the ministry. He preached, taught and ministered to people.

The first part of Jesus' visit to the earth was a relaxing social segment. He fitted into the society and became one of their own.

**And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.**

**Luke 2:51,52**

But Jesus remembered that He was not just paying a social visit to the earth. He preached and blessed the people. His prayers were so powerful that they raised the dead and cast out devils. After that visit, this earth has never been the same again.

**And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.**

**John 21:25**





# **CHAPTER THIRTY**

## **10 RULES FOR VISITATION**

### ***1. A pastor must never refuse a request for a visit***

It is not always that a sheep will cry for help; when they do make sure that you respond. Paul did not ignore the cry for help.

**...There stood a man of Macedonia and prayed him,  
saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.  
Acts 16:9**

### ***2. Every pastor must discern the unspoken request for a visit***

Whenever a church member is in difficulty, you must discern the need for attention. The song says, “His eyes are on the sparrow”. Just as His eyes are on the sparrow, your eyes must be on the sheep. Just as God has numbered your hair, you must number your sheep and look out for them. The anger of the Lord is upon the shepherds who ignore the problems of the sheep.

**The DISEASED have ye not strengthened, neither have ye  
healed that which was SICK, neither have ye bound up  
that which was BROKEN, neither have ye brought again  
that which was DRIVEN AWAY, neither have ye sought**

**that which was LOST; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. And they were SCATTERED, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered.**  
**Ezekiel 34:4,5**

This scripture highlights the problems of church members: diseased, sick, broken, lost, driven away, scattered, etc. May God open your eyes to see when there is a need. May God give you the heart to care for His people.

***3. Every pastor or shepherd must practise both routine and special circumstance visitation***

Every shepherd must have a routine for visiting his or her sheep. When I was sixteen years old I drew up a list of members in my fellowship. I decided to visit every one of them during the holidays. I drew maps to everyone's house. There was nothing particularly wrong with anyone. As a shepherd, I had decided to visit the sheep routinely. The shepherd's heart roams the field! He wonders where everyone is. He wonders whether they are all right.

However, there are special circumstances that arise. These special circumstances such as: death, sickness, bereavement, birth of a child, marital crisis, etc. also call for extra visits.

***4. Special circumstances in a church member's life is a call for urgent pastoral action***

**And David said unto Saul, Thy servant kept thy father's sheep and there came a lion, and a bear, and took a lamb out of the flock: And I WENT OUT AFTER HIM and smote him, and delivered it out of its mouth, and when he arose against me, I caught him by his beard, and smote him and slew him.**

**1 Samuel 17:34**

When a lion attacks the sheep, it is definitely an emergency for the shepherd. This is not a routine event. It calls for rapid action. Whenever there is a special circumstance in someone's life, the pastor must be quick to respond. Your church member may be in the mouth of a roaring lion. Just like David the shepherd, you must go out after him.

In every field of endeavour there are emergencies. Even in the field of medicine there are categorized emergencies. For instance, there are surgical emergencies, gynaecological emergencies, and so on. A doctor is trained to diagnose and react rapidly to these emergencies. When people are broken by circumstances, it is a spiritual emergency. When people are lost and are at the mercy of wolves, it is a spiritual emergency. I can just picture a member of mine in the realm of the Spirit. I see him in the mouth of the lion. How urgently he needs help. But this is just a picture of where many sheep are.

**The DISEASED have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was SICK, neither have ye bound up that which was BROKEN, neither have ye brought again that which was DRIVEN AWAY, neither have ye sought that which was LOST; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. And they were SCATTERED, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all**

**the beasts of the field, when they were scattered.  
Ezekiel 34:4,5**

In the ministry world, these special circumstances are our emergencies. We must respond rapidly if we want to save our sheep's lives.

***5. Every pastor must practise both surprise and expected visits***

Surprise and expected visits have different effects. They are both important and must both be practised.

11/00

FOV

***6. Surprise visits reveal the real circumstances of your church members lives***

Surprise visits often show the real state of affairs in people's homes. I have walked into people's houses and found them smoking away. At other times, I have found people living together when they were not really married. I have discovered members living in abject poverty and misery. They looked so nice and polished in church. You would never imagine the circumstances of the person's home.

Surprise visits help you to know who you are pastoring. They even help you to preach and minister aright.

***7. Expected visits give church members the chance to show their best***

When someone is expecting a visitor, he prepares the home. This enables the church members to put up their best. This gives them a sense of accomplishment as the pastor sees the best of them.

**8. *Pastors must protect themselves by visiting in pairs***

**...and send them two and two before his face into every city...**

**Luke 10:1**

Two are better than one. One strengthens the other. You help each other to preach and to share the Word. One puts to flight a thousand and two put to flight ten thousand. That is why Jesus sent them out in “twos”.

As you visit people of the opposite sex, they cannot easily claim that you are coming with ulterior motives because you do not come alone. This is the advantage of visiting in pairs.

**9. *It is safer for two ministers of the same sex to go on visitation***

As you frequently visit, you will find yourself bonding with your partner. You may not wish to bond with the person with whom you are doing visitation.

**10. *Pastors must not visit more than it's necessary to avoid giving the wrong impression***

**Withdraw thy foot from thy neighbours house; lest he be wary of thee and so hate thee.**

**Proverbs 25:17**

If you constantly visit a particular person, the mood of that person will change from *exhilaration* to *uncertainty* to *irritation* to *anger*. Do not let your church members hate you because you visit them too often. They will begin to wonder what your motives are. “Is the pastor hungry? Does he want some food? Does he want something from us?”, they will ask themselves.

## ***CHAPTER THIRTY-ONE***

# **7 TIPS THAT MAKE VISITATION EASIER**

***1. Combine your journey to and from church with a visit***

**...Redeeming the time...**

**Ephesians 5:16**

I like the way someone comments about this scripture. He says, “*Buying up those moments which others throw away.*” When you buy up those moments that others throw away, you will achieve great things for God.

**2. *Combine your journey to and from work with a visit***

**...buy up those moments...**

**Ephesians 5:16**

**3. *Always do multiple visits in one trip***

**...buy up those moments...**

**Ephesians 5:16**

There are often a number of people who can be visited on one journey. I often try to visit several people on one journey.

**4. *Visit all the people living in the same area in one trip***

A good pastor must know the people who live in an area. Anytime that you are in that area, you must know the potential visits you can make.

**5. *Visit people at work or in school when you cannot get them at home***

**See then that ye walk circumspectly... as wise...**

**Ephesians 5:15**

Some people do not have a home that can be visited. Sometimes they are living with uncles and aunts. Sometimes they sleep outside on the street. Perhaps you can visit them at their workplaces or schools. I have made many successful visits to people in school and at work.



*6. Use Sundays as your most valuable day for visitation*

**...Redeeming the time...** [buying up those moments]  
**Ephesians 5:16**

Sundays are great days for visitation. Most people relax at home on Sunday afternoons. Make the most of your Sundays. Sundays are working days for pastors. Pastors must work on Sundays and rest on Mondays.

*7. Do not be afraid of visiting late in the night*

Blessed are the people whom the master will find working in the second and third watches of the night. The second and third watches of the night were nine p.m. and twelve midnight respectively. This is the stamp of approval for servants who do God's work as late as 9.00 p.m. or midnight.

**...and if ye shall come in the SECOND WATCH, or in the  
THIRD WATCH, and find them so, BLESSED ARE  
THOSE SERVANTS.  
Luke 12:38**

Many people sleep late anyway. Television keeps people awake in their homes. **There are many people you will never reach unless you visit them at a late hour.** But make sure you visit in pairs. This provides safety in case someone thinks you have the wrong motive.



# **CHAPTER THIRTY-TWO**

## **5 VISITS THAT HAVE LIFE-CHANGING POWER**

### **THE VISITS OF JEHOVAH**

#### ***1. A Visit to Solve Marital Problems***

##### **God Visited Adam and Eve**

**And they HEARD THE VOICE OF THE LORD GOD walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.**  
**Genesis 3:8**

The Lord God visited Adam and Eve in the midst of a crisis. They were having problems because they had done something wrong. Adam was blaming Eve for talking to the serpent. Eve was blaming Adam for not spending time with her. It was a veritable marriage crisis – they didn't have clothes to wear and they didn't have any money. The Lord walked in at the right time. He showed them the consequences of their actions. He ministered the Word of God to them. Then He organised some new clothes for the family. What a visit! This visit changed the course of human history.

**Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them.**

**Genesis 3:21**

## ***2. A Visit to Encourage People***

### **God Visited Abraham**

**And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, THE LORD APPEARED to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect... THOU SHALT BE A FATHER of many nations. Neither shall thy name anymore be called Abram, but thy name shall be called Abraham...**

**Genesis 17:1,5**

*Abraham had been married for many years and had not been able to have a child. This was a great problem for his family. During a visitation by Jehovah, a word of encouragement was spoken. You are going to be a father! Dear pastor, can you imagine the encouraging effect of those words on your life if you were in Abraham's situation?*

Many times when I have visited people, they have said, "I feel so encouraged." *The combination of love, prayer and the Word is an unbeatable mixture.*

## ***3. A Visit to Bring Advice and Guidance***

### **God Visited Isaac**

**And THE LORD APPEARED unto him, and said, Go not  
down into Egypt; dwell in the land which I shall tell thee  
of:  
Genesis 26:2**

There was an economic crisis in Isaac's city. As he prepared to get a visa to travel, he received a visitation. During the visitation he received advice. The Lord told him, "Don't travel like everyone else." God will look after you!

Isaac's life was changed forever because of that piece of advice! Many people's lives are changed forever because of a visit that brings advice. As you go out on visitation, see yourself as someone bringing advice and guidance to God's people.

#### ***4. A Visit That Makes a Sheep Committed, Anointed and a Tithe Payer***

##### **God Visited Jacob**

**And Jacob awaked out of his sleep, and he said, Surely  
THE LORD IS IN THIS PLACE; and I knew it not.  
Genesis 28:16**

Jacob received a visitation from the Lord. He was a backslidden person who had cheated many people. That night, his life was changed forever – a crooked person was made straight. From then on, he became a committed Christian. He decided to pay tithes and to help build the church. What a difference visitation can make. Do you see what a powerful weapon visitation is in the ministry of a pastor?

**And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, If God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on, So that I come again to my father's house in peace; then shall the LORD be my God: And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God's house: and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee.**

**Genesis 28:20-22**

Dear friend, when you go on visitation, talk to your members about commitment. Teach them to pay their tithes. Teach them the blessings of divine protection and provisions. Your visit will have a permanent effect on their lives.

## ***5. A Visit to Get a Member's Attention so God Can Speak to Him***

### **God Visited Moses**

**And the angel of THE LORD APPEARED unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed.**

**Exodus 3:2**

Moses was experiencing a “wilderness season” in his life. Things had not gone well with him for over forty years. One visit changed all of that.

Sometimes a visit by the pastor can draw the attention of a

church member to the fact that God knows him personally. The impact of this is often remarkable! There is a dramatic change as people realize that God has them in mind. As it was with Moses, a long season of backsliding can end through one visit.

# **CHAPTER THIRTY-THREE**

## **5 VISITS THAT BRING A PERMANENT CHANGE**

### **THE VISITS OF JESUS CHRIST**

#### ***1. A Visit That Brings Salvation to Many Lives***

##### **Jesus Visited the World**

**But AS MANY AS RECEIVED HIM, to them gave he  
power to become the sons of God, even to them that  
believe on his name:**

**John 1:12**

**This is my favourite example of a powerful visit – three and a half years that changed the world forever. This is the most phenomenal visit of all time. This is the mother of all visits – the visit that changed the world forever!**

Thank God that Jesus came. He could have written a letter to us. He could have sent an angel. But He came Himself. That demonstrated the love of God to mankind. Many people have responded to this love. The fruits of this visit are everywhere. Every church building you see is a result of this visit. Every Christian you see is a fruit of this visit. Every minister of the



gospel is a product of Jesus' three-and-a-half year visit to the world.

A visit can bring salvation. Christ's visit to the earth brought salvation to millions. There are many times that I have led people to Christ during a visit. I have seen some of these people permanently established in Christ. I have seen people weep as they gave their lives to Christ in their living rooms. As you go on visitation, make sure you minister to everyone who is not saved in the household. Always remember to lead people to Christ during your visits.

## ***2. A Visit That Brings Healing***

### **Jesus Visited Peter's House**

**And when JESUS WAS COME INTO PETER'S HOUSE,  
he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And he  
touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose,  
and ministered unto them.**

**Matthew 8:14,15**

During visitation, you can also pray for the sick. Believe God for the anointing to flow through you. Visitation may be your only opportunity to try out the gift of healing.

## ***3. A Visit (On Request) That Yielded Miracles***

### **Jesus Visited Jairus' House**

**And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was**

**ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet,  
and BESOUGHT HIM THAT HE WOULD COME INTO  
HIS HOUSE:  
Luke 8:41**

*We are so used to seeing the power of God in a packed service. We think that God can only move when there are thousands of people present. Let me share a secret with you. Did you know that Jesus reserved the best miracles for the eyes of a few? Why didn't he walk on the water before thousands of people? When He rebuked the storm, why did He do it before only twelve people who were already committed to Him? Did you know that when Jesus filled Peter's boat with so much fish it began to sink, it was only Peter, Andrew, James and John who saw it? When He rose from the dead why didn't He show Himself to thousands of people?*

Dear friend, learn the mystery of godliness! *God does not need to impress anyone.* God can do the greatest miracles in the privacy of someone's home. Feel free to minister the power of God

The first time I experienced someone falling under the power of the Holy Spirit was in a bedroom (not in a church hall). I was ministering to a young man and he collapsed under the power. There was no one there to see it happen but it was real!

As you go on visitation, get ready for God's power!

#### ***4. A Visit That Brought Teaching and Domestic Advice***

## **Jesus Visited Mary and Martha**

**Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha RECEIVED HIM INTO HER HOUSE.  
Luke 10:38**

Jesus practised all kinds of visits. He visited two ladies and gave them good domestic advice. He told Mary that she was too involved in the kitchen. In other words, He advised her to become more spiritual.

It is not everything you can comment about in someone's home. If you have the right relationship with the person you may be able to speak. If not, keep your mouth shut and move on! You may get into trouble by speaking about things you have no business commenting on.

**...A fool uttereth all his mind...  
Proverbs 29:11**

## ***5. A Visit for General Interaction and Direct Rebukes***

### **Jesus Visited a Pharisee**

**And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: AND HE WENT IN, AND SAT DOWN TO MEAT.  
Luke 11:37**

The Lord visited all kinds of people and therefore you must visit all kinds of people. When He visited this Pharisee, there were a lot of rebukes. Jesus was not intimidated by the

dinner that was set before him, neither should you be.

**And when the Pharisees saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; BUT YOUR INWARD PART IS FULL OF RAVENING AND WICKEDNESS, YE FOOLS...  
Luke 11:38**

This visit turned out into one of the strongest rebukes that Jesus ever meted out to hypocrites. Jesus told his hosts that they were fools.

# **CHAPTER THIRTY-FOUR**

## **5 VISITS THAT ESTABLISH CHURCH MEMBERS**

### **THE PAULINE VISITS**

#### ***1. A Visit That Leads to the Holy Spirit Baptism***

##### **Paul Visited the Ephesus Christians**

**And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts CAME TO EPHESUS: AND FINDING CERTAIN DISCIPLES, And when Paul had laid his hands on them, the Holy Ghost came on them and they spake with tongues and prophesied.**  
**Acts 19:1,6**

Do not hesitate to minister the baptism of the Holy Spirit when you are on visitation. **A visiting minister is a mobile church service.** Good things can happen when you are anointed of the Spirit. I remember ministering the baptism of the Holy Spirit in someone's home. This person was so happy. He continued speaking in tongues for over one hour. If I had waited for this fellow to come to church, he may never had had the

power of the Holy Spirit.

## ***2. Visitation to Build a Relationship***

### **Paul Visited the Church at Tyre**

**...and LANDED AT TYRE: for there the ship was to unlade her burden. And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days... And when we had ACCOMPLISHED THOSE DAYS, we departed...  
Acts 21:3-5**

Sometimes a visit must be made to build a relationship. It is important for a pastor to build relationships with all or some of his church members. Visitation is one of the effective ways for building relationships. Paul had no other reason than to accomplish certain days at certain places.

## ***3. A Visit to Recruit Pastors***

### **Paul Visited Derbe and Lystra**

**THEN CAME HE TO DERBE AND LYSTRA: and, behold, a certain disciple was there named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman... Him would Paul have to go forth with him...  
Acts 16:1,3**

Amazing things can happen during visitation. It was during visitation that Paul identified a potential pastor. Who was this pastor? It turned out to be Timothy. If Paul had not done the visit to Derbe and Lystra, some people would not have had a pastor and the Book of Timothy would never have been written.

Some years ago, I remember visiting a family that lived two hours away from the church. As I set out, I had no idea what that visit would lead to. Today, I have a whole church that is pastored by someone who joined the church as a result of that visit. I have also recruited a “Timothy” during a visit. I see you recruiting pastors as you go on visitation!

#### ***4. A Visit to Strengthen Church Members***

##### **Paul Visited Galatia and Phrygia**

**And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and WENT OVER ALL THE COUNTRY OF GALATIA AND PHRYGIA in order, strengthening all the disciples.**  
**Acts 18:23**

Thank God for the life of the apostle Paul. Can you see how many different places and people he visited? If he had not done this work, what would have become of the church? Every time you go on a visit, you strengthen the sheep. Jesus smiles on you lovingly as you strengthen His little lambs.

#### ***5. A Visit to Exhort the Church***

## **Paul Visited Macedonia and Greece**

**...Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia. And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them MUCH EXHORTATION, he came into GREECE, And there abode three months...**

**Acts 20:1-3**

Paul, the classic shepherd, visited Macedonia and Greece. Sometimes you can visit an entire household. You do not have to visit only one person. Notice how much exhortation was administered during this visit.

Don't forget to share the Word every time you visit. The Word is powerful! It changes lives! It is different from philosophy and wise sounding ideas. Stay with the Word even on visitation! Follow the example of Paul and be an exhorter while on visitation.



**PART IV**  
**TEACHING**

# ***CHAPTER THIRTY FIVE***

## **15 KEYS TO BECOMING A SUCCESSFUL TEACHER OF THE WORD**

**And I will give you pastors according to mine own heart  
which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.  
Jeremiah 3:15**

### **1. Be in a state of constant preparation**

You may be called upon to preach at any time. When you are aware of this reality you will always be in tune.

### **2. Have your quiet time everyday**

Most of my messages have come from my personal quiet time which I have everyday. If you are a minister and do not have a quiet time everyday, your foundation is weak.

### **3. Read books all the time**

You must have a book that you are reading. I always have one book or other that I am reading all the time. They are often unrelated to what I am preaching about. This helps me to be in

a state of constant preparation.

#### **4. Listen to tapes all the time**

I always have a set of tapes that I am listening to. This is what I mean by a state of constant preparation. Sometimes, people wonder how I am able to cope with several preaching duties at the same time. I am able to do this because I am in a state of constant preparation.

#### **5. Base every sermon on the scriptures**

Stay with the mainstream of the Gospel. The Bible is your main textbook. Let it be the rock upon which you base your ministry. Do not replace the gold of the Word with the brass of secular teachings.

#### **6. Have a clear purpose for every message.**

What are you trying to achieve? Do you want to get people saved or healed? Having a clear purpose will guide you as to what to say

#### **7. Give the right kind of title to your message**

There are three main types of titles: *Evangelistic* titles, *Exhortational* titles and *Teaching* titles.

*Evangelistic titles* are dramatic sounding titles. They are

intended to jolt the congregation. They sometimes bring fear into the hearts of sinners. Examples of these are

- ❑ “Rain, rain go away”
- ❑ “You are entitled to your own opinion”
- ❑ “Silence in Heaven”
- ❑ “Judgement Day 1,2 and 3”
- ❑ “They went to hell”

***Exhortational titles*** are short, catchy phrases. These are intended to encourage the congregation. Examples of these are:

- ❑ “Daughter, you can make it”
- ❑ “Daughter you have tender eyes”
- ❑ “Woman, thou art loosed”
- ❑ “Can I wash my hands?”

***Teaching titles*** give a clear message. They usually show a number of steps, principles or keys. **You can convert any exhortational message into a teaching message by giving it the right title.** You can have several different teaching sermons out of one exhortation. Let us do a little exercise and convert an exhortational message (Woman, thou art loosed) into a teaching message.

- ❑ “3 *steps* to becoming a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “7 *principles* to becoming a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “4 *reasons* why you should be a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “10 *benefits* of being a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “6 *Laws* of the woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “7 *ways* you can become a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “5 *Mistakes* of a woman who is loosed”
- ❑ “10 *things* every Christian should know about the woman who is loosed”

- “What it means to be a woman who is loosed”
- “25 *Keys* to becoming a woman who is loosed”
- “4 *phases* in the life of a woman who is loosed”
- “18 *Methods* by which you can become a woman who is loosed”
- “12 *Secrets* of a woman who is loosed”
- “11 *Strategies* of a woman who is loosed”
- “How you can become a woman who is loosed”
- “7 *Signs* of a woman who is loosed”
- “4 *Symptoms* of a woman who needs to be loosed”

You can make this a formula to help you produce more organised teaching messages. You first of all choose any number of points you want. Then pick the right word (whether principles, laws, keys, secrets) to go with it. You will discover that your teaching ministry will jump to another level when you have the right kind of title.

## **8. There must be order in the sermon**

An easy way to ensure order in your message is to preach in points. You can teach in three, five, seven or as many points as you want. Let people see the progression that you are following. Remember this: if you are preaching a one-off sermon, three points are often adequate. The maximum for a one-off sermon should be seven points. If you try to teach 25 points in one sermon, you will certainly run into difficulties.

## **9. Conclude your sermon on a high note**

## **10. Do not preach for too long or too short**

## **11. Never preach without windows (illustrations, stories, parables, etc.)**

A message without illustrations and personal examples is like a building without a window. Jesus never taught without illustrations and windows. The story of the prodigal son, the story of the man who was attacked on the way to Jericho and the story of the Lazarus and the rich man are vivid examples of this style of teaching. Children never forget these stories and neither do adults. The greater your teaching ministry the more like Jesus' it will be.

## **12. Always do an altar call for salvation**

The main thrust of the kingdom of God is to bring souls to Christ. We do a great disservice to the Gospel when we fail or forget to invite people to Jesus

## **13. Stay with revelation**

Preach about things that God has given you a revelation of. If you just preach somebody's sermon without having a personal revelation of it, you will make no impact! You may actually look foolish! Avoid complex things that you do not understand. There is enough to preach about without getting stuck on difficult terrain!

## **14. Head for the anointing**

As you preach frequently, you will know when the preaching anointing comes upon you. You will also know what to do to make the anointing flow during the sermon.

Two keys to preaching in the anointing are:

- i. You must learn to break icy atmospheres and enter the anointing by openly speaking a few phrases in tongues.
- ii. Staying with revelation also releases the anointing for preaching. Move from dryness into anointed preaching by sharing things that you have a personal revelation about.

## **15. Look for the five signs of the anointing when you are preaching. Preaching with the anointing is characterised by five important signs.**

- a. It is preaching with authority (Mark 1:22)
- b. It is preaching with life-changing effects (Acts 4:4)
- c. It is preaching which causes crowds to gather (Mark 1:32)
- d. It is direct and cuts to the heart (Acts 2:37)
- e. It is relevant (Luke 13:4,5)





# ***CHAPTER THIRTY-SIX***

## **4 REASONS WHY EVERY PASTOR SHOULD SEE THE CONGREGATION AS GOD'S GARDEN**

**For we are labourers together with God: YE ARE GOD'S HUSBANDRY [GARDEN, FARM, FIELD], Ye are God's building.**

**1 Corinthians 3:9**

Every pastor should see the congregation as God's garden, God's field or God's farm. When you see the congregation as God's farm, it will help you understand what the ministry of preaching and teaching does. When you are preaching, you are actually pouring seeds into God's farm. The type of seeds you pour into the ground determines the type of harvest you are going to get.

- **Every pastor must see himself as a farmer who plants seeds with every sermon.**

Once you understand this revelation, you will know that there is no mystery to the type of congregation you have. If you have

a congregation of soul winners, it is the harvest you have earned for yourself. Every farmer gets what he plants. If you plant corn, you will get a harvest of corn. If you plant pineapples, you will harvest pineapples.

*The pastor is the farmer. The congregation is a garden. Whenever the pastor preaches, he is planting a particular kind of seed. He will have a harvest that corresponds to the type of seeds he has planted.*

It is no wonder that some churches are full of prosperous successful people. This is because their pastor teaches prosperity and success on a regular basis. Some churches are full of missionary minded people. This is because the pastor preaches about missionary work all the time.

Some churches preach about miracles. It is no wonder that miracles take place in those churches. Some pastors teach about church growth and they experience it.

Dear pastor, is it a mystery if a farmer reaps a harvest of tomatoes? Certainly not! He must have planted tomatoes! What are you planting in God's garden? Are you preaching poverty, fear and failure? Or are you preaching victory, prosperity and faith?

- **There are short-term harvests of the Word.**

What do I mean by short-term harvests? During each service, whatever you preach is a seed for a short-term harvest. If you preach a sermon of doubt and fear, you will not reap a har-

vest of miracles. If you preach about salvation, you will get people saved.

## **I Saw the Harvest**

I remember preaching at a crusade. As I taught about salvation, there was a calm response from the audience. They listened earnestly to the message of salvation. At a point, I began to speak about healing. I told the crowd that God would heal them. There was an almost immediate response from the congregation! Cripples came out of wheelchairs and the sick began to get healed as I spoke about healing. At that moment, I was reaping a short-term harvest. I had spoken about miracles and I was reaping a harvest of miracles.

I used to think that if God was God, He should move in the same way after every sermon. However, as I have grown in the ministry, I have realized that it is not so. The reality that we are God's garden has dawned on me. If I want to have a miracle service, then I must teach about miracles and healing. I know that the congregations listening to me are God's field.

If you are not surprised when the farmer next door reaps a harvest of wheat, then do not be surprised if Benny Hinn reaps a harvest of miracles in his ministry. He preaches about miracles all the time. It is only in order that he should reap a harvest of healing from God's garden.

- **There are long-term harvests of the Word.**

Without knowing what I was doing, I sowed certain seeds in God's garden. I have taught about loyalty and I have reaped

a harvest of loyal people from the garden! I have preached about the ministry and missionary work. As the years have gone by, God has blessed me with many workers and missionaries.

- **You must believe in the principle of God's garden.**

This principle will guide you into preaching the right things. Do not be in a hurry to reap a harvest. There is always a period of time between sowing and reaping. From this time onwards, carefully select what you will speak about in your church. Preach about what you want and not about what you have! As the years go by, you will realise that you have a congregation of people that are exact products of your teaching.

## ***CHAPTER THIRTY-SEVEN***

### **7 REASONS WHY A PASTOR SHOULD TEACH IN SERIES**

Some pastors have a new sermon every Sunday. They come up with an inspiring, exhortation every week. This is commendable. However, the sheep cannot live on inspiration! They need regular, sustained and balanced teaching. If your church is to grow, you will have people staying in your church for many

years. You have to have something to give them on a regular basis. This is why I believe that you must teach in series. Of course, there are times that you must give inspirational messages that are not in series. Here are seven reasons why you must learn to teach in series.

- ❑ ***Preaching in series is the best way*** to sustain a congregation of regular attendees. ***Since you will have the same people listening to you every week, you need to have an appropriate message.***
- ❑ ***Preaching in series*** is easier for the pastor ***than preaching a different message every week. This is because a series is actually one message that has been broken down into little sermons. The preparation for one long sermon lasts for a long time and can be released to the sheep in stages.***
- ❑ Preaching in series makes ***the members have something to look forward to*** the following week. It creates an air of expectation.
- ❑ Preaching in series ***makes the members come back*** week after week because they want to hear the conclusion of the series. This improves the attendance in church.
- ❑ Preaching in series is the only way ***to cover lengthy but important topics*** that must be taught in the church. For instance, it is not possible to cover all that must be taught about marriage in forty-five minutes.
- ❑ Preaching in series enables the pastor ***to shorten the serv***

*ices* to a reasonable length of time. The pastor is not under so much stress to say everything in one week. He knows that he will have the opportunity to complete his message next week.

- Preaching in series *establishes a bond* between the pastor and his congregation. They depend on him for a regular meal. You are always attached to the people who feed you regularly!

## **CHAPTER THIRTY-EIGHT**

# **4 KEYS TO AUGMENT YOUR TEACHING MINISTRY**

*Perhaps your teaching ministry needs a boost. You can go higher. Let me share with you four steps that will move you on to the next level.*

1. ***Preach without notes.*** It is much more impressive to preach extemporaneously than to be seen reading out of notes. Even if you have notes (like I do), do not appear to depend on them for every sentence you say.
2. ***Practice teaching without notes by memorizing three car-***

***dinal points with three cardinal scriptures and three cardinal 'windows'.*** Windows are life's examples, illustrations and stories. When you are preaching extemporaneously, it is easier to remember three main points rather than ten main points. These three points will naturally link themselves up to three scriptures and three 'windows'.

3. ***Constantly soak in teaching tapes*** that are unrelated to your Sunday sermons. Start preparing for preaching opportunities a year in advance.
4. ***Teach regularly.*** You must have a weekly opportunity to minister the Word. Anyone who preaches regularly is bound to improve. If you preach only once in a while, your preaching ministry will always remain at a low level.

# **CHAPTER THIRTY-NINE**

## **7 REASONS WHY LISTENING TO TAPES WILL TRANSFORM YOUR PREACHING MINISTRY**

**So then faith cometh by HEARING AND HEARING by the word of God.**

**Romans 10:17**

### **1. Listening to tapes will help you to know the Word of God**

Every minister needs to have an in-depth knowledge of the Word of God. An easy way to memorize the Word of God is by listening to tapes. You will hear the preacher quoting scriptures and this will help you remember the Word.

### **2. Listening to tapes will help you to soak in the voice of God**

As you soak in tapes you will receive direction for your ministry. **There are always several messages *within* a message.** As a pastor, you will hear God speaking to you about different things concerning your ministry.



### **3. Listening to tapes will help you to stay in *the presence of God***

Once the Word of God is being preached, an anointed atmosphere is created. Every pastor must endeavour to remain in such an atmosphere because he may be called upon to minister at any time.

**Preach the word; be instant in season out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.**  
**2 Timothy 4:2**

### **4. Listening to tapes will help you to catch the anointing**

As Peter preached, the Spirit *fell* on the congregation (Acts 10:44). Most definitely, as the Word of God is coming forth, the anointing is falling. The more you listen to tapes, the more you will be anointed (See my book on *Catch the Anointing*).

### **5. Listening to tapes will help you to develop a unique style of preaching**

As you listen to tapes, you will develop a unique style of preaching. It is important for you to develop a distinctive style of preaching as this will appeal to the people God has called you to. As the saying goes, “Different strokes for different folks.” Not everyone will be attracted to your ministry. But God has definitely raised you up for a people.

### **6. Listening to tapes will help you to acquire general infor**

## **mation that a minister needs**

There are many side-benefits to listening to tapes. You will always glean a lot of useful information as you soak in tapes. It is nicer to listen to a preacher who is knowledgeable about many areas of life. For instance, a good knowledge of history, politics, science, medicine, law, geography, literature and economics greatly enhance the delivery of a message.

### **7. Listening to tapes will help you to have a constant unintentional training for the ministry**

The training of a minister revolves around the Word of God. As you soak in the Word, you constantly receive some counsel. What a blessing to receive counsel without even asking for it.

# *CHAPTER FORTY*

## **HOW TO ESTABLISH A DOCTRINE IN THE CHURCH**

When the sower went out to sow, only one out of four seeds flourished in good ground. The Bible teaches us that the Word of God was that seed (Mark 4:14). If only a quarter of the congregation responds properly to a message, it means that you have to preach that message several times before it becomes established.

**When a subject is occasionally preached in a church, it does not lead to that doctrine being established in the congregation.** It is important to establish certain truths in the congregation so that the church can be perfected. Perfection will not come if the principles and doctrines are not established.

**Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection...**

**Hebrews 6:1**

If your congregation is still struggling with the concept of church leadership, you have a problem. If your congregation still struggles with the concept of tithing, your income will be skimpy. Dear friend, how can you move on to greater things if

the foundational doctrines are not established?

Let me share with you six steps that will establish a doctrine in your church. These steps are based on a simple scripture.

**That in the mouth of two or three witnesses EVERY WORD [DOCTRINE] MAY BE ESTABLISHED.**

**Matthew 18:16**

Where there are two or more preachers saying the same thing, a doctrine will be established. Any church, which has all the ministers saying the same thing, is blessed! The Word of God will go forth with strength when it is taught over and over again

## **Six Steps That Will Establish a Doctrine in Your Church**

- 1. Teach a series about the subject in question**
- 2. Teach another series on a sister topic.**

For instance, if you teach about prayer you could also teach about fasting.

- 3. Teach the same subject a second time.**
- 4. Later on, get your assistants to teach on the same topic.**
- 5. Yet again, instruct your cell leaders or shepherds to teach the same thing on another occasion.**

## **6. Get visiting ministers to teach the same topic to your congregation**

When the senior pastor, his associates, other leaders and even visiting ministers teach a doctrine, that doctrine is bound to be established.

Sometimes I am invited to teach on loyalty but I know that one sermon is not going to change a culture of disloyalty into one of loyalty. The message must be preached over and over until it is established. **The mouth of two or more messages will establish the doctrine!** Some things will need more than a year of constant teaching before they will be established.

# **CHAPTER FORTY-ONE**

## **9 REASONS WHY PASTORS SHOULD PREACH THE WORD OF GOD**

**1. When you preach the Word of God your church members will have direction for their lives.**

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

*2 Timothy 3:16,17*

*The Bible contains the written Word of God. It is a reliable source of direction for us all. The Word of God is given to us for direction in our lives. Everything we do must be according to the Word of God. In a very general way, the Word of God is the perfect guidebook for our lives. The Bible is a unique book that contains instruction on every possible issue that may arise. There are many that think that the Bible is not a practical and relevant book for today.*

*One lady told me that she believed she could practice fornication because the Bible was out of fashion. Three years later, when her boyfriend of many years ditched her, she suddenly realized that the Bible was not so archaic after all.*

**The scripture is profitable, useful, relevant and practical for every Christian today! *There are many Christians who do not want you to open the Bible; they just want a prophecy or a word of knowledge.***

**2. When you preach the Word, the congregation will have light for their darkness.**

**Thy word is a lamp unto my feet and a light unto my path.  
Psalm 119:105**

***There is so much darkness in the world. We often do not know what to do, but God has provided a light for Christians. What is this light that God has provided for Christians?***

***Thy Word is a light for my path and a lamp to my feet. God's Word is a lamp and a light for us. It is only when you put on the light that you know where to go. It is only when you put on the light that you can prevent yourself from stumbling over furniture. Jesus Christ called himself the light of this world.***

***...I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have THE LIGHT OF LIFE.***

***John 8:12***

***You need light in this life! Jesus (the Word) is the light for your life. People who have tried to live their lives without Christ and the Word have discovered that it is painful to stumble around in the darkness.***

*A young man approached me and informed me that he was having terrible problems in his marriage. He wanted me to help him. He wanted to know the way out of his marital difficulties. As I talked with him, I realized that what he needed was the Word.*

*But he said to me, "Are you going to pray for me to have my deliverance?"*

*I asked, "Why do you need deliverance?"*

*He answered, "Oh, it has been detected that my wife has a marine spirit."*

*I asked him, "What is a marine spirit?"*

*He said, "Oh, it's something they say I have to be delivered from. So I want you to deliver me."*

*I thought to myself, "This man wants a quick fix. He does not want the Word. He does not know that nothing sets you free like the Word of God does."*

*And ye shall know the truth, and THE TRUTH SHALL MAKE YOU FREE.*

*John 8:32*

*I continued to question him, "Are you a born-again Christian?"*

*"Yes I am."*

*"Are you faithful to your wife?" I asked.*

*He smiled, "Um... not really."*

*"Actually," he continued, "I have not been faithful to her at all!"*

*I advised this man to have a pastor and belong to a church.*

*I told him, "Your marine spirit is the least of your problems. What you need is the Word of God to guide you in this*



*life. You need the light of life, otherwise, you will continue to grope in darkness.”*

*There are people who wonder how I know the things I preach. I remember arriving in Johannesburg for a convention. I was met by a South African delegation. When they saw me one of them asked, “Are you the Bishop?”*

*I said, “Yes I am.”*

*“Really! We were expecting someone much older! We have listened to your tapes and read your books. Somehow, we thought you were a much older person.”*  
*When you have the Word of God, your wisdom will be beyond your age. You will seem to be maturer than people of your age group.*

### **3. When you preach the Word of God the church members will be wise.**

*Thou through thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies... I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation.*  
*Psalm 119:98,99*

*Dear pastor, do you want to have wise church members? Do you want to have stable intelligent people in your congregation? Then preach the Word of God. The Word of God will make you wise in this life. Advice and direction for business are found in the Word of God. There is more instruction for a businessperson in the Word of God than in any teaching on business management. There is more relevant practical knowledge on philosophy, political science, literature and history in the Bi*

*ble than in any other book I know.*

#### **4. When you preach the Word of God the church members will know what to do.**

*I sometimes smile when people say, “God has called them to do such-and-such for Him.” If you do not obey the simple instructions in the Word, do you think that God is going to give you a greater instruction? He that is faithful in little is faithful in much. If you do not obey the Word of God that says to pay your tithes and offerings, do you think God is going to speak to you about other things?*

*He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the Lord require of thee...*

*Micah 6:8*

*God will minister His Word through pastors and shepherds. That is why it is important to have a good church and a pastor who teaches the Word of God.*

#### **5. When you preach the Word of God Christians will know and understand what is happening in their lives.**

*In the last days, God is giving pastors who will feed us with knowledge and understanding. Receive the knowledge and understanding that God is giving you through your pastors now!*

*And I will give you pastors according to my heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.*

Jeremiah 3:15

*Apart from knowledge and understanding, God will use a man of God to give instructions to Christians. These instructions help us to become better people in life. There are times your pastor will give a commandment to fast and pray. It is important to follow these instructions. The Bible teaches that we should obey those that have spiritual authority over us.*

*Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls...*

Hebrews 13:7

*Church members must listen to the voice of their shepherds. God has delegated the destiny of the sheep to the shepherd. God will bless your life and lead you through the voice of your shepherd. Jesus is the good overall shepherd and he told Peter to look after the sheep. That means that he was delegating the care of his sheep to under-shepherds. Dear pastors, we have an awesome responsibility and we can only do it by staying with the Word.*

*...and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.*

John 10:4

## **6. When you preach the Word of God, sin is burned out of the congregation.**

Do you want to have a congregation of sinners? Do you want to have a congregation of immoral people, prostitutes, drug dealers, liars, thieves and murderers? I hope not!

It may sound strange to you but I have seen congregations like that. By preaching the Word of God, you ignite a fire that burns up sin.

**...I will make MY WORDS IN THY MOUTH FIRE, and this people wood, AND IT SHALL DEVOUR them.  
Jeremiah 5:14**

**Is it not my word like as a FIRE?...  
Jeremiah 23:29**

**7. When you preach the Word of God it knocks sense into stubborn people..**

**...it not my word... like a HAMMER that breaketh the rock in pieces?**

**Jeremiah 23:29**

There are always stubborn people who need to attend the school of hard knocks. Preaching the Word knocks sense into stubborn people.

**8. When you preach the Word of God people will be genuinely saved.**

**For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth...**

**Romans 1:16**

When the Word of God is not preached people are not genuinely saved. They may be members of the church but they will not be sincerely saved. Salvation is a product of the Word of

God being preached. Secular teachings on success do not have the power of salvation!

**9. When you preach the Word of God you deal with the innermost thoughts of the congregation.**

There are many people who do not express their innermost thoughts. You never know what they are thinking. They are often evasive and do not answer questions directly. It is only God's Word that can get to their hearts and minister to them!

**For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTS OF THE HEART.**

**Hebrews 4:12**

# **CHAPTER FORTY-TWO**

## **7 REASONS WHY YOU SHOULD TEACH YOUR LEADERS**

*I believe that every pastor should have special sessions with his leaders. Teaching leaders is one of the most productive activities a pastor can engage in*

*When you teach leaders, you generate sons and daughters in the ministry. Do you realise that two of the most important letters in the New Testament were written to a leader? 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy are books that were written to a pastor. These teachings were not intended for the benefit of the whole church. They were the Apostle Paul's teachings to his junior pastor, Timothy.*

*Pastors and leaders need to be taught. They need to be separated from the rest of the congregation in order to receive special teachings. I do this all the time and it has yielded hundreds of sons and daughters in the ministry. It has raised up pastors and shepherds all over the world.*

*If you do not have special regular sessions with your leaders, your church will not have the right kind of workers. Church growth will be stunted when leaders are not trained*

*specially. . Dear friend, find out what there is to teach and begin to train your leaders yourself. Perhaps this is the key that your church needs.*

*THOU THEREFORE, MY SON, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.*

*2 Timothy 2:2*

## **7 Reasons Why You Should Teach Your Leaders**

*1. When you preach to leaders you are actually preaching to many more people. You are also teaching the followers of this leader.*

*2. Pastors must know the principle of explosive growth:* If you want GROWTH, teach your members but if you want EXPLOSIVE GROWTH, teach your leaders!

*3. Teaching leaders establishes authority over the leaders who work under you. This is because the authority over the leaders is demonstrated by your ability to feed them.*

*4. Teaching ordinary members is an investment into the church of today.* Teaching leaders is an investment into the future. *The leaders you teach will carry on into the future when you are gone. Success without a successor is failure!*

*5. Every pastor must teach leaders because Jesus Christ taught leaders all the time. Pastors must spend more time*

*teaching leaders than teaching ordinary church members. This is the pattern set by Christ Jesus.*

6. Teaching leaders is your greatest key to true expansion. *You will not have anyone to delegate if you have not trained leaders.*

7. Every pastor must teach his leaders because the leaders will never know what to do unless you teach them. *Many pastors assume that the potential leaders around them will acquire vital knowledge by osmosis. People feel that leadership is for special people who are born that way. Osmosis is not the key to leadership – teaching is!*



# CHAPTER FORTY-THREE

## *WHY YOU MUST AVOID “PSEUDO WORD” AND DOCTRINES OF DEVILS*

*Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and DOCTRINES OF DEVILS...*

*1Timothy 4:1*

### *Doctrines of Devils*

*When you preach the Word of God you avoid the mistake of deviating into false doctrine or ‘pseudo Word’ teachings. Openly false doctrines are easy to spot. You can tell them a mile away! Doctrines of groups like Jehovah Witnesses and Mormons are well known examples of erroneous doctrines. Most Christians have no difficulties spotting these things. Most pastors would not preach such flagrant error.*

### *Pseudo Word*

*The real danger lies in what I call ‘pseudo Word’ teachings. ‘Pseudo Word’ teachings come about because of seducing spirits.*

***These seducing spirits lure ministers into enticing areas of ministry.***

***Pastors are often enticed into exciting areas of debate. There are many social causes that need a champion. There are many political and moral issues that need a spokesman. The question every pastor must ask himself is, "Did God call me to champion a social cause? Am I supposed to leave the foundational doctrines of the Word of God and move into these 'grey' areas?" I call them 'grey' areas because it is uncertain whether they are secular topics or spiritual topics. If your call is to stay in the 'grey' areas, God will bless you over there. If not, then you have been seduced and enticed by a clever devil. Every pastor must be careful about the doctrine he is teaching.***

***TAKE HEED UNTO THYSELF AND UNTO THY DOCTRINE; continue in them; for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself and them that hear thee.***

***1 Timothy 4:16***

***'Pseudo Word' teachings are often teachings about good things or good causes. Something may be a good cause but that does not make it the Word of God.***

***Let me show you some examples of these 'pseudo Word' doctrines. 'Pseudo Word' teachings include things like secular leadership training, secular wisdom teachings, secular success teachings, political discourses, social campaigns about social and moral issues. There are many topics such as gender issues, race and colour issues that stir up passion. These things in themselves are not evil. The only problem with them is that they are not the central doctrines of the***

## ***Bible.***

I am not saying that it is wrong to preach on these issues. I am sure that God has called some people to address these things. However, you must know that these are not the foundational doctrines of the Bible. They are not the mainstream of the Word of God. They are not the *gospel* and they do not have the power of God unto salvation! (Romans 1:16)

Make sure that you do not swerve away from the mainstream of preaching God's Word. It is the Gospel that has the power to save! Secular success teachings do not have power to save souls.

Dear friend, if God has not called you to address these topics and you make them your emphasis, I am sorry to say that you have swerved aside into fruitless ministry.

**...From which some HAVING SWERVED have turned  
aside unto vain jangling.**

**1 Timothy 1:6**

*As far as heaven is concerned, you may have turned aside  
into vain jangling (worthless noise making).*

**And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and  
SHALL BE TURNED UNTO FABLES.**

**1 Timothy 4:4**

**PART V**  
**INTERACTION**

# ***CHAPTER FORTY-FOUR***

## **8 REASONS WHY INTER-ACTION IS IMPORTANT FOR EVERY CHURCH**

Interaction is an important part of ministry where the pastor makes personal contact with the people and establishes an important connection between himself and the congregation. He engages in informal discussions and establishes personal relationships with all sorts of people. Interaction is a key ‘outside-the-pulpit’ ministry that must be fully developed in order to achieve church growth.

### **8 Reasons Why Interaction Is Important For Every Church**

#### **1. Interaction makes people stay in the church**

Dear pastor do not forget this! People may join the church for various reasons. However, people stay in a church because of the people they know and the friends they make! This is what I call *church cement*. If you want your church to grow, interact with the members and encourage them to interact with one another!

## **2. Interaction makes people feel important**

Every soul is important! In fact, every hair on the head of every soul is important. When the Lord told us that He was numbering the hairs on our heads, He was telling us that we are very important to Him. It is important for people to feel that they are important. Personal interaction is the key to making people feel important.

**But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered...**  
**Luke 12:7**

## **3. Interaction makes people feel that they are not just a *number or a statistic***

Jesus said that He had not lost any of the sheep the Father had given Him. Everyone is important to God! Not even one person must be lost! No one is just a number. No one must be treated as a mere statistic. Interaction is the key to ensuring this.

## **4. Interaction makes people feel that they are not objects being used to make the pastor famous**

**In the multitude of people is the king's honour: but in the want of people is the destruction of the prince.**

## Proverbs 14:28

People know that where there are large crowds, the pastor (king), is honoured. Sometimes the people feel that they are being *used* to make the pastor famous. Personal interaction will prevent church members from thinking in that way.

### **5. Interaction is important because personal contact changes wrong impressions!**

The queen of Sheba had a wrong impression about who Solomon was. However, after having a personal interaction with him, she changed her mind. She was so impressed with king Solomon. She said, “You are better and greater than I thought you were.”

**And she said to the king, It was a true report which I heard in mine own land of thine acts and of thine wisdom: Howbeit I believe not their words until I came, and mine eyes have seen it: And, behold, the one half of the greatness of thy wisdom was not told me: FOR THOU EXCEEDEST THE FAME THAT I HEARD.**

**2 Chronicles 9:5,6**

I have had several people telling me about the negative impressions they had about me before they knew me personally. Some people could not believe that I was so different from what I was portrayed to be. Interaction kills wrong impressions very quickly indeed!

### **6. Interaction is important because personal contact helps**

**people to become more committed.**

Perhaps you have tried to get certain people committed to your church by preaching hard from the pulpit. Personal interaction with them may be the key that will turn them into committed members.

When Jesus interacted with Nathanael on the beach it resulted in a life commitment. Notice Jesus' personal interaction with Nathanael and how it made him a committed disciple.

**Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.**

**John 1:47-49**

## **7. Interaction is important because Jesus interacted**

Jesus is our great example setter. We can best learn about ministry by following his example. I want to do what Jesus did. I want to be more like Jesus.

**Now as HE WALKED BY THE SEA OF GALILEE, HE SAW SIMON AND ANDREW his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.**

**And JESUS SAID UNTO THEM, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.**

**Mark 1:16,17**



## **8. Interaction makes people feel special**

Everyone wants to stay around someone who makes him or her feel special. Nobody wants to be a number or a statistic. Make your people feel special and they will stick to you like superglue!

# **CHAPTER FORTY-FIVE**

## **HOW TO INTERACT WITH PEOPLE**

### **1. Make a conscious decision to interact with people you do not know**

It is not easy to talk to total strangers. We naturally gravitate towards things we know. In every man is the fear of the unknown. This makes us reserved and overly cautious. Break out and allow the rivers of living waters that are in you to bless humanity.

### **2. Decide to do *deep-sea fishing***

Deep-sea fishing involves going into the midst of the large crowd and interacting with total strangers. You can do it! Decide to talk to five total strangers every Sunday. All pastors and leaders must be involved in talking to total strangers after each service. This will lead to the church growth we have been praying for.

### **3. Show a genuine interest in the people who come to church**

Do not look like an official of the church who is just doing a

duty. Do away with fake smiles and decide to be genuinely interested in the people.

#### **4. Have a friendly smiling face**

**A man that hath friends must show himself friendly...  
Proverbs 18:24**

*Practise smiling in front of your mirror.  
Some people have naturally stern faces;  
these ones need to practise smiling the  
most.*

#### **5. Kill the spirit of hypocrisy by interacting with all kinds of people**

Hypocrisy leaves a nasty taste in the mouths of everyone. Avoid it at all costs! Do not only ask for the names of wealthy looking people. Be genuinely interested in people who look poor and uneducated. Jesus interacted with every kind of person. He spoke to tax collectors, Pharisees, Centurions, fishermen, blind men, mothers, noblemen and even the dead!

**My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to**

**the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:  
Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges  
of evil thoughts?**

**James 2:1-4**

**6. Ask the seven basic interaction questions:**

- ⇒ Ask people what their names are
- ⇒ Ask where they live
- ⇒ Ask people where they work
- ⇒ Ask people where they attend school
- ⇒ Ask people whether they are married or getting married soon
- ⇒ Ask people whether they are committed to the church
- ⇒ Ask if you could be their friend.

# **CHAPTER FORTY-SIX**

## **8 WAYS YOU CAN MAKE PEOPLE FEEL SPECIAL**

### **1. You can make people feel special by calling them by their names**

When you call people by their names they feel special. They think to themselves, “The pastor knows me. I am one of the few people whose names he remembers. I must be one of the special few.”

### **2. You can make people feel special by smiling at them and looking at them in the eye.**

Some faces are “smile-less”. Some people naturally have a *serious* disposition. This *serious* look can be misread to be unfriendliness. If you are one such person, I repeat that you must practise smiling in front of your mirror. I had to do that! Ask your colleagues to help you to remember to smile. I asked my wife to help me to be friendly and she did!

### **3. You can make people feel special by being sincere and not exaggerating with them.**

When you flatter people, they tend not to take you seriously. At a point, people will think that you are scoffing at them. They may even curse you in their minds.

When you say genuine things, no one will take you seriously anymore. If you want people to believe your compliments, you must learn to say what you mean and mean what you say!

**He that saith unto the wicked, Thou art righteous; him shall the people curse...**

**Proverbs 24:24**

### **4. You can make people feel special by looking for good qualities in them**

Everyone has good and bad qualities. If you want to build a meaningful relationship with anyone you must focus on the good things in the person. As you go along, you may have the opportunity to address real problems. Always remember this: if God were to address all your bad qualities on a daily or hourly basis, you would probably give up! That is why God changes us slowly as the months and years roll by. Be like God and acknowledge peoples' strong points. There will be a time to address shortcomings.

**That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the ACKNOWLEDGING OF EVERY GOOD THING which is in you in Christ Jesus.**

## **Philemon 1:6**

This verse *does not* say that our faith becomes effective as we acknowledge our sins! Our sins are before us everyday. Most people don't need anyone to remind them of their failures. This verse tells us that our faith becomes effective as we acknowledge good things and not bad things.

### **5. You can make people feel special by giving general compliments – it makes them feel good**

Say things like this:

- ❑ *I'm always glad to see you.*
- ❑ *I always thank God for your life.*
- ❑ *You are a real blessing.*

General compliments make people happy. People do not know why they are happy when they are complimented! Happiness just wells up within them. But make sure that you do not exaggerate or flatter anyone. Be genuine and you will always be taken seriously.

### **6. You can make people feel special by complimenting them about specific things – it makes them repeat their good deeds.**

*For instance, you could  
compliment people specifically  
like this:*

- ❑ *I'm impressed with the way you come to church early.*

- ❑ *I like the way you pray fervently.*
- ❑ *You look very smart.*

When you compliment people about specific things, they are so happy that *they unconsciously decide to repeat that particular action.*

## **7. You can make people feel special by complimenting them in front of others**

When you say nice things about someone in front of other people, it adds more spice to the compliment. No one can buy a special compliment at the supermarket! When a pastor or church leader gives a compliment to a member, he is doing something that no one else can.

## **8. You can make people feel special by complimenting them at meetings**

When you compliment people in front of their colleagues, they feel rewarded for their hard work. The people we are trying hardest to impress are our peers! This is a fact of life. Many people are doing things just because their friends and colleagues are doing them. By complimenting somebody in front of his peers, you are putting a feather in his cap. Surely, this person will gravitate to you without even knowing why.



# ***CHAPTER FORTY-SEVEN***

## **HOW TO ENCOURAGE INTERACTION BE- TWEEN CHURCH MEM- BERS**

Interaction between church members is one of the most important keys to church growth. Not only must the pastor interact with the members, but the members must interact with each other.

### **6 Steps to Encouraging Interaction between Church Members**

- 1. Encourage the congregation to speak to one another in the service!**

Do not dismiss the church service without encouraging members to say hello to each other. I often jokingly tell the members to say to each other, “I want to come home with you today for lunch.” Sometimes I ask them to say to each other, “Are you married? Have you considered marrying me?” This makes everyone laugh but it loosens the atmosphere and encourages interaction.

## **2. Organize church camps and social events that make church members interact with each other**

Camps are one of the best forums for interaction. People are relaxed and get to know each other in an informal setting.

**And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house...**

**Acts 2:46**

## **3. Encourage church members to marry each other**

Let the church members know that the kind of person they want to marry can be found within the congregation. Once the church members begin to intermarry, you will have more stability in the church.

## **4. Encourage the church members to employ other church members**

**Neither was there any among them that lacked...**

**Acts 4:34**

The relationships within the church become deeper as the interaction goes deeper. Employers and employees sit together under the same pastor. Every large church has lots of members interrelating and interacting. It is this myriad of relationships

that helps to stabilize the congregation!

**5. Encourage your church members to support each other in times of celebration and mourning**

Let the church members know that it is their duty to participate in the events of others. You must realize that people will do what you tell them and they will believe what you say. This is a biblical instruction

**Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.**

**Romans 12:15**

**6. Encourage the church members to make friends and to invite each other to their homes**

**And ALL THAT BELIEVED WERE TOGETHER, and had all things common.**

**Acts 2:44**

Once people have friends in the congregation, they will be glued to the church. Leaving the church becomes a little more complicated. Leaving the church now means leaving all your friends. Interaction between church members is truly a key to stabilising the congregation and encouraging church growth.



## **CHAPTER FORTY-EIGHT**

# **P.V.T.I.**

I have shared with you four main areas of a pastor's ministry. Prayer, Visitation, Teaching and Interaction (P.V.T.I.). It is my prayer that you will meditate on these things and apply them in your ministry.

Remember the code P.V.T.I., and you will always know what to do in the ministry. I pray that you will not replace the gold in the temple with brass. Stay with real ministry and you will have your reward from God in heaven. Do not try to please men. Avoid a 'pseudo ministry'! It is God who called you, and it is he you must seek to please!

May the Lord give you the desires of your heart as you fulfil your ministry. I believe that you will experience good success in your ministry as you put in practise these four great keys for church growth: *Prayer, Visitation, Teaching and Interaction!*

# **Unbeatable Prosperity**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

<sup>1</sup>***“Genealogy of Ham, Japheth and Shem (pages 45-46)”***

used by permission of Dake’s Publishing

**Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-596-04-9

**Copyright © 2000 Parchment House**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

### **DEDICATION**

*I dedicate this book to the Millionaires Club  
of Lighthouse Chapel International—  
May you have Unbeatable Prosperity!*



# ***Contents***

Unbeatable Prosperity .....	5
Divine Provision .....	12
The Laws of Divine Provision .....	18
Seeking the Kingdom .....	29
If God Does Not Help You No One Can Help You! .....	37

For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to this address:

Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle Bu, Accra  
Ghana- West Africa

**Parchment House**

# *Chapter One*

## *Unbeatable Prosperity*

**U**nbeatable prosperity is the prosperity that does not depend on anything or anyone. It is prosperity that does not respect the environment or adverse situations. It is the blessing that does not mind whether the economy is up or down. It is the prosperity that does not care whether there is unemployment or not.

### *The Spirit of Crabology*

Most of the time, people are affected by the adverse conditions round about them. Most of us who live in Africa can feel the frustration of unstable governments, wars and endemic poverty. The climate is sometimes hostile to the blossoming of anything successful and prosperous. Anyone who rises up high is hated and numerous insidious attempts are made to equalize the person with the masses.

There is something I call the “*spirit of crabology*”. If you put crabs in a deep bucket, they will all try to come out of the bucket. As one of them begins to go up high, another one grabs unto the rising crab and pulls him down.

This process continues, until in the end, not a single crab is able to come out of the bucket. Finally all the crabs are ready to be boiled and none of them escapes alive.

This is the picture of certain communities. Without knowing it, they keep each other down. Whereas some communities publish the hundred richest people in the nation, others harass and intimidate the hundred richest people. Political and “invisible powers”, as well as all sorts of quasi-legitimate investigations are used to intimidate the successful people. They have to pay large sums of money to political parties otherwise all contracts will be cancelled.

Many of the “big time” businessmen in Ghana secretly support both the ruling *and* the opposition political parties. They want both sides to think they are with them. I have heard several business people tell me that they had identity cards, tee shirts and caps of all major political parties. The point I’m making is simple; there are environments which are hostile to progress and prosperity. The rich fear for their wealth. That is why few foreigners invest in the country, in spite of the numerous invitations.

**In such an environment, you need unbeatable prosperity; prosperity that is not destroyed by the circumstances. A blessing that cannot be erased by man, woman or beast.**

Isaac experienced unbeatable prosperity. Genesis chapter twenty-six describes the attempt of eternal circumstances to extirpate God’s blessings on his life. Firstly, there was a famine in the land. A famine of those days is equivalent to a bad economy of today.

The economic environment was adverse to his prosperity. He needed unbeatable prosperity that comes from God.

### Can You Blame Them?

There are many people who want to travel out of Ghana in order to “make it”. They spend thousands of dollars trying to get a visa. If an income of less than three hundred dollars a month puts us beneath the poverty line, then most Ghanaians are economically categorized as poor. You can understand why they would want to travel elsewhere.

**A cleaner in Canada is paid more than a doctor in Ghana.** As I write this book, a medical doctor in Ghana is paid about one hundred and fifty dollars a month. This situation is equivalent to the famine that Isaac experienced.

In Isaac’s day, everyone was trying to get a visa to travel to Egypt. But the Lord appeared to Isaac and told him not to leave.

**THERE WAS A FAMINE in the land... the Lord appeared unto him, and said... GO NOT DOWN INTO EGYPT; dwell in the land which I shall tell thee of... AND I WILL MAKE THY SEED TO MULTIPLY... and will give unto thy seed all these countries...**

**Genesis 26:1-4**

The Lord blessed Isaac when he stayed in the land of famine. In spite of the economic situation, Isaac was able to prosper. He had hundred percent profit during that particular period of time. Read it for yourself and believe that unbeatable prosperity is real!

**Then Isaac sowed in that land and received in the same year an hundredfold; and the Lord blessed him. And the man waxed great, and went forward, and grew until he became very great...**

**Genesis 26:12,13**

God can make you very great! I see God taking you forward in spite of your circumstances! No famine can keep you down anymore! Famine or no famine, you are going to make it! No matter who is in government, you are going to make it! There may be a global economic crisis, but God will give you unbeatable prosperity!

### **Isaac Built a Well**

This was not the end of Isaac's challenges. He dug wells and people fought with him over the wells that he had dug.

**And Isaac's servants digged in the valley, and found there a well of springing water. And the herdmen of Gerar did strive with Isaac's herdmen, saying, The water is ours...**

**Genesis 26:19,20**

Isaac had begun to have political problems with the community. The people in the community wanted to break down the walls of the well he had built. *Is it not interesting that after a person works hard to build something, someone else claims the rewards?* Some people always want to reap what they have not sown!

**... thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed...**

**Matthew 25:24**

### **We Also Built a Well**

Not long ago, we experienced a similar thing in our church. We built a beautiful cathedral and acquired a piece of land beside the church. We signed an agreement with the government. After a few years, a group of people arose claiming the land was theirs. After we had developed the property and spent thousands of dollars, people were now striving with us for our well.

But Isaac moved on and built another well. Lighthouse Chapel International began in a classroom. We then moved to the corridor of a school building. In spite of our circumstances, we have been blessed like Isaac. We had to leave these places and move into a cafeteria in a hospital. After two years, we were driven out of the canteen by the authorities in the hospital. We then moved to a deserted and derelict cinema hall situated next to a monstrous rubbish dump and an exploding public toilet.

Our prosperity as a church has not depended on the circumstances surrounding us. Our church is planted deep in the heart of a depressed part of the city. In spite of this, we have prospered and become successful. People come to our church from all over the city.

**And the man waxed great, and went forward, and grew until he became very great.**

### **Genesis 26:13**

Isaac's prosperity did not depend on that particular well. Recently, we were attacked by some traditionalists who claimed we were violating their customs by playing drums in our church on Sunday morning. Many church members were seriously injured and numerous cars were damaged.

Three days before that, at about three O'clock in the morning, an "invisible" governmental power broke down the walls surrounding our church building. We had come under political and governmental attack of the highest order. Soon after the attack, the IRS (internal revenue service) descended on us to conduct a major tax investigation on our affairs.



Who was behind all this intimidation and attacks? **Who was trying to destroy what cannot be destroyed? Who can fight against God and win?**

All the government officials I interacted with denied that they gave orders for the illegal breaking down of our walls. I smiled at each lying politician as I watched them trying to escape the blame that is theirs. **Liars will not go to heaven!** It is time for politicians to know that liars will not be welcome in heaven.

**Blessed are they that do his commandments that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.**

### **Revelations 22:14,15**

God's blessings are unbeatable. Isaac's well was taken from him on two different occasions. He lawfully built a well, but lazy and ungrateful people contended with him over it. **Laziness and ingratitude are vices that cause a gloomy cloud of despondency and retrogression to settle. They lead to recurring curses of poverty.**

Isaac continued building, in spite of having been cheated. God's prosperity for your life will happen despite what people do and say. One minister told me, "I thought your church was 'finished' after the attack." When he paid us a visit, he was surprised that our church was larger and stronger than ever! I am happy to tell you that our church has moved

from strength to strength after our attacks. I cannot begin to tell you about the divine advancement and progress we have made after our multiple and diverse persecutions.

You too can experience unbeatable prosperity! No matter your background, family or education, God can lift you up. God is a specialist at taking you out of the dust and placing you among princes. No circumstance is too difficult for the Lord.

**He raiseth up the poor out of the dust, and lifteth the needy out of the dung hill; That he may set him with princes...**

**Psalm 113:7,8**

I see God setting you among princes! I see Him lifting you out of the dust of poverty! You are a winner because the God of unbeatable prosperity is your Lord! In the following chapters I want to share with you how you can achieve unbeatable prosperity through the secret of divine provision.

## *Chapter Two*

### *Divine Provision*

**M**any years ago I met a young lady called Adelaide Baiden. I didn't know at the time that she was to become my wife. I remember once walking through the Spanish Department and seeing her sitting on the stairs waiting for someone. She said, "Hello." I turned, but I couldn't remember her name. Later, I got to know her name.

Somehow, she became a member of our fellowship and I got to know her as a member. Then I got to know her as a friend. Later as a close friend. Eventually, one day she became my wife. That is how God relates with us. **As we get to know Him, He reveals more and more of Himself to us.**

When you get born-again, you may know the Lord as someone who saves you from your sins. Then you may know Him as someone who will take you to heaven. As I have grown in the Lord, I have gotten to know Him as someone who gives us the victory. I also know Him as someone who heals the sick and as someone who provides for my needs.

In Genesis chapter one, God reveals Himself as Elohim, which means Creator. The word translated into God in Genesis chapter one is the word Elohim. At another point, God reveals Himself as Jehovah, which means “I am that I am”; the one who makes promises and covenants and keeps them.

**God progressively revealed Himself to mankind.** He showed Himself to Abraham as El’Shaddai, which means, “The Almighty God”. He was trying to show another aspect of Himself to humanity. El’Shaddai – the one who is almighty and able to do all things. God was showing Abraham that although he was ninety years old, He could still make him have a child.

When Abraham went to war with the five kings, God revealed Himself as Adonai, which means “Master and Owner”. He was the Master of the battle! When the Lord revealed Himself to Moses in the burning bush, he showed Himself as Jehovah, the one who keeps promises. Further on, God decided to reveal Himself a little more as Jehovah Rophe; “The Lord that heals”.

You may have been a Christian or a pastor for a long time but you can grow in your relationship until you know God as Jehovah Rophe, The Healer. You may have walked with God for years without knowing this aspect of Him. But that is how a relationship is; it develops over time. You get to know more about a person as you continue the relationship.

When the children of Israel met with an enemy called Amalek, they fought and won a hard battle. The Lord then explained to Moses that there was another dimension to

His nature. God was saying, “I am also Jehovah Nissi,” the God that gives you victory. Later on, God revealed Himself even further as Jehovah M’kaddesh, which means, “The God who also sanctifies”.

You can see that at each stage, God is showing new dimensions of Himself. Similarly, there are many aspects of Christianity that we have to experience. In this book, I want you to encounter an important dimension of the Lord. **I want you to find out and experience God as your provider.**

I am happy that Christ has set you free from your bondage. I am glad that your sins are washed away. But come in a little deeper and get to know another dimension of the God you serve. Maybe you have experienced God as an acquaintance or as a close friend. Now experience Him as a divine provider!

This world is made up of over Six Billion people, all trying to provide for themselves. In every large city of the world, you will see the young and the old sweating in order to eat a little bread. It is only natural for us to rise up and provide for ourselves.

Today, I want you to know that God can also provide for you. This is called *Divine Provision*. **It is only through divine provision that you will experience unbeatable prosperity.** God can provide food for you. God can provide cars for you. God can provide houses for you. God can supply all your needs.

I am happy that you are working. It is important that you work hard! However, there are things that your hard

work cannot provide. Many people work hard, and yet cannot meet their needs. That is why you need God's *divine provision*.

## Jacob's Ladder

Jacob was a hustler passing through town. He was traveling from place to place trying to make it in business. He had been able to get a visa and was traveling abroad. Along the journey, he rested under a tree and fell asleep.

Whilst asleep, he had a dream in which the Lord appeared to him.

**And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.**

**And, behold, the Lord stood above it, and said, I am the Lord God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed;**

**And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.**

**And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.**

**And Jacob awaked out of his sleep, and he said, Surely the Lord is in this place; and I knew it not.**

**And he was afraid, and said, How dreadful is this place! this is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven.**

**And Jacob rose up early in the morning, and took the stone that he had put for his pillows, and set it up for a pillar, and poured oil upon the top of it.**

**And he called the name of that place Bethel: but the name of that city was called Luz at the first.**

**Genesis 28:12-19**

When he woke up, he made a vow to God and asked for divine provision. Jacob asked God for three important miracles.

The first thing he asked for was the miracle of *divine presence*.

**...If God will be with me...**

**Genesis 28:20**

Then he asked for the miracle of *divine protection*.

**...and will keep me in this way that I go...**

**Genesis 28:20**

Finally, he asked for the miracle of *divine provision*.

**...and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to**

**put on...**

## **Genesis 28:20**

Jacob had arrived at a turning point in his life. *He had come to the place where he was going to include God in all that he did.* In fact, he was going to expect God to actually provide these important things for him. Jacob wanted God's involvement so much that he virtually

promised to pay God a tenth of all his earnings, if the Lord agreed to help him.

Dear friend, let me tell you something. God wants to provide for you. God wants to bless you. God wants to bless you the way He blessed Jacob. He wants to provide you with bread to eat and raiment to put on. He wants to protect you and to reveal Himself to you as someone who can supply all your needs.

In the third world, many educated people live below the poverty line. No matter how much they work, they can never dream of buying a car. This is where God comes in. Let there be a distinction in your mind between divine provision and human provision. Human provision is when you use your efforts and human principles to succeed. Human provision is by your own hard work.

**I believe in hard work and education, but I believe just as much in God's divine provision.** God is a God of miracles. We serve a miracle-working God.



If God is going to become your provider, then you must invoke divine and biblical principles that will make the Lord provide for you. God must become involved in your life so that He can become your provider.

In the next few chapters, I will be sharing with you principles that will cause our Heavenly Father to provide for you. You will experience unbeatable prosperity when your heavenly Father provides for you!

## *Chapter Three*

### *The Laws of Divine Provision*

**...and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee.**

**Genesis 28:22**

**T**he tithe is the tenth of all your increase. It is a common fact that most Christians do not pay tithes. I am not writing this book because you are in my church. You are probably not a member of my church. I am writing what I am writing because you need to know the truth. I am writing for your own benefit. God is not in need of anything. He has said that the silver, gold and the cattle on a thousand hills are His. If He were in need of something, He would not ask you.

**The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the LORD of hosts.**

**Haggai 2:8**

Dear friend, we are mere human beings living a short life on this earth. No matter how much we acquire, we must leave it all behind and move on. Money must not be a god to us. What is gold? Gold is dirt. It is dug out of

the ground! It is nothing! Why should it become a god to you? Let it serve you, do not serve it!

I am sorry to say that most Christians are controlled by their money. Only a small percentage of Christians pay their tithes. One thing that every Christian must realize is that the tithe is the Lord's money. In our church we call it the First and Best Fruits.

**And all the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is the Lord's: it is holy unto the Lord**

### **Leviticus 27:30**

What does this mean? It means that ten percent of all you earn is not yours, it is actually the Lord's money. When you put that money in the offering bowl, you have done nothing special or unusual. All you have done is to give back to God what is His!

Suppose someone asked you to keep a hundred dollars for him. When he asks for it again, would you expect him to kneel down and thank you profusely for returning his hundred dollars? Would you expect him to shower praises on you

for your kindness to him? The answer is no! You have done nothing for him. You have just returned his own money to him!

When you understand that the tithe is the Lord's money, it is easier for you to release it to the Lord. In the book of Malachi, the Bible teaches us that when you pay your tithes, the windows of heaven are opened over your life. Whatever these windows are, there must be some great benefit for us when they are opened. Blessings are released into our lives.

**Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse... and prove me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.**

### **Malachi 3:10**

When you pay your tithes you are showing God respect and are giving Him honor. **One way God receives honor from you is through your tithes.** When you do not pay your tithes, you are depriving God of His respect.

**That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.**

## **Hebrews 6:12**

Jacob tithed. That is what invoked divine provision over his life. Be ye followers of people who experience God's blessing and do what they did. You will be blessed as you pay your first and best fruits.

**Honour the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase.**

## **Proverbs 3:9**

I know that some people think that paying tithes is a command of the law that must not be obeyed today. Dear friend, we are not talking about the law, we are talking about principles. The principle is that of honoring God with the first fruits of all your increase.

The next law of divine provision is the law of the offering.

# **THE LAW OF THE OFFERING**

**Give, and it SHALL be given...**

## **Luke 6:38**

Christians must learn to be generous by giving offerings to the Lord. Once again, money must not be more important to us than it really is. The Bible says that there are two types of people in the world.

One group gives a lot, and the other group tends to keep rather than to give.

**There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty.**

### **Proverbs 11:24**

God's book, the Bible, tells us that the givers become richer and the keepers become poorer. This is a divine principle. The God who created the universe has set in place the law of giving and receiving. Our little minds cannot accept that this is real. *The more you give, the richer you become – it's just a matter of time!*

After giving your tithe (which is not really giving), you must now give an offering to the Lord. It is the giving of an offering to the Lord that will invoke the laws of giving and receiving on your behalf.

**Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.**

### **Galatians 6:7**

In some countries, especially in developing ones, the political and economic environment is contrary to the progress of its own citizens. If you were to go to a country like Switzerland, you would hardly ever see a foreigner rise up and own the major businesses of the nation. However in some African nations, foreigners own all the supermarkets

and major shopping centers. The government has created a system where it is more profitable and easier to import the used clothing of White people than to set up a garment factory!

Our church has bought at least two former garment factories for use as church buildings. The factory owners were forced out of business by the economic decisions of the day. In some countries, whenever its own citizens rise up in great success and prosperity, the powers that be rally to bring them down. There are nations which kill their heroes. In such nations, it is a crime to prosper. It is a crime to be successful. It is a crime to be wealthy. It is a crime to own anything. Your business may be closed down, and your property may be seized and destroyed, just because you are blessed and somebody is not happy about it!

I have sat with businessmen who are so frustrated with the political and economic realities of their nation. One man said to me, "I feel so limited and frustrated by the system. I know I could make it real big but there is so much intimidation in the country." People are afraid to be rich and wealthy even though they could be. Many are forced to take their money away from the jealous eyes of powerful politicians. This is a curse.

In the book of Deuteronomy, the Bible teaches that strangers (foreigners) would rise amongst them and become very great. Meanwhile, the citizens of the land would wither away.

**The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low.**

### **Deuteronomy 28:43**

The point I am making is this. Even if you live in a difficult-to-prosper environment, God, by supernatural means, can provide for you! That is what divine provision is all about. Jacob knew that God could lift him up and establish him in this life. That is why he made an agreement with God for divine provision.

### **Offerings Must be Accepted at Two Different Levels**

Whenever you give an offering in church, it must be received at two levels. First, your church receives it. Secondly, God receives it. It is important that your offering is received at both levels. The church must receive your offering and God must also receive your offering.

Remember that the church does not promise to multiply the offering back to you. The church has no such power. However, Jesus made that promise of multiplication to us. The Word of God teaches that as you cast your bread on the water, it will come back after many days.



**Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.**

**Ecclesiastes 11:1**

There are some occasions where the church will not receive your money. I want to cite two examples from the Bible. First, blood money is not accepted in the house of the Lord.

**And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.**

**Matthew 27:6**

Notice that when Judas attempted to return the thirty pieces of silver to the treasury of the church it was rejected. Why was it rejected? Because it was blood money! Modern day drug money is actually blood money. It is money that is earned by the destruction and killing of many lives through cocaine and related substances. Such money is not welcome in the church.

Another scripture tells us that money from prostitution is not accepted in the church.

**Thou shalt not bring the hire of a whore, or the price of a dog, into the house of the Lord thy God for any vow: for even both these are abomination unto the Lord thy God.**

**Deuteronomy 23:18**

The fact that the church has received the offering does not mean God has received the offering. As I said, the offering must be received at two different levels. If your offering is not received by the Lord, then you have wasted

your money. The Word of God tells us what sort of offering is acceptable to the Lord.

### Four Conditions for an Acceptable Offering

The first condition for having your offering accepted by God is that, *it must not come from a wicked or sinful person*. God does not receive offerings from such people. The church may receive it because they don't know who you are or what you do. However, God does see and will not accept such an offering.

**Though ye offer me burnt offerings and your meat offerings, I will not accept them... But let judgment run down... and righteousness...**

**Amos 5:22,24**

**...I have no pleasure in you, saith the Lord of hosts, neither will I accept an offering at your hand.**

**Malachi 1:10**

The second condition is that, *you must have a willing mind*.

**For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted...**

**2 Corinthians 8:12**

If you give grudgingly, you will not receive your blessing. God loves a cheerful giver. Don't bother to give if you don't really want to.

### **He Wanted to 'Save Face'**

A businessman told me how he was invited to be the Chairman of a fundraising program in a church. He narrated how events transpired until he was "put on the spot" during the fundraising. He said, "I had to make a huge donation to 'save face'." This man unwillingly gave away a large amount of money to the church. He continued, "After the fundraising program, I realized I didn't have enough money to pay the pledge," he added, "I had to sell my car to cover the donation." Shortly after settling the debt, he left the church and joined another ministry. He unwillingly gave away a huge amount of money to the church.

In such a case, who loses? The answer is everybody! The church lost a prominent member. The businessman lost his car and his blessing because he gave it up unwillingly. Always remember this: it is only accepted if it is given from a willing mind.

**Pastors must not intimidate and manipulate their congregations to give what they don't want to give.** Preachers can speak in a way that frightens people to give their belongings away. There are times when I try to stop people from giving certain gifts to the Lord. I do this to make sure they know what they are doing. I want them to be free and willing in their giving so that they will receive a full reward.

The third important condition is this: *the offering will be accepted according to what you have.*

**...it is accepted ACCORDING TO THAT A MAN HATH...**

## **2 Corinthians 8:12**

What does this mean? Everyone is supposed to give in proportion to what he has. When a person gives out of proportion to what he has, it may be unacceptable to the Lord. For instance, if a student gives ten dollars to the Lord for a project, that offering may be acceptable to God in proportion to the student's meagre resources. But when the millionaire church member's contribution is also ten dollars, it is completely out of proportion to what he has. In proportion to what he has, the millionaire has actually not given anything. Always remember to give according to what you have. What has God given you? How much has God put into your hands? Give according to what God has blessed you with.

The fourth important condition for an acceptable offering is this: *you must not give offerings having in mind things you do not have.*

**...it is accepted... not according to that he hath not.**

## **2 Corinthians 8:12**

If you do not have a car, and you think of it as you give, you will not give happily. If you think about the things you intend to buy, you will not be happy to give. In fact, you will start penalizing God for not having certain things. *Anybody who gives an offering whilst thinking of all the things he doesn't have, is not going to be giving an acceptable offering.*

You need to forget about all the things you lack when it's time to build the Lord's kingdom. Forget about your own projects and give freely to the Lord.

I once had to give substantially towards a church building project. I had my own building project to complete. That offering could have completed my project, but I still gave it. If I had thought of my own project, I would not have given to the Lord. Remember this, offerings become acceptable when they are given with a free mind, and without thinking of all the things you do not have.

May the Lord give you the spirit of revelation to grasp these powerful truths. Once you have this revelation, your offerings will always be accepted by God. You will be propelled into divine provision and unbeatable prosperity!

# *Chapter Four*

## *Seeking the Kingdom*

**A**ll throughout life, we try to provide for ourselves. The curse upon this planet is as real today as it has ever been. On some parts of the earth, there seem to be even more frustrations. A student goes to the university in an attempt to improve himself and provide for his future. Suddenly, a sergeant overthrows the government and closes down the university. You are forced to flee. Now, you are no longer able to continue in your pursuit of human provision.

Even in the developed world, there are many things that frustrate our ambitions to provide for ourselves. We all need divine provision. We need God. **We cannot put the Lord Jesus on a side plate, He must be the main course!** God cannot be a third party. He must be central to our lives and He must be a part of both our financial and social lives.

If you want God to divinely provide for you, then you must accept that there are divine laws and principles in place. These divine laws must be set to work on your behalf otherwise God will not get involved in providing for you.

In this chapter, we want to share about building the kingdom of God. **Matthew 6:33 says, But seek ye first the kingdom of God and all things will be added unto you.** Humanly speaking, if you seek the financial kingdom, finances may be added to you. But that is not God's wisdom. If you want to experience divine provision, you must seek the kingdom of God first and things will be supernaturally added to your life. That is divine provision!

Very few people actually invest in the kingdom of God. They build their own lives and give God the pennies and the change. Listen to me dear friend! When you build God's kingdom, it causes you to have His hand on your little kingdom.

**There are two main ways we can contribute to building God's kingdom.** You can contribute spiritually. Secondly, you can actually physically build the kingdom. Spiritually building the kingdom of God involves praying, fasting, preaching, counseling and witnessing. Physically building the kingdom of God involves using your money to construct chapels and other buildings for the glory of God.

If you study this passage in the book of Haggai, you will notice that the Lord was concerned about the physical construction of His house. It is true that first of all, the church is a spiritual thing. But without the buildings, we have no where to assemble and to worship.

**Go up to the mountain, and bring wood, and build the house; and I will take pleasure in it, and I will be glorified, saith the Lord.**

## **Haggai 1:8**

I know of many churches that are unable to meet more than once during the week because they do not have a suitable meeting place. They do not have anywhere to worship. By the grace of God, we have our own building. On Sundays, we have five main services and several other services. After the services, we have Bible schools during the afternoons. On Tuesdays, we have a powerful teaching service. On Wednesdays, we have Bible schools. On Thursdays we have fellowship meetings. On Fridays, we have all-night meetings. On Saturdays, there are weddings and rehearsals. On Mondays, we rest, but even then, there are always some meetings going on in the church.

If we did not have a building, many of these meetings could not happen. Every church must believe God for its own building. God wants churches to have their own beautiful buildings. Buildings make you substantial. That is why God blesses people who help to build His church.

Do you want God's eyes to be on you? Then build his kingdom. When I was a medical student, I built God's church spiritually. That is why God's grace helped me through the school. Many times when I could have gone down, God lifted me up! Once, I won a prize worth a lot of money. I was surprised that I could win such a prize! I thought, "What have I done to deserve this?" It was just the grace of God blessing me for building His kingdom.



## **THE LAW OF FINANCING EVANGELISM, MISSIONS AND MINISTERS**

One of the favorite verses of Charismatic Christians is,

**... My God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.**

### **Philippians 4:19**

However, if you take the time to read the verses before this popular scripture, you will find out that Paul had received immense support from the Philippian Christians. He was writing back and ministering a blessing of God to those who had supported him in the ministry. You will discover that that particular blessing was directed at the financiers of his missionary work.

**Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.**

### **Philippians 4:15**

Do we not have thousands of Christians whose needs have not been met? Certainly! I see them everyday! But God can and will supply our needs if we line up with His Word. God has anointed certain men to do His work. Jesus said, whoever receives you is actually receiving me.

**He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.**

**Matthew 10:40**

The Word of God abounds with examples of divine provision for those who finance God's servants.

### **It's Just a Car**

Some years ago, I was in the home of a certain Christian family. I sat quietly and listened to them discuss the affairs of their priest. You see, there was a controversy in their church over a car that had been bought by the church. Some members of the church felt that the pastor should just have the use of the car. Others felt that the car should belong to the pastor.

As I listened to them, I sensed that some of the people were subtly against the well-being of their pastor. To them the important thing was the welfare of the institution. A subtle but real mindset had developed. It made the role of the pastor of secondary importance. What was important to them was the institution.

These individuals were making a big mistake. The Bible says strike the shepherd and the sheep will scatter. The Bible doesn't say strike the building and the sheep will scatter. The Bible doesn't say strike the institution and the sheep will not attend. Our church has been attacked with stones, sticks and even bombs. But it is still very full every Sunday morning.

As you read through the Bible, you will discover how God deals with individuals. He does not deal with groups or institutions. He is dealing with individual men and women. **God is working with certain men in every nation. When you look after such men, you provoke divine provision on your life.** When you care for such people, you are caring for God's precious jewels.

### The Shunammite Woman Ministered to Elisha

Do you remember the testimony of the Shunammite woman?

**And it fell on a day, that Elisha passed to Shunem, where was a great woman; and she constrained him to eat bread. And so it was, that as oft as he passed by, he turned in thither to eat bread.**

#### 2 Kings 4:8

This was the woman who asked Elisha to come and stay in her house. She provided for him a resting place. She gave him food and shelter. This provoked a divine response. One day Elisha said to her.

**...Behold, thou hast been careful for us with all this care; what is to be done for thee?**

#### 2 Kings 4:13

The man of God was provoked to minister a miracle of childbirth to her. It was not Elisha who gave her the child, it was God.

**And he said, About this season, according to the time of life, thou shalt embrace a son...**

**2 Kings 4:16**

## **The Widow Fed Elijah**

Look at the testimony of Elijah. He met with a widow who was about to die from a famine. Elijah wanted to minister a miracle of supernatural supply of food to her. So he told her,

**... Fear not; go and do as thou hast said: but make me thereof a little cake first, and bring it unto me, and after make for thee and for thy son.**

**1 Kings 17:13**

Before the blessing could come, she had to invoke the laws of divine provision by ministering to the man of God. **Anytime you minister personally to a man of God, you invoke the laws of divine provision.** This woman would have died if she hadn't done what she did. God was merciful

to her and divinely supplied what she needed. I see God supplying all your needs as you minister to the man of God in your life!

## Ministration Opens the Door to Blessing

Do you remember the testimony of Isaac? When Isaac was dying, he called his children and said, “I want to bless you.” Isaac said to his firstborn son Esau, “Make me the food I love and bring it to me. When I eat and am blessed, my soul will bless you before I die.”

**And make me savoury meat, such as I love, and bring it to me, that I may eat; that my soul may bless thee before I die.**

### Genesis 27:4

What was happening here? Why couldn't Isaac just bless his son and die? Isaac knew that if his son ministered to him it would provoke the true blessing from a father to a son. Dear Christian friend, this principle is still true today. The Bible says that a gift maketh room for a man.

**Any gift you give to a man of God provokes the anointing.** I try never to miss an opportunity to bless a man of God.

Under the ministry of Jesus, you will remember the woman with the alabaster box. She gave an expensive gift to Christ. Some people even criticized her for doing that. But what did Jesus say?

**... Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven...**

**Luke 7:44-47**

This woman received her blessing, not because she put some money in the offering, but because she ministered to the man of God himself. I encourage you to bless your pastor. Galatians 6:6 teaches us to give to them who have taught us. It is our duty to minister back to them in carnal things. Don't be over-spiritual. Don't try to be wiser than God. Judas complained when the gift was given to Christ. He said, "This money should have been put in the offering or given to the poor."

*Giving directly to the man of God is a principal key to divine provision in your life.*

## *Chapter Five*

### *If God Does Not Help You, No One Can Help You!*

**T**here are many curses operating in the world today. There are global and sectional curses at work. There are curses of poverty everywhere, and if God does not help us, no one will. In this chapter, I want to show you how much we need God's help in our lives.

**As the king of Israel was passing by upon the wall, there cried a woman unto him, saying, help, my lord, O king. And he said, If the Lord do not help thee, whence shall I help thee? out of the barnfloor, or out of the winepress? And the king said unto her, What aileth thee? And she answered, This woman said unto me, Give thy son that we may eat him today and we will eat my son tomorrow. So we boiled my son and did eat him: and I said unto her the next day, Give thy son, that we may eat him: and she hath hid her son.**

## 2 Kings 6:26-29

This account is one of the saddest stories in the Bible. It is about a woman who entered into a contract with her neighbor. She agreed to kill and boil her son for supper. The agreement stated that they would eat her neighbor's son after they had eaten up her's. After she had chopped up her son and made soup out of him, her neighbor was probably overwhelmed with the horror of having to kill her son. She had seen how her friend's son had screamed and begged as he was being killed. She remembered how difficult it was to eat the child though they were all starving.

The woman who had sacrificed her son was desperate. Not only was she hungry, but she felt cheated! She had a double loss. At least, if her son was alive, they could have encouraged each other. Now he was down in her stomach!

This woman saw the king walking on the wall and she shouted to him for help. The king gave an answer that every Christian should remember. **He said, "If God does not help you, then how can I help you?"**

**And he said, If the Lord do not help thee, whence shall I help thee?...**

## 2 Kings 6:27

The king did not know the kind of problem this woman had. He did not even know the type of help the woman needed. He just knew this eternal principle. The principle that if God does not help, then all our efforts are in vain.



What did Jesus say? He said, “Without me, you can do nothing.”

**...for without me ye can do nothing.**

**John 15:5**

In Ghana, we have tried so many forms of government. Initially, the British colonized us. At a point, we felt that the presence of the Europeans was keeping us from going forward as a nation. We clamored for independence and eventually got it in 1957. Then we had Kwame Nkrumah, our first president, who led us for a while. After some time, we felt a change was necessary.

In 1966, there was a coup d'état and some soldiers came into power. After the soldiers had been around for a while, we went back to democracy. After we practiced democracy for a while, some soldiers took over once again. We had moved from colonization to independence to democracy to military rule and back to democracy.

After democracy, we decided to try house cleaning. We did some military house cleaning for a few months and then handed back to a democratic government. The democratic government was allowed to work for just two years. Then we had a revolution. **It seemed that neither colonization, independence, democracy, military rule or even house cleaning was helping the nation.** Now we had embarked upon a revolution. After the revolution went on for a while, we decided to come back to democracy.

It is a marvel how we human beings try to help ourselves, sometimes without the help of God. Our first president said, “Seek ye first the political kingdom and all other things shall

be added.” When the Word of God teaches us to seek the help of God first, we spoke of things contrary to God’s laws. There must be a difference between seeking the kingdom of God and seeking the political kingdom. No wonder after forty years of independence, the nation of

Ghana is still not really free. You see, independence is not the same as freedom.

We are still enslaved to European nations through the loans they give us. We are actually working to pay back what we owe them. We queue at foreign embassies for visas in order to go abroad to work so we can prosper.

Is it not ironical that during the slave trade, our ancestors were shipped unwillingly to Europe and America, but now, people will drop everything for the opportunity to travel to these same destinations! Alas, our independence has not brought us the freedom and prosperity we fought for.

We owe so much, yet we continue to borrow more! Just as the Bible says, the borrower is a servant to the lender.

**The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.**

**Proverbs 22:7**

White people were criticized for making inhumane castles to keep Black prisoners. The ironic thing is that although we are approaching the twenty first century, we the Black people are still using some of these castles to imprison our

own brothers. Are we really free? It is sad to hear about African Heads of State feeding their own Black brothers to lions. We are back in the days of Daniel and the lion's den!

**The point I'm trying to make is simple. If God does not help us, colonization, independence, democracy, military rule, house cleaning, revolution, or democracy cannot help us!!** It is true that we must make efforts to help ourselves. I believe in education.

I believe in hard work. I am a very practical person and work for several hours every day. But none of these things can rule out the God factor. If God does not help you, then no one can help you.

### Is there a Curse in the Earth?

Inasmuch as human beings are trying to develop and help themselves, you will realize that frustrations abound everywhere. Even the superpower nations have many problems they cannot solve. Entire neighborhoods are riddled with drug addicts, prostitution and murderous teenagers. I once heard of the citizens of peaceful Switzerland wanting to arm themselves and shoot at drug pushers in their area, in order to drive them away from their children.

Many prevailing conditions have spiritual roots, and that is why they must be dealt with spiritually. That is why you need God to break through in this life! Never ending problems are often rooted in a curse. The whole world is cursed to struggle and sweat in order to survive. It is

something that will not just go away. **Christians must understand that there are two major curses at work in the earth.**

*There is what I call a global curse. In addition to that, there is also a sectional curse.* These two curses came about at the origin of the human race. The existence of these curses makes it necessary for us to apply wisdom and spiritual strength to have victory and unbeatable prosperity in this life.

### The Adamic Curse

Adam was cursed to sweat and struggle in order to survive. The earth was cursed to bring forth painful thorns and thistles for Adam's children. This curse affects all people and that is why God said to Eve, "What is this that thou hast done?"

**...And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou has done?**

### Genesis 3:13a

This curse has sentenced us all to years of very hard work in order to survive. No part of the human race is exempt from this curse. That explains why we all have to toil and labour for most of our lives. However, there is another curse originating from Noah. Please remember that just as Adam was once the only man alive on earth, Noah and his family were also the only group alive on the earth at a point in time. Whatever happened to Adam and Noah are significant to us today.

## The Noahic Curse

Noah had 3 sons, from whom all the different groups of people on earth originated. Now, Noah's curse was not against all his children. It seemed to affect a particular group. **This sectional curse did not affect the whole human race.** Noah actually blessed his other two sons. He said to Japheth,

**God shall enlarge Japheth...**

**Genesis 9:27**

He also blessed Shem and said,

**...Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.**

**Genesis 9:26**

But he cursed Ham's son, Canaan, and said;

**...A servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren.**

**Genesis 9:25**

Noah and his three sons were the only people alive on the earth, at a certain point in history. One day Noah was drunk and uncovered himself. One of his sons, Ham, exposed his father whereas the two others covered him. When Noah awoke, he pronounced a curse for the dishonor that had been done him during his drunken state.

This entire human race descends from Noah's sons: Shem, Ham and Japheth. It seems as though sections of the human race were given a curse of extra frustration through the

pronouncement of Father Noah. The curse was simple and it was to Ham's son Canaan. He was told, "You will be a servant to the others."

I am not interested in controversial discussions. *All I am saying is that there was an Adamic curse which was global and there was also a Noahic curse which was sectional.* These things are in the Bible. No part of the human race is inferior to another. Some of the differences we see in the world are due to the fact that curses are operational in certain regions. These differences are *not* because one group of people is inferior to another.

We must know what God has called us to be. We must understand the spiritual and historical curses and blessings that are prevailing in certain places. If God puts you in a place that is laboring under a never-ending cycle of frustration, you must understand your calling and the type of problems you will have to deal with.

**...A servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren.**

**Genesis 9:25**

Although there are exceptions to everything, a curse is a generalized word of frustration spoken against a group of people. This curse of Noah (Genesis 9:25) was a proclamation against the ability to lead and develop in a section of the human race. The absence of good leadership is obvious in many sections of the world. A servant is not a leader. A servant of servants is someone who is far from being a leader!

The failure to successfully lead nations into prosperity and development is a reality we have to deal with everyday. Obviously, the lack of leadership has made many nations poorer than they should be. The masses of people in such nations flounder in poverty, under-development, suffering, senseless wars and corruption.

All these are signs of a lack of good leadership. People who are aware of this curse must teach on leadership and train themselves and others to become good leaders. This will help greatly to alleviate or ameliorate the effects of this curse. The absence of good leaders is one of the greatest curses that can ever befall any group of people. Notice what the scriptures say will happen to Israel for their disobedience— God said He would deprive them of all kinds of leaders.

**For, behold, the Lord, the Lord of hosts, doth take away from Jerusalem... The mighty man, and the man of war, the judge, and the prophet, and the prudent, and the ancient, The captain of fifty, and the honourable man, and the counsellor, and the cunning artificer, and the eloquent orator. And I will give children to be their princes and babes shall rule over them...**

**Isaiah 3:1-7**

A nation which murders or eliminates leaders, judges, kings, presidents, businessmen, wealthy people and spiritual leaders is truly in an unfortunate state.

Let us briefly look at the different groups of people living on earth today, and from which of the sons of Noah they originated.

## Genealogy of Ham<sup>1</sup>

Ham, the one who angered his father, had four sons: Cush, Mizraim, Phut, and Canaan. It is interesting to note who the descendants of Ham were.

*Cush*, the first son, was progenitor of various Ethiopian tribes that settled south of Egypt and also overran Arabia, Babylonia and India. *Mizraim*, the second son of Ham was the progenitor of various Egyptian tribes. *Mizraim* means double. Tribes of the double Egypt (upper and lower Egypt) came from him. *Phut*, the third son, was the progenitor of the Libyans and other tribes in Africa. Canaan, the one who was cursed, was the progenitor of peoples mainly in Palestine, Arabia, Tyre, Sidon and other parts of the land promised to Abraham.

<sup>1</sup> *Used by permission of Dake's Publishing*

## Genealogy of Japheth

Notice also the descendants of Japheth, the one who was promised enlargement.

Japheth had seven sons: Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech and Tiras. The first son Gomer was the ancient progenitor of the ancient Galatians and Phrygians from which came the natives of northern Europe and later as the Germans, French, Welsh, Irish, Britons and various other anglo-saxon races. These all came from the three sons of Gomer.



Magog, was the progenitor of the Scythians and Tartars whose descendants predominate in modern Russia. Madai was the progenitor of the Medes and Persians. Javan was the progenitor of the Greeks, Italians, Spainards and Portuguese. Tubal was the progenitor of the Iberians, Georgians, Capadocians, and other Asiatic and European races. Meshech was the progenitor of the Muscovite tribes which now inhabit Russia. Tiras was the progenitor of the Thracians and perhaps the Etruscans who migrated to Italy.

### Genealogy of Shem

Notice again the sons of Shem. Remember that Shem's blessing was that his God would be blessed. He had five sons: Elam, Assur, Arphaxad, Lud, Aram. Elam was the progenitor of the Elamite who settled near the Persian Gulf. Assur was the progenitor of the Assyrians. Arphaxad was the progenitor of the Arabians, Israelites, Edomites, Moabites, Ammonites, Ishmaelites, Midianites and other tribes of Asia. Lud was the progenitor of the Lydians of Asia minor. Aram was the progenitor of the Aramaeans later called Syrians.

A close look at the sections of the world's population emanating from these three sons of Noah is revealing. I leave you to draw your own conclusions!

### Poverty is a Curse

Another curse you must be aware of is the curse of poverty. In order to experience unbeatable prosperity, you must identify curses and deal with them. If you embrace a curse, it will frustrate you.

I can see curses in operation in so many places. No matter the efforts that are made, the frustrations and the sweat still remain. I also see poverty and lack, as a curse. **It is important for anyone who wants to experience divine provision to see poverty as a curse.** In Deuteronomy 28, Moses listed the curses that would come upon Israel if they disobeyed the Word of God. One of the curses was poverty and lack

**Therefore shalt thou serve thine enemies which the Lord shall send against thee, in hunger, and in thirst, and in nakedness, and in want of all things...**

#### **Deuteronomy 28:48**

Why do I believe that poverty is a curse? Because the Word of God puts poverty in the category of a curse. **The Word of God says that poverty is a curse.**

I am aware that some people take vows of poverty. I respect them for their great sacrifice to the Lord. However, I can see clearly that when God cursed the Israelites, poverty was one of the frustrations to expect. All the curses of Deuteronomy 28 lead to poverty. But in Deuteronomy 28:48, you see it a bit more explicitly. God shall set thee up in hunger, thirst, nakedness and in want.

My pastor in the North of Ghana told me how children eat from the rubbish dump. That must be a curse. We see on CNN almost everyday, the horrors of wars around the world. We see starving children and dying masses. These are not blessings.

**Poverty Leads to Lack of Education**

*Poverty leads to a lack of education.* Hosea 4:6 says that people perish for lack of knowledge.

**My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge...**

**Hosea 4:6**

An entire nation perishes when there is a lack of the knowledge of arts, science, medicine, law, etc. Poverty is a curse because it is a vicious cycle. Poverty brings about an inability to be educated. The lack of education leads to more poverty. The wealthy remain in their riches, and the poverty of the poor deepens.

## **Poverty Causes Poor Health and Disease**

*Poverty causes poor health and disease.* The life expectancy for rich countries is much higher than poor countries. The life expectancy for a Ghanaian is about fifty-eight years. The life expectancy for a Canadian is about seventy-six years. There is a significant difference between the figures of these two countries. This difference is very much related to the state of wealth.

**Do you remember the story of the rich man and Lazarus? Who died first?** Was it not the poor man Lazarus who died first? Was Lazarus not suffering from a terrible ulcerating condition? What treatment could Lazarus afford? The only treatment Lazarus could afford was a dressing and licking of his sores by the rich man's dogs.

**...Moreover the dogs came and licked his sore.**

**Luke 16:21**

Poverty certainly leads to poor health.

## Poverty Leads to Drunkenness

*Poverty is a curse because it causes people to get drunk.*  
Many poor people drink to forget about their insurmountable problems.

**Let him drink, and forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more.**

### Proverbs 31:7

There are many problems without solutions. People without God cannot see the way out of their crisis. They often resort to drinking. I remember a lady I met from Uganda. She would hold a bottle in her hand and say, “Pastor, I have a lot of problems. That’s why I’m drinking.” The curse of poverty makes you drink.

## Poverty Leads to a Lack of Friends

Another reason why poverty is a curse is because the poor man has few friends or relatives.

**The poor is hated even of his own neighbour: but the rich hath many friends.**

### Proverbs 14:20

One of the signs of poverty is that your relatives and friends are not interested in you. The Bible tells us that the neighbor of a poor man is very far from him.

Why is it that when Liberia was overran by anarchists, America did not seem to take much notice? However, when Iraq invaded Kuwait, the whole world took notice? I wish to suggest that the poverty of Liberia does not make it of as much concern as other places. The Bible says that even relatives are not interested in their poor brothers and sisters.

## Poverty Leads to Domination by the Rich

*Another reason why poverty must be a curse is that poor people are dominated and ruled by rich people.* The rich nations are ruling over the poor nations.

Rich Western nations continue to dominate poor African nations through monetary loans and world trade. The rich nations vary at random, the purchase prices of the items

these African nations export. There is nothing that the poor nations can do except to complain in futility.

## Poverty Leads to Disregard

Poverty makes people disregard you.

**There was a little city, and few men within it; and there came a great king against it, and besieged it, and built great bulwarks against it: Now there was found in it a poor wise man, and he by his wisdom delivered the city; yet no man remembered that same poor man.**

**Then said I, Wisdom is better than strength:  
nevertheless the poor man's wisdom is despised,  
and his words are not heard.**

### **Ecclesiastes 9:14-16**

A poor man may have much wisdom, but his wisdom is despised. I know many African Christian ministers who are very wise and anointed. They are, however, not regarded much because they come from a poor background. Even in the church, I notice a subtle disregard of those who come from Africa.

At international gatherings, many ministers from rich nations are not really interested in relating with fellow ministers from poorer countries. Although wealth and riches should not be a yardstick for developing relationships, that is often the case.

Many western ministers unknowingly see Africa only as a place they can add to their long list of mission fields. It enriches their résumé or curriculum vitae. The rich have no real interest in the poor. **The world, and even the Church, is truly polarized into the rich and the poor.** I have been despised before and it is a painful experience. Truly, poverty is not a blessing from God.

Do you think Japanese or Asians are loved by Westerners? The western world has been forced to relate with them because of their immense wealth. I am told that some Americans even learn to speak Japanese because it is of vital

importance when doing business. I have never heard of an American or German learning to speak Twi (a prominent Ghanaian language) because it is of economic importance.

Nobody in the world is learning a Ghanaian language because it is economically important to do so. We, on the other hand, have had to adopt a foreign language as our official language! No wonder we are not respected much by the world community.

## The Truth Sets Us Free

If poverty is a curse, then decide to stay away from it. The frustrations of poverty must never be yours. You can overcome every curse of poverty through the blood of Jesus. The Bible says that you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free.

**And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.**

**John 8:32**

The truth of God's Word is what will liberate you from every curse and frustration. There is a law that teaches that whatsoever a man sows, that shall he reap. This is the law of reward for hard work. If you work hard, the law will be fulfilled and you will reap the blessings of prosperity.

**God longs to bless His children with unbeatable prosperity.** There is no shortcut to experiencing God's blessings. Thank God for His Word. In Him is life and the life is the light of humanity. Within the Word of God, you will have direction for your life. As you study the Word,

God will give you wisdom to escape from the curse of poverty. You will escape from the global and sectional curses that are in operation in this world! Divine provision will be yours! Wisdom shall promote and establish you in unbeatable blessings!

**Wisdom is the principal thing... Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her.**

### **Proverbs 4:7,8**

People will speak about how you have unbeatable blessings. I see God giving you unbeatable prosperity now! I see the curse of poverty breaking in your life right now! From this moment, walk out of the bondage of lack and failure! You are a child of the King! You are blessed with unbeatable prosperity!



# Win the Lost At any Cost

Dag Howard-Mills

A Parchment House Publication

quotations in critical reviews or articles.  
secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief  
All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-296-08-1

**A Parchment House Publication**

Used by permission

**Missionaries in Colonial Ghana** by Peter A. Schweizer  
**Excerpts from Survivors on the Gold Coast-the Basel**

VERSION of the Bible.

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES

## **DEDICATION**

I dedicate this book to Pastors Jimmy and Anita Blavo.  
Thank you for a great work done in Basel, Switzerland. You  
have paid the price to become missionaries to a nation that  
sent many missionaries to Ghana.

# Contents

My Prayer For You! .....	89
Stars Forever .....	81
The Science Of The Follow-Up Ministry .....	77
Two Keys To The Harvest .....	72
The Missionaries .....	51
Letters Of A Soul Winner .....	42
Three Mistakes To Avoid .....	35
How To Avoid A Murder Charge .....	30
Polishing And More Polishing .....	18
Soul Winning And Church Growth .....	12
I See The Harvest .....	1



For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

*Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa*

Rest of the world:

*Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ*

Website:

*[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)*

Parchment House

## ***Chapter One***

# ***I See The Harvest***

**That SEEING they may SEE...**

*Mark 4:12*

**I** realize that many Christians, and even pastors, do not notice the harvest of souls around them. I see the multitude of people all around and wonder if these people know Christ!

Sometimes, when driving to church, I see crowds of people streaming down the road. I often ask myself, “How many of these people know Christ as their Saviour? How many will really die in Christ? How many of them go to church on Sunday morning?”

Recently, my wife and I drove through the streets of Johannesburg (in South Africa), which is a very beautiful city. We saw many nice buildings.

At one point during the ride, we had a good view of the entire city beautifully lit with thousands of lights. As I looked down, I suddenly thought to myself that there are so many people in the world. South Africa is full of souls. Adam and Eve have done a good job in filling the earth!

I did not only see the nice buildings, but I saw the vastness of the harvest, which lay virtually untouched. Dear friend, there are millions of people around you. I don't know if you notice that there are so many precious souls who have just a short time to live before tasting eternity. How many people will die in Christ? How many will live again?

I am a pastor and not an evangelist, but even as a pastor, my burden is for souls. The burden for souls is not just for evangelists! The Lord Jesus testified of Himself;

**I am the good shepherd [pastor]...**

*John 10:11*

A good shepherd means a good pastor. Jesus was the best pastor that ever lived and yet He said:

**For the Son of man is come to SEEK and to SAVE THAT WHICH WAS LOST.**

*Luke 19:10*

A good pastor is one who seeks and saves the lost. Some people think that a good pastor just thinks about caring for already existing sheep. Do you remember this scripture?

**This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all**



**acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.**

*1 Timothy 1:15*

God gave the five-fold ministry to the body of Christ to ensure that the work of Christ continues. We have apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers. What is the duty of these different ministries? **The ultimate goal for every minister is to win the lost to Christ.**

When you go into the hospital, you will find secretaries, cleaners and even messengers. All of these people working in the hospital, have the ultimate goal of providing health service for the community. Every secretary employed by the hospital should know that the letters she types contribute towards this goal. So it is with pastors, prophets and teachers. **Our ultimate goal is to reap the harvest.** When we forget the main reason for which the church exists, we begin to go into error.

Sometimes when you talk to pastors, you cannot help but realize that soul winning is one of the last things on their minds. How do I know that many ministers do not care about souls anymore? By listening to what they preach and watching how church services are conducted. Many ministers hold services without making an altar call for the lost. This goes to show that the salvation of the lost is not a burden on their hearts, for “out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks”. **When I see a large crowd, what occurs to me is the souls that can be saved.** After an impressive power

display, what about the souls who are lost? I can see the harvest. I can see the whitened and ripened harvest fields virtually untouched.

## **Elections Expose the Harvest Fields**

In 1996, presidential and parliamentary elections were held in Ghana. Out of the various political parties contesting, there were two main contenders. After voting ended that Saturday, the results from all over the nation began trickling in.

I was awake praying in my study at about 3 a.m. the next morning when I decided to turn on the television. The TV station had organised a panel of analysts to discuss the election results as they came in.

That dawn, I saw the whitened harvest of souls even more vividly. For the few minutes that I watched, election results came in from three major cities. In all these three major cities, the opposition party had won by very large margins. The figures showed several thousand votes in favour of the opposition party. I thought, “Wow! The opposition seems to be winning!”

I switched off my television and concentrated on preparing for my Sunday services. By mid-morning, election results from remote towns and undeveloped districts began to roll in. This time the story was different. The ruling party was having a landslide victory. They won so many votes from

rural and distant places that they completely swallowed up the victories that the opposition party had achieved in the big regional capitals.

I looked at the results and noticed the names of places I had never heard of. As I watched the elections tip in favour of the ruling party, God spoke to me. He said,

“There are many more human beings out there in this nation than you can see.” He added, “The real harvest is out there in the remote towns and the villages.”

He showed me that masses of people are out there, far away from the big cities. I thought to myself that of the thousands of people out there in the rural areas, how many really know the Lord!

Sometimes we become happy when we have two hundred people in our city church. It is because we cannot see the extent of the harvest fields we are dealing with. **There are thousands and thousands of human beings out there beyond the main roads and beyond the cities!** Who will go there? How will they hear about Jesus Christ? How can they believe except they hear? And how can they hear the gospel except someone goes there to preach?

**How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and HOW SHALL THEY HEAR WITHOUT A PREACHER?**

*Romans 10:14*

## **Here Am I, Send Him**

It is easy to get a pastor to go to New York City or Copenhagen. However, it is not so easy to get a missionary to go to one of Africa's lesser-known towns. If pastors *saw* the enormity of the harvest, perhaps they would realise that we need to concentrate on evangelism.

The primary role of the Church is *not* to build schools. That is the job of the Ministry of Education. The principal job of the Church is not to open hospitals. That is the job of the Ministry of Health. The central task of the Church is not to build orphanages. These are all good things and I believe in all of them. But none of these is the primary reason for which God raised up the Church. The first thing that Jesus told his disciples when he met them was:

**...Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.**

*Matthew 4:19*

The whole idea of taking Peter and John away from their learned trade of fishing was to make them harvesters of souls.

On a lonely hill with eleven disciples, Jesus issued his last emotional command.

**And he said unto them, GO YE INTO ALL THE WORLD, and preach the gospel to every creature.**

*Mark 16:15*

## **What Were Jesus' Last Words?**

The last words of a man are probably the most important words that he will ever speak. Some years ago, I read about an aircraft that developed a serious problem. As it flew over some mountains, the pilot informed everyone on board that they were going to crash; indeed they crashed and everyone onboard was killed. It seemed as if they had about ten or fifteen minutes before they eventually crashed. Many of the passengers wrote notes and messages to their loved ones while they could. I will never forget that scene on television. I couldn't help but wonder what those last messages and notes contained. Anyone who knows he's going away forever would probably give a very important message as his last word.

**So what were Jesus' last words?** Did Jesus say, "Go and make people rich?" Did he say, "Go and build hospitals and schools?" Did he say, "Go and take the reins of political power?" He did not! He said the Church should go out and preach the gospel in as many countries as possible. He told us to travel far and wide with the good news of the kingdom.

## **What is Your Primary Role?**

How many churches have degenerated into social clubs and political groups? Someone may think that I am against hospitals and schools being set-up by churches. You are wrong! Setting up schools and hospitals by churches is a good thing. I went to a Catholic school. Churches run the best schools and hospitals in Ghana. What I am saying is that it is not the *primary thing* that the Church is supposed to do. That is not our chief task. Perhaps it is a secondary or tertiary function of the Church.

**Every institution must know what its principal role is!** Would you be happy if you sent your child to school and the main thing he or she did was to attend long prayer services everyday without learning anything? Of course not! The school is supposed to educate the child and *not* conduct all-day prayer meetings. There is nothing wrong if the school has a weekly service or a daily prayer time. That is a different thing. But every institution has its primary role. **When you make a secondary role the primary function, the institution becomes completely confused and irrelevant.**

There are times when pastors come under pressure from governments and the community to change their emphasis. You will hear important government officials saying things like, “We advise the Church to become more *socially relevant* instead of praying everyday.”

You will hear dignitaries calling on Church leaders; “We appeal to the Church to extend electricity to this town so that the contribution of the Church will be felt.” “If the Church can dig some bore holes for this village, its relevance to the society will be appreciated.”

Dear friend, digging bore holes and providing water for a community is not what makes the Church relevant! That is not our primary job. The Head of the Church, Jesus Christ, has given us clear instructions to **GO INTO THE WORLD AND PREACH!**

**Preaching and teaching is the primary task of churches and ministers.** Preaching and teaching the Gospel is what makes the Church relevant. I wish to emphasize this to any politician who intends to make the Church what he calls “relevant”.

It is because we have lost our drive for soul winning that people have begun to see us as a sort of social institution, delivering social needs. When we preach and

teach, people are saved and their lives are changed. This is our best contribution to our society!

## **Salvation Drives Away Corruption and War**

What is the greatest canker that has destroyed most African nations? Is it not corruption? Ghana is endowed with riches yet majority of our people are impoverished. Corruption has left its mark on the masses. The situation is so bad that entire shiploads of cocoa can disappear on the high seas. How is this possible?

A modern form of corruption involving the inflation of contract figures has surfaced in Ghana. Projects which should have cost sixteen million dollars, end up costing the nation twenty four million dollars. Where does the eight million dollars go? Straight into private pockets! Inflated contracts are signed everyday and the nation loses millions of dollars into the pockets of vampires.

**When people are born-again and taught the Word of God, they refuse to be involved in corruption and other evil deeds.** This is one of the areas by which the Church becomes relevant. The preaching of righteousness by the church greatly reduces corruption in the nation.

Isn't Africa the battlefield for many civil wars and conflicts? Is the gospel not a gospel of peace? As people hear the Word of God, do they not choose peace rather than war? I have several former radical student leaders in my church. These people were once politically aflame, fighting authorities over any frivolous and vexatious cause

they could find. Today they are peaceful born-again citizens serving and building their nation.

There is no need for the Church to leave its main duties. Dear Christian, let us never forget that we are standing in the midst of harvest fields - whitened and ripened, ready to be harvested. I greatly respect ministers who have stayed with their original call. I recently listened to an evangelist on television. This man has conducted several crusades worldwide. I listened to him speaking about the harvest and I became excited! I said to myself, thank God this man has stayed with the original call."

## **I Have a Vision**

**I have a vision: to win the lost at any cost.** It is a vision that has been burning in my spirit. I want to see people saved. I do not think that the answer to humanity's needs can be found in any political solution. Neither colonisation nor



independence can help us. Democracy, 'house cleaning' or revolutions are not the answer to the problems of Africa or the world.

Someone asked me whether I did not want to help people by using my medical profession. I said to him, "I really do want to help people but I know that I can help them best by giving them the gospel."

If you give a man quinine tablets and save his life, what have you really done? You have extended his life on this earth for a few more days. What about eternity? When he stands before God Almighty, the message of salvation will help much more than four tablets of chloroquine. I am helping people much more by preaching the gospel than by practicing medicine. That is a fact of reality.

Dear friend, I have a vision to plant churches anywhere I can find people. I want to win the lost at any cost. I have a vision to train as many preachers as possible. I want men and women to be as fruitful as they possibly can. I have a dream that God will use me to reap His harvest.

Thank God for doctors, teachers and politicians. Let them concentrate on their jobs, and I will concentrate on mine. I am calling on fellow ministers of the gospel. I am calling their attention to the harvest fields that are ripened and waiting for labourers!

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***Soul Winning And Church Growth***

### **Soul Winning Gives Meaning to Christianity**

**I** once had a chat with a taxi driver in London. I told him I was a Christian, and began to share Christ with him. I also told him about the reality of heaven and hell. He laughed and asked whether I really believed in what I was saying. He said, “If heaven is real, why don’t Christians just kill themselves and move on to heaven?” What he was trying to say was that since heaven is such a nice place, and Christians have nothing to do on earth, they should transfer themselves immediately to heaven.

If indeed, there is nothing for Christians to do on earth, then this man has a good point. However, the reality is that Christians have a lot to do on earth before getting to heaven. We are supposed to witness and preach the gospel of Jesus Christ. We must win the lost at any cost.

The salvation of millions of people depends on us. I'm sorry to say that most Christians have not found out the reasons for which they were saved. The Bible says that we were saved for a reason— for good works!

**For we are his workmanship, CREATED in Christ Jesus UNTO GOOD WORKS, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.**

*Ephesians 2:10*

Christians are backsliding everyday because they have no purpose for being in the church. People attend church, but after awhile they drop out, finding no meaning to church life. *Anyone who engages in soul winning will begin to discover the reason for his salvation.* Soul winning increases the self-esteem of the Christian.

## **Soul Winning Gives Great Joy**

**After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place... Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great... Go your ways: behold, I send you forth... And the seventy RETURNED AGAIN WITH JOY...**

*Luke 10:1-3,17*

Anytime you go out there preaching you will return with joy. There is joy when souls are won. I cannot explain it. Only a mother can explain how she feels after her baby is

born. I have seen many women struggling in labour, but neither pain nor the struggle is able to keep them from rejoicing. When you bring people to the Lord, you will discover what it means to have the joy of the Lord. I cannot explain it to you. You have to discover it for yourself.

## **Soul Winning Energizes Christians**

I have discovered that my church members become energized when they get involved in soul winning. Soul winning leads to church growth.

## **Soul Winning Prevents Church Splits**

When your church members are engaged in fruitful activities, they have no time for petty quarrels that bring divisions. *Pastors must teach their church members that a soul is a soul, and is precious to God.* When church members are conscious of the souls that need to be won, their priorities become biblical priorities. Church splits and divisions are avoided. When too many Christians are in one place doing nothing, it often generates hurts, quarrels and wounds.

## **Soul Winning is the Heartbeat of Jesus**

Some years ago, I had a vision. In this vision, I saw a human heart covered with blood. The heart was beating. God impressed upon my heart that day that the heart cry of Jesus

Christ is harvesting the fields. Jesus did not leave His throne for nothing! He came into this world to save sinners (Luke 19:10).

## **Soul Winning Generates Divine Support**

When you win souls you generate divine support for all that you are doing. As you read the Bible, you will discover that soul winning generates heavenly joy. There is a heavenly response to each and every soul won for the Lord.

**I say unto you, that likewise JOY SHALL BE IN HEAVEN over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance. Likewise, I say unto you, there is JOY IN THE PRESENCE OF THE ANGELS OF GOD over one sinner that repenteth.**

*Luke 15:7,10*

Churches must know why they exist: to generate souls for heaven. Embassies exist to represent the government from which they came. Similarly, churches are heavenly embassies.

## **Soul Winning Leads to Divine Protection**

**Many pray that God will keep them from evil. Did you know that divine protection is made available for all who take part in doing God's will? Psalm 91 says that, God will keep and protect you because you have set your love on Him.**

**Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore WILL I DELIVER HIM: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I WILL BE WITH HIM IN TROUBLE; I WILL DELIVER HIM, and honour him. With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.**

*Psalm 91:14-16*

When you set your love on God to please Him, God says that He will deliver you. I believe that I am doing the will of God. Perhaps that is the only reason why I am still alive. Just like Paul, I have had a few near-death experiences, including near plane crashes and car accidents.

**Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more; in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft. Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep:**

*2 Corinthians 11:23-25*

In all these things I can speak like Paul and say that God delivered me from them all.

**For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor**

**depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

*Romans 8:38-39*

*I see God delivering you now! I see God helping you in your time of trouble! I see God standing with you because you have set your love on Him!*

Do you want to stay in the will of God? Do you want your church to grow? Be a soul winner today. You will see a difference in the church.

I only see my pastoral job fulfilled when I am able to convert a member into a minister. I want every member of my church to be a soul winner. I want them to have fruit to show one day. If there is no harvesting of souls, there will be no sheep for the pastor to look after. Every pastor can do the work of an evangelist!

**W**hy is it that only a few people get involved in soul winning? When people start new churches, we do not see much soul winning. It is easier to start a church by “stealing” sheep than by winning souls, because it is easier to destroy than to build!

Before Jesus went away, He emphasized the preaching of the gospel to the lost. It is sad to note that, winning the lost has now become a side issue in the Church. Although the command to go out and reach the lost was a priority, it has been relegated to the background.

Many of us are making the mistake of “polishing the same coins” repeatedly. The already established church members are the nine coins you will read about in the passage below. Ministers spend most of the time polishing these nine coins over and over again!

**Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, REJOICE WITH ME; FOR I HAVE FOUND THE PIECE WHICH I HAD LOST.**

*Luke 15:8-9*

The lost coin represents lost and dying sinners. Sometimes when I minister in a church, I look at the crowd and think to myself, that these are the nine coins I’m going to polish again!



We bring in anointed teachers and spectacular prophets to polish our coins. We hold marriage seminars to polish the coins. More polishing! We have home cell meetings and do more polishing. The polishing goes on!

We have end of year get-togethers for our nice Christian brothers and sisters. More polishing! All this while, the one coin is changing colour in the corner. The unbelievers are getting more and more hardened as we concentrate on ourselves.

## **The Supreme Task of the Church**

It is time for us to turn our attention to the supreme task of the Church: win the lost at any cost! It is time for us to harvest the masses that are waiting for a preacher. **We must avoid the mistake of polishing, followed by more polishing, followed by even more polishing of the same coin.**

Every Christian is first a soul winner. Thank God for the gifts of drama and singing, but you must first be a witness. After you are a soul winner, you may then go on to be a teacher, shepherd, musician, singer or administrator.

Christians who become singers without being soul winners do not understand why they sing. They often think that they are supposed to impress people with their nice songs. **You are a Christian singer and not a singing Christian- there is a difference!** Whatever we find ourselves doing in the body of Christ, let us know that we are first expected to bring souls to the Lord.

## **I See an Imbalance...**

I see an imbalance in the work of the Lord. A false balance is a terrible thing. The Bible calls an imbalance an abomination.

**A false balance is abomination to the Lord...**

*Proverbs 11:1*

Too much emphasis is placed on the already established church, to the neglect of a lost and dying world. It is like ten people trying to lift up a heavy log. Nine of them are at one end of the log and only one person is at the other end. This is an imbalance.

## **Alarming Statistics**

**Some statistics tell us that there are over one thousand groups (tribes and races) of people, who have never heard the gospel even once.** It is also said that ninety-four percent of ministers are preaching to *nine* percent of the world's population. What does this mean? It means that *six* percent of all ministers are struggling with the remaining *ninety-one* percent of the world's harvest! It is no wonder that religions like Islam are gaining grounds in large sections of the world.

## **Many Died as Soul Winners**

Even in Ghana, how many anointed Charismatic pastors would opt to go to remote parts of the country? After visiting the north of Ghana, I realized that many people live in abject poverty. I realized how difficult it must have been for any missionary, Ghanaian or otherwise, to live there!

Today, people are no longer willing to make great sacrifices for the expansion of the gospel. Dear friend, we need to remember that people laid down their lives for the establishment of the Church.

I appreciate the Swiss, German and Scottish missionaries who came to Ghana many years ago and established the Church. Many of them died of malaria. They would send back messages saying that all the missionaries sent were dead. The churches in Europe would respond by sending more missionaries. Many missionaries died and others, such as Rev. F.A. Ramseyer (1868-1869), were captured and taken to Kumasi by Ashanti invaders.

Many of these missionaries such as Johannes Christaller achieved remarkable milestones, such as the

Twi (a local Ghanaian language) translation of the Bible, Twi Grammar, a collection of 3,600 Twi proverbs and Twi translations of Christian doctrinal works. Johannes Zimmerman, founded the Basel Mission Schools at Osu and Abokobi (1854). He also made notable translations into the Ga language (another local dialect).

All of this means that, European men of God laid down their lives in Ghana for the establishment of the Church. They did it at a time when there were no airplanes, electricity, running water, cars, televisions and telephones. Even now, with many of these comforts readily available, people are not prepared to go on similar sacrificial missionary journeys.

These apostles came, knowing that their predecessors had died or had been captured and killed. You may curse the White man for the slave trade; however, there were some genuine apostles who brought the gospel to us in Africa. They learnt our language! They translated the Bible for us! They lived and died amongst a strange people! All this for the love of Christ! *Where* is this sacrificial love for the gospel and for our Lord? I have the feeling that heaven will reveal a host of unknown heroes. The people we hail today as great men of God may not be the ones to receive the laurels on 'prize giving day' in heaven!

**If we in our own country are not prepared to lay down our lives for this gospel, the Church is not going to expand!** It is time for us to send people out to remote towns and villages where Christ is not known. It is time for us to return to the days of true missionaries. It is time for pastors to decide whether they are called, or whether they are just looking for another job avenue.

## **I Saw The Graves of White Apostles**

I remember attending a funeral in the Akwapim Mountains of Ghana. Whilst at the cemetery, waiting for the burial service to start, I decided to take a stroll through the

graveyard. I read the names on some of the tombs. Initially, I thought I would only see the names of the local Akwapim people. But I was surprised to find the names of Swiss and German people on some of the tombstones. I realized that I was looking at the names of Swiss missionaries who had died on those mountains a hundred years ago. It struck me that these people had paid a great price for the Church to expand to Ghana.

Today, if I do an altar call asking for missionaries to go to certain remote places, I will get little or no response. However, if I do an altar call for missionaries to go to New York or Paris, I will have a huge response. What is happening? Do we really care about the lost, or are we only concerned about becoming affluent and popular pastors in big cities?

## **An Alternative Source of Employment?**

I often wonder what people mean when they say they are called to the ministry.

Many people take full-time ministry as an alternative source of employment. I am NOT in full-time ministry because I have no other job. I see it as a calling. I see it as something I *have* to do. I can confidently say with Paul, “Woe is me, if I preach not the gospel.” If I wanted to be rich, I would not be a minister. God blessed me with a very noble and lucrative profession - the medical profession.

## Why I Became a Priest

The ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ is a calling and must always remain a calling. One minister was asked, “How did you get into the ministry?”

He answered, “I was never good at anything in school, so I decided to become a priest.”

If that is the reason why you became a minister, you are not likely to carry the burden that Jesus carried! You are not likely to transmit the burden of the lost to your congregation. It is time for us to get back to the primary call of the Church. It is time for us to make soul winning our main task.

Soul winning is the main task of Lighthouse Chapel International. All choristers in my church go on evangelistic outreaches. They win souls and follow them up. I have made them understand that they are *Christian* singers and not *singing* Christians! Ushers in my church do ‘person-to-person’ witnessing. At one time, our ushering ministry became very large because the leader of the ushers often took the ushers out on ‘bus-to-bus’ preaching.

Let us analyse the number of harvest fields and the number of workers we have. There is a great imbalance between the harvest fields and the labourers. It is time for us to look at maps and find out where the sinners are and go to them. **It is time for the forgotten ones to hear. It is time for the poor ones to hear.** It is time for the neglected ones to receive some light. It is time for people to graduate from the university and say, “I want to give the rest of my days to the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ. I want to win the lost at any cost!”

## **A Mega Crusade**

I once organized a crusade in a prominent park in my city. An evangelist had travelled all the way from America to preach at this crusade. When it was about time for the sermon, I decided to do something unusual.

There was a large crowd present. Everyone was seated in great expectation. I thought to myself that almost everybody in that crowd was a Christian. We had advertised the program on television, and Christians had gathered in their numbers. I said to the pastors around me, “Let’s send these people out to invite sinners to the meeting.”

Many of the pastors were unsure of what was happening. I said to them, “The reason for which we are gathered is to win souls for Christ. If there are no lost souls in the crowd, what is the use of this program? Why did we spend all this money?”

The crowd was sent out and they happily invited hundreds of hungry souls. Some might have thought that at such an international forum, doing something like that was unacceptable. But that night, we reaped a mighty harvest of souls for the Lord.

## **If You Don’t Obey, You Will Pay**

**God is issuing a warning to the Church: “If you don’t spread out, I will spread you out myself.”** Did you know that the Early Church did not fully obey the instruction to win souls?

God has different ways of getting us to obey Him. When the Early Church refused to go out, God allowed a strong persecution to come her way. He sent a man, Saul, to harass the Church until the people were forced to travel away from Jerusalem in order to avoid death.

**And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was A GREAT PERSECUTION AGAINST THE CHURCH which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad...**

*Acts 8:1*

Many churches experience splits and painful divisions. If you look carefully, you will realize that many of these painful divisions actually lead to church growth in the long run. The reason is that more ministers are allowed to develop their gifts and more churches are established. **Are you waiting for your church to split up before you obey God?**

I laugh when people criticize me for planting many churches in the same city. I muse that these people do not know what they are talking about. I have very large and successful branch churches just a few metres from where I am. Most of these pastors used to work with me at the headquarters. When I sensed the potential in them to minister, I sent them out to begin churches. Most of them have succeeded in establishing solid Bible-based churches, and the entire ministry has expanded because of this.

**Gaining By Trading**



Do you want more anointing on your life? There is a process by which anointing and gifts increase. It is called “gaining by trading”.

**...that he might know how much every man had GAINED BY TRADING.**

*Luke 19:15*

Let me give you a secret right now! The more you do God’s work, the more the anointing increases. Do not forget the story of the master who gave his servants ten pounds. He told them, “Occupy until I come.” When the master came back, some of the servants had more than others.

**Then came the first, saying, Lord, THY POUND [anointing] HATH GAINED ten pounds.**

*Luke 19:16*

The pound represents the anointing. The pound represents the gifts that God has given to you. **That gift supernaturally increases as you begin working!** When you plunge into soul winning and evangelism, the anointing on your life will double and triple. *I see you gaining by trading! I see you gaining a new anointing by trading*

*with what God has given you! I see you preaching to thousands and doing miracles!*

I always enjoy going back to the classroom where I began my ministry. Sometimes, I stand outside the window of the classroom where I began and stare at the few chairs within

it. I remember preaching to about ten people. For over ten years, I have been at the pulpit, preaching every Sunday and Tuesday. At the beginning, I preached to about five people. But I have definitely gained by trading. I now minister to thousands of people every week. I always thank God for His mercy.

## **Gaining By Kingdom Promotion**

Learn another secret right here! After improving through the secret of gaining by trading, God will lift you up by another method I call “*kingdom promotion*”. Gaining by trading makes the pound you have swell up. But when the master assesses that you have gained something by trading, you will receive a “kingdom promotion”. A **“kingdom promotion” is an elevation that is so lofty that it makes you marvel at how far the Lord has brought you.** The man who was given authority over ten cities could not compare his new status with his former job of trading with ten pounds.

**...thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.**

*Luke 19:17*

In the day you receive a “kingdom promotion”, you will know that God has truly lifted you out of the dust.

Harvesting the lost is the first and foremost task of the whole Church. I am talking to prophets. I am talking to teachers. I am talking to singers. I am ministering to administrators. The gospel is the first thing. We must win the lost at any cost!

**And the gospel must FIRST be published among all nations.**

*Mark 13:10*

## ***Chapter Four***

# ***How To Avoid A Murder Charge***

### **Is There a Murder Charge?**

**When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but HIS BLOOD WILL I REQUIRE AT THINE HAND.**

*Ezekiel 3:18*

**W**hat does this mean: “blood will be required at your hand?” I remember when my father, a lawyer, was the attorney for a man accused of murder. My wife Adelaide, and her friend Rev. Sackey, were junior lawyers working with my father. It was an interesting case to follow. Both the families of the accused and the deceased were present in Court.

Before the jury gave its final verdict, Rev. Sackey had to make a final address in defence of the accused man. The packed to capacity courtroom was tense, as both families followed the proceedings. All concerned parties wanted to know whether this man was guilty or not.

What was happening? People were requiring the blood of the slain farmer from the hands of the accused.

**When the Bible says that God will require the blood of sinners at your hand, it simply means that you will be asked to answer for a murder charge.** I am sure you don't think of yourself as a murderer or a killer. But by refusing to warn sinners, by refusing to hold crusades and by refusing to do door-to-door witnessing, you are indirectly assigning people to hell. God says that He will hold you responsible! That is why you must preach the gospel in every corner, on every highway and on every street.

We must have the attitude that the salvation of the whole world depends on us. Without this attitude, we will always assume that some zealous evangelist will do the job.

Dear friend, there are very few zealous evangelists today. Evangelists have very little support for their work. It seems that it is much more profitable to be a pastor than to be an evangelist. The offerings that are available to the evangelist cannot be compared to the offerings that pastors receive from overfed Christian millionaires who sit on the pews of the church.

Why would anyone want to be an evangelist? It is a truly thankless job and the rewards can only be found

in eternity. I believe that God divinely blesses anyone who chooses to win souls and makes it his life's work.

## **Do You Have Beautiful Feet?**

How beautiful are the feet of those that preach the gospel and bring good news! What is good news? Is the good news that electricity has been extended to the village? Is the good news that pipe borne water is now available in your town? Is the good news that we have a new President? None of these is the good news of the gospel.

**There is no news like the gospel of Jesus Christ.** It is the only answer to the problems of a lost human race. The whole world is confused. If one or two cruise missiles were sold, the problems of millions of people could be solved! There is an imbalance in the distribution of wealth. The poor are getting poorer and the rich are getting richer. There seems to be a curse in certain sections of the earth. Many people cannot make ends meet.

In the under-developed world, people talk about the global economic crisis and children not having enough to eat. In the rich western world, people are worried because some won't have turkey and salad to eat at Christmas! Everyone has his or her own problems!

What is the good news that these people need? Everyone needs the gospel. The gospel is good for the rich and for the poor. **The gospel is good news for both western and**

**eastern nations.** The preaching of Jesus Christ has power in the land of the communists as well as in the land of the capitalists.

I see a last wave of miracle power coming into the earth. It is going to help us to reach out to the harvest fields. God will support us! The power of the Holy Spirit is on us as we set out to tackle the harvest. *Do you know that the rapture will not occur until the gospel has been preached to all nations?*

Jesus gave us signs of the end. The last and specific sign was the preaching of the gospel to the nations.

**And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; AND THEN SHALL THE END COME.**

*Matthew 24:14*

The end of the world depends on your soul winning. Let us arise together and bring about the return of Jesus Christ to rule this world in authority and power.

## **All Ministries Must Point To the Harvest**

Let soul winning be your chief task. When you minister in song, let the lost souls be your target. Dear prophet, when the Lord uses you to minister in signs and wonders, remember that signs and wonders are to attract *sinners to Christ*. If signs and wonders are just being used to attract rich people to your group, you have not understood why God made you a prophet.

The ministry gifts are not given for you to acquire nice houses and cars. They are power instruments for reaping the harvest. When people come to you with financial and marital problems, please direct them first to Christ. Make sure that they are saved in the Lord.

An elderly man once came to see me. He had a string of problems. He wanted me to pray for his clinic, his marriage and his home. He felt that he needed deliverance, ministration and prayer! I asked him a simple question, “Are you born-again?”

He did not even know what that meant! I knew immediately that this man needed Christ *first*. I immediately led him in the sinner’s prayer to receive the Lord. It was only after that, that I considered his other problems.

Dear revivalist, I am very happy about the spectacular display of signs and wonders in your ministry! We have prayed for years that signs and wonders would come back to the Church. But for goodness sake, remember why signs and wonders are being restored to the Church. They are being restored for the harvest. Please use your ability to gather crowds to win souls.

I have watched large crowds gather under the ministry of ‘signs and wonder’ revivalists. It is pathetic to see them gather and disperse time and time again, without a single salvation altar call being made. If you do not do the right thing with your gift, God will give it to somebody else. Dear friend, we must win the lost at any cost!



## 1. Distractions

**I**n order to stay focused on soul winning, there are several things I have to deal with. One of them is distraction. It is very easy to be distracted from your primary task. The church has become so established that sometimes she loses sight of why she exists. As a full-time minister, I try to stay focused on my calling.

I believe in interaction between churches. However, there are times when those interactions can be distractive. Contrary to traditional belief, it has been shown that a lot of trans-church interaction does not lead to church growth. Hurts, wounds and quarrels have been generated through some of these interactions. Pastors end up spending a lot of time ironing out their differences, and all that time could have been spent fulfilling the primary call.

Recently, our church was attacked by a mob of individuals brandishing sticks and stones. We had a serious confrontation with them and many people got hurt in the process. The scene was played back on national television and many people got to know about it.

I was surprised, though not shocked to hear when some Christians said: "It serves them right!"

Many people are jealous of their brother's success, and get into conflicts like Cain and Abel did. This is very natural and so I have learnt to stay in my corner and do the work of God. Conflicts and divisions within the church may also distract you from your primary goal of reaching the lost.

If your church is involved in a major internal conflict, I will give you a suggestion. Start outreach immediately! Don't say; "I will wait for the problem to resolve before I embark on evangelism." Embarking on outreaches will help to turn attention away from the problem.

## **2. Procrastination**

The cardinal enemy of all evangelism and outreach is the demon of procrastination. Outreach is often postponed and put off till later. Some people go as far as cancelling their scheduled outreach programs. "I will witness to him tomorrow," they say. "We will do a crusade next year; after all, there are other pressing problems to deal with."

Years ago, I learnt something very important from a Full Gospel Businessmen's Fellowship meeting. I was invited to be the main speaker at a breakfast meeting. When I finished ministering, I sat down on stage as they concluded the meeting with some announcements.

One of the announcements struck me and the Lord spoke to me at that moment. They announced that their next outreach was to be held in a month's time.

Right there, the Lord showed me that these people had planned a rigid schedule of monthly outreaches that were not negotiable. They were not negotiable in the sense that they could not be postponed or cancelled. The speakers for their meetings were sometimes scheduled a year in advance. Whether there was a tidal wave, economic upheaval or a political earthquake, the outreach was going to come on.

**From that moment, I became convinced that fixing an inflexible monthly outreach for every fellowship and ministry in my church was the way forward.**

There are many cares and problems of this life. Many people are struggling to pay school fees, build houses and buy food to eat. Many people have marital problems and do not know how peace is going to come to their homes. They say, “How can I think of evangelism when I have so many problems?”

**And the cares of this world... choke the word...**

*Mark 4:19*

Dear Christian friend, do not let the cares of this world choke the call of God on your life. I see you rising up in spite of every weight and difficulty in your life! He that winneth souls is wise! Be wise now! Win a soul today!

The soul you bring to the Lord may become a blessing to you in different ways!

**...He that winneth souls is wise.**

*Proverbs 11:30*

### **3. Struggling with Unripened Harvests**

It is a mistake to try to harvest fields that are not ready. Every soul winner must know that God’s harvest fields are ripe at different times. Doors to certain regions are divinely opened for a season. After a while, these doors swing shut.

One day Jesus said something prophetic. He said, "I must work while it is day for the night will come when no one can work." No matter how anointed or gifted you are, you will not be able to work at night.

**I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: THE NIGHT COMETH, WHEN NO MAN CAN WORK.**

*John 9:4*

Jesus spoke of a season when no one would be able to do God's work. He said a time would come when no one would be able to evangelise anymore. Take a look at the global harvest field; you will find that the night has fallen on certain sections of the globe. It is now impossible to harvest the fields in those parts of the world.

Look at the Islamic nations of the world. There are millions of people under the cloud of strict Islamic rule. Christianity is virtually forbidden in many of these places. It is very dangerous to preach the gospel in Moslem countries.

Do you remember the days of the Soviet Union? Communism stamped out all true church life. Many Russians died without hearing the gospel of Jesus Christ because it was technically, legally and physically impossible to preach the gospel over there.

Look at sections of Africa today. Many African nations are battlefields. I cannot send somebody's husband or father to certain countries in Africa. How would I explain to the wife if the pastor got killed?

It is impossible to drive through certain African nations. Rebels have taken over large sections of many countries. The night has fallen in these places. That is why we need to take advantage of every opportunity. Many people think that peace will always prevail.

Look at countries like Liberia and Zaire, which enjoyed many years of relative peace. Perhaps we did not know that it was daytime in those places. As I am writing this book, there is war in the former Zaire. I cannot go there and I would not like to send anybody there. The night has come when no one can work in Zaire.

In some Western countries like Switzerland, Christians are not permitted to preach on the streets or to hold crusades as freely as we do in Ghana. The police have questioned our Swiss pastor during gospel concert outreaches. Meanwhile, occult and witchcraft shops are springing up freely all over Switzerland.

Many parts of Europe are hard ground for the gospel. The spirit of atheism is so entrenched that the preaching of the gospel now looks absurd.

However, there are many places where the night has not yet fallen. It is easier to preach the gospel of Jesus Christ in these places. Even in nations where the gospel is permitted, you will find that some sections of the population are more open to the gospel.

**My message is simple: stay with the ripened harvest.** Go where the doors are open. That is why I love preaching to young people. Every year I hold special programs in each of the universities in Ghana. I enjoy preaching in secondary schools. I see such a positive response from the young people. The young people are my ripened harvest.

### **“I Will Never Be Born Again!”**

I remember speaking with an eighty-year old man at a wedding reception. During the wedding service, I had preached a sermon on salvation. This man was in the congregation and had heard all that I had said. He called me aside at the wedding reception and said to me, “I want you to know something.”

“What is it, sir?” I asked.

He answered, “I want you to know that I will never change!”

“Oh!” I responded.

He continued, “I am eighty-years old and I will never change! I want you to know that I will never be born-again! I am a traditionalist, I belong to the Anglican Church and I will never be born-again!”

I was taken aback! I had never heard anybody speak like that. This man was saying that he was hardened and resistant to the gospel. There are many people like that. Preaching to them yields very little result. Stay with the ripened and

whitened harvests. God will bless your evangelistic efforts. The poor are often more open to receive the gospel than the rich. Therefore, preach more to the poor than the rich.

**When you spend time on unripened harvests, you will become discouraged with evangelism.** You will find it fruitless and a waste of time. Stay with the ripened harvests. God has given them to you! Win the lost at any cost!

## ***Chapter Six***

# ***Letters Of A Soul Winner***

**A**s far back as I can remember, I have always had a vision to win souls for Christ. During my early days at the university, I met a law student called E.A.T. Sackey. He happened to be a classmate and a friend of my wife, so naturally we became good friends. I soon discovered that he and I had similar interests like soul winning. I believe that is what drew us together in ministry.

I recently discovered some of the letters he wrote to me when we were both students in the university in 1988. At the time, I was a medical student and he was a law student, but neither medicine nor law could drown our divine call and desire to win more people to Christ. I am glad that we are both in the ministry today.

Although my calling is to pastor, my hobby is to win souls and organize crusades! I enjoy playing the organ and drums at crusades. I feel very happy when I see the lost being preached to. I am reproducing below, four letters my friend the evangelist wrote to me. As you read them, I believe you will be inspired to launch out into the harvest.



## **Four Memorable Letters**

1. *Baptism of Zeal*
2. *Dreaming about Evangelism*
3. *I'm With You*
4. *Let's Die Preaching*



# THE LETTERS



## A Baptism of Zeal

29-5-1986

Dag,

*If ever we need a baptism from heaven, it should be a baptism of zeal. "The zeal of thine house has consumed me." We really need to be eaten up dry with a passionate passion.*

*A burden that would make us uncomfortable until we see and get men saved from the blackness of darkness into the kingdom of His dear son. This should be our waking thoughts and sleeping dreams.*

*We really need the love that is blind to all the possible dangers of the mission. Love that ignores personal safety, disregards the odds against it, drops "sacrifice" from its vocabulary, requires no crutches, ignores all dangers and is intolerant to idleness.*

*Remember that the master went out at the ELEVENTH HOUR and He found some men still IDLING in the market places. May God help us! In this eleventh hour, the church seems to be idling, careless of its responsibilities. I'm really doubtful whether I'll want to be part of this system. I'm beginning to believe that it is not the sin of the world that is making the Church sick, but rather the sin and unconcern of the Church that is making the world sick. I'm getting fed up with complacency in the church. I'm filled with Holy anger - against the devil, against sin, against our unbelief AND also against the Church.*

*Everything in the world is broken - confidence in government, confidence in the dollar, marriages are breaking*

*up and teenagers are breaking up their minds with drugs. All is broken - except one thing, the hearts of the believers. But I believe that we need broken hearts to face this colossal mess. Weeping is a command. But there should be action after that (Joel 2:7). The present lethargy in the Church is almost unpardonable. I need to bear a broken heart over the coldness in the church. Yay!! The fields are really white.*

**DAG, LETS BIND OUR HEARTS TO THE REACHING OF THE UNREACHED.** *We need to become impervious to the opinions of others about our zeal. We should not care what it would cost us to be burnt out for God. Whether we are flattered or fattened, esteemed or despised, condemned a fool or a philosopher, through evil report or good report, kisses or curses, we should be set to do the will of Him who sent us.*

*We need to move out and away from the centralised system we seem to be having in Accra. The Church is founded with showmanship, competition, “holding the form of religion but denying the power thereof.” (2 Timothy 3:5).*

*Although the Pharisees prayer is always seen as not good enough – (“God I thank Thee I am not like other people: swindlers, unjust, adulterers, etc.”) How many church folks can pray such prayers anyway? May God help us!*

*I pray, like Habakkuk did, “LORD, IN YOUR WRATH, REMEMBER MERCY.”*

*Love to all.*

*EATS*

*Co-Worker*



## Dreaming about Evangelism

c/o C 52

An/Sarbah Hall

1987

*Hi Brother Dag,*

*“I thank my God upon every remembrance of you.” Well since you have so much to do in these crucial times, I had better write just a note, and not a letter.*

*I always thank God for the mission God has called us to. Yesterday God told me clearly that I had better get serious with this ministry because the time is short, and I know you agree as well. Dag, I am bent on seeing the mighty hand of God in our ministry.*

*I'll never be satisfied with anything short of that, and God Himself knows. As we launch out, I'm so certain of the fact that God will be confirmed, so that what was said of Christ, “that a man approved of God by many signs and wonders” would also be said of us and the ministry; so that man's faith will not rely on the wisdom of men but the power of God.*

*I know that we really do a lot. I see you as an answer to a need in my life. You might not understand this very well, but I hope Maame would explain it further. **THE HOLD OF EVANGELISM ON ME GETS STRONGER WITH EVERY PASSING DAY. IT NEVER LESSENS. I DREAM OF IT, WAKE UP WITH THAT DREAM AND GO TO BED, WITH IT STILL OCCUPYING THE GREATER PART OF MY MIND.***

*I know that God will lead us by His own Spirit and we shall see with our own eyes utterly, many coming to taste for the first time “the unspeakable gift.” Whatever the Holy Spirit tells you and whatever leading He gives you, be sure that I’ll agree with you.*

*Dag, we have to make it, we can make it, and we will make it in Jesus’ name.*

*Well, for the sake of formality let me just wish you success in your exams. You’re a stranger to failure.*

*Regards to Asamoah, Stanley, Donkash and all those who call on the Lord from a pure heart. Grace and peace be multiplied unto you.*

*I planned coming to church there on Sunday but I can’t because I’m supposed to preach at Nautical College. I’ll be there the next Sunday.*

*Love from Cynthia, of course.  
Affections*

*Brother T*

*I hope that after exams you’ll be free enough with the permission of M so that we can talk and pray for these times.*



## **I'm With You**

*Pastor,*

*I thank my God upon every remembrance of you. In fact, you mean so much to me, and I don't feel worthy to be a co-worker with you. However, God has considered my low estate and given me favour in your sight. Henceforth all men shall call me blessed!! Please don't let Maame tell you that these are my usual and normal raps. I mean this with all my heart and God is my witness.*

*Well Pastor, I have great confidence in you as my Pastor and I know we are a terror to the kingdom of the devil and a great embarrassment to demons. Hallelujah.*

*We're going to work together, walk together and be an unflinching threat to the negative spiritual world.*

*And I also wish to use this occasion to reaffirm my pledge and commitment to you. I want you to know that, you can trust me to the last degree. I'm very stable and settled in mind, purpose, and objective.*

*Glory to Jesus!!*

*I really wish I could come home and give you a birthday hug, but where I am, I'm restrained and inhibited by our perceiving circumstances.*

*I'm with you in the spirit any way.*

*Bro. T*



## Let's Die Preaching

C47 An/Sarbah

Legon

20/6/86

*Hello Brother Dag,*

*Only the Holy Ghost can reveal to you what's been going on in my heart since I came from Korle-Bu. Like I said, I never knew that you had such a vision at all. I really bless God for you and for making us to know each other in these times when so many believers are seeing the 2nd coming of Christ and the end of the age as only subjects for rare curiosity.*

*The hope of Christ's return is not certainly an escapist clause. **It's not an alibi for non-involvement. To the contrary, it's a spur to holiness, to evangelism and to obedience.** It's a maturation to make God's words on earth OUR OWN, for as Jesus said "Occupy till I come" (Luke 19:13).*

***One man said we are to behave and give and love and work as though Jesus Christ died yesterday, rose today and is coming again tomorrow.***

*Surely, the greatest need of the Church today is not more members, more buildings, more money. The supreme issue is missions and evangelism, repentance and revival. It is not great strength or great wealth that Christ calls for in His Church on the eve of His coming. It is great faithfulness to Him and great obedience to His will and to the opportunities He gives us.*

***DAG, LET'S DIE PREACHING!** Let's give our whole heart to it. Let's make it our own business so that we can say with Paul, "My Gospel". It makes a lot of difference.*



*Let's be pliable tools in the hands of the Master. He really needs us. I'm dying to see next term come. Our, at long last, sign-wonder-miracle which we have desired is near us!! Glory.*

*I can see my own come to know God, I can see the power of God present to lead, and to see establishment and abundance in the kingdom of God. Glory!!*

*Dag, I'm quite sorry if I've not been able to express myself quite well. The Spirit will reveal it to you. I have a burden I cannot describe. It keeps bubbling in my heart and belly. The word of God is like fire in my bones. Oh, the world is waiting for us.*

***There's a command from above: "Go ye unto all the world". There's a cry from beneath: "Father Abraham send somebody to preach to my relatives," and there's a call from without "Come over to Macedonia and help us".***

***WE SHALL SURELY DO IT, IF EVEN IT MEANS SACRIFICING AND INVESTING OUR LAST PENNY INTO IT, OR EVEN WALKING OVER BROKEN BOTTLES.***

*And the God of All Grace shall see us through. Regards from my beloved C.*

***EATS***

## ***Chapter Seven***

# ***The Missionaries***

**GO YE therefore, and teach ALL NATIONS, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: And, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.**

*Matthew 28:19,20*

This is the famous Great Commission that compels Christians to go into all the world as preachers. Unfortunately, it is one of the least obeyed commands of the Bible. The Church tends to “stay” more than “go”. These were the last words of Jesus and must therefore be taken very seriously. This command is as valid today as it was two thousand years ago. It is not only the promises of prosperity that are valid today. The instruction “to go into all the world” still rings loud and clear as an eternal command from the Lord.

This command takes on a new meaning when you think of the kind of world we live in today. The regions where Christianity used to be active have now changed. The spiritually alive sections of the world have shifted from Europe to the poorer and more deprived parts of the world. Today, Europe is the seat of Satan, with most people on that continent being atheists or non-believers. There is now a great need for us to reach out to such parts of the world.

## **The Shifting Responsibility**

**It looks as though the responsibility of spreading the Gospel has shifted from Whites to men of colour.** Whenever we think of missionaries we think of White people coming to save the unreached and uncivilised Black races. We imagine pious White missionaries going through the sweltering tropical jungles to reach savages in remote villages.

However, all this has changed! There are not as many savages in remote villages as there were four hundred years ago. Today, it is the White people who need to be reached. It is the White people living in rich and affluent cities who have no knowledge of God.

Do not misunderstand me, there are still thousands of poor villages and towns which need to hear about Jesus. But no one can deny the fact that the spiritual landscape of the world has changed enormously. The cloud of ignorance and spiritual backwardness has shifted to the western nations of the world.

**Spiritual death has placed its icy hands on the churches of Europe.** Church buildings that seated

hundreds of ardent worshippers every Sunday, today receive less than fifteen old men and women.

Many churches meet every two weeks instead of every week. On Sunday mornings, the young people are recovering from hangovers and the debauchery of the night before. They have no time or knowledge of God.

In Switzerland for instance, many of the *pastors* do not believe in God. They are often state employees who have a job to do.

A recent millennium survey in England showed that only 28% of the population believed in the traditional understanding of a “personal God”. 37% in the survey saw God as a “spirit or life force”. This obviously shows a lack of knowledge of the Bible and its teachings.

There was also a remarkable drop in the number of people who believed in Jesus as the Son of God. 45% of those questioned believed that Jesus was the Son of God as compared to 71% in 1957. This shows that over the last forty years, over one third of the believers have given up their faith.

**And because iniquity shall abound, THE LOVE OF MANY SHALL WAX COLD.**

*Matthew 24:12*

It is time for us to go again into every corner of the world with the Good News of Jesus Christ. I am very grateful for the Americans and Europeans who came to Africa with the Gospel. Perhaps I would belong to some other religion today if they had not come.

This command must be taken seriously today. If we do not go when He has told us to, God may be forced to use other methods to drive us into the mission fields.

In Acts 1:8, Jesus told his disciples to wait for the Spirit. He promised that after the Holy Spirit came they would be able to go very far with the Gospel. Unfortunately, like most of us do, the disciples did not obey the commandment but *stayed together* in the comfort of Jerusalem.

**But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.**

*Acts 1:8*

It is much easier to change the carpet in the church and to have a church picnic than to go into all the world and preach. It is when you do what is hard and difficult that you move forward in the right direction. It may not be easy, but it is worth it!

When the Church failed to send out missionaries, the Lord allowed persecution to speak a little louder about missionary work.

**...And at that time there was A GREAT PERSECUTION against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all SCATTERED ABROAD throughout the regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the apostles. Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed. And there was great joy in that city.**

*Acts 8:1, 5-8*

Can you see what power lay within the disciples who were gathered together in Jerusalem? They just had to go! When they went, great things happened. You have no idea what will happen when you go. I speak to all pastors and men of authority in the Church. It is your duty to send men and women as missionaries into the entire world. **If you fail to do this, you are inadvertently sentencing those parts of the world to spiritual death and hell.**

I shudder when I imagine what it would have been like if missionaries had not sacrificed their lives for some of us to know Jesus. It is this very thought that spurs me on in my quest for world evangelism. I know that within me lies the

power to teach whole nations. Jesus said we should go to the world and teach nations. By your obedience, multitudes will find peace and salvation. I think we often do not know the effect of one man's obedience.

**Therefore as by the offence of one judgement came upon all men to condemnation; even so BY THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF ONE THE FREE GIFT CAME UPON ALL MEN...**

*Romans 5:18*

The story of the Basel Mission of Switzerland has always intrigued me. Perhaps it is because my grandparents and mother come from there. I have always been touched by the sacrifice that the Basel missionaries made for the advancement of the Gospel in Ghana.

## **Is there no Need for Missionaries?**

Some people thought there was no need for such an organisation to send missionaries into the world when Swiss people themselves needed Christ. This is a common argument that leads to "paralysis by analysis".

I know there are people today who would say, "Why should we send missionaries to any country when there are millions of unsaved people all around in our own country?" "There is no need to go anywhere, the sinners are next door!" "It is much more economical to do evangelism in our

neighbourhood!” As I said earlier, I shudder when I think of what would have happened if that argument had prevailed over the simple command of our Lord to “go”.

I wish to quote the argument that one such person made against the concept of missionaries being sent out from Switzerland in the nineteenth century.

*“Wouldn’t it be strange, if a mission were sent out from Switzerland, while there is such dire need that someone comes to us in order to put an end to the rampant domestic paganism in the heads of our own nobles and commoners, smart-heads and dimwits alike?”*(Excerpt translated from Schlatter, Vol. 1, p.13)

It seems there was a loaded debate as to whether people should be sent out into the mission fields of the world or not. However, some zealous members who would not be deterred, set up the *Basel Evangelical Missionary Society*. Gradually a complete missionary organisation, with its own overseas programs was established.

## **Into all the World**

You will notice from this history that the Swiss people attempted to go “into all the world”. They were not distracted by the fact that there were sinners in their own cities. **Jesus never said that we should go when everyone around us is saved. He just said that we should go!** Notice how the Church in Switzerland sent missionaries to all parts of the world at great cost. They sent people to Russia, West Africa and Asia.



One thousand eight hundred years after Christ had given his instruction, there was a need to obey and go into all the world! Today, two thousand years after Jesus gave the missionary command, I declare to you that there is still a need for us to go! We must go! If we love Him, we must feed His sheep! We must find a way of going to every single nation of this world with the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

The example of the missionaries of old should serve as inspiration to us in this modern world. We must not just say, “Wow, that was a great effort!” We must rise up and do the same and more! Let’s now see how the Basel Missionaries gave up their lives as they obeyed the Great Commission.

## **The Basel Missionaries in Russia**

<sup>1</sup>In 1820, two graduates were sent out to the Caucasus – an area that had been newly annexed by the Tsarist Russian empire. In these vast lands, between the Black Sea and the Caspian, there were sizeable communities of German and Swiss settlers in need of pastoral care. But there were also the hitherto little known indigenous peoples. Some of them, had already been Christianised in the early beginnings of the faith whilst others had become Muslims.

It was particularly this latter group whom the Basel Missionaries tried to reach with the Gospel. However, this effort ended when the Tsar, faced with a revolt, removed the missionaries out of his empire.

**The Basel Mission continued to despatch missionaries to the world through other missionary societies.** The feedback from these outreaches opened the eyes of their leadership to new missionary horizons. Notably, West Africa, India and China. These destinations eventually became the most important targets of the Basel Mission's activities.

It wasn't easy and they certainly had problems. Arguments over hierarchic subordination, questions of liturgy and issues of culture arose. However, the work progressed and other people followed the Basel Mission idea and the Bremen Mission for example, was established.

## **The Basel Missionaries in Sierra Leone**

The first targets of the Basel Mission in Sub-Sahara Africa were Sierra Leone and Liberia.

“These territories had been acquired by British and American philanthropists respectively with the intention to resettle freed slaves. Governmental backing had been assured in both cases. In Basel, this development was seen as a good chance for gaining a missionary foothold on the little known African Continent. News went around that a modern education system was about to be set up. Hence, teachers and pastoral workers were required.

According to the thinking of the European missionary movement of that time, the ‘Whiteman’ had to repay an enormous moral debt because of his former trade in slaves

on a. This debt could be repaid through good works. Another aspect was that some indigenous societies still persisted in hunting and selling their next of kin; they had to be freed from such conditions of moral backwardness.

‘Sierra Leone’ was originally the only name of the peninsula, on which the modern capital of Freetown is located. Freetown itself was founded in 1787. The ex-slaves to be resettled came from England and North America, later also from intercepted ships in the Atlantic Ocean. At that time, the hinterland of the peninsula appeared on the maps of the Europeans as nameless tribal territory.

It was precisely in this part of the country, where the Basel men ultimately wanted to work: away from the European influenced coastal settlements. **In January 1823, four missionaries arrived in Freetown, from where they ventured out to their individual destinations up-country. Two of the ‘brothers’ were accompanied by their wives. A few months later, the bachelors and the wives of the two remaining missionaries died of yellow fever, which had broken out in epidemic proportions. In no time most of the expatriate community were dead or gone.**

The remaining ‘brothers’ and a missionary, who had arrived later, stayed back as the only Europeans in the territory. They returned to Freetown to carry on the work of the British based Church Mission Society, under whose protection they

had come. A year later, the colonial administration decreed that henceforth only British nationals would be allowed in for doing missionary work. At this stage, the Committee in Basel decided to shift its focus to Liberia.

## **The Basel Missionaries in Liberia**

The territory of Liberia had been dedicated as a resettlement area in 1817 by the African Colonial Society. This private organisation constituted itself in Washington, where it enjoyed governmental backing. The Society's leader, an American citizen by name of Jehudi Ashmun, was installed as the territory's first Governor. Liberia should henceforth be developed as a homeland for freed slaves from plantations in the Southern United States.

In 1847, it became sub-Saharan Africa's first independent country. As can be imagined, the setting up of an American-type administration on these shores was by no means easy. At one stage in 1822, three dozens of the new colonists had to fight back about 800 natives.

But a few years later, Ashmun felt comfortable enough to issue a public announcement that invited missionary societies to start work in Liberia. The call fell on ready ears in Basel. After the setback experienced in Sierra Leone it offered fresh hope.

Anxieties concerning the high health risks were brushed off with the typical confidence of those, who lay their ultimate trust in the hands of ‘Him who had called them’. Inspector Blumhardt wrote in the Mission Magazine of 1827: *“We would have considered it shameful to the name of Christ to close our hearts and ears to the misery and the outcries for help of these poor souls in Africa, just because we shied away from the dangers of death. Neither does the European slave trader shy away from the perils of a life-consuming climate, when he roams the same shores day and night like a predator...”*

As it turned out, Ashmun had painted a rather rosy picture in which *“reality and wishful thinking were inextricably mixed up”*. Adequate housing was unavailable even in the capital, living costs prohibitively high and, worst of all, the population showed little interest in what the missionaries had to offer. The Governor himself fell seriously ill after the arrival of four Basel Mission missionaries in 1828. He soon had to be repatriated to the United States, where he died three months later.

The remaining administrators did not really care about the missionary endeavour. Someone seemed to have even retained the mail coming from Basel instead of passing it on. But the proverbial ‘straw that broke the camel’s back’ came in the guise of the hostile attitude of the American Baptist community, then the only other church organisation in Monrovia.

These fellow Christians reportedly deemed it necessary to exclude the Basel ‘brothers’ from church service, for the sole reason that they had not been baptised in accordance

with Baptist rules! This rendered the newcomers ineffective as preachers, since they had lost all credibility in the eyes of the town folks.

Disgusted, the missionaries left Monrovia to set up their stations inland, just as their colleagues had previously done in Sierra Leone. They all went their own way, in order to work among the native population. Bit by bit, the group dwindled again due to death or illness. Finally, the last remaining missionary's seed money ran out, before he had managed to establish a viable economic basis as expected by the leadership in Basel.

After this fiasco, the Mission Directors decided to place the next investment on more promising soil. **This opened the way for the most successful chapter of Basel missionary activities in Africa: the one on the Gold Coast.** But other important ventures on the Black Continent were to follow, foremost in Nigeria, Cameroon, Congo and the Sudan<sup>1</sup>.

## **Two Important Lessons**

There are two important lessons to learn from the mission to Liberia.

❑ Firstly, the missionaries were expected to establish a “viable economic basis”. This meant that they were to find jobs that would sustain them in ministry. This is the lay ministry in practice in the nineteenth century. **People became farmers, traders and builders in order to survive as missionaries in a foreign country.**

You can readily see that it is not a new idea to let people work for a living as they do the work of ministry. I am constantly amazed that people want the church to bear an impossible financial burden that limits the scope and extent of its outreach work.

Today, people take pride in announcing how many hundreds of people the church employs. It is as though the more people you have on your payroll, the more successful you are. Dear friend, what matters is what we are able to accomplish for the Lord. We must win the lost at any cost! If it means we have to find a job, so be it. If it means we have to be fully employed by the church, so be it!

❑ The next lesson is to be learnt from the attitude of Inspector Blumhardt who thought it was a shame to close our ears to the cries of souls. His logic was very simple. If European slave traders were prepared to risk their lives and health roaming the shores of tropical West Africa for money, then the

Christian missionaries could risk their lives for the souls of men.

## **The Basel Missionaries in Ghana**

Around 1826, the Basel Mission sought to widen its network of sponsors. Like-minded religious circles were approached, particularly in Scandinavia. These advances from Basel were first picked up in Denmark by Pastor Rønne, the Inspector of the Danish Missionary Society (DMS).

Rönne had once been a tutor of the Crown Prince and enjoyed the confidence of the Danish Court. He also was eager to give the DMS a new push, as it was about to slip into a state of lethargy. An arrangement with the dynamic Basel Mission seemed to be just the right approach.

Precisely in that same year, Governor Johan von Richelieu, the Governor of the Danish station of Christiansborg on the Gold Coast (Danish sources refer to it as the ‘Guinea Coast’), arrived in Copenhagen on home leave. *While briefing the King, von Richelieu impressed on His Majesty the urgent need for teachers and preachers in this Danish possession.*

Like the other European powers, who had established themselves on the Gold Coast, Denmark pursued essentially commercial interests. Besides trading with the indigenous population and keeping invaders away from the surrounding areas, the Danish garrison exercised very little influence over the territory.

The fort of Christiansborg with its Danish and mulatto population was virtually an European enclave on African soil. Seen through the eyes of its expatriate staff, a term on the Gold Coast meant privations and restrictions in many ways. Moreover, it bore a high risk of death through tropical diseases. A man would go there only for filling his pocket as fast as possible, usually by bartering guns and schnapps for gold and slaves.

Under the prevailing Danish law, each colonial employee was allowed to co-habit with one native woman, who thereby acquired certain rights and privileges. This gave rise to a



steadily growing mulatto population. It was for the educational and spiritual needs of these people, and of course for the benefit of the Danish garrison staff, that the Danish Government had invited the Basel missionaries to establish themselves in Christiansborg.

In Basel, one had a different outlook. By missionary standards, which were notoriously strict, the level of morality at Christiansborg appeared as abysmal. The Mission Committee showed little enthusiasm for the idea of uplifting the new and so far unsettled class of people that resulted from the promiscuity of European soldiers.

**In any case, the focus of the Basel missionaries was on the indigenous population, not the Europeans and their affiliations.** But they were ready for a compromise, i.e. to let one of their staff serve the garrison, while the others would eventually be despatched to areas outside.

An agreement was finally reached, for which both sides made concessions. The Basel Mission got the permission for inland work and in return accepted the hierarchic

subordination of its missionaries under a Danish Lutheran Bishop. Otherwise they could retain full operational autonomy.

In December 1828, four missionaries arrived at Christiansborg. They were the Germans Karl F. Salbach, Gottlieb Holzwarth and Johannes Henke, and the Swiss Johannes Schmidt. Death cruelly intervened. Within a few

months three of them had already perished. Towards the end of 1831 the fourth one, Henke, also followed them into the grave.

Had it not been for the slow pace of communications in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, the Mission Committee would probably have given up the whole idea. **However, before the news of the last death arrived at headquarters, the Mission Board had already decided to send reinforcements.**

In 1832 these arrived: Andreas Riis and Peter Jäger, both from Denmark, and Christian Friedrich Heinze, a medical doctor from Saxony. Dr Heinze was to study the situation of the extraordinary health risks that would be encountered on the Gold Coast, and come out with recommendations for preventive measures.

Ironically, ‘Invincible Death’ summoned him first. And not long after this loss, Riis lowered Jäger into the grave. *He nearly followed himself, had it not been for a native herbalist, who saw Riis through the worst convulsions.* An Afro-Danish trader, Georg Lutterodt, then offered Riis his comfortable farmhouse for recovery.

In 1835, Riis started building-up the Basel Mission’s first inland station on the Gold Coast. It was in the town of Akropong, capital of the small Akuapem State. Riis erected his living quarters first. The house was put on a solid stone foundation and equipped with doors, windows and a functional wide roof.

Such attributes the local people had never seen before. His energetic way of taking action earned Riis the nickname of ‘Osiadan’, meaning the house builder (3.3.). The missionaries that followed produced similar structures. Quite a few of these can be seen to this day.

Akropong eventually became the very nerve centre of the Basel Mission in Ghana. Symbolically speaking: Riis’ stone-based house in Akropong had served as *‘the rock on which the Basel Church was built’*!

Why did Riis choose Akropong for establishing his first inland mission station? For answering this question we shall now briefly turn to the second half of the previous, 18<sup>th</sup> century.

There we discover another remarkable pioneer: the Danish citizen Dr P.E. Isert, a botanist and medical doctor, also an admirer of the Genevan philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Influenced by the latter’s ‘back-to-nature philosophy’, Isert was convinced that the damage done to African societies during the period of the transatlantic slave trade could be somewhat repaired, if one encouraged and assisted Africans in the running of their own *‘plantation colonies’* on indigenous soil. These lands would be reserved for ex-slaves, who were to make a living out of crops produced for overseas markets.

*The concept we see emerging here could in fact be the very first development project ever proposed for Africa!*

Isert mooted his idea in a widely sold book after he returned from an exploratory journey to the Gold Coast in 1786. For the same purpose, he later returned to the Gold

Coast where he explored the plateau on the Akuapem range, about 60-km inland from Christianborg. **He wrote in his memoirs that he literally had to cut his way through the bush, crossing 40 km of the Akra Plain.** On the plateau, he encountered a comparatively healthy and hospitable environment.

In any case, Nana Atiemo, the Paramount Chief of the State of Akuapem at the time, readily granted him land. The project seemed to take off well. A first report dated 16 January 1789, was carried by Isert himself to Christiansborg. As it turned out, this was also his last one, since he suddenly succumbed to a fever. After a few years, however, the project had to be abandoned. Nevertheless, Dr Isert's efforts were not wasted. They inspired the Basel missionaries, who arrived on the Gold Coast half a century later.

When the Basel missionaries first set foot on the Gold Coast in 1828, the territory – which later became the Republic of Ghana – had British, Danish and Dutch settlements interspersed along its shores.

These settlements were essentially fortified trading posts from which the respective governors exercised some indirect control over limited tracts of land extending not too far into the densely forested coastal belt. Various kings, among whom the leader of the Asantes', the Asantehene, the most powerful, held the remainder of the territory.

Throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> century, the Asante Kingdom fiercely resisted any European attempts at further colonisation. Only after the British had bought up the Danish and Dutch possessions, and henceforth could launch a cohesive

campaign against the Asantes, did they manage to subdue this nation of proud warriors. **At a certain moment in the long sequence of Asante Wars, a group of Basel missionaries was captured in Anum, east of the Volta River. They were brought to the kingdom's capital, Kumase, and kept there during four years as hostages, albeit under a relatively mild regime of 'town arrest' (chapter 3.9.).**

Given the political situation just mentioned, and also the arrangements made with other missionary organisations concerning their respective regional priorities, the Basel Mission was for the most part of the 19<sup>th</sup> century active in the inland area between the Volta and Pra Rivers.

Along the coast, the Basel people at first merely covered the Ga and Dangme speaking belt around Accra, later spreading to Winneba in the west and Ada in the east. Hence, the Basel Mission operated between the areas of the Bremen Mission which was engaged since 1847 in the core country of the Ewe, and that of the Wesleyan (Methodist) Mission, which had in 1835 established itself in Cape Coast and first tended to spread westward from there.

All of these mission societies had to stay clear of the Asante Kingdom, which then spread over the main parts of the forest belt. The only exception was a Wesleyan interlude in Kumase from 1840 to about 1870. During many of these years, however, its lone representative was not allowed to be active.

Only after the deportation of the incumbent Asantehene, Otumfuo Prempeh I, to Elmina Castle (and later to the Seychelles Islands, which marked the end of the Asante Wars) were Christian missions allowed into Asante. This became the high time for the Basel Mission, which methodically laid its network of mission stations over the realm.

Finally, the year 1918 brought an end to the involvement of the Basel Mission in Gold Coast as an independent church organisation. **At that time, the Mission was reaching out north as far as Yendi in the Savannah Belt, was approaching the border with the Ivory Coast in the western direction, and had consolidated its eastern positions along the Volta River. It thus had mission stations in an area covering about half of modern Ghana<sup>1</sup>.**

### **Isn't That Amazing?**

It is amazing to see the extent of missionary activities carried out by white people in West Africa. Almost two hundred years ago when there was no email, telephone, fax, jet airlines, electricity or running water, people were prepared to go as far as places like Yendi in the north of Ghana! Even today, in the year 2000, you would rarely find a Ghanaian pastor eager to go to Yendi.

Dear friend, the Europeans no longer believe in this Gospel which they died for. It is the turn of the people who still have faith, to take the Gospel to every remote corner.

May we go further than they did, because we have more knowledge, more revelation, more equipment and more access. May we cover more remote areas than they did! May we not fail in this God given responsibility. We must win the lost at any cost! If we have to become missionaries, so be it! If we have to die in a foreign land, so be it!

*“We would have considered it shameful to the name of Christ to close our hearts and ears to the misery and the outcries for help of these poor souls in Africa, just because we shied away from the dangers of death. Neither does the European slave trader shy away from the perils of a life-consuming climate, when he roams the same shores day and night like a predator...”*

INSPECTOR BLUMHARDT- 1826

***<sup>1</sup>EXCERPTS FROM THE CHAPTER- PORTRAIT OF A PROTESTANT MISSION, OF THE BOOK, “SURVIVORS ON THE GOLD COAST- THE BASEL MISSIONARIES IN COLONIAL GHANA” BY PETER A. SCHWEIZER.***

**USED BY PERMISSION**

## *Chapter Eight*

# *Two Keys To The Harvest*

**W**hy do pastors struggle and fight over sheep? Why do pastors want to have members from other churches in their church? Why do pastors start churches by breaking up other churches? I believe it is because they do not know the keys to the harvest. Let me share two important keys with you.

### **1. The Key of Massive Organization**

There are more than enough souls waiting to be saved. There are not enough buildings to contain the harvest if it were reaped. **Unlock the harvest with the key of massive organization.** What do I mean by massive organization? Pastors must mobilize their church members to have massive organized prayer, massive organized fasting and massive organized outreaches.

How utterly boring it must be if a Christian's life is just listening to a thirty-minute sermon every week. For goodness sake, there must be more to Christianity than being a pew-warmer. Christians will find satisfaction when



they fast and pray for souls.

Do you know why many people do not attend prayer meetings? It is because the pastor himself does not get involved.

**Fasting and prayer is the key that removes scales from a sinner's eyes.** When you pray before witnessing, you will have better results. People will be saved! Just like Jesus, you will be anointed when you pray. If you are not prayerful, people will just tell you, "I see your point, but I don't agree with you." All your preaching will be like water dripping off a duck's back!

I'm speaking to pastors now! Mobilize the entire church to pray. Mobilize the entire church to fast. Pray for church growth. Pray for salvation. Pray for people to become born-again. You will have tremendous results.

**A pastor's job is not just to preach and teach, but to lead the sheep.** You must lead the sheep into outreaches and soul winning. They will be blessed when they have something to do with their spiritual energy.

Organize crusades, breakfast meetings, door-to-door witnessing, street evangelism and concerts that win souls. Involve the whole church and discover the joy of soul winning.

On one of the Sundays, send out your members to bring in anyone they can find on the streets. The following week, organize 'Operation Bring-Your-Family' — that is, a Sunday when everyone brings his or her household to church. Then plan for Sundays when you can have 'Operation Bring-Your-Colleagues'. The whole church

will invite their co-workers to church. You will experience tremendous church growth.

One day, find out how many members of your church were saved in the church. As you do more soul winning, you will find out that more and more of your members will come in through soul winning.

**It is better to have church growth through soul winning than through the transfer of angry and discontented members from other churches.**

## **2. The Key of Anagkazo**

“Anagkazo” is a Greek word which means “to compel, to force, to drive, to necessitate, to threaten and to use any means at your disposal” to convince someone (Luke 14:23). You will discover that Jesus used the word “anagkazo” when he was speaking about evangelism. The master sent out his servants to *anagkazo* anyone they could find on the streets, highways, hedges and in the gutters.

**And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel [anagkazo] them to come in, that my house may be filled.**

*Luke 14:23*

Many of those originally invited to the party did not bother to come. What is Jesus trying to tell us? **The Lord is showing us that gentle invitations will not reach the lost.** We have to use any other means at our disposal. Our churches will be empty if we do not use the key of *anagkazo*.

Earlier in this book, I spoke of how we organized an international crusade at a prominent park in our city. Many souls were saved during those three days. One of the keys that we used was the *key of anagkazo*. When the crowd had gathered, we gave a command to the old and young alike. We told them to go out into the streets where the prostitutes and broken-hearted were and bring them in. There was a clear command, “Do not return to the crusade alone. You must bring a soul with you!”

I went out myself with the visiting American evangelist, and together we brought back some people to the crusade grounds. We are not trying to impress anybody. We are trying to obey our Master’s command. Many things that are impressive to man are not impressive to God.

I heard one evangelist describing how he had printed several million books and had them distributed to every home in a part of Europe. I was most excited when he said that seventy thousand people had written back responding to Christ through the books. That is anagkazo at work - forcing the gospel into every home! He was using every means available to push the gospel into rebellious European letterboxes.

**Dear friends, our gentle Christian smiles have little effect in a hostile world filled with sceptical people.** People do not trust anything or anyone! Africans thought they could trust their leaders. Then came African dictators, who like vampires, sucked the wealth of their nations. Americans thought they could trust their president and then came the presidential scandals.

People thought they could trust the engineers and pilots and then came the TWA, Swissair, Kenya Airways and the Concorde crashes. Many people trusted pastors and then came the tele-evangelists' scandals.

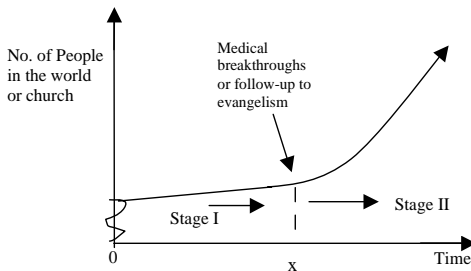
Folks are sceptical about the solutions we offer through Christ. It is time for us to rise up with the key of anagkazo and bring in the harvest. Let us use every means available, such as invitations, entreaties and warnings. Let us use the radio, television and the print media. Let's go out there to a dying world and give them the good news of salvation.

If someone's house was on fire and you could see that he was about to perish, would you give him a gentle nudge or would you shake him out of his sleep? Win the lost at any cost! Win the lost if it means using 'Anagkazo'. (*See the book "Anagkazo" by this author.*)

## Chapter Nine

# The Science Of The Follow-Up Ministry

### Population/Follow-up Graph



#### Stage I

- Mortality rate was high.
- No medicines, no medical answers.
- The growth of the population was very slow.

#### Stage II

- At time “x” there was a medical revolution.
- Mortality rate was greatly reduced: fewer people were dying.
- Suddenly, the population began to shoot up rapidly.

*If a church is at Stage I there is little or no growth. When a church begins to practise follow-up, it retains the converts it gets from evangelism. Notice how the growth of the church increases in Stage II.*

You will notice from the graph that follow-up leads to retention of souls. **Without a follow-up ministry, evangelism is virtually a waste of time, money and resources.** All our efforts will be in vain. Every church must develop an effective follow-up ministry that deals with the souls that come to the Lord.

## **Don't Abandon Your New Baby**

The follow-up ministry is a scientific way of preventing the loss of converts. So much energy is spent in winning the lost. A proportional amount of time and resources must be spent to retain the harvest. One of the saddest things I saw in the hospital, was a little baby that had been abandoned by its mother. The mother had gone through nine months of pregnancy, struggled in the labour ward and finally delivered a bouncing baby girl.

When no one was watching, this lady slipped out of the labour ward and vanished. What was going to happen to that baby? Her future lay in the hands of fate. I felt particularly sorry when the nurses had to ask some of the lactating mothers to donate some milk to the baby.

Let me also ask this: What is going to happen to all the souls who come to the Lord? **Follow-up is to new converts as breast-feeding is to babies.**

The growth of the population of the world is very similar to the growth of the church. The population of the world had been considerably low for hundreds of years. At the turn of the century, things began to change and the population began to increase dramatically.

The reason for this turning point was not because people were having more babies. Neither was it due to younger people having more children. It was due to the improvement in medical science that occurred at the beginning of the twentieth century. A drastic reduction in the mortality rate has resulted in a much larger population.

**If the church were to do follow-up, and retain the people we won, the church would experience major growth.** Planting churches where crusades and evangelism have taken place is another major part of follow-up. Follow-up also involves prayer for the converts that have been won to the Lord.

**My little children, of whom I TRAVAIL [pray] in birth again until Christ be formed in you.**

*Galatians 4:19*

You must travail for your souls in prayer. That is how to follow them up spiritually. After spiritual follow-up, you must visit them. New converts are established through visitation. In my church we do not only have counsellors but we have people who go to the homes of the converts as well.

## **Avoid this Mistake**

One common mistake people make when they do follow-up is to waste time on non-serious and ‘un-saved’ converts. Paul told Timothy to spend time on faithful people who were serious about Christ.

**And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.**

*2 Timothy 2:2*



## ***Chapter Ten***

# ***Stars Forever***

**And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness AS THE STARS FOR EVER and ever.**

*Daniel 12:3*

God has promised in His Word that those who win souls and those who turn many lives to Christ will enjoy a permanent status of stardom in heaven. The glory of the film stars and the pop stars of this world is fleeting.

Some of these stars were so famous that everyone in the world knew them. Yet, a few years down the line, they were forgotten. Their names are not mentioned anymore. They are actually no longer stars.

God has promised every soul winner that he will be a star forever. Thank God that your heavenly stardom will not be a temporary one.

There are several other special rewards that are listed for those who lived and worked for Jesus:

## ***1. Dinner at the Tree of Life***

**He that hath an ear, let him hear what the spirit saith unto the churches; to him that overcometh will I give TO EAT OF THE TREE OF LIFE, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.**

*Revelation 2:7*

There is going to be a special occasion where dinner will be served at the Tree of Life. Some of us will be invited. Do you remember when there was an important function to which you were not invited? How painful it was! Make sure that you are invited to the dinner at the Tree of Life.

These things look like insignificant prizes. One day, it will matter whether you have them or not. Everyone that overcomes in the ministry will receive this special invitation.

## ***2. Becoming a Member of the Royal Family of Heaven***

**...Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee A CROWN of life.**

*Revelation 2:10*

A crown separates royalty from the commoners! If you think there are classes on earth, please get ready for heaven. If you think the differences between the Royal Family and the rest of us commoners are too great, then get ready!

Fortunately, you and I have a chance to possess a crown and become royalty in heaven. You will have a chance to be a part of the royal family in heaven.

Missionaries who have been faithful unto death can expect to be members of the royal family of heaven.

### ***3. Escaping Damage from the Second Death***

**He that hath an ear, let him hear what the spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh SHALL NOT BE HURT of the second death.**

*Revelation 2:11*

It seems that some people will be hurt by the event of the second death. In other words, they will have some damage as they pass through this experience. The Bible teaches us that some people will be saved as through fire.

**If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; YET SO AS BY FIRE.**

*1 Corinthians 3:15*

To be saved through fire means that everything gets burnt up but the individual survives. *Although you are saved you experience great loss to your property and personal possessions.* Everyone that overcomes has this great

promise. You will not be hurt or experience damage through the process of the second death. I hope you see your advantages piling up as you overcome in the ministry.

#### ***4. Hidden Manna***

**...to him that overcometh will I give to eat of THE HIDDEN MANNA...**

*Revelation 2:17*

What is hidden manna? Of what use is this hidden manna to my life? Dear friend, you do not know what pertains in heaven. Perhaps those who have this hidden manna will have some great advantage in heaven.

When you are a child you do not know the significance of certain things. You do not know the importance of being an American citizen. It means nothing to you as a child, but if you were a grown up you would probably appreciate having U.S. citizenship. Perhaps the hidden manna will be like this – an object of great importance that you will discover only upon arriving in heaven.

#### ***5. The White Stone***

**...And will give him A WHITE STONE, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.**

*Revelation 2:17*

What is this white stone and what can it do for me? Once again, we will probably discover its value when we arrive in heaven. I can imagine why you don't think much of this white stone. After all, what is a stone on earth? But I tell you, it may be the one thing that everyone in heaven longs for. Don't be jealous if I have a white stone and you don't!

## ***6. Appointments over Nations***

**And he that overcometh and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give POWER OVER THE NATIONS.**

*Revelation 2:26*

I am happy to announce to you that, appointments as rulers over the different countries of the world will be given to people who do the work of the Lord. Perhaps you will be the President of Mexico. Perhaps you will be appointed over Fiji. You will sit on a throne and have an unbelievable status.

I was amazed when I read Rick Joyner's "*The Final Quest*". All sorts of people were sitting on glorious thrones. He described how the least of these thrones were greater than any earthly throne. People were rulers over cities on earth and others were rulers over the affairs of heaven. Others still were rulers over the affairs of the physical creation, such as the stars and galaxies. How real these little scriptures had become! May we not miss our thrones. Win the lost at any cost and you will be appointed over nations!

## ***7. A Morning Star***

**And he that overcometh and keepeth my works unto the end... I will give him THE MORNING STAR.**

*Revelation 2:26,28*

This morning star is one of the rewards that we will only understand in heaven. What the morning star will do for you, no one knows. I assure you, however, that when you get to heaven you will be glad if you have a morning star.

## ***8. Heavenly Designer Clothes***

**He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in WHITE RAIMENT...**

*Revelation 3:5*

Special clothes will be provided for special people who overcome in the ministry. At a graduation ceremony in most universities, the robes that are worn have a meaning. They signify your achievements and they signify your rank in the academic world. For instance, three bars on the sleeve of the robe often indicate a doctorate degree.

As we move about in heaven, those who have these special robes will be distinguished in their heavenly ranks by their achievements on earth. Mind you, these robes are not given to everyone but to “him that overcometh”. Win the lost at any cost!

## ***9. A Divine Recommendation for Heaven***

**He that overcometh... I WILL CONFESS HIS NAME before my Father, and before his angels.**

*Revelation 3:5*

Upon arriving in heaven, you may or may not receive a special recommendation by Jesus to the Father. In the army for instance, after a war is over, you may be recommended by your Commanding Officer. If you are recommended to the government for your bravery, you receive awards like a Purple Heart or a Congressional Medal of Honour. Dear friend, recommendations are going to be made after the last battle is over. Will your Commanding Officer have anything on which to recommend you? I pray so!

In receiving this award, you will be taken to the Father in the presence of angels and be highly commended to the Father for your good works. This will be done in the presence of angels and the hosts of heaven. You can understand why you would be respected by all and sundry. If Jesus singles you out and says to the Father, "This was a special son who did more than his share, please accord him a special status in heaven." I tell you, man, you are covered! It is not everyone who will receive such a recommendation.

Dear Christian, please aim for these glorious rewards. Win the lost at any cost and you will be recommended by Jesus to the Father.

## ***10. Divine Autograph***

**Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem... and I WILL WRITE UPON HIM MY NEW NAME.**

*Revelation 3:12*

Dear friend, people buy names all the time. A MacDonald's name or franchise is acquired for a lot of money. Polo shirts, t-shirts, belts and shoes carry names that make people buy them. It is not strange that one of the rewards given to some privileged people will be to have the label of God's name on them.

Perhaps your robe will be labelled *El' Shaddai*. Perhaps your designer clothes will be labelled *Elohim*. May be your belt will be labelled *Jehovah Nissi*. When people recognize this powerful signature on you, you will be distinguished from others in heaven.

## ***11. Heavenly Positions***

**To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am SET DOWN WITH MY FATHER IN HIS THRONE.**

*Revelation 3:21*



Promotion into unbelievable heights awaits you as you do God's will. You will be elevated to the highest of positions according to this scripture. Perhaps you don't know the value of being on a throne. After all, you have never been on anything like a throne on earth. Perhaps you think you can manage without such a privilege. Don't let the devil deceive you. You must not miss this great reward. You must win the lost at any cost!

## **Chapter Eleven**

# ***My Prayer For You!***

**L**ord Jesus, I pray for your people. I pray with all my heart for everyone who reads this book.

*I pray that you will transmit into their hearts the burden that you have O Lord. Show them the reason why you created the Church - the reason why we exist. And the reason why you brought us together as a Church. Show us O Lord the reason why we gather each time.*

*Help us to know that it is not to show off our new dresses, our new suits and our new shoes. Show us I pray, O Lord! Reveal it to each person who reads this book. I cannot explain it to them, Lord. I have done my best. I have spoken and I have written, but it is you, Holy Spirit, who can reveal it to the people.*

*Lord, reveal yourself. Select the evangelists you are looking for. Find the people you are searching for to help you accomplish this great work! I see a vast harvest before us. I pray O God that the burden will come upon your people. I pray for the financiers, that you will anoint them and give them the hearts of soul winners.*

*I pray for the supporters and the helpers who help us in the ministry. They are people who assist us to do your Great Commission. O God, I am praying for them today.*

*Holy Spirit, open the eyes of your people and let us see the harvest that is ripe and waiting for us. Help us to notice the lost, walking aimlessly around us. Let us see how people are wandering about as sheep without a shepherd.*

*Jesus, I pray that you will walk in the midst of your people and touch our eyes and hearts again. Let us know why we are alive! Reveal to us what we are supposed to be doing. O Lord Jesus, I pray with all my heart. I cannot show them, but you can. Holy Spirit, you can show your people what you want.*

*Lord I cannot transmit it to them but you can. Father, in the name of Jesus, let your work be done and let your kingdom come. Let your work be more important to us than any thing else. Let souls begin to be harvested. Let the finances come in to support this great effort. Give us a heart, Heavenly Father, for souls. Help us to win the lost at any cost.*

*Give the pastors a heart for soul winning. As we shepherd your sheep, let us never forget why we are shepherds. Help us to be more like you who came to seek and to save that which was lost. I pray in the name of Jesus. Thank you LORD. AMEN!*

The following is a prophecy God gave me for you.

## PROPHECY

*Today, certain people are stars in this world. O Lord you have shown us clearly that in the days to come, different people are going to be stars. They that win souls and they that turn many to righteousness shall shine as the stars forever.*

*They are going to be the people that know their God. The stars are going to be people that have turned many to righteousness. Yea, they shall be those who have contributed to the winning and reaping of souls to the kingdom of God. They shall be those who have brought in the harvest, saith, the Spirit of the Lord.*

*This is my commission to the church. This is the great commission to the church and the people of God. This is the work that I have called you to do. To go out there and win them. Say not, "It is not yet time." Say not, "I will do it next year." For the fields are white and the harvest is ready. For the people are waiting in their great numbers to be harvested and to be won to me. Yea, Islam is not the way, the truth and the life. No one, no one cometh unto the Father but by me. Therefore, take this message to the world.*

*Take the Word of God which is like a hammer, saith the Lord. Take the Word of God, which is like a fire, and go forth with that fire. Go forth with the hammer. Go forth in*

*the power of my Word. For my Word shall go and shall not return unto me void but it shall accomplish those things which it has been sent to do, saith the Spirit of God.*

*Listen to me, the stars are going to change. They are going to change. The Lord is saying that there is something in it for you. There is a future for you. Do not be short-sighted. Do not see only today, but see the years ahead. See eternity! You can shine like a star in eternity.*

*Eternity will begin, it will begin shortly. It will begin soon, saith the Spirit.*

***THE END!***

*AIDS TO LEADERSHIP*

# *Aids to Leadership*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*PARCHMENT HOUSE*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Scripture quotations marked (NLT) are taken from the Holy Bible, New Living Translation, copyright © 1996. Used by permission of Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Wheaton, Illinois 60189. All rights reserved.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-98-0*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*



## ***Contents***

<i>1. What Have You Survived? .....</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>2. Acknowledge The Gifts Of Others .....</i>	<i>12</i>
<i>3. Be A Creative Leader .....</i>	<i>14</i>
<i>4. Respect Principles And You Will Build A Great Organization .....</i>	<i>17</i>
<i>5. Don't Think Of How Much Money You Can Get From The People You Lead. Think Of How Much You Can Help Them. ....</i>	<i>22</i>
<i>6. Grow In Your Influence .....</i>	<i>24</i>
<i>7. Develop Personal Proverbs And Dark Sayings .....</i>	<i>29</i>
<i>8. Negotiate With Authorities On Behalf Of Your Followers .....</i>	<i>30</i>
<i>9. Convince People To Make Great Sacrifices .....</i>	<i>33</i>
<i>10. Take Everyone To The Top With You .....</i>	<i>36</i>

<i>11. Build Something If You Are A Leader! .....</i>	<i>40</i>
<i>12. Be Constantly Aware Of Your Life's Vision.....</i>	<i>42</i>

## *Other books by Dag Heward-Mills*

### **Poison: Taming Your Tongue**

*In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.*

### **The Beast of Prodigality**

*Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.*

### **The Strange Woman**

*Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.*

### **Name it! Claim it! Take it!**

*In this book, the author shows the believer a master key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.*

### **They Went to Hell**

*Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.*

### **Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind**

*Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.*

## **Forgiveness Made Easy**

*Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.*

## **All About Fornication**

*What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!*

## **Frugality**

*This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.*

## **The Minister's Handbook**

*This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.*

## **Anagkazo: Compelling Power**

*Learn about this "compelling power" which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!*

## **The Mega Church**

*The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power**

*Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!*

## **Beauty**

*What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.*

## **Born Again**

*What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!*

## **Duality**

*Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.*

## **Ministerial Ethics**

*In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.*

## **Principles of Success**

*Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!*

## **Supernatural Power**

*A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!*

## **One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer**

*You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!*

## **Unbeatable Prosperity**

*The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!*

## **Strategies for Prayer**

*Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.*

## **Catch the Anointing**

*This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.*

## **Lay People and the Ministry**

*Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.*

## **Solomonic Success**

*Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.*

## **Secrets of Success**

*All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.*

## **Seven Great Principles**

*At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!*

## **Leaders and Loyalty**

*Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.*

## **Transform Your Pastoral Ministry**

*In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.*

## **Loyalty and Disloyalty**

*Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.*

## **Win the Lost At Any Cost**

I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). *These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!*



*For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to:*

*Dag Heward-Mills  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra, Ghana  
West Africa*

Website:

*[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)*

E-mail:

*[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)*

# 1

## *What Have You Survived?*

All leaders can be sure of having some level of disloyalty within the ranks of their followers. Jesus' ministry survived the betrayal by Judas. Betrayal is part of life. No matter who you are or what type of leadership you have, you will experience betrayal. But you must be a survivor!

**The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over.. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the Lord for ever..**

**Psalm 23:1-6**

King David spoke of surviving the valley of the shadow of death. Survival is a central theme of the ministry. All true ministers must have a survival mentality. God did not promise us an easy road when we chose to serve Him. God expects us to survive after the attacks are over.

**...and having done all, to stand.**

**Ephesians 6:13**

If you cannot survive you cannot be a leader because leadership involves surviving.

## **TEN THINGS EVERY SURVIVOR MUST DO**

### ***1. A Survivor Must Continue To Exist Or Function In Spite Of Adverse Conditions***

We are in a battle with a real enemy. The conditions are not good. Satan is the god of this world and in a sense we are on his turf.

### ***2. To Come Through***

Every survivor must come through and pull through. After I had preached in one church, the pastor told me, “It seems you have been through hell.” Certainly, I have been through a lot, but I am still around.

### ***3. Every Survivor Must Carry On And Carry Through***

### ***4. Every Survivor Must Continue***

**Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed;**

**John 8:31**

***5. Every Survivor Must Remain Alive After The Challenges Of Life***

***6. Every Survivor Must Last***

Paul was a leader who lasted.

***7. Every Survivor Must Outlive The Storms***

When the storm is over you must still be around.

***8. Every Survivor Must Recover And Revive***

***9. Every Survivor Must Live To Fight Again***

***10. Every Survivor Must Continue To Live Or Exist In Spite Of Danger***

## **FIFTEEN THINGS PAUL SURVIVED**

***1. Paul Survived Frequent Imprisonments***

***2. Paul Survived Five Beatings From The Jews***

***3. Paul Survived Three Beatings With Rods***

- 4. Paul Survived Stoning*
- 5. Paul Survived Three Shipwrecks*
- 6. Paul Survived Forty-Eight Hours In The Deep Sea*
- 7. Paul Survived Several Journeys*
- 8. Paul Survived Dangers From Robbers*
- 9. Paul Survived Dangers In The City*
- 10. Paul Survived Dangers From His Own Countrymen*
- 11. Paul Survived Dangers In The Wilderness*
- 12. Paul Survived Dangers From Disloyal People*
- 13. Paul Survived Extreme Exhaustion*
- 14. Paul Survived A Lot Of Pain*
- 15. Paul Survived The Cold And Nakedness*

**Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more; in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft. Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one. Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep; In journeyings often,**

**in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils  
by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen,  
in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in  
perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren;  
In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often,  
in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and  
nakedness.**

**2 Corinthians 11:23-27**

## **SIX THINGS EVERY LEADER MUST SURVIVE**

### *1. Survive Persecution*

I have been strongly persecuted for my beliefs. I have been persecuted for starting a church. I have been ridiculed for starting a ministerial association. In 1988 and 1989, two different people called me ‘Jim Jones’! One of them was my classmate, a fellow medical student. The other person who called me ‘Jim Jones’ was a professor in the medical school and a family friend. By the grace of God I have survived these persecutions.

I needed a church hall for my wedding, but this professor told my parents that he would only help if I promised to close down my church. He was so convinced that I was another ‘Jim Jones’. Who was Jim Jones? He was a cult leader who led thousands of people to their deaths. I was portrayed as a cult leader and a lunatic. Those were difficult moments, but I came through. I have survived these hateful persecutions and I am still around by the grace of God.

Don’t be discouraged because of your persecutions. A leader is supposed to be a survivor.

## *2. Survive Rejection*

I have survived rejection as a minister of the gospel,. When I was getting married, there was no external minister I could trust to officiate my wedding. My associate pastor had to officiate my wedding. I invited all the pastors in the city but no one turned up. These ministers were not interested in my wedding. When it was time to take pictures with all pastors, none were present. The MC called for all pastors but no one came forward. I was completely rejected. But I have survived and many of the people who rejected me then, show respect to me today. Do not allow rejection to kill your vision for leadership. Leadership includes surviving everything that is thrown at you.

## *3. Survive Bad Stories*

A leader is someone who survives bad stories. When Jesus rose from the dead some people spread a rumour about his disciples. They claimed that the disciples were grave looters who had stolen the body of Jesus. In other words, their claim was that He did not really rise from the dead. But the gospel has survived this story.

**And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, Saying, Say ye, HIS DISCIPLES CAME BY NIGHT, AND STOLE HIM away while we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and THIS SAYING IS COMMONLY REPORTED among the Jews until this day.**

**Matthew 28:12-15**

Before Peter could begin his ministry, many people saw him as a liar and a thief. Others saw him as the greatest deceiver to live in Jerusalem for centuries. Yet, he was a genuine minister of the gospel, proclaiming only what he had seen and heard.

This is the lot of all true leaders or ministers of the gospel. You will have to survive the unbelievable stories that go on around you. I have heard people say amazing things about me. Once somebody said we were printing money in our church. Someone even accused us of dealing in drugs. How do we explain all these stories?

Government officials sometimes describe church leaders as charlatans who rip and rape the people. This is the impression that many people have of us. What can we do about it? *We can only survive!* To survive means to outlive and outlast every storm. A leader is a survivor. To survive, you need determination and a whole lot of faith. You need to believe in yourself and you need to believe that what you are doing is the right thing. You need to believe that God will help you.

#### ***4. Survive Every Crisis***

*A leader survives every crisis. You've got to hold on in the midst of your crisis.* I know we all want peace and perfect harmony. That is the way it should be, but life has its twists and turns. You have to survive. You need self-confidence and self-determination. You can do it! If you believe, you can conquer it all! A leader needs friends and family in times of crisis. I have found that God is your best friend in such times.

Jesus was a survivor. He met with stiff rejection and hatred. People wanted him killed from day one, but he survived. When Jesus announced that He was anointed and had a healing ministry, many people rejected him outright.



**And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. BUT HE PASSING THROUGH THE MIDST OF THEM WENT HIS WAY,**

**Luke 4:17-19,28-30**

Jesus survived! I see you surviving! Your children will survive! Your family will survive! Jesus survived and so will you! A leader cannot please everyone; he has to do what God has told him to do!

#### ***5. Survive Envy, Jealousy, Disloyalty And Betrayal***

**(Now the man Moses was very meek, above all the men which were upon the face of the earth.)**

**Numbers 12:3**

As you go higher in ministry, you will attract lots of envy and jealousy. Most of that will come from your own brothers and sisters.

**Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children,**

**because he was the son of his old age: and he made him a coat of many colours. And when his brethren saw that their father loved him more than all his brethren, they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him.**

**Genesis 37:3,4**

Joseph obtained favour and was given a coat of many colours. Soon he attracted the hatred of his own brothers. A leader must survive the envy and jealousies of his brothers.

The people who have said some of the nastiest things about me are ministers of the gospel in my own city. Things have a way of getting round to you. One minister told me, "If you knew what one pastor said about you, you would never ever go to his church again."

A leader thrives on in the midst of petty jealousies and hatred. Joseph survived the test of slavery. He survived going to prison. He survived the lies and bad stories of Potiphar's wife. A leader is a survivor! Joseph's ability to lead Egypt in a time of crisis was partly because of his ability to survive the envy and jealousy of everyone around him.

Sometimes people want you to apologize for being blessed. How can I apologize for the blessing of God upon my life? Many of the things I have today, I did not even ask for. They just came my way. Are you a leader? Do not be intimidated by the hatred of those around you. David's first problem began when he killed Goliath. The Bible says that Saul eyed David after that victory.

**And the women answered one another as they played, and said, Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands. And Saul was very wroth, and the saying displeased him; and he said, They**

**have ascribed unto David ten thousands, and to me they have ascribed but thousands: and what can he have more but the kingdom? And Saul eyed David from that day and forward.**

### **1 Samuel 18:7-9**

Are you a leader? Get ready for envy, jealousy and betrayal as you rise to prominence. To survive all these, you need determination and a great deal of faith.

Jesus' ministry survived the betrayal by Judas. Betrayal is part of life. No matter who you are or what type of leadership you have, you will experience betrayal. If Judas is anything to go by, then one out of twelve people may be disloyal.

I recently heard of a church that voted for a new pastor. This new pastor received ninety-one percent of the votes. What did that mean? It meant that nine percent of the people did not really want the new pastor. This poor pastor will not even know who voted against him. However, he can be sure that the disapproving group will be within the congregation.

All leaders can be sure of having some level of disloyalty within the ranks of their followers. Keep disloyalty to a minimum and survive the rebellion that comes against your leadership. Do not cry about it. Do not moan about it. That is leadership. Jesus was betrayed. And Paul was betrayed. How can it be that you will not experience the same?

I have had friends who were very close to me, turn around against me. People I ate with, slept with and played with turned against me in bitter hatred.

**Yea, mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted,**

**which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me.**

**Psalm 41:9**

At one point, I thought I would not survive the betrayal. The betrayal of one friend cut me like a knife through the heart. I became ill for two weeks as I endured the lies and slander of an old friend. But I survived! A leader is a survivor! A leader is not someone who has had things rosy. Be determined dear friend to be a survivor. You will live through whatever storm you are experiencing!

## ***6. Survive Pressure***

Real leaders often come under extreme and varied pressures because they are out there in the front. They are the ones who receive all the blows. The pressure is always on them. If you cannot stand pressure then you cannot be a leader.

Develop a hard forehead. Do not go mad. Do not go crazy. Some people break down under pressure. God told Ezekiel not to be afraid of the people's faces. Be harder than everything that comes against you.

Confess boldly, "I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me." Say aloud, "I am able, more than able to prevail and to win this battle. Though a thousand fall at my side and ten thousand at my left hand, I shall survive. I am a survivor in the name of Jesus. God will strengthen and keep me in all my ways!"

## 2

### *Acknowledge The Gifts Of Others*

**But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;  
Galatians 2:7**

Peter acknowledged that the ministry to the Gentiles was clearly in the hands of the apostle Paul.

Can you acknowledge that God has given something to someone else? If you can then you are a leader. A leader is someone who is able to acknowledge the special grace on another person's life. My library is made up of books of other ministers. I have the books of every pastor in my city. I acknowledge that God is using other people apart from me. I want to learn what they know. I privately and publicly acknowledge that they are doing great things for the Lord.

Instead of acknowledging the gifts in others, pastors often find themselves criticizing and maligning one another.

Years ago, I realized that there were many people I could not reach. Many people cannot relate to the way I preach. That is why God has raised up other ministers. There are also many people who could not relate to the way others preach. That is why they joined my church. I am often amused as I observe how reluctantly some ministers acknowledge my gift. They fear to acknowledge the gifts of others.

Peter acknowledged Paul's ministry to the Gentiles. Paul also acknowledged Peter's ministry to the Jews. You must recognize what God recognizes and honour what God honours. That is true leadership!

# 3

## *Be A Creative Leader*

**In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.**

**Genesis 1:1**

The universe is ruled by a creative God. This world is ruled by creative people. To be able to think of something new and greater and to achieve it is creativity. An ordinary person wants to do what everyone else is doing. A leader is someone who is prepared to be creative and chart new territories.

There are two groups of people in this world. One group have created new things. The other group have created nothing. *Creative people dominate non-creative people.* You don't have to look far to see this truth.

The creative rule the non-creative. Be creative in your business. Be creative in your work. Be creative as a minister of the gospel. The fact that something has not been done before does not mean that it's wrong. You will dominate in your sphere of life. The ministry I oversee is made up of mainly lay people. I myself, started out in ministry as a layperson. When I did,

people preached about me in their pulpits saying I was not concentrating on my studies. They had never seen the lay ministry in operation. They could only criticize. Today, this creative lay ministry has led to much growth in my ministry. Decide to be a creative leader!

## **SEVEN STEPS TO BECOMING A CREATIVE LEADER**

### ***1. Ask The Holy Spirit To Teach You What To Do***

Realize that you may be in a non-creative environment. You may have to fight a spirit of non-creativity all your life.

### ***2. Admire Nature***

Be interested in animals, nature and the human body. As you become interested in things God has created, the spirit of creativity will be stirred up in you. Non-creative people are usually uninterested in nature.

### ***3. Overcome The Natural Resistance To Change***

Most people do not like change. Be honest, and deal with every streak of non-creativity and the “anti-change” spirit in your life.

### ***4. Be Interested In The Amazing Creations Of Ordinary Men***

Be interested in medicine, surgery, cars, planes, computers, etc. Non-creative people are usually not interested in such things.



### ***5. Be Open To New And Unusual Ways Of Doing Things***

Do not have a black out attitude towards every new suggestion. I have often been laughed at when I have made new suggestions. In the end, it is these same suggestions that have been a blessing to many people. Creative people are often laughed at because of their ideas.

### ***6. Be Ready To Embark On Adventure***

Adventure is the sister of creativity.

### ***7. Try Introducing Variations To Already Existing Models***

Variation is the brother of creativity.

A creative leader is someone who is able to come up with new ideas. New ideas often contain the solutions we need. Are you someone with new ideas?

# 4

## *Respect Principles And You Will Build A Great Organization*

### **THREE DEFINITIONS OF A PRINCIPLE**

- 1. A Principle Is A Fundamental Rule Which Becomes The Basis Of An Action*
- 2. A Principle Is The Fundamental Truth Which Is The Basis Of Our Reasoning*
- 3. A Principle Is A General Law Which Is The Foundation For A Decision*

# SEVEN TYPES OF ORGANIZATIONS THAT DO NOT LAST

*Organizations are destroyed by leaders who do not base their decisions and reasoning on principles. To build a lasting organization, church or nation, you must base your reasoning, actions and decisions on principles. Principles outlive favouritism, partisanship and political expediency. If you break principles, the principles will break you.*

## ***1. An Organization That Is Governed By Political Expediency Rather Than Principles Is Doomed***

“It is not politically expedient!” is what many political leaders say. These leaders take bad decisions that destroy entire nations. When decisions in a country are taken to gain political favour rather than to get the right thing done, the country is often doomed.

## ***2. An Organization That Is Run Mainly By Giving Favours To Relatives Rather Than Principles Will Be Destroyed***

When a leader decides to place members of his family in certain positions they do not qualify for, he has set aside principles and is governing his organization by emotionalism. The Bible teaches that partiality and hypocrisy are not wisdom.

**But the wisdom that is from above is... without partiality and without hypocrisy.**

**James 3:17**

Your nation, business or church will break up when you deal with people based on family relationships rather than important principles.

### ***3. An Organization Ruled By A Leader Who Takes Decisions To Gain Personal Financial Advantage Will Eventually Collapse***

I know of a project that should have cost an organization only forty million dollars. However, it ended up costing fifty million dollars. Why? Because somebody was bribed to agree to a higher figure. Such an organization will only end up becoming highly indebted and poor. It is not governed by principles but by leaders who seek to line their pockets. If I sought to make myself rich rather than to build the church, I would see the church collapse.

### ***4. When A Nation Is Governed By Greed Rather Than Principles, It Will End Up In Deep Poverty***

This is the story of Africa. It is the story of greedy leaders who have drunk the blood of the nations they have governed. Instead of principled leadership, we have had greedy vampires and vultures who sucked up every drop of blood. Despotism African leaders have left their countries desolate while they have amassed millions of dollars that they can never spend in their lifetime.

### ***5. A Nation Governed By Selfishness Rather Than Rules And Principles Is Doomed***

Selfish African leaders send their children to schools in Europe and America whilst the educational system of their own country crumbles. These selfish government ministers could not care two hoots if ten million children are not educated. The hospitals of developing Ghana decay whilst government officials seek medical help for themselves and their favourites in London's Cromwell Hospital. Selfishness is not a basis for good leadership.

Democracy is a political system or government based on giving power to the people through elections. The very nature of this system corrupts leaders. Selfishness drives them to remain in power indefinitely. So-called democratic leaders try to please the masses with sweet words. This is why many democratically elected leaders are liars and hypocrites. Many promises are never fulfilled.

***6. An Organization Ruled By Favouritism And Partiality Rather Than By Principles Is Doomed***

When a leader favours one or two people he likes because they are friends or schoolmates, he rules his organization by favouritism rather than by principle. People must be promoted on merit and not on favouritism. When everything depends on who you know and whose friend you are, the organization deteriorates.

***7. An Organization Ruled By Ethnicity Rather Than By Principles Is Destined For Division And War***

A leader whose mind works along ethnic lines rather than principles is destroying his organization. Those who are not of his ethnic origin will gradually hate him. This is the basis of many of the civil wars in Africa and Europe. Many African leaders reason along ethnic lines rather than along the lines of principle. Many countries have degenerated into war zones because of this kind of leadership. The Second World War developed as Hitler tried to eliminate Jews and other undesirable groups. The Balkans conflict grew as Muslims,

Croats and Serbs tried to get rid of each other. The Tutsis and Hutus of Rwanda are another sombre reminder of how leadership based on ethnicity can destroy an entire region.

## **THREE PRINCIPLES YOU NEED TO BUILD YOUR ORGANIZATION**

- 1. Everybody must have an equal opportunity to make the best of his life in your organization*
- 2. Everyone must be promoted and rewarded based on merit rather than anything else*
- 3. The achievement of results, hard work, loyalty, productivity and a good attitude must always be rewarded*

# 5

*Don't Think Of How Much Money  
You Can Get From The People You  
Lead. Think Of How Much You Can  
Help Them*

**But when he saw the multitudes, HE WAS MOVED  
WITH COMPASSION on them, because they  
fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having  
no shepherd.**

**Matthew 9:36**

Jesus had a reason for praying. He had reasons for doing the things He did. He wanted to help people. He was moved with compassion. This means that Jesus felt pity, mercy, kindness and tenderness towards the people. Obviously, Jesus was not thinking about getting any money from them. He was thinking about helping them.

Are you a leader? What thoughts go through your mind? Are they thoughts of how much money you can get from the

people you lead? Are they thoughts of how much you will be paid for each move you make? Is your mind filled with thoughts of personal gain and personal profit? If that is the case, then you are not the Jesus type of leader! Your motives are very important.

The Apostle Paul described how he was burdened for his people, the Israelites. If you are leading people for any other reason other than a desire to help them, I'm afraid you are in the wrong job. You must be concerned about other people and their problems even if you do not have those problems.

**I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost, That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:**

**Romans 9:1-3**

Since God looks on the heart, your motives are very important. God has made it clear that ministers should not be in the ministry for the money.

**Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind;**

**1 Peter 5:2**

This is why I encourage the lay ministry so much. The lay ministry serves as a filter. If you are in the ministry for financial reasons, you will not be happy to be a lay minister. Faithful lay people who desire to serve God at the highest level should be the ones to come into full-time ministry.



# 6

## *Grow In Your Influence*

**...behold, the world is gone after him.**

**John 12:19**

Jesus had influence over a large number of people. A leader increases his scope of influence as he grows in the art of leadership. The Bible tells us that the whole world went after Jesus. The Pharisees were very disturbed over this. The devil will be afraid of the influence of a true leader. This is why governments become afraid of pastors who are true leaders. They know that a true leader influences a large number of people.

*The key to growing in your influence is to grow in your influence over smaller sub-groups of people. The cumulative effect of your influence and control over these sub-groups will give you a larger sphere of influence.*

When a person is a leader at heart, people who are even senior to the leader will follow him. The Apostle Paul taught Timothy to establish his influence over sub-groups in his church. In our church we call these Timothy Groups.

## **EIGHT GROUPS OF PEOPLE YOU MUST INFLUENCE**

### ***1. Older Men***

**Rebuke not an ELDER, but entreat him as a FATHER; and the younger men as brethren;**

**1 Timothy 5:1**

### ***2. Younger Men***

**Rebuke not an elder, but entreat him as a father; and the YOUNGER MEN as brethren;**

**1 Timothy 5:1**

### ***3. Older Women***

**The ELDER WOMEN as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.**

**1 Timothy 5:2**

### ***4. Younger Women***

**The elder women as mothers; THE YOUNGER as sisters, with all purity.**

**1 Timothy 5:2**

## *5. Servants*

**Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.**

**1 Timothy 6:1**

## *6. Poor People*

**Honour widows that are widows indeed.**

**1 Timothy 5:3**

## *7. Rich People*

**Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;**

**1 Timothy 6:17**

## *8. Leaders*

**Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.**

**1 Timothy 5:17**

Timothy grew in his ministry until all sorts of people were part of his church. Apostle Paul had to show him how to handle all the different types of people who were responding to his gift of leadership.

**Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father;  
and the younger men as brethren; The elder**

**women as mothers; the younger as sisters with all purity.**

**1 Timothy 5:1,2**

I see you developing in the art of leadership until all sorts of people respond to your influence.

## **KEYS TO INFLUENCING DIFFERENT GROUPS OF PEOPLE**

### ***1. Show Respect To Those That Particularly Deserve It***

Elderly people for instance, deserve more respect due to their age and experience. Do not expect the same output of energy that you would receive from younger ones. Regard the honourable citizens that God brings into your midst. The fact that Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimathea were mentioned in the Bible tells us that their support for Jesus was unusual and therefore given special recognition. This does not mean you must be prejudiced and biased towards the rich and powerful. What it means is that you must give honour to whom honour is due.

**Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.**

**Romans 13:7**

### ***2. Study The Peculiarities Of Different Groups***

There are vast differences between men and women. These must be appreciated by anyone who wants to minister to them. There are also vast differences between older and younger

women. The vision of younger women is marriage, husbands and children. The disillusionment of older women is often marriage, husbands and sometimes children. I have found that older women have fewer delusions about what marriage and husbands can offer. They are more inclined to the service of God than younger women. That is why the Bible says that older women should teach younger women.

### ***3. Respect The Differences That Exist Between Different Groups Of People***

Do not despise the peculiarities or weaknesses of each group. Very generally speaking, women are more interested in things like chatting, shopping and clothes whilst men are more interested in their jobs, money, cars, sex, etc. You cannot have a successful women's ministry if you despise women's God given traits. You must respect them and celebrate womanhood.

### ***4. Develop Teachings That Are Specific To Each Group***

Bishop T.D. Jakes is an example of a minister who shows a lot of understanding for women's needs. That is why he is a successful women's minister. He has developed teachings and written books specifically for women.

### ***5. Develop A Strong Influence Over Leaders***

Every pastor must develop a strong teaching ministry towards leaders. There are pastors who do not know what to tell their leaders. I enjoy teaching my leaders. The more I teach leaders, the more influence I have because each leader has a sphere of authority.

# 7

## *Develop Personal Proverbs And Dark Sayings*

**And moreover, because the preacher was wise, he still taught the people knowledge; yea, he gave good heed, and sought out, AND SET IN ORDER MANY PROVERBS.**

**Ecclesiastes 12:9**

This preacher was someone who developed many proverbs. What is a proverb? It is a wise saying with a deep meaning. I once heard an old man say, “It is not money you need to build a house, it is wisdom.” This was a wise saying from a man who had led the way to build many houses.

As you become a successful leader, you will develop wisdom through experience. This wisdom will be transmitted through your proverbs.

**A wise man will hear, and will increase learning; and a man of understanding shall attain unto wise counsels: To understand a proverb, and the interpretation; the words of the wise, and their dark sayings.**

**Proverbs 1:5-6**

# 8

## *Negotiate With Authorities On Behalf Of Your Followers*

This is a vital part of leadership. You will always have to deal with authorities. Learn to be someone who solves problems. Pray for wisdom to deal with unreasonable and difficult authorities. God will give you wisdom every time.

**If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God...**

**James 1:5**

Getting approval from various authorities is one of the tasks of a good leader. When I was a student, I had to get permission from principals of schools in order to use their classrooms for meetings I wanted to hold. Getting permission for what you want to do is not always as simple as it may sound. You may need to deal with city planners, the police and local authorities.

A good leader is able to make higher authorities trust you enough to grant you what you need to accomplish your vision.

# FIVE WAYS TO DEAL WITH AUTHORITIES

## *1. Recognize That You Have To Deal With Authorities*

There is no way you are going to do anything in this secular world without dealing with the authorities that be. You have to recognize this fact and prepare yourself to deal with them. You cannot avoid them or go around them.

**Then the king said unto me, For what dost thou make requests? So I prayed to the God of heaven. Moreover I said unto the king, If it please the king, let letters be given me to the governors beyond the river...**

**Nehemiah 2:4,7**

Notice how Nehemiah was able to acquire permission from the king to do what he wanted. Some people are not able to get approval or permission for anything. A good leader must be successful in this area of leadership; otherwise, you will build nothing for God.

## *2. Decide To Comply With Existing Laws And Regulations*

The Bible says that these authorities are there for our good.

**Obey the government, for God is the one who put it there. All governments have been placed in power by God.**

**Romans 13:1 (New Living Translation)**



### ***3. Use The Appropriate People To Help You To Deal With These Authorities***

For instance, if you are dealing with legal issues involving the government, you will have to employ good lawyers or people with legal minds.

### ***4. Develop And Maintain Personal And Cordial Relationships With Every Relevant Authority***

Remember them at Christmas and other important occasions.

### ***5. Deal With Them Spiritually***

It is important to deal with authorities by praying for them. Over the years, I have learnt to deal with authorities by praying for them. There is a direct promise in the Word for those who pray for authorities. The promise is that you will be able to live in godliness, honesty and contentment.

**This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;**

**1 Timothy 3:1,2**

# 9

## *Convince People To Make Great Sacrifices*

**If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.**

**Luke 14:26**

Under the leadership of Jesus, many people gave up their lives for a great cause. Many people lost their lives because they believed in Him. I know of many missionaries who died as they served the Lord on mission fields. A leader is someone who can convince people to make sacrifices towards a great cause.

I once told a young medical doctor to go and live in a remote town of Ghana and begin a church there. This medical doctor had the option of going to the USA to become a rich consultant. He made a great sacrifice and went to that town because I had asked him to. I believe that one day, when we get to heaven, he will be very glad that he made that sacrifice!

I remember some time ago when our church was in a crisis and we needed a huge financial input. I had to speak to many individuals and ask them to sacrifice their building projects and large amounts of money for the gospel. They did it gladly. God has also blessed them with more than they can carry because of the sacrifices they made!

### **The Master Key to Leading People Into Sacrifice**

Are you the type of leader that people would make sacrifices for? Let me give you a key to becoming this type of leader. It is simple. *You must be someone who has made great sacrifices yourself.* People assess you as you speak! They are convinced when they realize that you practice what you preach.

Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

**This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.**

**John 21:19**

Jesus told Peter very clearly that following Him would lead to a horrific death on the cross. Peter was prepared to die because Jesus was leading Him.

By 1840, twelve missionaries had been sent to the Gold Coast (Ghana) from the Basel Mission in Switzerland. Only

two survived. The story is told of how a class of the Basel Mission were asked, “Who will volunteer to go to the Gold Coast?” No one responded. Another question was asked, “Who is prepared to be sent to the Gold Coast?” Several people responded to that. These missionaries were prepared to die if someone would send them.

*You see, people are prepared to make sacrifices if they are led into it.* You need a strong leader to send people to a place that has swallowed up the lives of others. Thank God for strong leadership. Be a leader who convinces people to make sacrifices for a good cause.

# 10

## *Take Everyone To The Top With You*

As God blesses your leadership, you will find yourself rising to the top. It is important not to go to the top alone. If you go up there alone you will become isolated. You will be the only one who has prospered and has tasted the fruits of success.

### **THREE REASONS WHY YOU MUST TAKE EVERYONE TO THE TOP WITH YOU**

#### ***1. To Avoid Isolation***

When you are isolated you are lonely and have no one to share your joys with. Joy shared is double joy and sorrow shared is half-sorrow. I am glad I have people to share my nice things with. I can speak freely about God's blessings on my life because I am not the only one who is blessed. The people around me can relate to those blessings because they experience them as well.

When I began playing golf, I tried to get all my full-time pastors to play as well. I'm glad that today I have people to play with and to have fun with. I would have been very lonely out there on my own!

## ***2. To Avoid Becoming An Easy Target***

When you are isolated at the top you become an easy target. You are easy to spot because you are the only one who has certain benefits. When you are the only one with a nice car or house you are easy to pick out. Many of my staff have just as nice a house or car as I have. I am not the only one in my church who travels around the world. Many of my pastors travel around the world whilst I stay home. They ring me from different parts of the world while I hold the fort in Africa.

## ***3. To Avoid Being Pulled Down***

When you are the only one at the top you are surrounded by desperate people. Desperate people are dangerous and could harm you at any time. They will try to pull you down to their level of frustration. However, if you are all at the top, they can only pull you sideways and not downwards.

# **SIX ATTEMPTS BY JESUS TO TAKE EVERYONE WITH HIM TO THE TOP**

## ***1. Jesus Took His Disciples To Nice Places Like Weddings***

He didn't just take them to the synagogues, prayer meetings in the garden of Gethsemane or Great Commission staff meetings.

**And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.**

**John 2:2**

**2. *Jesus Always Took His Disciples To High Society Engagements***

**And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.**

**John 2:2**

**3. *Jesus Always Ate With His Disciples***

He took His disciples along with Him to dinners and luncheons held in His honour.

**And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.**

**Matthew 26:26**

**4. *Jesus Asked His Father If His Staff Could Come To Heaven With Him***

**Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am...**

**John 17:24**

**5. *Jesus Invited All Sorts Of People To The Famous Banquet Of Luke 14***

He tried to get cripples, beggars, prostitutes and anyone who was interested to come with Him to the banquet.

**Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many:**

**Luke 14:16**

**6. *Jesus Invited The Thief On The Cross To Come To Paradise With Him***

Truly, Jesus wanted to take everyone to the top with him.

**And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

**Luke 23:43**



# 11

## *Build Something If You Are A Leader!*

Many people think that it takes wealth and riches to build a house. From experience, I know that it is not money *per se* but wisdom. People who are able to rally their resources together and use them wisely often become builders. Often such a person is a leader. Have you built a house? Have you built a church? What you build will testify of your leadership. Decide to build something for God in your lifetime.

**THROUGH WISDOM IS AN HOUSE BUILDED;  
and by understanding it is established: And by  
knowledge shall the chambers be filled with all  
precious and pleasant riches.**

**Proverbs 24:3,4**

Leadership qualities make a pastor acquire a church building for his church. Buying buses or instruments for your church is different from building a church facility. A wise manager would acquire properties for his company. I can assure you that it takes the strength of leadership to build a nation. Weak leaders cannot build anything!

Decide today to be a builder. A husband who builds a house for his wife and children is a true leader.

The first president of Ghana, Kwame Nkrumah, is often hailed as a great leader. One of the things he did was to build many things for the nation. For instance, he built the Akosombo Dam, which has the largest manmade lake in the world. The things he built testify to the fact that Ghana once had a great leader. **Leadership is manifest by the presence of buildings.** A good leader leaves something behind.

Western countries have well developed infrastructure that testify of the kind of leadership they have enjoyed. African countries that have been ruled by illiterate dictators and vampire-style despots, have very little infrastructure. Truly, buildings and development are a sign of good leadership. Solomon was a wise leader.

**I made me great works; I builded me houses; I planted me vineyards: I made me gardens and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kind of fruits: I made me pools of water, to water therewith the wood that bringeth forth trees:**

**Ecclesiastes 2:4-6**

Because I have been involved in building, I can understand why most people shy away from it. But I believe that God has called leaders to build. Nehemiah, one of the great leaders of the Bible, motivated the people of God to rise up and build. His famous sermon was simple – arise and build!

**...The God of heaven, he will prosper us; therefore we his servants will *ARISE AND BUILD*...**

**Nehemiah 2:20**

# 12

## *Be Constantly Aware Of Your Life's Vision*

**Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.**

**John 18:37**

Jesus knew why He was in this world. Even in times of great stress, He explained His life's purpose. A leader is someone who is constantly aware of his purpose. I am constantly aware of what God has called me to do. Everyday of my life is spent trying to fulfil the calling of God on my life. When you are aware of what you are supposed to do, you are guided aright into spending your time appropriately.

If you only remember that you are a pastor when you arrive in church, then you are probably not a real pastor. When I was a layperson working in the hospital I was constantly aware of my calling into the ministry. Even when Jesus was a child, He said, “I must be about my father’s business.”

**And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father’s business?**

**Luke 2:49**

Dear leader, what is your life’s purpose? Are you a businessman trying to make money? Then why does your business run like a charity? Why do you not cut your expenses and begin to make profits? Are you a minister of the gospel? Then don’t be taken up with the love of money. God did not call you to acquire great wealth. He called you to serve in the ministry. Do the ministry even if you have to live in poverty.

God gave me a dream. In the dream, I saw myself walking on a long road. Along this road were many heaps of gold. As I walked on the path, I would pass by these heaps of gold. The Lord specifically told me, “Do not stop at any of these heaps. There are many heaps of gold on this road. There will be no need for you to stop by any of them.”

You see, God was showing me that I should stick with my vision. He was telling me not to deviate into business or the search for money. Are you a leader? Then let your vision fill your heart and mind so that you will not deviate from your original calling. If you are a minister, remember that it is souls, souls and more souls. Not money, money and more money!

## *Chapter 1*

# Eight Areas of Your Life Which Must Be Open to the Voice of God

The voice of God is important for every area of your life. If there is anything that is important to you, I would suggest that you open that area to the direction of God's Spirit. You may think that God is not interested in certain areas of your life. I want you to know today that God has something to say about every area of your life. The Lord is depicted as a shepherd to His sheep. Sheep are animals that are very dependent on human beings for everything. If the Lord is depicted as a Shepherd, it shows how dependent we are on Him for everything.

### **1. Depend on the voice of God for *your needs*.**

**The LORD is my shepherd; I SHALL NOT WANT.**

**Psalm 23:1**

"I shall not want" is what you will say after you have followed the Shepherd for some time! You will be able to say with David, "I have no needs, I am blessed in every way." In order to experience this, you must follow the leading of the Spirit.

### **2. Depend on the Holy Spirit for *your marriage and home*.**

**He maketh me to LIE DOWN IN GREEN PASTURES: he leadeth me BESIDE THE STILL WATERS.**

**Psalm 23:2**

Green pasture speaks of peace and happiness. It speaks of the marriages we all desire. You will never have true happiness unless you marry the person God wants you to marry. If you allow Him, the Holy Spirit will lead you to a peaceful marriage.

### **3. Depend on the voice of God for *the right church*.**

**He restoreth my soul: HE LEADETH ME in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.**

**Psalm 23:3**

This Scripture shows how dependent you are on God's guidance for righteous living. Many people end up as fruitless nonentities in the kingdom of God because they are under the wrong leadership. It is so important to be led by the Spirit when you are choosing a church. It makes all the difference in the world! Most definitely, this is one of the important areas where you need the guidance of the Holy Spirit.

### **4. Depend on the voice of God for *divine protection*.**

**Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I WILL FEAR NO EVIL: FOR THOU ART WITH ME; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.**

**Psalms 23:4**

The psalmist made it clear that he was dependent on the Shepherd for protection. He explained how the Lord's protection was so powerful that he was able to eat lunch when his enemy was nearby.

Listening to the news, it is almost as though travellers are playing Russian roulette. Russian roulette is a game involving the firing of a revolver, with one chamber loaded, at one's head, after spinning the chamber. If you are the unlucky one, the bullet will be fired when you pull the trigger. It is almost as though it is a game of chance for you to travel and return safely. Definitely, you need the voice of God to choose the right car, bus, plane or train!

**5. Depend on the voice of God for *the Anointing*.**

**...thou ANOINTEST my head with oil; my cup runneth over.**

**Psalms 23:5**

Without being directed by the Lord you will never be anointed. The anointing will not come from Heaven per se. God will have to direct you to relate with anointed men of God. Jesus told His disciples, "*Follow me and I will make you...*" Without following the right person you will not amount to much in the ministry. Surely, you depend on the voice of God to lead you.

**6. Depend on the voice of God for *the good things of this life*.**

**Surely GOODNESS and MERCY shall follow me all the days of my life:...**

**Psalms 23:6**

Every businessman must know this reality. Without the grace of God you will never make it to the top. The silver and the gold belong to the Lord. If you seek His face, He will show you where it is hidden!

**The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, saith the LORD of hosts.**

**Haggai 2:8**

**7. Depend on the voice of God to *make it to Heaven*.**

**...and I will DWELL IN THE HOUSE OF THE LORD FOR EVER.**

**Psalms 23:6**

Do you want to dwell in the house of the Lord forever? As you follow the Spirit of God, He will lead you on the path of righteousness. This will eventually lead to Heaven. You need the Shepherd to take you from the green pastures all the way to those eternal gates.

**8. Depend on the voice of God to *fulfil your ministry*.**

**...he leadeth me in the PATHS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS for his name's sake.**

**Psalms 23:3**

You are alive on this earth to fulfil your ministry! This is the reason why God created and saved you. If you do not fulfil your ministry, you have missed your whole purpose for this life!

## Chapter 2

# How to Avoid Losing Your Gift

Studying the voice of God can be a little frightening, especially when you think of the consequences that can befall you when you do not obey His voice. In this chapter, I want to share with you why every Christian or minister should obey the voice of God.

Years ago I noticed this Scripture,

**For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, WOE IS UNTO ME, IF I PREACH NOT THE GOSPEL!**

**1 Corinthians 9:16**

Paul was someone who felt he would get into all sorts of trouble if he did not preach the Gospel. He was not wrong! Indeed, I think I can say with Paul, “Woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel.”

Every minister who does not take the leading of the Spirit seriously will open himself to all sorts of dangerous attacks. He will be in danger of losing the anointing!

### **A Minister Must Obey the Voice of God to Avoid Having the Gift Taken Away**

**And he said unto them that stood by, TAKE FROM HIM THE POUND, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.**

**Luke 19:24**

Dear man of God, do not think that you are indispensable. If you do not do what God wants you to do, your ministry will be taken away from you and given to another. Read it for yourself! *Take from him the pound!* If God gave you a pound, He can take it back when He wants to. Pastors seem to enjoy hiding behind Romans 11:29.

**For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.**

**Romans 11:29**

Because of this verse, they think that God will never take away His anointing. But that cannot be the case. What this Scripture means is that God does not change His mind about you. **He never changes His decision to call you or use you.** He never changes His decision to anoint you.

If God has called you to be a vessel, you will always be a vessel. The story of the Prophet Jonah is a good example of how God does not change His mind about the people He wants to use. Jonah did not want to go where the Lord had sent him. He wanted to be a nice guy everybody liked.

**Now the word of the LORD came unto Jonah the son of Amittai, saying, Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me. But Jonah rose up to flee unto Tarshish from the presence of the**

**LORD, and went down to Joppa; and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them unto Tarshish from the presence of the LORD. But the LORD sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken.**

**Jonah 1:1-4**

However, when the season of grace is over, God will have no choice but to recall His pound. He may have to give this pound to another minister, hoping that one would be faithful.

### **Will you write this book?**

I remember a man of God whom the Lord spoke to about writing a book. The Lord asked him, "Will you write this book?"

He said, "Yes Lord, of course I will!"

And the Lord said, "I hope so, because you are the fifth person I have asked. If you do not write it, I will move on to the sixth person."

Dear friend, in this story you see two principles working together. On one hand, God does not change His mind about writing the book. On the other, God is forced to select someone else and give him the job.

Yes, I believe that God does not change His mind about us. But I also know that God can recall His pound and give it to another.

**And he said unto them that stood by, TAKE FROM HIM the pound, and GIVE IT TO HIM THAT hath ten pounds.**

**Luke 19:24**

Keep the gift of God by obeying His call! Be sensitive to His voice! Do what He tells you to do and you will succeed in ministry! Do what is hard and difficult rather than what is nice and easy!



## Chapter 3

# How to Avoid Premature Death

**And cast ye the UNPROFITABLE servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.**

**Matthew 25:30**

The expression “weeping and gnashing of teeth” is a little misunderstood by most of us. We often think it refers to Hell and Hades. However, the Bible does not explicitly say that the people it refers to will go to Hell. It says that they will weep and gnash their teeth in darkness. Weeping speaks of sorrow and of pain associated with funerals. This Scripture could be warning all who claim to be servants of God that failure to obey could cost them their very lives.

### **A Minister Must Obey the Voice of God to Avoid Weeping and Gnashing of Teeth**

Kenneth Hagin, a great prophet I deeply respect, often spoke of how ministers die before their time because they do not obey the Lord concerning their ministry. He spoke of how he broke his arm and was admitted to the hospital. When the Lord Jesus appeared to him in the hospital, he discovered that his accident had occurred because he did not take an aspect of his ministry seriously.

Dear friend, doing the work of God is not a joke. It is not a game! People were made to experience weeping and gnashing of teeth because they were unprofitable. “Unprofitable” simply means *“unbeneficial, running at a loss, unsuccessful and losing money (souls)”*. When you are losing souls for the Lord, do not expect Him to be pleased with you. He may have to recall or replace you.

I remember a testimony given by the pastor of one of the world’s largest churches. He described how he was rummaging through some old pictures. He noticed a picture that was taken during his Bible school days. There were about fifty people in his class. As he mused over the picture, he realized that about forty-five of his classmates were dead. He then remembered that the five who were still alive, were the only ones who were serious about prayer during their Bible school days. He also realized that they were the only ones who took the ministry seriously after Bible school. Many of the others had taken to other professions.

Dear friend, ministry is serious business. God does not take lightly the investment that He places in you. To whom much is given, much is required!

**...For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required...**

**Luke 12:48**

If you desert the army during wartime, your punishment is often execution. Everyone who withholds his gifts and abilities in a time of war is cursed.

**Cursed be he that doeth the work of the LORD deceitfully, and CURSED BE HE THAT KEEPETH BACK HIS SWORD from blood.**

**Jeremiah 48:10**

### **The Young Prophet Meets his Untimely Death**

**And, behold, there came a man of God out of Judah by the word of the LORD unto Bethel: and Jeroboam stood by the altar to burn incense. And he cried against the altar in the word of the LORD, and said, O altar, altar, thus saith the LORD; Behold, a child shall be born unto the house of David, Josiah by name; and upon thee shall he offer the priests of the high places that burn incense upon thee, and men's bones shall be burnt upon thee. And he gave a sign the same day, saying, This is the sign which the LORD hath spoken; Behold, the altar shall be rent, and the ashes that are upon it shall be poured out.**

**And it came to pass, when king Jeroboam heard the saying of the man of God, which had cried against the altar in Bethel, that he put forth his hand from the altar, saying, Lay hold on him. And his hand, which he put forth against him, dried up, so that he could not pull it in again to him. The altar also was rent, and the ashes poured out from the altar, according to the sign which the man of God had given by the word of the LORD. And the king answered and said unto the man of God, Intreat now the face of the LORD thy God, and pray for me, that my hand may be restored me again. And the man of God besought the LORD, and the king's hand was restored him again, and became as it was before. And the king said unto the man of God, Come home with me, and refresh thyself, and I will give thee a reward.**

**And the man of God said unto the king, if thou wilt give me half thine house, I will not go in with thee, neither will I eat bread nor drink water in this place: For so was it charged me by the word of the LORD, saying, Eat no bread, nor drink water, nor turn again by the same way that thou camest. So he went another way, and returned not by the way that he came to Bethel.**

**Now there dwelt an old prophet in Bethel; and his sons came and told him all the works that the man of God had done that day in Bethel: the words which he had spoken unto the king, them they told also to their father. And their father said unto them, What way went he? For his sons had seen what way the man of God went, which came from Judah. And he said unto his sons, Saddle me the ass. So they saddled him the ass: and he rode thereon; And went after the man of God, and found him sitting under an oak: and he said unto him, Art thou the man of God that camest from Judah? And he said, I am. Then he said unto him, Come home with me, and eat bread. And he said, I may not return with thee, nor go in with thee: neither will I eat bread or drink water with thee in this place: For it was said to me by the word of the LORD, Thou shalt eat no bread nor drink water there, nor turn again to go by the way that thou camest.**

**He said unto him, I am a prophet also as thou art; and an angel spake unto me by the word of the LORD, saying, Bring him back with thee into thine house, that he may eat bread and drink water. But he lied unto him. So he went back with him, and did eat bread in his house, and drank water.**

**And it came to pass, as they sat at the table, that the word of the Lord came unto the prophet that brought him back: And he cried unto the man of God that came from Judah, saying, Thus saith the LORD, Foreasmuch as thou hast disobeyed the mouth of the LORD, and hast not kept the commandment which the LORD thy God commanded thee, But camest back, and hast eaten bread and drunk**

water in the place, of the which the LORD did say to thee, Eat no bread, and drink no water; thy carcase shall not come unto the sepulchre of thy fathers.

And it came to pass, after he had eaten bread, and after he had drunk, that he saddled for him the ass, to wit, for the prophet whom he had brought back. And when he was gone, a lion met him by the way, and slew him: and his carcase was cast in the way, and the ass stood by it, the lion also stood by the carcase. And, behold, men passed by, and saw the carcase cast in the way, and the lion standing by the carcase: and they came and told it in the city where the old prophet dwelt.

And when the prophet that brought him back from the way heard thereof, he said, It is the man of God, who was disobedient unto the word of the LORD: therefore the LORD hath delivered him unto the lion, which hath torn him, and slain him, according to the word of the LORD, which he spake unto him.

1 Kings 13:1-26

### **A Minister Must Obey the Voice of God to Avoid Premature Death**

In this story, the Lord specifically told the prophet what to do. By obeying the voice of God this man of God became a worker of signs and wonders. He suddenly had a thriving ministry. Then here comes an old and backslidden man of God. Did you know that men of God can also backslide? Unfortunately, this younger prophet listened to another “voice”.

At a certain level of ministry, you may become confused by the different voices that are trying to guide you. Make sure that you stick with the Word of God.

In the New Testament, Paul explicitly stated that people were *sick* and *dead* because they did not discern the Lord’s Body. Paul gave the reason for disease and death in the church.

**For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord’s body. For this cause MANY ARE WEAK and SICKLY among you, and MANY SLEEP [DEAD].**

1 Corinthians 11:29,30

To discern the Lord’s Body means to realize or discern that you are dealing with the Lord’s Body. All the sheep and little lambs are the Lord’s Body. They are the ones He died for on the cross.

If for instance, you knew that somebody’s finger was on the table, you would not strike it with a big hammer. You would not hit that finger because you know it is part of his body.

When you fail to realize that the church is Christ’s Body, you will get into trouble. Those sheep, those people, are the ones the Lord shed His blood for! They are His body! When you abandon them, it is like abandoning your mouth (a part of your body) by not brushing your teeth for months. You can imagine why the Lord gets mad at ministers who neglect His Body.

## *Chapter 4*

# How to Avoid Being Replaced

Jesus died for the little lambs. He told us to “go!” He told us to feed His little lambs. One day, the Lord became very angry with His shepherds. Look at what He said to them. He said He would take over and shepherd the people Himself.

**Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; As I live, saith the Lord GOD, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock; Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I am against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them. FOR THUS SAITH THE LORD GOD; BEHOLD, I, EVEN I, WILL BOTH SEARCH MY SHEEP, AND SEEK THEM OUT.**

**Ezekiel 34:7,8,10,11**

One night, while in a hotel in South America, the Lord spoke to me about His work. I had never heard the Lord speak so mournfully as He did that night. He spoke of how nobody cared about His work. He told me that everyone was running about his or her own business. He said to me, “No one cares about my work.” I found this very sad but real.

When we do not obey the Lord, we are in effect neglecting His sheep. Jesus asked Peter whether he would feed the sheep. Peter was taken aback, wondering why the Lord was asking. “After three years of training what do you expect me to do?” he must have thought. But the Lord knew how many ministers would abandon His work!

### **A Minister Must Obey the Voice of God to Avoid Being Displaced and Replaced**

When a minister neglects or abandons God’s work, the Lord gets angry. This is the reason why He often displaces and replaces men of God with new ones.

### **A Vision of Replacement**

One day I had a strange vision. In this vision, I saw a man being lifted from his chair by the collar of his neck. I did not see who the man was. Suddenly, I found myself being lifted by the collar of *my* neck and being placed in *his* chair. After that the Lord told me that I was replacing someone in the ministry.

Dear friend, I tell you, I was frightened! I was not frightened about replacing someone but rather because the reality that I could also be replaced one day, became very real to me! This vision was very biblical because it happened many times in the Scriptures.

Samuel replaced Eli! David replaced Saul! Elisha replaced Elijah!

**...and Elisha the son of Shaphat of Abel-meholah shalt thou anoint to be prophet  
IN THY ROOM.**

**1 Kings 19:16**

You have a room (place) in the ministry. However, it is not a permanent room. It can be given to anyone who deserves it. Always remember that there are people ready to replace you if you do not obey the voice of God. Obey the voice of God to avoid replacement!

## *Chapter 5*

# Twelve Kinds of Voices Every Christian Should Know About

**There are, it may be, so MANY KINDS OF VOICES in the world, and none of them is without signification.**

**1 Corinthians 14:10**

One of the greatest desires of all serious Christians is to know the will of God. With a little experience in life, anyone can tell that there are many different ways your life can go. We often come to the crossroads and ask, “Which way is best?” If you take the wrong road, the implications may be devastating. If you marry the wrong person, the consequences may be terrible. If you join the wrong church, the consequences may be eternal.

Many times when we take decisions, we are unable to retrace our steps. In other words, many decisions are irreversible. Because of this, we need to know the will of God so that we can be guided along every step of the way.

### **Even Unbelievers Want to Know the Future**

Unbelievers have ways of getting to know what is best for them. Many of them consult soothsayers, astrologers and fortune tellers. They put their trust in false prophets and occult power. They also see the need to know what to do next. African politicians are often said to consult these powers on a regular basis. They often ask for direction and protection from them. African soccer teams consult these mediums as well. You will notice however, that none of these things have taken them very far.

As Christians, we do not need to consult satanic powers to know the future. God has graciously given us the Holy Spirit to guide us. Being led by the Spirit of God is a sign that you are a true Christian.

**For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.**

**Romans 8:14**

In the Old Testament, only the prophet seemed to know the will of God. You see, the Holy Spirit was not given to everyone at that time. We are living in a blessed dispensation. We all have the Holy Spirit in us and can be led by the Spirit of God. It is possible for us to know the will of God. That is what this book is all about:

“How to know the will of God” and “How to be led by the Spirit of God.”

### **12 Different Kinds of Voices**

**The first step to knowing the will of God is to recognize that there are many types of voices in this world and all of them are trying to influence you.** The art of selecting the right voice and listening to that voice is the art of being led by the Spirit of God.

God wants to deliver you from evil and He has sent His Spirit to lead you through this life so that you will not make tragic mistakes.

Satan, who is God's opponent and an opposition party, is trying to lead you in the wrong way or at least confuse you. What are the voices that are trying to influence you? There are several possibilities that you must be aware of:

1. ~ The voice of God ~
2. ~ The voice of the flesh ~
3. ~ The voice of the mind ~
4. ~ The voice of the devil ~
5. ~ The voice of a prophet ~
6. ~ The voice of your pastor ~
7. ~ The voice of your friends ~
8. ~ The voice of your parents ~
9. ~ The voice of your spirit ~
10. ~ The voice of your spouse ~
11. ~ The voice of circumstances ~
12. ~ The voice of your own will ~

All these voices, as well as some others, are probably in operation in your life. Depending on who you are, you may be influenced more or less by these voices. A young man may claim that the voice of God spoke to him, directing him to marry a beautiful young lady in the church. He may approach the young woman and tell her, "God spoke to me last night." Is this young man telling the truth? Did he really hear the voice of God?

Let me make an important point here. There are at least twelve different voices that this young man could have heard. He could have heard the voice of circumstances leading him to marry this young lady or he could have heard the voice of his flesh, desirous of the opposite sex. He could also have genuinely heard the voice of God. None of these voices is without significance. What is important is to know which voice is leading you.

### **The Thirsty Donkey**

I always remember the story of a thirsty donkey that went on a long journey through the desert. At the end of his tedious journey, the donkey was tired, hungry and thirsty. As it trudged along, it noticed two stacks of hay at different ends of the field. The donkey thought to himself, "There is food for me!" Then he realized that the two different haystacks were at opposite ends of an extremely large field.

The donkey, being a "Christian", decided to seek the will of God concerning which of the haystacks he should approach. The donkey decided to pray. As the donkey was bowing his head to pray, he noticed a bucket of water positioned by the haystack on the right. The donkey then prayed a simple but powerful prayer and said, "O God, I want to know your will concerning which direction to go. Should I go to the haystack on the right or to the one on the left?"

After praying, the donkey gathered himself together and began to walk towards one of the haystacks. Which of the stacks of hay do you think the donkey went to? The stack on the right or that on the left? Well, when the donkey was asked he said, "God has directed me to the one on the right."

Everyone can predict that the donkey would say that God had directed him to the haystack on the right. However, you and I both know that it was probably the bucket of water that attracted the donkey to the haystack on the right. **It is time to be honest! It is time to tell the truth! Is it really the Spirit of God who is leading us or is it the voice of our flesh and of circumstances?**

Anytime someone claims to have been directed by the “Spirit of God”, you should remember that there are over twelve different possibilities that exist. The voice he claims to be hearing is one out of twelve or more different voices. Is it the voice of his friends? Is it the voice of his wife? Is it the voice of circumstances? What is actually leading this person?

### **Three in One Day!**

I learnt of a man who became close to three Christian sisters at the same time. This man happened to be in Bible school at the same time with these three ladies who were his age. They attended classes together, they prayed together and they even went to church together. As time passed, they became a very closely knit family. There was a real flow of Christian love and friendship among them. This Christian brother was a very caring young man. He was also handsome and was obviously a promising minister. He was good at the ministry of counselling and seemed to be a patient listener to people’s problems.

At the end of the course, something interesting happened! It was graduation time and each of the three Christian sisters approached this compassionate brother with a “message” from the Lord. Each one of them said (unknown to the others), “God has spoken to me about you that we should spend the rest of our lives and ministries together.” In other words, God had supposedly spoken to each of these women to marry the brother. The brother was so surprised. He told them, “I appreciate your sharing this with me, but God hasn’t spoken to me about this.” He did not marry any of these three girls. He ended up marrying somebody else.

I find this true story very interesting. It illustrates the point I am trying to make. Each of these three ladies claimed to have heard the voice of God. But as I said, there are several possibilities to each claim. How could God tell three different people, at the same time, to marry one man? Does His Word not tell us that God wants one man to marry only one woman?

They were obviously hearing the voice of their own flesh. It could be the voice of their minds. They claimed that the voice of their flesh was the voice of God. These three ladies embarrassed themselves. You can save yourself from embarrassment when you learn to distinguish between the voice of the Spirit and other voices. That is what this book is all about – how to know the voice of God and how to follow the Holy Spirit to the top! In the following chapters, I will share some things about these different voices and how you can distinguish between them.



## *Chapter 6*

# Four Things Every Christian Should Know About the Voice of the Mind

**And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole SPIRIT and SOUL and BODY be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23**

Man consists of a spirit, a soul and a body. That is quite clear from the verse above. Each of these components of the human being has a voice.

**Your thought processes and your reasoning are the voice of your mind.** God never intended for us to do away with our minds. Many people stop reasoning and thinking when they become Christians. There is a funny notion that it is wrong to reason or understand things once you are in the kingdom of God. There is a feeling that if you are a spiritual person it is not right to reason things out. This has led to many disasters in this life.

### **Four Things Every Christian Should Know About the Voice of the Mind**

#### **1. The mind is a great asset for every Christian and every minister.**

**I believe that the mind is one of the most wonderful gifts that God has given to every man.** The mind is one of the most complex computers in the world today. It is a gift that you are expected to use. Even when you are born-again, you are expected to use your mind. When you are a spiritual leader, you are expected to use your mind!

When you want to decide whether to marry someone or not, you must first use your mind. You must ask yourself, "What is the background of this person? How old is he or she? What is the educational background of the person? What is the family background of the person? What language does he or she speak?"

#### **The difference between men and animals**

When I have to take decisions in the ministry, I do not just pray about them. I think about them! I analyse things! God gave me a mind and I intend to use it on a daily basis. What is the difference between a human being and an animal? The human being has a more developed brain. This gives him a mind with a great thinking capability. It is the use of the mind, which has made human beings rule and dominate all animals.

We human beings have control over animals that are wild and dangerous. We control poisonous and deadly reptiles by the use of a superior mind. We capture animals like elephants and whales that are a hundred times the size of a man. We keep them in cages and observe them at our pleasure. What gives us this power? It is the use of a superior mind.

## **The difference between men and men**

Even amongst human beings, those that have encouraged the use of the mind have ended up ruling those that have not used their minds much. The educated (developed minds) are ruling the uneducated. Go into almost every institution and you will find that the educated are higher placed than the uneducated. They have higher salaries and are better looked after.

In a very sophisticated world, the inventors of cars and airplanes are dominating millions of people who have not used their minds to create such things. The inventors and manufacturers of televisions, videos and telephones have more money than those who just buy and use them. Through the world's complex financial system, many people who are officially free from slavery are still experiencing a sophisticated form of financial and mental slavery!

Those who know how to convert cocoa beans into chocolate and other niceties have more "say so" than those who just know how to harvest cocoa on a farm. It takes more use of the mind to develop machines and complicated equipment that are used to convert raw materials into final products.

Simply speaking, the world is divided into two: those who have used their God-given gift of a super mind and those who have not!

### **2. Do not send your mind on vacation because you have become a spiritual person.**

**Do a survey of some churches. Those who have emphasized on spiritual and emotional things, to the absolute exclusion of rational thinking, have ended up on the rocks.** God does not expect you to exclude your mind because you are a spiritual person.

I consider myself to be a very spiritual person. I spend numerous hours a week in prayer. I believe that the Bible is my final authority on all matters of doctrine. This however, has not made me to stop reasoning and rationalizing things. When you stop using your mind, even in the spiritual world, you lower yourself from the rank that God intends for you.

## **How to Cross a Road**

Someone wanted to know the will of God about marriage. I said to him, "Do you know the Kaneshie-Mallam Highway (a very wide and dangerous highway in the city of Accra in my country, Ghana)?"

He said, "Yes, I do."

I asked him, "If you wanted to cross that road what would you do?"

He began to answer but I stopped him.

I said to him, "I know what you would do! You would close your eyes and ask the Lord to speak to you and tell you the exact moment to cross."

He smiled.

I continued, "Wouldn't you do that?"

"I don't think so," he responded.

I went on, "If you were to do something like that you are likely to be killed immediately. The highest form of manifested stupidity is to shut off your mind when you are taking important decisions."

I said to him, "God is not the author of foolishness. He does not expect you to close your eyes and listen to the voice of the Spirit telling you when to cross. He gave you eyes to see and a mind with which to make sound judgements. It is like having money in your pocket

that God has given you to solve your problems. Yet, you cry to Him and ask Him for money. Meanwhile, you have some money in your pocket.”

What is God saying to you? God is saying that it is time to think again. It is time to be educated. It is time to reason. If you are a pastor, do not take all the decisions on your own. When it comes to finances, think and use the minds of trained accountants. When it comes to legal matters, believe and accept the minds of trained lawyers. When it comes to church growth, read and learn everything you can.

### **3. A combination of the voice of the Spirit and the voice of the mind will lead to your promotion in life and ministry.**

The Holy Spirit is not the author of foolishness and absurdities. Please stop claiming that the Spirit is telling you things when that is not the case! There are many things that I do not pray about; I simply *think* about them. The Bible says that Christ is to us not only power but also wisdom.

**...Christ the power of God, and the WISDOM OF GOD.**

**1 Corinthians 1:24**

Jesus Christ in our lives makes us wise and not foolish. If you want to be promoted in this life, get wisdom. Wisdom has to do with the mind. The Bible says that wisdom is the principal thing. Therefore, with all your getting, get wisdom.

**Exalt her [wisdom], and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her.**

**Proverbs 4:8**

Your promotion and honour are on the way when you start applying yourself to God's wisdom. Never forget that it was wisdom that brought Joseph out of jail and into the king's palace. Wisdom brought Daniel into the rank of prime minister and vice-president in three successive governments. It was wisdom and the use of his mind that made Solomon the richest man on earth. **Wisdom is the intelligent use of your thinking capabilities. Wisdom is the ability to take right decisions based on the information available to you. Wisdom is the ability *not* to ignore realities when they are before you.**

### **4. Too much reasoning can turn you into a fool.**

There is, however, one danger with the voice of the mind—the danger of reasoning until you become foolish again. Knowledge and thinking without God will make you into a fool.

The expositors of the evolution theory reasoned their way through a maze of obvious scientific realities involving the evolution of created beings. They saw some things and propounded some theories. However, when they got to a point where they had to question themselves about the *origin* of all created beings, they began to guess and made fools out of themselves.

It is the mother of all absurdities for someone to say that this intricate, fantastic and perfect creation of God came about through an explosion (The Big Bang Theory). In the medical school, I dissected the body of a dead human being for one and a half years. I discovered for myself how extraordinary and awesome God's creation is.

This is why the Bible says it is only a fool who says that there is no God. No one can tell me that an explosion that occurred in Germany created a Mercedes-Benz car. That is foolishness!

Even though you must develop your mind, God's Word and His Spirit are superior to every reasoning of man. You must allow the wisdom of God to supersede the wisdom of man.

**Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?**

**1 Corinthians 1:20**

**Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men.**

**1 Corinthians 1:25**

There are times when God will direct you and it will not look wise in the natural. When I left my noble medical profession for the Ministry, many people thought I had gone mad. My parents were distressed and my relatives were worried. They could not see the sense in what I was doing. They asked, "Why should someone leave such a promising career for an apparently fruitless and uncertain adventure?"

But I knew that God had called me and at such times natural reasoning had to give way to the voice of God.

The problem with this is that many Christians are simply not using their minds at all. They continue claiming that every quixotic adventure they embark on is directed by the supernatural voice of God.

**It is time to let the voice of your mind have its proper place.**

## *Chapter 7*

# Five Keys to Victory over the Voice of Your Flesh

### **Remember These Keys**

1. The voice of your flesh is your human desire.
2. The voice of your flesh is your physical feelings.
3. The voice of the flesh says, “Do what feels nice and easy.”
4. Do not obey the voice of the flesh if you want to be blessed.
5. You can silence the voice of the flesh by doing what is hard and difficult.

The voice of your flesh is the expression of your desires and feelings. Whenever you have certain feelings and desires, the flesh is speaking. The flesh is a very dangerous thing to follow. If you follow your desires for food, rest and sex, you will end up as a spiritual disaster.

**FOR TO BE CARNALLY MINDED IS DEATH; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.**

**Romans 8:6**

A spiritual person is someone who grows to the point where he is able to realize when his flesh is speaking or influencing him. Jesus said, “The spirit is willing but the flesh is weak” (Matthew 26:41). The flesh always wants to do the wrong thing. It constantly influences you along the course of least resistance.

**I have realized that if I do the things that are hard and difficult, I get to be promoted.** Whereas, if I do the things which are nice and easy, I do not progress. The flesh wants you to sleep. It is your flesh that will say to you, “Do not go to that all-night prayer meeting.”

Many young men should know that it is actually the desire of the flesh that motivates them towards marriage and relationships. Often, young men are not led by the Spirit into marriage but by their flesh!

### **A Special Ministry**

Some years ago, as a student in Achimota School (a secondary school in Ghana), I noticed a young man who called himself a minister. He would come to the school to visit us and to minister the Word.

After a while, I observed that this man hardly ever visited the brothers in the boarding school. He could always be found chatting with the ladies and “ministering” to them. One day I asked him, “How come you hardly come to see the brothers anymore?”

I added, “You spend all your time at the girls’ dormitory.”

“Oh,” he answered, “I have a special call from God. My ministry is to the sisters.”

In other words, God had called him to spend all his time with the ladies.

At that time, I accepted it as a valid ministry. However, if you study the Bible, you will not find such a ministry. The Bible says that the older women should teach the younger women (Titus 2:4).

This fellow was probably just following the natural dictates of his flesh. As a man, he tended to flow more with the sisters. This is a natural phenomenon. It happens all the time. But instead of acknowledging the reality of his flesh and what was natural, he claimed that the Holy Spirit had given him a *special ministry* to girls.

### **The “Spirit” Speaks?**

A young man was sent out by the General Superintendent of his denomination to pioneer a church in the metropolis. This young man was poorly educated and had no steady job. He was however operating as a lay pastor (an unpaid/voluntary minister). He began the church by witnessing and following-up the converts. To his surprise, the church began to grow. The church’s growth was aided by the good name of that ministry. He also flowed in the general anointing that was over that denomination.

The church that had begun in the young man’s sitting room, soon grew until there were over one hundred members in the church. The money began to roll in and for the first time, the church’s bank account had over one million cedis (five hundred dollars at the 1999 exchange rate). After a while, the man who said that the church should meet in his house free of charge came up with an outrageous sum, as rent owed him. This pastor had obviously seen the financial capacity and capability of the church. The church had more money than he thought it would ever have.

The denomination’s administrators however, refused to pay that huge sum of money. They offered to pay a smaller sum of money. The rent issue then died a natural death. However, a couple of months later the pastor suddenly requested an audience with the General Superintendent of the church.

“What can we do for you?” the Superintendent asked.

“The Lord has spoken to me. He has asked me to resign from this ministry and to begin my own church,” the pastor revealed.

The surprised Superintendent queried, “What do you mean?”

“It’s nothing personal. God has called me. He said I should start my own ministry.”

“I see,” said the Superintendent, “Are you sure there is no other reason?”

“No! The Spirit of God has spoken and I have to obey!”

The administrators of the church questioned this pastor, “Is it not because you want control over the church’s money? Are you not taking this decision for financial reasons?”

The pastor was not pleased, “Are you doubting my call? Do you doubt that God has spoken to me?”

This pastor eventually took over the church, changed its name and stole the entire congregation. The denomination decided to start another church nearby for those of its members who wanted to remain loyal to the denomination.

A week after this pastor had stolen the congregation, it came to light that he had been siphoning money from the church offerings. Instead of following the clearly laid down rules

of his denomination (to bank all monies immediately), he would take some money out and use it. In other words, he was making wrong declarations of the church's offerings.

This is an example of someone who claimed that he had heard the voice of God. Although no one can really judge, it is quite obvious that there were many financial considerations in this young pastor's decision to break away from his denomination.

The voice of the flesh crying out for more money was being heard loud and clear. Learn to distinguish the voice of the flesh from other voices.

**There are, it may be, so MANY KINDS OF VOICES in the world, and none of them is without signification.**

**1 Corinthians 14:10**

## Chapter 8

# Three Important Truths About the Voice of the Holy Spirit

The voice of the Holy Spirit is the most important voice that we need to hear in these times. Jesus said that He would send us the Holy Spirit to guide us. The Holy Spirit speaks the mind of God.

**...for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.**

**John 16:13**

### **1. The voice of the Holy Spirit transmits God's current plan for you.**

One of the cardinal duties of the Holy Spirit is to transmit God's mind to you. He will not speak of Himself. Whatever He hears God say, He will relay it to you. From today, there is no need to consult the astrologers or the stars. The Holy Spirit will show you things to come.

God will tell you what to expect. If He does not tell you anything, then there is nothing unusual to expect. The Holy Spirit is on duty twenty-four hours a day; He speaks all the time. It is our duty therefore to learn about His voice and how to distinguish it from other voices.

### **2. The Holy Spirit may choose to speak to your spirit, soul or body.**

The Holy Spirit has a voice. However, the Bible teaches that He speaks directly to your spirit, soul or body. **When the Holy Spirit speaks to your mind, it will sound a little different from when He speaks to your physical body.**

I have experienced the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to me in all three ways. He speaks to us in all three ways and it is important for us to receive from the Holy Spirit in whichever way He chooses to speak to us. When the Holy Spirit speaks to your spirit, you do not hear an audible voice. This is what people call "the inner witness".

### **3. The voice of the Holy Spirit to your spirit is called the inner witness.**

The Bible also tells us that the Holy Spirit is in our hearts (spirit) crying "Abba Father", which is the cry of a child to his real father. By the voice of the Holy Spirit in your heart, you know that you are a real child of God.

**And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth THE SPIRIT of his Son into your hearts, CRYING, Abba, Father.**

**Galatians 4:6**

This verse says that the Holy Spirit is crying or shouting in your heart. But have you ever heard an audible voice saying "Abba Father"? Have you ever had an audible voice flashing



through your mind saying “Abba Father”? The answer is no! What is the effect of the Holy Spirit crying “Abba Father” in our heart? It creates a silent assurance of your salvation. You know that you are a Christian and you know that you are going to Heaven.

The voice of the Holy Spirit to your spirit creates what I call a *quiet assurance*. It creates a *relaxed knowing* about something. Apostle Paul described this as *perceiving* or a *knowing*. You may ask, “Pastor, how do you know these things?” I know it from the Bible. Let us read it together.

**Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them, And said unto them, Sirs, I PERCEIVE that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives. Nevertheless the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more than those things which were spoken by Paul.**

**Acts 27:9-11**

Apostle Paul declared to the Centurion and other experienced sailors that he *perceived* that there were going to be serious problems during the journey. Paul did not say that he had heard the Spirit of God telling him not to travel. He just had a *knowing* and a *perception*. How did he know this? How did he perceive this? Was it a natural perception or a spiritual perception? It was definitely not a natural perception because in the natural there was no sign of danger. The wind was blowing very softly, which was a good sign.

**And when THE SOUTH WIND BLEW SOFTLY, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Crete.**

**Acts 27:13**

As you can see, the south wind was blowing softly. There was no indication of trouble. Paul had what many Christians have when the Holy Spirit speaks to their spirit – a *perception* and a *knowing*. As if to distinguish between the different ways in which the Holy Spirit speaks, the Lord spoke to Paul in a different way on this same journey.

The bad things he had perceived had happened and the people on the ship had given up hope of surviving. However, God spoke to Paul in an unusual or spectacular way.

**But after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss. And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you, but of the ship. For THERE STOOD BY ME THIS NIGHT THE ANGEL OF GOD, whose I am, and whom I serve, Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee. Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.**

**Acts 27:21-25**

You can see from this passage that the Holy Spirit spoke in two different ways on two different occasions. The first time was by the inner witness and the second time was by an angel.

Another Scripture which says the same thing is Romans 8:16.

**The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:**

**Romans 8:16**

When the Holy Spirit speaks to your spirit, you do not have thoughts flashing through your mind. **The Spirit bearing witness is the same as the Spirit speaking or witnessing to your heart that you are a child of God.** This is the commonest way that you will detect the

voice of the Spirit. When you want to take a decision, watch out for that quiet assurance in your heart! If you want to marry somebody, watch out for that relaxed *knowing* that “this is it!” If you need to change your job or enter a partnership, check up on whether you have that quiet assurance of peace in your heart.

## Chapter 9

# Seven Characteristics of the Inner Witness

**The Spirit itself BEARETH WITNESS WITH OUR SPIRIT, that we are the children of God:**

**Romans 8:16**

**And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth THE SPIRIT of his Son into your hearts, CRYING, Abba, Father.**

**Galatians 4:6**

The question is, “How can I distinguish the voice of this inner witness? Are there any features that I must look out for? What differentiates the inner witness from an ordinary thought?” I want to give you seven characteristics that you must look out for.

### **1. The inner witness is different from reasoning thoughts.**

It is not mental knowledge or logical reasoning. If what you are having is just an ingenious idea, then it’s probably not the inner witness

### **2. The inner witness is not a physical feeling.**

Because the inner witness is the voice of the Holy Spirit to your spirit, you will not have a physical feeling per se. If someone claims that he has a physical feeling in his big toe or his liver, that is probably not the inner witness!

### **3. The inner witness is best identified by eliminating other voices.**

A great secret to identifying the inner witness is to eliminate other voices. Ensure that it is not your flesh that wants to do something. Make sure that it is not just a reasonable proposition. There may be some good reason and some good feelings when the Spirit is leading you, but make sure it is not *just* that!

### **4. The inner witness is an *impression* of peace.**

The inner witness is an awareness of peace. It is the peace of God that is beyond (passes) understanding, reasoning, logic and physical things. As you develop spiritually you will become aware of the peace of God as a method of direction. You will say, “I don’t have peace about this!” At other times you will say, “Even though it sounds odd, I have peace about this issue. I know it shall be well with me.”

### **5. The inner witness is a strong conviction.**

The inner witness makes you certain about what the Lord is saying. You begin to have a quiet assurance and confidence about the will of God.

Once again, this is not easily explained. Do you think people who give up their lives for the Gospel can explain what they are doing? You cannot easily explain the faith you have! You cannot always explain the convictions you have!

### **6. The inner witness is repetitive.**

The inner witness is the repeated voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to your heart.

**...the Spirit...crying,...**

**Galatians 4:6**

As the Spirit cries continually, it creates an impression in you. You begin to have a conviction about certain things. You begin to know that you know. One characteristic that I have noticed is that the voice of the Spirit is repeated over and over. This happens over several weeks, months and even years.

### **7. The inner witness is an inexplicable knowing.**

After you have heard the voice of the Spirit several times, you begin to know what to do. It creates in you "a knowing". Sometimes people ask me, "How did you know what to do?" Sometimes all I can say is, "I just knew."

## Chapter 10

# How to Use “Peace the Umpire” for Daily Guidance

Paul described the phenomenon of the inner witness in a peculiar way. He called the peace of God “an umpire”. In other words, we have a special referee in our lives who guides us.

**And let the PEACE of God RULE in your hearts,...**

**Colossians 3:15**

The peace of God in our hearts is supposed to rule or guide us. The peace of God in our hearts is generated by the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to our hearts. When you don't have that peace, please be careful of danger. The Greek word translated “rule” is the word *brabeuo*. It means “to be an umpire”, “to arbitrate”, “to direct” and “to govern”.

God is using peace to direct and govern you. I say to you, “If you don't have peace, don't go! If you don't have peace about him, don't marry him!” Peace is the umpire you have! When the umpire blows the whistle, you are supposed to stop.

It is the umpire who tells you to “play on”. He signals to you when something is wrong. If you learn to follow this peace in your heart, you will experience success in all decisions that you take.

A friend of mine left church one evening and stopped a taxi on a motorway. He told me later of a terrible experience he had. He said, “I remember that as I was getting into the car I felt very uneasy. I had no peace.” You see, peace the umpire was blowing the whistle and telling him, “No! Don't go!”

He narrated, “There was one person in addition to the driver. I was sitting on the back seat.”

In the middle of the journey the driver began to drive very slowly. He turned off his lights and began to sing a hymn, “*Lead kindly light*”(a song that is often sang at funerals). The driver revealed himself to be a wizard who was operating from a town near the capital, Accra. As they drove along, the driver and the man in front said to my friend, “We are taking you somewhere.”

He was terrified. They turned off the motorway onto a dusty road and drove into a cemetery. When they arrived at the cemetery they told him, “Get out of the car. You are going to die.”

My friend said to me, “I knew that this was my last hour. They said that they were going to sacrifice me and use parts of my body for rituals.”

He continued, “Just before they were about to sacrifice me, I prayed, knowing that these were my last minutes on earth.”

The driver of the car then said, "If you will join our witchcraft group, I will not kill you."

My friend told me, "I agreed to join for the sake of my life."

Thinking that they had got a convert they went back to the car and drove to the next town. My friend told me, "They dropped me off at the nearest junction in the town centre. When I got out of the car I told the man, "If you think I would ever join such an evil group, you must be out of your mind. The power of Jesus is greater than any power."

And with that he ran off into the nearby crowd. The driver could not pursue him because there were too many people around.

God had saved my friend from certain death at the hands of ritual murderers. But God had tried to direct him through the umpire called peace. The uneasiness my friend had felt when he was getting into the car was a warning from God not to proceed.

In the ministry, you need to have peace about many things that you engage in. Sometimes there is no reason for peace. Sometimes you don't know why you are at peace. The Bible calls it "the peace that passes all understanding".

## *Chapter 11*

# How to Tell the Difference When the Spirit Speaks in Different Ways

### **The Voice of the Holy Spirit to Your Soul (Mind)**

The Holy Spirit also speaks to our minds and directs us. What is it like when the Holy Spirit speaks to your mind? Anything that enters your mind is a thought. The Holy Spirit speaks to your mind by bringing thoughts to it.

**But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance [mind], whatsoever I have said unto you.**

**John 14:26**

This verse states clearly that the Holy Spirit will bring things to your mind. You must learn to distinguish between thoughts that come from your natural thought processes and thoughts that come from the Holy Spirit. There are also thoughts and suggestions that come from Satan.

Someone asked, “How do you know the voice of the Holy Spirit?” That is like asking, “How do I know the voice of my wife? Or for that matter anyone else?” By experience! The more I hear certain voices, the more easily I can identify them. Certain people call me on the telephone and do not need to introduce themselves. I know who they are when they begin to speak.

When you become conversant with the voice of the Holy Spirit to your spirit, soul or body, you will know when He speaks. I have many thoughts passing through my mind all the time. Just like everyone else, I have to filter these and decide which ones are natural and which ones are supernatural.

### **How I Heard That Voice in My Mind**

Some years ago, I was dealing with a rebellious individual in my church. I felt strongly that this pastor was a rebel and that he was a liar. However, he had denied it on so many occasions that I doubted within myself whether this was the case. One day, while on a trip to Europe, the Holy Spirit spoke to my mind. I was lying down in bed when the Spirit of God spoke clearly into my mind. He said, “So-and-so is a liar and I will show you five different lies he has told you at different times.”

Suddenly and in rapid succession, the Holy Spirit gave me five clear instances when this pastor had lied to me. They came so fast that I struggled to remember them afterwards. Then the Holy Spirit said, “Because of these, know that he is lying to you about this current problem.” That was the turning point in my relationship with that particular minister. I

suddenly knew that I was dealing with a prevaricator who by evasive and misleading answers had been able to live a lie.

God showed me that day that I had to deal with this rebellious and contumacious young man. And I did just that!

If you are a pastor, you will need the Spirit of God to lead you especially in relation to those who work with you. The spirit of Judas is the spirit of the perfect pretender. Sometimes you will never know of the deadly poison around you unless God reveals it to you supernaturally. I have found that the Spirit of God does these unusual things when there is no way for me to know certain things naturally! It is not the principal way that God speaks to you, but it is certainly an important method.

God speaks to your mind when He has to. The Bible makes it clear.

**...[He will] bring all things to your remembrance [mind], whatsoever I have said unto you.**

**John 14:26**

Many times when men of God say that God has spoken to them, they mean that certain thoughts came to their mind which they believe are from the Holy Spirit.

From today, have faith in the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to your mind.

**The Spirit of God says things to your mind (remembrance). When He speaks to your mind, you have distinctive, special and unique thoughts.** It comes in a way that is unusual. It is learnt through experience and operated by faith.

### **The Voice of the Holy Spirit to Your Body**

**And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.**

**Acts 9:3-5**

You must also learn the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to your physical being. *In this case, you will hear an audible voice speaking to you.* The Bible is full of such examples, however, do not make the mistake of thinking that it was an everyday occurrence with the Apostles.

Paul probably heard the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to him in this way only once or twice in his lifetime. There is no need to seek these spectacular experiences. The devil knows when you have an appetite for sensational things. He is an expert at filling you with deception when he knows that you are vulnerable.

I have walked with the Lord for over twenty years. Once in my life, I believe I heard the audible voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to me. But that is not the principal way by which the Holy Spirit leads me.

I believe I am called to the ministry. The proof of my call is in the fact that you are reading this book now! However, the Holy Spirit did not speak to me audibly to call me into the ministry. I have the quiet assurance of the voice of the Holy Spirit speaking to my heart. I know that I must be in the ministry. I know that I must not do anything else with my life. I must preach until I die. Like Paul said, "Woe is me if I preach not the Gospel." God does not need to give you a dramatic experience before you start obeying Him.

At different stages of my ministry, the Spirit has spoken to me in different ways. As far back as 1980, in Achimota Secondary School, I can remember the Spirit of God speaking to



my spirit and giving me that inner knowing and peace about doing His work. Because of this, I have the conviction to serve God in the ministry as a pastor. It is this relaxed assurance that has put me in the ministry.

In 1988, in a remote village hospital of Ghana, the Spirit of God spoke to me audibly and showed me the direction to take in the ministry. In June 1996, in a small French village, the Spirit spoke to my mind and told me to start operating in certain areas of the ministry.

At each stage of my life the Holy Spirit has spoken to me in whatever way He found appropriate. He will also speak to you and you will get to know His voice as you walk with Him.

## *Chapter 12*

# Four Reasons for Spectacular Guidance

We now come to more spectacular forms of guidance by the Holy Spirit. These include things like dreams, visions, trances, the appearance of angels and even the appearance of Jesus. We must ask ourselves why God chooses different methods each time. God is sovereign; He can decide to do whatever He wants.

I am not attempting to give a formula for how God speaks. I am just showing some patterns I have found in the Word of God. I would like to share with you four reasons why God may choose to speak to you in a spectacular way.

### **Four Reasons**

1. God may speak in a spectacular way because it involves something very important for your life and ministry.
2. God may speak in a spectacular way because all other methods to reach you have not worked.
3. God may speak in a spectacular way because He sometimes shows mercy to stubborn people.
4. God may speak in a spectacular way because it involves something very important for His church.

### **Spectacular Guidance for Salvation**

The Apostle Paul is an example of someone who experienced spectacular guidance. By the way, the fact that the guidance may not be spectacular does not mean it's not supernatural. Paul's salvation was not a typical case of conversion. I believe there are three reasons why God spoke to Paul in a spectacular way.

- a. Paul was destroying the church.

**Who was before...injurious:...**

**1 Timothy 1:13**

- b. God wanted to show mercy to a stubborn person.

**Who was before a blasphemer,...**

**1 Timothy 1:13**

- c. God wanted to save Paul's life because no one can destroy the away with it.

church and get

**...it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.**

### **Spectacular Guidance for Joining the Right Church (Company)**

Shortly after Paul's dramatic conversion, the Lord used another spectacular method to lead Paul into the right church so that he could have the right training for the ministry. Paul was a proud lawyer who might have thought that a few humble Jews could not teach him much.

**...for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prayeth, And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.**

Acts 9:11,12

The visions surrounding Paul's direction to join the main church were so dramatic that Paul couldn't help but listen to the counsel of older and more experienced Christians. I believe that God did this because it involved the future ministry to the entire "Gentile" world.

### **Spectacular Guidance for Where to Start a Church**

One day Paul made plans to travel to Bithynia. He wanted to start a ministry there, but the Spirit of God had other plans. That night the Spirit of God spoke to Paul in a vision. He saw a man standing in Macedonia and saying, "Come over into Macedonia, and help us." Once again, this was very important for the building of the church.

### **Spectacular Guidance for Survival**

Further on in Paul's ministry a situation arose which threatened his very life. He was about to die in a shipwreck (plane crash). An angel suddenly appeared and told him what to do.

**But after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss. And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man's life among you, but of the ship. For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve, Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee. Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.**

Acts 27:21-25

Because of the angelic visitation, Paul directed everyone to eat some food. This saved their lives and enabled them to survive until they ran aground.

As you can see, one or more of the four reasons given at the beginning of this chapter is always present when God speaks in a spectacular way.

### **Spectacular Guidance to Help You Endure a Difficult Season**

Paul was going to go through a very difficult period as a prisoner. He was about to be arrested and kept in prison cells until he died. This was an important part of Paul's ministry because it was there that he wrote many of his letters. It is by these letters that Paul's ministry has lived on for two thousand years.

**And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judaea a certain prophet, named Agabus. And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the Holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles. Acts 21:10,11**

## Chapter 13

# How to Identify a Door

...behold, I have set before thee an OPEN DOOR,...

Revelation 3:8

1. An open door is a *God-given opportunity* in the midst of impossibilities.
2. An open door is a *chance to escape or to achieve something* for the Lord.
3. An open door is an *opening in the midst of impassable circumstances*.
4. An open door is a *time-related breakthrough* that gives you a needed option.

### Three Ways to Recognize a Door

1. **The first way to recognize a door is to recognize an opportunity that comes in the midst of other unworkable options.**

In the natural, a door is flanked on the left and right by impenetrable walls. This reveals impossible or impenetrable circumstances all around except in the position where the door is.

...I will tarry at Ephesus... For A GREAT DOOR and effectual is opened...

1 Corinthians 16:8,9

Paul decided to remain at Ephesus because of the opportunities to minister over there. All around him were hostile cities that were not open to the Gospel. **When you are flanked by impossibilities and one niche opens up, it is often God opening a door for you.**

2. **The second way to recognize a door is to discern that it is an opportunity that will not always be there.**

In the natural, a door does not have a fixed position. It is either open or closed. Any opportunity that appears for a season and disappears again must be considered as a door.

...I will tarry at Ephesus...For A GREAT DOOR and effectual is OPENED...

1 Corinthians 16:8,9

Even though there was an opportunity for ministry at Ephesus, that opportunity would not be there forever. Today, there is very little opportunity for ministry in Ephesus. The door is shut in many parts of Europe. However, the door is now open in many parts of Africa and the developing world. These doors will not remain open forever. Instability and war may close them one day. It is our duty to go through the doors when they swing open. When the "Iron Curtain" came down, there was a sudden open door for the Gospel in Eastern Europe. This door is gradually closing again.

3. **The third way to recognize a door is to realize that God engineered the opportunity and that it had nothing to do with your efforts.**

In the natural, you do not often construct the doors you meet. Everyone just passes through the doors that are open. An open door is not of your own making, it is just something that you benefit from.

**And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how *HE* HAD OPENED THE DOOR of faith unto the Gentiles.**

**Acts 14:27**

When Paul and Barnabas gave the report of their first missionary journey, everyone was overjoyed at what the Lord had done. They came to one conclusion: God had opened a door to the Gentiles! They knew that only God could do it! That is how to recognize a door. Recognize that it is only God who could have made that opportunity possible.

## Chapter 14

# How to Recognize a Door of Service

There are some important doors that every Christian must recognize and pass through. God often uses doors to direct His children.

### The Door of Service

**But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost. For A GREAT DOOR AND EFFECTUAL is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.**

**1 Corinthians 16:8,9**

The door of service is the opportunity to be effective for the Lord. The door of service is the opportunity to serve the Lord. We cannot effectively win souls for Jesus all the time. A time comes when it is not possible anymore. Sometimes marriage, pregnancy and childbearing close the door of service. If you grasp the opportunity whilst it is there, you will experience many blessings. When you follow the door of service, you gain two important qualifications. These are:

#### **a. You graduate from being a novice.**

God does not put inexperienced people into the ministry. You need experience to be effective as a minister. *What have you been through? What have you survived? What have you suffered?*

**Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil.**

**1 Timothy 3:6**

#### **b. You prove yourself so that you can be put into an office.**

There are four levels in the line of God's service.

*Level one – doing the work. ...do the work of an evangelist...*

(2 Timothy 4:5)

*Level two – having a gift. Having then gifts differing...*

(Romans 12:6)

*Level three – having a ministry. ...make full proof of thy ministry.*

(2 Timothy 4:5)

*Level four – occupying an office. ...I magnify mine office:*

(Romans 11:13)

Take the evangelistic line of ministry. You could do the *work* of an evangelist, but that does not mean that you are in the *office* of an evangelist. Like Timothy, you may be temporarily getting involved in the *work* of evangelism.

At the next level, you could have a *gift* of evangelism. That does not mean that you are in the ministry of an evangelist, but with an additional step, you could progress into the *ministry* of an evangelist. At this point, it has become your permanent line of service.

At the highest level, you could actually be in the *office* of an evangelist. When you occupy an office, you are at the highest level in that line of ministry. When you are at the office level, you need to employ people to assist you. When there are several people helping and serving under you in your line of ministry, it is often a sign that you are occupying a spiritual *office*.

**And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.**

**1 Timothy 3:10**

The door of service will show that you are faithful in little things. Then you can be trusted with greater things.

**He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much:...**

**Luke 16:10**

As you follow the doors of service, you will often find yourself doing menial jobs in the ministry. You may be in the background. You may not be seen or praised for what you do, but do not be worried, your reward is guaranteed. The reward for those who went and those who stayed behind is the same. This is a law that was established by King David.

**...but as his part is that GOETH down to the battle, so shall his part be that TARRIETH by the stuff: THEY SHALL PART ALIKE.**

**1 Samuel 30:24**

## *Chapter 15*

# How to Recognize a Door of Utterance

**Withal praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ,...**

**Colossians 4:3**

### **The Door of Utterance**

A door of utterance is an opportunity to preach or teach. Every opportunity to share the Word must be seized. It is a God-given chance to minister. Any time you share the Word you become more mature. Did you know that the preacher is the one who is most affected by the sermon?

The more you preach, the better you become at ministry. A door of utterance is a door of excellence for you.



## *Chapter 16*

# How to Recognize a Door of Faith

**And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.**

**Acts 14:27**

### **The Door of Faith**

A door of faith is the opportunity for salvation for someone. As you relate with people you must discern whether a door of faith is being opened. In Europe for instance, the door of faith (salvation) is shut. This does not mean that people cannot be saved in Europe. But the opportunity for salvation is much greater in some other places.

Sometimes someone goes through a personal crisis and becomes more open to the message of Christ. A door of faith is being opened unto that person. Seize the opportunity and minister the Gospel to him.

## *Chapter 17*

# What Every Christian Should Know About Dreams

All of us have had dreams from the time that we were very young. Dreams are so common that many Christians have grown up not respecting dreams as a valid method by which God leads us. We seem to think that after all, we had all kinds of dreams as children and also as unbelievers, and we wonder how God can lead us through dreams.

### **Dreams from the Holy Spirit**

Surprisingly, God's Word teaches us that the coming of the Holy Spirit will bring dreams into our lives.

**And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:**

**Acts 2:17**

You can see from this Scripture that dreams come as a direct result of the presence of the Holy Spirit. From today, do not take dreams lightly! This however, does not discount the fact that dreams can come from sources other than the Holy Spirit.

We will examine this also, but what must be established in your heart is the reality that many dreams are the result of the presence of the Holy Spirit. In the book of Job, God reveals that He speaks in dreams when He cannot get our attention. An unusual dream is always something that gets our attention.

**For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not.**

**Job 33:14**

There are times when God may speak to us, but we don't seem to hear. The Bible goes on to say,

**IN A DREAM, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; THEN HE OPENETH THE EARS OF MEN, and sealeth their instruction,**

**Job 33:15,16**

Sometimes you wake up in the morning with an unusual dream. It may be that God is trying to get your attention. From today, do not despise dreams. If you consider the birth of Jesus, you will discover how dreams played an important role in the life of Joseph and Mary.

It was a dream that led Joseph to marry Mary, in spite of the fact that she was found to be pregnant before they were married.

**But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.**

**Matthew 1:20,21**

It was through a dream that Joseph was directed to flee into Egypt for the safety of the baby Jesus. Because Joseph obeyed this dream, Jesus escaped the slaughter of babies that was ordered by Herod.

**And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.**

**Matthew 2:13**

When Herod died, God spoke yet again by a dream and asked Joseph to return to the land of Israel.

**But when Herod was dead, behold, AN ANGEL OF THE LORD APPEARETH IN A DREAM TO JOSEPH in Egypt, Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life.**

**Matthew 2:19,20**

Joseph was directed yet again to move away from Judea into Galilee and into a city called Nazareth. Because of this, Jesus was called a Nazarene.

**...being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee: And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth:...**

**Matthew 2:22,23**

Joseph had *four* dreams in all. By following the direction that he received in each dream, the perfect will of God was done. Prophecies were fulfilled and the Scriptures were confirmed because a man obeyed a dream.

The Apostle Paul was careful to take note of important dreams and visions. He stated that he did not disobey heavenly visions.

**Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was NOT DISOBEDIENT UNTO THE HEAVENLY VISION:**

**Acts 26:19**

Paul was someone who respected the voice of God that came to him. It is important for you to accept the fact that God does speak to us through dreams. A "vision in the night" is another biblical description for a dream.

**AND A VISION APPEARED TO PAUL IN THE NIGHT; There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us. And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.**

**Acts 16:9,10**

From this Scripture, notice how Paul became assured of what to do. One of the ways by which the Holy Spirit leads us is through a dream.

Apostle Peter had an important dream that changed the course of his ministry. Peter was praying on the rooftop while the ladies prepared food downstairs. Whilst praying, he fell into a trance and had a quick dream. In this dream he saw many strange animals and heard a voice saying, "Rise, Peter; kill and eat."

**On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the housetop to pray about the sixth hour: And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: Wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat. But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean. And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common. This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.**

**Acts 10:9-16**

This trance or short dream that Peter had, was an important instruction from God to the head of His church. God was telling Peter to go and minister to the Gentiles.

There are times when, just like Peter, you may fall asleep while you are praying. Always take note of the dreams you have at such times. They may be Spirit-inspired messages from the Lord.

## *Chapter 18*

# How to Interpret Different Kinds of Dreams

The problem with dreams is that there are four different types of dreams and that can confuse us. Sometimes, because of multiple meaningless dreams, many mature Christians tend to totally ignore the importance of dreams. The four types of dreams are:

- i. Dreams from the Holy Spirit
- ii. Dreams from your daily activities
- iii. Dreams from the flesh
- iv. Dreams from the devil

### **Dreams from Your Daily Activities**

These are dreams that emanate from your everyday activities. The Bible teaches us that a dream comes as a result of our activities or businesses.

**For a dream cometh through the multitude of business;...**

**Ecclesiastes 5:3**

Maybe you were out the entire day with a certain Christian gentleman. A few days later or perhaps that very evening, you have a dream that you were getting married to him. Although this dream could have come from the Holy Spirit, it is more likely that it came as a result of your interaction with him.

**Whenever you have a dream, check to see if there is any relationship between your dream and what is going on in your life.** It does not have to be something that has happened in your life that very day. It sometimes takes a few weeks before your business activities give rise to a dream.

You must be careful not to say a dream comes from the Holy Spirit when it has come from your own activities. In addition to this, a dream from God must be taken in context with the other ways in which the Holy Spirit speaks.

If the Holy Spirit is speaking to you in a dream, ask yourself whether it lines up with the peace of God in your heart (peace the umpire).

### **Dreams from the Flesh**

One of the common dreams that people experience is having sexual intercourse with another person. Many times those who have such dreams interpret it to mean that they are “spiritually married” to somebody else. However, these dreams are often a night-time continuation of fleshly lusts.

Often the individual involved has experienced several sexual encounters with people. Such dreams sometimes reveal the state of our minds and hearts.

**Likewise also these FILTHY DREAMERS DEFILE THE FLESH, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.**

**Jude 8**

There is something known as a filthy dream and there are people who are filthy dreamers. These people defile the flesh. In other words, they make it dirty. It is time to stop placing the blame on a “maritime spirit” or a curse. It is time to face up to the reality that filthy dreams come from a carnal nature that has been allowed to have its way time and time again.

Paul said that he controlled his flesh. Paul had a carnal nature that had a tendency to go out of control. If you allow your mind and your flesh to do anything, it will! The Bible teaches us that there is no good thing in the flesh.

**For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing:...**

**Romans 7:18**

There is no good thing in your fleshly nature. Do not give it an opportunity to go out of bounds.

**...make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.**

**Romans 13:14**

### **Dreams from the Devil**

As usual, the devil has a counterfeit for everything that God does. Satan’s specialty is to deceive and to trick.

God is not the author of confusion. **A dream, which brings confusion, is not from God.** The Spirit of God is not a spirit of fear. Something that comes to frighten you is not from the Spirit of the Lord.

Many people have been snared by the devil through dreams. Satan will give you a picture of some evil event and tell you that the dream is going to happen. The devil may show you a picture of your coffin and your funeral. Many Christians have been trapped into disasters, untimely deaths and all manner of wickedness by demonic dreams.

### **How People are Trapped by Demonic Dreams**

People are trapped into childlessness and barrenness by means of dreams. This is how it happens: Satan shows them a picture of barrenness or a picture of them sleeping with someone else. These dreams have one aim; to frighten you and to instil fear into your heart.

**Then thou SCAREST me with dreams, and TERRIFIEST me through visions:**

**Job 7:14**

You begin to fear that you will not have a child. You begin to fear that things will not work out normally for you. After all, your dreams show you unknown people sleeping with you! When fear has taken a foothold, the real thing can happen! Fear is not a mood or a feeling; it is a demonic spirit.

**For God hath not given us the *SPIRIT OF FEAR*;...**

**2 Timothy 1:7**

Remember that Job eventually experienced what he was afraid of. God had blessed him. God had given him houses, lands, prosperity, children and great riches. Yet, he was afraid that something bad could happen to him. Eventually, his fears came to pass.

**For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me.**

**Job 3:25**

Be careful of the things that you fear because the things that you fear will happen! That is why Jesus often said, "FEAR NOT! Only believe!"

Many years ago, when I was living with my parents, thieves invaded our home. I happened to wake up in the night at about 3:00 a.m. and I heard some noise downstairs. A gang of thieves had broken into our house and were carrying away everything that they could. I shouted, waking up the entire neighbourhood, but the thieves escaped in a get-away car!

Later on, I discovered how the thieves were able to get into the house. They had removed two louvre blades from the window and helped one of their gang members to enter the house. It must have been a very small individual because the space created was very small. **This person who entered the house then opened the main doors and let the rest of the robbers (demons) in.**

This is how the devil works. He just needs to get one member of his team into your mind. That one spirit will open the door for many other demons to enter.

When fear is allowed to take a foothold in your life, it opens the door to destruction, untimely death, sickness and barrenness. Job said that he was frightened by dreams. God will not send you a spirit of fear. Later on when these frightening dreams occur people say, "You see, it has happened just as I dreamt." **No! It has happened just as you feared!**

## *Chapter 19*

# How to Relate to a Prophet

There are many people who feel that they must be led by a personal prophecy coming from a prophet. I personally know of many Christians who have made major changes in their lives because of something a prophet told them. Is this scriptural?

In this chapter, I want to share with you about what I believe is the proper role of a prophet in the Church. You must know what a prophet is supposed to do, otherwise, you may find your life destroyed by someone claiming to be a prophet.

**...O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths.**

**Isaiah 3:12**

Are our lives supposed to be guided by prophets? The answer is NO! As New Testament believers we are supposed to be guided by the Holy Spirit and the Word of God.

**For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.**

**Romans 8:14**

**The role that the prophets of the Old Testament played was different from that of New Testament prophets.** Am I saying that New Testament prophets did not have the power to see visions and receive “words” from the Lord? They certainly did have this power but it operated within a different context.

Under the Old Covenant, only the prophet and perhaps the priest had the Holy Spirit working through them. Today, the Holy Spirit is in every believer and is giving us personal guidance on a day-to-day basis. **We still need the input of prophets, but we do not need to seek them for daily guidance.** We also need to check whatever they say, to see whether it agrees with what the Holy Spirit is telling us.

**Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.**

**1 Corinthians 14:29**

Under the New Testament, the declarations of prophets are supposed to be judged or assessed. How can we judge what the prophet says if we don’t have the Holy Spirit or the Word? The Word of God provides a standard by which we can assess what is happening.

For instance, I have noticed how many prophets minister in churches, giving personal prophecies to individuals. I have watched prophets telling members of one particular church that the Lord wants them to move out of that church into the church that he, the prophet, is establishing.

There are prophets who have destabilized entire churches with this type of message. I know a church that lost about five hundred members through the ministry of one such prophet. This same visiting prophet gave a prophecy to the associate pastor of the church,



telling him that the Lord wanted him to move on. The next thing we discovered was that this associate pastor had become a resident pastor in the prophet's new church.

If I were to judge such an action by the Word of God, I would quote to you from the book of Ephesians. Paul shows us the role of apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers. They are to minister to the Body of Christ so that the saints become stable Christians. Read it for yourself:

**And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets,...That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about...**

**Ephesians 4:11,14**

If a true prophet comes to minister in your church, you will know him by his fruits. If the fruit (the end result) of his ministry were destabilization and a moving of church members to and fro, I would wonder whether he's a New Testament prophet. Read it for yourself! Prophets are supposed to minister and prevent the to and fro movement of church members. They are supposed to prevent them from being carried about by every new idea.

I would not advise any pastor to welcome a so-called prophet to destabilize the church that he has taken years to build. As a pastor, my duty is to gather sheep. My call is to prevent them from being lost. **I want to be able to say to Jesus, "Of all that you have given me, I have lost none."** I believe that I am a good pastor so I will fight for every single sheep that God has assigned to me.

### **The Reaping Prophet**

I remember having a discussion with a certain prophet. This prophet had ministered privately to several prominent church members of mine, telling them that the Lord wanted them to move out of my church. The prophet did not know that I knew about these different destabilizing "prophecies" he had given to my people. In fact, as at the time we were speaking, some of my church members had become members of his church.

I asked him, "How is the ministry?"

He said, "It's doing well. I have had a few problems but I am surviving."

We got to discuss other things. Then he told me, "You know, I invited a prophet to minister in my church." (Although he was a prophet, he was pastoring a church.)

He continued, "This prophet really did me in."

"What do you mean?" I asked.

"I invited him to minister in my church and he began to prophesy to all my members and directed them to see him privately," he explained.

He lamented, "By the time this prophet had finished the convention, I had lost a large section of my church to him. This prophet gave accurate prophecies, and after the faith of the people was lifted, he told them that God wanted them to leave their church."

I listened quietly as the prophet/pastor spoke of his experience.

"He has met his match," I thought to myself, "Perhaps he has forgotten similar prophecies which he gave to *my* church members!"

This prophet did not know that he was reaping the destabilization he had sown in other people's churches.

**You do not need a prophet to tell you which church to attend. You do not need a prophet to tell you whom to marry. You do not need a prophet to tell you to give away your car or your life's savings.** You have the *Word of God*! You have the *Holy Spirit* and you have your *common sense* that we spoke about in an earlier chapter.

The Bible tells us that God speaks to us in the New Testament, mainly by His Word and not by His prophets.

**God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son [the Word]...**

**Hebrews 1:1,2**

Do not allow any so-called prophet to rob you of your possessions. The accuracy of prophecies can be so frightening that you will feel that God must be speaking. Sometimes, some prophets have an evil spirit operating through them. They give accurate “words of knowledge” by satanic power and then they rob you of your money.

**There are also some prophets who operate by a mixture of spirits.** They will minister very accurately by the Spirit of God. After realizing how enchanted you are by the accuracy of the gift, they will move into the flesh and operate by another spirit. Is it possible for someone to operate with two different spirits at the same time? Of course it is! Samson had the Spirit of God operating in him, whilst at the same time he was operating in a spirit of adultery and fornication.

Remember when Jesus asked Peter, “Who do men say that I am?” Peter answered accurately. Jesus immediately confirmed that Peter was moving in the Holy Spirit. There was no way Peter could have known what he knew, except the Spirit of God had revealed it to him. However, in the discussion that followed, Peter began to speak as inspired by Satan and Jesus had to rebuke him saying, “Satan, get thee behind me.” Watch Peter under the influence of the Holy Spirit.

**He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for FLESH AND BLOOD HATH NOT REVEALED IT UNTO THEE, BUT MY FATHER WHICH IS IN HEAVEN.**

**Matthew 16:15-17**

Now watch Peter under the influence of Satan.

**From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: THOU ART AN OFFENSE UNTO ME: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.**

**Matthew 16:21-23**

### **How to Relate With a Real Prophet**

So what exactly is a prophet supposed to do? How should I relate to someone who calls himself a prophet? Let us study the ministry of Jesus since He was a great prophet. Each office of the Body of Christ: apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher, has several different ministries under it. A prophet will also have different ministries operating under his office.

**A minister who stands in the office of a prophet will primarily function in the ministry of preaching and teaching. Beware of so-called prophets who do not preach the Word of God but *only* give personal prophecies.** Don't misunderstand me, I believe in personal prophecies.

**However, let it be very clear that anything that does not put the Word of God in its proper place is doomed to failure with the passage of time.** “In the beginning was the *Word*...” “Let the *Word* of Christ dwell in you richly...” “Thy *Word* is a light unto my path... The entrance of thy *Word* giveth light...” Anything without the *Word* is in darkness and is not of God.

**All offices of the ministry have a primary function of teaching and preaching. The Word comes first and is of paramount importance in every ministerial office.** After preaching and teaching the Word, a prophet may operate in the ministry of healing, and other revelation gifts like the “word of knowledge” and “word of wisdom”. The prophet may also flow in the ministry of predictive prophecy or exhortative prophecy. From Scripture, you will see that Jesus was a great prophet.

**...and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us;...**

**Luke 7:16**

But His principal ministry was to go about preaching and teaching the Word of God.

**And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel...**

**Matthew 9:35**

Jesus had a healing ministry.

**How God anointed Jesus...who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil;...**

**Acts 10:38**

He also operated in the gifts of revelation. Standing in the office of a prophet, He ministered to the woman of Samaria;

**For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband:...**

**John 4:18**

The woman of Samaria immediately realized that she had met someone standing in the office of a prophet. Look at her response to Jesus’ ministration.

**The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.**

**John 4:19**

Jesus also operated in the ministry of predictive prophecy. In the book of Matthew, Chapter 24, He predicted the destruction of Solomon’s temple. This happened in 70 AD when the Romans destroyed Jerusalem.

Speaking of the temple He said,

**...There shall not be left here one stone upon another,...**

**Matthew 24:2**

Jesus gave extensive predictions concerning the end of the world. We would do well to take note of these prophecies because Jesus was a great prophet.

### **The Ministry of a Prophet**

**It is clear from the above account that a prophet is someone who *preaches and teaches*. He also ministers *healing* and operates in the *word of knowledge*. A prophet also gives *predictive and exhortative prophecies*. This is a complete prophetic ministry, and as you can see, the Word of God comes first. Look out for real prophets and stay with**

what is authentic. Look for proven prophets whose foundation is the Word of God. That is how to relate to your prophet.

## *Chapter 20*

# How to Use the Word of God for Direction

The Bible contains the written Word of God. It is a reliable source of direction for us all. The Word of God is a silent voice. How can a voice be silent? The silent voices are a group of voices that the Holy Spirit uses to guide us. They are silent in the sense that you do not hear a person speaking audibly. They are however, common ways by which the Holy Spirit leads us all. You see, being led by the Spirit of God is not a very simple thing. Today, human beings communicate by speech, by touch, by facial expressions, by letters, faxes, telephones, television, e-mail and so on. There are also many methods by which God communicates with His children. One of these is the written Word of God.

### **The Word of God**

The Word of God is given to us for direction in our lives. Everything we do must be done according to the Word of God. In a very general way, the Word of God is the perfect guidebook for our lives. The Bible is a unique book that contains instruction on every possible issue that may arise. There are many people who think that the Bible is not a practical and relevant book for today.

One lady told me that she believed she could practise fornication because the Bible was out of fashion. Three years later, when her boyfriend of many years ditched her, she realized that the Bible was not so archaic after all.

**All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.**

**2 Timothy 3:16,17**

**The scripture is profitable, useful, relevant and practical for every Christian today! There are many Christians who do not want you to open the Bible; they just want a prophecy or a word of knowledge.**

### **The Word is a Light**

**...I have ordained a lamp for mine anointed.**

**Psalms 132:17**

Use the Word of God as a light for your path. There is so much darkness in the world. We often do not know what to do, but God has provided a light for Christians. What is this light that God has provided for Christians?

**Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.**

**Psalm 119:105**

God's Word is a lamp and a light for us. It is only when you put on the light that you know where to go. It is only when you put on the light that you can prevent yourself from stumbling over furniture. Jesus Christ called Himself the light of this world.

**...I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.**

**John 8:12**

You need light in this life! Jesus (the Word) is the light for your life. People who have tried to live their lives without Christ and the Word have discovered that it is painful to stumble around in the darkness.

A young man approached me and informed me that he was having terrible problems in his marriage. He wanted me to help him. He wanted to know the way out of his marital difficulties. As I talked with him, I realized that what he needed was the Word. He said to me, "Are you going to pray for me to have my deliverance?"

I asked, "Why do you need deliverance?"

He answered, "Oh, I was told that my wife has a marine spirit."

I asked him, "What is a marine spirit?"

He said, "Oh, it's something they say I have to be delivered from. So I want you to deliver me."

I thought to myself, "This man wants a quick fix. He does not want the Word. He does not know that nothing sets you free like the Word of God does."

**And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.**

**John 8:32**

I asked him, "Are you a born-again Christian?"

"Yes, I am."

"Are you faithful to your wife?" I asked.

He smiled, "Um... not really."

"Actually", he continued, "I have not been faithful to her at all!"

I advised this man to have a pastor and belong to a church. I told him, "Your marine spirit is the least of your problems. What you need is the Word of God to guide you in this life. **You need the light of life, otherwise, you will continue to grope in darkness.**"

There are people who wonder how I know the things I do. I remember arriving in Johannesburg one day for a convention. I was met by a South African delegation. When they saw me, one of them asked, "Are you the Bishop?"

I said, "Yes, I am."

"Really! We were expecting someone much older! We have listened to your tapes and read your books. Somehow, we thought you were a much older person." When you walk in the Word, people will think you are much older than your real age.

**The Word is Wisdom**

**Thou through thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies:...I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation.**

**Psalm 119:98,99**

The Word of God will make you wise in this life. Advice and direction for business are found in the Word of God. There is more instruction for a businessperson in the Word of God than in any lecture on business management. There is more relevant and practical knowledge on philosophy, political science, literature and history in the Bible than in any other book I know.

### **The Word is Instruction**

I sometimes smile when people say, “God has called me to do such-and-such for Him.” If you do not obey the simple instructions in the Word, do you think God is going to give you more? He that is faithful in little is faithful in much. If you do not obey the Word of God which says to pay your tithes, do you think God is going to speak to you about a miracle healing ministry?

**He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee,...**

**Micah 6:8**

God will minister His Word to you through pastors and shepherds. That is why it is important to have a good church and a pastor who teaches the Word of God. Whenever your pastor is preaching, be open to receive direction for your life.

### **The Word Brings Understanding**

In the last days, God is giving pastors who will feed us with knowledge and understanding. Receive the knowledge and understanding that God is giving you.

**And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.**

**Jeremiah 3:15**

God will also use men of God to give you instructions for your life. These instructions help you to become a better person. There are times your pastor will give a commandment to fast and pray. It is important to follow these instructions. The Bible teaches that we should obey those that have spiritual authority over us.

**Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls,...**

**Hebrews 13:17**

Listen to the voice of your shepherd. God has delegated the destiny of the sheep to the shepherd. God will bless your life and lead you through the voice of your shepherd. Jesus is the overall shepherd and He told Peter to look after the sheep. That means that He was delegating the care of His sheep to under-shepherds.

**...Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?...Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.**

**John 21:17**

## Chapter 21

# The Secret of Directed Paths

**Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths.**

**Proverbs 3:5,6**

God leads us through directed paths. The promise of God in this Scripture is not that God will direct *you*! God is promising here that He will direct your paths. What is the difference between God directing you and God directing your paths? When God directs you, He speaks to you and tells you what to do. It is then up to you to do the right thing and obey His voice. However, when God directs your paths, *you* don't have to do anything. It is your paths that have to obey instructions.

**Your duty is to trust the Lord that He has arranged the circumstances so that you will naturally flow into His will.** This is what happens when you pray, "Thy will be done." Jesus prayed "Thy will be done" for three hours in the Garden of Gethsemane. After getting an answer to that prayer, Jesus didn't have to do anything any more. He just allowed things to happen naturally.

### God Ignores You and Speaks to Your Paths

Once I was walking in a major international airport. Those of you who have travelled a bit know that modern airports are monstrous buildings with an often intricate maze of tunnels and corridors. This was the first time I had been in that particular airport. I travel frequently so I know my way around many major airports. This time however, I did not know the way. When I got out of the plane I just kept walking. As I walked in that airport, God gave me a revelation.

I didn't get lost at all, not even for one minute! I walked confidently through the labyrinth of airport corridors and arrived at the right place to pick up my baggage. Would you believe that no one told me where to go or what to do, but I just kept walking?

God showed me that I did not get lost in that airport because the authorities had arranged the corridors and tunnels in such a way that I could only go in one direction and arrive in one particular place.

As I walked through the airport, I realized that many doors were shut. Access to many parts of the airport was blocked to me. There were signs everywhere showing where newly arrived passengers should go.

That is often how God will lead you if you will take the time to pray that His will be done in your life. Then you can walk on confidently. **You may not even know what exactly to do, but as you keep on praying that His will be done, He will direct your paths.** God will block certain doors and make it impossible for you to go on certain roads.



He will ensure that you will only flow in a particular direction. He will ensure that you only meet certain people.

There are many times I don't know what to do. I am not a superman. I cannot pretend to know the mind of God all the time. Nobody knows all the will of God. Even Jesus prayed that the will of God be done. I spend hours praying that the will of God be done in my life. I believe that every serious Christian should do that!

If you have committed your way to God, as the Bible says in Proverbs 3:5 and 6, God is committed to directing the paths of your life.

Do not cry any more because that man did not marry you. Do not be sad because that opportunity did not work out. Did you not pray that the will of God should be done? Did you not commit your ways to Him? God is answering your prayers right now! He is directing your life. You do not have to hear a voice. You do not need to see a vision. **Just continue walking by faith and you will find yourself in His perfect will.**

## *Chapter 22*

# How to Deal with the Voice of the People

Another important area of influence is the voice of human beings. What others say and do influence many people. Most of the time we want to be like others. Whatever the people in your peer group are doing is what you want to do! But many times that is not the will of God.

God created a special nation called Israel. He planned to rule the nation directly through His prophets and spiritual leaders. When the people of Israel realized that all the nations around them had kings, they also decided to have a king. Even though what they were experiencing was better, they just wanted to follow the crowd.

**Then all the elders of Israel gathered themselves together, and came to Samuel unto Ramah, And said unto him, Behold, thou art old, and thy sons walk not in thy ways: NOW MAKE US A KING TO JUDGE US LIKE ALL THE NATIONS. And the LORD said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them...howbeit yet protest solemnly unto them,...Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, NAY; BUT WE WILL HAVE A KING OVER US; THAT WE ALSO MAY BE LIKE ALL THE NATIONS;...**

**1 Samuel 8:4,5,7,9,19,20**

That is what I call “the voice of the people”. It is such a strong voice that it often drowns out the gentle voice of the Holy Spirit. You must be careful not to become someone who is easily affected by the opinions of those around. No one can be a successful minister if he still wants to please people around. That is why a church must not be run by democracy. The essential nature of democracy turns people into men-pleasers and liars.

**...for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.**

**Galatians 1:10**

If you want to serve the Lord, you must be careful not to become a man-pleaser. I am wary of people who are very conscious of making good impressions everywhere. Such people are usually two-faced and can easily betray you.

On the 10<sup>th</sup> of March 1989, I qualified as a medical doctor. I was pastoring this fledgling church along with some other medical colleagues of mine. As was the custom, after one year of working in the hospital, most of my colleagues left the country for the USA and England. They were going to do further studies and earn more money.

At that time, I came under a lot of pressure from family and friends. They said, “You are a doctor. You have a bright future before you.” My father wanted me to specialize at the Cambridge University but I knew that the Lord had called me and I could not leave the ministry. My father-in-law even offered to help get me into a good department of the Teaching Hospital.

I always noticed the anxious and questioning look of my mother-in-law. My mother-in-law is very sweet and really cared about us. She was worried about both her daughter and me. I’m sure she thought I was destroying my life by refusing to pursue a lucrative and dignified medical career. One day the pressure was so much, I had to tell my dear concerned mother-in-law not to bring up the topic anymore.

At that time, our church was an unimpressive group of students and struggling Christians. A pastor’s job has always been a controversial and disrespected profession. My father said to me, “What sort of job is this that pays by the collection of people’s pennies? That is not an honourable way to live!”

I was under a lot of pressure. If I had yielded to the pressure of the people, perhaps all the souls who have been saved through this ministry would have perished. I am sure that there are people who are not in the ministry today because they listened to the voice of the people.

I have decided to ignore the voice of the people when I am sure that God wants me to do something. I may look controversial! I may displease people! But I am accountable to God for my calling. Woe is me if I preach not the Gospel!

People around say, “Do this” or “Do that”! They say to me, “You must have a hospital.” Others tell me, “You must have a university!” Still others say, “You must travel more often to other churches.” But what does God say?

**Does God want me to use a million dollars to build a hospital or does He want me to use a million dollars to plant churches?** I intend to do His will. You ensure that you do His will for your life and I’ll make sure that I’m doing His will for mine! **The voice of the people is the voice that drowns the voice of the Holy Spirit.**

There are many ladies who yield to the voice of the people. “Why are you a virgin at this age? Enjoy yourself and have some fun!” They will put pressure on you to marry an unbeliever. “He’s a good guy. If you marry him you will be happy.” But the silent voice of the Word of God tells you not to be unequally yoked with unbelievers.

I know some associate pastors who are told by the congregation members, “You are a great pastor. I only enjoy coming to church when you are preaching.” The voice of the people is telling them, “If you were your own boss and not an assistant, you would do very well in ministry.” Perhaps they would do very well in ministry. Perhaps God is calling them to a great new work. **But make sure that it is the voice of the Holy Spirit that you follow and not the voice of the people.**

Some Jezebel-like wives tell their husbands, “You could have a nice car and a lot of money if you broke away from this tyrant of a General Overseer.” “Come on,” they say, “Do your own thing!” The voice of a wife is a very strong voice. It takes a very principled man to stay on course when his wife is prodding him to flow in another direction.

Never forget this! The voice of the people is the voice that drowns the voice of the Holy Spirit. It was not they who called you into the ministry! People cannot bless you! People cannot promote you! If you follow what people say, you will have to look to people for promotion. **But promotion does not come from people, it comes from the Lord.**

**For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south. But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.**

Not only are people powerless to help you, but they often turn against you after a while. Do you remember how people hailed Jesus as the Messiah on Palm Sunday? Just a few days later the same people screamed, "Crucify Him!" The people who hailed Him, did a one hundred and eighty degree turnaround and murdered Him.

Do not let the voice of friends or family come up higher than the voice of the Spirit of God.

## Chapter 23

# How Not to Be Led by Circumstances

**...and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.**

**Matthew 13:22**

The word circumstance is self-explanatory. “Circum” speaks of things *around* and “stances” speaks of things *standing*. **Therefore, “circumstances” simply mean “things standing around in your life”.** These circumstances could be school, marriage, work or any situational factors.

Circumstances often dictate what Christians should do. **We are to be led by the Spirit of God and not by circumstances.** You cannot allow the circumstances in your life to prevent you from doing what you must do.

When I became a medical student, I had very little time to do the work of God. The circumstances were such that it was almost impossible for me to pray or read my Bible. But what was the silent voice of the Word of God telling me? The Word of God was telling me to be steadfast, unmovable and always abounding in the work of the Lord.

**Therefore, my beloved brethren, BE YE STEDFAST, UNMOVEABLE, ALWAYS ABOUNDING in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.**

**1 Corinthians 15:58**

And that is exactly what I did. The circumstances of a medical student were well known to other students. Because of this, medical students were not allowed to be leaders of the Christian fellowship. They knew that the circumstances of a medical student’s life did not allow for much spiritual activity.

You see, we were picked up by a bus at 7:00 a.m. everyday and shuttled to the Teaching Hospital, about an hour’s drive away. We stayed there all day until the evening. When we returned to the university campus at about 6:00 p.m., we were exhausted and had a lot of academic work to do.

How on earth could one be a useful Christian leader and at the same time pass the medical exams? But the good news is that I was able to do it by the grace of God. In my first year, I started a Christian ministry on the university campus. That ministry is still there today! During my fourth year, I established a church that has grown into a worldwide ministry.

There are many Christians who are led by circumstances. That is why they fall away from the Lord. The cares of this world (circumstances) quench the call!

**...and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.**

**Matthew 13:22**

God calls many people. However, the call of many is quenched by the circumstances of life. Many people are unfruitful today not because they are evil. **They are unfruitful because the voice of circumstances prevailed over the voice of the Spirit.**

When you have a baby, you are saddled with a real stressful schedule. It is up to you to rise above the circumstances and pray. Are you telling me that having a baby is a curse? Are you telling me that being married is a curse? If it is not a curse to you why do you allow these new circumstances to quench the zeal you once had? Rise up today in the name of Jesus. Rise above the voice of your circumstances.

God has called you to do great things in this life. **It is only great men who rise above the voice of circumstances.**

## Chapter 24

# How to Unmask the Devil

**And the devil said unto him,...**

**Luke 4:3**

Our Lord Jesus was spoken to by the devil. Satan spoke to Him about three different topics. If you think that Satan will never speak to you, then you are joking. The devil tempts and tests everyone.

Jesus taught, “A servant is not above his master.” If He was tempted, then we will also be tempted. It is easy to summarize the works of the devil into one word—*deception*. The devil is a liar and a deceiver. Jesus called him the father of liars.

**Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: FOR HE IS A LIAR, AND THE FATHER OF IT.**

**John 8:44**

The Bible describes Satan as someone who deceives the whole world. Anyone who can deceive the entire world must be a very good liar and deceiver.

**...that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world:...**

**Revelation 12:9**

I know some politicians who have been able to deceive the masses. Some of them are able to deceive tribes and regions of a country. But to deceive the whole world is an awesome achievement. This means that all the intelligent and wise people have been taken in by the lie.

If you visit Europe today, you will see millions of people who believe that there is no God. They sincerely think that religion is not practical. They believe that life is all on this earth and that when you die you are dead like a dog. It is not a few people who hold this concept. These ideas are held by multitudes of intelligent but deceived Europeans.

Satan has managed to captivate the minds and hearts of this world with gold, silver and pleasure. Even when the realities of death and life dawn on people at funerals, the intellectuals of this world still refuse to acknowledge the existence of God.

Satan will produce a counterfeit to anything that God does in an attempt to deceive us. If the Holy Spirit gives dreams, Satan will also come up with his own dreams. If God speaks in an audible voice, Satan will also give audible voices to confuse and deceive you. That is why the Bible says there are many voices in the world and none of them is without signification.

**There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification.**

**1 Corinthians 14:10**

The devil may open doors to deceive you. Satan also tries to close certain doors in your life. That is why Jesus is described as the one who can open the door that no one can ever close. That is what distinguishes the opening of a door by Jesus and the opening of a door by someone else.

**...he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;**

**Revelation 3:7**

If God has opened a door for you to marry Araba-Lucy, you will marry her. Nothing can stop it and nothing can change it! If God has determined that you should be a pastor over thousands of people, the wicked lies of your detractors cannot close that open door. If God has determined that you should be a millionaire in His kingdom, the economic circumstances around will not stop the blessings of God.

Our main job is to be able to decipher the deceptive traps and lies of the enemy. The Bible never teaches that we should beware of the power of the devil. Satan's strength is not in his power. In fact, he is powerless against you.

That is why God's instruction to us is to be careful of his tricks and lying traps.

**Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles**  
*[deception, tricks, lies]* **of the devil.**

**Ephesians 6:11**



## *Chapter 25*

# Three Checks to Avoiding Mistakes When Being Led by the Spirit

How do we fight against lying voices? There are three safety checks you must adhere to. This is to rule out the possibility of listening to the wrong voice.

Rule out the possibility of following the voice of your flesh by being honest with yourself. Admit to yourself when you realize that your flesh is influencing you. Remember that to be carnally minded is death.

### **Three Important Safety Checks**

- The safety of a multitude of counsellors  
**...in the multitude of counsellors there is safety.**

#### **Proverbs 11:14**

There is nothing like the safety of counselling. If you have had a revelation from God, subject it to many counsellors (there is a difference between a counsellor and a friend). When you subject your revelations to a multitude of counsellors, you expose yourself to more information that helps you to take better decisions.

One aspiring pastor wanted to marry a young lady in the church. He prayed for several hours about whom he should marry. He finally came up with a decision and said that God had told him to marry a certain lady. Just before he proposed to the young lady, he decided to consult with an elder and with his pastor.

The elder said to him, “She’s a nice girl. I see nothing wrong with your entering a relationship with this Christian lady.”

Then, as a matter of formality, he decided to mention it to his pastor. When he did, the pastor said, “Oh, I see. She is a nice lady, however, I want you to be aware of one important thing.”

He told the aspiring suitor, “This young lady has a severe mental disease. I prayed for her myself when she developed the condition.”

The pastor went on, “As far as I know, she is still taking medication to control the effects of this condition.”

He continued, “Of course, this does not bar you from marrying her. However, it is important for you to be aware of this reality before you take a decision.”

The young man was taken aback, “Oh, I didn’t know this!” he exclaimed.

He told the pastor, “Thank you very much. It will help me to take an informed decision.”

This young man's safety depended on his consulting with more than one counsellor. The first counsellor (the elder) had nothing contrary to say. It was the second counsellor (the pastor) who had very important facts that the man needed to know.

You can see from this true-life story that the safety of this young man lay in the *multitude* of counsellors. There is no revelation, voice or instruction from God that cannot be subjected to a multitude of counsellors.

This is the reason why married couples must undergo extensive counselling. Many people who are getting married don't know the realities that are ahead of them. They have no idea about the journey that they are about to undertake. Their safety lies in the multitude of counsellors.

- Prove all things

**Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.**

#### **1 Thessalonians 5:21**

Has a prophet spoken to you? Have you received a personal prophecy? Have you heard a voice from God? Please subject it to the test of the Word of God. Please prove *all* voices that you claim to have heard from God.

I sometimes operate in the prophetic gift. When I have a word of knowledge about someone, I often ask the individual concerned about the word I have received. I want to see if it is true and accurate because I know that I could be wrong. When a so-called prophet gives you a word of knowledge to leave your husband for another, please submit it to the Word of God.

Is it not the Word of God that tells us not to divorce? How could it be that a prophetic voice is speaking contrary to the Word of God?

### **Prophets Can Make Mistakes**

A prophet prophesied to two of my leaders who were about to become pastors. He told them that within a year they would be living outside Ghana. He went on to tell them that they would be in the ministry but it would not be under the banner of Lighthouse Chapel International. These pastors were confused and wondered whether the Lord had spoken or not!

A year passed and these pastors were no nearer to going abroad than I was to the moon. After two years, it was quite clear that this prophecy had not materialized.

They have rather become pastors who are established in Lighthouse Chapel International in Ghana. The passage of time proved that this was either a mistaken prophet or a mistaken prophecy. Prophets are human, and they also make mistakes.

**But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, WHICH I HAVE NOT COMMANDED HIM TO SPEAK, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die. When a prophet speaketh in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD hath not spoken, but THE PROPHET HATH SPOKEN IT PRESUMPTUOUSLY: thou shalt not be afraid of him.**

#### **Deuteronomy 18:20,22**

**All prophets, prophecies, revelations and voices must be proved.** We must hold on to what is good. If you swallow every prophecy, revelation and dream, hook, line and sinker, you will soon find yourself gobbling down garbage.

When Paul received the call and revelation from God, he subjected it to a valid test. Paul had more revelations than any of the prophets we have around today, but notice how he practised this safety principle.

**But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood: Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.**

**Galatians 1:15-17**

Paul received a revelation from God. He did not confer with flesh and blood. The revelation was directly from the Lord. But after several years, look at how Paul subjected his revelation to the scrutiny of senior apostles. If you don't want trouble, follow the principles that Paul practised and you will experience a sound and balanced ministry.

**Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also. And I went up by revelation, AND COMMUNICATED UNTO THEM THAT GOSPEL WHICH I PREACH AMONG THE GENTILES, BUT PRIVATELY TO THEM WHICH WERE OF REPUTATION, LEST BY ANY MEANS I SHOULD RUN, OR HAD RUN, IN VAIN.**

**Galatians 2:1,2**

Paul received a revelation from God in Arabia. But he subjected his revelation to the scrutiny of Peter and other apostles who were of reputation. This is your key to safety in a minefield where there are many dangerous voices.

- The confirmation of two witnesses

**...In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.**

**2 Corinthians 13:1**

God has set a standard in His Word. It says that the mouth of two or more witnesses establishes a thing. **God's safety rule is simple: do not accept it unless a second witness confirms it.**

If a prophet gives a "word", you may ask, "Who is the second witness?" **The second witness can be you.** The prophecy can confirm something that God has already spoken to you about.

Even when it comes to dreams, a second dream helps to confirm the message that came in the first dream. Notice how Joseph applied this principle when he was interpreting dreams for Pharaoh.

**And for that the dream was doubled unto Pharaoh twice; it is because the thing is established by God, and God will shortly bring it to pass.**

**Genesis 41:32**

The principle of confirmation by two witnesses is an important safety check for everyone who desires to safely experience the voice of God's direction for his life.

## *Chapter 26*

# Why You Must Listen to Your Conscience

God has given everybody a conscience. The conscience is that quiet inner voice that checks us when we go wrong. In charismatic circles, we hardly hear anything about the conscience. Your conscience is that quiet voice within that tells you when you are doing something wrong.

There are times when your heart (spirit) condemns you for doing something wrong.

**For if OUR HEART CONDEMN US, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.**

**1 John 3:20,21**

**Your heart has the ability to condemn you for wrongdoing.** It is only when your heart is not condemning you that you have confidence to approach God. The confidence comes because you know that you are doing the right thing. Pastors will do well to follow their consciences in the ministry. Christians will do well to follow the voice of their conscience. Apostle Paul said that he always tried to maintain a good conscience.

**And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a CONSCIENCE VOID OF OFFENCE toward God, and toward men.**

**Acts 24:16**

Any Christian who decides to follow his conscience will end up being a moral and upright person before the Lord. David prayed that God should keep him in the path of righteousness. **Your conscience is the instrument by which God will keep you in the path of righteousness.** Anyone who claims to be led by the Spirit or by prophets, but does not listen to the voice of his conscience is doomed to tragedy in life and ministry.

As you continue to ignore the voice of your conscience, it becomes deadened and hardened. This is what Paul described as having your conscience seared.

**Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their CONSCIENCE SEARED with a hot iron;**

**1 Timothy 4:2**

One minister was having an affair with one of his members. The lady asked him, “Pastor, how will you be able to preach tomorrow?”

He laughed and said, “Oh, when I commit fornication I feel the anointing flowing even more.”

This minister was used to committing immoral sins. It was now part and parcel of his life and ministry. *His conscience was no longer condemning him.* His conscience had become hardened. He now thought that sin was funny and made jokes about how the anointing was enhanced by fornication.

As soon as you make a mistake, respond to the voice of your heart condemning you. It will cause you to repent and get in line. After some years of neglecting your conscience, you will make shipwreck of your ministry. Shipwreck simply means disaster!

**Holding faith, and a good conscience; which SOME HAVING PUT AWAY concerning faith have made SHIPWRECK:**

**1 Timothy 1:19**

I have watched ministers who ignored their consciences. The end of such ministries is one and the same—shipwreck! This is why you must be careful about the thoughts you allow into your mind. If you permit certain thoughts, they will lead to other developments. **This is why you must be careful about telling lies, however small they are.**

Keep your conscience clear! Let your heart prick you whenever you are wrong! The voice of your conscience will lead you safely on the path of righteousness. I pray for you that you will live this life with the benefit of God's direction. I see you enjoying divine guidance as you apply the principles in this book to your everyday life!

May the Lord bless you as you follow the voice of God into success and victory! Follow His voice to the top because that is God's plan for you!

# Bearing Fruit

*After Your Own Kind*

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7797-9-8

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**  
**3rd Edition**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

## ***DEDICATION***

*I dedicate this book to my dear sons,  
David and Joshua.  
I pray that they will grow up to bear much fruit in  
the Lord.*



## **PREFACE**

*I have always wanted to be useful to the Lord.* Many years ago, I prayed a prayer from the bottom of my heart, and asked the Lord to make me fruitful.

I am very grateful to the Lord for saving my life. If it had not been for the Lord, I cannot imagine where I would be.

It is out of gratitude to the Lord that I desire to be fruitful. I think that this should be the desire of every sincere Christian. But bearing fruit is not as simple as it seems.

In this book, I begin to share some vital truths about how God wants you to be fruitful.

What are God's expectations of me? God wants me to bear fruit after my own kind. *There is nothing more difficult than trying to do something the wrong way.* I have come to see that no matter how hard and how long you keep doing the wrong things, it still doesn't get you anywhere.

Come with me on this journey as I share this important message about why you should bear fruits after your own kind.

# ***Contents***

Introduction .....	1
Reasons Why You Should Bear Fruit .....	6

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

*Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa*

Rest of the world:

*Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ*

Website:

*[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)*

Parchment House

My father was a prominent lawyer and politician. He also owned a number of racehorses and a hotel. So you see, he was more or less regarded as a big man in society.

When I became born-again, I would often speak at length to him about Christ. But the more I tried, the more I failed . In fact, as a young raw student, I realized I was nowhere near his calibre, not to mention the age difference of about thirty years.

So he said to me, “Listen, son. If you want me to receive your message, you better go get a Doctorate in Theology from Trinity College. Then come again.”

And that was that.

When my father spoke, it was final.

I don't recall seeing any born-again Christians who were politicians and lawyers ever speak to him about Jesus. However, when those of his colleagues who were Freemasons came after him, he accepted their message and became a Lodge member.

It was not until the Lord showed me some scriptures in the Bible, that I understood why my father had not been able to receive the gospel from me.

**And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, [mark those words] cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after his kind... and God saw that it was good.**

**Gen 1: 24,25.**

The Word of God teaches us here that every living thing is supposed to bring forth after its kind. **Which means that you're expected to give birth to something which is just like yourself.**

Why is this the case? **Because that is the natural order God has set on the earth!** So if you're a frog, God expects you to give birth to frogs, and not to apes. I believe that is the reason why I failed to influence my father. Even nature shows that it's almost impossible to bring forth something that is not like yourself.

You see, the best person to minister to you is someone of your own kind. We all differ in many respects. We are not the same. You may come from a certain background or speak a different language. **But God can use you to minister to your kind, because you are the one who can easily relate to that particular category of people.**

Women are good at ministering to women, and elderly men find it easier to relate to other elderly people. Such people are more likely to succeed in putting across their ideas, because they are on level ground.

Usually, it's only another businessman who can handle the objections of a stubborn businessman and tell him, "Are both of us not businessmen? And what do you have that I don't? I'm also a very busy person, but I tell you, it's time to make Jesus your Lord and Saviour."

Or a student could tell his mates, "Hey look, are we not in the same class? Remember that I also have exams to write, but I still find time to worship the Lord and get distinctions. Jesus is coming soon, man. Don't be left out."

Are you a banker, a secretary or a farmer? Whatever kind of person you are, you have the ability to positively influence the people of your kind. If you are a businessman then reach out with the gospel to other businessmen, because **you are best at bringing forth your own kind.** The same goes for market women, mechanics, rich men, etc.

**There are people who will only respond to someone they have something in common with: age group, profession, language, social class, etc.**

That's why the churches in Ghana are pastored by Ghanaians, and not by the British or the Swiss. Because a local pastor finds it easier to relate to his own people.

Now, what does it mean to bring forth ?

**... for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.**

**I Cor. 4:15**

Paul is saying here, "By leading you to Christ through the gospel, I have given birth to you *spiritually*. **Through my activities, I have caused you to exist in Christ.**"

Do you realise that we're existing because of the activities of our parents? **Now through your Christian activities, other Christians who are just like you will be born into God's Kingdom.**

Take for example, the Full Gospel Businessmen's Fellowship International. You will notice that most of their members are professionals in their forties and fifties. Their converts are also people in that age group. One reason why they're still thriving, is their application of God's principle of bringing forth after their own kind. They reach out to people who are just like them.

Have you noticed that even beasts bring forth their own kind? That's how animals multiply. And that is how churches grow. **When we stop reproducing after our kind, our numbers decrease and we begin to die out.**

**I can say that I am bringing forth a lot of doctors like myself, who are becoming pastors.** In our church today, there are many of such people. These are my spiritual

children, having been born due to my personal outreach towards my type. As a result, I'm not the only person of my kind in the church. There are others just like me.

But today millions of Christians carry on through life looking and praying for material things. We are not concerned about the Lord's commandment to bear fruit spiritually. **So we walk through life like trees without fruits. Like women who are unable to bear children, we have nothing to show for our Christianity.**

But children are so important that people are not likely to marry if they realise they will not be able to have them. Even loving husbands and wives are likely to seek other partners if they realise their union cannot produce children.

In Africa, it's generally considered a disgrace for women to be childless. It has been known for some desperate women to have extramarital affairs, and pretend the pregnancy was caused by their sterile husbands. (Until the baby is born with Chinese eyes, everybody believes it!)

As you can see, being childless seems to be a big problem in our society. **But God looks down from Heaven and sees that there's a far more serious problem than that:**

**The problem of not having spiritual children!**



# ***Reasons Why You Should Bear Fruit***

## **REASON No. 1: TO PROVE THAT YOU ARE A REAL CHRISTIAN**

**The first reason why you must bear fruit, is to show that you are truly born again.** Oh, I know that you pray aloud and sing the praise songs like everybody else. Some of you are the best dancers and so on.

But I have come to realise that all church members are not necessarily Christians.

**It's unfortunate, but many who go to church are not born again, and do not even know God.**

Some years ago we had a patient in the gynaecology department of the Korle-Bu Hospital, where I was working. This woman was in her early twenties but had never been able to have her period. Now, as a doctor I knew that this was abnormal. **When she was medically investigated and examined, we discovered that this 'woman' was really a man!** We found 'her' to have male reproductive organs. Which explained why 'she' was unable to have a period.

So in spite of what 'she' looked like on the outside, 'she' could never bear children, 'she' was not real — 'she' was a 'he'!

**That is why some people cannot bear fruits —because they are not real Christians.** They are not genuine. They are like some shops in town which are supposed to be boutiques and spare parts shops. Yet they never seem to be open for business. Each day they claim to be “taking stock”.

But that is only a front for the cocaine business going on at the back. Be careful, some people are not really what they claim to be.

So, how can I tell whether you are a real Christian or not? Well, that is very simple:

**Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.**

**Matt. 7:20**

**We can distinguish genuine Christians from counterfeit Christians by looking at their fruit!** I can tell, when I see you bringing forth other believers like yourself to the Lord. (Other students, businessmen, housewives, or whatever).

**If, by your spiritual activity, others just like you are brought to the Lord and discipled, then this fruit you are bearing shows you are for real!**

But if you have no converts to show for your Christianity, then there must be something missing. You are not genuine. You are just an attendee. No wonder some so-called Christians are not even interested in the Bible or the things of God. (Their only response to the pastor's sermon is one big yawn!)

Today, many people come to church for reasons other than a deep desire to seek God. Others just follow a family member or a friend into the Church. That is why some people fall away when certain things happen. Because they are really not what they claim to be.

For this reason, I keep telling the youth in our church, "If anyone wants to marry you, *look at their fruits*, and not their pretty faces or sweet 'raps'. By their fruits ye shall know them."

**In a large church like ours, there are all sorts of beasts mingling with God's genuine flock of sheep.** These are wolves in sheep's clothing because when we talk about witnessing, they cannot even bear witness for Christ.

**Let me tell you this, that if something good has really happened to change your life, you will joyfully go about telling others.**

No one will have to urge you on. It just happens naturally.

Dear friend, if the only Christianity you practice is by going to church on Sundays, then I'm afraid to inform you that there is more to it than that. (In fact, unbelievers attend church on Sunday too!)

**Real Christianity takes place OUTSIDE the church AFTER Sundays.** Each weekday must have its share of prayer, worship, bible-reading and labouring for the Lord.

So if you have always comforted yourself with the fact that you go to church on Sundays, then I'm afraid I must discomfort you! **Church membership does not prove you are a genuine Christian at all!** Here's some sound advice from II Corinthians 13:5 :

**Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith.**

Friend, be for real. First, be born again. Then show by your fruit that you are a real, committed Christian.

## REASON No. 2: TO PROVE THAT YOU ARE HEALTHY

The second reason why some Christians do not bear fruit is because they are not healthy. They are not normal, productive Christians, because there is a *spiritual sickness* somewhere.

Sometimes when a woman (a real one) is unable to give birth, it is due to an illness — like infertility. And some causes of infertility are the blocking of the fallopian tubes, inability of the ovaries to release eggs, destruction of the womb due to an earlier abortion, and so on. All these are *health* reasons, which prevent childbirth.

**In the same way, when Christians are unable to give birth and be fruitful, it is often because there is a disease in their Christian life.** Though they are born again, they are spiritually sick. One such sickness is laziness. (Some people are simply too lazy to labour for the Lord!) Another is pride. **But the main reason why a lot of Christians are not productive is because they are living in sin.** Indeed, nothing affects fruitful Christian living like sin does.

During his days as a hotel manager, one of my associates recalls seeing a Christian girl who came to sleep with a male lodger at this hotel. After they were through with whatever they were doing (your guess is as good as mine!), this young lady just came out of the hotel room shouting in tongues! What a shame!

Really, it's unfortunate. But there are many more like her, who indulge in immorality of every kind, and **this kills their ability to witness.**

I mean, how can you, after doing what you just did, speak to him to give his life to Jesus?

**Some people have such bad, un-Christian habits that they cannot even muster the courage to share the gospel.** It's all a question of character. I remember a certain Charismatic Christian who smoked so much that it became a problem in his office. Everybody complained about it, including his boss.

Now, if somebody like this tried to preach to others, nobody would take him seriously. (He probably wouldn't even try, anyway!) **People like these are spiritually sick, so they cannot bring forth any fruit**— just like barren women. But the Bible instructs us in II Pet 1:5-8 to add to our faith,

**... virtue... knowledge... temperance... patience...  
godliness... brotherly kindness... charity.**

(But I thought it was enough for Christians just to remain in the Faith? What do we need all these extras for?)

**For if these things be in you, and abound, THEY  
MAKE YOU THAT YE SHALL NEITHER BE  
BARREN NOR UNFRUITFUL.**

**If these things be in you... they make you...!** Notice here that Peter lists a number of qualities which immunize us from becoming barren and unfruitful in the things of God.

That is why some Christians are unfruitful— **because they have not added these godly attributes to their faith.**

The cancer of sin has made them unhealthy Christians. **And unhealthy people everywhere are not productive.**

**REASON No. 3:**  
**TO SHOW THAT YOU HAVE OVERCOME**  
**THE CHOKERS OF THE WORD**

**And the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.**

**Mark 4:19.**

My dictionary gives the meaning of the verb ‘to choke’ as: *To block, or obstruct a passage or process.*

And that is exactly what happens to some Christians. **They become so occupied with other things that they no longer have time for the things of God.**

Read the text again, and notice that even the normal, everyday cares of life can retard your spiritual progress. The demands of your job, for example. Or the pressures of academic work. Or the challenges of bringing up little children. **Unfortunately, many Christians allow the blessing of marriage to choke the Word, and they end up no longer being useful to God.**

“But Pastor, I’m pregnant now and...”

**Look, as a doctor I can tell you that pregnancy is not a disease.** In fact, some Christians are so mindful of the cares of this world, that all they have to offer are excuses:

“But Pastor, my children... my school... my business...”



What about the Lord's work? Really, if you are too busy to be involved in winning souls, then you are simply *too busy*!

**As God blesses and promotes us in this world, He does not intend that it should keep us from doing His work. We must rather overcome these potential chokers and continue being fruitful in His vineyard.**

Oh, I'm looking forward to the day when the church's regular drummer will still be playing the drums, though he would have become the Minister for Foreign Affairs;

When women will rise up to be pastors, despite the fact that they have to raise four kids at home;

When ushers will still be at it, even when they have become multimillionaires.

**When the cares of this world will not choke the Word!**

**REASON No. 4:**  
**TO SHOW THAT YOU HAVE OVERCOME**  
**THE DEMONS AND DISTRACTIONS IN**  
**THE CHURCH**

As God's people plant churches, Satan also assigns demons to **distract** church members from fulfilling the Great Commission. Every church has its share of them. These evil spirits cause church divisions and strife — **in fact, anything to hinder the purpose of God!**

And as if that was not enough, many dubious people creep in quietly, as the churches grow. They lie, cheat, steal and murmur. To fall into their company will entice you into wrongdoing. **But more importantly, moving with such people can distract your attention from the real purpose of being a Christian.**

When I was in school, I was despised by some of my mates because I never participated much in athletics. I chose rather to concentrate on my studies (After all, that was why I was there in the first place!) But looking at the way some people trained for the athletic events, you would think that was the main reason why they were in school. (And their fans who cheered them on did not make matters any better!)

But when the final exam results came in, I had a distinction, while some of my popular athletic colleagues ‘bombed’ miserably. You see, they missed the point. **Instead of concentrating on the primary goal of graduating with good grades, they were distracted into sports, not studies.** They were mistaken because they did not set their priorities right.

Now, I believe that as Christians we must be steadfast and unmoved, no matter what is happening around us. We must have a vision. Because without a vision, we will be distracted from time to time. **Even as a pastor I do not preoccupy myself with too many ‘political’ meetings.** (We’re talking about inter-church politics here.) I actually determine to stay away from such meetings. **This is because I want to remain focused on the vision of winning souls.**

The Church of God is the only institution in this world charged with preaching the gospel, casting out devils, and upholding the truth of God's Word. **We should therefore not deviate into party politics, inter-church politics, trading, or secular education.**

**Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always [not sometimes, but ...] abounding in the work of the Lord...**

**I Cor. 15:58.**

Here God is telling us as individuals, students, workers, and as a church, to *remain committed* to our objectives, come rain or shine. Have you noticed that this principle of always sticking to it, is applied by those who really make a lot of money?

Take a successful company like Unilever. For generations, they have been steadily producing and making money in Ghana, regardless of the numerous political changes. Governments come and go, but (as they say in their Key Soap commercial) "the tradition goes on." And that is one principle that we, as Christians, must learn— **to remain focused, to carry on, to be undistracted.**

**However, for some Christians the only tradition that goes on, is their constant distraction from important issues.** You really should hear them, as they murmur, complain and gossip:

“But why does the pastor drink water halfway through his sermon?”

“How come I am never allowed to sing a solo in the choir?”

“Have you heard about that sister? I hear she broke up with her beloved in order to marry so-and-so because he’s got a US visa.”

“Pssst. Have you seen the pastor’s wife’s shoes? They must be from Hong Kong.”

“I hear that Church has a lot of money.”

“Ei, I hear Rev. Sackey is going to Zambia.”

“What about Pastor Eddy? I hear he ...”

And on and on it goes. **Multitudes are perishing, and there is much work to be done. But our attention is diverted to insignificant things.** Now, as a member of *any* church, there are bound to be a whole lot of things which can distract you. But the real issue is to win souls and make disciples for Jesus. Period.

And *if only* we remain steadfast and unmovable **by keeping our focus on the Great Commission, we cannot fail to bear fruits.**

## REASON No. 5: TO SHOW THAT YOU ARE AN ACTIVE CHRISTIAN

Gynaecologists know for a fact that many childless couples are not sexually active. They just lie by each other like *wawa* and *odum* logs in an articulator truck headed for Takoradi harbour!

**Some married women actually want children, but do not want to have sex.** They ‘commit’ love only about once a month, and then turn around to complain that they cannot have children.

That is how it is with some people. **They are Christians alright, but because they are not active, they have no children — no converts, no fruits.** Just look around, and you will observe that passive Christians bear no fruits.

Do you want to be pregnant and have children? Then you must engage in the activity that will make you pregnant. Do you want to be a fruitful Christian? Then you must engage in the activity that makes you fruitful — witnessing, teaching, helping and getting active in the things of God!

Some people say, “But Pastor, I’m the quiet type, I don’t want any trouble. I just prefer to mind my own business.”

“I don’t want to preach to my business partner, he’ll think I’m ‘some way’.”

And with such excuses we remain totally idle in a vineyard that is ripe for the harvest.

So how can we switch from being mere spectators to active participants?

**...Break up your fallow ground.**

**Hosea 10:12.**

Fallow ground is that which has been left dormant. Idle. Untouched. Unused. And here the Lord is telling us to break up (cultivate) our fallow ground. That is, *to utilise our untapped potential*. **Today there are a lot of genuine, but dormant Christians in the Church.** They are gifted with talents which can enable them to perform even better than those who are already engaged in serving the Lord.

**But they just sit there, doing nothing, while a few labourers do their best to fulfil the Great Commission.** So it appears as if only a few are called, but I am convinced by the Word that *many* are called. Many men. Many women. Many young people.

**Every single Christian has a role to play.** And until you get involved to the point where you are actually bearing fruit, you cannot call yourself an *active* Christian.

As you begin to use your talents and gifts in the service of the Lord, you will find yourself becoming more and more active. Your regular Christian activity will yield results, and your fruits will definitely begin to show.

## REASON No. 6: TO SHOW THAT YOU ARE MATURE

Another reason why you must begin to bear fruits after your own kind, is to show that you are maturing. A **Christian without converts is immature**. It shows that you are not fully developed. You are not of age. You're unripe.

We see the same thing in the physical, where a girl of say, five or nine years old cannot give birth. This is because she is not yet mature or full-grown. **After you are born again your main aim must be to grow**, so that you can move from childhood to adulthood. From immaturity to maturity.

**But there are a whole lot of Christians who remain in the infant stage.** By the time they ought to have grown to the point where they also teach others, they still have need for somebody to follow them up and so on. To them, the church service is like some drama on TV. All they remember about the sermon are the jokes.

**An immature Christian runs around from church to church.** From one programme to the other, looking for excitement. Looking for the latest thing in town.

If a famous evangelist were to start a church across the street, they would immediately drop everything and fly there!

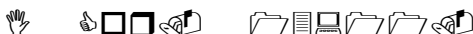
Listen, are you looking for something new? Then let me tell you, **there is nothing new under the sun**. Don't be an airy Christian, blown about by every wind of doctrine.

**Such people are shallow and childish, tossed to and fro. But a stable Christian knows what he's about, and does not allow anything to sway him. He is *stable*. This is maturity!**

The mature tree says, "I will not be moved. I will remain planted here, and focus on growing, till I bear my fruits."

Church of God, it is time to grow up! It is time to show by our fruits, that we are mature.

**When I was a child, I spake... I understood... I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.**



## **REASON No. 7: IT SHOWS YOU ARE ABIDING**

**...the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide... He that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit...**

**John 15:4,5.**

Jesus is saying here that you and I cannot bear fruit, except we *abide* in Him. Which means to stay, or be planted. To be resident. To remain in Christ. To continue in the things of God.

*You see, you have to abide in the same place for some time in order to become productive in that very place.*



After all, every tree has to be nurtured over a period of time until it can bear fruits on its own. No mango tree can bear fruits after just one year.

**For example, many of the pastors and elders in our church have been abiding here for a long time — abiding Christians who have developed into fruitful leaders.** It is only by staying here to be watered and tended, that they have grown to become useful in this very place.

But a lot of Christians do not allow themselves to get to this point, because **whenever they are planted, they uproot themselves.** Today they are here. Tomorrow, there. One day they are involved in this, the next time it is something else.

**A tree that is often transplanted will never, ever grow to its full, fruit-bearing potential.**

Older people are usually more stable in what they are doing. They seem to have a certain ‘staying anointing’. **(Have you noticed that the members of the older Christian denominations will seldom, if ever, switch to another denomination?)**

I mean, I have met older people who have made it plain to me that though they do understand our ‘born-again’ message, they will never change. Of course, that’s a negative attitude. **But there is a positive aspect of staying in one place, which the younger generation must learn.**

My initial efforts to reach other medical students were unsuccessful. They just ignored me. But *as I continued* in the Lords work, I began to succeed. This is because you get

stronger and stronger as you abide. **Today, the very doctors and medical students who ignored me are responding to the Gospel.**

Are you having problems trying to affect your peers? Just keep at it. Continue in the good work. With time they will begin to respond.

Dear Christian, God wants you to have a restful spirit. Be stable in church. Be permanent. Abide. Make a quality decision to be planted in a Spirit-filled, Bible-believing church. Then decide to *remain rooted* until your fruits begin to show.

**Those that be planted in the house of the Lord...  
shall still bring forth fruit in old age...**

**Ps. 92:13,14.**

**REASON No. 8:  
BEAR FRUITS IN ORDER TO HAVE JOY**

**Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord... Happy  
is the man that hath his quiver full of them...**

**Ps. 127:3,5.**

Here we understand that he who has many children is a happy man. However, children do not come so easily. In fact, when you consider the many painful and embarrassing things that happen at the labour ward, it makes you wonder, “Why do women want to have more children?”

First of all, there’s the shame of exposing themselves to total strangers. Then there’s the agony of labour itself. The pelvic bones actually *move* to allow the baby to come out. Sometimes when it becomes necessary to cut them, their screams confirm the terrible pain they suffer. Really, it’s not a small matter. (When I first observed a delivery, I had a renewed respect for women.)

But why do they do it over and over again? Jesus explained:

**... she remembereth no more the anguish, for  
JOY that a man is born into the world.**

**John 16:21.**

After the baby is born, there's a joy that women feel, which I cannot possibly explain. Only those who have experienced it can explain it to you. **But there's a supreme joy after childbirth.** A deep fulfilment after having brought forth someone they can call their very own. It is this joy that makes them go through it again and again.

In the same way, **there's a joy you will never experience till you lead others to be born again into the kingdom of God.** For someone to be born again and stabilized in Christ under my ministry, is a joy I cannot adequately express. The Bible says, "*Happy* is the man who has his quiver full of such children."

This is what keeps me going in the ministry, in spite of all the situations I face as a minister. Apart from often being away from my family, I have to endure a lot of ridicule and suspicion. Sometimes people treat you *despitefully*, because they assume you are jobless with nothing better to do.

But I endure the shame, because of the unspeakable joy of winning souls for the Lord! **You will never know this joy until YOU begin to bear fruit and see it growing.**

## REASON No. 9: SO THAT YOU WILL NOT BE ASHAMED

One of the most common verses engraved on many tombstones in our cemeteries is taken from Revelations 14:13.

**...Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth... that they may rest from their labours...**

Now notice: It did not say, “Blessed are those in the choir,” or “Them that die in the church.” Friends, it’s a matter of being *in the Lord*, not just in the church!

But the text ends with a very important revelation:

**... and their works do follow them.**

Look, when you die you cannot take anything along with you. No, not your car, your money, or even your clothes. **After death the only thing which can follow you are your works.** That is, the fruits you have borne in your Christian life. The disciples you have established in the Lord . Your Christian children.

As I pointed out earlier on, it's considered a great shame to be childless in our society. Now, concerning spiritual children, we learn that:

**Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them [children]: they shall not be ashamed.**

**Ps. 127:5.**

**Very soon you're going to stand before the judgement seat of Christ. Are you going to stand there, empty-handed and ashamed? Or will you bear your fruits now, so that your works can follow you? Think about it.**

## **REASON No. 10: TO PRESERVE YOUR OWN KIND IN THE CHURCH**

In the seventh chapter of Genesis, God commanded Noah to enter the ark with his wife, his three sons, and their wives. In addition he was to take with him, male and female counterparts of every kind of beast. **But why was God so interested in preserving a sample of every kind of animal in the ark?**

It was to keep life going on the earth after the flood. Take a look at verse three:

**Of fowls also of the air by seven, the male and the female; TO KEEP SEED ALIVE upon the face of the earth.**

The **Helen Spurrel Translation** of The Old Testament puts it this way:

**...to preserve the species...**

**Gen. 7:3**

By so doing, God has ensured the survival of each type of animal to this day, because he knew that Noah could never give birth to any of the other animals.

He could only reproduce his own kind — human beings.

This same principle applies spiritually. **Bearing fruit after your own kind will ensure that your particular ‘species’ continues to exist in the church.**

When the Lighthouse Chapel was founded, about half of the small congregation was made up of student nurses. This ratio was sustained for some years.

But at a point, the student nurses slacked in their outreach towards their own kind. So as they continued to graduate and be transferred outside the city, their representation in the congregation diminished.

Today, you will not find so many nurses in our church — because they failed to preserve their own kind. For this same reason, many churches which used to be the cutting edge of Christianity are nowhere to be found today.

How sad.

You see, because I am bearing fruit after my own kind, there are many medical students and doctors in our church. There are several doctor-pastors in the ministry with me now. Some of them are even in full-time ministry.

I have preserved my own kind!

**Now YOU too can begin to make converts of people who are just like you.** This is your contribution to the growth and continuity of the church.

Dear friend, just think about the increase we would have, if only the church of God would apply God's prescribed method:

*Individual Christians bearing fruit after their own kind.*

As we all begin to operate in this way, we will surely experience a higher success rate in our personal evangelism, resulting in growth on all sides for the Body of Christ.

**Dear friend, this is your time to bear fruit AFTER YOUR OWN KIND.**



## CONTENTS

<i>Preface</i> .....	<i>ix</i>
<i>Foreword</i> .....	<i>xiii</i>
<b>1</b> Do Not Go to Hell! .....	1
<b>2</b> The Repentance That Leads to Salvation .....	22
<b>3</b> Faith More Precious Than Gold .....	48
<b>4</b> Faith and Obedience .....	81
<b>5</b> Rebirth I .....	115
<b>6</b> Rebirth II .....	135
<b>7</b> There Is No Such Thing As Shameful Salvation! .....	171
<b>8</b> The Kingdom That Only the Victorious Can Enter .....	195
<b>9</b> Je-e-sus! .....	214
<b>10</b> Up to Seventy Times Seven .....	242
<b>11</b> Saint Chunhyang .....	264
<i>Afterword</i> .....	286
<i>Notes</i> .....	290

## DO NOT GO TO HELL!

There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day. At his gate was laid a beggar named Lazarus, covered with sores and longing to eat what fell from the rich man's table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores.

The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham's side. The rich man also died and was buried. In hell, where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side. So he called to him, "Father Abraham, have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in agony in this fire."

But Abraham replied, "Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, while Lazarus received bad things, but now he is comforted here and you are in agony. And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us."

He answered, "Then I beg you, father, send Lazarus to my father's house, for I have five brothers. Let him warn them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment."

Abraham replied, "They have Moses and the Prophets; let them listen to them."

"No, father Abraham," he said, "but if someone from the dead goes to them, they will repent."

He said to him, "If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead."

— LUKE 16:19-31

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

WE CALL THIS passage the parable of the rich man and Lazarus. Many insist that this is a true story, not just a parable.

For instance, John Wesley wrote about this passage:

But is the . . . account merely a parable, or a real history? It has been believed by many, and roundly asserted, to be a mere parable, because of one or two circumstances therein, which are not easy to be accounted for. In particular, it is hard to conceive, how a person in hell could hold conversation with one in paradise. But, admitting we cannot account for this, will it overbalance an express assertion of our Lord: "There was," says our Lord, "a certain rich man."—Was there not? Did such a man never exist? "And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus."—Was there, or was there not? Is it not bold enough, positively to deny what our blessed Lord positively affirms? Therefore, we cannot reasonably doubt, but the whole narration, with all its circumstances, is exactly true. And Theophylact (one of the ancient commentators on the Scriptures) observes upon the text, that, "according to the tradition of the Jews, Lazarus lived at Jerusalem."<sup>1</sup>

The legend also says that the rich man's name was either Nineve or Phinees.<sup>2</sup> Therefore, it is probable that the story was an actual event.

Even if it is only a figurative story, this does not present a problem for us, because Jesus was the One who told the story, and He knows about afterlife more than anyone else. Moreover, it can be an advantage for us if it turns out that the story did not actually occur, because a factual story only shows a partial aspect of afterlife, while a parable reveals a general truth.

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

### **1. Death is not the end, but the beginning of eternity.**

Many people believe that death is the end, so they live irresponsible lives, even committing suicide. However, death is not the end of existence. After we die, there will be judgment (see Hebrews 9:27), and we will be assigned eternally to heaven or hell. That is the basic truth revealed in this passage.

The Seventh-day Adventist church does not believe in the immortality of souls. They insist on the mortality of souls. Since they believe that upon death one's soul will be destroyed, they deny hell as the Jehovah's Witnesses do. They deny that the story of a rich man and Lazarus is an actual event, and they believe that it is one of the "Egyptian folk tales," which Jesus quoted.

Whether or not the passage is a real event or a parable, it is a fact. Besides this passage, all the scriptural passages about heaven and hell are real truth. This truth is found not only in Scripture, but it also has been proven in modern medical science.

Many years ago, Dr. Maurice Rawlings wrote several books on the topic of death. He had been a personal physician to General Dwight D. Eisenhower, and he is currently a specialist in cardiovascular disease and an international expert on CPR. He became the author of the best-seller *Beyond Death's Door* and is a wealthy owner of a personal jet and a lakefront house.

Maurice Rawlings has been a lifelong doctor who witnessed death almost every day. He never seriously thought about death, though. He believed that afterlife was either a dream or a fantasy.

One day, a forty-eight-year-old postman named Charles McKaine was admitted to the hospital. While Dr. Pam Charlesward was conducting an ECG test on Charles, he suddenly experienced heart failure. To the two doctors'

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

surprise, he did not realize that his heart had stopped, and he kept on talking. After four or five seconds, he looked confused—as though he wanted to ask a question—when his eyes rolled backward and he fell into unconsciousness. A nurse ran to conduct mouth-to-mouth CPR, called “a kiss of life,” while another nurse prepared an intravenous injection. Dr. Rawlings used a heart controller to make Charles’s heart beat regularly again.

Suddenly Charles screamed, “Don’t stop! I’m in hell! I’m in hell!”

Dr. Rawlings thought Charles was seeing an illusion, so he replied, “You wrestle with hell. I am busy trying to save your life!”

This was a very rare case. Most patients would complain to the doctor, “Stop jabbing my ribs! You are going to break my ribs!” The chest compressions cause very severe pain, even breaking the ribs of some patients, but the man wanted to come back desperately.

Thinking that his response was unusual, Dr. Rawlings knocked on Charles’s chest and asked, “Why don’t you want me to stop?”

Charles cried out, “I am in hell!”

Dr. Rawlings replied, “You mean, you are afraid to go to hell.”

Upon hearing the doctor’s words, Charles yelled, “No, I am in hell. Don’t let me go. Please, don’t let me go. Don’t you understand? I’m in hell. Whenever you stop the CPR, I am in hell again. Please, don’t let me go to hell again!”

Until then, Dr. Rawlings had disregarded the complaints of patients, but this patient was very serious. First of all, he was surprised at the look on his patient’s face. He had not seen such a terrified look on anyone’s face in the past twenty-

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

five years. Charles's face was livid with fear, and it was clear that he was in the most frightening time of his life.

Dr. Rawlings continued to try to save his patient's life. Suddenly, Charles yelled with a panicked voice, "How can I escape from hell?"

Dr. Rawlings replied, "How about praying to God?"

Charles asked him to pray for him.

Startled, Dr. Rawlings grumbled, "I am not a pastor," but the sharp looks from the nurses prompted him to reluctantly come up with a prayer: "Follow after me, Jesus Son of God! Save me from hell. If I live again, I will live for you."

The patient repeated his prayer desperately, then a miracle took place. He became peaceful and soon returned to a normal state.

The next day, when Dr. Rawlings went to Charles's room, he was reading the Bible.<sup>3</sup>

This is a true story. It shocked Maurice Rawlings, and he became interested in death not as a doctor, but as a human being. It also caused him to study death with a whole-hearted devotion, using two methods.

First, he talked with people who had had near-death experiences, then he analyzed and compared their stories.

As a result, he discovered that these experiences had strong commonalities. He had generally believed that only a few people could have similar illusions. However, he came to conclude that it was impossible for so many patients to have essentially the same and continual illusions. Furthermore, these patients were normal, discerning people who could judge reality correctly and believed their experiences to be real and not fantasies.

Second, he began a comparative study of world religions. He compared and analyzed the religious theories from holy

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

books including the laws and Talmud of Judaism, the Quran of Islam, Vedas of the Indian Upanishad, Brahman of Hinduism, the Zoroastrian holy book, the sayings and analects of Confucius, the Agama of Jainism, Buddhist holy books, the Japanese Shinto Kojiki, and Lao Tzu's Taoism. Subsequently, he realized that only one book most accurately described the near-death experiences of his patients: the Christian Bible.

Through his study, he became convinced that Christianity was the only true religion. He was not a believer before his study, but he became a faithful Christian afterward. Heaven and hell are not fiction, but reality.

I once read about a man who was an atheist and a gambler. After he died, the inscription on his gravestone was written as follows: "Here lies a dicer; long in doubt if death could kill the soul, or not: Here ends his doubtfulness; at last convinced;— but, ah! the die is cast!"<sup>4</sup>

Tryon Edwards said, "Hell is a reality seen too late—duty neglected in its season."<sup>5</sup> It is a place where one regrets that one had disregarded what one ought to have done.

The rich man in the passage realized too late that heaven and hell really do exist and therefore could not avoid going to hell. Be careful that you also do not realize this truth too late. As you read this, believe in the existence of afterlife, of heaven and hell. I wish that you would avoid hell and receive heaven as your inheritance.

### **2. Please be anywhere but in hell!**

The Bible speaks about hell much more than heaven. It is probably because more people will end up in hell than in heaven. In the Bible, the person who mentions the most about hell is Jesus. Obviously, Jesus knew about hell more than any other person.

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

In 1747, John Wesley wrote the following words: “I desire to have both heaven and hell ever in my eye, while I stand on this isthmus of life, between these two boundless oceans; and I verily think the daily consideration of both highly becomes all men of reason and religion.”<sup>6</sup>

Nowadays many preachers commit the sin of being silent about hell. They do not preach about hell because people do not like to hear those sermons. Jonathan Edwards wrote of the necessity of preaching about hell.

Another thing that some ministers have been greatly blamed for, and I think unjustly, is speaking terror to them who are already under great terrors, instead of comforting them. Indeed if ministers in such a case go about to terrify persons with that which is not true, or to affright them by representing their case worse than it is, or in any respect otherwise than it is, they are to be condemned; but if they terrify them only by still holding forth more light to them, and giving them to understand more of the truth of their case, they are altogether to be justified. When consciences are greatly awakened by the Spirit of God, it is but light imparted, enabling men to see their case, in some measure, as it is; and, if more light be let in, it will terrify them still more. But ministers are not therefore to be blamed that they endeavor to hold forth more light to the conscience, and do not rather alleviate the pain they are under, by intercepting and obstructing the light that shines already. To say any thing to those who have never believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, to represent their case any otherwise than exceeding terrible, is not to preach the word of God to them; for



## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

the word of God reveals nothing but truth; but this is to delude them.<sup>7</sup>

I agree with this statement wholeheartedly. I also believe that preachers must not concern themselves with what people think; they should preach about hell more often. The first topic they must preach about is hell's real existence. The next topic should be "What kind of place is hell?" Well, what kind of place is hell?

Thomas á Kempis says this about hell: "One hour in this hellhole will produce more pain than a hundred years of penitential practice."<sup>8</sup> The following two points help us to realize how painful the suffering of hell is.

First, hell is the lake that burns with fire and brimstone.

Father Abraham, have pity on me and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, because I am in agony in this fire.

—LUKE 16:24

...where "their worm does not die, and the fire is not quenched." Everyone will be salted with fire.

—MARK 9:48–49

What do you think will bring the most severe suffering in the world to a person? I believe it is fire. The most fearful injury is a burn. Its cure is most painful. Hell is a place full of fire. In Revelation, fire is described as "the lake of fire" (Rev. 20:15) or "the lake which burns with fire and brimstone" (Rev. 21:8, NKJV).

The following shocking testimony shows how frightening the fire of hell is. In 1948, George Godkin of Alberta, Canada, died after a prolonged illness. At that time, he experienced

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

hell for a moment. He introduced his experience as follows:

I was guided to the place in the spirit world called hell. This was a place of punishment for all those who rejected Jesus Christ. I not only witnessed hell, but felt the torment of those who will go there. The darkness of hell was so intense that it seemed to have a pressure per square inch. Truly it was extremely black, dismal, desolate, heavy, and thick. It gave individuals a crushing, despondent feeling of loneliness.

There was heat of the most drying, dehydrating type. The eyeballs felt so dry that it seemed red, hot coals were in their sockets. The tongue and lips were parched and cracked with intense heat. The breath from the nostrils felt like the blast from a furnace. The exterior of the body felt as though it were encased within a white-hot stove. The interior of the body felt the tormenting sensation of scorching, hot air being forced through it. The agony and loneliness of hell which the human souls feel cannot be clearly expressed; it has to be experienced!"<sup>9</sup>

The fire of hell, described above, is a place of torturous suffering. The worst place in the universe is hell. We must avoid going to hell at all cost.

Hell is an eternal place. The fire of hell never dies, and there is no death in hell. Therefore, hell's torment is eternal.

One time, I heard through a radio about a man who, after separating from his wife and feeling despair, prayed that he might die by fire. Imagine a person who jumps into the fire wishing to die and yet does not die, but suffers agonizing torment in the unquenchable fire. How terrible that would be! Hell is such a place! The fire of hell never dies. Because of the deep pit, it is impossible to escape. A suicide is impossible,

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

too. That is why the Bible records people who fell into hell as follows:

He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night....

—REVELATION 14:10–11

Richard Baxter, the famous Puritan preacher, wrote about the suffering of hell.

But the greatest aggravation of these torments will be their *eternity*. When a thousand millions of ages are past, they are as fresh to begin as the first day. If there were any hope of an end, it would ease the damned to foresee it; but *For ever* is an intolerable thought! They were never weary of sinning, nor will God be weary of punishing. They never heartily repented of sin, nor will God repent of their suffering. They broke the laws of the eternal God, and therefore shall suffer eternal punishment....As the joys of heaven are beyond our conception, so are the pains of hell. Everlasting torment is inconceivable torment.<sup>10</sup>

I have never read such a vivid testimony as that of a woman named Susan, about the unending suffering of hell. One night, Susan was sitting on the sofa in her living room. Suddenly, she felt the presence of God and was filled with the Holy Spirit. She heard the Lord's voice: "Look! Keep your eyes on hell!"

As soon as she heard the words, a burning wall appeared in front of her. A blue-hot flame like a column of fire rose

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

fiercely from the bottom of a brown floor. A jelly-like figure stood in the middle of the fire. While she was gazing at it, it began to tremble with fear.

A loud cry broke out with a sob, "Oh, God, please help me. Please help me!" It kept weeping.

Then the Lord spoke, "My beloved daughter, the soul that you see in the fire is a man who has been in hell for the last one thousand eight hundred years. He still keeps crying out to me like this."

Why are you surprised? Do you think one thousand eight hundred years is long? No, it is not long. One thousand years is not even close to one second in hell. That is because hell is an eternal place. Samuel Davies once described eternity vividly as follows:

Eternity! It is a duration that excludes all number and computation; days, and months, and years, yea, and ages, are lost in it, like drops in the ocean. Millions of millions of years, as many years as there are sands on the seashore, or particles of dust in the globe of the earth, and these multiplied to the highest reach of number, all these are nothing to eternity. They do not bear the least imaginable proportion to it, for these will come to an end, as certain as day: But eternity will never, never come to an end. It is a line without end; it is an ocean without a shore...It is an infinite, unknown something, that neither human thought can grasp, nor human language describe.... Suppose a bird were to pick up and carry away a grain of sand or dust from the globe of this earth once in a thousand years, till it should be at length wholly carried away; the duration which this would take up appears a kind of eternity to us.<sup>11</sup>

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

Several years ago, I saw a bonfire on the grounds of my grandfather's house. I threw a big log into the fire. The log burned all day, but only the surface of it was burned. Watching it reminded me of hell. The log looked like someone's thigh. I shuddered with fear as I thought about the souls being eternally tormented in hell.

We mistakenly believe that the world in which we live today will be eternal. There is an end to this world, but heaven and hell, which seemed not real to us, truly exist and are everlasting. Therefore, we must be careful not to go to hell.

### **3. Do not be assured because you are baptized and go to church. You must repent of your sins.**

Why did the rich man fall into Hades? Why did he go to hell? "No, father Abraham . . . but if someone from the dead goes to them, they will repent" (Luke 16:30). As implied in the verse, the rich man went to hell because he did not repent. The reason he went to hell is the same reason his five brothers will go to hell. They would not repent.

Many Christians are convinced that they will go to heaven because they have faith in Jesus, but I want to ask them, "Have you repented of your sins?" Faith without repentance is false faith, which will not rescue us from hell.

Do you want to go to heaven? Then you must repent. (See 2 Peter 3:8–9.) What sins should you repent of? There is no one particular sin of which you must repent. You must repent of *all* your sins. If you ask, "God, what sin must I turn away from?" then God will definitely say, "From all sins!" In Ezekiel 18:30–32, God commanded:

Therefore, O house of Israel, I will judge you, each one according to his ways, declares the Sovereign Lord. Repent! Turn away from all your offenses; then sin will

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

not be your downfall. Rid yourselves of all the offenses you have committed, and get a new heart and a new spirit. Why will you die, O house of Israel? For I take no pleasure in the death of anyone, declares the Sovereign Lord. Repent and live!

Repentance is not merely regretting and confessing your sins, but cutting off your sins. At the same time, repentance is cutting off “all your offenses” (Ezek. 18:30). Thomas Watson said, “They are but half-turned who turn from many sins but are unturned from some special sin.”<sup>12</sup> However, many are ignorant of this crucially important point about repentance. I want to introduce to you some of the most well-known sayings regarding repentance.

Yet be it evermore remembered, no sinner can find a welcome before the face of God unless he returns most deeply penitent. Ah! You do not know God at all if you suppose He can receive you without the most thorough penitence and the most ample restitution.<sup>13</sup>

—CHARLES FINNEY

O sirs, In God’s name let me tell you, it is not the giving up of one sin, nor fifty sins, which is true repentance; it is the solemn renunciation of every sin. If thou dost harbour one of those accursed vipers in thy heart, thy repentance is but a sham. If thou dost indulge in but one lust, and dost give up every other, that one lust, like one leak in a ship, will sink thy soul. Think it not sufficient to give up thy outward vices; fancy it not enough to cut off the more corrupt sins of thy life; it is all or none which God demands.<sup>14</sup>

—CHARLES SPURGEON

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

More importantly, this is what our Lord Jesus Christ said:

If your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life maimed than with two hands to go into hell, where the fire never goes out. And if your foot causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life crippled than to have two feet and be thrown into hell...where “their worm does not die, and the fire is not quenched.” Everyone will be salted with fire.

—MARK 9:43–49

Some people might question how this passage is relevant to what I was talking about. It is relevant because Jesus is saying that it does not take hand, foot, and eye—in other words, many different sins—to go to hell; if there is even one sin that we have not gotten rid of, we will be thrown into hell along with that sin. In a parable that teaches about repentance, Jesus also said:

I tell you that in the same way there will be more rejoicing in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who do not need to repent.

—LUKE 15:7

Previously I used to think that because of the words “in heaven,” the “ninety-nine righteous persons” referred to saints in heaven. I must have thought so because they were described as “persons who do not need to repent,” but the “ninety-nine righteous persons who do not need to repent” refer to those on earth who have truly repented. This fact is clear, because it is written in Luke 15:4:

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

Suppose one of you has a hundred sheep and loses one of them. Does he not leave the ninety-nine in the open country and go after the lost sheep until he finds it?

Now please pay attention to what I am about to say! There are two kinds of people. One kind consists of those in Christ who have repented; while the second kind consists of those outside His fold who have not repented. In other words, one group of people will go to heaven; the other group will go to hell.

What does the Bible say about people who have repented? It says they are "righteous persons who do not need to repent." Therefore, those who want to go to heaven must have no need to repent. They must not have even one sin remaining in them. All sins must be repented. Only truly repentant persons deserve to go to heaven.

Some people may have great difficulty digesting this truth, because they may confuse repentance with confession. Repentance and confession are different. The object of repentance is habitual sin, and the object of confession is accidental sin. In principle, non-believers repent, and believers confess. Therefore, it does not mean that a person who has sins to confess is not repentant and will go to hell. It means that a person who has habitual sin—in other words, sin that needs to be thrown away—is not repentant and will go to hell.

In order to facilitate your decision, I will tell an important story. One day, Rev. T. L. Osborne, an international evangelist, was waiting for his ship to leave the harbor. He had enough time to walk around the streets. Then an interesting scene took place right in front of him. A herd of pigs was following its herder in a row without going astray.

As many of you know, pigs are very hard to control. When you beat them with a stick to the left, they will go to the



## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

right. When you beat them with a stick to the right, they will go left. No matter how much you try, they will go wherever they please.

Rev. Osborne had often seen herders using both hands to grab pigs' tails in order to control them, and the pigs would kick their legs to run away from them, but he had never seen a row of pigs following their herder so obediently. Puzzled, he followed them, and to his surprise, they arrived at a slaughterhouse. The pigs entered the large iron barred gate without hesitation! Rev. Osborne, watching such a humorous and pitiful sight of pigs, waited for the herder to come out. Upon meeting him, the reverend asked the secret of the herder's amazing ability.

"It is simple. Pigs like beans. When I walk, I drop a handful of beans on the road, and they follow the beans, not me. They are so intent on eating the beans that they do not realize they are walking toward their death."<sup>15</sup> He was shocked by these words! He realized that the people who are busy indulging themselves with pleasure and self-interest are just like these pigs.

My beloved friend, pigs like beans the most. What sin do you like the most? That sin is Satan's bean, the bait that he uses to drag you to hell. When you sin, do not say that "I cannot stop this sin because I like it too much." Just as pigs that follow the beans were actually following the herder who led them to the slaughterhouse, we who follow our favorite sin are in reality following Satan who steals, kills, and destroys. Our destination is hell, which Jesus described as "everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels" (Matt. 25:41, NKJV). Therefore, I wish that you would open your eyes to this reality and cut off your sin right now.

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

### **4. We must boldly spread the gospel with compassion for the lost souls.**

The rich man in hell requested two things from Abraham. First, he begged for a drop of water for himself, and then he asked for Lazarus to be sent to his brothers on Earth. The best-written book on hell is by Pastor Mary Baxter, titled *A Divine Revelation of Hell*. Recording a thirty-day eyewitness testimony of hell, the content of the book is very similar to the following passage.

Next we came to the fire pot. The size of this fire pot was the same as the first, and skeletal figures were in it. The voice spoke, "Lord, have mercy on me!" Only when he spoke did I realize whether it was a man or a woman.

He spoke with a sob. "Lord...I have been wrong. Please forgive me...Please take me out of here. I have been in this misery...for so many years. Please let me out!" While he was begging, his skeletal figure trembled violently.

I looked at Jesus and saw Him crying, too. He looked above and said, "My Father, My Father, have mercy!"

"Lord Jesus, haven't I suffered long enough for the sins I committed?" the voice cried out from the fire. "I have been here for forty years."

Jesus spoke, "It is written, the righteous will live by faith. It is not by paying the penalty for your sins that you are saved, but it is by having faith in Me, Jesus Christ, while you were on earth that you are saved. You did not believe in the truth. Even when My people were sent to you to show you the way, you did not listen to them. You scorned them and rejected the gospel. Even though I died for you, you mocked Me and did not repent from

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

---

your sins. My Father gave you many opportunities to receive salvation. If only you had listened then..." Jesus shed His tears.

"I know, Lord. I know!" the man wailed. "But I am repenting now."

"It is too late," said Jesus. "The judgment is ended."

The man continued to weep. "Lord, even now the unrepentant people still come here. Please allow me to tell them that they must repent from their sins while on earth. I do not want them to come here."<sup>16</sup>

Like this man, people in hell are ready to share the gospel if only they are given the opportunity.

Those who have seen hell are fired up for evangelism. Pastor Jung Pyeo Lee, the director of Hansin Ministry Development, shared his testimony one day.<sup>17</sup> While he was in middle school, his close friend gave him a book, *A Calendar of Wisdom* by Tolstoy. The book contained many famous sayings of Buddha, Confucius, Lao Tzu, Jung-tzu, Socrates, and others, but what touched his heart were the words of Jesus. He asked his friend if there was a book with only the sayings of Jesus, and his friend handed him the New Testament. While he was reading it, he felt shocked at the story of the rich man and Lazarus in Luke 16. He determined that he must believe in Jesus just so he would avoid going to hell!

One morning, during his second year of high school, he coughed up blood. From the X-ray taken at the hospital, it was discovered that his right lung had a hole that caused the bleeding. The medication prescribed for him did not work at all. With great despair, he went to the pharmacy and bought a large dose of sleeping pills. Before taking the pills to cause his death, he closed his eyes for a moment, and suddenly hell

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

appeared. He saw tormented skeletons screaming with pain. The vision caused his eyes to open wide in shock, but the memory of it did not immediately disappear. When he closed his eyes again, the scene reappeared. Out of fear, he gave up his plan to commit suicide. Instead, he desperately held on to God, was healed, and became a pastor. He described the effect the vision of hell had on him.

I could not help but spread the gospel because I have seen the vision of hell. In whatever church or community that I went to, I earnestly evangelized with a cry, "Believe in Jesus!"

While in An-yang, I served as an army chaplain. While sharing the gospel there, I habitually told the soldiers, "If it weren't for hell, I would not be preaching the gospel like this. But hell is real."

We must spread the gospel. That is because hell really exists. If we do not share the gospel, people around us will go to hell.

Now this is my conclusion.

The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham's side. The rich man also died and was buried.

—LUKE 16:22

In later Judaic thought, it is believed that when a righteous man dies, his soul is carried away by good angels, but when an evil man dies, his soul is carried by dark angels. In old Korean myths, there are dark spirits in black garb, but no angels. That is because without Jesus, there is no salvation. This means that before the gospel reached Korea, the nation's

## **CHRISTIANS GOING TO HELL**

main religions of Buddhism and Confucianism were not able to save one soul, but sent all people to hell.

Charles Finney, the great evangelist, said:

In all ages it has been common for some dying saints to hear music which they supposed to be of heaven and to see angels near and around them. With eyes that see what others cannot see, they recognize their attending angels as already come, "Don't you hear that music?" say they. "Don't you see those shining ones? They come, they come!" But attending friends are yet too carnal to see such objects and to hear such sounds; for it is the mind and not the body that has eyes. It is the mind that sees, and not the body. No doubt in such cases, they do really see angelic forms and hear angelic voices. The Bible says, "Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints." How gloriously do these closing scenes illustrate this truth.

If this be true of saints, then doubtless wicked spirits are allowed to drag the wicked down from their dying beds to hell. Nor is it unreasonable to suppose that they too really see awful shapes and hear dreadful sounds. "Who is that weeping and wailing? Did I not hear a groan? Is there not some one weeping as if in awful agony? O, that awful thing; take him away, take him away! He will seize me and drag me down; take him away, away!"<sup>18</sup>

This is true, and there are too many real-life cases like this. Due to time limitations, I will introduce only two short cases.

In the book *People Who Met Angels* written by Joan Wester Anderson, the following story appears. An 11-year-old Christian boy was dying of peritonitis. He suddenly told those

## *DO NOT GO TO HELL!*

around him, “Look, Mom! There are angels around us. One angel is prettier than the other angels.”

Mom replied, “I cannot see anything.” Thinking that he was seeing an illusion, she tried to console him.

Nevertheless, the son kept saying, “Look. The angels are here. They are so close I can touch them.” At last, the parents realized that their boy was seeing a reality and felt greatly comforted.<sup>19</sup>

In another case, Rev. Dr. David Nelson recorded the near-death experiences of people. He observed the incidents as a doctor while he was still an unbeliever. He wrote that the unbelievers scream, “Ah, the frightful figure! Please take him out of this room. Why don’t you take him out?”<sup>20</sup>

When the repentant die, angels come to escort them, but when the unrepentant die, evil spirits come to take them away. If you were to die, who do you think will come to escort you? Who would you like to escort you? Of course, you would like the angels to come. Then I wish that you would at once rely upon the blood of Jesus, confess all your sins, and cut off all your sins.

# DUALITY

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7797-4-7

**Copyright © 2002 Parchment House**  
**3rd Edition**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.



## **PREFACE**

One of the most disturbing things in modern-day Christianity is the inconsistent lifestyles of some believers.

The double standards practised by some Christians have given all believers a bad report of them that are without.

As you read this book, you will see the many areas in which our day-to-day lives fall short of true Christian standards.

Then, after you have honestly located yourself, you will be in a better position to climb out of pretence and hypocrisy.

I have learnt to be myself, and so should you. There's no need to try and impress anyone. There's no need to try to be like anyone else.

**It is my prayer that this teaching will go a long way to make our secret lives conform to our public image.**

# ***Contents***

The Dual Life .....	1
Examples of Duality .....	6

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

*Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa*

Rest of the world:

*Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ*

Website:

*[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)*

Parchment House

## ***Chapter One***

# ***The Dual Life***

**But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints.**

**Eph. 5:3.**

God's expectation is that as children of God, no form of sinful living should be found in us. So that fornication, uncleanness and the like should never be associated with any Christian.

People who are called Christians and yet live a different lifestyle underneath are guilty of duality.

**F.O.V.**

**Duality is the act of living two lives.**

**It is also the act of having two personalities or two natures embodied in one person.**

**One lifestyle displayed in public, and the other lived in private.**

Such a dual person has one behaviour pattern he exhibits when he comes into public. This is to impress the people around. He has another type of behaviour when nobody can see him.

For those who claim to be Christians, one lifestyle is displayed in church, and the other, outside of church.

**Duality encourages the spirit of hypocrisy, the spirit of lies and the spirit of self-deception.**

One of the greatest forms of deception is self-deception. When you are a fool and you don't know that you are a fool, your situation is worse than a fool who knows that he is a fool!

Often when I counsel people and can get them to understand the problem they are faced with, much of the work is already done.

When patients are diagnosed with a sickness, often fifty per cent of the work is done. Because the doctor now knows exactly what he is dealing with.

**Deception is a very dangerous thing which comes about by *repeated* lying.**

When you knowingly and continuously lie, you begin to believe the lie.

Self-deception occurs when you do something wrong, but repeatedly tell yourself that what you are doing is right.

**In the end, you will believe when you commit sin, that you are actually doing the right thing. You have done it so many times for so long that, you have convinced yourself it is the right thing.**

During the dark years of Nazi Germany, the Nazis convinced themselves that killing Jews was right.

At a point they believed that the Germans were really a special race which was superior to every other race. They also believed that all their problems were caused by the Jews. Then they came up with what they called the FINAL SOLUTION: How to solve the Jewish problem. They believed in it, preached it, taught it in schools and they gradually eliminated and annihilated as many Jews as possible.

They must have believed it with all their hearts, because they killed the Jews consistently.

They murdered thousands and thousands of them. The Germans used some of the crudest methods the human brain could possibly devise.

In some cases they made the Jews dig trenches, and then told them to line up by these pits. Then they shot all of them in cold blood.

**If you continue to lie to yourself about something, you will begin to believe that the *wrong is right*. On the other hand, you also know that *right is right*. So now you will have two acceptable standards — *right is right*, and *wrong is also right*.**

This is the foundation for double standards and double-dealing, which is the double life — **duality!!**

Unfortunately, there are so many Christians who are two people in one.

Some years ago, I used to be a musician and moved around with many other musicians. Many of them had *two* personalities.

When they stood on stage they would sing songs like, *Amazing Grace, I Love You Lord*, and many other beautiful songs. But if you met them off stage, their lives were *something* else.

It got to a point when I was no longer impressed with any gospel singer on stage.

There are many singers and choristers who sing beautifully, but have horrible private lives. They have two lives! One life is when they sing and lift up their voices to the Lord. The other life is when they are off-stage.

Indeed, some of these singers can even bring you to tears. But then, when you get closer, you would wonder whether these people are even Christians.

Your life on stage should conform with the one in private. If someone comes to live with you, he should discover that **the character on stage is the same as the one at home.**

As a pastor, I know I could easily fall into a dual life. Therefore, I consciously check the things that are private, which nobody knows about.

I do my best to make my private life line up with the Bible.

**What I say and what I do must tally.**

**One dangerous thing for a pastor to do is to have a double life. Some ministers would even admonish the congregation not to copy their lifestyles!**

My father once said a priest told him to do what he said, but not what he did.

**“Do what I say, but don’t do what I do”,** he told his parish.

If you are in a church where the pastors stand and say one thing, but turn around to do another, then you must leave that church! It is a dangerous place because the pastor is practising *duality*!



## ***Chapter Two***

# ***Examples of Duality***

Now I want to show you several examples of the dual life.

Samson was a perfect example of someone with a dual life. His dual behaviour was so classic that every Christian must learn something from him.

I sometimes like to call the phenomenon of duality ‘*Samsonism*’.

## 1. SEPARATED AND UNEQUALLY YOKED

That was the state of Samson — he had a religious separated side of him, which was shown by the fact that he never cut his hair. Yet he was unequally yoked to the things of the world.

There are Christians who appear separated from the world, but yet live in sin.

**Samson's life was one that was separated and yet was entangled in the world.**

He was separated because he was a Nazarite —that is, someone who was not supposed to live like the rest of the people. He was unique, in the sense that he was not supposed to drink, or cut his hair.

He didn't cut his hair, and it was a sign of his consecration to God. All those around him thought he had nothing to do with the world.

It was an open sign to everyone that Samson was a Nazarite, separated unto God. He never drank, and everybody knew him to be so.

But at the same time, he was practising another kind of quiet evil, by linking himself with the devil and the world. **These two things were going on in his life at the same time.**

This was a man who would not cut his hair, who claimed to be Charismatic, who was wearing the Nazarite hair, a sign that he was separated to God. **But at the same time, he wanted to have an unbeliever wife** (Judges 14: 2-3).

## ***Chapter Two***

# ***Examples of Duality***

Now I want to show you several examples of the dual life.

Samson was a perfect example of someone with a dual life. His dual behaviour was so classic that every Christian must learn something from him.

I sometimes like to call the phenomenon of duality '*Samsonism*'.

I just have to pass by the junction after church on Sunday and give one of them a lift, and I'll have one of the so-called born again sisters to sleep with."

Many years ago Rev. Sackey, one of my associate ministers, was the manager of a hotel. One day a lady came there with a Lebanese man. They checked into a room together and were there for about an hour.

My dear pastor was sitting at the reception when this lady came out of the hotel room shouting in tongues — **she was a tongue talking born again Christian!** Yet on the quiet, she was having affairs with men in hotels.

She is likely to be seen on Sunday in a well-known Charismatic church, lifting up her hands in worship. She is playing with God.

**Samson also played with God. He wore the long hair, which was a sign that he was a member of a Christian church, but still dabbled in fornication with the world. Apparently separated, but also with the world.**

Spiritual Duality is a condition which predisposes to fornication and adultery.

Don't play any double games with God!

I can just see Samson with his long hair as he walked through town. Everybody knew that meant that he was an anointed man of God, separated unto God, walking in the things of God and a member of the church.

Yet he wanted to marry an unbeliever.

He was a man anointed of God, yet he wanted to play with worldly pleasure.

And there are many people doing that today, including pastors!

There are many pastors who have two personalities and two lives. There are also many church members who have two personalities.

There is the personality that is displayed when they walk through the church gate: holier than everybody else. But once they get out of the church gates into their homes or offices, they move into their other lives. This is a different thing altogether.

**Some of you reading this book are just like that. You are in the church and you claim to be born again. Your friends think that you are a believer, but on the side you are playing around with the world. Your best friends are unbelievers, which makes you just like Samson.**

The amazing thing is, it is not that you are even in an ordinary youth or charity group.

You are in a born-again church where you hear life-changing sermons over and over again, **and yet your best friends are unbelievers.**

If your favourite friends at school and work are openly declared non-Christians — **You have a big problem!**

There was a man who was talking about some of our Charismatic churches. He boasted, “Every Sunday I pick up a girl from these Charismatic churches.

**Yet this man was also playing around with many of the women in his church.**

It is said that one day, when he was fornicating with one of the women, she asked him, “So, after doing this how will you be able to preach tomorrow?” He replied, **“When I sin like this, then the anointing comes even more.”**

There are people who commit fornication just before going to church. And really, it does not make *any* difference to them. Some Christians go a step further to fornicate with people whose names they don’t even know!

Such people could even be the most expressive when they come to church.

**They are spiritual and at the same time carnal.**

Look at Samson, he loved to go out for prostitutes. He slept with one woman after the other. He did all this, in spite of the fact that the Spirit of God was upon him. **For twenty solid years he was in the ministry, and yet he played with these problems!**

### **3. MIGHTY IN MINISTRY AND WEAK IN PRIVATE LIFE**

**It is dangerous to be both mighty and weak.**

If your pastor knows that you are weak, he can pray for you.

But if you pretend to be mighty, how can he know that you need help? If you are mighty, nobody will spend

When he told his father who he wanted to marry, he asked, “Is there no woman in Israel you can marry?”

But Samson replied, **“Oh no, this is the girl I want.”**

How can you even think of marrying a complete outsider when you know you are a believer separated unto God?

**It is dangerous to lie to yourself that the wrongs you do are right.**

## **2. SPIRITUAL AND CARNAL**

Samson was a spiritual person and yet he was carnal. At certain times he gave the impression that he was very spiritual. At other times it was surprising how carnal he could be.

**The contrast is such that you wonder if this carnality and spirituality could be in one person?**

Judges 13:25 tells us that,

**...the Spirit of the Lord began to move him at times...**

The Spirit was upon the man and yet he was carnal. He was so spiritual that he was the spiritual leader of Israel for *twenty* years!

**However, we realize that he had a woman problem: He was a playboy *although* he had the Spirit of God.**

I remember a man of God whom I respected very much. He also used to play this kind of game. He was a powerful preacher, and I was really moved every time he ministered.

**He was mighty publicly but the opposite in private.**  
If you had the opportunity to visit him at home, you would see a different life altogether.

Judges 16:3 recounts that he carried the gates of the city on his shoulders. What a mighty man! In this sense he was not weak. He was so mighty that he killed one thousand people with a jaw bone.

However, Judges 16:4-17, portrays Samson as being morally weak. This allowed Delilah to take advantage of him.

**She overcame the mighty man because he was *also* a weak man!**

Are you both mighty and weak?

The Philistines recognised this weakness also, and capitalised on it to eventually conquer Samson.

My brother, please don't be both mighty and weak.

Many public officers and officials in many nations are like that. In public life they look so dignified and so respectful. When they are interviewed on television, they sound so powerful. But in their private lives, they are morally and maritally weak.



time to counsel or minister to you. But if you show that you are weak, attention will be given to you.

**If you are weak, but present yourself as strong, you are *preventing* your own deliverance. You are covering what needs help.**

One day a lady went to see a doctor, a gynaecologist. When the lady rose to leave the consulting room, the doctor asked, “Is *that* really the reason why you came to see me?”

She had come for consultation without divulging the real problem. The doctor had a feeling that there was more to it than met the eye, and that there was something that she couldn’t bring herself to say. This was actually the case.

When you appear strong even though you are weak, nobody can help you.

**But when you confess, “I’m weak, I need help”, the mighty people in ministry can then come to your aid.**

As a pastor I have come to see that there are people I don’t particularly need to visit. Because they are strong! But sometimes there is a weak one, and I have to rush there because he needs attention. When you look strong like Samson, you won’t get any attention.

Samson was mighty in ministry, killing thousands. At the same time he was a weak man when it came to his private life.

## 5. MATURE AND YET CHILDISH

Samson judged Israel for twenty years. It takes maturity to be a judge, and to be able to lead a nation for this number of years.

Looking at Samson's life, you may get the impression that he was just lustful, chasing one prostitute after another. But he was a judge for twenty years. That is maturity in ministry.

Most Charismatic churches in Ghana have not been in the ministry for twenty years. But Samson was!

**However, Samson had another side of his personality which made him behave like a child.**

In Judges 15:1, he caught three hundred foxes and tied their tails in pairs. Then he set them on fire and sent them into the Philistines' farms. This was Samson's revenge on his father-in-law for giving his bride to his best man.

His behaviour was childish. **It is a child who would think of running around to catch foxes, tie their tails and light them up with fire.** There are simpler ways of burning a farm. The man was clearly childish in his thinking.

Yet at the same time, he was a very mature man who gave reasonable judgement for at least twenty years.

**There are many Christians like that. Their level of understanding of God's Word is excellent, yet they are so childish.**

#### 4. NASTY AND NICE

There are some people who are very nice when they are in public, but are extremely nasty when they are at home. **Their spouses and children know them to be very impatient and abusive, but those outside the home see them as the sweetest people on earth.**

I have met many husbands who complain that the way their wives speak to the pastors make them feel that their spouses respect and love their pastors more than their own husbands.

The contrast is such that they cannot help but notice the humility and gentleness which their wives reserve for their pastors and outsiders.

Such a wife or husband has a dual life.

They have two different natures: The nasty nature which they display in private (usually those close to them have to endure it), and the nice nature which they display in the open.

**In fact, some of the nicest people are also the nastiest.**

Perhaps it is a *reflex* to camouflage their nastiness at home. Such people take extra precautions to appear nice to outsiders, especially those they meet for the first time.

Another feature of a child is that it cries a lot. Children are often easily hurt, they need a lot of time and attention. In the church setting, anybody who behaves in this manner is considered a child.

Such people sometimes know a lot of scriptures and have been Christians for a long time. Yet they still get easily hurt and need much attention.

**A mature person doesn't seek attention, but rather gives it.**

Maturity is needed in every facet of our lives. It takes maturity for a man to say, "This is the woman I am going to marry and no one else."

It takes a mature man to settle down with one of the many beautiful ladies he sees around him. That is why people respect married men. It takes maturity to settle down. **A child cannot settle.** That is why a man who does not want to settle may not be regarded as a man yet. He is still a boy.

**Are you mature and childish?**

## **6. LOYAL AND SLANDEROUS**

**Likewise must the deacons be grave, not doubletongued...**

**1Tim. 3:8.**

There are people who claim to be loyal and yet are very slanderous and doubletongued.

A child is very unsteady and unstable. A child cannot sit at one place for a long time.

There are many childish Christians who despite their knowledge of God's Word cannot settle down in any church.

Today, you will meet them in this church, the next time, you will find them in another church. They just cannot belong anywhere. They are unsteady and unstable, yet they have great knowledge.

**It takes maturity to belong to a church.**

One Sunday evening, I 'tuned-in' to a Christian talk show on my way home from church. (I usually leave church very late.)

That night, the discussion was on churches and pastors. As I listened to the discussion I marvelled at how wise and mature the arguments sounded.

Then I suddenly recognised the voice of one of the contributors. **He was one of the most unstable Christians I had ever known.** He had once been a member of my church, but had since moved to at least two other churches.

This fellow had such wise commentaries to make on the behaviour of pastors and churches. Yet he was like a child — **unable to belong to any church for a long period.** Perhaps, he knows too much to belong anywhere.

He is mature and yet childish.

## **7. WORSHIPPING WITH YOUR MOUTH, YET REBELLING IN YOUR HEART**

God is sick of duality and of all forms of pretence. When the Israelites practised duality, God became so angry that He refused to accept their sacrifice.

He queried,

**To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me... Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me. ... I cannot, away with it...**

**Isaiah 1:11,13.**

**God was tired of their hypocrisy; and told them that He would not heed their prayers. Because after praying they turned and did evil. God said, “Away with it! I cannot, and I don’t want it.”**

Truly, there are so many Christians who sing, lift up their hands, and tell the Lord that they love him — but these are often empty words.

Many women feel dejected when they realize that the man who claimed to love them had been lying all along. Some women become so heartbroken that they cannot believe the words of any man for the rest of their lives.

If a woman finds out that the love of her life has other girlfriends, she will not take it lightly. When such a man returns to her with his sweet words she may very well explode!

They have two tongues: one speaks good and the other evil.

The Bible describes duality of the tongue as being double-tongued.

There is only one animal that *seems* to have two tongues — the *snake*!

Some years ago, I was in a fellowship meeting when the pastor took a second offering. I got angry and complained to a sister sitting by me. But the look she gave me shut me up.

Immediately, my heart smote me.

After the service I went up to the pastor and confessed to him what I had said. He was very surprised. Stretching out his hands, he told me God was going to use me.

I could have complained bitterly about the man of God as I sat there. Then after the service, I could have approached him with a big smile, telling him how much I enjoyed the sermon.

**To him, I would have sounded very loyal. But I would have been ‘stabbing him in the back’, pretending to have a loyal tongue.**

A person with two tongues is a follower of the devil; who slanders the saints before God.

The devil is described as:

**...the accuser of our brethren... which accused them before our God day and night.**

**Rev. 12:10**

**The goodness of such a person is temporary, and is only revealed to a selected few.**

Those living dual lives might appear to be good, but their goodness is short-lived.

## **9. MEN PLEASER AND GOD PLEASER**

Is it possible to please God and men at the same time? In Galatians 1:10, Paul states,

**...for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.**

According to Paul, if he pleases men he cannot please Christ. It is as simple as that! There is no way you can please men and think or believe you are pleasing God.

Walking with the Lord on this long road of ministry, I have had to do many things that were often not pleasing to men. I simply could not please men.

When I responded to the call of God on my life, I displeased my parents.

Think about it! You sent your child to school. He did well and qualified as a doctor. Would you be pleased if he told you he had decided to become a pastor instead?

At the time I took this decision, my church was very small and unimpressive.

I remember my father-in-law offered to speak to the Hospital Administrator to get me transferred to a new department because I had been posted to the mortuary. My family thought that perhaps I didn't want to work in such a place. But no! I was going into the ministry because I wanted to obey and please God.



This scenario can be likened to the way God feels about those who literally live in sin, but come to church with all those beautiful words and songs.

**God does not take it lightly when your heart is far from Him but to those around, you appear to be serving Him in earnest.**

## **8. GOODNESS AND BADNESS**

The dual person exhibits both goodness and ‘badness’.

**...your goodness is as a morning cloud, and as the early dew it goeth away.**

**Hos. 6:4.**

The morning cloud and the early dew were things that appeared for a short while and then vanished almost immediately.

**Some people would know the dual person to be bad and wicked. Another group of people would know him to be a very good person.**

If you went to the home of a person living a dual life, the members of his family would readily supply you with tales of his evil deeds. But if you also went to talk to his colleagues at work or in the church, they would tell you of his goodness and kindness.

Soon his creditors will catch up with him, and the image he has built around himself will come crumbling down! That is when the people he has deceived will be disappointed and unimpressed with him.

**It is good to be liberated from that constant desire to impress others!**

If I had tried to impress people, my church, LCI would not have gotten to this stage. I would have spent our income on impressive cars, clothes and lifestyles, trying to impress those on the outside.

**There is no need to impress anyone. If you are something, people will get to know who you are, what you are, and what you are made up of!**

It is just a matter of time!

Don't be impressive on the outside and unimpressive on the inside.

## **11. GOOD START, POOR FINISH**

In Judges 13, we observe the beginning of Samson's ministry. But in Judges 16:30, we see his end.

**And Samson said, Let me die with the Philistines...**

When Samson began his ministry, the Spirit anointed him for service.

Thank God, they now admire the church.

If you want to please men, you will never be a servant of Christ.

To avoid living a dual life, you may sometimes have to go contrary to man's opinion, and just please God.

If your parents want you to marry an unbeliever just because he is wealthy, you will have to go contrary to their desire, because the Bible commands us not to!

Your family may not be happy, but God will be pleased with you. Someone who is living a dual life will have to bend the rules to please his family.

**Are you pleasing men and pleasing God?**

## **10. IMPRESSIVE AND UNIMPRESSIVE**

I have realized that as human beings, most of us want people to be impressed with us. We wish the people around us would be impressed with what we have; our cars, our appearance etc.

The person living a dual life will do and say everything possible to impress his friends and those around him.

**Sometimes, people go to the extent of going for bank loans in order to live a certain kind of lifestyle to impress friends.**

Many people live above their means because they want to present a certain image of themselves. The person living a dual life may be regarded as wealthy and living in luxury — when in reality, he is living on borrowed glory.

Your pastor is human, so he may not see you sinning. You can even lie to him. There are many Christians in church who have lied to their pastors and gotten away with it. But God is not a man. He is the one you are dealing with. You cannot lie to God!

Duality is a cursed life and dual people never end well. They die in disgrace!

Let us decide not to live dual lives.

**May the Good Lord help us all!!**

**There are many people who started so well. They were anointed. But because they lived dual lives, just like Samson, they died in the midst of demons and their enemies.**

There was a man I knew about, who God raised up to perform spectacular miracles. Some of the miracles were just beyond human understanding.

I watched this video clip, in which a man paralysed with cancer of the spine was healed by this minister. Being a medical doctor, I understand what cancer of the spine means, especially one that makes you unable to walk.

It was amazing to see a totally paralysed man suffering from cancer healed, walk, jump and run before our eyes.

But at the end of his life, this man of God divorced his wife and became a drunk. He died alone in a motel, apparently of some liver disease. He was just like Samson. He started well but ended badly.

**What is the use of starting well and ending in the midst of demons?**

**Samson died in the midst of unbelievers, he died in the midst of his enemies. He was killed by the enemy!**

It will never be well with us if we play a double game with God.

God is not blind! God is not a fool! God is not a man! God can not be mocked. **He sees what we are doing.**

**The eyes of the Lord are in every place, beholding the evil and the good.**

**Prov. 15: 3.**



*HOW TO BECOME A LEADER*



*DAG'S TAPES & PUBLICATIONS*

# **How To Become A Leader**

**DAG HEWARD-MILLS**

PARCHMENT HOUSE



**Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.**

**Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002**

**First published 2002  
Second Printing 2003**

**Published by Parchment House:  
P.O. Box DC 1034  
Dansoman  
Accra, Ghana**

**ISBN: 9988-596-99-5**

**All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.**

**Excerpts in Chapter 10 from John Foxe (1516-1587), *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Public Domain.**



## Contents

1. <i>Decide To Become One Of The Few Good Leaders In This World</i> .....	1
2. <i>Interact With The Great And Small</i> .....	8
3. <i>Maintain Personal Integrity</i> .....	14
4. <i>Give People Hope</i> .....	15
5. <i>Never Use Power Without Wisdom Or Wisdom Without Power!</i> .....	18
6. <i>Do Not Be A Lifeless Leader. Have A Conviction!</i> .....	20
7. <i>Wait For Your Season</i> .....	22
8. <i>Use The Secret Of Concentration</i> .....	24
9. <i>Help The People Around You To Accomplish Great Things With Their Lives</i> .....	28
10. <i>Make People Obey You Gladly</i> .....	32
11. <i>Contemplate, Reflect, Be Thoughtful And Consider The Things You See Around You</i> .....	42
12. <i>Strive For Excellence</i> .....	46



## **Other books by Dag Heward-Mills**

### *Poison: Taming Your Tongue*

**In this book, Dr Dag Heward-Mills describes the deadly poison found in the tongue, and provides lessons for taming this unruly part of our bodies. Full of real-life stories, this book will minister to you in a practical and interesting way.**

### *The Beast of Prodigality*

**Are you the head of an ant or the leg of an elephant? How many chances will you have in this life? Why do some people walk away from obviously great opportunities? This vintage teaching examines the syndrome of prodigality.**

### *The Strange Woman*

**Are you “strange”? What does the Bible mean by “strange woman”? In this revealing book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills shares with you some vital secrets on how to protect your life and ministry from strange people.**

### *Name it! Claim it! Take it!*

**In this book, the author shows the believer a *master* key to receiving spiritual, physical, financial and material breakthrough.**

### *They Went to Hell*

**Does life end in the grave? Is there life after death? These are some of life’s great mysteries. Allow Dr Dag Heward-Mills to take you on a journey beyond the grave and find out for yourself what actually exists after death.**

### *Bearing Fruit After Your Own Kind*

**Do you want to be great in God’s kingdom? Do you want to bear much fruit in the Lord? In what areas can God use you? In his usual style, Dag Heward-Mills lucidly expounds the spiritual truth of bearing fruit after your own kind.**

*Forgiveness Made Easy*

**Is there any sin that God will not forgive? What is the litmus test for forgiveness? This book is a must for every Christian who desires to walk in unbroken fellowship with God. Leap from pain to joy as Dag Heward-Mills outlines biblical keys to successful relationships.**

*All About Fornication*

**What are the complications of fornication? Are you insulated from this sin? Discover more about the international and cross-cultural sin of fornication in this book. Dag Heward-Mills presents the reader with practical steps on how to climb out and stay out of the pit of fornication!**

*Frugality*

**This book is phenomenal! Is your business improving? Is your church growing? What does it mean to have a big front door and a big back door? How can I prosper in good times and in bad times? Enjoy the practical and down to earth teaching in this book.**

*The Minister's Handbook*

**This book is a compilation of the material a minister needs to conduct various ceremonies such as marriages, funerals, baptisms naming ceremonies, etc. It has been presented in an easy-to-use format which all pastors will find very helpful.**

*Anagkazo: Compelling Power*

**Learn about this “compelling power” which makes evangelism effective and fruitful even in the face of opposition, excuse, suspicion, resentment, etc. This book by Dag Heward-Mills can make you more of a soul-winner than you have ever been!**

*The Mega Church*

**The heart cry of God is for the world to be saved, and for His house - the church - to be filled! From this revelation was born this book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.**

*Backsliding: Develop Your Staying Power*

**Though an unusual subject, “backsliding” deals with a very common occurrence among Christians. Many begin, but not so many survive to the end. In this book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills sounds the alarm, and graphically shows why every Christian must make it to heaven!**

*Beauty*

**What do you know about beauty? Is beauty one of the things you are looking for in a wife? Be enlightened as Dag Heward-Mills carefully and systematically outlines the ten attributes of physical beauty in this book.**

*Born Again*

**What does it mean to be “born again”? What is not the same as being born again? Will I go to heaven if I’m not born again? In this interesting book, Dag Heward-Mills throws more light on many of the misconceptions about the “born again” experience!**

*Duality*

**Are people really straight forward? Have you ever met someone who seems to have two personalities? Meet the perfect pretender in Brother Dag Heward-Mills’ classic exposé on the double personality. This timeless message is a must for every sincere believer.**

*Ministerial Ethics*

**In this outstanding work, Brother Dag Heward-Mills examines real-life situations in ministry today. He addresses practical issues like finances, politics and ministerial interactions. This book is a must for every Christian leader.**

*Principles of Success*

**Only one man in the Bible is described as “a man after God’s heart.” What earned him this reputation? Are the principles that made him successful in the eyes of both God and man relevant to the believer today? Find out in this exciting book!**

### *Supernatural Power*

**A lot of mysteries surround the spiritual realm, no doubt. But the fact still stands that the “supernatural” is real! Join Bishop Dag Heward-Mills in this exciting trip to the world of the supernatural and discover how to access this realm!**

### *One Hundred Percent Answered Prayer*

**You prayed for something and didn’t get it... Out of the frustration and the disappointment, you quit praying... Familiar isn’t it? The question then is: can one experience one hundred percent results to prayer? Yes, yes, YES! Find out how!**

### *Unbeatable Prosperity*

**The ability to prosper comes from God, and it is His will for the believer to experience unbeatable prosperity! As you read this book, let faith and confidence be stirred up in you, and lead you to possess your possessions!**

### *Strategies for Prayer*

**Knowing what to pray for and how to pray makes prayer enjoyable. In this excellent book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills reveals certain strategies for prayer which will revitalise your prayer life, and give you a sense of direction.**

### *Catch the Anointing*

**This exceptional book by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills will teach you what it means to “catch the anointing” and how you can be anointed for ministry. Learn how to catch the anointing for the work of ministry. This book is a must for every minister.**

### *Lay People and the Ministry*

**Based on his experience of the lay ministry, Dag Heward-Mills shows why the Great Commission cannot be fulfilled without this biblical concept of lay people getting involved in the work. Learn how to combine your secular profession with real and effective ministry.**



### *Solomonic Success*

**Learn about Solomon's success in this enlightening book, the third in the success series by Bishop Dag Heward-Mills.**

### *Secrets of Success*

**All through the Scriptures, God has made it abundantly clear that success is included in His master plan for the believer's life here on earth. But how can one experience biblical and real success? This book gives the answer to that question.**

### *Seven Great Principles*

**At last this popular and powerful teaching is on the printed page! Seven Great Principles will enlighten you about the effect of salvation on the spirit, soul and body of a person. May God grant you the spirit of wisdom and revelation as you read this book!**

### *Leaders and Loyalty*

**Some are born leaders. Some develop into leaders. In this classic book, Bishop Dag Heward-Mills teaches on how this ingredient of loyalty consolidates a leader's performance. Using biblical, historic and literary references, the subject is made even more relevant to every kind of leader.**

### *Transform Your Pastoral Ministry*

**In an era when there are not so many pastoral success stories this is indeed a welcome book. Bishop Dag Heward-Mills, a very successful pastor himself, explains why and how it is possible to make the pastoral ministry effective.**

### *Loyalty and Disloyalty*

**Though a primary requirement of God for leaders, very little has been written on this subject. In this book, Dag Heward-Mills outlines very important principles with the intention of increasing the stability of churches. So relevant and practical is the content of this book that it has become an indispensable tool for many church leaders.**

*Win the Lost At Any Cost*

***I have become all things to all men so that by all means I might save some (1 Corinthians 9:22). These words by the Apostle Paul reflect the heart of a soul winner: to win the lost at any cost! In this thought-provoking book, Dag Heward-Mills seeks to stir up all believers to the urgency of the task of saving the lost, for the end of the age is at hand!***

**For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to:**

*Parchment House*  
**P.O. Box DC 1034**  
**Dansoman**  
**Accra, Ghana**  
**West Africa**

*Website:*  
**[www.daghewardmills.org](http://www.daghewardmills.org)**

*E-mail:*  
**[bishop@lighthousechapel.org](mailto:bishop@lighthousechapel.org)**



# Decide To Become One Of The Few Good Leaders In This World

If you believe that you are called to the ministry, then you are called to leadership. That is why this book is very important for your life. So that you will be a good leader for the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul wrote to Timothy and told him to do certain things to make him a good leader. There are good ministers and bad ministers. Decide to be a good minister!

*...thou shalt be A GOOD MINISTER of Jesus Christ...*  
*1 Timothy 4:6*

If you are going to be effective in the ministry, you must study leadership. Whenever I go into a bookshop, I find myself gravitating towards the leadership section. I have read countless books on leadership. I have studied this all-important subject. I want to be a good leader. Good things do not drop on you like ripe mangoes from a tree. You have to study and discover all that there is to learn.

It is obvious that there are not many good leaders around. If there were, you and I would be able to point them out without much difficulty! I believe that there are many reasons why there are few outstanding leaders, but let us start by looking at why people do not want to be leaders in the first place!

## **FIVE REASONS WHY PEOPLE AVOID LEADERSHIP RESPONSIBILITIES**

### ***1. Many People Do Not Know That They Are Leaders***

They do not know because no one has told them so! They don't even know that they have the ability to lead. Some people think that only a few people are born to lead. I do not believe that few people are born to lead. I believe that many people are born with the ability to lead but they are not prepared to pay the price to become leaders.

*So the last shall be first, and the first last: for MANY BE CALLED, but few chosen.*

*Matthew 20:16*

*For MANY ARE CALLED, but few are chosen.*

*Matthew 22:14*

The Bible teaches us that many are called to service. Anyone who yields himself to the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ becomes an automatic leader. *A minister of the gospel has to demonstrate leadership qualities and abilities all the time.*

If you are called to His service, then you are called to be a leader. You cannot avoid it!

## ***2. People Fear That They Will Be Accused And Hated***

Leaders are often accused of being ambitious. They are often accused of having bad motives. I was very surprised when I heard some people accuse me of being in the ministry for money. But God spoke to me and told me that it is inevitable that I should be accused. Every good leader has many enemies. The nature of good leadership is that it charts out a course and maintains the direction. This means that you may cross over and hurt certain people.

*And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.*

*Luke 14:27*

Many years ago I told a brother that I did not want to be a leader in a certain fellowship. I told him that I was a quiet person and that I enjoyed my privacy. I told him that I did not want to preach or lead. But God had another plan for me and today I am a leader in God's house. Becoming a leader will cost you your valued life. I have very little private life left. Most people know a lot of things about me. I am discussed in people's homes and cars. Like all leaders, I am praised by some and criticized by others. This is the lot of a leader. This is why some people shun leadership. But Jesus said that you should take up the cross and follow Him. Christianity involves sacrifice. It is worth becoming a leader within the church.

## ***3. People Do Not Want To End Up Disgraced And Hated As Many Prominent Leaders Have***

There are many leaders who have ended up in disgrace after taking up the mantle of leadership. Others have experienced terrible hurts and had bitter experiences. Some have been crucified by the people they led.

I have personally watched how leaders have been rewarded with evil after many years of service. I have seen several (and I mean several) churches throw out their pastor after he has led them for many years. I have seen pastors ridiculed and humiliated by members they have ministered to for years and at great expense. I have watched pastors being rejected over issues like cars and houses. How sad! We all know how Jesus was crucified after three and a half years of ministry. That was His reward for being a shining light to His people.

In my country, I have seen several Heads of State come to unnatural deaths after ruling the nation for some years. We have seen judges being murdered in cold blood after delivering judgments they thought were right. Who then would like to be a leader in such an environment? When you study the fate of the leaders around, it is only natural that people shun leadership and choose a quiet life of peace and anonymity. I can understand why somebody would stay away from the world of lying politicians and corrupt leadership.

In this book, I am urging you to take up the mantle of Christian leadership. I am urging you to take up the call to leadership in the church. It is worth it! The challenges are very similar to secular leadership. The accusations are often the same. But it is worth it!

Secular leaders work for human rewards like money and fame. But these are perishable rewards. When you work for Jesus you receive an everlasting reward.

*...Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.*

*1 Corinthians 9:25*

There are many times that I have experienced the pains of being in leadership. But when I think of the rewards that await those who faithfully do the will of God, I become encouraged. I know that one day I will be glad about everything.

*Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.*

*Hebrews 12:3*

#### ***4. People Think That They Are Not Good Enough To Be Leaders***

Some people think they are not morally up to the standard of leadership. Others think that they have no leadership qualities. Others feel that they have too many personal problems to become leaders. They cannot imagine being saddled with other people's problems.

I have good news for you today! *God does not work with perfect people. He works with willing people.* He looks at the heart and He understands your human weakness. If Jesus had looked for perfection, I can assure you that none of the disciples would have qualified for leadership positions in the church. Take



Peter for example; he betrayed the Lord Jesus three times just a few weeks before he was ordained. He swore and cursed as though he had received no training. Yet, the Lord used him. Take the other disciples, who argued over their positions in heaven. “Who would be the greatest?” they asked.

*And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.*

*Luke 22:24*

After arguing over who would be the greatest, they all deserted Christ when He needed them most. Would you trust such people? Would you use such people? Yet the Lord did! You do not have to be perfect to become a leader. If that were the case, then there would be no leaders in the world or in the church. This does not mean that there are no standards. God expects the highest standards of character and morality. And yet, He works with imperfect people.

God looks at the heart. Make sure that your heart is right and God will be able to use you.

*...for the Lord seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.*

*1 Samuel 16:7*

## ***5. Most People Are Too Selfish To Be Leaders***

Such people care only about themselves. They are happy to have salvation. They are happy to have the Holy Spirit. They are happy to have prosperity. They couldn't care less about anybody else. “Once I am okay,” they think, “Everything is okay.” That is a spirit of selfishness.

A selfish person cannot be bothered to go through any training or sacrifice to become a leader. He will not expend any energy to help another soul. If Christ had decided to stay in the comfort of heaven, where would you be today? He rose out of the grave and you cannot even get out of bed. I rebuke that spirit of laziness and selfishness! Thank God for missionaries. Thank God for people who traveled away from their homes into foreign cultures just because they wanted to help somebody.

# 2

## Interact With The Great And Small

A good leader will interact with two main groups of people: the great (humanly speaking) and the small (humanly speaking). The great people are the nobles, the rich, the influential and powerful people of society. There are not many of such people in the church.

*For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called:*

*1 Corinthians 1:26*

The “small” speaks of the poor, the down-and-out, and the people of little material substance.

## **FOUR REASONS WHY IT IS IMPORTANT TO RELATE WITH THE GREAT**

### **1. *Jesus Interacted With Great People***

Jesus interacted with Nicodemus privately. Jesus honoured several invitations to dine with influential and powerful people. These interactions were so important that they were recorded in the Bible.

*There was a man of the Pharisees, named NICODEMUS, A RULER OF THE JEWS: The same came to Jesus by night...*

*John 3:1,2*

*When the even was come, there came A RICH MAN OF ARIMATHAEA, NAMED JOSEPH, who also himself was Jesus' disciple:*

*Matthew 27:57*

### **2. *Great People Have Their Role To Play In The Church***

Some of them will play vital roles for the church such as Joseph of Arimathaea, who helped to bury the body of Jesus. This was an important fulfilment of scripture.

*When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph... And when Joseph had taken the body [of Jesus], he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it IN HIS OWN NEW TOMB, which he had hewn out in the rock:...*

*Matthew 27:57,59,60*

### ***3. Great People Are Used By God To Finance The Gospel***

If you think that everyone will contribute the same amount of money to the work of God, then you are ignorant and inexperienced. God raises up certain people so that the income of some churches is far more than others. This creates a necessary balance so that the work of God can go on among both the poor and the rich.

*As it is written, He that had GATHERED MUCH had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack.*

*2 Corinthians 8:15*

### ***4. The Contribution Of One Influential Person Can Result In The Salvation Of An Entire Nation***

Esther's strategic relationship with the king was the one factor that saved the entire nation of Israel from being wiped out by Haman. Her uncle reminded her that she had been strategically placed for the salvation of an entire nation.

*...who knoweth whether thou art come to the kingdom for such a time as this?*

*Esther 4:14*

A Christian billionaire once told me of how he had used his relationship with the president of a country to obtain permission to hold open-air crusades that had hitherto been banned in that country.

## **THREE REASONS WHY IT IS IMPORTANT TO RELATE WITH THE POOR**

### **1.     *The Principal Calling Of Christ Was To The Poor***

When Jesus spoke of the anointing on His life He was specific about whom His anointing would affect. He specifically said that He had been anointed to preach the gospel to poor people. We are Christ's body and that same anointing is upon us.

*The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath ANOINTED ME TO PREACH THE GOSPEL TO THE POOR; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.*

*Luke 4:18,19*

### **2. *Most People In The World Are Poor, Therefore Our Ministries Must Reach The Poor***

If we are to bear much fruit, a lot of the fruit will be among the poor people.

### **3.     *The Sign Of A Higher Anointing Is That We Are Ministering To The Poor***

Today, most ministers are excited if they are able to visit with the president of a country. They gladly take pictures with presidents and publish them in their monthly magazines. There is nothing wrong with this. However,

when Jesus was asked whether the great messianic ministry had arrived on earth, he replied that *poor people have the gospel preached to them*. It takes a higher anointing to minister to poor people.

*And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another? Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and THE POOR HAVE THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO THEM.*

*Matthew 11:3-5*

### **THREE REASONS WHY IT IS DIFFICULT TO MINISTER TO THE POOR**

#### **1. *The Poor Cannot Pay For The Gospel***

Almost every ministry to poor people must be pre-financed. Books must be paid for, crusades must be paid for, salaries must be paid by others, etc.

#### **2. *The Poor Do Not Understand The Gospel***

Poor people have many problems. Their reasoning is affected by the many problems that surround them. Poor people are often frustrated and desperate. They cannot understand why God will give heaven to us when things are so bad on earth. Can He not first make some changes on earth? How can there be a solution to my problems through Bible study?

### ***3. The Poor Sometimes See You As The Cause Of Their Problems***

In my dealings with poor people I have learnt that many of them actually see their help as the source of their problems. Many poor people are also too proud to receive help.

## **FIVE TYPES OF PEOPLE YOU CANNOT HELP**

### ***1. People Who Do Not Accept The Biblical Solution To Their Problems***

### ***2. People Who Do Not Think That They Have Problems***

### ***3. People Who Feel Too Proud To Receive Help***

### ***4. People Who Think That You Are Their Problem***

### ***5. People Who Think That You Are The Cause Of Their Problems***



# 3

## **Maintain Personal Integrity**

Integrity is wholeness. It means being totally or completely sound. To have personal integrity means you are upright, sincere, loyal and pure. You need personal integrity to be a good leader.

Your integrity is shattered by lies and deception. The reason why very few of us believe in politicians is because their integrity has been greatly compromised by the deceptions of past political leaders.

Are you sound? Are you whole?

# 4

## Give People Hope

Do you wonder why nobody stays in your company or church for very long? Perhaps there is not much hope for the future. Perhaps they cannot see good things in store for them in the future.

### SIX WAYS TO GIVE PEOPLE HOPE

#### 1. *Make Promises And Keep Them*

Every time you break a promise, you erode people's trust in you. It is very difficult to make people trust you. When people do not trust you they will not follow you. The whole of Jesus' ministry was centred around a promise for the future.

*...I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.*

*John 14:2,3*

Jesus' disciples were made to believe that there were good things in store for them in the future. They knew that Jesus would keep His promise so they had hope.

**2. *Preach The Word Of God***

The Word of God is full of hope. Anyone who preaches the Word of God will not minister discouragement, disappointment and disillusionment.

**3. *Speak More About Rewards Than Punishment***

The disciples had hope. They had hope in the glory and the rewards of heaven. This was a great source of motivation to them. You must understand that Jesus' disciples were so highly motivated that they had left their secular jobs for the ministry. They eventually died for their beliefs.

**4. *Show Positive Examples That Inspire Hope***

In your business or church, you must accept the fact that people need to be motivated. The key to having motivated people is "hope for the future". That is why Jesus often spoke of heaven and the rewards that await His faithful servants. If you want to inspire pilots for instance, show them how many pilots have successfully flown for years and eventually retired. That is the sort of example that will give hope. If you want to inspire pastors, show them examples of ministers who have made it in ministry.

## ***5. Avoid Speaking About Examples That Bring About Discouragement And Depression***

If people see how badly others have fared, they will be discouraged. They will say to themselves, “This is how I will end up one day.” If you are an airline pilot, there is no point in discussing all the terrifying air crashes in aviation history.

## ***6. Build Permanent Structures***

People have more hope in permanent things. It is natural to gravitate towards something that is more permanent. Every pastor who puts up a building, inspires hope in his congregation.

# 5

## **Never Use Power Without Wisdom Or Wisdom Without Power!**

A leader is someone who employs wisdom as an essential tool of life. Christian leaders have the task of combining the Spirit of God and the wisdom of God. That is the will of God. Every Christian leader must learn to achieve a balance between the power and the wisdom.

*But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the POWER of God, and the WISDOM of God.*

*1 Corinthians 1:24*

I have highlighted the words ‘Power’ and ‘Wisdom’. That is what I want you to get as you read this book. Christ Jesus is not only power to us. He is *power* and *wisdom*.

When you are able to effectively combine the power and the wisdom of God, you will begin to experience success as a leader. Remember, one without the other is not enough.

If you are a pastor, do not rely solely on spiritual direction; remember that pastors are supposed to use their minds as well. If you use your mind, God will lift you up in ministry.

I once noticed a church that was meeting in somebody's house in an exclusive and quiet residential neighbourhood. Although I was about one hundred metres away, I could hear everything that was being said in the service. The prayer, the worship and the praise were so loud and offensive that no one on the entire street could concentrate as long as they were shouting through their microphones. The pastor was anointed and he had the power of God at work for him. Unfortunately, he had left out wisdom.

Although there were just a few people there, they were using a public address system meant for large halls and hundreds of people. Even Jesus spoke to five thousand people without a microphone. I thought to myself, "Very soon this church will be shut down by the neighbours or the police." I knew that church was soon going to come face to face with a very big enemy it cannot handle. Never use power without wisdom and never use wisdom without power!

# 6

## **Do Not Be A Lifeless Leader. Have A Conviction!**

The Apostle Paul was a man of conviction. He was a man with a strong belief in God and he was ready to die for it. At one point he said openly, “I am ready to die.”

*For I am now ready to be offered...*

*2 Timothy 4:6*

If you really consider yourself a leader, you must have a conviction about something! A leader without a conviction is a lifeless personality. People who have convictions rule the world. Suicide bombers who attack innocent citizens have the conviction that they are doing something right. They also believe that they will go to heaven for that act of brutality. Men of conviction are difficult to contain. You cannot put them in a box. You cannot tie them down. You cannot keep them still. You cannot de-motivate them.

I firmly believe that it is conviction that many lifeless leaders lack. Why do I do the things I do? Because I have a conviction. I believe in heaven and hell. I have a conviction that one day Christ will reward me for all my labour on this earth. I believe that Jesus is the Son of God and that He rose from the dead. I believe that Jesus is the only way to heaven. I do not just give mental assent to these facts. I believe them with all my heart. That is the driving force that made me abandon my medical career.

A leader without a conviction is a lifeless, speech reading and emotionless puppet. Nobody takes any notice of him. Nobody believes his words. Nobody follows him. Do you sometimes wonder why people are not following you? It may be because you are not a man of conviction. A man of conviction is prepared to sacrifice many things for his conviction. When I see people who claim to be called by God, but are not prepared to sacrifice anything for their calling, I wonder if they are really called. A calling is a conviction to work for the Lord.

In the political world, the masses will follow someone who seems to have a conviction. They will follow someone who speaks from his heart. They will follow someone who is prepared to die for his beliefs.

Are you a real leader? Decide to be a man of conviction. “Conviction, of what?”, you may ask? Have conviction about the things God has called you to do. Have a conviction about the things you are supposed to accomplish in your lifetime. Have a conviction about the things that God has told you. Live by these convictions! Be prepared to give up anything so that you can fulfil your conviction.



# 7

## Wait For Your Season

*And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water; that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.*

*Psalm 1:3*

All of God's blessings have their season. Church growth has a season. Promotion has a season. Personal prosperity has a season.

A leader knows that the blessings he desires will not come overnight. He is prepared to stay at it until the breakthrough and promotion arrive. If you cannot wait for your God-given promotion, you are not a leader. I have had to wait many years for many things.

If you cannot wait for the mangoes on your tree to be ripe, you are never going to enjoy them. You will always pluck them off before they arrive. Mind you, unripe mangoes are very different from ripe ones.

I know of a pastor who bought a very expensive car. For several months, he had to use the entire income of the church to pay off the debt. This caused ripples in the church. Funds were raised in a desperate attempt to pay for this expensive car. In the end a blessing turned into a controversy.

*To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.*

*Ecclesiastes 3:1,11*

In His time, God makes all things beautiful. Are you a leader? Then never forget that a leader is someone who is prepared to wait for his season.

# 8

## Use The Secret Of Concentration

*...but this ONE THING I DO...*

*Philippians 3:13*

### **SIXTEEN THINGS EVERY LEADER SHOULD KNOW ABOUT CONCENTRATION**

- 1. Every Great Human Achievement Is The Result Of  
Concentration*
- 2. Every Great Military Battle Is Won By Bringing All  
Forces To Concentrate On A Single Objective*

***3. Every Great Ministry Accomplishes Things For God By Concentrating On A Single Vision***

When I was in university, I had the opportunity to join several Christian groups. I decided to stay with a particular ministry. I realized that I could not divide my time amongst the many Christian ministries on campus. Because I concentrated on one thing I was able to establish a ministry which is still there today.

***4. Concentration Makes People Work Faster***

***5. The Faster You Work The More Energy And Interest You Will Have***

***6. The Slower You Work The More Tired And Uninterested You Become***

***7. The More Suspensions And Delays To Projects, The More Discouraged Everyone Becomes***

Hope deferred maketh the heart sick.

*Hope deferred maketh the heart sick: but when the desire cometh, it is a tree of life.*

*Proverbs 13:12*

***8. Concentration Depends Solely On The Ability To Distinguish Between The Relevant And The Irrelevant***

Anyone who cannot decide on what is important will never use the power of concentration. Do not be deceived by the

pressure of urgent calls, requests, invitations, emergencies and crises. Urgent things are not usually important in the total picture, and important things are seldom urgent.

***9. The Greatest Thief Of Concentration Is The Telephone***

When I start praying, I switch off all phones. This helps me to concentrate on the Lord.

***10. Another Thief Of Concentration Is Useless Socializing  
And The Television***

***11. Inject Urgency Into All Your Projects***

This will make people concentrate on the task.

***12. Concentration Keeps Everyone From Backbiting, Envy,  
Jealousy And Strife***

***13. Few People Can Juggle With Many Projects At The  
Same Time***

Finish one thing at a time.

***14. Unfinished Projects Break Concentration***

The last uncompleted aspects of projects are often the cause of a future loss of concentration. They distract you and pull you into the past. People who concentrate on their God given tasks are usually accused of being unsociable, proud, unfriendly, unpatriotic and inward looking. But wisdom is justified of her children.

***15. In The Name Of Good Works And Being Socially  
Acceptable, The Church Has Divided Its Attention Into  
Four Main Areas: Health, Education, Relief Services  
And Christian Teaching***

It is no wonder that other religions are growing at a very fast rate. If only the Church were to once again concentrate on her God-given goal!

***16. Concentration Makes Everything Grow***

# 9

## Help The People Around You To Accomplish Great Things With Their Lives

*And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils: And Simon he surnamed Peter; And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder: And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canannite, And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house.*

*Mark 3:13-19*

Notice this list of men who were going nowhere until they met Jesus. Jesus led these people to accomplish great feats. He led them until they were anointed and became preachers.

Through the influence of Jesus, they laid the foundations of the Christian Church with their very lives. Most of them died in the process of laying the foundation of the Church. The leadership of Jesus had turned non-entities into great achievers.

If God has called you to lead, do not see it as just YOU accomplishing great things. See it as you helping others to accomplish great things for God and for themselves. That is a true leader's heart. Leadership stems from the heart. The Bible teaches us that the heart is the footing for all the things that men do.

*Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.*

*Proverbs 4:23*

No one can really train you to be a leader. It comes from your heart! It comes by having the right heart! When you have the right heart, you do the right things. Until you have the heart of a leader, you will not be a true leader. *If you are the head of a church or organization and you try to suppress the achievements of others, I assure you that you do not have a true leader's heart.* Jesus wanted His disciples to do greater things than He himself had done (John 14:12).

I often pray for the junior pastors around me that they would achieve great things for God. I keep encouraging them and praying for them that they would rise up mightily in ministry. I see some people with gifts that I do not have. I want my interaction with these people to help them accomplish great things for God. Every leader should have goals for the people around him. If you do not have these goals I seriously doubt if you are a leader.



## FOUR GOALS A LEADER SHOULD HAVE FOR HIS FOLLOWERS

### 1. *Aim For Them To Do Well Spiritually*

Your desire should be for the people you lead to prosper spiritually.

*I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.*

*3 John 4*

### 2. *Aim For Your Followers To Do Well Financially*

I have a strong desire for the people who follow me to do well financially. It is my vision that everyone who works in my organization should have his own house, more cars than they need and enough money. This vision is steadily coming to pass. A leader is someone who thinks about others. If you just think about yourself, you are not a leader. Jesus thought about the financial state of His followers. He wanted them to have houses, lands and enough money. Many people don't know that Jesus actually promised that His followers would have these things.

*And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold NOW IN THIS TIME, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and LANDS, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.*

*Mark 10:29,30*

### ***3. Aim For Your Followers To Be Physically, Socially And Maritally Healthy***

*Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.*

*3 John 2*

*And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.*

*John 16:23,24*

Why did Jesus want the joy of His followers to be full? Because a good leader wants his followers to be happy in every aspect of their lives.

### ***4. Aim For Your Followers To Fulfil Their Ministry***

My greatest passion is to see the ones I have raised up fulfilling their ministries. Every father wants his sons and daughters to fulfil their ministry. If you are a leader, your vision and passion is not for yourself but for the ones you lead.

*But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, MAKE FULL PROOF OF THY MINISTRY.*

*2 Timothy 4:5*

# 10

## Make People Obey You Gladly

*So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.*

*John 21:15*

Jesus was able to make people follow His instructions. He told Peter to feed the flock of God and that is exactly what he did. If you call yourself a leader, ask yourself, “Do people carry out my instructions?” Why are some people obeyed and some others ignored? Develop the art of making people obey your instructions. There are several things you can do.

### NINE WAYS TO MAKE PEOPLE OBEY YOU GLADLY

#### **1. Do Not Give Unreasonable Instructions**

People rebel against wicked and unreasonable men.

## ***2. Teach Your Followers Why Certain Things Have To Be Done***

Make people see that your instructions are for their own good. When people understand why they are doing something, they often do it better! That is why for example I preach on “Fifty Reasons Why Christians Should Be Soul Winners.” I want people to understand the last instruction of Jesus.

## ***3. Explain Instructions In Detail So That Everyone Understands The Instructions***

Sometimes people do not obey simply because they did not understand what you said.

## ***4. Show People That You Are Not Partial Or Partisan***

## ***5. Let The People See That You Obey Instructions Yourself***

Many rebellious people do not realize that they are teaching their followers to be rebellious by their very actions. The Centurion who sent for Jesus illustrated this principle beautifully.

*For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.*

*Luke 7:8*

This man was enumerating the instructions which he had given and which were being obeyed. But he was careful to let us know that *he himself was under authority*. In other words, he himself was obeying instructions. The army officer often has to lead people to their deaths. How does he make young men

sacrifice their lives on the frightening fields of war? By leading the charge himself when he's told to do so. If you cannot make people gladly do things they naturally do not like doing, then you are not a leader. Develop this art of making people obey you gladly and people will always wonder about the team who work with you and who love to sacrifice and to serve.

#### **6. *Get Rid Of Complaining And Murmuring Individuals***

Such people poison the atmosphere and make everyone feel that they are into a bad thing. It is very important to maintain a cheerful spirit in the workplace. Systematically eradicate complainers and murmurers from your system.

#### **7. *Correct Wrong Attitudes Even When They Are Not Fully Developed Into Full-blown Disobedience Or Rebellion***

#### **8. *Punish People Who Disobey***

Your organization cannot be established unless people believe that judgement will fall when the wrong thing is done. Punishment is a good thing because it establishes the land. Many disorganized offices are the way they are because no one is ever dismissed. Warnings are issued but no one ever dares to carry out the threat. Let everyone see that when you break the rules, the rules will break you! When you are fair, people will believe in the laws and obey you gladly. If they feel that one rule applies to some people and another rule to other special people, they will rebel against your instructions.

*The king by judgment establisheth the land: but he that receiveth gifts overthroweth it.*

*Proverbs 29:4*

Even Jesus expected His reward.

*For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.*

*Hebrews 12:3*

Jesus was motivated by the thought of His reward. Rewards are some of the highest forms of motivation in existence. Why do you think an athlete runs around for hours everyday? Why do you think boxers subject themselves to severe, dangerous and life threatening knocks on the head? It is because of the joy of a million dollars or more that will come after the knocking is over. The joy that is set before people will make them do almost anything. Rewards can make people do almost anything! People who have died for the cause of Christ, died willingly, thinking of the reward that lay ahead.

When Jesus spoke to Peter he told him about His death. He predicted that Peter would die in a way that he might not like.

*Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldst: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldst not. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.*

*John 21:18,19*

He told Peter to follow Him even to that end. Peter was willing and obedient. Perhaps, the key that made Peter willing to die was the fact that Jesus Himself had set the example. Jesus had shown that there was a great reward in following. You see, leadership is all about setting examples. When a leader leads

the way personally his words become more powerful. Do you want your words to be respected? Do you want to be such a powerful leader that people would be prepared to die for your cause? I believe you do! It's time to set the example and lead the way.

Master John Hooper, Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester, was a student and graduate of Oxford University. He found the Lord and was stirred with a strong desire and love for the scriptures. In 1555, Master Hooper was urged to return to the unity of the Catholic Church and to acknowledge the Pope's holiness to be head of the Church. He was promised that he would receive the Pope's blessing and the Queen's mercy if he would condescend to the Pope's holiness.

Mr. Hooper answered that the Pope taught doctrine contrary to the doctrine of Christ. And that he was not worthy to be the head of the Church. Wherefore he would in no wise condescend to any such jurisdiction. Mr. Hooper made it clear that he did not consider the Catholic Church of which the Pope was the head, to be the real Church.

He explained that the Church only followed the voice of Christ and run away from strangers. However, he said if he had said anything to offend the Queen he would ask for mercy. But he added, "Mercy must be had with safety of conscience and without the displeasure of God."

An old friend, Anthony Kingston, spoke to him.

**Kingston:** *'But I am sorry to see you in this case; for as I understand you be come hither to die. But, alas, consider that life is sweet, and death is bitter. Therefore, seeing life may be had, desire to live; for life hereafter may do good.'*

**Hooper:** *'Indeed it is true, Master Kingston, I am come hither to end this life, and to suffer death here, because I will not gainsay the former truth that I have heretofore taught amongst*

*you in this diocese, and elsewhere; and I thank you for your friendly counsel, although it be not so friendly as I could have wished it. True it is, Master Kingston, that death is bitter, and life is sweet: but, alas, consider that the death to come is more bitter, and the life to come is more sweet. Therefore, for the desire and love I have to the one, and the terror and fear of the other; I do not so much regard this death, nor esteem this life, but have settled myself, through the strength of God's holy Spirit, patiently to pass through the torments and extremities of the fire now prepared for me, rather than to deny the truth of His Word; desiring you, and others, in the meantime, to commend me to God's mercy in your prayers.'*

**Kingston:** *'Well, my lord, then I perceive there is no remedy, and therefore I will take my leave of you: and I thank God that ever I knew you; for God did appoint you to call me, being a lost child.'*

**Hooper:** *I do highly praise God for it: and I pray God you may continually live in His fear.'*<sup>1</sup>

His final speech to the mayor was even more revealing about his willingness to obey God and to stand for the truth.

*'Master mayor, I give most hearty thanks to you, and to the rest of your brethren, that you have vouchsafed to take me, a prisoner and a condemned man, by the hand; whereby to my rejoicing it is some deal apparent that your old love and friendship towards me is not altogether extinguished; and I trust also that all the things I have taught you in times past are not utterly forgotten, when I was here, by the godly King that dead is, appointed to be your bishop and pastor. For the which most true and sincere doctrine, because I will not now account it falsehood and heresy, as many other men do, I am sent hither (as I am sure you know) by the Queen's commandment to die; and am come where I taught it, to confirm it with my blood.'*



*And now, master sheriffs, I understand by these good men, and my very friends' (meaning the guard), 'at whose hands I have found so much favour and gentleness, by the way hitherward, as a prisoner could reasonably require (for the which also I most heartily thank them), that I am committed to your custody, as unto them that must see me brought to-morrow to the place of execution. My request therefore to you shall be only, that there may be a quick fire, shortly to make an end; and in the meantime I will be as obedient unto you, as yourselves would wish. If you think I do amiss in any thing, hold up your finger, and I have done: for I am not come hither as one enforced or compelled to die (for it is well known, I might have had my life with worldly gain); but as one willing to offer and give my life for the truth, rather than consent to the wicked papistical religion of the Bishop of Rome, received and set forth by the magistrates in England, to God's high displeasure and dishonour; and I trust, by God's grace, to-morrow to die a faithful servant of God, and a true obedient subject to the Queen.'*<sup>2</sup>

The description of his death in the fire, which lasted about an hour, is revealing.

*When he came to the place appointed where he should die, smilingly he beheld the stake and preparation made for him, which was near unto the great elm-tree, over against the college of priests, where he was wont to preach. The place round about the houses, and the boughs of the tree, were replenished with people; and in the chamber over the college-gate stood the wolvisch blood-suckers and turnelings, the priests of the college. Then kneeled he down, forasmuch as he could not be suffered to speak unto the people. After he was somewhat entered into his prayer, a box was brought and laid before him upon a stool, with his pardon (or at least-wise it was feigned to be his pardon)*

*from the Queen, if he would turn. At the sight whereof he cried, 'If you love my soul, away with it! if you love my soul, away with it!'*

*Prayer being done, he prepared himself to the stake, and put off his host's gown, and delivered it to the sheriffs, requiring them to see it restored unto the owner; and put off the rest of his gear, unto his doublet and hose, wherein he would have burned. But the sheriffs would not permit that, such was their greediness; unto whose pleasures, good man, he very obediently submitted himself; and his doublet, hose, and petticoat were taken off. Then, being in his shirt, he took a point from his hose himself, and trussed his shirt between his legs, where had a pound of gunpowder in a bladder, and under each arm the like quantity, delivered him by the guard.*

*So desiring the people to say the Lord's prayer with him, and to pray for him (who performed it with tears, during the time of his pains), he went up to the stake. The hoop of iron prepared for his middle was brought, but when they offered to have bound his neck and legs with the other two hoops of iron, he utterly refused them.*

*Thus being ready, he looked upon all the people, of whom he might be well seen (for he was both tall, and stood also on a high stool), and in every corner there was nothing to be seen but weeping and sorrowful people. Then, lifting up his eyes and hands unto heaven, he prayed to himself. By and by, he that was appointed to make the fire, came to him, and did ask him forgiveness. Of whom he asked why he should forgive him, saying, that he knew never any offence he had committed against him. 'O sir!' said the man, 'I am appointed to make the fire.' 'Therein,' said Master Hooper, 'thou dost nothing offend me; God forgive thee thy sins, and do thine office, I pray thee.'*

*Then the needs were cast up, and he received two bundles of*

*them in his own hands, embraced them, kissed them, and put under either arm one of them, and showed with his hand how the rest should be bestowed, and pointed to the place where any did lack.*

*Anon commandment was given that the fire should be set to. But because there were put to no fewer green faggots than two horses could carry upon their backs, it kindled not by and by, and was a pretty while also before it took the reeds upon the faggots. At length it burned about him, but the wind having full strength in that place (it was a lowering and cold morning), it blew the flame from him, so that he was in a manner nothing but touched by the fire.*

*Within a space after, a few dry faggots were brought, and a new fire kindled with faggots (for there were no more reeds), and that burned at the nether parts, but had small power above, because of the wind, saving that it did burn his hair, and swell his skin a little. In the time of which fire even as at the first flame, he prayed, saying mildly and not very loud (but as one without pains), ‘O Jesus, the Son of David, have mercy upon me, and receive my soul!’ After the second was spent, he did wipe both his eyes with his hands, and beholding the people, he said with an indifferent loud voice, ‘For God’s love, good people, let me have more fire!’ And all this while his nether parts did burn: for the faggots were so few, that the flame did not burn strongly at his upper parts.*

*The third fire was kindled within a while after, which was more extreme than the other two: and then the bladders of gunpowder brake, which did him small good, they were so placed, and the wind had such power. In the which fire he prayed with somewhat a loud voice, ‘Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me: Lord Jesus receive my spirit.’ And these were the last words he*

*was heard to utter. But when he was black in the mouth, and his tongue swollen, that he could not speak, yet his lips went till they were shrunk to the gums: and he knocked his breast with his hands, until one of his arms fell off and then knocked still with the other, what time the fat, water, and blood, dropped out at his fingers' ends, until by renewing of the fire his strength was gone, and his hand did cleave fast, in knocking, to the iron upon his breast. So immediately, bowing forwards, he yielded up his spirit.*

*Thus was he three quarters of an hour or more in the fire. Even as a lamb, patiently he abode the extremity thereof, neither moving forwards, backwards, nor to any side: but he died as quietly as a child in his bed. And he now reigneth, I doubt not, as a blessed martyr in the joys of heaven, prepared for the faithful in Christ before the foundations of the world; for whose constancy all Christians are bound to praise God.<sup>3</sup>*

<sup>1</sup>Excerpts from *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* by John Foxe (Excerpts taken from page 206).

<sup>2</sup>*Ibid.*, pp. 207-220.

<sup>3</sup>*Ibid.*, pp. 210-213.

# 11

## Contemplate, Reflect, Be Thoughtful And Consider The Things You See Around You

*SO I RETURNED, AND CONSIDERED all the oppressions that are done under the sun: and behold the tears of such as were oppressed, and they had no comforter; and on the side of their oppressors there was power; but they had no comforter. Wherefore I praised the dead which are already dead more than the living which are yet alive. Yea, better is he than both they, which hath not yet been, who hath not seen the evil work that is done under the sun. AGAIN, I CONSIDERED ALL travail, and every right work, that for this a man is envied of his neighbour. This is also vanity and vexation of spirit. The fool foldeth his hands together, and eateth his own flesh. Better is an handful with quietness, than both the hands full with travail and vexation of spirit. THEN I RETURNED, AND I SAW VANITY under the sun. There is one alone, and there is not a second; yea, he hath neither child nor brother: yet is there no end of all his labour;*

*neither is his eye satisfied with riches; neither saith he, For whom do I labour, and bereave my soul of good? This is also vanity, yea, it is a sore travail.*

*Ecclesiastes 4:1-8*

*WHEN I APPLIED MINE HEART TO KNOW WISDOM, and to see the business that is done upon the earth: (for also there is that neither day nor night seeth sleep with his eyes:) THEN I BEHELD ALL THE WORK OF GOD, that a man cannot find out the work that is done under the sun: because though a man labour to seek it out, yet he shall not find it; yea further; though a wise man think to know it, yet shall he not be able to find it.*

*Ecclesiastes 8:16,17*

*FOR ALL THIS I CONSIDERED IN MY HEART even to declare all this, that the righteous, and the wise, and their works, are in the hand of God: no man knoweth either love or hatred by all that is before them.*

*Ecclesiastes 9:1*

King Solomon, a political leader of his day, wrote these scriptures. You will notice the phrase “*and I considered*”. You will also notice the phrase “*I applied my heart to wisdom*”. Do you consider yourself to be a real leader? It is time to start turning things over in your mind. Be a deep thinker.

Consider the happenings around you. As you consider, you will receive wisdom. That wisdom will help you to be a better leader. Consider why some people are successful. Analyse why some people fail.

Think about what makes others victorious. A true leader is a deep thinker. I reflected on why certain people became disloyal. That is what gave rise to my book on *Loyalty and Disloyalty*. As I ponder over many issues, I receive revelation that becomes the basis for my teachings.

### **The Brain Seller**

I remember the story of a man who went into a store to buy some brains. There were four different brains on sale. The salesperson was on hand to help the customer.

The customer asked, “I would like to buy the best brains you have.”

The salesperson showed the customer what he had in store.

He said, “These are the brains from a nation that invented airplanes, rockets, and satellites.”

He continued, “These next ones are from a nation that invented televisions, videos, telephones, radios and stereo systems.”

He went on, “This third set of brains comes from a nation that has developed beautiful cities, roads, bridges, trains, airports, tunnels, etc.”

He then showed the fourth set of brains. He continued, “This last set of brains are from a nation which has invented nothing and built nothing for itself. This nation even has foreigners coming from outside to build roads and toilets.

“I see,” he said, “How much are they anyway?”

The salesman replied, “The first three brains are affordable, but the fourth set of brains is very expensive.”

“Why is that? Why should they be so expensive when they have not been used to accomplish anything?”

“Oh, that is simple,” the salesman replied, “Those brains are fresh, unused and full of potential. Because they have not been used for anything, all the potential is still within.”

This unfortunate story tells us how important it is to use the brains God has given us. No matter how spiritual you are, God still expects us to use our brains. A great leader is someone who contemplates, reflects, ponders and deliberates over issues. Thinking is not a non-spiritual activity. It is a God given privilege to have the large brains we have. Did you know that human beings have the largest and most developed brains of all creation? Think about the size of a bird's head. How small their brains must be. Are you not glad that God has given you something bigger? Every great leader uses this gift – his brains!



# 12

## Strive For Excellence

Excellence is the attainment of the highest level of quality and perfection. Being excellent means becoming a person of distinction. A true leader is someone who wants to distinguish himself in his field. The blessings of the Lord are to make you the head and not the tail.

*And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them:*

*Deuteronomy 28:13*

God had plans for His people to attain the highest levels of excellence. That is why He said you would be above only. Excellence is not an accident. It is something you must strive for. If you want to work for eight hours a day, you are not likely to achieve distinction in this life. *People who distinguish themselves in this life often work for more than sixty hours a*

*week.* Excellence demands hard work. Excellence in ministry, government or business does not come by osmosis. It comes by diligence.

To become excellent you must emulate excellent people. *Life is too short to discover everything yourself. Life is too short not to learn from your fathers and seniors.* Excellence in the practice of medicine has been achieved by constantly building upon what our predecessors have learnt. That is why today, we are able to transplant hearts. If the heart surgeon used his time to discover which direction the blood flowed, he would be taking us back to the eighteenth century.

Be humble and depend upon the discoveries of others. God does not want you to be mediocre. Insist on the highest standards. You can be an excellent businessman. You can have a high yielding factory. Your church can be the best in the city. Decide today for excellence. Read the books that excellent people have written. Listen to the tapes. Excellence is yours for the taking!

# **LEADERS AND LOYALTY**

**The Laws of Loyalty**

Dag Heward-Mills



Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken  
from the KING JAMES VERSION of the bible

Excerpts from *The Final Quest* by Rick Joyner  
(Excerpts taken from Part 1- "*The Hordes of Hell are March-  
ing*", Pages 16-19)  
Originally published: 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed. © 1996

*Used by permission of MorningStar Publications & Minis-  
tries, P.O.Box 19409, Charlotte, NC 28219-9409, Order  
Department: 1-800-542-0278; Fax: 1-704-522-7212*

Parchment House

ISBN 9988-596-16-2

Copyright © 2000 Parchment House

1<sup>ST</sup> Printing 2000

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

## ***DEDICATION***

*I dedicate this book to Rev. Robert Dodoo.  
Thank you for being my brother and my best man.*

# LEADERS AND LOYALTY

## CONTENTS

<i>If Only You Knew...</i>	9
<i>10 Laws of Loyalty</i>	18
<i>5 Statutes of Loyalty</i>	41
<i>The Rewards of Loyalty</i>	47
<i>Adventures in Ghana</i>	69
<i>Adventures in Nigeria</i>	57
<i>3 Common Causes of Disloyalty</i>	64
<i>The Timing of Disloyalty</i>	73
<i>The Adventures of Julius Caesar</i>	79



<i>The Adventures of Macbeth</i>	81
<i>The Three Tests of Loyalty</i>	86
<i>6 Manifestations of Disloyalty</i>	91
<i>Three Principles of Loyalty</i>	95
<i>The Loyalty of Christ</i>	101
<i>The Loyalty of the Father</i>	110
<i>Seven Methods for Dealing with Disloyalty</i>	117
<i>Three Basic Facts about Loyalty</i>	123

# **CHAPTER ONE**

## ***IF ONLY YOU KNEW...***

How do you fight an enemy you cannot see? How much more difficult it is to fight an enemy who can see you when you are not even aware of them?

I have heard it said that we will judge angels one day.

**Know ye not that we shall judge angels?...**  
**I Corinthians 6:3**

In other words, we will be higher than angels one day. I have often wondered why this should be the case. Are we not so corrupt and inferior to these pure spiritual beings? However, I have realized in recent times that Christians are accomplishing great feats in spite of the fact that we do not see the realm of the Spirit. Even the angels admire and respect us for our accomplishments. We only have the Word of God to tell us what is going on out there! **We fight and defeat an enemy who can see us but whom we cannot see! That is an achievement!**

When you see an athlete jumping or running some distance in exceptional time, you admire him and give him a medal because you know how difficult it is to do that. The hosts of heaven are watching us operating in the dark without any vision at all. They see us defeat the enemy time and time again. They cheer us on as they watch us whip an enemy whose main strength is 'being invisible'.

If some Christians could see the hordes of demons that surround them, they would probably act differently. Some Christians believe the Word, obey God and defeat the enemy repeatedly. They whip an enemy they cannot even see. How humiliating this must be for the devil!

Other Christians are simply unaware of the devil and his ways. Some ministers are simply unaware of the tricks of the devil. Others think the devil is working in a way that he is not. For instance, there are people who think that Satan lives in Africa. They say this because they do not understand the strategies or schemes of Satan. They feel that the wars, poverty and backwardness are a sure sign of the presence of the devil. They do not understand that Satan's principal strategy is to deceive the world and lead them unknowingly into hell.

This is why I believe that Satan does not live in Africa but in Europe. Most Africans believe in God. Today, in Europe, it is the Africans who fill the churches.

Satan has his seat (his place of greatest victory and relaxation) in Europe. It is in Europe that deception is strongest. Most indigenous Europeans do not believe in God, Christ or even in the existence of the devil. How comforting that must be for Satan! Europe is a place where he can call home. Your

home is where you lay down to rest. Your home is where you sit down to relax and feel safe. Do you think that Satan feels safe in Africa when meetings are organized to bind him in almost every neighbourhood? Do you think the devil can relax when people are so aware that he is around? When songs are composed and chanted against you by thousands of people, you will not feel happy. Satan feels threatened in Africa.

Look at a typical song,

*In the Word of God, there is power!  
In the Name of Jesus, every knee shall bow!*

The Bible calls Satan the “father of lies” and that “old serpent which deceiveth the whole world” (John 8:44; Revelations 12:9).

As you know, the devil is not omnipresent. He is in one place at a time. In Bible times, John identified the home and seat of the devil. He wrote a letter which revealed that Satan’s home was a city called Pergamos.

**And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even WHERE SATAN’S SEAT IS: And thou holdest fast my name and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, WHERE SATAN DWELLETH.**

**Revelations 2:12,13**

As you can see, this scripture tells us that Satan both lived and sat (was at ease) in Pergamos. I believe that Satan’s seat

today is in Europe. I do not believe Satan is happy or at ease in Africa. There are too many all-night prayer meetings all over Africa. There are too many open-air crusades going on there. There are too many groups worshipping and singing about the blood of Jesus for Satan to sit at ease there.

One day, I was playing golf in Ghana when I heard people praying and shouting just outside the course. I said to my partner, "Satan cannot live in Africa! Which golf course in Europe has a group of prayer warriors shouting and praying from the bottom of their hearts on a Monday morning?"

One night I was coming home from a meeting and I put on the car radio. It was midnight and there were two young men praying on the air. They were having an all-night prayer meeting in the studio. They spoke mostly in tongues and shouted their prayers to God from the bottom of their hearts. One groaned like a bear whilst the other roared like a lion throughout the night. I thought to myself, "The prince of the power of the air will not like this at all." I said to my wife, "Satan can never live in Ghana!" I knew that a programme like this could never be aired in Europe.

Africa's problem is leadership. Africa is plagued with bad leaders. Having bad leaders is not the same as having Satan dwelling with you. Many countries in Africa have been led by people who have stolen the wealth of their nations. Many African heads of state have more personal wealth than the countries that they lead. In some ways, this has helped Africa spiritually. The poverty has made Africans humble and the humility has opened them up to the Gospel and to salvation.

When there are wicked oppressive leaders who murder

their opponents and destroy anything and anyone who opposes them, the result is backwardness and poverty. Many of the wealthy and intelligent sons of Africa are living under European or American leadership. They hate the typical oppressive leadership found in Africa and they keep their wealth in Europe and America. This is what makes Africa poor!

People prefer to live in an environment of freedom and justice. Unfortunately, the environment that has freedom and prosperity is the environment that is spiritually bankrupt! It looks like you can't have your cake and eat it. I call Europe the modern day Pergamos. I teach European Christians how to have victory in "Pergamos".

I said all of this to show that some people cannot see through Satan's tricks. When Satan is working, they don't seem to recognize it. When the country is rich, developed and beautiful they think that the devil cannot be at work.

A minister must be able to discern what Satan is doing. If you are going to succeed in ministry, you must know a lot about your enemy.

The Word of God warns ministers to be careful of the wiles of the devil.

**Put on the whole armour of God that ye may be able to stand against the WILES of the devil.**

**Ephesians 6:11**

The word "wiles" comes from the Greek word *methodeias*. It speaks of the different means, plans and schemes that are used by the devil. A wile is a scheme, and a scheme is a systematic

plan, an artful or deceitful plot. Satan has artful and deceitful schemes to entrap the church. His main aim is to enslave, entrap, deceive and finally ruin the ministers and the church with these schemes. A scheme is not a single action! It is a set of progressive deeds and acts that lead to a calculated outcome.

Many years ago, I stood by the gate of my home with a man who had been a father to me in the ministry. I told him about some problems I had been having in the ministry. I described to him how a young man I had trained and worked with had become treacherous. He said something that I will never forget. Mind you, he spoke out of years of experience in the ministry.

FOV

11/00

He said, “It is amazing how the same strategy works over and over again.”

“What do you mean?” I asked.

He continued, “I have noticed the devil using the same deception on ministers everywhere. It is amazing how it works *every time*.”

He concluded, “We don’t seem to recognise how the *same trick* is used on everyone. We just fall for the same thing over and over again.”

That conversation stayed with me and I thought to myself, “I don’t want to fall for a trick which has been used time and time again.”

If you make the mistake of thinking that your enemy is where he is not, you will be destroyed. It is precisely because many Christians cannot see Satan working through the spirit of

disloyalty, treachery and unfaithfulness that they yield to him. If your enemy is by your side and you cannot even see him, you are but a dead man!

More churches are destroyed by the work of disloyalty and its ramifications than by anything else I know! I found that out first hand in the first year of my ministry. My fledgling ministry experienced a satanic attack through conspiracy, accusations, faultfinding, slander and breakaways. I have never seen as much confusion as I saw in those days.

**Very early in the ministry, I came to the conclusion that disloyalty and its associated evils are the most destructive weapons in the devil's armoury.**

Most Christians feel that the devil's best weapon is to work through occultism, witchcraft and voodoo. I agree that these things are weapons in the devil's arsenal.

But what people must realize is that the strongest campaign of Satan is in the area of deception. If Satan can deceive you, he will destroy you! Satan makes many people believe that they are fighting a man of God in the name of justice and truth. However, they soon discover with great pain, that they are doing nothing but kicking their feet against nails and thorns.

This is what Paul discovered when he fought against the church and supervised the elimination of one of its leaders, Stephen. Saul was a man with a good conscience. He earnestly thought that he was eliminating troublemakers from the peaceful city of Jerusalem. In his fight for righteousness, he sought to wipe out elements that he thought were harmful to society. There are many people who think they are on a holy war to expose



false preachers and ministries. **Like Saul, they think they have a divine mandate to let everyone know the truth about the hypocrites in the pulpits.** The Apostle Paul was so surprised to find out that he was actually fighting against Christ.

**And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, Why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: *It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.* And he TREMBLING AND ASTONISHED said, Lord, What will thou have me to do?...**

**Acts 9:3-6**

Paul was astonished when he discovered what he was really doing! When people do not know what they are doing, they often do the wrong thing. Paul claimed later on that he had received mercy from God because he did not know what he was doing.

**...Who was before a blasphemers, and a persecuter, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because I DID IT IGNORANTLY IN UNBELIEF.**

**1 Timothy 1:13**

My little experience in the ministry shows me that the inability to be faithful, loyal, stable, consistent and constant is the greatest killer of ministries. It is the greatest killer of businesses. The feeling that there is a shorter, quicker and easier way is in all men. Satan capitalizes on that tendency.

Many Christians are tricked into following rebels and

dissident visionaries. Many people do these things out of ignorance. The devil uses the example of tyrannical church leaders to create the culture of rebellion and disloyalty in the church. Without knowing it, many church leaders are essentially rebellious and disloyal. They teach their followers rebellion by the things they say and do. They do not understand why anyone is unfaithful or disloyal to them. You see, deception is such a strong thing. When you are deceived you think that black is white and white is black.

I was really intrigued by the revelation which the Lord gave to Rick Joyner in his book *The Final Quest*. I have recommended this book to thousands of people since I discovered it. I found the very first pages of this book particularly revealing. He described a vision of a large demonic army marching against the church. The main aim of this demonic army was to cause division on every possible level of relationship: churches with other churches, congregations with their pastors and even husbands with their wives.

Another notable aspect of the revelation was the *weapons* that this demonic army was carrying. I noted in particular that the spears they were carrying were called 'treachery'. Do you know that treachery is actually the highest form of disloyalty? It is interesting to me that only one spear was named and that spear was treachery! Dear friend, I believe that Satan's principal spear against the church is this weapon of disloyalty and treachery.

As I mused over this, I realized that many churches which had suffered major setbacks, had suffered these things because of treachery. I thought about several great men of God I had grown to respect and considered how their ministries had be-

come stunted. Disloyalty had played a major role in this regrettable turn of events.

There were four arrows mentioned in the vision: *accusation, gossip, slander and faultfinding*. On the surface, these four weapons do not sound very effective. *They do not even sound like weapons the devil would use*. However, after being in the ministry for some years I have concluded that the most potent weapons of the devil are these very things. At first glance, most inexperienced people would dismiss these as minor problems.

I am sure that many people have considered these listed arrows as trivial things that every minister can easily handle. The devil knows that accusations weaken, confuse and paralyse the accused person. No matter how innocent the accused person is, once he is accused he is drawn into a state of confusion. He asks himself, “Why would anybody think of such a thing?” Accusations are so powerful that, after a while, even innocent people begin to agree with the accusations. Accusations paralyse the accused person. Once paralysed, they are left in a state of inactivity. As the accusations spread, the accused person does not even have the confidence to move in the circles where the venom has been spread.

Slander, gossip and faultfinding are all forms of accusation. These things weaken, paralyse and confuse the church. This confusion is within and without the church. The accused person is confused and the hearers are confused. Many people never overcome this confusion. Some can never receive and some cannot continue in ministry. This is such a powerful weapon of the enemy! It is no wonder the Bible tells us that strength comes to the church when the accuser is dealt with. As long as you hear the voice of the accuser, you will be weakened

somewhat.

**And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation and STRENGTH... for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.**

**Revelations 12:10**

Have you ever wondered why relentless accusations are hurled at men of God? I remember a pastor who did a great pioneering work in a large city. Through him, many people were saved and many other ministers were trained. He was slandered and accused until he eventually left the city. His faults were magnified until there was nothing good said about him anymore. Eventually, he left the city and put aside the ministry. Satan's modus operandi is quite simple – accuse them until they have no confidence in themselves! Accuse them until no one in the community thinks well of them. Make them stop what they are doing.

However, many years after leaving, he was invited back and honoured by the people he had blessed. I believe he was surprised when he saw the fruit of his ministry. He probably realized that he should not have succumbed to the relentless onslaught of the accuser and his agents. I am glad to say that soon after this he returned to the ministry.

Another amazing revelation in this book was that the demons were riding on *Christians* and not on horses. In other words, Christians were being used by the devil without even knowing it!

I know a pastor who is very good at dividing the body of

Christ. I have observed his ministry over the last fifteen years and I feel he has a special gift for dividing the church and creating opposing “camps” within the church. I think he does not even know that his actions and decisions lead to the creation of factions within the church. He does this effortlessly and with such distinguished diplomacy! He looks and sounds so respectable that it would never occur to you that he is actually splitting the church into groups. It is only when you sit back and reflect on his actions that you realize how factious he is.

I am happy to have Rick Joyner’s permission to include a short passage from this vision of the armies of Satan and their strategies. I pray that you will see the strategies of the devil clearly.

“The demonic army was so large that it stretched as far as I could see. It was separated into divisions, with each carrying a different banner. The foremost divisions marched under the banners of Pride, Self-righteousness, Respectability, Selfish Ambition, Unrighteous Judgment, and Jealousy. There were many more of these evil divisions beyond my scope of vision, but those in the vanguard of this terrible horde from hell seemed to be the most powerful. The leader of this army was the Accuser of the Brethren himself.

The weapons carried by this horde were also named. The swords were named Intimidation; the spears were named Treachery; and the arrows were named Accusation, Gossip, Slander and Faultfinding. Scouts and smaller companies of demons with such names as Rejection, Bitterness, Impatience, Unforgiveness and Lust were sent in advance of this army to prepare for the main attack.

These smaller companies and scouts were much fewer in number, but they were no less powerful than some of the larger divisions that followed. They were smaller only for strategic reasons. Just as John the Baptist was a single man, but was given an extraordinary anointing for baptizing the masses to prepare them for the Lord, these smaller demonic companies were given extraordinary evil powers for “baptizing the masses.” A single demon of Bitterness could sow his poison into multitudes of people, even entire races or cultures. A demon of Lust would attach himself to a single performer, movie, or even advertisement, and send what appeared to be bolts of electric slime that would hit and “desensitise” great masses of people. All of this was to prepare for the great horde of evil which followed.

This army was marching specifically against the church, but it was attacking everyone that it could. I knew that it was seeking to pre-empt a coming move of God which was destined to sweep masses of people into the church.

The primary strategy of this army was to cause division on every possible level of relationship – churches with each other, congregations with their pastors, husbands and wives, children and parents, and even children with each other. The scouts were sent to locate the openings in churches, families or individuals that Rejection, Bitterness, Lust, etc., could exploit and make larger. Then the following divisions would pour through the openings to completely overcome their victims.

The most shocking part of this vision was that

this horde was not riding on horses, but primarily on Christians! Most of them were well-dressed, respectable, and had the appearance of being refined and educated, but there also seemed to be representatives from almost every walk of life. These people professed Christian truths in order to appease their consciences, but they lived their lives in agreement with the powers of darkness. As they agreed with those powers their assigned demons grew and more easily directed their actions.

Many of these believers were host to more than one demon, but one would obviously be in charge. The nature of the one in charge dictated which division it was marching in. Even though the divisions were all marching together, it also seemed that at the same time the entire army was on the verge of chaos. For example, the demons of hate, hated the other demons as much as they did the Christians. The demons of jealousy were all jealous of one another. The only way the leaders of this horde kept the demons from fighting each other was to keep their hatred, jealousy, etc., focused on the people they were riding. However, these people would often break out in fights with each other. I knew that this was how some of the armies that had come against Israel in the Scriptures had ended up destroying themselves. When their purpose against Israel was thwarted, their rage was uncontrollable, and they simply began fighting each other.

I noted that the demons were riding on these Christians, but were not in them as was the case with non-Christians. It was obvious that these believers had only to stop agreeing with their demons in order to get free of them. For example, if the Christian on

which a demon of jealousy was riding just started to question the jealousy, that demon would weaken very fast. When this happened the weakening demon would cry out and the leader of the division would direct all of the demons around that Christian to attack him until the bitterness, etc., would build up on him again. If this did not work, the demons would begin quoting Scriptures that were perverted in such a way that would justify the bitterness, accusations, etc.

It was clear that the power of the demons was rooted almost entirely in the power of deception, but they had deceived these Christians to the point where they could use them and they would think they were being used by God. This was because banners of Self-righteousness were being carried by almost all of the individuals so that those marching could not even see the banners that marked the true nature of these divisions.

As I looked far to the rear of this army I saw the entourage of the Accuser himself. I began to understand his strategy, and I was amazed that it was so simple. He knew that a house divided cannot stand, and this army represented an attempt to bring such division to the church that she would completely fall from grace. It was apparent that the only way he could do this was to use Christians to war against their own brethren, and that is why almost everyone in the forward divisions were Christians, or at least professing Christians. Every step that these deceived believers took in obedience to the Accuser strengthened his power over them. This made his confidence and the confidence of all of his commanders grow



with the progress of the army as it marched forward. It was apparent that the power of this army depended on the agreement of these Christians with the ways of evil”.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Excerpts from *The Final Quest* by Rick Joyner  
(Excerpts taken from Part 1- "*The Hordes of Hell are Marching*", Pages 16-19)

## **Chapter two**

# ***TEN LAWS OF LOYALTY***

### **1. THE HEAD OF AN ORGANISATION MUST FIRST BE LOYAL TO HIS SUBORDINATES**

Loyalty does not just depend on the subordinates being loyal to their superior. Everything, good or bad, flows down from the top.

**It is like the precious ointment UPON THE HEAD,  
THAT RAN DOWN upon the beard ... THAT WENT  
DOWN to the skirts...**

**Psalm 133:2**

Whatever is at the top, will be found in the ranks. The

starting point of loyalty is the head of the organisation. If he is unfaithful to his followers, they will be unfaithful to him.

## **Can I be loyal to this man?**

This is why it is difficult to teach loyalty in some churches. Some churches have unreasonable pastors. Some churches have leaders who are disloyal to their subordinates in many ways. **It is difficult or impossible to teach people to be loyal to a disloyal head.** The overseer may be someone who is not kind to his associates and does not even speak well of them.

I was once chatting with a senior pastor. He spoke about my associates.

He said “you have all these nice people working with you. They are so loyal.”

Then he lamented; “but I have all these devils as associates, I wish I had people like yours.”

I thought to myself; “if you call your associates devils, what do you expect from them?” Perhaps it had not occurred to him that if his pastors were devils then he must be Lucifer! Just as a loyal subordinate should not speak evil of his senior, the head must also not speak evil of his subordinates. Not only was it inappropriate for him to speak like that about his subordinates, but also, it was not appropriate for him to say such things to an outsider.

I heard another overseer refer to his branch pastors as “wicked people” and as “wizards”. Just as the junior pastors should not refer to their senior as a wizard or a wicked man, this should also not come from the top.

## **Why people leave organisations!**

It is very difficult to live under certain kinds of leadership. There is a reason why Africans flood western nations seeking greener pastures. They are not running away from their homes and families. They are not running away from the weather in Africa. They are not running away from their friends. They are running away from bad leaders!

It is difficult to live under leadership which is oppressive. It is difficult to live under leaders who steal the nation's wealth and do not care if the people have roads, hospitals and schools for their children. It is difficult to live in an environment where you do not have great opportunities. I know that most Ghanaians would come back to their own country if they could.

### **The greatest motivation for employees!**

It has been noted that the greatest motivation for people in work places, is not money per se. A sense of self-worth and achievement is the highest motivation for workers.

If someone does not feel important and appreciated, he often begins to look elsewhere. **It is the duty of the head of the organisation (church or business) to make everyone feel important and appreciated. This is one of the most important ways to be loyal to the people who work under you.**

When I worked as a doctor for Ghana's Ministry of Health, I felt that the government did not care about me. After slaving away for one year, I decided that it would be better for me to sell groundnuts at the roadside, than to work for the Ministry of Health. I was not loyal to the Ministry of Health. It took me only one year to leave them. I moved away quietly and I have

no regrets.

The head of the organisation often wants his subordinates to appreciate him and honour him. **However, this appreciation and honour must begin from the head downwards.** I reiterate that it is difficult and sometimes impossible, to work under certain kinds of leadership. If you are a junior in a church or business and have a head who is uncaring, you will have a hard time. I would advise you to find the environment and leader under whom you can flourish. Move away peacefully and do not say bad things on your way out! Close every door gently! You may need to come back through that door one day.

### **Why I am loyal to you!**

One day a young pastor asked his senior pastor, “Do you know why I am loyal to you?”

The senior pastor smiled and asked, “Why?”

The junior pastor said, “I think the main reason why I am loyal to you is because *you* are a very loyal senior minister.” He continued, “It is not because I have learnt the lessons or stages of loyalty. But because *you* are very loyal to *me*.”

He added, “I feel that you have my welfare at heart. I feel that you want me to prosper. I sense that you want me to go as far as I possibly can. Because of this, I naturally find myself being loyal to you.”

This young pastor was unknowingly expounding on a great principle of loyalty. **Loyalty emanates from the head.** Loyalty breeds more loyalty!

Consider this: is it easy to follow someone who constantly turns round and waves a knife at you? Would you be able to stay

close to someone who constantly waves a dangerous dagger in your direction? Certainly not! In the same way, it is not easy to be loyal to wicked leaders (even if they are men of God).

I have often said that if I were not a pastor, I would find it difficult to remain in certain churches. I would find it very difficult to be loyal to pastors I did not believe in.

**Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.**

**1 Corinthians 4:2**

One of the cardinal qualifications for the *head* of every organisation is *loyalty*!

## **2. LOYALTY IS THE KEY TO EXPANSION**

Many churches, businesses and individuals need to tap into the key of loyalty in order to expand. Growth in one location can take place only up to a point. That is what we call localized growth. You sell a product but only a certain number of people can buy the product in one locality. After a while the community will be saturated with what you are selling. That is why you need to expand. Often, expansion takes place in different geographical locations.

Years ago, our church was directed by the Lord to expand into different communities in the city. This has resulted in tremendous growth. Had we stayed in one place, we would have had one congregation probably of the same size that we have now.

But I followed the direction of the Holy Spirit and moved into several localities within the city. Today the strength of Lighthouse Chapel International has immensely multiplied into the different communities of our city. Not only have we expanded in the city, we have also expanded into several regions of our nation Ghana and into several other countries. Lighthouse Chapel International now operates on five continents: Africa, Europe, America Asia and Australia. We are in more than twenty different countries of the world. These are not local churches that have adopted the Lighthouse name. They are extensions, outreaches and expansions of the original Lighthouse Chapel International, which began in Korle-Bu, Accra, Ghana.

People often ask, “How are you able to maintain your operations in all these different places?” The key is *loyalty*.

If you are a businessman, and have a shop in an area, you can only make a certain amount of money from one community. You need to expand into other localities. God is a God of expansion. God wants you to have big dreams. That is why He told Adam and Eve to fill the whole earth. How could two people fill the whole earth with human beings? But that was God’s plan for Adam and Eve.

You can fill the city with your shops, businesses or whatever you trade in. If you are a pastor, what you are doing can be expanded into many places. You can have many churches. As I write this book, there are over one hundred Lighthouse churches in the world. It is possible to expand but you must grasp the principles that make expansion possible. One of the keys to expansion and growth is loyalty.

You will need loyal people at all the outlets you

establish. Without loyal people in position, everything you do will crumble after a while. I know churches which do not even want to have cell groups. They have had bad experiences with disloyal people who have turned their cell groups into rebellious offshoots. Many church planters have watched as satellite or branch churches have been taken over by anarchistic pastors. These pastors have no respect for authority or order in the church.

I know a pastor who began a church twice in a city but had to close them down because the church was overrun by ‘rebels’. This general overseer is no longer interested in church planting or church expansion. He is content to stay with what he can control in one locality. In this book, I want to share with you the Lord’s principles and tenets of loyalty. If I were a businessman, I would prefer to have one loyal person without a degree than three with MBA’s and PhD’s. Qualifications do not impress me as much as loyalty does.

Many years ago, my father owned a prestigious hotel in the city of Accra. My father would supervise this hotel by visiting it once or twice a day. Unknown to him the managers and workers in the hotel were ripping him off. Whilst he was away, customers would check into the hotel. However, the money they paid never got to my father because the staff at the hotel did not register the guests in the proper way. One day something happened and my father dismissed all the management staff. My father asked me if I knew somebody who could manage the hotel.

I said to him, “Well, I know someone who would be honest and loyal to you. But he doesn’t have any experience in managing a hotel.”

My father answered, “Please bring him. I need him now!”

So I called my friend and he agreed to do the job for a



while. After this friend of mine had worked for one night, the hotel yielded about one hundred and fifty thousand cedis. Previously it had yielded only ten thousand cedis a night.

There was a sudden 150% increase in the income of the hotel!! Can you imagine that! These qualified managers had adroitly stolen large amounts of money.

The introduction of one loyal person made an amazing difference to the income of that business. Dear business friend, dear politician, the introduction of loyal people into your field of work will tremendously affect your output and your profit.

Many people do not value honesty and loyalty. But we would do well to learn from Jesus. Jesus did not go for qualifications. He went for loyalty and faithfulness. Look at what Paul said about employees or stewards.

**Moreover, it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.**

**1 Corinthians 4:2**

Loyalty is necessary for your expansion. It is required for your business. It is required for your church. With all your getting, get loyalty. Understand the principles that govern loyalty. Discover the laws of loyalty and disloyalty. God will bless the work of your hands and expand it greatly.

### **3. LOYALTY BREEDS LOYALTY**

You must be loyal to several people. You must be loyal to your God, you must be loyal to your church, you must be loyal to your spouse and you must be loyal to your friends.

**A leader breeds loyalty by being loyal to the people who follow him.** When it is time for your followers to be rewarded, be faithful and let the rewards materialize. Do not withhold the blessings of those who have laboured with you for years. When one of your followers is in trouble, that is the time to show your loyalty. Dear friend, your followers are watching you closely. They will do what they see. If you do not betray them in their time of difficulty, they will not betray you. Loyalty breeds loyalty!

**A leader breeds loyalty in his followers by being loyal to his superiors.** When David had the opportunity to kill Saul, he did not! He was loyal to the king's authority. He did not execute his own father. And all his men saw it.

**Then said Abishai to David, God hath delivered thine enemy into thine hand this day; now therefore let me smite him, I pray thee, with the spear even to the earth at once, and I will not smite him the second time. And David said to Abishai, Destroy him not: for who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless? David said furthermore, As the Lord liveth, the Lord shall smite him; or his day shall come to die; or he shall descend into battle, and perish. THE LORD FORBID THAT I SHOULD STRETCH FORTH MINE HAND AGAINST THE LORD'S ANOINTED: but, I pray thee, take thou now the spear that is at his bolster, and the cruse of water, and let us go.**

**1 Samuel 26:8-11**

Many years later, David himself made a mistake. He murdered one of his own soldiers called Uriah. David could have lost his life through that mistake. Many of his leaders could

have revolted and assassinated him. However, this did not happen. His men were loyal to the king's authority. They refused to kill the Lord's anointed because they had learnt it by example many years earlier. They had learnt not to 'kill' fathers.

**A leader breeds loyalty by being loyal to his friends.**  
When David became the king, he realized that his position was truly a privileged one. In the midst of his establishment as a leader, he asked for a way he could show kindness to an old friend.

**And David said, is there yet any that is left of the house of Saul, that I may show him kindness for Jonathan's sake?**  
**2 Samuel 9:1**

These acts of loyalty to friends teach others about the true character of the leader they are dealing with. People are attracted to a good character. People are more inclined to follow someone with a good heart.

**A leader breeds loyalty by being loyal to his spouse.**  
Because marriage is such a difficult thing for many people, anyone who has his marriage in order is seen as a natural leader. You become a natural leader in the community because it is evident that your domestic affairs are under control. Loyalty to your spouse involves self-control and discipline. Everyone would like to have a leader with these qualities.

**A bishop then must be blameless, the HUSBAND OF ONE WIFE, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; One that RULETH WELL HIS OWN HOUSE, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)**

## **1 Timothy 3:2,4,5**

**A leader breeds loyalty by being loyal to his own vision.** Nobody wants to follow someone who is unpredictable. Many years ago, I declared my interest in soul winning and establishing people in Christ. I am still doing the same thing. Much water has passed under the bridge but the vision is still the same – a soul is a soul and is precious to God. He may be a beggar, a lawyer or a doctor – a soul is a soul and is precious to God. She may be a groundnut seller, a prostitute or a nurse – a soul is a soul and is precious to God.

Keep the same vision. The Bible teaches that you should not associate with people who are prone to sudden mutations and unexpected twists and turns. It is dangerous to sit in a car with a driver who makes dangerous sharp turns.

**My son, fear thou the Lord and the king: and meddle not with them that are given to change:**

**Proverbs 24:21**

Are you a leader? Develop a group of faithful, stable, constant and loyal followers by being a loyal person yourself.

**Finally, a leader breeds loyalty by being loyal to God.** When you study the Bible, you will discover that rebellions were often instigated against people who were not following the will of God. Let me clarify an important point here. I am not saying that anyone who experiences betrayals, rebellions and disloyalty is out of the will of God. If that was the case, then Almighty God was doing something wrong when Lucifer rebelled. If that was the case, then Jesus was doing something wrong when Ju-

das betrayed Him. That can certainly not be the case. There are some rebellions and betrayals that take place because the individuals concerned are intrinsically rebellious and demonically inspired. However, when a leader is out of God's plan, it opens the door for anarchy and disloyalty.

King Solomon is a perfect example of someone who experienced disloyalty because he deviated from God's plan. The Bible tells us that Solomon deviated from the will of God.

**For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the Lord and went not fully after the Lord, as did David his father. Then did Solomon build an high place for Chemosh, the abomination of Moab, in the hill that is before Jerusalem, and for Molech, the abomination of the children of Ammon. And likewise did he for all his strange wives, which burnt incense and sacrificed unto their gods. AND THE LORD WAS ANGRY WITH SOLOMON...**

**1 Kings 11:4-9**

As a result of Solomon's sins, the Bible explicitly tells us that God raised up three rebels or enemies against Solomon. The first one was Hadad, the Edomite.

**For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father... And THE LORD STIRRED UP AN**

**ADVERSARY unto Solomon, Hadad, the Edomite: he was of the king's seed in Edom.**

**1 Kings 11:4,14**

The second traitor to the cause of Solomon was a man called Rezon. He was an enemy to Israel all through the days of Solomon. Apart from what Hadad the Edomite did, this man Rezon was a pain in the neck of Solomon.

**And God stirred him up another adversary, Rezon the son of Eliadah, which fled from his lord Hadadezer king of Zobah:**

**1 Kings 11: 23**

The third disloyal person was Jeroboam, the son of Nebat.

**And Jeroboam the son of Nebat, an Ephrathite of Zereda, Solomon's servant, whose mother's name was Zeruah, a widow woman, even he lifted up his hand against the king.**

**1 Kings 11:26**

This man Jeroboam received a prophecy from a prophet called Ahijah. This prophecy contributed greatly to the future division of Solomon's kingdom. The prophecy in question shows us *the divine element* in the rebellions that occur.

**And it came to pass at that time when Jeroboam went out of Jerusalem, that the prophet Ahijah the Shilonite found him in the way; and he had clad himself with a new garment; and they two were alone in the field; And Ahijah caught the new garment that was on him, and rent it in twelve pieces: And he said to Jeroboam, Take thee ten pieces: for thus saith the Lord, the God of Israel, Behold, I WILL**

**REND THE KINGDOM out of the hand of Solomon, and will give ten tribes to thee:**

**(But he shall have one tribe for my servant David's sake, and for Jerusalem's sake, the city which I have chosen out of all the tribes of Israel:) Because that they have forsaken me, and have worshipped me, and have worshipped Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, Chemosh the god of the Moabites, and Milcom the god of the children Ammon, and have not walked in my ways, to do that which is right in mine eyes, and to keep my statutes and my judgments, as did David his father. Howbeit I WILL NOT TAKE THE WHOLE KINGDOM OUT OF HIS HAND: but I will make him prince all the days of his life for David my servant's sake, whom I chose, because he kept my commandments and my statutes: But I will take the kingdom out of his son's hand, and will give it unto thee, even ten tribes. And unto his son will I give one tribe, that David my servant may have a light always before me in Jerusalem, the city which I have chosen me to put my name there. And I will take thee, and thou shalt reign according to all that thy soul desireth, and shalt be king over Israel.**

**1 Kings 11:29-37**

Once again, please do not misunderstand me. I am not saying that God is behind every case of disloyalty. But in this case, the Bible is very plain about the cause of the rebellion. Being loyal to God and to His instructions for you will lead to human beings being loyal to you.

When Jesus was betrayed by Judas, did it mean that He was out of the will of God? Certainly not! Jesus always did the will of the Father. There are two groups of ministries or businesses. There are companies with a high rate of disloyalty

and there are companies with a very low incidence of disloyalty. There are churches with a high number of traitors and rebels. In some churches, there is a new rebel every month. But in other churches you would find a much lower incidence of disloyalty. It is very unlikely to find a church with a one hundred percent level of loyalty.

#### **4. DISLOYALTY BREEDS DISLOYALTY**

**And Ahab called Obadiah, which was the governor of his house. (Now Obadiah feared the Lord greatly: For it was so, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the Lord, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave and fed them with bread and water.) And Ahab said unto Obadiah, Go into the land, unto all fountains of water, and unto all brooks: peradventure we may find grass to save the horses and mules alive, that we lose not all the beasts. So they divided the land between them to pass throughout it: Ahab went one way by himself, and Obadiah went another way by himself.**

**1 Kings 18:3-6**

Obadiah was the governor of the house of King Ahab (who hated prophets). This means that he was a very important person to the king. He was a trusted confidant. In our modern world, we may have called him a Chief of Staff. Yet unknown to Ahab, Obadiah was secretly feeding hundreds of prophets. He was probably using King Ahab's food to support these prophets who were the archenemies of King Ahab. Obviously, Obadiah did not believe in the policies of King Ahab. His heart was not with the king.



This is a very common occurrence. There are many people who work closely with their superiors but do not believe in them. They undermine them all the time! How can a person be so close, yet so disloyal? Can you believe that Ahab's money was being used to finance the very thing he hated? This happens when there are disloyal people in important positions.

Many important positions are filled with disloyal and traitorous people. I remember a photograph I saw in a museum dedicated to the memory of Ghana's first president, Kwame Nkrumah. In this picture, the President, Kwame Nkrumah, is surrounded by six or seven smartly dressed and smiling generals. The guide who took us around the museum pointed to that photograph in particular and said, "This was the president and these were his generals." Then he continued and singled out one of the generals and said, "This is General Kotoka, the one who helped to overthrow the president."

As I looked at the photograph, I marvelled! Here was the president with his most trusted and senior men. Little did he know that in a few months, some of these trusted generals would oust him from office. That is betrayal for you!

Obadiah, the one we read about in 1 Kings 18, was in a similar position. He did not believe in what Ahab was doing. His real allegiance was to Almighty God. Why? I believe that the fact that Ahab was a rebellious king who did not obey the Lord was a signal to everyone around that rebellion and disloyalty were acceptable. Disloyalty breeds disloyalty! As soon as the spirit of disloyalty is manifested from the top, it begins to filter downwards. When the overall leader does not care for God or His principles, this attitude is transmitted down the ranks.

When the leader shows disregard for his subordinates it sends a signal to everyone. Many of the coup d'états and rebellions in Africa have come from frustrated people who feel that the president does not really care for the country. Mutinous soldiers arise from the ranks and murder their senior officers and senior government officials because they feel that these people no longer care for the common man. In other words, they perceive that the Head of State and his cronies are no longer loyal to the masses and their plight. This is often a trigger for a rebellion.

I am in no way saying that coup d'états or rebellions are justified. I am just showing you how they happen.

In the classic story of Julius Caesar, there was a conspiracy by his right hand man, Brutus and Cassius to overthrow their emperor. Julius Caesar was regarded as a hard, unyielding and uncaring leader. When Caesar arrived in the senate an appeal was made to him. In the unfolding drama, Metellus asks for his brother's banishment to be repealed. But Caesar tells him not to beg. Brutus joins the appeal, kneeling at Caesar's feet, yet Caesar remains firm. Julius Caesar then compares himself to the sun, the unyielding star which does not move in the heavens.

*I am constant as the northern star,  
Of whose true-fix'd and resting quality  
There is no fellow in the firmament...*

He goes on to describe how the world is furnished with different kinds of men. Some of these are unshakeable, unmoveable and able to hold their rank.

*So in the world: tis furnished well with men...  
And men are flesh and blood, apprehensive.  
Yet in the number I do know but one  
That unassailable holds his rank  
Unshaked of motion.  
And that I am he*

Yes, Julius Caesar, there are times to be unbending and unyielding, but there are also times to be flexible and merciful. Perhaps this attitude contributed to Julius Caesar's success on the battlefield. But this attitude does not accommodate many people permanently.

As I have said, one of the laws of loyalty is that 'disloyalty breeds disloyalty'. A leader must be loyal to the people he leads. You must genuinely care for the people you lead. You must genuinely help them. Many leaders are virtually sociological vampires. They rip and rape the people they lead, leaving them destitute and worse off. Africa has been plagued with many such leaders. **It is no wonder that Africa is the cradle of rebellions and countless wars.**

If you desire to build numerous shops, businesses, and branches of your church, remember to be loyal to your people. You must develop a system of fairness. People must feel and perceive that there is equity, fairness and justice in the system within which they work. If people are promoted based on the whims and fancies of a manager, surely you are creating an atmosphere for disloyalty. When people are not rewarded for faithfulness and hard work, you are sowing seeds of disloyalty. When people do not get jobs based on merit, the environment for disloyalty is being created.

I know a country in which you cannot get a contract unless you have certain political qualifications. How unfortunate! This only means that everybody on the other side of the divide will be bitter. They will look for an opportunity to revolt against an unfair and unjust system. Never forget this simple fact, disloyalty breeds more disloyalty.

## 5. LOYALTY HAS A SINGLE EYE

**The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness. No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.**

**Matthew 6:22-24**

In this scripture, Jesus teaches about how the entire body is affected by the *eye*. He says that if you have a single eye, your whole body will be full of light (a good thing). It goes on to say that if your eye is evil, your body will be full of darkness. What does a single eye mean? A single eye speaks of seeing one thing! In other words, in every sphere of life your attention should be focused on only one thing. Jesus went on to explain that you cannot serve God and mammon. In other words, if you see both God and mammon as “gods” in your life, you will not prosper. You must be loyal to one or the other. Jesus taught us that you would end up loving one and hating the other.

## **Can I Have Two Churches?**

Another example concerns your church. You cannot have your attention focused on two churches. You must have a single eye! If you want to be loyal to your church, you must be focused on one church and not on two. A husband cannot be loyal to his wife if he has two women in his view. Any man with two different women in his sights has a potential for disloyalty. Do not forget this important principle, 'loyalty has a single eye'. If you belong to a church, your allegiance must be to the pastor in charge. You cannot say that there are two or three captains whom you look up to. You must see one person as your pastor, and that is the senior pastor. Everyone else is assisting the senior pastor to do the work.

There are some people who belong to churches and say, "If it were not for this junior pastor I would not stay in this church."

What they are saying is that they do not believe in the senior pastor. The junior pastor is therefore the only reason why they are still around. If that junior pastor were to break away, this individual would obviously follow the rebellion.

No matter which organization you belong to, it is important that you understand where your allegiance belongs. If you work in a company, your allegiance is to the highest authority. If something is going wrong in your department, because you have a single eye, you will show your loyalty to your ultimate employer. Your allegiance will not be divided.

## **6. LOYALTY DEMANDS THE RIGHT**

## **ATTITUDE**

There are some attitudes that do not lead to loyalty. A suspicious person cannot be a loyal person. If you suspect me of wrongdoing, how can you be loyal to me? If you suspect that there is a snake in the room, how can you relax on your chair? Many people are suspicious about churches and pastors because of things they have heard. There are those who have made it their duty to spread bad stories about the ministry of the Lord Jesus. Their mouths are full of poison. They have convincing tales of the bad deeds of almost every minister of the gospel. Why is this? It's because Satan knows that you will be blessed through these men of God.

### **A Mixture of Good and Bad Creates Confusion**

When you see a man of God ministering in such an anointed way, you will become confused because of the background stories you may have heard about him. Your confusion will effectively cut you off from fully receiving from that man of God. A mixture of good and bad is confusing to anyone. Because you are confused, you cannot give your full commitment or allegiance to the man of God or to his ministry.

I have seen many confused people in my lifetime. I once had a rebellious pastor who went around saying bad things about me. He told many people that I was a thief. He made people think that our church was a cult. The people who heard him speak became confused. I could see the confusion all over their faces.

One day I called two of these confused members and I

told them, “These are the facts of the matter. Decide for yourself! Do not be confused.”

I continued, “However, if you are confused, I think it would be better for you to go away to a church where you have full trust in the ministers.”

In the process of time, their confusion vanished and they became stable and loyal members. Today, we laugh about the days when they were confused. When I look back, I realize that a person’s commitment is greatly affected when he is confused.

**Seemeth it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? And to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? And as for my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet.**

**Ezekiel 34:18,19**

In this scripture, God is angry at sheep that drank from the waters but afterwards fouled it up so that no one else could drink from it. Let me explain this in very simple terms.

There is a clear pool or pond from which we all drink. That pool represents your church. Hundreds of people have drunk from that pool and have never had a problem. Then along comes a brother who decides that he does not want to drink from that pool anymore. Instead of simply moving away from that pond, he urinates into the pool, thereby fouling it up.

**...to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must FOUL  
THE RESIDUE...**

**Ezekiel 34:18**

From that moment onwards, anyone who comes to that pool will notice something unusual about the water. The water has an unusual colour and a foul smell. They will become *confused* and *suspicious* about drinking from the pool. No one would like to drink water mixed with urine. (I know you wouldn't!)

The confusion and suspicion is because one wicked person, who benefited from the pool like everyone else, has contaminated it. This is what happens when politicians leave political parties. This is what happens when ministers leave churches. They say such evil things about the churches to which they belonged for many years. They 'drank the waters' of that ministry and were blessed by it many times. Yet today, they have only evil things to say about it.

People tend to take such people seriously because they seem to have 'inside information'. This is what leads to the confusion and the suspicion. If you are a Christian leader, deal with confusion and suspicion in your congregation. Explain in detail what is happening and what has happened. Information helps to dispel suspicion. Explanations are very good antidotes for confusion and suspicion. It is sometimes painful to have to talk about certain things but there are times when you have no choice. I must warn you that some people's confusion is simply not dispelled by any explanations.

## **7. LOYALTY DOES NOT JOIN OR CREATE FAC- TIONS**

In every society or group, there are always people who create divisions. There are natural differences amongst people



in every nation. God is the one who makes these natural differences. However, there are some people who seem to have an “eye” for these differences. They seem to notice them, talk about them and make something big out of these differences.

There are always members who want to magnify the differences that exist between pastors. They want to say how they prefer one pastor to the other. They say; “this pastor is really anointed, or that one is really caring”. Some say “I prefer to come to church when this pastor is preaching, because it is more powerful”. There are people who want to bring out tribal differences. They seem to know which tribe everyone comes from. They want everyone to be conscious of the differences in tribes or colour.

**For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.**

**1 Corinthians 1:11**

These people existed in the time of Apostle Paul. There were people who were magnifying the differences in the leadership styles of Paul and Apollos. Such people only created confusion in the church.

A loyal person does not create or join factions of the church. In Ghana, there are people who always notice that people from certain tribes are doing certain things. In the church, such people create groupings based on tribe. I remember one day, a member in my church had to be confronted by another. This young lady confronted a leader and said, “Why is it that you only follow-up converts from this particular tribe?”

She said to her, “You are creating a tribal group within

our ministry and it is wrong!"

You see, without even noticing, some people carve out groups and sub-communities within the larger church. A loyal person is not interested in creating or joining such a group. There are some people who see the church as Black or White. There are others who don't seem to notice these differences. Decide to be colour-blind in the church. You will be surprised to find out that God is not an American. The Lord is not White or Black. Jesus was not a Baptist or a Presbyterian. He was not even a Pentecostal.

One of the works of the flesh is the ability to create parties and groups within every united body. This is not a good thing! Decide that you will not allow yourself to be used as a pawn for creating divisions in your church. Even businesses are destroyed when all sorts of imagined differences are magnified and spoken about.

**The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish**

**ambition, dissensions, FACTIONS AND ENVY; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.**

**Galatians 5:19 (NIV)**

One of the works of the flesh you must avoid is creating factions and groupings within a united body.

## **8. THE ROOT OF DISLOYALTY IS PRIDE**

**ONLY BY PRIDE cometh contention...**

**Proverbs 13:10**

The rebellion and divisions that happen in churches are often a result of deep seated pride. It is often out of a spirit of pride that rebellion take place. I want us to look closely at the rebellion of Korah.

**Now Korah, the son of Izhar, the son of Kohath, the son of Levi, and Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab, and On, the son of Peleth, sons of Reuben, took men. And THEY ROSE UP BEFORE MOSES, with certain of the children of Israel, two hundred and fifty princes of the assembly, famous in the congregation, men of renown: And they gathered themselves together against Moses and against Aaron, and said unto them, Ye take too much upon you, seeing all the congregation are holy, every one of them, and the Lord is among them: wherefore then lift ye up yourselves above the congregation of the Lord? And Moses said unto Korah, Hear, I pray you, ye sons of Levi: Seemeth it but a small thing unto you, that the God of Israel hath separated you from the congregation of Israel, to bring you near to himself to do the service of the tabernacle of the Lord, and to stand before the congregation to minister unto them? And he hath brought thee near to him, and all thy brethren the sons of Levi with thee: and seek ye the priesthood also? For which cause both thou and all thy company are gathered together against the Lord: and what is Aaron, that ye murmur against him?**

**Numbers 16:1-3,8-11**

Moses was leading the people of Israel. He was surprised to find a group of princes rising up to challenge his

authority. First of all, there was a large group in favour of this uprising. Two hundred and fifty princes were involved! These were not ordinary people! The Bible says that they were famous and of great renown.

**...two hundred and fifty PRINCES of the assembly, FAMOUS in the congregation, MEN OF RENOWN...**

**Numbers 16:2**

Obviously, they felt important. It is when people feel important that they raise their heads in rebellion. One person asked his pastor, "Why did the senior pastor not come to visit me?"

He continued, "Why did you take so long in coming to visit me?"

He told the pastor, "Do you not know that I am important to this church?"

This gentleman continued to effuse all sorts of disrespectful remarks. It is pride that makes people disloyal and rebellious. You only rebel against a person when you think you are 'as good as' he.

Korah's group told Moses, "Why do you make yourself different from us?" They felt that Moses should be equal to them. This is the spirit of an equalizer.

**...wherefore then lift ye up yourselves above the congregation of the Lord?**

**Numbers 16:3**

They had forgotten that it was Moses who led them out of Egypt with incredible signs and wonders. They had forgotten about the quaking mountain, the thunder and the fire. **Rebel-**

**lious people often forget whom they are dealing with.**

One rebellious pastor wrote a letter to me rebuking me and warning me for not recognizing his call. He signed the letter as an apostle to the Body of Christ. This gentleman had forgotten how I had trained him in the ministry. That is why he was now calling himself an apostle and rebuking me.

Moses sent for Dathan and Abiram, leaders of the reform rebel movement. They sent a rude reply back to Moses, “We will not come!” They were saying, “Who do you think you are to call us? If you want to talk to us, you better come over yourself!”

**And Moses sent to call Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab: which said, WE WILL NOT COME UP:**

**Numbers 16:12**

It is only a spirit of pride which makes people speak like this. They saw themselves as equal to Moses. No one is equal to anyone, God made us all different. Whether you like it or not, some people are ahead and some are behind. Whether it suits you or not, some people are above and some are below. God did not create everything the same.

I remember some years ago, I sent a messenger to call one defiant pastor for a meeting. When the minister I sent arrived at the home of this man, this insubordinate pastor asked my emissary, “How can he call me for a meeting at such a time?”

He continued, “Who does he think he is? I am not coming!”

My messenger was taken aback, “What are you saying?”

You are going to create a problem.”

This anarchistic pastor said, “I am not just going to create a problem, I am going to create a *big* problem!”

Obviously, this mutinous pastor who was breathing fire and rebellion had gone the way of Dathan and Abiram.

You see, dear friend, there is nothing new under the sun. Everything that is happening today has happened before. The future can be predicted by studying what has happened in the past.

But what is the fruit of rebellion? What happens to people who behave like this? Read it for yourself.

**And Moses said, Hereby ye shall know that the Lord hath sent me to do all these works; for I have not done them of mine own mind. IF THESE MEN DIE THE COMMON DEATH of all men, or if they be visited after the visitation of all men; then the Lord hath not sent me. But if the Lord make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them, and they go down quick into the pit; then ye shall understand that these men have provoked the Lord. And it came to pass, as he had made an end of speaking all these words, that the ground clave asunder that was under them: And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the pit, and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation.**

**Numbers 16:28-33**

The end of rebels is the same – execution! Please do not allow pride to lead you into rebellion and disloyalty. I know you are a great person. I know you are as good as all the others. But please take your time and do not fight a battle you cannot win!

Since pride leads to disloyalty, it is important to identify symptoms of pride when they do occur. Watch out for these symptoms of pride.

### **Symptoms of pride**

- ☐ Answering back
- ☐ General rudeness
- ☐ Refusing to come when called.
- ☐ Feeling indispensable.
- ☐ Mocking and laughing at leaders.
- ☐ Feeling that I am as good as my senior.
- ☐ Constant criticism.

## **9. LOYALTY IS AN INTEGRAL PART OF YOUR CHARACTER**

Someone said faithfulness is the cornerstone of your character. I believe it is true that loyalty is an integral part of your character. Loyalty is not simply a set of rules you must obey. **It is a matter of developing an invisible quality, a certain style and character of doing things.** Loyalty must emanate from the heart. It must not just be the following of instructions.

Developing loyalty is like developing a culture. You need to develop a culture of loyalty in the group of people you associate with. If you run a business, develop a culture of loyalty. A culture runs deeper than the rulebooks and the charts. It goes deeper than many things you see on the surface. It is an unseen force that keeps the family together.

When an individual has a culture and a character of loyalty, there are many things that no longer need to be said. When new people join your company or church, they begin to “see” how to do things around here. They discover that the system is airtight and unfriendly to treachery and to traitors. When something is part of a culture, it happens repeatedly even without prompting.

Dear Managing Director, dear Pastor, I suggest that you devote much of your energy to the promotion and cultivation of the culture of loyalty. When your organization is averse to disloyal elements, you will be much better off. If you are in business you will make profit. If you are in church work, your church will grow, expansion will take place.

When disloyalty is an integral part of an individual’s character, he often repeats this treacherous behaviour without provocation. You will see this in the life of Jeroboam, the king of Israel.

First of all, Jeroboam rebelled against King Solomon. Then he rebelled against Rehoboam, the legitimate king of Israel. After that, he rebelled against God. Notice Jeroboam’s rebellion against King Solomon:



**And Jeroboam the son of Nebat, an Ephrathite of Zereda, Solomon's servant, whose mother's name was Zeruah, a widow woman, even he lifted up his hand against the king [Solomon].**

## **I Kings 11:26**

Years later, this same Jeroboam rebelled against King Rehoboam. The rebellious streak within him was manifesting as the years went by. This is what happens with people who move from church to church. They always find something wrong with the leadership.

**So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to thine own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents. But as for the children of Israel which dwelt in the cities of Judah, Rehoboam reigned over them. Then king Rehoboam sent Adoram, who was over the tribute; and all Israel stoned him with stones, that he died. Therefore king Rehoboam made speed to get him up to his chariot, to flee to Jerusalem. SO ISRAEL REBELLED AGAINST THE HOUSE OF DAVID unto this day. And it came to pass, when all Israel heard that JEROBOAM was come again, that they sent and called him unto the congregation, AND MADE HIM KING OVER ALL ISRAEL: there was none that followed the house of David, but the tribe of Judah only.**

## **1 Kings 12:16-20**

Once again, with the passage of time, Jeroboam rebelled painfully against the Lord. He is the one who set up altars in

Bethel and Dan for the children of Israel. He made calves of gold and made people worship them. He was a terrible disappointment to the Lord.

**Then Jeroboam built Shechem in mount Ephraim, and dwelt therein; and went out from thence, and built Peniel. AND JEROBOAM SAID IN HIS HEART, NOW SHALL THE KINGDOM RETURN to the house of David: If this people go up to do sacrifice in the house of the Lord at Jerusalem, then shall the heart of this people turn again unto their lord, even unto Rehoboam king of Judah, and they shall kill me, and go again to Rehoboam king of Judah. Whereupon the king took counsel, and made two calves of gold, and said unto them, It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem: behold thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt. And he set the one in Bethel, and the other put he in Dan. And this thing became a sin: for the people went to worship before the one, even unto Dan.**

**1 Kings 12:25-30**

He ordained priests out of the most unqualified men in Israel.

**And he made an house of high places, and made priests of the lowest of the people, which were not of the sons of Levi.**

**1 Kings 12:31**

This is the man whom God raised up to become the king of Israel when he was a nobody.

**And it came to pass at that time when Jeroboam went out of Jerusalem, that the prophet Ahijah the Shilonite found him in the way; and he had clad himself with a new gar-**

ment; and they two were alone in the field: And Ahijah caught the new garment that was on him, and rent it in twelve pieces: And he said to Jeroboam, Take thee ten pieces: for thus saith the Lord, the God of Israel, Behold, I will rend the kingdom out of the hand of Solomon, and will give ten tribes to thee: (But he shall have one tribe for my servant David's sake, and for Jerusalem's sake, the city which I have chosen out of all the tribes of Israel:) Because that they have forsaken me, and have worshipped Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, Chemosh the god of the Moabites, and Milcom the god of the children of Ammon, and have not walked in my ways, to do that which is right in mine eyes, and to keep my statutes and my judgments, as did David his father. Howbeit I will not take the whole kingdom out of his hand: but I will make him prince all the days of his life for David my servant's sake, whom I chose, because he kept my commandments and my statutes: But I will take the kingdom out of his son's hand, and will give it unto thee, even ten tribes. And unto his son will I give one tribe, that David my servant may have a light always before me in Jerusalem, the city which I have chosen me to put my name there. And I will take thee, and thou shalt reign according to all that thy soul desireth, and shalt be king over Israel. And it shall be, if thou wilt hearken unto all that I command thee, and wilt walk in my ways and do that is right in my sight to keep my statutes and my commandments, as David my servant; that I will be with thee, and build thee a sure house, as I built for David, and will give Israel unto thee.

### **1 Kings 11:29-38**

Watch rebels closely! Rebellion is an integral part of a person's behaviour. After Jeroboam rebelled against King Solomon, he turned around and rebelled against God. Disloyalty

is an integral part of a person's character and culture. Because of this it takes time for a person to imbibe and assimilate the philosophy, tradition and culture of loyalty. However, when it is established it yields wonderful fruits.

As you read this book, you may discover that you have traits of disloyalty. You may find out that the spirit of rebellion is manifest through you from time to time. This is dangerous. Rid yourself today of every tendency to rebel and to be disloyal. It cannot be the case that everyone around you is evil. Rebels always have good reasons for the things they do. Evil men are always full of good excuses. Hearken to the voice of the Lord today and become a man of faithfulness and loyalty.

## **10. FAMILIARITY BREEDS DISLOY- ALTY**

To be familiar means to be more friendly and informal than is acceptable. It is a condition that develops between you and someone you know well, see often and hear often. There is a common saying that familiarity breeds contempt. In other words, familiarity leads to a loss of respect. This is often true. I would like to go a step further and say that familiarity also breeds disloyalty.

When a person is often seen and heard, he is usually taken for granted. That is why guest ministers are often appreciated more than the resident pastors. This should not be the case! A resident pastor often does more to make a program successful than the visitor does. Visiting ministers are often seen as heroes. The reason for this is because of the lack of familiarity.

Familiarity leads to a loss of respect and reverence. With time, this can progress into disloyalty. When Jesus came on the scene, He was not received in his hometown because the people were too familiar with Him. They asked one another, “Is that not the carpenter’s son? Did he not repair our broken wardrobes and beds? Is he not a mere carpenter whom we have seen in this village for the last thirty years? How can he say that he is the Son of God?”

**Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.**

**Mark 6:3,4**

By this scripture, Jesus was saying that a prophet has a lot of honour in places where he is not known or seen much. Where are you seen and heard often? The answer is obvious, in your own country, among your own relatives and in your own house. What was the result of familiarity in Jesus’ ministry? Jesus was not able to minister powerfully.

**And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.**

**Mark 6:5**

But I want you to see a more dangerous effect of familiarity – disloyalty. I want you to see that familiarity breeds contempt, which can lead to disloyalty.

**And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses because of the**

**Ethiopian woman whom he had married: for he had married an Ethiopian woman. And they said, Hath the Lord indeed spoken only by Moses? hath he not spoken also by us? And the Lord heard it. (Now the man Moses was very meek, above all the men which were upon the face of the earth.)**

**Numbers 12:1-3**

Miriam was Moses' sister. She probably knew him very well. She was a relative and knew all about his weaknesses. Aaron was also someone who was very close to Moses. It seems that they took this closeness for granted. A disloyal person often finds faults and criticizes his leaders. That is exactly what Miriam and Aaron did! They turned their attention to Moses' marriage. "Why did Moses marry an Ethiopian woman," they said. "He is out of the will of God." They were also deceived by the fact that God had used them before. They said, "Has God not spoken by us?"

Familiarity makes you forget important spiritual principles. Familiarity brings deception to Christian leaders. Familiarity makes people think that they can destroy God's servants. Familiarity makes people forget the past.

Miriam and Aaron were taken up by the deception that came through familiarity and criticized one of the greatest men of God that ever lived. This provoked the Lord and He spoke to them.

**And the Lord came down in the pillar of the cloud, and stood in the door of the tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam: and they both came forth. And he said, Hear now my words: If there be a prophet among you, I the Lord will make myself known unto him in a vision, and will speak**

**unto him in a dream. My servant Moses is not so, who is faithful in all mine house. With him will I speak mouth to mouth, even apparently, and not in dark speeches; and the similitude of the Lord shall he behold: WHEREFORE THEN WERE YE NOT AFRAID TO SPEAK AGAINST MY SERVANT MOSES? And the anger of the Lord was kindled against them; and he departed.**

### **Numbers 12:5-9**

Be careful when you speak against God's anointed servant. When you see him through the eyes of familiarity, you may think that he is a mere man. You will forget all that the Lord has accomplished through him. This will make you lose your reverence and you may walk into error.

Some years ago, I heard a very surprising story. There was a great man of God who had established about six thousand churches. He had preached in over one hundred different nations of the world. God had used him greatly to establish a Bible school that had trained thousands of young men and women for the ministry. I personally know several graduates of this great man's Bible school. The graduates of this Bible school have established churches and ministries all over the world. At one point, it was said that seventy percent of ministers in Africa were either his products, or products of his products.

He was known for massive evangelistic campaigns in which many fantastic miracles occurred. I spoke to one young man who told me how this man of God had raised the dead before his very eyes. Surely, this should be enough to show that he was not an ordinary person. He was a mighty man of God, anointed of the Holy Spirit. Yet, I heard of an argument that one of his associate pastors had had with him. This man of God

dismissed the associate. The associate turned to him and said, “You need to be slapped!

“You cannot get away with this all the time,” he continued.

When I heard about this, I was taken aback. I thought to myself, “How could someone threaten to slap such a great man of God? Was he not afraid?”

**...wherefore then WERE YE NOT AFRAID to speak  
against my servant Moses?**

**Numbers 12:8**

You see, familiarity has a way of breaking down reverence, respect and fear. Once these natural barriers are removed, acts of disloyalty happen more easily.

**And the cloud departed from off the tabernacle; and, behold, Miriam became leprous, white as snow: and Aaron looked upon Miriam, and, behold, she was leprous. And Aaron said unto Moses, Alas, my lord, I beseech thee, lay not the sin upon us, wherein we have done foolishly, and wherein we have sinned.**

**Numbers 12:10,11**

After the judgment had come on Miriam, Aaron realized that they had been foolish to think that they could correct Moses. What people don't realize is that no human being can really correct a man of God. It is God who called them and it is God who will judge them. If you do not agree with or believe in a man of God, just move away quietly and leave him to the Lord. I can assure you that it is foolishness to fight against the Lord's



anointed. You may think you have a cause, but you will discover that you are fighting against God.

You will notice in this passage that the Lord did not even bring up the subject of Moses having an Ethiopian wife. He just punished Miriam for speaking against His servant. You must realize that there are some things that are beyond our scope. Some church members think that they are a kind of jury assessing the pastor all the time. This is interesting! Who appointed them as jurors? The Bible teaches that we should not go beyond our jurisdiction.

**Lord, my heart is not haughty, nor mine eyes lofty: neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in things too high for me.**

**Psalms 131:1**

# **Chapter Three**

## ***FIVE STATUTES OF LOYALTY***

### **1. NO MATTER WHAT YOU DO, SOME PEOPLE WILL BE DISLOYAL**

No matter what you do, some people will become disloyal in the process of time – *so pray that it will not be you!* This is what a pastor friend of mine said and I agree wholeheartedly with him. Work on yourself so that you do not fall prey to the deceptions that lead to disloyalty.

**Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.**

**John 6:70,71**

Jesus asked a very important question, “*Have I not chosen you?*” Jesus chose Judas himself. He had selected him from among many others. Before Jesus took his final decision as to who should be his apostles, he went up to a mountain and prayed all night. Many of us do not take such care when making important decisions.

**And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a**

mountain to pray, and CONTINUED ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER to God. And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples; and OF THEM HE CHOSE TWELVE, whom also he named apostles; Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes, And Judas the brother of James, AND JUDAS ISCARIOT, WHICH WAS ALSO THE TRAITOR.

**Luke 6:12-16**

I want you to notice how much care Jesus took when he chose the apostles. Did you know that the apostles were chosen out of a larger group of disciples?

What else could he do to prevent betrayal and disloyalty? **What could go wrong when a leader as wise and as anointed as Jesus takes a decision?** What could go wrong when a leader spends so much time in prayer? And yet, something went very wrong! Three and a half years later Jesus was betrayed by one of these apostles.

If this happened to Jesus, it can happen to you! You are not greater than your master!

**Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.**

**John 15:20**

No matter your leadership abilities or strategies, some disloyalty is virtually inevitable. One out of the twelve disciples

was a traitor. This is why I say that disloyalty cannot be prevented per se. However, it can be minimized greatly.

A good leader should be conscious of this principle. When you know that someone from within may one day fight you, you will be more careful about how you conduct your affairs. It is a very sobering thought to think that a familiar friend you eat with could one day turn against you. Such people may take things you said out of context to misrepresent you. *They may re-describe events to give a wrong impression.*

**Yea, mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me.**

**Psalm 41:9**

When you are conscious of the fact that potential traitors are in your midst today, you conduct your affairs with even greater circumspection!

When you are aware that there is bound to be a traitor, you make extra precautions to ensure that *you do not become that traitor!*

## **2. TEACHING IS IMMUNIZATION AGAINST DISLOYALTY**

Teaching cannot totally prevent disloyalty but can minimize it greatly. Teaching is like primary health care that seeks to tackle health issues from the preventive point of view.

In September 1978, the International Conference on Primary Health Care met in Alma-Ata, and defined primary health

care nicely.

Primary health care includes at least: EDUCATION concerning prevailing health problems and the methods of preventing and controlling them; PROMOTION OF FOOD SUPPLY and proper nutrition; an adequate supply of SAFE WATER and BASIC SANITATION; maternal and child health care, including family planning; IMMUNIZATION against the major infectious diseases; prevention and CONTROL OF LOCALLY ENDEMIC DISEASES; appropriate treatment of common diseases and injuries; and provision of essential drugs. (*Caps mine*)

Primary health care was to form an integral part of the country's health system and become the central function and main focus. Health workers have realized that the mainstay of successful medicine is in the preventive dimension. You will notice that primary health care involves providing education, safe water, basic sanitation, immunization and a reliable food supply. These things are very good at improving the health of the nation. These things are also much cheaper to provide than costly surgical treatments.

I have said all this to say that the Church must see the wisdom in preventing spiritual problems. We must rise up and provide a good supply of food and spiritual immunization. Spiritual immunization involves teaching directly and unambiguously against disloyalty, betrayal, rebellion and ingratitude. Some pastors do not like facing issues head on. Immunization is not an injection that generally treats all diseases.

It is a direct attack on a specific disease with the intention of preventing it.

Primary health care has not eradicated all diseases because, it cannot. However, it has definitely reduced the incidence of certain diseases. It has improved the general health of many nations.

God has shown us the way to prevent the destruction of His church. Let us embrace the wisdom of God and it will take us forward. Let us teach faithfulness and loyalty until the deception of rebellion is eradicated.

### **3. TEACHINGS ON LOYALTY MUST BE REMEMBERED IN THE HOUR OF TEMPTATION**

**And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, SATAN HATH DESIRED TO HAVE YOU, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. And he said unto him, Lord, I AM READY TO GO WITH THEE, BOTH INTO PRISON, AND TO DEATH. And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.**

**Luke 22:31-34**

Like with all temptations, it is important to remember the things we have learnt when it really matters. I have heard people make profound declarations of commitment. That is exactly what Peter did.

*But when it really mattered, Peter forgot all the things*

*he had said.* You must remember the things you say. You must remember the pronouncements you make both in public and in private. What use is a husband who says sweet words at his wedding reception but forgets them two years later? Of what use is a man who says on his wedding night, 'I will love you forever' but dumps you after seven years? Forever does not mean seven years! Forever means forever!

You must remember the letters you write. It is easy to write things and to make promises. But it seems we all have a tendency to forget what we have said in the past. Thank God, Peter had a second chance. Peter was the most vocal apostle.

Everyone remembered Peter's declarations. All four gospels record this incident and that is significant. You must realize that the writers of the gospel did not always record the same events. For instance, Matthew, Mark and Luke recorded practically the same healings. They all recorded the healing of the woman with the issue of blood. But John, the writer of the fourth gospel, did not. John recorded a number of healings. But most of the healings he recorded, such as the noble man's son in John chapter four, the lame man at the pool of Bethesda in chapter five, and the blind man in chapter nine and the raising of Lazarus from the dead in chapter eleven were not recorded by Matthew, Mark and Luke.

However, Matthew, Mark, Luke *and* John did remember the incident of Peter's betrayal vividly. That is why it is reported consistently in the four gospels. People will remember you by the things you said. Be careful to remember your commitment in the hour of temptation. You must be loyal to your promises. You must be loyal to your own words and pronouncements. You

must be loyal to your written words.

Many of the people who have been disloyal to me in life and in ministry, said many positive things to me in the past. They were often the most vocal in their expression of commitment. I remember the things they said to me as though it were yesterday. They truly encouraged me at that time. As the years have gone by, I have become a little unimpressed with what people say. Like Jesus, my attitude is more of wait and see. Let's see what you will say when things get rough. I pray for my children in the Lord that they will be stable and faithful to the end.

**Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off. And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together. Peter sat down among them. But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him. And he denied him, saying, WOMAN, I KNOW HIM NOT. [First Denial] And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, MAN, I AM NOT. [Second Denial] And about the space of one hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him: for he is a Galilaean. And Peter said, MAN, I KNOW NOT WHAT THOU SAYEST. [Third Denial] And immediately, *while he yet spake, the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.***

**Luke 22:54-62**

Be a man of honour. Stand by your words. If you said



you would be faithful to the end, then do so. Be a woman of virtue. Do not be erratic, unpredictable and wavering. It is in the hour of temptation that you must remember your sweet words of commitment.

## **4. YOUR LOYALTY IS FIRST TO JESUS CHRIST**

**For there stood by me this night the angel of God, WHOSE I AM, AND WHOM I SERVE.**

**Acts 27:23**

The Apostle Paul in the midst of his crisis, announced to everyone that he belonged to God and that he served the Lord. This fact must be at the forefront of every minister's mind. You are the Lord's, you have been bought with a price and you are to serve only God. If you are a minister of God, your service must be to God and not to politics or any other such thing.

A politician once approached me and asked for my support for his party. I told him, "I have learnt a few lessons in my short life. I cannot support you or any other party per se. I am a pastor and not a politician. No one should try to turn me into a politician for his own gain. I cannot give my support to you just because you ask for it or because you claim to be a Christian."

I encouraged him, "If you tow the line of truth, freedom and justice you will naturally gain the support of Christians. I cannot give myself and my church wholesale to any political group." I do not belong to any political group; I belong to God! I belong to God and I serve God!

**...whose I am, and whom I serve.**

## **5. A LOYAL PERSON DOES NOT DESTROY WHAT HE BUILDS**

**For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.**

**Galatians 2:18**

*There are many destroyers in the church.* Many years ago, a large programme was organized on the university campus with the aim of winning all the unbelievers to Christ. A great man of God was invited as the main speaker for this programme. The crowds gathered in the Great Hall of the university. There was an air of expectancy on campus. To our surprise, when this man of God preached, he lashed out at Charismatic Christians.

He made a mockery of prayer meetings that were being held in the botanical gardens of the university. He said, “Christians were roaring like lions.” He commented that no one could meditate peacefully in the gardens because the Charismatics were *roaring like lions*. This generated peals of laughter from the assembled students. He continued to emphasize that loud prayer in the gardens was superfluous and backward. The people who had prayed for the souls to be saved and for the programme were being ridiculed. Maybe he forgot that Jesus prayed with loud cries and tears.

**During the days of Jesus’ life on earth, he offered up PRAYERS AND PETITIONS WITH LOUD CRIES AND TEARS to the one who could save him from death and he**

was heard...

**Hebrews 5:7**  
**(New International Version)**

Very few people were saved in those meetings! How would unbelievers be attracted to Christ when the pastor was taunting and sneering at Christians? We cannot destroy what we are trying to build. There was no significant addition to the Body of Christ. The destructive words cancelled all the efforts to build. When pastors who claim to be called to the ministry deride and denigrate other ministers, I ask whether they are building or destroying the Body. **Choose whether you are a builder or destroyer and stay within your calling.**

The most wicked and destructive statements I have ever heard about the Body of Christ have come from pastors. Ministers spread reprehensible stories about each other. They ridicule one another privately and from their pulpits. They blacken the reputation of other ministers. Then on Sunday morning they mount their pulpits and try to build the Body they have destroyed during the week.

Do not break down somebody's house in order to build yours. You will only reap what you sow! Do not break down someone else's church in order to build yours. How do you destroy a church? With your mouth of course! Let us choose whether we are building or destroying.

# Chapter four

## ***THE REWARDS OF LOYALTY***

### **WHAT IS THE REWARD OF DISLOYALTY?**

It is a known fact that the rebels of the Bible did not end up well. A curse is a solemn invocation of divine wrath on a person, which results in evil or harm. Look closely at the rebels of the Bible and decide for yourself whether a disloyal person is blessed or cursed.

### **EXECUTION**

The end of all rebels is one and the same – execution. Rebellion is an essentially evil thing. The Bible teaches us that rebellion is as witchcraft.

*For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft...*

*1 Samuel 15:23*

The Biblical punishment for witchcraft is execution.

*Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.*

*Exodus 22:18*

God does not support rebellion in any form or fashion. Do

not involve yourself in any kind of rebellion. The people who get involved in revolts are often simpleminded. Many of them do not know what is afoot.

*And with Absalom went two hundred men out of Jerusalem, that were called; and THEY WENT IN THEIR SIMPLICITY, AND THEY KNEW NOT ANY THING.*

*2 Samuel 15:11*

Many people run into rebellion because of their innocence and ignorance. If Absalom's followers had known exactly what they were doing, I believe they would not have followed him.

The fruit of rebellion throughout the Bible is very clear – execution. God will divinely displace and replace you with someone else. Your seat will be taken by another who is worthier than you. You will be banished into obscurity and oblivion. There will be a curse on you and your family. Just study the following list of executions:

## **SIX FAMOUS EXECUTIONS**

### **Lucifer**

**And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**

**Revelation 12:9**

### **Absalom**

*And ten young men... compassed about and smote  
Absalom, and slew him.*

*2 Samuel 18:15*

### **Ahithophel**

*...Ahithophel... hanged himself, and died...*

*2 Samuel 17:23*

### **Shemei**

*So the king commanded Benaiah... which went out, and fell  
upon him [**Shemei**], that he died.*

*1 Kings 2:46*

### **Adonijah**

*And king Solomon sent by the hand of Benaiah the son of  
Jehoiada; and he fell upon him (Adonijah) that he died.*

*1 Kings 2:25*

### **Judas**

**And he (Judas)... went and hanged himself.**

**Matthew 27:5**

## IS LOYALTY REWARDED?

**...Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things. I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.**

**Matthew 25:21**

This scripture outlines two important blessings that follow loyal or faithful people.

- **Loyalty is rewarded with growth**

Loyal people receive an increase (many things) from the Lord. As you pray for growth in your church and ministry, remember that loyalty is the master key to expansion. Loyalty makes you persist in the same thing until it bears fruit.

I suggest that you engage in a little research. You will discover that large growing churches differ in style, strategy and emphasis. Some of them are soul-winning churches and others have an emphasis on miracles and the Holy Spirit. Some mega-churches are oriented towards social services and political issues. Yet still, some large churches have an emphasis on prosperity and dominion! All of these churches differ greatly in many areas. However, a closer look will reveal that there are some common denominators in every large church.

**Almost all large churches are led by pastors who have remained faithful to the same church for a long time.** When pastors move around every few years, they do not experience consistent growth. If you are a minister who desires expansion and growth, you must be prepared to stay in one place for a long

time. Ask God for the privilege of investing your entire life in one location.

I am in the ministry for the rest of my life. My commitment to the people around me is a lifetime commitment and vice versa. I am loyal to them and I pray that they will be loyal to me. The blessing of largeness is reserved for faithful and loyal people.

- **Loyal people experience the favour of God.**

The second blessing of faithfulness is entering the joy of the Lord. This means experiencing the favour of God. When the favour of God is upon you, your enemies will not flourish around you.

**By this I know that thou favourest me, because mine enemy doth not triumph over me.**

**Psalm 41:11**

Be a loyal person so that you can have great growth in your business or ministry. Be a loyal person so that you can have God's favour over all that you set your hand to do.

## **Chapter five**

### ***ADVENTURES IN GHANA***



**There be three things which go well... a king, against  
whom there is no rising up.**

**Proverbs 30:29,31**

The short history of Ghana describes one rebellion after another. They are not spiritual examples but they are good enough for you to learn something from them. Jesus used seeds, trees, rivers and even falling towers to teach important lessons. You will see the outcome of disloyalty by looking at the history of Ghana. From the first president, Kwame Nkrumah, until now, there has been one insurrection after the other. All the separatists have had good reasons for their actions. It is interesting to note that the reasons given each time were basically the same.

By studying the outcome of these adventures, I would like you to decide for yourselves whether rebels and anarchists are blessed or cursed. The dictionary defines anarchism as “the doctrine that all government should be abolished”. People who fight against existing governments are therefore anarchists.

## **Wave After Wave**

In 1956, the British colonial government threw a challenge to the people of Ghana, undertaking that it would be ready to accept a motion calling for independence within the Commonwealth, passed by a reasonable majority in a newly elected legislature.

Fresh elections were thus held on the 12<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup> of July, 1956. The Convention People's Party (CPP) won the elections. With the people having expressed their confidence in the CPP, Kwame Nkrumah tabled a motion for independence for

the 3<sup>rd</sup> of August, 1956. Independence was finally granted to the Gold Coast on the 6<sup>th</sup> of March, 1957 under the new name Ghana. However, by 1966 the government of Kwame Nkrumah, Ghana's first elected president was crumbling because of political, economic and social reasons.

### **The First Wave of Insurrectionists**

In February 1966, Ghana experienced her first wave of rebellion that toppled an elected government. On the dawn of February 24<sup>th</sup>, 1966 a group of officers and men of the Ghana Army led by Lieutenant Colonel E.K. Kotoka and Major A.A. Afrifa with the support of the police, removed Nkrumah from office whilst he was on a peace mission to Hanoi on the invitation of Premier Ho Chi Minh.

At 1 p.m., on the same day, a spokesman on the Accra radio justified the coup because of the “misdeeds” of Nkrumah who they claimed was “running the country as his own personal property”.

### **The Second Wave of Insurrectionists**

However, barely a year after this first insurgency, two new rebels, Lieutenant S. Arthur and Lieutenant M. Yeboah, led one hundred and twenty troops in armoured vehicles from the Reconnaissance Regiment B Squadron in Ho. In the early morning of 17<sup>th</sup> April, 1967 they attempted to seize power under a plan that was code named *Operation Guitar Boy*.

Kotoka, one of the leaders of the first wave, was arrested

at the Flag Staff House and wounded by gunfire. He was eventually shot and killed near the location of the Accra Airport. Kotoka was killed with his ADC Captain Cephass Borkloe and his servant Sergeant Osei Grunshie. **When you follow a rebel you are forever welded to his future disasters.** You will notice that the Accra airport was named after him.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

General Ankrah, who was the Chairman of the National Liberation Council (NLC), managed to climb over the Osu Castle walls and swim to the safety of the Osu Police Station.

The chief rebel, Lieutenant Arthur managed to gain access to the broadcasting house and announced the replacement of the NLC (the then ruling government) with a new government.

Unfortunately, for Lieutenant Arthur, at 10 a.m. on the same morning, Captain Sowu, who identified himself as being loyal to the government, announced that the coup attempt had been foiled. After a while, the two principal anarchists (people who fight against governments), Lieutenant Arthur and Lieutenant Yeboah were arrested. They were tried before a military tribunal chaired by Lt. Col. Coker-Appiah and sentenced to death. They were executed on the 26<sup>th</sup> of May, 1967.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

By 26<sup>th</sup> of May, 1967 the second wave of insurrectionists

(Arthur and Yeboah) were executed. One of the first wave of insurrectionists (Kotoka) was also dead.

Two years after these events, civilian rule was restored to Ghana through an election that took place on August 29, 1969. Dr. K.A. Busia was inaugurated as the Prime Minister on October 1, 1969 at the Independence Square.

### **The Third Wave of Insurrectionists**

However, it was only twenty-six months later that this elected government was overthrown in a coup d'état on 13<sup>th</sup> January, 1972. The leader of this third wave of insurrectionists was Colonel I.K. Acheampong, who was then the Commander of the 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry Brigade of the Ghana Army.

Reasons were given for this insurgency. First of all, the deteriorating state of the economy, corruption in the government of Busia and finally the lack of concern for the conditions of the common man. The leader of this insurrection, Col. Acheampong deplored the previous government's "*lack of will to act decisively on the economic crisis.*" He spoke of a system "*that exploited the ordinary people, the workers and the farmers on whose sweat and toil the wheels of the economy turns.*" You will notice that the same themes run through the speeches of all those involved in revolts and rebellion.

### **The Fourth Wave of Insurrectionists**

However, by 1978 the government of General Acheampong was faced with enormous social and political prob-

lems that led to its downfall. General Acheampong tried to introduce the concept of a union government. Professional bodies, like the Ghana Bar Association, stirred up opposition against General Acheampong. The Ghana Medical Association even withdrew its services temporarily. The Christian Council and The Catholic Secretariat openly criticised the government of the day. University student demonstrations were the order of the day. Various other demonstrations and social upheavals threatened the stability of the nation. *At this stage, we must welcome with “good reasons” the fourth wave of insurrectionists.*

On the 5<sup>th</sup> of July 1978, a palace coup was staged against General Acheampong. He was overthrown by Lt. Gen. Frederick William Kwasi Akuffo who was then Acheampong’s *Deputy* and the Commander of the Armed Forces.

Once again, reasons were given by Akuffo who accused Acheampong *of having divided the country and running a one-man-show government*. By now you will be used to the reasons that are usually given for these uprisings.

A constitutional provision was put in place which indemnified the current and previous military governments. There was also a refusal by the government to prosecute General Acheampong and others who, were perceived to have been engaged in corruption. It soon dawned on the public that General Akuffo and his government were also engaged in corruption and other economic crimes. That was the only explanation for their refusal to prosecute the former head of state, General Acheampong. They obviously lacked the moral strength needed to prosecute the former head of state. With tensions mounting in the country, we must once again welcome with “good reasons”

another wave of insurrectionists.

## **The Fifth Wave of Insurrectionists**

It was probably no surprise to Ghanaians when junior officers of the air force led by a talented young pilot tried to unseat the government. On the 15<sup>th</sup> of May, 1979, Flight Lieutenant Jerry John Rawlings unsuccessfully attempted to overthrow the government. Reasons for this uprising included the injustice in society and the tarnished image of the Ghana Army. Less than three weeks later, on the morning of the 4<sup>th</sup> of June, 1979, when the Court Martial trying Rawlings and his accomplices was to resume sitting, a group of officers and soldiers, led by Major Boakye-Gyan released Rawlings and his men from prison.

Soon the troops gained control of the Ghana Broadcasting Corporation but were dislodged by Major General Odartey-Wellington, who was loyal to the government. By 11 a.m. the separatists had recaptured the Ghana Broadcasting Corporation, leading to the death of General Wellington at the Nima Police Station. Eventually the government was successfully deposed and several arrests were made.

Ghana's new government, the Armed Forces Revolutionary Council, was chaired by Flt. Lt. J.J. Rawlings. This new government instituted a house cleaning operation to erase all manifestations of corruption and profiteering associated with past governments. Ghana's new leader intended to awaken the masses to their rights and responsibilities. Ghana's new Chairman declared his irrevocable commitment to returning the nation to civilian rule.

Within twelve days, the first step was taken to “clean the house”. On June 16<sup>th</sup> General I.K. Acheampong (of the third wave of insurrectionists) and Major General Utuka were executed after a trial by a revolutionary court at the Teshie military range.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of June, just ten days later, more executions were carried out by the new government. Lt. Gen. A.A. Afrifa, an ex-Head of State and Chairman of the NLC was executed. You will recall that this was one of the two leaders of the “first wave of insurrectionists on the 24<sup>th</sup> of February, 1966”.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

Other people who were executed on the same day were: Major General Kotei, Air Vice-Marshall Boakye, Rear Admiral Amedume and Colonel Felli. Also killed on the same day was General F.W.K. Akuffo, the just deposed Head of State. You will recall that General Akuffo led the “fourth wave of insurrectionists”. As you can imagine, the whole nation was thrown into a state of crippling fear and shock. At this stage, you will notice that *all* the leaders of past insurgencies had received a similar fate – death and execution.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

A few months later, on the 24<sup>th</sup> of September, after effectively “cleaning the house”, Chairman Rawlings handed over power to Dr. Hilla Limann. There had been a democratic election and Ghana was back to a parliamentary democracy.

## **The Sixth Wave of Insurrectionists**

There were once again reports of corruption and a deterioration in the economy. Only two years have gone by and we must welcome the sixth wave of Ghanaian insurrectionists. Once again, “good reasons” are drummed up to excuse the inexcusable and to defend the indefensible.

On the 31<sup>st</sup> December, 1981 Ghanaians were introduced to yet another abrupt end to democratic governance. Another rebellion had taken place! The ruling government was toppled and a familiar face emerged, in the person of Flt. Lt. J.J. Rawlings. For similar reasons, Ghanaians were made to embark on another revolution. Ghana embarked on ten years of dictatorial rule characterized by arbitrary arrests, seizures of property, disappearance of human beings and abuse of fundamental human rights. After ten years of ruling under the banner of a provisional council, Ghana was persuaded to return to democracy.

In November 1992, the government of Chairman Rawlings metamorphosed into an elected democracy. This democracy has lasted several years. The state of Ghana after almost twenty years of the same leadership is ironic. This is because you could well describe the state of the nation by reading a page out of its history under previous leaders who were overthrown and ex-



ecuted for mismanaging the nation.

Strikes and demonstrations by workers, students, nurses and doctors have been rampant in the last years under this leadership. Even some of the most unusual groups have been on strike under the Rawlings' administration. The Bread Sellers Association, the Traders (Shop Owners) Association and even prison officers were among the unusual groups who found conditions so unbearable that they went on strike. Whoever heard of traders closing down their shops in protest of the trying economic situation?

The educational sector under the Acheampong era was seriously affected with teachers and lecturers leaving the country for other countries especially Nigeria. Under the Rawlings era the educational sector also experienced dark days. Inconceivable circumstances were created, such as having eight students crowd into a hostel room designed for one person. You could have as many as one thousand five hundred students in one lecture, in a room designed for a much smaller number. We could ask ourselves whether they were having a *miracle service* or an *educational lecture*! For the first time since independence, British universities declared that they would no longer recognize qualifications from Ghanaian universities. As the quixotic educational experiment continued, the children of many of the nation's political leaders were safely tucked away in British, American and other western schools and universities.

Under the Acheampong regime, industries were forced to close down or produce below twenty-five percent capacity. Many industries laid off their staff at this point. Inflation under Acheampong rose from 24.7% in 1974 to 116.4% in 1977. You can imagine the effect of this on the majority of Ghanaians.

In the year 2000, the adventure under the Rawlings administration continued. Industries, companies and businesses struggled to survive. In my opinion, the economy totally crashed in the year 2000. Rumours of corruption were rife. External factors were blamed, but many felt that there were more internal factors than external ones. The national currency lost its value and became worthless. There was a shortage of foreign exchange and even local currency. Some people had to queue to get their money out of the bank.

In 1983, an airline ticket from Ghana to London cost *six thousand Ghanaian Cedis*. After seventeen years of this leadership, a ticket cost more than *six million Cedis*. That represents inflation of over *one hundred thousand percent (100,000%)*. I will leave you to do your own comparison between the inflation under Gen. Acheampong (116% inflation) and Flt. Lt. Rawlings (100,000%).

Another chapter in the Book of Exodus was almost written in the year 2000. Embassies of western nations like the Britain and the USA experienced an unprecedented flood of visa applications. Some of these embassies received over five thousand applications per month. The official rhetoric was, “*Come home and invest in Ghana*”, but the reality was, “*Escape from Ghana if you can!*”

Some people ask, “What will happen in the future?” Perhaps King Solomon can help us with the answer.

**THE THING THAT HATH BEEN, IT IS THAT WHICH SHALL BE; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any**

**thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.**

**Ecclesiastes 1:9,10**

After looking at the history of the waves of insurgencies in Ghana, you will discover a pattern. You will notice that mutineers always have good reasons for doing what they do. Their reasons are usually similar. You will notice how the end of these heroic but regrettable exploits has similar conclusions!

# **Chapter six**

## ***ADVENTURES IN NIGERIA***

**There be three things which go well... a king, against  
whom there is no rising up.**

**Proverbs 30:29,31**

Let us now turn our attention to Nigeria. Nigeria is another nation that has had adventures with different kinds of leaders. The pattern is similar. One after the other, there is an example of disloyalty and treachery for which people pay the ultimate price. It is a lesson of the penalty that all rebels will ultimately pay.

### **The First Adventure**

Nigeria is a West African country that had its independence from British colonial rule in 1960. Nnamdi Azikiwe became the first president of the senate and later Governor-General and President of the country. The prime minister of the country was Tafawa Balewa. Unfortunately, rivalry and mistrust degenerated into a power struggle between these two heads. The question was, “Who really wielded executive power?” and “Who had control over the armed forces?” Was it the president or was it the prime minister? As Azikiwe himself said, “Nigeria

was not ready to have a constitutional head of state with hollow power, working parallel with a power loaded head of government.”

No matter what may be the good relations between the two people involved, external factors are bound to provoke feelings and sow seeds of misunderstanding. At a point, the two leaders engaged in a struggle to gain the support of the armed forces. This was resolved only after Chief Justice Ademola negotiated a deal. It is believed that it was this struggle that made the armed forces of Nigeria aware that they had a political role to play. The way was thus paved for military coups and takeovers in Nigeria.

### **The First Wave of Rebellion**

The first wave of rebellion took place on the 15<sup>th</sup> of January 1966. Five Majors in the Nigerian army planned a coup and executed it. They were Major Kaduna Nzeogwu, Major E. Ifeajuna, Major D. Okafor, Major Anuforo and Major Ademoyega. They gave reasons such as: stamping out tribalism, nepotism and regionalism. Their coup was very bloody. It involved the assassination of the leaders of the federal, northern and western regional governments. The prime minister, other ministers, the premier of the Western region and top military officers were all eliminated.

However, the coup was only partly successful because not everyone on the elimination list was executed. Under the circumstances of a partly successful coup and an assassinated prime minister, the general officer commanding the Nigerian army, General Aguiyi-Ironsi, “persuaded” what was left of the

federal cabinet to hand over power to him. In his speech on the 16<sup>th</sup> of January he said, *“The military government of the Republic of Nigeria, wishes to state that it has taken over the interim government of the Republic of Nigeria following the invitation of the Counsel of Ministers of the last government for the army to do.”*

Although Ironsi alluded to a voluntary handing over of power to him, speculations have it that he was party to the coup. For instance, he was not killed like all the other senior officers from the north of the country. Almost all the military officers killed in the coup were northerners or westerners. Interestingly, Gen. Ironsi did not put the five Majors who planned and executed the coup, on trial.

### **The Second Wave of Rebellion**

As is the pattern with these things, one rebellion led to another. After two months of riots against the government, General Ironsi was murdered in a revenge coup on 28<sup>th</sup> July 1966. The General was at Ibadan to open a conference of traditional rulers. He was suddenly abducted by a group of northern soldiers who killed him and his host, the military governor of the west, Colonel Adekunle Fajuyi. This coup, codenamed “Operation Araba”, had been in the offing since the January coup that brought Gen. Ironsi into power. It was planned by a few officers including Major Murtala Mohammed. Interestingly, Gen. Ironsi’s assassination was not announced until the next year 14<sup>th</sup> January 1967.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

It seemed that other than revenge killings against the previous leader, there was no clear cut plan to takeover power. This paved the way for the introduction of a new face, Lt. Col. Yakubu Gowon. He announced on the 1<sup>st</sup> of August 1966, that he had been brought to “shoulder the great responsibilities of the country and the armed forces with the consent of the majority of the Supreme Military Council.”

**However, it is not easy for a rebellious ‘pastor’ to govern a group of rebels he has formed into a ‘church’.** I do not envy separatists pastors who try to lead their breakaway congregations into unity. In the same way, it is not easy for a head of state, who comes into power under questionable circumstances, to rule his subjects.

The military governor of the eastern region, Col. Ojukwu, refused to accept Gowon’s ascension to power; he insisted on knowing what happened to Gen. Ironsi whose assassination was not officially announced until the next year. He also demanded that Brigadier Ogundipe, the next most senior officer, should take the reins of power.

This led to serious and irreconcilable problems between head of state, Gen. Gowon, and the eastern military leader of Nigeria, Col. Ojukwu.

Between May and September 1966 an estimated eighty to hundred thousand easterners were killed in the north of Nigeria. Ojukwu concluded that the safety of easterners outside the Eastern Region could not be guaranteed and asked them to return home. From October 1966, relations between the eastern government and the federal (main) government, deteriorated rapidly.

On the 4<sup>th</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> of January 1967 a peace summit between Ojukwu (the Eastern leader) and Gowon (the National leader) was held in the Aburi mountains of Ghana. Unfortunately, the gains of the Aburi Summit vanished soon after.

In a dawn broadcast on the 30<sup>th</sup> of May, Col. Ojukwu proclaimed an independent state in the Eastern part of Nigeria, to be known as the Republic of Biafra. A civil war had begun and raged on for two and a half years. Ojukwu seemed to have external support. French supplies of arms and Italian sympathies became the lifeline to Biafra. At the height of the civil war, a devastating but clever decision to change the Nigerian currency was successfully weathered by the Biafran Republic. Perhaps their foreign support was generated because the Easterners presented the war as a genocidal one waged by the Northern Muslims to exterminate Igbos (Eastern Nigerians) from the face of the earth.

On 12<sup>th</sup> January 1970, the civil war ended when Lt. Col. Philip Effiong announced the surrender of Biafra. Ojukwu handed over his defeated republic and fled to the Ivory Coast a day before the announcement was made.

### **The Third Wave of Rebellion**

Although Gowon survived the rebellion of Ojukwu, a new wave of rebellion was brewing in the country. Giving reasons as they all do, a group of officers swept into power. We welcome at this stage a new head of state, Murtala Mohammed. Although new to the presidency, he had been part of a previous overthrow and assassination of head of state, General Ironsi. It



seems as though the tendency to overthrow existing leadership had never gone out of this man. He came to power in a bloodless coup. The military takeover was hailed for its maturity because there was no bloodshed. However, it must not be forgotten that Murtala Mohammed was one of the people who murdered the Nigerian head of state, General Ironsi.

As was the pattern, the new leader gave good reasons for his takeover. I wish to state here, that in the church world, rebels, disloyal people and unfaithful Christians often have good reasons to give for their actions. The reasons are always similar. They involve wise sounding criticism from righteous members and ministers. These reasonable sounding assistant pastors propound commonsense theories which they claim, are not being followed by their leaders. Many men of God look stupid in the light of the criticism of their detractors. Notice the speech of Murtala Mohammed. He was giving the background for the inevitable change.

*“After the civil war, the affairs of state, hitherto a collective responsibility, became characterized by lack of consultations, indecision, indiscipline and even neglect. Indeed the public at large became disillusioned and disappointed by these developments. The trend was clearly incompatible with the philosophy and image of our corrective regime. Things got to a stage where the head of the administration became virtually inaccessible... and when advice was tendered it was often ignored. The nation was thus plunged inexorably into chaos. It was obvious that matters could not... be allowed to continue in this matter.*

The head of state, Gen. Gowon found himself being compulsorily retired along with other Generals.

I remember when one man of God said, “Some people are trying to retire me. But I cannot be retired!”

### **The Fourth Wave of Rebellion**

The Murtala Mohammed administration moved quickly to consolidate its position and move the nation forward. But on the 13<sup>th</sup> of February 1976, yet another group of rebels emerged. They called themselves *The Young Revolutionaries*. They were led by Colonel Dimka (a sort of brother-in-law to Gowon). The head of state, General Mohammed, was ambushed while driving in an unescorted car which was held up in traffic. Murtala Mohammed's aide-de-camp, his driver, orderly and Col. Taiwo, the military governor of Kwara State, were all killed in the ambush. You will remember that Murtala Mohammed was involved in the ambush and murder of head of state Gen. Ironsi whilst he was attending a conference in Ibadan.

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

The coup makers seemed to have mixed motives. Some of these included grudges against certain officers in the army over promotion. A second possible motive was the restoration of Gen. Gowon (then a student at Warwick University in England) who was overthrown by Gen Mohammed. Although Gowon denied involvement, some facts seem to implicate him. Dimka's elder brother, who was the Kwara State's Police Commissioner at the time, was married to Gowon's elder sister. Abdulkarim Zakari, the only civilian executed, worked at the

Nigerian Broadcasting Corporation and provided the martial music tapes used for the coup broadcasts. He was Gowon's wife's elder brother.

More than fifty officers were tried for this uprising. Thirty-two of them were executed including Col. Dimka. Gen Obasanjo, the deputy head of state succeeded the slain Murtala Mohammed. He ruled from February 1976 to October 1979. He handed over power to a civilian president, Shehu Shagari, who ruled from 1979 to 1983.

### **The Fifth Wave of Rebellion**

We must at this time introduce to you the fifth wave of rebellion.

On 31<sup>st</sup> December 1983, Brigadier Sani Abacha gave a radio broadcast beamed across Nigeria announcing a coup. This brought in the government of General Buhari, which lasted only two years from 1983 to 1985. As usual, there was a speech that cited good enough reasons for the overthrow of legitimate leadership.

*“Our economy has been hopelessly mismanaged. We have become a debtor and beggarly nation. There is inadequacy of food at reasonable prices for our people. Health services are in shambles as our hospitals are reduced to mere consulting clinics, without drugs, water and equipment. Our educational system is deteriorating at an alarming rate. Unemployment figures have reached embarrassing and unacceptable proportions. In some states, workers are being owed salary arrears of eight to twelve months. Yet our leaders revel in*

*squandermania, corruption and indiscipline and continue to proliferate public appointments in complete disregard of our stark economic realities.” (Radio broadcast by Sani Abacha 31<sup>st</sup> December 1983)*

The Buhari regime instituted a strong authoritarian rule which enabled them to detain critics and opponents without trial in police cells. A reign of terror was unleashed. Arbitrary arrests, torture and indeterminate detention were widely practiced. Even the breaking of suspects' skulls during interrogation was practiced. The Nigerian Bar Association, The Nigerian Medical Association and the National Association of Students all joined the anti-government movement. The military government threatened to close down permanently any institution where student protests resulted in a breakdown of law and order. Unfortunately, the Buhari government was not able to overcome or even manage the problems it inherited.

The stage was set for yet another rebellious overthrow. It is almost as though a drama with puppets was being enacted.

### **The Sixth Wave of Rebellion**

We now welcome General Ibrahim Babangida for the next adventure in Nigerian leadership.

On the 26<sup>th</sup> of August 1985, General Buhari and his assistant Idiagbon were removed from power. They were retired from the army and put in detention (house arrest) for three years and four months. Once again, reasons were given for the takeover. Reasons given by the Babangida group were: *a failure to salvage the economy and a failure to restore social services to the*

*nation*. It also cited the regime's lack of consultation with the rest of the military and society, authoritarianism, poor human rights record and the lack of a program to return the country to civilian rule were all reasons given.

Babangida presented the image of a redeemer who had overthrown an impregnable dictatorship. Babangida eventually returned the country to civil rule. After a lot of civil strife and political violence, an election was held. But before the election we must welcome yet another wave of rebellion!

### **The Seventh Wave of Rebellion**

On the 22<sup>nd</sup> April 1990, Major Gideon Orkar attempted to overthrow Babangida. Orkar declared in his broadcast, *"This is just not another coup, but well conceived, planned and executed, for the marginalized, oppressed and enslaved people of the middle belt and the south, with a view to freeing ourselves and our children yet unborn from eternal slavery and colonization by a clique in this country."*

The coup was described by the government as the bloodiest in the country's history. Sixty-seven officers were eventually executed after being tried by a military tribunal. This coup accelerated the movement of the seat of power from Dodan barracks in Lagos to the more fortified Aso Rock in Abuja. Of course one needs more and more protection from anarchists!

**...for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.**

**Matthew 26:52**

When presidential elections were held in 1993, Babangida annulled these elections claiming that they were not free and fair. He eventually formed an interim national government headed by Ernest Shonekan. Under pressure from the military, he stepped aside on the 27<sup>th</sup> of August 1993. However, before his exit, he announced the retirement of the army chiefs. Sani Abacha was the only one who continued as Defence Minister.

### **The Eighth Wave of Rebellion**

For this wave of rebellion, we introduce a familiar face and a veteran of many coups. On the 17<sup>th</sup> November 1993, Sani Abacha had announced that he had accepted the “resignation” of Ernest Shonekan and had “dutifully” taken over as head of state to save the country from drifting into further collapse. Abacha portrayed his takeover as a voluntary relinquishment of power by the interim government. This was to avoid the displeasure of the civilian population.

General Abacha put Abiola in prison after he declared himself as president by getting sworn in at a ceremony at Rowe Park in Lagos. Abacha unleashed a reign of terror. On two occasions he made allegations of coups against the government. One he made up and the other he engineered. This enabled him to imprison vocal critics, including Obasanjo, a former head of state, and Obasanjo’s deputy Yar Adua, who died in jail. Even Abacha’s second-in-command was incarcerated in December 1997.

However, the early hours of 8<sup>th</sup> June 1998 brought the end of this wave of anarchy. Abacha died in mysterious circumstances and was buried hurriedly. His death was openly cel-

ebrated. This is contrary to a culture that usually forgives the dead and speaks no evil of them.

Dear Christian friend, the short histories of Nigeria and Ghana since independence are indeed very revealing. They show us repeated rebellions, overthrows and acts of treachery. One frightening thing is the way the reasons for rebellions are almost identical. The results of the rebellions are also almost always identical. The continual overthrowing of one government after the other testifies to the way history repeats itself. Although these are not spiritual examples, they are *good examples* we can learn from. They contain parallel truths of what we see in the church, business, and political worlds.

# Chapter seven

## *THREE COMMON CAUSES OF DISLOYALTY*

In this chapter, we want to examine three common causes that lead a person to disloyalty. The first thing we will consider is what I call an erratic personality or character.

### 1. AN ERRATIC PERSONALITY

There are some people who have a disposition to make sudden decisions. They can alter the plan of their lives within minutes. They can change their entire course within seconds. This is a very dangerous trait. Such people can be with you today but can desert you tomorrow. You will notice this trait in people who enter relationships and break up suddenly. When they speak of their commitment to a cause, you will be impressed by their speech. But don't be fooled! These people are usually gifted speakers and orators. They will change direction without any major provocation, to your surprise!

I am not writing about some theory in the Bible. I am talking about practical things that I have seen. **I have seen the most committed and ardent followers change course in mid-stream.** Because I have seen several people do this, I am convinced that it is a character or personality trait which some peo-



ple have.

This is what the Bible speaks of in Proverbs 24:21.

**My son, fear thou the Lord and the king: and meddle not with them that are GIVEN TO CHANGE:**

**Proverbs 24:21**

Do you have a tendency to change course suddenly after you have been extremely committed to something? I would not like to be in a relationship like that! I would not like to have an assistant pastor like that. Such people will write letters to you when you are not expecting them. They will resign at the week-end without notice. They will ask someone to phone you to tell you that they are out of the country.

Their word is not worth anything! A Christian must be a person who makes a statement and sticks to his word no matter what it costs.

**...He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not.**

**Psalm 15:4**

God is faithful to us even when we are not faithful to Him. Nothing makes Him change His mind!

**If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: HE CANNOT DENY HIMSELF.**

**2 Timothy 2:13**

God is trying to build up a breed of Christians who do not change their minds easily about the convictions they have. Thank God that Jesus did not change his mind when he came

into this world and experienced such hatred and animosity from the people he loved.

**The ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ is not safe in the hands of erratic leaders.** Today, they are ministers of the gospel and tomorrow they become social activists. Some switch suddenly from being ministers of religion to becoming politicians. Today, they are faith preachers and tomorrow they are against the faith movement!

You will often notice a trend in the lives of such people. There is a history of changing, altering and switching from one thing to the other. If you have an erratic nature, decide today to be a solid and steadfast believer.

## **2. FINANCIAL REASONS**

The next cause of disloyalty has financial roots.

**For the love of money is THE ROOT OF ALL EVIL: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.**

**1 Timothy 6:10**

The love of money is the root of *all* evil. Certainly, one of the evils that is stirred up by the love of money is disloyalty and rebellion. I have noticed that almost every rebellion is linked to some financial considerations. There is something about money that stirs up disloyalty. There are two categories of problems that arise from financial roots – *financial misunderstanding* and *financial covetousness*.

## Financial Misunderstanding

Many of the rebellions in denominations are over issues of salaries, conditions of services, emoluments and benefits. There is often a background of financial need and poverty. **I have seen many Christians serve the Lord perfectly, but they seem to change when financial issues come up.** There are several reasons why money causes problems and leads to divisions in churches.

Firstly, many pastors have not had any working experience in the secular world and therefore, they have unfortunate misconceptions about how much they should be paid. They do not know what kinds of salaries and benefits prevail.

One day, I attended a seminar for leaders in another church. At one point in the meeting, there was a general discussion about the conditions of service for ministers. I began asking some questions.

I called out three people and asked them, “How long have you been working?” One of them had been working for sixteen years in a bank. The other had worked as a teacher for eight years. The third had been into private business for several years. Then I asked them, “Which of you has a car?”

None of them owned a car! You see, in the economy of Ghana you almost need to be a millionaire to own a car.

I then pointed out some things to the group.

“Look at this man who has worked in the bank for sixteen years. His workplace has not provided him with a car.”

I continued, “Do you see this teacher who has taught for eight years and yet has no car?”

“The businessman who controls his own income has not been able to buy a car.” I asked the group, “Why is it that when someone becomes a pastor, he wants to be given a car immediately?”

I pointed out that the educational qualifications of many of the pastors are very minimal. In the secular field, many of these pastors could not rise higher than the position of a security officer or a clerk. Yet, they want to have conditions of service similar to Chief Executives! This is just not realistic.

Indeed, this common misunderstanding between junior pastors and senior pastors of the management rank is a common cause for rebellion, discontentment and anarchy in churches.

*Anarchism is a political theory that all governments and laws should be abolished.* It comes from a French word, ‘anarchy’. An anarchist is someone who fights governments. When such a person becomes a pastor, you can imagine the controversy and conflict he will stir up. He will try to dismantle the order and authority structure in the church. He will say things like, “We are all equal! We are all called! We are all anointed! We will not allow ourselves to be cheated by anyone!”

Because of this common misunderstanding that arises between the employer and the employed, I am very careful about employing anyone. I have very few employed staff. I believe that people must mature in their understanding of employment issues. If we are not careful, the church can turn into another forum for unions and strikes! Soon there may be industrial action taken against bishops and head pastors.

One thing I do not like, is to work with discontented people. I learnt that from the Lord. Do you remember how the

Lord abandoned the Israelites in the desert because they complained so much? There was so much murmuring among the Israelites that Almighty God was fed up. He took a decision to relieve them of their privileged position!

Once I had some full-time pastors working in a church. They began to complain about their conditions of service. Soon I received different reports of various comments they had made. It sounded as though the church was mistreating them. I marvelled because these young men did not appreciate what they had.

As the intensity of the complaints mounted, I decided to lay them off. I would rather not have a church than to have a church with a complaining pastor. We called them to the headquarters and gave them a handsome amount of money to settle them. I heard that they even complained about the amount of money that was given in the settlement.

I told them, “Look for jobs in the secular world and be lay pastors.”

They began to look for jobs in the secular world. After several months one of them returned and said, “I now realize that I had one of the best jobs in Ghana.”

He pleaded to be re-employed by the church. This is the maturing experience I am referring to.

If you are an overseer of a group of churches, I would advise you to allow discontented people to discover for themselves what conditions prevail out there in the hard world. It is important that you maintain an atmosphere of loyalty at all costs.

## **Financial Covetousness**

When I speak about covetousness I am not talking about people who are in need. In this case, we are dealing with people who want more, more and more! The Bible teaches that people who love money are not satisfied with more money.

**He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver...**

**Ecclesiastes 5:10**

Apostle Peter warned against people who enter the ministry for the love of money. The ministry is the wrong profession if all you want is to acquire wealth. If you love money, please stay in the secular world and earn all you can. When you come into the ministry, your aim must be to make full proof of your calling. God's ministry is not a business so please do not turn it into one.

Do you remember how Jesus threw out people who turned the church into a business centre?

**And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves; And he would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple. And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but YE HAVE MADE IT A DEN OF THIEVES.**

**Mark 11:15-17**

I cannot leave this subject without mentioning two classic examples of pastors who suffered from covetousness (Rev.

Gehazi and Rev. Judas!). Gehazi, the associate pastor of Elisha could not resist the temptation of using the ministry as a business. He wanted to charge money for the gift of God. He was charging for prophecies and healings. Does that sound familiar?

Naaman the Syrian, the one whom he charged, detected the spirit of covetousness in Rev. Gehazi. Why do I say that Naaman detected the spirit of covetousness in Gehazi? Because, even though Gehazi asked for one talent of silver, Naaman, the unbeliever, said to him, “*Be content* and TAKE TWO talents.” Naaman detected the pastor’s spirit of greed!

**And Naaman said, BE CONTENT, TAKE TWO TALENTS. And he urged him, and bound two talents of silver in two bags, with two changes of garments, and laid them upon two of his servants; and they bare them before him.**

**2 Kings 5:23**

It is sad that an unbeliever should have to correct a minister of the gospel in this way. Gehazi was virtually told by a sinner not to be greedy.

Dear pastor, did you know that unbelievers can see through our greed and covetousness? They laugh at us in their homes and denigrate the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ (to denigrate means to blacken the reputation of a thing). It is unfortunate that when you call yourself a minister today, people look at you with suspicion. This is because of Rev. Gehazi and others like him.

Elisha, the senior pastor, asked a very pertinent question.

**...IS IT A TIME TO RECEIVE MONEY, and to receive**

**garments, and olive yards and vineyards and sheep and oxen and men servants and maid servants?**

**2 Kings 5:26**

The ministry of the Lord Jesus is not the place to make money. Neither is it the time of your life to gather wealth. I am not saying that God will not make you wealthy! I am not saying that you should be poor! I am not poor and I have not taken a vow of poverty. God will bless you with all you need so that you can serve him, but this will be at the right time!

Judas Iscariot sold his master for only thirty pieces of silver. The current value of thirty pieces of silver is \$19.20!

**And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.**

**Matthew 26:15**

Incidentally, that was the price of a slave.

**If the ox shall push [kill] a manservant or a maidservant; he shall give unto their master thirty shekels of silver, and the ox shall be stoned.**

**Exodus 21:32**

Rev. Dr. Judas Iscariot lost his life and ministry because of greed and covetousness. Twenty US dollars is all that it took to make him sacrifice his friend, his master and his God. **He sold God for twelve pounds sterling, (twenty Euros, thirty Swiss francs, fifty thousand Ghanaian cedis)!**

If you ever employ a Judas or a Gehazi, you are in for



trouble. They will never be satisfied with what you offer them. They will always think you are cheating them. They will try to usurp your authority and take over. Such people can easily be taken away by someone who offers them more money.

### 3. MISSING GOD'S DIRECTION

The third common cause of disloyalty, is missing God's direction for your life.

Many people miss God's direction for their lives. Because of this, they end up in complicated situations. They are often forced into disloyalty by their own mistakes. Every minister must know how to hear the voice of God. The leading of the Spirit is crucial for successful ministry.

Many ministers claim that they are being led by the Spirit of God as they breakaway and rebel in the ministry. Are these people really being led by the Spirit of God? Many people are having what I call visions of their own heart.

**...The prophets PROPHECY LIES in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and THE DECEIT OF THEIR HEART.**

**Jeremiah 14:14**

**Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain:**

**they speak A VISION OF THEIR OWN HEART, and not out of the mouth of the Lord.**

**Jeremiah 23:16**

A common trick of people who go their own way is to claim that God has sent them. The scripture tells us that we should not listen to the words of such prophets. When someone has a rebellious spirit, he will surely dream about a successful rebellion. God says in his Word; I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and *the deceit of their hearts* (Jeremiah 14:14).

## **A Scriptural Rebellion?**

I watched a junior pastor as he rebelled against his senior pastor. His mouth was full of venom. He went about slandering his former church and criticizing his former pastor. Yet this man had scriptures to back his claim. He claimed that God had called him and asked him to do what he was doing.

I said to this rebel, “God does not destroy churches! God is a builder of churches.”

He was my friend so I went with him to the new church he had established. When I got there, I realized that all the equipment he was using belonged to his former church. He had taken over the church’s seats, pulpit and instruments. He had their members and their building.

I said to him, “These things do not belong to you.”

I continued, “It is stealing.”

He just smiled and said, “You don’t understand.”

I continued, “You are my friend, but God’s blessing will

not be with you when you do such things.”

Within a few years, this anarchist’s ministry collapsed!

If even an angel appears to you and gives you instructions, we will not accept it if it is contrary to the Word of God! The Bible teaches us not to believe when people speak a vision out of *their* hearts. How can God in one stroke build a church and in the next stroke destroy it?

Anyone who goes around slandering other ministers is a dangerous person. **Snakes are not discriminating when they begin to bite.** After spreading venom about someone else, they will turn on you.

I know a pastor who abandoned ship because a prophet told him to. Later on, I found out that this same prophet would send scouts to the church in which he was going to minister. These scouts would take car numbers and descriptions and find out who the owners were. The prophet would use this information to conjure up “words of knowledge”. These words of knowledge were so spectacular and astonishingly accurate that everyone believed the prophet’s word.

Finally, he had a prophecy for the associate pastor, “This is not your place. You must begin your own church.” You cannot imagine the confusion that broke out in that church. The visit of this prophet changed the course of that ministry. The church broke up into many splinter groups. The pastors ended up fighting in court over church property.

The Bible says that we shall know them by their fruits. I would not criticize anybody for his accurate words of knowledge. I pray for accurate words of knowledge myself and I am happy

when I see them happening. The Bible did not teach me that I would know a thing by its *gift*. You know them by their *fruits*.

When I see the fruits of broken churches, destroyed ministries and deceived pastors, I know that the Spirit of God is not at work. The devil and the flesh are on the rampage.

**But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. THIS WISDOM DESCENDETH NOT FROM ABOVE, BUT IS EARTHLY, SENSUAL, DEVILISH. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.**

**James 3:14-16**

Dear minister friend, do not yield to pressure from people. You may make the mistake of your lifetime. People will push you into things but they will not support you when you are out there. Somebody once told me, “people sympathize with the underdog, but they follow the top dog”.

When I first got married, people often suggested the number of children that we should have. Some said we should have five, others said we should have four children. They would describe the advantages of having large families. “How nice it is when they all grow up and you have children all over the world,” they said. “You can have such nice family reunions. The children will have lots of playmates.”

I would smile to myself and think, “This man is suggesting that I have all these children. Will he look after them when they grow up? Will he pay their school fees and build houses for them? Certainly not!” Those who will not contribute a dime

are those who put the most pressure on you!

Dear friend, be careful about yielding to the pressure of the people. When you have taken the wrong decision, these same people will criticize you for making mistakes.

Judas came under pressure to betray Christ. He eventually succumbed to the pressure and temptation to betray his master. Afterwards, he realized that he had made a mistake. He went back to these same people who had pressurized him with money and made a lame attempt to undo everything. He actually took the money back! **But the people would have none of it and threw him out to face suicide and eternal damnation on his own.** They told Judas, “What is that to us? That is your problem! See to it yourself!”

**Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, WHAT IS THAT TO US? SEE THOU TO THAT. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.**

**Matthew 27:3-5**

Please do not yield to the temptation of money or to the pressure of the people. You will have to deal with the consequences of your decisions by yourself!

# **CHAPTER EIGHT**

## ***THE TIMING OF DISLOYALTY***

When I write about disloyalty, I am writing about a whole array of things. These range from subtle acts of disloyalty to betrayals, insurgencies and open rebellions.

But, when do these things happen? Do they happen all the time? Or do they have specific seasons and timings? A close study of the Bible will reveal that acts of disloyalty are more common at particular times. In this chapter, we will study what I call the *timing* of disloyalty. Let us now consider four important times when disloyalty may occur.

### **1. DISLOYALTY OCCURS WITH THE APPARENT WEAKENING OF A LEADER**

All leaders go through different phases of their lives and ministries. In the prime of their ministry, they often appear very *strong, hard, tireless* and *invincible*. Leaders may appear to weaken in the latter part of their ministries. They seem to be vulnerable to things that before were far off. This apparent weakening of a minister is not actually a diminishing of his strength. Sometimes in later years, the maturing minister speaks with a softer tone and is more accommodating. Sometimes it is

a result of entering into another phase of ministry.

In the early part of Jesus' ministry, He was very strong on certain things. At one point He spoke about how He was anointed and people tried to kill Him. At that stage of His ministry Jesus just ignored His persecutors and went His way.

**And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them went his way.**

**Luke 4:28-30**

At one point, Jesus preached and called His listeners snakes. He told them to their face that they were vipers.

**O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?...**

**Matthew 12:34**

Jesus was a strong direct preacher. He was a no-nonsense personality. There was a time when people wanted to kill Him. Jesus told them directly, "I know you want to kill me." He continued, "Your father is the devil." These were direct statements which infuriated the crowd. Yet, Jesus persisted in this line of confrontational preaching.

**But now ye seek to kill me, A MAN THAT HATH TOLD YOU THE TRUTH, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to**

**him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. YE ARE OF YOUR FATHER THE DEVIL, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, GOING THROUGH THE MIDST OF THEM, AND SO PASSED BY.**

**John 8:40,41,44,59**

In those days, Jesus did not seem to be moved by death threats. But later in His life, Jesus began to say things like, “I am going to suffer!”

**And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you BEFORE I SUFFER.**

**Luke 22:15**

At another point, Jesus was in a reflective mood and said, “This is my last drink.”

**For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.**

**Luke 22:18**

Jesus continued and said, “There is a betrayer amongst us.” If He was a good leader, why didn’t He do anything about the betrayer. Had He lost His power? Judas must have heard these words and felt that Jesus’ power was waning.

Jesus’ power never diminished. The anointing on His life was stronger than ever. If His power had diminished, how come



He was able to heal the boy whose ear was cut off by Peter (John 18:10)? If His power was diminished, how come everyone fell under the power of God when Jesus identified Himself as the one they were looking for?

**As soon then as He had said unto them, I am He, they went backward, and fell to the ground.**

**John 18:6**

Jesus' power had in no way diminished, but He had entered a different phase of His ministry. This power would help Him go to the cross and accomplish His sacrifice for the sins of the world. But Judas misinterpreted this to be a weakening of His master's anointing. Judas was encouraged to rise up and rebel against the Lord when he heard Him speak of dying. If you eat with someone who speaks of dying and taking his last drink, would you not think there was something wrong?

The High Priest and the Pharisees were afraid of Jesus. There was great mystery and intrigue surrounding Christ! Jesus was a public figure and they could have arrested Him at any time. Jesus did not go around in secret. But they feared the people and were unsure of what sort of powers Jesus would conjure up against them if they tried anything.

Judas waited for a sign of the apparent weakening of Christ's ministry. As soon as he felt his leader was a little weaker, he betrayed him. Dear pastor, do not be deceived. If God has called somebody, and you betray him, *you* will pay for it! It may seem easy to rebel at certain times, but that is the devil luring you to your own destruction.

## **2. DISLOYALTY OCCURS WITH THE AGING OF THE LEADER**

**For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father.**

**1 Kings 11:4**

King Solomon turned away from God in his old age. It may sound strange, but it sometimes requires physical strength to keep on doing what is right. King Solomon had married so many different women in his younger days. He wanted to be sure that he did not fall into the mistake of adultery as his father did. So he married all the ladies he met to prevent himself from having an affair with anyone. But in his old age, the resolve to serve Jehovah was weakened. He began to succumb to the pressures of his ‘unbeliever’ wives.

**Then did Solomon build an high place for Chemosh, the abomination of Moab, in the hill that is before Jerusalem, and for Molech, the abomination of the children of Ammon. And likewise did he for all his strange wives, which burnt incense and sacrificed unto their gods.**

**1 Kings 11:7,8**

I am a young man. As I write this book it is my prayer that I will be loyal to the Lord as I get older in ministry.

In the life of King David, it was when he was very old and stricken in years, that Adonijah rebelled against his father. Adonijah was one of David’s sons who had been a loyal member of the family for many years. He did not rebel with Absalom.

Nor was he associated with any other rebellion. Yet, he was tempted to be disloyal when he realized that his father was weakened by old age.

**Now king DAVID WAS OLD and stricken in years; and they covered him with clothes, but he gat no heat. THEN ADONIJAH THE SON OF HAGGITH EXALTED HIMSELF, saying, I will be king: and he prepared him chariots and horsemen, and fifty men to run before him.**

**1 Kings 1:1,5**

### **3. DISLOYALTY OCCURS WHEN THE LEADER SINS**

When Solomon went after many wives and his heart was turned against God, the Lord raised up rebels to fight against him.

**And the Lord was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the Lord God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice, And the Lord stirred up an adversary unto Solomon, Hadad the Edomite: he was of the king's seed in Edom.**

**1 Kings 11:9,14**

It is the grace of God that keeps a church together. What prevents one person from rising against another? It is the mercy of the Lord. What prevents a bodyguard from shooting his own leader in order to become famous? It is the grace of God.

A leader must be aware that God's mercy upholds all

things. You will not have a single loyal person with you unless God helps you. Ladies and gentlemen, the power of the presidency and the power of leadership are maintained by a delicate balance of forces. God's grace is what sustains us in all our endeavours. We may give many teachings about disloyalty and loyalty. We may print all the books we can on the subject. Ultimately, it is the grace of God that holds all things together.

Jehoshaphat was a famous king of Judah. He served the Lord and God wrought miracles under his regime. God gave all Israelies more blessings than they could carry under the reign of Jehoshaphat. When Jehoshaphat died his son Jehoram took over. Jehoram was not like his father and became associated with Ahab the evil king of Israel. This is because he married the daughter of Ahab.

It is interesting to note that under the reign of this backslidden king, a group of people who had lived in submission to Judah for many years rebelled. The Bible tells us clearly that the people of Edom became disloyal and traitorous under the rule of Jehoram. But why did they stay submissive under Jehoshaphat?

**...JEHORAM the son of Jehoshaphat king of Judah began to reign. And he walked in the way of the kings of Israel, as did the house of Ahab: for the daughter of Ahab was his wife: and he did evil in the sight of the Lord. IN HIS DAYS EDOM REVOLTED from under the hand of Judah, and made a king over themselves.**

**2 Kings 8:16,18,20**

It is clear from this scripture that the timing of the revolt of Edom was related to the type of king in Judah. The revolt

took place under the hand of an evil person. Acts of disloyalty *by followers* are often related to acts of disobedience *by leaders*.

#### 4. DISLOYALTY OCCURS UPON THE DEATH OF A LEADER

I have watched many churches disintegrate after the death of their founders and leaders. Why does this happen? **Disloyal people are often looking for an opportunity to break away or revolt against authority.** They are opportunists who will grab at any sign of weakness within the system. Often the death of a leader signifies to them the removal of a factor that has long prevented them from rebelling.

Recently in one African country, the dictatorial head of state died. When his assistant took over, he pursued policies completely opposite to what his leader did. He freed all the enemies of his former boss and set about to return the country to a democracy – something his predecessor was opposed to. What does this mean? It showed that the assistant was not loyal to the former head of state's ideologies. He could not say or show it publicly whilst his boss was alive. However, upon the death of his leader, his true feelings were manifested! This is a very common occurrence in life.

I remember when a great founder and leader of a denomination in Ghana died. It was not long before some of the prominent pastors of his denomination separated themselves. I also recall when a founder of a great denomination in Nigeria died. It was but a few months before some of the most prominent ministers disassociated themselves from the church. **Rebellious people sense a weakening in the system by the passing away**

## **of the leader.**

The unexpected death of a head of state can cause instability in a nation where the power is already held in delicate balance. In some countries, the head of state does not even have to die. All he has to do is to travel outside the country. Kwame Nkrumah, the first president of Ghana, was overthrown in a coup d'état when he travelled outside Ghana for a short while. He was in Hanoi for a meeting when he was overthrown. He was never to return to Ghana in his lifetime.

Some pastors are afraid to travel away from their churches because of this.

Ahab, the king of Israel, was a wicked but strong ruler. He had the Moabites under control. But when he died, Moab rebelled almost immediately.

**And Mesha king of Moab was a sheep master, and rendered unto the king of Israel a hundred thousand lambs, and an hundred thousand rams with the wool. But it came to pass, WHEN AHAB WAS DEAD, THAT THE KING OF MOAB REBELLED against the king of Israel.**

**2 Kings 3:4,5**

This is a common pattern for revolts. You see, there are many people who are rebels at heart but are afraid to make a move. They are watching for a sign, a change, a weakening or an opening. With little provocation they will separate themselves and fight against the authorities.

Are you a rebel at heart? Will your loyalty persist even when there is an apparent weakening of the leader? Will age,

sin or even death of your leader turn you into a rebel? Time will tell!

# **CHAPTER NINE**

## ***THE ADVENTURES OF JULIUS CAESAR***

William Shakespeare, a famous English author, often had the theme of ‘loyalty and disloyalty’ in his writings. These stories bring out even more, some of the realities about loyalty and disloyalty.

### **Julius Caesar**

In this story, Julius Caesar was appointed dictator to restore order to the Republic of Rome. He was Rome’s most successful general. After returning from battle in Spain, Julius Caesar was given a rousing reception. The pomp of his reception made two leading senators, Caesar’s old friend Brutus, and the envious Cassius, fear that Caesar would declare himself emperor. Caesar himself did not trust some of the people. He saw in them the *signs of disloyalty*. (See my book ‘Loyalty and Disloyalty’ for the signs of disloyalty).

***Julius Caesar:*** *Let me have men about me that are  
fat;*

*Sleek-headed men and such as  
sleep o’ nights;  
Yond’ Cassius has a LEAN*



*AND HUNGRY LOOK;  
HE THINKS TOO MUCH:  
SUCH MEN ARE DANGER-  
OUS.*

Brutus abhorred the prospect of overthrowing the Republic of Rome. However, he reluctantly joined Cassius and other conspirators in a plot to murder Caesar. Although Julius Caesar was warned by his wife Calphurnia not to step out of the house on that day, he refused to listen. His wife spoke of graves and horrible sights she had seen in the night. But Julius Caesar would have none of that. He said,

***Julius Caesar:** What can be avoided whose end is  
purposed by the mighty*

*gods? Yet Caesar shall go forth;  
for these predictions are to the  
world in general as to Caesar.*

***COWARDS DIE MANY TIMES  
BEFORE THEIR DEATHS;***

*The valiant never taste of death  
but once.*

*Of all the wonders that I yet have  
heard,*

*it seems to me most strange that  
men should fear,*

*seeing that death, a necessary end,  
will come when it will come.*

Julius Caesar attended the senate and was brutally assassinated. Julius Caesar did not know that his closest aides were plotting his death. He had several close friends and

assistants. Everybody expects their closest friend to expose wrongdoers and conspirators. **A truly loyal person will save you by telling you what is going on behind your back.** When your closest aides fail to do this your demise is imminent. Your business could collapse. Your company could go bankrupt. Your factory could register losses. Your church could split up!

When the conspirators attacked Julius Caesar, he was startled. But his greatest surprise was when he found Brutus to be part of the conspiracy.

**He said, “*ET TU, BRUTE?*” (You too Brutus?)**

When Julius Caesar realized that Brutus was part of the conspiracy, he knew that all was lost. He said those famous words, which meant that it was all over. If your associates and trusted friends turn against you in ministry, your dreams of growth and expansion often end. Your vision for a great business often ends at the feet of disloyal people.

**He said, “*THEN FALL, CAESAR!*” (Then it’s all over)**

But the story doesn’t end there! We must now observe the end of all rebels. Brutus, Caesar’s trusted friend, defends this indefensible savage act to the Roman mob. However, Mark Antony is allowed to deliver a funeral oration. His speech, which is loyal to the fallen Caesar, turns the hearts of the Roman public against the treacherous murderers. You will notice how the expected outcome of gaining power does not materialize!

Soon after this, Brutus and Cassius fled Rome and raised an army. However, they are defeated by the combined forces of Antony and Caesar’s heir, Octavian. The end of the story is the

same for all rebels and treacherous men. Brutus and Cassius committed suicide.

Dear friend, Antony chose to be loyal, he paid the price and received the reward. Brutus, the close friend of Caesar, chose the way of unfaithfulness and treachery. He ended up just like Judas!

# **CHAPTER TEN**

## ***THE ADVENTURES OF MACBETH***

We now turn our attention to Shakespeare's story of MacBeth. MacBeth was a successful warrior in the Scottish army. He fought against the Norwegian army and Scottish rebels and defeated them. Unfortunately, MacBeth became a terrible traitor. Right at the beginning of this story, you can see how the stage is set for rebellion with MacBeth's victory.

Success often breeds a sense of pride. It is easy to have an over-inflated opinion of oneself when you are succeeding. Winning *one* battle does not mean that you must become the king. MacBeth had just defeated the Scottish rebels and was very pleased with himself.

Preaching well one day does not mean that you are supposed to be the pastor-in-charge. When people are affected by the pride of achievement, all they need is a little push to encourage them to move out of place. This is what happened to Lucifer.

**...thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty... thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire...**

**Ezekiel 28:12,14**

Because of this Lucifer said, “I will ascend and sit on the throne. I will replace my Lord and King.”

**For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shall be brought down to hell...**

**Isaiah 14:13-15**

This is also what happened to MacBeth. He met up with three witches who prophesied that he would become the Thane of Cawdor and the King of Scotland. Notice what the witches told MacBeth.

**First Witch:**            *All hail, MacBeth! Hail to thee Thane of Glamis!*

**Second Witch:**        *All hail, MacBeth! Hail to thee Thane of Cawdor*

**Third Watch:**        *All hail, MacBeth! That shall be king hereafter*

When one part of this prophecy happened, MacBeth was convinced that he was to be the next King of Scotland. His wife was overjoyed at the prospect.

When King Duncan of Scotland was informed about how brave MacBeth and his associate Banquo had been, he decided to confer on MacBeth an important title – Thane of Cawdor. It was the king who personally thanked MacBeth for his bravery and then conferred on him the title Thane of Cawdor.

The wife of MacBeth, having received this revelation and its confirmation, was excited about the prospects of becoming Queen. She worried that her husband was too soft to be able to take the throne. When MacBeth arrived home, she encouraged him and insisted on planning the murder of King Duncan.

Not long after, Duncan arrived at MacBeth's castle where he was welcomed by Lady MacBeth. At one point, MacBeth wavered in his resolve to kill his king (pastor). But his wife spurred him on. She encouraged him to be 'a man'. Just like Jezebel, she urged her husband to get into a wrong situation. It may sound obvious, but being a murderer is not the same as being a man.

***Lady MacBeth:*** *When you durst DO IT, then you were  
A MAN;*

*and, to be more than what  
you were,  
you would be so much more  
the man*

Some people are encouraged by others to be disloyal or treacherous. Some people like MacBeth have wives who yearn for position and power. They inadvertently cajole their husbands into doing things they should never do. Some ministers are also encouraged by church members to be rebellious.

I know one pastor who was given a beautiful and an expensive car to encourage him on his journey of rebellion. As we stood by this pastor's new car, he said to me, "Can this miracle be of the devil? It only shows God's approval of my actions." He felt that God was approving of his disloyal activities by giving him a car. A few years later, it was quite evident that God

had not approved of this man's actions.

Back to our story on MacBeth! After MacBeth murdered the king, he returned to his wife in a distraught and emotional state. He had forgotten to place the murder weapon on the king's drugged guards. Instead, Lady MacBeth had to smear them herself with the blood and guilt. She was a bold woman, initially.

***Lady MacBeth: Infirm of purpose***  
*Give me the daggers.*  
*The sleeping, and the dead, are*  
*but as pictures;*  
*It is the eye of childhood that*  
*fears a painted devil.*

After this, there was a knock at the gate and a gentleman named MacDuff arrived to wake up the king. MacDuff exchanged pleasantries with the porter before MacBeth arrived to escort him to the king's chambers. It was at this point that MacDuff discovered that the king had been murdered. MacBeth then slew the two guards of the king to cover up his deed. King Duncan's children sensed danger and slipped away to England and Ireland.

As is always the case, rebellion and treachery do not bring the desired results.. MacBeth was crowned king and Lady MacBeth became the queen. Yet MacBeth and his wife were not happy.

A fearful MacBeth did not feel secure. MacBeth hired murderers to kill his old associate and colleague Banquo. He feared that Banquo might try to become the king in order to fulfil

another prophecy. Speaking of Banquo's soul, he mused, "Banquo, if you're going to go to heaven, you're going to have to leave tonight."

**MacBeth:**       *Banquo, thy soul's flight, if it find  
HEAVEN it must find it out  
TONIGHT.*

When people leave churches, they often say bad things about their former ministries. They do not just leave. They seem to have to add insult to injury. They seem to have a deep *need* to slander. After all, they must justify their actions. This complicates their original sin, if indeed they committed one. Rarely have I seen people walk out of relationships peacefully. There is often a lot of slime and venom flung around.

MacBeth had a *need* to continue his acts of treachery. He needed to add to the original crime by killing other people. Imagine thinking about your friend and saying, "Jack, if you're going to go to heaven, you're going to have to go tonight."

During a party, MacBeth saw the ghost of Banquo twice. He knew the rewards of disloyalty were catching up with him. He knew that he would reap what he had sown. That is why he said blood would have blood! Like Judas, he knew he was already condemned.

**MacBeth:**       *It will have blood, they say; blood  
will have blood.*

MacBeth was distressed when he saw the ghost, and only the quick thinking of his wife saved him from blurting out his guilt at the party. She quickly asked the guests to leave.



Although MacBeth had obtained his ultimate dream, he had to keep on acting treacherously against all and sundry. The mood of MacBeth and his wife is summed up in the words of Lady MacBeth when she said,

***Lady MacBeth:** Nought's had, alls' spent,  
Where our desire is got  
without content:  
Tis safer to be that which  
we destroy  
Than by destruction dwell  
in doubtful joy*

MacBeth then decided to eliminate his next major threat, MacDuff. Once again, MacBeth turned to the witches for direction. Disloyal people are often misdirected. They claim to be led by the Spirit but in fact, they are not. **Just as MacBeth was led by witches, many disloyal pastors are actually led by demons and not the Holy Spirit.** The witches gave him an ambiguous prophecy about how he would die. Meanwhile, MacDuff had been able to secure an army from England to fight against MacBeth.

In the latter part of this tragic story, the queen, Lady MacBeth fell ill. She began to walk and talk in her sleep. Her doctor and gentlewoman realized the implications of the guilty things she was saying. You see, she remembered the bloodstains of King Duncan and it drove her crazy.

There is no rebellious person in the Bible who has enjoyed any benefits from disloyalty. Judas could not stand the guilt anymore than Lady MacBeth could. Listen to this woman going

mad. Watch her speaking to imaginary spots of blood.

***Lady MacBeth:*** *Out, damned spot! out, I say!*

*Yet who would have thought  
the old man to have had so  
Much blood in him?*

*What! will these hands  
ne'er be clean?*

*Here's the smell of the  
blood still: all the perfumes of  
Arabia will not sweeten this little  
hand.*

*What's done cannot be un-  
done. To bed, to bed, to bed.*

The prodigal son must have spoken to the pigs he fed. He must have told them about his family back home. How he regretted leaving home! Like Lady MacBeth, he may have thought, “*What's done cannot be undone.*” One day MacBeth heard a scream from the castle. He learnt sadly that his wife had just committed suicide. Mind you, it is severely depressed people who usually commit suicide.

The closing chapters of this drama unfold when MacDuff attacks MacBeth's castle. MacBeth goes out fighting and meets MacDuff. Remembering a prophecy from the witches that a man born of woman could not kill him, he believed he could defeat MacDuff. But MacDuff told him that he was born by caesarean section. In other words, MacDuff had not been “born

of a woman”. MacBeth was eventually killed. MacDuff then produced the head of MacBeth for Malcolm and hailed him King of Scotland.

Is this not the end of all rebels we have studied? MacBeth was disloyal to his king and even murdered him. The result was death for him and suicide for his wife. The storyline is the same; it never changes!

Like an old minister once said to me, “The devil has no new tricks. He keeps using the same methods, and Christians keep falling for them!”

# **CHAPTER ELEVEN**

## ***THE THREE TESTS OF LOYALTY***

**But he knoweth the way that I take: when he hath tried me,  
I SHALL COME FORTH AS GOLD.**

**Job 23:10**

There are many yellow metals in the world. Which one of them is real gold?

I once asked a jeweller in Malaysia; “How would I know whether my wedding ring is made out of real gold or not?”

I will never forget what he said, “There are many tests, but the main test is to pass it through fire.”

He told me, “All other metals will change colour when subjected to fire.”

He continued, “Gold is the only metal which will come out shining brighter. It will not change colour in any way.”

**You can never tell the false from the real until you subject it to a test.**

Many things will test the loyalty and faithfulness of a Christian. When I decided to pursue the ministry instead of medicine, my commitment was tested many times. My commitment to the church has been tested on several occasions. There are three main things that will test everyone’s loyalty: *distance, time*

and *fire*. If you pass these tests, then your loyalty is real.

## 1. THE TEST OF DISTANCE

**But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing,  
AND NOT ONLY WHEN I AM PRESENT WITH YOU.**

**Galatians 4:18**

Paul had to exhort a branch of his church in Galatia to remain faithful even though he was not physically present with them. Many people are not loyal when they are *away* from the leader. Many companies do not work efficiently unless the manager is *physically present*. Because of this, many businesses cannot expand.

### **Can the Boss be Everywhere?**

If you are working under someone, your loyalty will be tested by distance. As they say, “out of sight, out of mind”. It is important for you to be faithful even when your leader is away from you. People who have passed this test are the ones who are truly faithful. The ministry of Lighthouse Chapel International now spans five continents: Africa, Asia, Europe, North America and Australia. How on earth could I be present everywhere? **The only way for a large network to continue expanding is for people to be faithful whether the leader is present or not.**

**In some churches, the pastor just has to turn his head and a sarcastic comment will be made.** You must not only say

nice things when a person is present with you. You must say nice things about him even when he is away. It is good to be zealously affected *always* in a good thing and especially when your leader is not present with you. I can tell whether people are loyal to me or not by what they say about me when I am not present.

**It is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing,  
AND NOT ONLY WHEN I AM PRESENT WITH YOU.**

**Galatians 4:18**

## **My Loyal Friend**

I remember someone who claimed to be my friend. When I was with him, he would say nice things like, “I am committed to you. I have a relationship with you.” He also said things like, “I know you are loyal to me. You and I have a good relationship.” However, when I was not with this person he would say terrible things about me. Some of the things were so shocking that it was hard for me to believe!

One day someone said to me, “If you ever heard what this man said about you behind your back, you would not go near him any more!” What this person was telling me was not strange. You see, I had heard of alarming statements made by this man about me. I had received so many reports of the cruel discussions he had had about me. This “loyal” friend was not loyal after all! When he was with me, he said nice things. As soon as we parted company, he stabbed me in the back and ‘weeded out’ my legs! A little distance and the ugly head of disloyalty reared itself. He failed the ‘distance test’ of loyalty repeatedly.

Loyalty is not what you say or do when a person is with you. It is what you do and say when you are apart.

**It is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing,  
AND NOT ONLY WHEN I AM PRESENT WITH YOU.**

**Galatians 4:18**

## **2. THE TEST OF TIME**

Very few people can imagine the ability of time to test our resolve to stay loyal to our words.

**I marvel that ye are SO SOON REMOVED from him that  
called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel:**

**Galatians 1:6**

The Apostle Paul was shocked that a group of Christians could so quickly change their minds and commitment.

### **Early and Late Disloyalty**

In some cases people become disloyal very early in the course of events. This is what I call *early disloyalty*. People suffering from *early disloyalty* are not able to withstand the test of time. In other cases, people become disloyal after much more time has elapsed – this is *late disloyalty*. Individuals who experience ‘late disloyalty’ have a greater ability to withstand the tests of time, but eventually fall away.

**And he said, therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father. FROM THAT TIME MANY OF HIS DISCIPLES WENT BACK, and walked no more with him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? Then Simon Peter answered him, LORD, TO WHOM SHALL WE GO? Thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that thou art Christ, the son of the living God. Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve and one of you is a devil? He spake of JUDAS ISCARIOT the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, BEING ONE OF THE TWELVE.**

**John 6:65-71**

You will notice from this passage that after a short while in the ministry, several of the disciples deserted camp. They left the church and refused to be part of Jesus' ministry anymore. *From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him (John 6:66).* This is a good example of 'early disloyalty'. These disciples failed the test of time very quickly indeed.

However, the twelve apostles were not so quick to fall away. Even Judas Iscariot was not moved. But Jesus knew that with the passage of *more time*, Judas would betray him. That is why he said, "Have I not chosen you twelve and one of you is a devil? He knew it was just a matter of time before there would be some more manifestations of disloyalty.

Can you stand the test of time? Will you be there when everyone is gone? How much longer will you last in the ministry? For how much longer will you preach the things God told



you preach? How much more time has to elapse before you rebel against your leader? Are you going to be an early leaver, a late leaver or will you stay until the end?

Decide to be a survivor! Develop staying power! Be faithful to the very end! Be loyal to God until your very last breath! Be loyal to your pastor and to your church until the end. You will definitely receive your reward from God. I recommend that you read my book on '*Backsliding*'. It will help you to develop your staying power.

### 3. THE TEST OF FIRE

Fire represents all kinds of pressures that will be brought to bear against you. These pressures could be in the form of a financial test. When you work in an organisation, a transfer or an instruction you do not like could be another test. Fire could be spiritual, social, marital or financial! I want to challenge every leader not to be afraid of the fires that God will allow you to go through. It is those who come out of the fire unscathed who are most valuable to God.

Marital difficulties, financial difficulties, hurts and offences should not make you disloyal to your God. Fire purges unwanted elements from our lives. God refines us through these experiences.

**And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness**

**Malachi 3:3**

**God often puts the heat on his servants in order to bring the best out of them.** When you have passed through the tests, you will shine and you will become more attractive. Do you want more people to be attracted to your ministry? Then pass the tests of fire that come your way!

**My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.**

**James 1:2,3**

On many occasions, I have been subjected to various tests. I have been subjected to tests from disloyal friends and pastors. I have suffered mistreatment from authorities in high places. I have been through many journeys for the Lord. I have had several near death experiences in cars and planes. I have experienced deep hurts from various unexpected sources.

I am not the only one who has been tested in the ministry. God allows all Christians to be offended. He will then observe whether you will obey His Word or not. Will you forgive the one who has offended you? When you walk in forgiveness, you attract God's mercy. Blessed are the merciful because they shall receive God's mercy. **If you fail the test of hurts and offences, you exclude yourself from the mercy of God.** When bitterness is in your spirit, you will no longer receive from God and He no longer answers your prayers.

Many years ago, a minister said something which I took seriously. He said, "*It is important to always maintain a sweet spirit!*" We must learn to live without bitterness.

When you go through the fire of financial difficulties, please do not succumb to the pressure. Do not become a murmurer. Do not become a complainer and do not become a thief!

When you come under pressure in your marriage, please do not give up. Do not separate or divorce. Fight to achieve happiness. The world is full of people with failed marriages. Everyone is looking for someone who has been able to stay faithful in spite of the tests. The tests of marriage come to everyone. To survive, you need determination and a whole lot of faith. Be a survivor! I see you making it!

## **What have you Survived?**

Someone asked me: “What have you been through? What have you survived?” “What have you suffered?” You see, the things a person has survived speak volumes about him. The credentials of survived tests are greater than the credentials of any educational institution.

When Paul wanted to show who he really was, he told the people what he had been through! He told them what he had survived. He showed them what he had suffered. The tests you pass tell a story about who you really are. Notice how Paul used a long list of experiences he had survived to show that he was a legitimate minister.

**ARE THEY MINISTERS OF CHRIST? (I speak as a fool)  
I AM MORE; in labours more abundant, in stripes above  
measure, in PRISONS more frequent, in DEATHS oft. Of  
the Jews five times received I forty STRIPES save one.**

Thrice was I BEATEN with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered SHIPWRECK, a night and a day I have been in the deep; In JOURNEYINGS often, in perils of waters, in perils of ROBBERS, in perils by *mine own* countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren; In WEARINESS and PAINFULNESS, in WATCHINGS often, in hunger and thirst, in FASTINGS often, in cold and NAKEDNESS. Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches. Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is offended and I burn not?

2 Corinthians 11:23-29

## Chapter twelve

# *SIX MANIFESTATIONS OF DISLOYALTY*

To manifest means “to ‘demonstrate’, to ‘display’, ‘exhibit’ or to ‘show forth’” something. People show disloyalty in many ways. In this chapter, I want us to study a few of the common manifestations of disloyalty. Why do we need to look at the manifestations of disloyalty? Because loyalty and disloyalty are things of the heart and things of the heart cannot easily be seen. Like many diseases, it is best detected by watching out for symptoms.

Let us now look for these important symptoms and signs of disloyalty.

## **1. DISOBEDIENCE**

The first important manifestation of disloyalty is disobedience. Disobedience is an outward manifestation of a disloyal heart. Watch out for disobedient people, they are probably disloyal at heart. God disposed of Saul after he disobeyed him.

**And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, he hath also rejected thee from being king.**

**1 Samuel 15:22,23**

Disobedient people often have a rebellious streak. It is the spirit of rebellion that gives them the audacity to disobey.

## **2. SCORNING**

**Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the SEAT OF THE SCORNFUL.**

**Psalms 1:1**

Scorners are people who mock at you. They do not believe in you or in what you are doing. The Bible very clearly tells us that we must not associate with scoffers. According to Psalm 1:1, we are not even supposed to sit in the same chair with the scornful. How can somebody who does not believe in you be your assistant pastor? How can someone who despises you be an associate to you?

Yet, this is a situation existing in many churches today. The scornful are sitting in the same chair with you. Can you understand why your ministry is not blessed? The Bible says; blessed is the man who sitteth not in the seat of the scornful. **Blessed is the pastor who does not sit next to a scornful assistant.**

What must you do with a scornful person? Should you pray about the scoffers? Should you fast for a week? The answer is NO! There is a biblical remedy for dealing with scornful people.

**CAST OUT THE SCORNER, and contention shall go out; yea strife and reproach shall cease.**

**Proverbs 22:10**

According to Proverbs 22:10, the biblical remedy for dealing with scoffers is to cast them out! In modern English, to cast out means: to dismiss, to expel, to eject, to banish, to fire, to sack, to discard, to unseat or to lay off. If you are wiser than God, you can pray about it. If you know more than God, you can handle scornful people in your own way. I prefer to trust the wisdom of God. I will dismiss, expel, eject, banish, fire, sack, discard, unseat and lay off any scoffer in my set-up. That is the biblical way to deal with disloyal people!

### 3.

### INFLEXIBILITY

Inflexibility is a manifestation of disloyalty. An inflexible person is stubborn and defiant. **Watch out for inflexible people in your set-up.** Such people do not want to work overtime. They do not want to go beyond what is stipulated in their contract. They are not prepared to adapt to any new situation. They will always point out to you that work ends at 5.00 p.m.! They are unwilling to do anything extra for the organisation. Woe to the manager if he asks them to do something new! A sulking face is the trademark of such inflexible workers.

Inflexible church members are not prepared to stay on if the church service goes beyond the stipulated time. An inflexible and unyielding person is difficult to work with. He can become disloyal to you when things no longer suit him.

Stubborn people are also not prepared to take correction when they are confronted. You will see this in the life of Saul. When Samuel confronted him about the war with the Amalekites, he argued with Samuel. He was inflexible and unyielding in his discussion with Saul. He insisted that he had obeyed the Lord. The evidence of his disobedience was obvious and yet Saul argued with Samuel.

**And Samuel came to Saul: and said Saul unto him, Blessed be thou of the Lord: I HAVE PERFORMED the commandment of the Lord. And Samuel said, WHAT MEANETH THEN THIS BLEATING of the sheep in mine ears...**

**1 Samuel 15:13,14**

Some years ago, I had a worker who misused some church property. Initially, he denied everything! Because of this, I collected a lot of documentary evidence to prove that he was actually misappropriating the equipment and the church's money.

When I had gathered all the documents, I called for a meeting. I presented all the documents that showed unambiguously that this gentleman had disobeyed instructions. Would you believe that in spite of the evidence in black and white, this man argued with us for three hours? I watched as an inflexible and unyielding attitude was flagrantly displayed. I said to myself, "How stubborn can a person be?" Indeed, it was only a matter of time before this stubborn individual became openly rebellious. Truly, stubbornness is a manifestation of disloyalty!

#### **4. LIES**

I am convinced that if demons could have twins, then the twin of the spirit of lying would be the spirit of stealing. Lying and stealing always go together. Anybody who lies to you is not loyal to you. His heart cannot be with you.

Watch out for liars, they are very dangerous people! Do you know how to catch a liar? Let me share with you a little secret I use. Listen to people as they speak casually. When they jokingly tell you about how they lied to someone and got away with it, take note! Since he is capable of lying effortlessly to other people, he can do the same to you.

I believe that truth is an integral part of your character. If the belt of truth is absent, you are exposed to demons. If God hates a lying tongue, it must be the duty of every Christian,



leader or manager to hate the same thing.

**These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a LYING TONGUE, and hands that shed innocent blood,**

**Proverbs 6:16,17**

Liars are disloyal people!

## **5. TALEBEARING**

**...and he that soweth discord among brethren.**

**Proverbs 6:19**

There are people who have the ability to create stories and recreate events to suit themselves. They can spread stories and make things sound interesting. Have you noticed that newspapers often have tragic or scandalous events as their headlines? Bad news is sweeter to the gossips than good news.

Watch out for people who have endless tales about others. They know every bad event that has occurred in the church. They are ready to give you a complete rundown on any story you request. They know the details and they have inside information. Watch out for such people. They sow discord and division within the camp.

## **6.**

## **RUDENESS**

**And Moses sent to call Dathan and Abiram, the sons of Eliab: which said, WE WILL NOT COME UP.**

**Numbers 16:12**

Dathan and Abiram were openly rude to Moses. They refused to come when he called for them. Most people express their animosity behind the backs of their superiors. People who lash out at you openly with their tongues can lash out at you in other ways.

Rudeness is a manifestation of disloyalty. Watch out for it!

# **Chapter thirteen**

## ***THREE PRINCIPLES OF LOYALTY***

### **1. LOYALTY EXPOSES WRONGDOERS TO THE LEADERSHIP**

**Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.**

**1 Corinthians 11:1**

**It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.**

**1 Corinthians 5:1**

Wrongdoers abound in every sphere of life. Wrongdoers abound at business places. When the manager is away there are all sorts of people who do their own thing. They steal, cheat, under-invoice and over-invoice. The list is endless. Human beings have a way of stealing and cheating in almost every sphere of life. People are sent out to buy things and they return with inflated and unreal prices. If such dishonest people are not under direct supervision, you can imagine the numerous evils that they will carry out.

## **A loyal person keeps an eye on everything!**

One loyal person will keep an eye on all these people. Once people know that there is someone who is loyal to the boss, they will often change their behaviour. They know that that person will not withhold information. Such a person is worth a lot to the manager.

## **Loyal people can incur hatred!**

A truly loyal person does not mind what people think about him. He will expose every crooked activity to his superior. He is genuinely loyal to one person – the head. Loyalty is a sign of good character. However, a loyal person will sometimes incur the displeasure and hatred of the people he exposes. Remember the example of Joseph.

**These are the generations of Jacob. Joseph, being seventeen years old, was feeding the flock with his brethren; and the lad was with the sons of Bilhah, and with the sons of Zilpah, his father's wives: AND JOSEPH BROUGHT UNTO HIS FATHER THEIR EVIL REPORT.**

**Genesis 37:2**

Joseph, the son of Jacob, was loyal to his father. He did not care what his brothers thought about him. He constantly reported the evil deeds of his brothers to their father. That is loyalty. Loyalty had its price – the hatred of his brothers. Loyalty also had its rewards. Jacob developed a special affinity and love for Joseph in particular.

**Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children...**

## Genesis 37:3

Unfortunately, there are many managing directors, leaders, presidents and pastors who do not know the value of a loyal person. They do not reward that loyal person for his loyalty. They treat loyal people as ordinary people. But Jacob valued his loyal son. I believe in placing value on loyalty.

**...and he made him a coat of many colours.**

## Genesis 37:3

Jacob made a coat of many colours for Joseph. What do you do for people who are loyal to you? We often get the impression that Jacob loved Joseph because he was the son of his old age. That is true! But by studying this story you will see how the loyalty of Joseph and the disloyalty of his brothers led to Jacob's special love for Joseph.

Dear leader, you will only discover your losses after the loyal people have left. As I watch other pastors and general overseers struggle with disloyal branch pastors, I am so grateful to God for the loyal people He has given to me.

You will make far more profit when you value a loyal person. Experience is good. Education and qualifications are great, but place a high premium on fidelity. **Value someone who brings you true reports of what goes on behind your back.**

I have been a leader for some time. I know that people put up their best behaviour when they see me. Because of my position, I see smiling faces and receive the warmest of greetings all the time. Sometimes these cheerful and supposedly nice

people have been saying bad things about me. This happens to every leader. That is why I value my loyal people. They are to me like Joseph was to Jacob.

Betrayal is a very common occurrence in this world. It is one of the most popular themes in the writing of books and the making of films.

Dear leader, dear pastor; do not expect people to know how to behave. Many people do not know the implications of their actions. I have realized that many subordinates do not know the implications of withholding information. It is important to teach on the subject of loyalty. It is important to train people to report evil as the family of Chloe did in 1 Corinthians 1:11.

Teach your followers that they will be rewarded for loyalty as Joseph was rewarded with a coat of many colours.

## **2. LOYALTY IS NOT COMPATIBLE WITH MUR-MURING**

**Do all things without murmurings and disputings:**

**Philippians 2:14**

Murmuring is when a person speaks about issues in undertones. People murmur because they feel that they cannot openly voice their opinions. Someone said, “I am afraid to ask a question because if I do, I will be branded as disloyal.” That is not correct! **A loyal person is someone who asks a lot of questions.** A loyal person is someone who finds out what he

needs to know. It is the subtle scoffing attitude with which questions are sometimes asked that make a person appear disloyal. But in reality, a genuine seeker of information is not a disloyal person.

I encourage people to ask questions. In fact, I am more at ease with people who ask questions and make contributions. I feel very uneasy with people who have nothing to say or ask. It is not possible that you have no questions on your mind. God gave you a questioning and reasoning mind. Murmuring is an evil way of speaking.

A good leader must encourage questions and openness. Murmurers do not amount to much. They are discontented people with hearts of bitterness. The murmuring is just a manifestation of deep-seated feelings of hatred. I do not trust murmurers and neither does God.

**And all the children of Israel MURMURED against Moses and against Aaron: and the whole congregation said unto them, Would God that we had died in the land of Egypt! or would God we had died in this wilderness! And wherefore hath the Lord brought us unto this land, to fall by the sword, that our wives and our children should be a prey? were it not better for us to return into Egypt? And they said one to another, Let us make a captain, and let us return into Egypt. And the Lord said unto Moses, How long will this people provoke me? And how long will it be ere they believe me, for all the signs which I have shewed among them?**

**Numbers 14:2-4,11**

The children of Israel murmured against Moses on several occasions. Murmuring is often a product of fear. Loyalty is not compatible with fear. The Bible says: “fear has torment”

and “perfect love casts out fear”. It is likely that the children of Israel were afraid of Moses because of the spectacular signs and wonders that were associated with him.

There is no need to fear your leader. Be open and honest with him. Because the children of Israel did not approach Moses openly, they resorted to murmuring and that brought a curse upon them. Murmuring is like an evil spirit. The Bible teaches us not to murmur as the children of Israel murmured. Every disloyal person will be destroyed. Disloyalty manifests itself through murmuring.

**Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.**

**1 Corinthians 10:10**

Murmuring is a spirit. If you are a leader, watch closely for people who are always mumbling and whispering to each other. They speak to each other under their breath. When you ask them what they are talking about they say, “Oh, nothing much.”

Dear leaders, when people murmur, they are usually talking about you. Murmuring is like a cancer that doesn’t go away. You must get rid of all the murmurers in your group. It destroys the person and those around him. Gradually, that spirit pollutes everyone around. I can tell you very plainly that I do not trust people who complain, murmur and speak under their breath. Notice God’s reaction to complaining and murmuring people.

**And when *the people complained*, it DISPLEASED the Lord: and the Lord heard it; and his ANGER was kindled and the FIRE of the Lord burnt among them, and CONSUMED**



**THEM...**

**Numbers 11:1**

### **3. LOYALTY REQUIRES A STUDY OF HISTORY**

In order to be loyal to a cause you need to be fully persuaded about the vision. Loyalty demands full persuasion. The Apostle Paul wrote to Timothy because certain people were criticising Paul to Timothy. In order to encourage Timothy, Paul asked him to remember nine different things about his (Paul's) life and ministry. Paul made this personal reference because it had become necessary to reassure Timothy.

**But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.**

**2 Timothy 3:10,11**

Before you can fully believe in a vision, you must study the doctrine, the lifestyle, the purpose and the faith of the people concerned. Paul reminded Timothy of his longsuffering, charity, patience, persecutions and afflictions. It is important to know about the problems someone has had in the past. Why did the person have those difficulties? Was he at fault? Did he do something wrong? Was he persecuted out of jealousy? Are the stories about him true or false?

**Some people have had persecutions because of sins and**

**mistakes they have made. Others have had problems because they were doing the right thing.**

Before you join a new church or ministry, it is important to delve into the historical background of that ministry. Many people follow false religions without studying the history of that group. If they were to study the history of their leaders, they would never support or believe in them. If however you were to study the life of Jesus Christ, you would discover that He was a noble and righteous man. He was truly without blemish. However, the same cannot be said about some other people. Jesus was murdered on the cross not because He had siphoned away a nation's wealth, but because He was paying for the sins of the world.

Even though our Lord Jesus suffered a humiliating death on the cross, it was not because He had done anything wrong. Jesus Christ never raided and looted towns. Jesus Christ did not marry ten different women. Jesus Christ did not marry children. Yet he suffered many things and was murdered by the people of his day.

When Peter preached that famous sermon about the name of Jesus, he told the Pharisees, "I know you, you killed Jesus." He knew the history of the town. He knew why and how Jesus died.

**Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the**

**dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.**

**Acts 4:8-10**

Instead of rushing to believe in something without fully understanding it, delve into its historical background.

### **Elisha knew the history!**

When Elisha began his ministry, he was called upon to minister to the king. Was Elisha supposed to flow with this backslidden king or not? Was he supposed to cooperate with this secular leader? There seemed to be no apparent reason why not! Elisha had had no previous interaction with this king. He was a new prophet and the king was also newly appointed.

But Elisha said something that showed he was fully aware of all that had gone on in the past. He told king Jehoram, “If it was not because I respected King Jehoshaphat I would not even *lift* up my head in your direction.” He went on to say, “If my eyes were even to fall in your direction, I would not *see* you.” This is a very strong statement to make to a king.

**And Elisha said unto the king of Israel, What have I to do with thee? GET THEE TO THE PROPHETS OF THY FATHER, AND TO THE PROPHETS OF THY MOTHER. And the king of Israel said unto him, Nay: for the Lord hath called these three kings together, to deliver them into the hand of Moab. And Elisha said, As the Lord of hosts liveth, before whom I stand, surely, were it not that I regard the presence of Jehoshaphat the king of Judah, I would not look**

**toward thee, nor see thee.**

**2 Kings 3:13,14**

Elisha was being very uncooperative because of the historical background of the king. This king was the person whose father had hunted down *his* 'father', Elijah. He had hunted him down like an animal. Ahab had served other gods and worshipped idols. Because Elisha was a student of church history, he knew that he could not flow with such a person. He told the king to seek help from his father's prophets!

Loyalty demands full persuasion in all areas. When I studied the background and the history of Christianity and Jesus Christ, I became more convinced about the faith that I had found. Indeed, a general study of history will help you greatly to develop loyalty in the right direction.

# **Chapter fourteen**

## ***THE LOYALTY OF CHRIST***

Many of us do not realise how loyal Jesus was to His Father in heaven. He exhibited this many times. He made many statements that teach us great truths about loyalty. In this chapter, I want us to learn the principles of fidelity, loyalty and faithfulness *directly* from Jesus Christ.

Perhaps all that you know about Jesus are the miracles that He performed. But Jesus is the express image of God and if we want to learn anything about God, all we have to do is to look at Christ.

**Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express  
image of his person...**

## Hebrews 1:3

The best teacher of loyalty is Jesus Christ himself. He was loyal to His father and to His father's vision. He never deviated from His line of duty. He was loyal even when it cost Him His life on the cross. Christ is the person you must emulate. Why do people call us Christians? Because we are supposed to be Christ-like.

As you read this chapter, decide to emulate these characteristics of Christ-like loyalty. Be the person that is described in the next few pages. Be a devoted and loyal person.

## ELEVEN CHRIST-LIKE CHARACTERISTICS

### □ A Person Who Openly Acknowledges His Father

**Therefore the Jews sought to kill him, because he not only broken the sabbath, but SAID ALSO THAT GOD WAS HIS FATHER, making himself equal with God.**

**John 5:18**

Some people do not want anyone to know about their origins. If you follow me closely, you will know where I came from and how I was trained in the ministry. I am not self-made. I have been influenced greatly by many people.

A loyal person openly speaks of his father. He is not ashamed to say whom he has followed. He is not ashamed to say whose messages have inspired him. Jesus openly spoke about

His father. He always explained that He had been sent. His proof that He had been sent lay in the fact that He did the same things that His father did. **A loyal person takes pride in the fact that he has a superior.**

**...the same works that I do, bear witness of me, THAT THE FATHER HATH SENT ME.**

**John 5:36**

He spoke so much about his father that it annoyed some people.

**Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him...**

**John 5:18**

I have noticed that certain ministers refuse to speak of their relationship with their seniors. Watch such people because they are not manifesting Christ-like qualities. It is Lucifer who forgot that he was created and appointed. If you have to be reminded about your origins you have a problem.

**Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I HAVE SET THEE SO...**

**Ezekiel 28:14**

Someone who does not acknowledge openly and freely where he is from is usually not a grateful person. Such a person usually has a hidden agenda. Perhaps he is after greatness for himself.

□

**A Person Who Follows His Superior's**

## Example At Work

A loyal subordinate will continue working as long as his superior is working. I have many loyal assistants. Hardly would they go home if I were still around working. Jesus said, “My father is working and because of that I am going to stay around and work.”

**But Jesus answered them, MY FATHER WORKETH hitherto, AND I WORK.**

**John 5:17**

Dear assistant, how can you sleep when your father is working? A good leader is often the last one to leave. As they say, “The captain is the last one to leave the ship.” A good assistant stays with his captain until the end.

Watch out for those who have no time or energy for extra work. **Watch out for those who see the leader’s hard working attitude as a vexation that makes everyone weary!** How can you think that your father is doing unnecessary things? Jesus said, “My father is working and therefore, I must work.” Do not think that you are being over-worked. Have the attitude of Jesus.

□ **A Person Who Does *Only* What He Sees His Leader Doing**

**Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, the son can do nothing of himself BUT WHAT HE SEETH THE FATHER DO...**



## John 5:19

When you are assisting your father, there are many things you can do. You can do what you think is right or you can do what you see your father do. Let us choose to learn from Jesus. He *only* did what He saw His father doing. He was loyal to His father and to His father's ideals. He preached what His father would have preached and He did what His father would have done.

### **Jesus, Why don't you heal everyone?**

One day, Jesus did something mysterious. He went into a hospital where there was a multitude of sick people, yet He healed only one person and left the others to their fate.

**... And Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is a Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay A GREAT MULTITUDE OF IMPOTENT FOLK, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. ...And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years... Jesus saith unto him, rise take up thy bed, and walk... And he that was healed wist not who it was: for JESUS HAD CONVEYED HIMSELF AWAY, a multitude being in that place.**

## John 5:1,2,3,5,8,13

Later when He was questioned about what He had done, He explained; "I only do what my father does." Jesus saw His father healing only one person and that is what He did. He ministered to only one person! After ministering to one person, He conveyed Himself away. He didn't bother to pray for anyone else. It probably wouldn't have worked anyway!

## **No power!**

One day at a programme, I decided to pray for everyone present. As I prayed for the people, I felt the power of God was absent. I prayed quietly to myself and said, “Oh Lord, where are you?” Then the Holy Spirit spoke to my spirit and said, “Who asked you to pray for everyone?” Suddenly, I knew I was doing the wrong thing. I was on my own trying to pray for everyone. God wanted me to pray for some people and *not* for everyone.

You see, with our natural mind, we would do things in a particular way. But Jesus wanted to do only what His father was doing. With my natural mind, I expected that Jesus would heal every single sick person He came into contact with. I expected that He would empty hospitals and heal everyone. But that is not what He did in John chapter five.

Every servant can choose to do his own thing. Are you a loyal minister of Christ? Are you doing what you want to do or are you doing what He is doing? There are many nice things that you can be involved in, but are they the will of God?

Perhaps everybody is opening a school, but is that what the Lord is doing? Perhaps everyone is travelling around ministering, is that what the Lord is doing?

Years ago I had several opportunities to minister in different churches in the world. At that time, the Lord was leading me to stay within the Lighthouse network. I did what I saw my father doing. This has resulted in several large Lighthouse

churches all over the world. Is everyone breaking away and becoming a rebel? Do not follow the crowd. Do what you see your father doing. Is your father a rebel? Is your father breaking away?

If you want to succeed in ministry, learn to do exactly what your leader is doing. **You will grow faster when you emulate your leader exactly.** Do you want to progress faster in ministry? Life is too short for you not to learn from your fathers. Jesus did exactly what He had seen His father do and He was a successful minister. Many of my pastors preach what I preach and teach what I teach. They run the programs in their churches in the way they see me do it.

### **Don't be a hero!**

I have noticed something! My 'children' in the Lord, who follow me closely and do what they see me do, make greater strides in ministry. Those who experiment and play around with unproven methods often take much longer to advance in ministry. I want to say it again! Don't be a hero! Your life is too short for you to play around with it. Your life is too short to use part of it to discover things that have already been discovered.

It is time for you to move quickly in ministry. The fields are white unto harvest. Do what you see your father in ministry do. Follow him closely. Avoid his mistakes and learn all you can from him. A loyal person takes pride in the fact that he is able to do exactly what his father does.

**...THE SAME WORKS THAT I DO, BEAR WITNESS OF**

**ME, that the father hath sent me.**

**John 5:36**

The loyalty of Christ to his father's methods paid off. Jesus was the ultimate minister. Learn his secrets and you will be great in the ministry.

□ **A Person Who Does Not Seek His Own Will, But The Will Of His Leader**

**I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I SEEK NOT MINE OWN WILL, BUT THE WILL OF THE FATHER which hath sent me.**

**John 5:30**

What a blessing it is to have an assistant who is not seeking his own will. I once had a pastor who joined my team with his own vision. He was not seeking to accomplish *my* vision. His aim was to accomplish *his* dream. Jesus said very clearly, "I seek not *my* own will, but the will of Him who sent me."

Let me ask you today, "Who sent you?" Whose vision are you following? When there are two or more visions within one team, you have a di-vision. When there is division there is a lot of pain and hurt. Even if your small toe were to separate from your body you would experience a lot of pain and you would not be able to sleep.

I had a pastor who decided to use me as a stepping-stone to his ministry. I had no idea that this young man was using me to accomplish *his* vision. I thought he was helping me to accomplish *my* vision. He used me to gain visibility and was intro-

duced as a minister. His secret plan was to leave us after some years. Indeed, some years after he joined, he pushed through with his vision and separated himself in a very painful move. We were taken aback! But this is what happens when there are assistants with their own hidden agenda and programs.

Develop the loyalty of Christ. He said very clearly, “I seek not my own will, but the will of my father which hath sent me.” If you have been sent to begin a church in another country or locality, decide to accomplish the will of those who sent you.

## □ **A Person Who Does Not Bear Witness Of Himself**

**IF I BEAR WITNESS OF MYSELF, MY WITNESS IS NOT TRUE. There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.**

**John 5:31,32**

When you bear witness of yourself, you promote and exalt yourself. Jesus did none of these. He exalted *his father* and spoke constantly of where he derived his authority. That is the loyalty of Christ. A person who exalts and promotes himself is not sent from God. Are you a loyal person? There is no need to elevate yourself beyond your current position. The Lord who sent you will do that for you.

There are pastors whose best sermons are about themselves and what they have achieved. If you are a prophet, there is no need to exalt yourself. God has a way of exalting people He has called.

**How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?**

**John 5:44**

There is no need to be a pushy or forward minister. There is no need to invite yourself everywhere, claiming you want to be a blessing to others. Allow God to lift you up Himself.

### **□ A Person Who Does Not Allow The Words Of Men To Influence Him**

**But I receive not testimony from man...**

**John 5:34**

A leader must be very careful about what men say to him. Human beings are fickle and can misdirect you. They will tell you that you are an apostle, prophet or evangelist. They will say to you, “Do not submit yourself to any man. You can do it yourself.”

Others will say to you, “You can also write books. He is not the only one who is anointed.” Assistants, watch out! They will tell you, “I prefer it when you preach. I wish you were given more opportunities to minister.”

**You can break away!**

A senior minister once told my associate, “Do not see yourself as an assistant. You are a great man of God. God has called you to do great things.”

He continued, “Can you not see that anytime there is trouble in the church, you are the one who is sent to put out the fires?” “You can move out on your own and you will be great in ministry”.

My associate was taken aback because this advice was coming from a senior minister. Moreover, this ‘advisor’ happened to be a friend of mine. My pastor was not taken in by this treacherous suggestion.

My associate told me later, “I decided never to interact with this minister again.”

He had concluded to himself: “this is a very dangerous person.”

Many people listen to this kind of advice and embark on a wild goose chase. Understand that your credentials do not come by what men say about you. Men can easily misdirect you in the ministry.

**I RECEIVE NOT HONOUR FROM MEN. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.**

**John 5:41,42**

Jesus was careful not to receive direction from human beings. He took inspiration directly from the Father. **When people criticize you, remember that it is what God says that matters.**

Years ago when some people called me ‘*Jim Jones*’, I could not believe my ears. They derided and denigrated me. To denigrate means : to blacken the reputation of someone. I have been blackened many times! I have been blackened by friends! I have been blackened by pastors! I have been blackened by neighbours! However, I am still around! This is because my

promotion *does not* and *will not* come from these people. It comes from the Lord!

The promotion I have received in the ministry is not from men. Some men have mostly said negative things about me. It must be painful for these same men to watch as the Lord slowly but surely lifts me up.

**...Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies...**

**Psalm 23:5**

The loyalty of Christ will pay off in the end.

## □ **A Loyal Person Does Not Seek To Impress People**

**How can ye believe, WHICH RECEIVE HONOUR ONE OF ANOTHER, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?**

**John 5:44**

A loyal person does not try to impress others. One dangerous trait for leaders to have is a desire to impress people. Paul said that he had overcome the need to impress or please anybody.

**For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.**

**Galatians 1:10**



Why is this character trait a dangerous thing? Because you cannot please everyone, you will end up hurting some and pleasing the others. **Ministers who cannot take hard decisions because they want to make everybody happy, end up destroying their own churches.**

Years ago I had an assistant who was a very nice person. I liked him very much and so did many others. I still like him because he is a nice person. He was nice to be with and he chatted freely with all the members of the church. The members gravitated to him naturally although he was my assistant.

Soon, external ministers who were not part of our church knew him. With the process of time, some of these external ministers began to be inimical towards my ministry. This pleasant brother tried to balance his loyalties between myself and the external ministers. Mind you, he never showed any outward signs of ill will. He was a nice person through and through. However, you cannot please everyone! There comes a time when you must stand up for your conviction. A time came when I realised that his heart was not with me. He could not please those other ministers and me. A time came when we had to go our separate ways. You are not safe with a leader who tries to impress everyone.

## □ **A Loyal Person Seeks Only The Approval Of His Leader**

**There is another that BEARETH WITNESS OF ME; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true.**

**John 5:32**

A loyal person knows that it is what his father says that really matters. Men may disapprove of you, but with God's approval, you are going places. Every minister must realize that it is God who opens certain doors and closes others. Seek the approval of the one who really matters.

Human beings may rant and rave about you. They may say all sorts of evil things, but if you have the approval of your father, man, you are covered.

## □ **A Loyal Person Constantly Hears The Voice Of His Master**

**...YE HAVE NEITHER HEARD HIS VOICE at any time, nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you...**

**John 5:37,38**

Jesus heard the voice of his father; he was constantly in touch with his father. Loyalty is greatly helped by communication. A person often becomes disloyal when he stays out of touch for a long time.

I encourage my pastors to stay in touch all the time. Those who listen to tapes and hear the voice of their leader are more prone to be faithful. Those who read the books, listen to the tapes and watch the videos are in constant fellowship with their father.

Distance, separation and a lack of communication have a way of breaking up friendships. That is why most denominations have yearly meetings and gatherings of all sorts.

If you want to encourage loyalty within a system you are creating, increase the number of gatherings that you have.

□ **A Loyal Person Loves His Leader And  
Loves The Lord**

**But I know you, that YE HAVE NOT THE LOVE OF  
GOD in you.**

**John 5:42**

Love never fails. When there is genuine love within an association, church or group, there is a bond which is difficult to break. Things are kept together by bonds and linkages. Do you want a bond that is stronger than super glue? Try love! Love is as strong as death. It is a bond that cannot be easily broken.

**... Put on charity (love), which is the BOND OF PER-  
FECTNESS.**

**Colossians 3:14**

Let me ask you a question, “Do you love your head?” If you do, then it is likely that you will be faithful to him. I would prefer to work with people who love me rather than those who are with me because of what they can get from me. That is why I prefer to have an office which is more of a family than a business.

□ **A Loyal Person Flows With Loyal People**

**For HAD YE BELIEVED MOSES, YE WOULD HAVE  
BELIEVED ME: for he wrote of me.**

**John 5:46**

Christ ‘flowed’ with Moses. He spoke about Moses. He read Moses’ books. Note that Moses was one of God’s faithful servants. Jesus told the crowds that they did not believe in Moses or his teachings. A loyal person associates with loyal people. A loyal person believes in the teachings of other faithful people. His friends are good people. As they say, “Birds of a feather flock together.”

Jesus’ ministry was in line with the teaching of Moses, one of God’s most faithful and loyal servants. Who are your friends? Whose teachings do you flow with? Are you always siding with rebels and wrongdoers?

If you want to know if someone is loyal, take a good look at his friends.

## **Chapter fifteen**

# ***THE LOYALTY OF THE FATHER***

This chapter could also be entitled, *How to Be a Loyal Senior Pastor* or *How to Be a Loyal Chief Executive*. You must realize that Jesus was sent to the earth as an emissary of the Father. His duty was to present the views of our heavenly Father to this world. He was supposed to let everyone know what the Father was like.

Many people do not know what God is like. By knowing Jesus they get to know what the Creator of heaven and earth is really like. Jesus could have misrepresented the Father, but he did not. The Father (who represents the sending organization) could have failed Jesus when he was on this earth. But Almighty God was loyal to the one He had sent.

Many senior pastors are not loyal to their followers. As I have observed the behaviour of certain senior leaders, bishops, managing directors, etc.; I have often said to myself, “I could never work in such an environment.” Some senior pastors are so inconsistent and unconcerned about the welfare and future of their subordinates that it would be unwise to follow such people.

If you want to have a stable following, you must decide to develop a pattern of loyalty towards those who support you.

In this chapter, I want us to see how our heavenly Father demonstrated his loyalty to Jesus Christ whom He had sent into this world. The loyalty of the Father demonstrates the type of person every manager or senior pastor needs to be.

## **SIX CHARACTERISTICS OF A LOYAL SENIOR MINISTER**

## **1. A LEADER WHO WORKS**

**But Jesus answered them, MY FATHER WORKETH  
HITHERTO, AND I WORK.**

**John 5:17**

There are some leaders who do not work; they just give orders and go to sleep. Jesus was under the authority of His Father and He spoke of His Father and said, “My Father works and I also work.”

Do not just enjoy the *privileges* of leaders. People love to work when they see their leader working. The sight of their leader working gives them much inspiration. Do you want to motivate your workers and followers? Let them know that you work even harder than they do!

## **2. A LEADER WHO IS SEEN**

**Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but WHAT HE SEETH THE FATHER DO: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.**

**John 5:19**

Everybody wants to follow someone they can see. There is a style of leadership in which the boss is more of a Prime Minister than anything else. If the senior pastor is more of a Prime Minister than a pastor, he is seen very occasionally. He comes in with high security and does not talk to the common man. He is whisked in and whisked out! But our heavenly

Father is not somebody that Jesus could not see. Jesus could see all that His Father was doing and follow Him easily.

When David came on the scene, he won the hearts of the Israelites. He was a young man and a good warrior. But he won the hearts of the Israelites because he was more visible than Saul. The people could see their leader and they were happy with him.

**But all Israel and Judah loved David, because he went out and came in before them.**

**1 Samuel 18:16**

People are more loyal to people they see than to people they cannot see. That is why members of churches tend to be more loyal to their resident pastor whom they see every day, than to the general overseer whom they rarely see.

### **3. A LEADER WHO LOVES HIS SUBORDINATES**

**For the Father LOVETH the son...**

**John 5:20a**

The Father loved the one He had sent. Be a leader who loves his followers. Many leaders do not care about the people they lead. **When the people you lead are sure that you love them, they will be willing to do almost anything for you.** Loyalty is deeper than what you see on the outside. It goes beyond giving orders that are obeyed! Loyalty is of the heart. When you can win the hearts of the people and convince them that you care for them, they will be loyal to you. This is exactly

what Absalom did.

Absalom, although an evil person, used a principle that works for everyone. He used the principle of showing love to the people in order to gain their loyalties. Love is a seed. If you sow it, you will reap it!

I want you to notice how Absalom won the hearts and loyalties of the people of Israel.

**And Absalom rose up early, and stood beside the way of the gate: and it was so, that when any man that had a controversy came to the king for judgment, then Absalom called unto him, and said, Of what city art thou? And he said, Thy servant is of one of the tribes of Israel. And Absalom said unto him, See, thy matters are good and right; but there is no man deputed of the king to hear thee. Absalom said moreover, Oh that I were made judge in the land, that every man which hath any suit or cause might come unto me, and I would do him justice!**

## **2 Samuel 15:2-4**

*Absalom asked people about their problems.* If you are a good leader, you will be interested in people's personal problems. It helps to win their hearts. People turn their loyalties towards a leader who shows genuine care and concern for their well-being. When Jesus said, "the Father loveth the Son", He was giving us a great revelation about how to treat those who work for us.

Absalom came from the outside and won the hearts of the people from David, the king. Absalom showed that he wanted



to help the people.

**...Oh that I were made judge in the land...**

**2 Samuel 15:4**

Absalom said he wanted a chance to be judge. His message was simple; “Oh, if only I had a chance to help.” Gradually, the hearts of the people were drawn to Absalom. **If you are the senior pastor of the church, you must draw the hearts of the people to yourself so that they will be loyal to you.** Show them that you care. Show them that you are interested.

You must not allow their hearts to be ‘stolen’ by any one. You must do this if you want to keep your church in one piece. **Do not allow a rebellious assistant to sit at the gate of your church or company.** Do not allow a rebellious worker to have access to the sheep that God has given you. If their hearts are with the assistant, you have a dangerous situation on your hands. One day, when the assistant decides to leave, he will move away with a large section of your people.

**And on this manner did Absalom unto all Israel that came to the king for judgment: so ABSALOM STOLE THE HEARTS of the men of Israel.**

**2 Samuel 15:6**

## **4. A LEADER WHO IS OPEN TO HIS SUBORDINATES**

**For the Father loveth the son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth...**

## John 5:20

When Jesus was on earth, he knew that he could trust his heavenly Father absolutely. This was because his Father had shown him all that He was doing. I have discovered that openness breeds loyalty. I have always endeavoured to be open to those I lead so that they can trust me. Some ministers are mysteriously prosperous. When you ask them, “How did you come by this house or car?” They will answer; “It is the blessing of the Lord.” They will continue, “God has made a way where there was no way.”

We thank God for His blessings and for giving you more than you carry. But in practical terms, how did you come by the things you have? What is the channel or vessel that God used to promote you? When people know the source of your blessings they are more relaxed in your presence. When they feel that you are not cheating anyone, they tend to be more loyal.

That is why the Father showed the Lord Jesus everything He was doing. Jesus knew what his future was. Jesus knew that his present suffering was for a season. He knew that he had a good Father who had his best interests at heart. He was prepared to do anything and to go anywhere to please his Father.

**Wouldn't you like to have subordinates with that sort of attitude? How many workers would be prepared to die for their bosses?** Yet, Jesus died on the cross because his 'boss' wanted him to! Jesus described his death on the cross as the cup that his 'boss' had given him to drink. He described his sacrifice as a drink. How many employees describe their hard work as a drink?

**Then said Jesus unto Peter... THE CUP WHICH MY FATHER HATH GIVEN ME, SHALL I NOT DRINK IT?**

**John 18:11**

Many ordinary African citizens have very little confidence in the leadership of their countries. We all know that many things are hidden. We know that millions of dollars are probably being stashed away by the leaders of African countries.

### **Openness generates trust!**

In the history of Ghana you will discover that corruption was revealed only after the leaders were removed. Recently, when a Head of State in Africa died, a billion dollars of petty cash was discovered in his home. I was personally taken aback! I had mistakenly thought that this man could be trusted. Confidence in the leadership is very low when everything is shrouded in secret. We realize that we will only know everything after the removal of dictators. The salary and benefits of the American president for the rest of his life are public knowledge. Why is this? To generate confidence in the government.

### **Mistrust leads to separation**

When people feel that they are not trusted, they begin to separate themselves. They feel hurt and rejected. "Why should I stay around if I'm not trusted?" They say to themselves.

A good leader must not do things that make his followers or subordinates feel like they are not trusted. It is a sure seed that can lead to disloyalty. Those who are not involved in sensitive

areas, such as money, should not feel that they are being excluded because of mistrust. They must be made to understand that everyone has a schedule and it happens that their schedule does not involve financial things!

**For the Father loveth him and showeth him all things!**

## **5. A LEADER WHO GIVES PUBLIC APPROVAL TO HIS FOLLOWERS**

**And the Father himself which hath sent me, HATH  
BORNE WITNESS OF ME...**

**John 5:37**

A good manager is someone who gives public approval of his workers. **Praise people in public and correct them in private.** A good leader knows that praising his subordinates is not going to weaken his position. It is a good thing to show public approval for your subordinates. It breeds a spirit of confidence and loyalty. Jesus often said that his Father had testified of him in public. The Father did many public things that demonstrated His approval of Jesus.

Many bishops, head pastors and general overseers do not want to publicly approve of their juniors. It just does not occur to some people to recommend their workers. Some feel that it is unnecessary. Others are insecure and so do not do it. I often wonder why some people who like to be praised and encouraged refuse to praise and encourage others.

One day, Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead. The prayer

that the Lord Jesus prayed at the cemetery was very revealing. *He did not pray for anointing or power to raise the dead.* He had to explain to his Father why he was even praying at the tomb site. He told his father, “I know that you always hear my prayers. It is because of the people around that I am praying. I want them to know how you approve of me.

**Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, THAT THEY MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAS SENT ME.**

**John 11:41,42**

A leader who constantly disgraces his subordinates in public will not have many loyal followers. No one is perfect! I have corrected many of my subordinates in ministry. But I always do it in private. You would never know about the discussions that have gone on behind closed doors. It does not concern you anyway. How can a leader have confidence if he is constantly rebuked in front of those he leads?

## **6. A LEADER WHO TRUSTS THE JUDGMENT AND DECISIONS OF HIS SUBORDINATES**

**For the Father judgeth no man, but HATH COMMITTED ALL JUDGMENT UNTO THE SON:**

**John 5:22**

The Father, once again exemplifies great leadership as He demonstrates trust in His messenger. Jesus was sent to this earth as a messenger of the Father. Jesus was given a lot of responsibility. He was trusted with decisions. He was trusted with the judgment of this earth. He had a large amount of independence committed to him. This is a mystery, because in another breath Jesus said, “I can of my own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge.” (John 5:30) Even though Jesus had been given a large amount of latitude in which to operate, he had decided to depend on the decisions and judgments his Father would make.

A good leader can generate loyalty in people by giving them a freehand in many of the decisions that affect their own lives. The Lord showed this to me many years ago and I have implemented it with great success. **I know that people become more loyal when they are involved in the decision-making process.** It gives them power, freedom and independence. These are things that every human being needs!

Long ago, I decentralised the decisions about salaries and benefits for the few employees we have. Almost everybody who is employed in my set-up is involved in determining his or her own conditions of service. I prefer to invite people to the “soup pot” and ask them to dish themselves. If they take out all the meat, there will be none left for all of us and we will all starve.

I often tell the different boards who take these decisions, “Just make sure you don’t kill the chicken which lays the eggs. I remind them, “If you kill the chicken which lays our eggs, we will all starve in the future.”

Once people have a mature mind as they approach the “soup pot”, they take sound and rational decisions. Most of the

time, I don't even know what people are paid in their different regions. For all you know, they may earn more than I do. I trust them to be sensible. Of course, there are supervisory checks and balances in place. But people know that they have been trusted with the judgment. When people realize that they have been entrusted with high responsibility, they often mature overnight.

Jesus said that the Father had committed all judgment to the Son. Allow people to use their brains. Do not assume that you are the only wise person who can take decisions. After all, as someone said, "You are not always right!" Do not be afraid to trust people. **Sow a seed of trust and you will reap more trust.** Learn from your heavenly Father today. Be a follower of Almighty God.

**Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children.**

**Ephesians 5:1**

# Chapter sixteen

## ***SEVEN METHODS FOR DEALING WITH DISLOY- ALTY***

Every manager, businessperson and pastor must learn seven important methods to deal with all forms of disloyalty.

### **1. THE TEACHING METHOD**

This method involves teaching the Word of God regularly. This method is a preventive process that every wise minister or leader should adopt. There are two ways to manage an organisation: *crisis* management or *preventive* management.

In crisis management, you move from one crisis to another, solving the issues as they come up. In preventive management you constantly teach and immunize the people against the problem you are trying to avoid.

I would suggest to you that your church or business should adopt the preventive style of management. Those who have a crisis management style are often stressed out and never able to do the things they have to in order to take their business or church forward.



**Teaching your people constantly is a sure way of preventing a whole array of problems.** This is why I hold Shepherds' (leaders) Camps and congresses. This is why I constantly have meetings with our pastors and leaders.

The main thing that teaching does is to fight against deception. It is only people who are deceived who go in the way of Absalom or Lucifer. Lucifer was deceived and is the father of deception. Lucifer thought that he could replace God. He said, "I will ascend and be like the Most High." There must be a strong deception for a created being to think of displacing the Almighty God.

The Bible calls the devil "that old serpent who deceives the whole world". If someone can deceive the whole world, then believe me he must be very good at it! That is why the teaching method of dealing with disloyalty is very important.

**And the great dragon was cast out, THAT OLD SERPENT, CALLED THE DEVIL, and Satan, which DECEIVETH THE WHOLE WORLD: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**

**Revelations 12:9**

Many countries have adopted preventive medicine (primary health care) as the mainstay of their medical programmes. It has become evident that it is easier to prevent diseases than to fight them once they are established.

It is easier to prevent disloyalty by teaching than to clean up after an 'Absalom' has passed through the church. The situation created by a 'Judas' is so messy that you would be

better off preventing it.

## **2. THE NICOLAITAN METHOD**

**But this thou hast, that thou hateth the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.**

**Revelations 2:6**

In this method, the church together with its leadership develops a hatred and aversion for disloyalty and disloyal people. The Nicolaitanes were hated by the Ephesian Church and God recommended them for that!

When people are taught about Judas, Absalom, Ahitophel and so on, they gradually develop a hatred for any form of disloyalty. They are quick to pick it up and reject it.

One brother told a friend in the church, “I want to tell you something in confidence. You know Pastor is really annoying me.”

He continued, “I know that the series he his preaching is directed against me.”

He went on, “I am very angry with him.”

The brother he was talking to replied, “What is wrong with you? Are you out of your mind? Why are you talking like this? I am going to tell Pastor what you said.”

The angry brother was taken aback. He said, “This loyalty thing has also affected you.”

Indeed the loyalty “thing” had affected this brother. He immediately reported these unacceptable comments to the pastor. Soon that fire was quenched.

This is the Nicolaitan method – where everyone has a hatred for rebellion and any form of disloyalty.

### 3. THE NORTH WIND METHOD

**The NORTH WIND driveth away rain: so doth an angry countenance a backbiting tongue.**

**Proverbs 25:23**

This scripture teaches us that an angry facial expression can drive away disloyalty. You see, complainers, murmurers and slanderers are looking for someone to talk to. If you give them the chance, they will sit you down and poison you thoroughly. What every leader must realize is that these people must not be given a chance to even *speak* in our midst.

Some people's words are like cancer. They poison the whole system and have a potential for polluting many people. Would you smile at the sight of a viper in your sitting room? What facial expression would come up if you saw a rattlesnake in your bathtub? Certainly not a smile! I am sure you would have no welcoming facial expressions for the viper. Please do not welcome vipers in the church or in the company.

From today there can be no welcoming smiles for defiant agitators. They must not for one moment feel welcome in our midst! If you cannot smile at a snake do not smile at a disloyal person. Let him know from your facial expression that his

presence and his comments are undesirable.

#### **4. THE ABRAHAMIC METHOD**

This is the method of peaceful separation. It happens between mature individuals who want to avoid the deadly effects of conflicts.

**And there was a strife between the herdmen of Abram's cattle and the herdmen of Lot's cattle: and the Canaanite and the Perizzite dwelled then in the land. And Abram said unto Lot, Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee, and between my herdmen and thy herdmen; for we be brethren. Is not the whole land before thee? SEPARATE THYSELF, I PRAY THEE, FROM ME: if thou wilt take the left hand, then I will go to the right; or if thou depart to the right hand, then I will go to the left. And Lot lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered every where, before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah, even as the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt, as thou comest unto Zoar. Then Lot chose him all the plain of Jordan; and Lot journeyed east: and they separated themselves the one from the other.**

**Genesis 13:7-11**

There was strife between Abraham's men and Lot's men. God gave Abraham wisdom to deal with the situation. He called his nephew Lot and suggested a peaceful separation.

There are some people you should not work with. As long as you labour with them on the same field, there will never be peace. Sometimes people simply do not believe in your call-

ing. They cannot accept that God will use you for anything special.

## **Do You Believe In My Prayer?**

These people must be allowed to separate from you in peace. I once prayed for someone. After the prayer I asked, “Do you believe in my prayer?” The answer was short and simple – no! I told this individual to go peacefully to another church. I said “over there you will be able to receive”.

This is different from a dismissal in which a rebel is thrown out! In this case everyone goes his way and has equal opportunities to do well. With time, the differences will show up. After the separation of Abraham and Lot, there were soon obvious differences between the two parties. These were due to the different relationships that Abraham and Lot had with the Lord. No one can see your spiritual status in the natural. But with time, it becomes clear as to who is really called of God.

**And the Lord said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever.**

**Genesis 13:14,15**

## **5. THE “CASTING OUT” METHOD**

**Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease.**

**Proverbs 22:10**

The biblical remedy for dealing with scoffers is to cast them out! In modern English, to cast out means *to throw away, to dismiss, to expel, to eject, to banish, to fire, to sack, to discard, to unseat or to lay off*. I believe that almost anyone can understand the meaning of “casting out”.

The Bible teaches us to cast out scornful people. A mocker is disloyal to your cause. The biblical treatment for such people is expulsion. Whenever you realize that someone is mocking at you, please do not hesitate to expel him from your life.

**Sometimes, failure to dismiss people is like failing to do a surgery that will save your life.** I have used this method for treating disloyalty. It was indeed painful, but a new spirit of loyalty entered the church. What a fresh breath of life we all experienced.

When you fail to dismiss someone who must go, you are exhibiting weak leadership. You are allowing a snake to live under your children’s bed. Please do not cry if your children are bitten and they die.

## **6. THE MARKING AND AVOIDING METHOD**

**Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good**

**words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.**

**Romans 16:17,18**

This scripture teaches that people who cause divisions must be noted and avoided at all costs. What does marking and avoiding mean? **To mark means to brand or to label an object so that it will stand out.** Some sheep need to be branded so that they can be recognized from afar. **It is important to notice a disloyal person from afar.**

I once had to apply this method in dealing with a rebel in my church. Since I could not take a tin of red paint and brand this person, the only way I could mark him was to inform some people that this brother was a doubtful person who should be avoided.

I called for a meeting and told them that this brother was unsafe and should be avoided at all costs. By holding that meeting and telling the people that the brother was not loyal to the church, I had branded or marked him sufficiently. I did not even have to give the details of this brother's misdemeanours.

After that, sheep that would have innocently played with that brother became wary of him and stayed off. Indeed, the few sheep that he was able to get close to suffered from his poisonous effusions. There are people who have fallen away today because they were exposed to this person. **Do not be afraid to mark and avoid anyone. It is a biblical instruction given by the apostle Paul himself.**

When a nation is deporting someone, they often attach a letter that says, "Your presence is now undesirable in this nation." **There are some people whose presence is undesirable in the**

**church.** They must not be allowed to remain in the church any longer. They must be marked and avoided. They must be expelled and prevented from coming back.

## **7. THE CURSING METHOD**

The Apostle Paul used this method when he was trying to prevent charlatans from deceiving the flock. He was powerless to physically prevent anyone from tricking and dividing his flock. Paul was far away in a Roman prison, so he employed the spiritual method of cursing.

**But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, LET HIM BE ACCURSED.**

**Galatians 1:8**

The curse was a spiritual barrier against intruders. When you are powerless in the physical, it is a good method to employ against traitors and mutineers.

Many years ago King David had a disloyal associate called Joab. Joab went against David's commandments and murdered Abner. David realized that it was too risky to fight against Joab. It would have brought more division and destabilized his kingdom. David employed a powerful curse against Joab and his family. He took the matter up spiritually.

David knew that he had power through his tongue, to curse traitors and rebels. And he used it!

**Let it rest on the head of Joab, and on all his father's house;**



**and let there not fail from the house of Joab one that hath an issue, or that is a leper, or that leaneth on a staff, or that falleth on the sword or that lacketh bread.**

**2 Samuel 3:29**

Many years ago, I was preaching in our church. At that time, our church was occupying the medical school canteen in Korle Bu Teaching Hospital of Accra. I was preaching on the subject *The New Wave Churches*. At a point nearing the end of my sermon, I began to speak prophetically. **I spoke many prophetic curses against anyone who would rise up to destroy the new wave churches that God was building.**

You see, the Spirit of the Lord upon me was leading me to cover his church with spiritual protection. I believe that those proclamations are at work today! I believe that they contribute greatly to the divine preservation and growth of the ministry!

# Chapter seventeen

## ***THREE BASIC FACTS ABOUT LOYALTY***

### **1. DISLOYALTY IS OFTEN A FRUIT OF IMMATURITY**

I have realized that many people become disloyal because they are not mature in the things of God. When Absalom broke away from the regular army and attacked his father, many people followed him. But that is not all! The Word of God describes the state of their minds. It says that they were simplistic. It says that they were simple people and they did not know much.

**And with Absalom went two hundred men out of Jerusalem, that were called; and they went in their SIMPLICITY, and THEY KNEW NOT ANYTHING.**

**2 Samuel 15:11**

You see, if you really understand what you are doing you may not go ahead with rebellion. That is why I preach and teach on disloyalty. The more we teach on this subject, the more awareness is created. It is not a good thing to be a Judas, an Absalom or Lucifer. These are bad names you should not be associated with. Who would really like to be a rebel when all rebels end up being executed?

## Mild and Serious Disloyalty

In the ministry of Jesus, it was not only Judas who betrayed Christ. Peter also betrayed Christ. He swore and cursed that he did not know Jesus. Was this not a betrayal? If you got into trouble and needed help, would you not be disappointed if your friend said he did not know you? Would you not feel that he had betrayed you in your time of trouble? I know you would! But this is exactly what Peter did.

Yet, it is not only Peter who deserted Christ at the moment when He needed support. The other disciples were nowhere to be found. They all abandoned ship when it was most critical. That is betrayal! Yet, Christ did not put them in the same category as Judas. **Judas was manifesting what I call *serious disloyalty* and the other disciples were manifesting *mild disloyalty*.**

### Characteristics of Serious Disloyalty

- ❑ **In serious disloyalty the rebels concerned actually engineer an uprising, demonstration or revolt against authority.**

You will notice that the disciples did not engineer anything; they were *victims* of the circumstances.

- ❑ **In serious disloyalty, the traitor is often disloyal for monetary gains.**
- ❑ **Seriously disloyal people will sacrifice their friends for any flimsy reason.**
- ❑ **Seriously disloyal people lie about you with the intention**

**of hurting or destroying you.**

They spread evil stories about the person in order to destroy him. Notice that the disciples did not spread any bad stories about Christ after they had deserted Him.

- ❑ **Serious disloyalty, (e.g. Lucifer, Absalom or Judas) is usually untreatable, not correctable and without remedy.**

### **Characteristic of Mild Disloyalty**

- ❑ **In mild disloyalty, you will notice features of betrayal and desertion and abandonment.**
- ❑ **Such people are usually caught up by the events of the day.**

The disciples were caught up by the momentous events of the night.

- ❑ **They do not personally engineer or create a rebellion against authority.**

Neither do they help to destroy the church or business.

- ❑ **Mildly disloyal people follow wrong things out of simplicity.**

They do not understand the issues at stake. Many people follow things only to find out that they have made a mistake. I have had people leave the church only to return and apologize profusely for their mistake.

**And with Absalom went two hundred men out of Jerusalem, that were called; and THEY WENT IN THEIR SIMPLICITY, and THEY KNEW NOT ANY THING.**

**2 Samuel 15:11**

- ❑ **Mildly disloyal people are often confused by events.**

They don't know what is right or wrong and they don't under-

stand what is happening. To them, the pastors in the church are in conflict and they wish it would all end happily.

- ❑ **Mildly disloyal people often act in fear and ignorance.** They are frightened by conflicts. They do not know anything about rebellion or insurgencies.
- ❑ **Mild disloyalty can often be remedied with time.**
- ❑ **Mild disloyalty often manifests itself as confusion and uncertainty.**

Whenever there is a shake-up in a church, such people are often caught in the middle of the fight. They don't know who is right and who is wrong. You cannot really blame them as they don't really know what is going on.

**And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee. But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I. And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.**

**Mark 14:27-31**

Even though Jesus' disciples were not loyal to him when it really mattered, I believe that He considered it to be a result of immaturity. Because of this I often overlook things that people say, knowing that they will come to understand. Often a person is critical because he is inexperienced. Sometimes assistant pastors are critical of the senior pastor because they have never been head pastors before. If you are a senior pastor, it is important to check this before it grows into a serious rebellion.

## **The School of Hard Knocks**

One of the best ways to deal with mild disloyalty is to allow the individual to go through certain experiences himself. If your associate pastor feels that you are not a good head pastor, one of the best things to do is to send him to the ‘school of hard knocks’. Allow him to be a senior minister. Let him pioneer a church. He will mature in no time! The ‘school of hard knocks’ issues certificates of maturity. You will also receive a diploma in understanding from this ‘school’.

As he pastors a church himself and has people under him, he will begin to appreciate the responsibilities and pressures that come upon a leader. There are some people who are not able to appreciate these realities without experiencing head-ship themselves. However, some ministers have the grace to assist without going through this ‘school’.

After the disciples had abandoned Jesus, you will notice that He did not rebuke them for betraying Him. Jesus understood them! Jesus knew that it was a stage of development and gave them another chance. He just said to them, “Go into the world and preach the gospel.” Jesus was sending the disciples in to the ‘school of hard knocks’. When you read the letters of Peter, you will realise that he met various rebellious people in his ministry. He learnt first-hand about loyalty.

**When you give people a chance, they often turn out very well.** The disciples became so loyal to Christ that many of them died for their faith. Those who fled in the early days of their ministry had matured into faithful diehard loyalists. To die for someone is the highest form of commitment you can ever

have. Many people experiencing mild disloyalty can turn around to become the most loyal people you could ever have.

## **2. LOYALTY TODAY DOES NOT MEAN LOYALTY TOMORROW**

The fact that you are faithful today does not mean that you will be faithful tomorrow. A Christian needs to be loyal because the devil does not go on vacation. Jesus overcame the devil in the wilderness. The Bible teaches us that the devil went away for a season and not forever. The devil will leave you for awhile but not forever.

**And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.**

**Luke 4:13**

At different times in the history of King David's reign, he had sons who tried to usurp his authority and take the throne. The first time it happened, a young man named Absalom was involved in the conspiracy.

**And there came a messenger to David, saying, The hearts of the men of Israel are after Absalom. And David said unto all his servants that were with him at Jerusalem, Arise, and let us flee; for we shall not else escape from Absalom: make speed to depart, lest he overtake us suddenly, and bring evil upon us, and smite the city with the edge of the sword.**

**2 Samuel 15:13,14**

In this particular instance, Joab, David's army commander, was loyal and fought against Absalom. He was so zealous that he even killed Absalom when David was crying for

mercy for his son. This was a great display of loyalty to the cause of the King.

**And Absalom met the servants of David. And Absalom rode upon a mule, and the mule went under the thick boughs of a great oak, and his head caught hold of the oak, and he was taken up between the heaven and the earth; and the mule that was under him went away. And a certain man saw it, and told Joab, and said, Behold, I saw Absalom hanged in an oak. Then said Joab, I may not tarry thus with thee. And he took three darts in his hand, and thrust them through the heart of Absalom, while he was yet alive in the midst of the oak.**

**2 Samuel 18:9,10,14**

However, several years later another son of David, named Adonijah, tried to take the throne. This time Joab was not loyal to David. It was exactly the same situation that had happened a few years earlier with Absalom. Another child who had no business on the throne, wanted to become the king. Please read the following scripture carefully.

**Then ADONIJAH the son of Haggith EXALTED HIMSELF, SAYING, I WILL BE KING: and he prepared him chariots and horsemen, and fifty men to run before him... and his mother bare him after Absalom. And HE CONFERRED WITH JOAB the son of Zeruiah, and with Abiathar the priest: and THEY FOLLOWED ADONIJAH AND HELPED HIM.**

**1 Kings 1:5-7**

Notice how Joab, who had fought against Abasalom a few years earlier was now helping Adonijah. Is it not ironic that someone who was once loyal to David could become disloyal?



I remember a brother who was so loyal to me. He would stand up at meetings and declare his commitment each time. He was noted for his proclamations and utterances about his commitment to me. One day, at a meeting, we were discussing the actions of a rebellious pastor. This gentleman stood up and condemned the behaviour of this rebel. As I listened to him, I was encouraged by his words of commitment and support. I said to myself, "I really have some loyal people with me."

Some time later this brother was appointed a pastor and pioneered a church somewhere. It was not but a few years later when this pastor rebelled against me in a very surprising move.

One afternoon he said to me, "I would like to see you." I said, "Sure, I'm always here. You can see me now." He started, "I have decided to begin a new church." "Which church is this," I asked. "A church," he replied. "Is it part of Lighthouse Chapel," I asked. "No," he answered. "Oh, I see!"

This was his way of telling me that he was pulling out unexpectedly. Shortly after, in an unanticipated move, he changed the name of the Lighthouse church he was pastoring and retained some of our properties. This person had been very loyal to me for several years. It was a surprise to almost everyone! His loyalty to me was convincing and impressive! But this illustrates the principle. *Loyalty today does not mean loyalty tomorrow.*

**Joab was loyal in the case of Absalom but not in the case of Adonijah.** We must therefore be vigilant so that we do

not fall prey to the attacks of the enemy in the future.

Nowadays, I take speeches and proclamations of commitment with a pinch of salt. I pray for people who make statements of commitment, that as the years go by they will remember what they have said and live by it.

### **3. LOYAL PEOPLE CATCH THE ANOINTING**

Loyalty has its rewards. No one can forget that statement. “Well done, good and faithful servant.” We will be rewarded for our faithfulness to God.

**...Well done, thou good and faithful servant...**

**Matthew 25:21**

You will also be rewarded for your faithfulness to the men you serve. Jesus said, “Whosoever receiveth you, receiveth me.”

**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.**

**John 13:20**

When you are loyal to your pastor / boss, God considers it to be faithfulness to Him. As I said in an earlier chapter, loyalty is an integral part of your character. If you are faithful to man, you are likely to be faithful to God. Loyalty pays off! It will cost you to be disloyal!

Many people think of Elisha as Elijah’s servant. But what

you must realize is that Elijah had two servants. No one even knows the name of the first servant. It was the first servant of Elijah who saw most of the great miracles! Do you remember the story of how Elijah prayed for rain? You will remember that Elijah kept sending his servant to see if there were any clouds on the horizon. That was the *first* servant.

**And Elijah said unto Ahab, Get thee up, eat and drink; for there is a sound of abundance of rain. So Ahab went up to eat and to drink. And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees. AND SAID TO HIS SERVANT, Go up now, look toward the sea. And he went up, and looked, and said, There is nothing. And he said, GO AGAIN seven times. And it came to pass at the seventh time, that he said, Behold, there ariseth a little cloud out of the sea, like a man's hand. And he said, GO UP, SAY UNTO AHAB, Prepare thy chariot, and get thee down, that the rain stop thee not. And it came to pass in the mean while, that the heaven was black with clouds and wind, and there was a great rain. And Ahab rode, and went to Jezreel. And the hand of the Lord was on Elijah; and he girded up his loins, and ran before Ahab to the entrance of Jezreel.**

**1 Kings 18:41-46**

This man saw Elijah call down fire from heaven. This man saw Elijah challenge the false prophets of Ahab. Elisha never saw these things, he just read about them.

Later on, Elijah got into trouble with Jezebel because of his powerful ministry against the false prophets.

**And Ahab told Jezebel all that Elijah had done, and withal how he had slain all the prophets with the sword. Then Jezebel sent a messenger unto Elijah, saying, So let the gods do to me, and more also, if I make not thy life as the life of one of them by to morrow about this time.**

**1 Kings 19:1,2**

Elijah was terrified and decided to flee for his very life. It was at this point that his first servant left him.

**And when he saw that, he arose and went for his life, and came to Beersheba, which belongeth to Judah, AND LEFT HIS SERVANT THERE.**

**1 Kings 19:3**

Whether Elijah asked his servant to wait behind or his servant abandoned him for fear of his life, no one knows. Whatever the case, *this servant did not stay till the end*. This is the last we hear of him. How sad! This man could have been the next anointed prophet of the Lord. Perhaps his name would have filled several chapters of the Bible.

When Elijah got to Mount Horeb the Lord spoke to him about several things. One of the things was about getting a new servant to replace the old guy who had left him. This is how Elisha came to replace the first servant!

**...and Elisha the son of Shaphat of Abelmeholah shall thou anoint to be prophet in thy room.**

**1 Kings 19:16**

I often wonder why people do not stay till the end where

they will receive all that God has for them. God has a great calling for many of us. We need an anointing to fulfil that call. It is by staying to the end that we catch the anointing. Most of the great blessings come at the end of the race. No one gets a medal for starting a race. The medals are for those who finish the race!

In the Christian world, many ministers are like university students who did one or two years of study, but never completed their courses. You see, many people think that they have arrived after they become familiar with the ministry. Familiarity with pastors and with the church is not the same as experience in ministry. Some people think that the ministry is as easy as that. Many people do not know that it takes years of faithful following and loyalty!

As I go on in the ministry, I realize that there are many things that I do not know. No one knows it all. It is said that Elisha followed Elijah for twenty years before he received the anointing.

It is important to learn from the mistakes of your predecessors. I think that is exactly what Elisha did, and it paid off! In the last days of his ministry, Elijah tried to leave Elisha in the same way he did to the first servant.

**And it came to pass, when the Lord would take up Elijah into heaven by a whirlwind, that Elijah went with Elisha from Gilgal. And Elijah said unto Elisha, Tarry here, I pray thee; for the Lord hath sent me to Bethel. And Elisha said unto him, As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I WILL NOT**

**LEAVE THEE. So they went down to Bethel.**

**2 Kings 2:1,2**

Elijah tried four times to get rid of his servant Elisha. He was going to have an experience with God and he didn't want anyone to be around. But Elisha was not to be moved. Elijah looked at Elisha in the face and said, "I have a new vision. I am moving on without you!" I think Elisha remembered what happened to the first servant and he decided to be faithful to the end. Elisha replied, "Your vision is my vision."

Once again, Elijah tried to get rid of Elisha at Bethel. But Elisha would have none of it. He had decided to stay till the very end. **He knew that loyal people receive the anointing.** Elijah told Elisha, "The Lord has sent *me*." Elijah did not say, "The Lord has sent *us*." He said, "The Lord has sent *me*."

Elisha just looked at Elijah and said blandly, "The Lord has also sent me to that same place!"

When they got to Jericho, Elijah said, "God has sent me to Jordan. Please go back home. There is no place for you anymore."

**And Elijah said unto him, Tarry, I pray thee, here: for the Lord hath sent me to Jordan. And he said, As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee. And they two went on.**

**2 Kings 2:6**

In other words, Elijah told Elisha, "I have a new dream. God has spoken to me and I must go on without you. I'm off to Jordan!" But Elisha knew what was at stake and simply replied, "*Your dream is my dream. Whatever you want to do is what I want to do!*"

In the end, Elisha was an eyewitness to that precious experience of Elijah being caught up into heaven. Many people think that Elijah was taken into heaven by a chariot of fire. The chariot and horses of fire were used to *separate* Elijah and Elisha and not to take Elijah to heaven. Elijah was taken up to heaven by a whirlwind and not a chariot.

**And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.**

**2 Kings 2:11**

Elisha was so glued to his mentor and pastor that it took a supernatural force to separate them. This is a lesson to us all. A loyal person catches the anointing. **Elisha became doubly anointed after this experience.** Elijah did sixteen miracles but Elisha did thirty-two miracles. Elijah promised that a double anointing would be on Elisha if he were loyal to the very end (when he was taken away).

**And it came to pass, when they were gone over, that Elijah said unto Elisha, Ask what I shall do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Elisha said, I pray thee, let a double portion of thy spirit be upon me. And he said thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless, IF THOU SEE ME WHEN I AM TAKEN from thee, it shall be so unto thee; but if not, it shall not be so.**

**2 Kings 2:9,10**

Dear friend, never forget this important fact about loyalty. God will bless you because of your faithfulness, loyalty and

fidelity. Your loyalty will earn you the anointing. You may even receive a double portion!!!



**For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books,  
tapes and videos write to these addresses:**

**In Africa:**

***Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa***

**Rest of the world:**

***Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ***

**Website:**

***[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)***

**Parchment House**

# *Leading Difficult People*

*DAG HEWARD-MILLS*

*PARCHMENT HOUSE*

*Scripture quotations are taken from the KING JAMES VERSION of the Bible, unless otherwise stated.*

*Copyright © Dag Heward-Mills 2002*

*First published 2002*

*Published by Parchment House:*

*P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu  
Accra  
Ghana*

*ISBN: 9988-596-99-1*

*All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.*

## **TABLE OF CONTENTS**

1. *Go In First and People Will Follow You Anywhere*
2. *Help the People Around You to Accomplish Great Things With Their Lives*
3. *Change People's Minds*
4. *Make People Obey You Gladly*
5. *Make Your Followers Love You. Make Sure They Don't Resent You*
6. *Take Everyone to the Top With You*
7. *Grow in Your Influence*
8. *Watch Out for Discontentment and Deal with it Decisively*
9. *Waste No Time on Critical People and Criticism*
10. *Treat People as Equals But Make The Differences Clear*
11. *Familiarity is a Leadership Emergency. Deal with it Urgently.*
12. *Identify the Different Types of Employees in Your Organization*
13. *Live by the Logical Laws of Teamwork*
14. *Develop the Art of Keeping People Together*
15. *Fight only Battles You Can Win*
16. *Work Harder Than All Those Around You*
17. *Contemplate, Reflect, Be Thoughtful and Consider the Things You See Around You*

18. Use Symptoms and Signs to Guide You
19. Control the People You Lead by the Power of Teaching
20. Be a Loyal Leader
21. Overcome Hatred and Opposition
22. Be Flexible, Rigidity is Costly!
23. *Relate With All Kinds of People Including People Who Are Not Your "Type"*
24. *Relate With Individuals and Relate With the Crowd*
25. *Don't Be Surprised By Ingratitude*
26. Allow People to Know You So They Can Trust You and Follow You
27. *Acknowledge the Gifts of Others*
28. *Influence People By Example*
29. *Get Angry Sometimes*

# 1

## GO IN FIRST AND PEOPLE WILL FOLLOW YOU ANYWHERE

*Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and TAKE UP HIS CROSS, AND FOLLOW ME.*

*Matthew 16:24*

*If you go yourself, people will be prepared to follow you anywhere. In 1990 I left my medical profession and followed the road of ministry. Today there are several other doctors who have followed me on the same road. Whether they would prosper or not in the ministry did not matter. They were led to take up their cross and go anywhere it would lead. Why have other doctors and professionals followed me on this road? Because I went in first and called for them to come after me! The master key to leading people anywhere is to walk the road yourself. Jesus never told His disciples to do things that He himself did not do.*

*When a young lady decides to follow a young man for the rest of her life, she is actually following him anywhere. Do you remember the marriage vows? “For better or for worse, in prosperity and adversity.” Marriage is convincing someone to follow you anywhere. The thing about marriage is that you go together.*

*Today, I want you to ask yourself whether you are really a leader? Are people prepared to follow you into prosperity or adversity? Have you wondered why your followers do not do certain things? Perhaps you haven’t set the example. They fear to go where no man has tread. They think to themselves, “If you won’t go, why should I go?”*

*Jesus was such a good leader that He got His disciples to follow Him to the cross. He actually told them “take up your cross and follow me”. In other words let’s go to the morgue and lay down together. He had the authority to say this because He himself had taken up the cross. Convince people to go anywhere by going first.*

*Develop the art of naturally convincing people to follow you anywhere that is necessary to go.*

*Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.*

**Matthew 26:35**

*Jesus was a good leader. He was able to get His disciples to the point where they were able to follow Him even into death.*



# 2

## HELP THE PEOPLE AROUND YOU TO ACCOMPLISH GREAT THINGS WITH THEIR LIVES

**And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him.**

**And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach,**

**And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils:**

*And Simon he surnamed Peter;*

*And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder:*

*And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canannite,*

***And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house.***

**Mark 3:13-19**

*Notice this list of men who were going nowhere until they met Jesus. Jesus led these people to accomplish a great feat. He led them until they were anointed and had become preachers.*

*Through the influence of Jesus, they laid the foundations of the Christian Church through their very lives. Most of them died in the process of laying the foundation of the Church. The leadership of Jesus had turned non-entities into great achievers.*

*If God has called you to lead, do not see it as just YOU accomplishing great things. See it as you helping others to accomplish great things for God and for themselves. That is a true leader's heart. Leadership stems from the heart. The Bible teaches us that the heart is the footing for all the things that men do.*

**Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.**

**Proverbs 4:23**

*No one can really train you to be a leader. It comes from your heart! It comes by having the right heart! When you have the right heart, you do the right things. Until you see the heart of a leader, you will not be a true leader. **If you are the head of a church or organization and you try to suppress the achievements of others, I assure you that you do not have a true leader's heart.** Jesus wanted His disciples to do greater things than He himself had done (John 14:12).*

*I often pray for the junior pastors around me that they would achieve great things for God. I keep encouraging them and praying for them that they would rise up mightily in ministry. I see some people with gifts that I do not have. I want my interaction with those people to help them accomplish great things for God. Every leader should have goals for the people around him. If you do not have these goals I seriously doubt if you are a leader.*

## **Four Goals A Leader Should Have For His Followers**

*1. Aim For Them To Do Well Spiritually. Your desire should be for the people you lead to prosper spiritually.*

**I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.**

**3 John 4**

*2. Aim For Your Followers To Do Well Financially. I have a strong desire for the people who follow me to do well financially. It is my vision that everyone who works in my organization should have his own house, more cars than they need and enough money. This vision is steadily coming to pass. A leader is someone who thinks about others. If you just think about yourself you are not a leader. Jesus thought about the financial state of His followers. He wanted them to have houses, lands and enough money. Many people don't know that Jesus actually promised that His followers would have these things.*

**And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,**

**But he shall receive an hundredfold NOW IN THIS TIME, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and LANDS, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.**

**Mark 10:29,30**

3. Aim For Your Followers To Be Physically, Socially And Maritally Healthy.

**Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.**

**3 John 2**

**And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.**

**Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.**

**John 16:23,24**

*Why did Jesus want the joy of His followers to be full? Because a good leader wants his followers to be happy in every aspect of their lives.*

4. Aim For Your Followers To Fulfil Their Ministry. *My greatest passion is to see the ones I have raised up fulfilling their ministry. Every father wants his sons and daughters to fulfil their ministry. If you are a leader, your vision and passion is not for yourself but for the ones you lead.*

*But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, MAKE FULL PROOF OF THY MINISTRY.*

*2 Timothy 4:5*

# 3

## ***CHANGE PEOPLE'S MINDS***

The art of changing people's minds is a very important skill that you must develop if you call yourself a leader. The art of persuasion is a basic art of leadership. When somebody has an opinion about something and you are able to change that opinion, then you are operating as a leader.

*Thomas' opinion was that the resurrection was not real. Jesus worked on that and in the end Thomas believed in the resurrection. Do you care whether people believe in heaven or hell? If you do not care about what opinions people hold, you cannot be a leader. Perhaps, people have bad impressions about men of God. A leader work on those people's minds until they are thinking aright!*

*The pastor often gets people to change their minds about life. His job is to make them love God and serve Him. Perhaps they were serving money, but through the ministry of a true pastor (leader) they believe that service to God is more important than anything else.*

### **Seven Ways To Make People Change Their Minds**

1. *Teach Them The Word Of God.* “And be not conformed to this

world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.” (Romans 12:2). This scripture teaches that we will be changed or transformed when our minds have been renewed. The Word of God is the best tool for making people change their mind. There is power in the Word of God that is why Paul said, “I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ for *it is the power of God...*”

2. Make Them Go To Church. *Church provides a regular mind-changing forum for anyone. Show me your church and I'll show you the way you think.*

3. Make Them Have Certain Friends. *Your company can influence you more than your church. This is because you are with your friends for several hours a week whilst you may be in church for just a couple of hours a week. Like the saying goes, “Show me your friend, and I'll show you your character”. “Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.” (1 Corinthians 15:33).*

4. Introduce Them To Successful People Who Have The Kind Of Mind You Want Them To Have. *This is the secret of the Full Gospel Businessmen Fellowship International. They introduce successful Christian businessmen to sinners and show them that it is possible to be a successful businessman. Through this method many people are saved (changed their minds).*

5. Share Your Own Testimony. *A personal testimony is always a powerful instrument to change the mind. Paul used this method on King Agrippa. The entire chapter of Acts 26 describes Paul sharing his testimony to the king. At the end of this powerful personal testimony King Agrippa said, “Paul, ALMOST THOU PERSUADEST ME to be a Christian.” (Acts 26:28).*

6. Pray For Them. *The state of the mind is a very spiritual thing. That is why Paul prayed that the Ephesians would be given a Spirit of revelation and wisdom. Without revelation, you may hear preaching and teaching but without revelation change never comes. "That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:" (Ephesians 1:17).*

7. Allow Them To Have Certain Experiences. *No matter what you say or preach, some people never change their minds. For such people the school of experience (hard knocks) may be the only teacher they will listen to. Allowing people to experience certain things is sometimes the only way to make their minds work in the right way. Sometimes I allow pastors to go through certain experiences. For instance, when people have the experience of starting a church, they often appreciate many of the things I teach.*

*I once had a pastor who did not appreciate the way I was handling another disloyal assistant. He thought I was not walking in love towards this rebellious fellow. No matter how much I explained the issues to this pastor, he still felt I was doing the wrong thing. In the end, I prayed that God would give him his own share of rebellious assistants. God really answered that prayer and he had one experience after another. One day he called me on the phone and told me that after having his own experience with disloyal people, he felt that I had been too lenient and kind with my rebellious pastor. I smiled to myself because I remembered his former attitude about that issue. This pastor's mind had really changed and now he felt that I was too loving to the rebel.*

This is a very scriptural method to change people's minds. You will have to use it because there are many things that can only be learned by experience. The Father trained even Jesus up with this method. The Bible says Jesus learned obedience through the things he experienced. "Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;" (Hebrews 5:8).

*A leader is someone who uses all means at his disposal to make people change their minds. Have you been able to make someone change their mind about something?*

**But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.**

*The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.*

*And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.*

*Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.*

**AND THOMAS ANSWERED AND SAID UNTO HIM, MY LORD AND MY GOD.**

*Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*

**John 20:24-29**



# 4

## ***MAKE PEOPLE OBEY YOU GLADLY***

**So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.**

**John 21:15**

*Jesus was able to make people follow His instructions. He told Peter to feed the flock of God and that is exactly what he did. If you call yourself a leader, ask yourself, “Do people carry out my instructions?” Why are some people obeyed and some other ignored? Develop the art of making people obey your instructions. There are several things you can do.*

### **Nine Ways to Make People Obey You Gladly**

*1. Do Not Give Unreasonable Instructions. People rebel against wicked and unreasonable men.*

*2. Teach Your Followers Why Certain Things Have To Be Done. Make people see that your instructions are for their own good. When people understand why they are doing something, they often do it better! That is why I preach on “Fifty Reasons Why Christians Should Be Soul Winners”. I want people to*

*understand the last instruction of Jesus.*

3. Explain Instructions In Detail So That Everyone Understands The Instructions. *Sometimes people do not obey simply because they did not understand what you had said.*

4. Show People That You Are Not Partial Or Partisan.

5. Let The People See That You Obey Instructions Yourself. *Many rebellious people do not realize that they are teaching their followers to be rebellious by their very actions. The Centurion who sent for Jesus illustrated this principle beautifully.*

**For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.**

**Luke 7:8**

*This man was enumerating the instructions which he gave and which were being obeyed. But he was careful to let us know that he himself was under authority. In other words, he himself was obeying instructions. The army officer often has to lead people to their deaths. How does he make young men sacrifice their lives on the frightening fields of war? By leading the charge himself when he's told to do so. If you cannot make people gladly do things, they naturally do not like doing then you are not a leader. Develop this art of making people obey you gladly and people will always wonder about the team who work with you and who love to sacrifice and to serve.*

6. Get Rid Of Complaining And Murmuring Individuals. *Such people poison the atmosphere and make everyone feel that they*

*are into a bad thing. It is very important to maintain a cheerful spirit in the workplace. Systematically eradicate complainers and murmurers from your system.*

7. Correct Wrong Attitudes Even When They Are Not Fully Developed Into Full-blown Disobedience Or Rebellion.

8. Punish People Who Disobey. *Your organization cannot be established unless people believe that judgment will happen when the wrong thing is done. Punishment is a good thing because it establishes the land. Many disorganized offices are the way they are because no one is ever dismissed. Warnings are issued but no one ever dares to carry out the threat. Let everyone see that when you break the rules, the rules will break you! When you are fair, people will believe in the law and obey you gladly. If they feel that one rule applies to some people and another rule to other special people, they will rebel against your instructions.*

**The king by judgment establisheth the land: but he that receiveth gifts overthroweth it.**

**Proverbs 29:4**

9. Reward People Accordingly. *Even Jesus expected His reward. "For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds." (Hebrews 12:3).*

*Jesus was motivated by the thought of His reward. Rewards are some of the highest motivation in existence. Why do you think an athlete runs around for hours everyday? Why do you think boxers subject themselves to severe, dangerous and life threatening knocks on the head? It is because of the*

*joy of a million dollars or more that will come after the knocking is over. The joy that is set before people will make them do almost anything. Rewards can make people do almost anything! People who have died for the cause of Christ, died willingly, thinking of the reward that lay ahead.*

*When Jesus spoke to Peter he told him about His death. He predicted that Peter would die in a way that he might not like.*

**Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.**

**This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.**

**John 21:18,19**

*He told Peter to follow Him even to that end. Peter was willing and obedient. Perhaps, the key that made Peter willing to die was the fact that Jesus Himself had set the example. Jesus had shown that there was a great reward in following. You see, leadership is all about setting examples. When a leader leads the way personally his words become more powerful. Do you want your words to be respected? Do you want to be such a powerful leader that people would be prepared to die for your cause? I believe you do! It's time to set the example and lead the way.*

*Master John Hooper, bishop of Worcester and Gloucester, was a student and graduate of Oxford University. He found*

*the Lord and was stirred with a strong desire and love for the scriptures. In 1555, Master Hooper was urged to return to the unity of the Catholic Church and to acknowledge the Pope's holiness to be head of the Church. He was promised that he would receive the Pope's blessing and the Queen's mercy if he would condescend to the Pope's holiness.*

*Mr. Hooper answered that the Pope taught doctrine contrary to the doctrine of Christ. And that he was not worthy to be the head of the Church. Wherefore he would in no wise condescend to any such jurisdiction. Mr. Hooper made it clear that he did not consider the Catholic Church of which the Pope was the head, to be the real Church.*

*He explained that the Church only followed the voice of Christ and runs away from strangers. However, he said if he had said anything to offend the Queen he would ask for mercy. But he added, "Mercy must be had with safety of conscience and without the displeasure of God."*

*An old friend, Anthony Kingston, spoke to him.*

*Kingston: 'But I am sorry to see you in this case; for as I understand you be come hither to die. But, alas, consider that life is sweet, and death is bitter. Therefore, seeing life may be had, desire to live; for life hereafter may do good.'*

*Hooper: 'Indeed it is true, Master Kingston, I am come hither to end this life, and to suffer death here, because I will not gainsay the former truth that I have heretofore taught amongst you in this diocese, and elsewhere; and I thank you for your friendly counsel, although it be not so friendly as I could have wished it. True it is, Master Kingston, that death is bitter, and life is*

sweet: but, alas, consider that the death to come is more bitter, and the life to come is more sweet. Therefore, for the desire and love I have to the one, and the terror and fear of the other; I do not so much regard this death, nor esteem this life, but have settled myself, through the strength of God's holy Spirit, patiently to pass through the torments and extremities of the fire now prepared for me, rather than to deny the truth of His Word; desiring you, and others, in the meantime, to commend me to God's mercy in your prayers.'

Kingston: 'Well, my lord, then I perceive there is no remedy, and therefore I will take my leave of you: and I thank God that ever I knew you; for God did appoint you to call me, being a lost child.'

Hooper: I do highly praise God for it: and I pray God you may continually live in His fear.'<sup>1</sup>

His final speech to the mayor was even more revealing about his willingness to obey God and to stand for the truth.

'Master mayor, I give most hearty thanks to you, and to the rest of your brethren, that you have vouchsafed to take me, a prisoner and a condemned man, by the hand; whereby to my rejoicing it is some deal apparent that your old love and friendship towards me is not altogether extinguished; and I trust also that all the things I have taught you in times past are not utterly forgotten, when I was here, by the godly King that dead is, appointed to be your bishop and pastor. For the which most true and sincere doctrine, because I will not now account it falsehood and heresy, as many other men do, I am sent hither (as I am sure you know) by the Queen's commandment to die; and am come where I taught it, to confirm it with my blood. And now, master sheriffs, I understand by these good men, and my very friends' (meaning the guard), 'at whose hands I have found so

much favour and gentleness, by the way hitherward, as a prisoner could reasonably require (for the which also I most heartily thank them), that I am committed to your custody, as unto them that must see me brought to-morrow to the place of execution. My request therefore to you shall be only, that there may be a quick fire, shortly to make an end; and in the meantime I will be as obedient unto you, as yourselves would wish. If you think I do amiss in any thing, hold up your finger, and I have done: for I am not come hither as one enforced or compelled to die (for it is well known, I might have had my life with worldly gain); but as one willing to offer and give my life for the truth, rather than consent to the wicked papistical religion of the Bishop of Rome, received and set forth by the magistrates in England, to God's high displeasure and dishonour; and I trust, by God's grace, to-morrow to die a faithful servant of God, and a true obedient subject to the Queen.'<sup>2</sup>

*The description of his death in the fire, which lasted about an hour, is revealing.*

When he came to the place appointed where he should die, smilingly he beheld the stake and preparation made for him, which was near unto the great elm-tree, over against the college of priests, where he was wont to preach. The place round about the houses, and the boughs of the tree, were replenished with people; and in the chamber over the college-gate stood the wolvisch blood-suckers and turnelings, the priests of the college. Then kneeled he down, forasmuch as he could not be suffered to speak unto the people. After he was somewhat entered into his prayer, a box was brought and laid before him upon a stool, with his pardon (or at least-wise it was feigned to be his pardon) from the Queen, if he would turn. At the sight whereof he cried,

‘If you love my soul, away with it! if you love my soul, away with it!’

Prayer being done, he prepared himself to the stake, and put off his host’s gown, and delivered it to the sheriffs, requiring them to see it restored unto the owner, and put off the rest of his gear, unto his doublet and hose, wherein he would have burned. But the sheriffs would not permit that, such was their greediness; unto whose pleasures, good man, he very obediently submitted himself; and his doublet, hose, and petticoat were taken off. Then, being in his shirt, he took a point from his hose himself, and trussed his shirt between his legs, where had a pound of gunpowder in a bladder, and under each arm the like quantity, delivered him by the guard.

So desiring the people to say the Lord’s prayer with him, and to pray for him (who performed it with tears, during the time of his pains), he went up to the stake. The hoop of iron prepared for his middle was brought, but when they offered to have bound his neck and legs with the other two hoops of iron, he utterly refused them.

Thus being ready, he looked upon all the people, of whom he might be well seen (for he was both tall, and stood also on a high stool), and in every corner there was nothing to be seen but weeping and sorrowful people. Then, lifting up his eyes and hands unto heaven, he prayed to himself. By and by, he that was appointed to make the fire, came to him, and did ask him forgiveness. Of whom he asked why he should forgive him, saying, that he knew never any offence he had committed against him. ‘O sir!’ said the man, ‘I am appointed to make the fire.’ ‘Therein,’ said Master Hooper, ‘thou dost nothing offend me; God forgive thee thy sins, and do thine office, I pray thee.’

Then the needs were cast up, and he



received two bundles of them in his own hands, embraced them, kissed them, and put under either arm one of them, and showed with his hand how the rest should be bestowed, and pointed to the place where any did lack.

Anon commandment was given that the fire should be set to. But because there were put to no fewer green faggots than two horses could carry upon their backs, it kindled not by and by, and was a pretty while also before it took the reeds upon the faggots. At length it burned about him, but the wind having full strength in that place (it was a lowering and cold morning), it blew the flame from him, so that he was in a manner nothing but touched by the fire.

Within a space after, a few dry faggots were brought, and a new fire kindled with faggots (for there were no more reeds), and that burned at the nether parts, but had small power above, because of the wind, saving that it did burn his hair, and swell his skin a little. In the time of which fire even as at the first flame, he prayed, saying mildly and not very loud (but as one without pains), ‘O Jesus, the Son of David, have mercy upon me, and receive my soul!’ After the second was spent, he did wipe both his eyes with his hands, and beholding the people, he said with an indifferent loud voice, ‘For God’s love, good people, let me have more fire!’ And all this while his nether parts did burn: for the faggots were so few, that the flame did not burn strongly at his upper parts.

*The third fire was kindled within a while after, which was more extreme than the other two: and then the bladders of gunpowder brake, which did him small good, they were so placed, and the wind had such power. In the which fire he prayed with somewhat a loud voice, ‘Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me: Lord Jesus receive my spirit.’ And these were the last words he was heard to utter. But when*

*he was black in the mouth, and his tongue swollen, that he could not speak, yet his lips went till they were shrunk to the gums: and he knocked his breast with his hands, until one of his arms fell off and then knocked still with the other; what time the fat, water, and blood, dropped out at his fingers' ends, until by renewing of the fire his strength was gone, and his hand did cleave fast, in knocking, to the iron upon his breast. So immediately, bowing forwards, he yielded up his spirit.*

Thus was he three quarters of an hour or more in the fire. Even as a lamb, patiently he abode the extremity thereof, neither moving forwards, backwards, nor to any side: but he died as quietly as a child in his bed. And he now reigneth, I doubt not, as a blessed martyr in the joys of heaven, prepared for the faithful in Christ before the foundations of the world; for whose constancy all Christians are bound to praise God.<sup>3</sup>

# 5

## MAKE YOUR FOLLOWERS LOVE YOU. MAKE SURE THEY DON'T RESENT YOU

*A good leader is surrounded by willing servants. A good leader is surrounded by people who are glad to carry out his wishes. If you are a leader, look into the eyes of those who follow you. Are those eyes gleaming with eagerness or do they radiate resentment and bitterness? King David was surrounded by many mighty men. Many of them would have laid down their lives for him if he had asked.*

*And they came and besieged him in Abel of Bethmaachah, and they cast up a bank against the city, and it stood in the trench: and all the people that were with Joab battered the wall, to throw it down.*

*Then cried a wise woman out of the city, Hear, hear; say, I pray you, unto Joab, Come near hither, that I may speak with thee.*

*2 Samuel 20:15,16*

*What made David's men so ready to give up their lives so that he could have a drink of water? Look into the eyes of the people you want to lead, do they love you? Are they genuinely happy to be with you and to follow you? What can you do to make the people who are following you genuinely willing to*

*obey and to flow? All human beings have the unspoken desire to feel important, loved and respected.*

## **How To Make Your Followers Love You And Not Resent You**

*1. Make People Feel That They Are Generally Respected By You. Once a feeling of self-worth and genuine respect is there, you have gone a long way in making your followers love you. People naturally love those who respect them.*

*2. Make The People Who Follow You Into Eminent, Distinguished, Celebrated And Impressive Men. Jesus made His followers into the great apostles that we know them to be. He promised them mansions in heaven as well as many other rewards. That's how Jesus treated His followers. No wonder they died for Him.*

*A true leader wants the people he's leading to become great. When people whom you lead feel that in following you they will become great in this life, they will be very willing to stay close. Ask yourself this question, Are the people who are following you going to amount to anything? Will they become great? Can they prosper in the system you have created? Can they become mighty men in the ministry you are leading? Is it the case that you are the only one who will ever experience a certain level of significance in ministry?*

*3. Sacrifice For Your Followers. A true leader has willing followers. Decide from today to make the people around you enthusiastic about their jobs and their association with you. In order to do this you will have to sacrifice to make them happy.*

*You must give them a future and a hope. When a congregation sees a pastor constructing a church building for them they become far more enthusiastic about the church. But if they only see the pastor acquiring nice things for himself, their readiness to flow will be severely compromised. Pay good salaries and make sure that everyone who works for you has a home, cars and enough money.*

## 6

# ***TAKE EVERYONE TO THE TOP WITH YOU***

*As God blesses your leadership you will find yourself rising to the top. It is important not to go to the top alone. If you go up there alone you will become isolated. You will be the only one who has prospered and who has tasted the fruits of success.*

### **Three Reasons Why You Must Take Everyone to the Top With You**

*1. To Avoid Isolation. When you are isolated you are lonely and have no one to share your joys with. Joy shared is double joy, sorrow shared is half-sorrow. I am glad I have people to share my nice things with. I can speak freely about God's blessings on my life because I am not the only one who is blessed. The*

*people around me can relate to those blessings because they experience them as well. When I began playing golf I tried to get all my pastors to play as well. I'm glad that today I have people to play with and to have fun with. I would have been very lonely out there on my own.*

*2. To Avoid Becoming An Easy Target. When you are isolated at the top you become an easy target. You are easy to spot because you are the only one who has certain benefits. When you are the only one with a nice car or house you are easy to pick out. Many of my staff have just as nice a house or car as I have. I am not the only one in my church who travels around the world. Many of my pastors travel around the world whilst I stay home. They ring me from different parts of the world whilst I hold the fort in Africa.*

*3. To Avoid Being Pulled Down. When you are the only one at the top you are surrounded by desperate people. Desperate people are dangerous and could harm you at any time. They will try to pull you down to their level of frustration. However, if you are all at the top, they can only pull you sideways and not downward.*

## **Five Attempts By Jesus To Take Everyone With Him To The Top**

*1. Jesus Took His Disciples To Nice Places, Like Weddings. He didn't just take them to the synagogues, prayer meetings in the garden of Gethsemane or Great Commission staff meetings.*

**And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.**

**John 2:2**

2. *Jesus Always Took His Disciples To High Society Engagements.*

**And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.**

**John 2:2**

3. *Jesus always ate with His disciples.* Like dinners and luncheons that were held in His honour.

**And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.**

**Matthew 26:26**

4. Jesus asked His Father if His staff could come to heaven with Him.

**Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am...**

**John 17:24**

4. Jesus invited all sorts of people to the famous banquet of Luke 14. *He tried to get cripples, beggars, prostitutes and anyone who was interested to come with Him to the banquet.*

**Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many:**

**Luke 14:16**

*5. Jesus invited the thief on the cross to come to paradise with Him. Truly, Jesus wanted to take everyone to the top with him.*

**And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.**

**Luke 23:43**



# 7

## GROW IN YOUR INFLUENCE

*...behold, the world is gone after him.*

**John 12:19**

*Jesus had influence over a large number of people. A leader increases his scope of influence as he grows in the art of leadership. The Bible tells us that the whole world went after Jesus. The Pharisees were very disturbed over this. The devil will be afraid of the influence of a true leader. This is why governments become afraid of pastors who are true leaders. They know that a true leader influences a large number of people.*

The key to growing in your influence is to grow in your influence over smaller sub-groups of people. *The cumulative effect of your influence and control over these sub-groups will give you a larger sphere of influence.*

*When a person is a leader at heart, people who are even senior to the leader will follow him. The Apostle Paul taught Timothy to establish his influence over sub-groups in his church. In our church we call these Timothy Groups.*

## **Eight Groups Of People You Must Influence**

1. Older Men. *“Rebuke not an ELDER, but entreat him as a FATHER; and the younger men as brethren;” (1 Timothy 5:1).*

2. Younger Men. *“Rebuke not an elder, but entreat him as a father; and the YOUNGER MEN as brethren;” (1 Timothy 5:1).*

3. Younger Women. *“The ELDER WOMEN as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.” (1 Timothy 5:2).*

4. Older Women. *“The elder women as mothers; THE YOUNGER as sisters, with all purity.” (1 Timothy 5:2).*

5. Servants. *“Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour; that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.” (1 Timothy 6:1).*

6. Poor People. *“Honour widows that are widows indeed.” (1 Timothy 5:3).*

7. Rich People. *“Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;” (1 Timothy 6:17).*

8. Leaders. *“Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of*

double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.” (1 Timothy 5:17).

*Timothy grew in his ministry until all sorts of people were a part of his church. Apostle Paul had to show him how to handle all the different types of people who were responding to his gift of leadership.*

**Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren; The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters with all purity.**

**1 Timothy 5:1,2**

*I see you developing in the art of leadership until all sorts of people respond to your influence.*

## **Keys To Influencing Different Groups Of People**

1. *Show Respect To Those That Particularly Deserve It.* For instance, elderly people deserve more respect due to their age and experience. Do not expect the same output of energy that you would receive from the younger ones. Regard the honourable citizens that God brings into your midst. The fact that Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimathea were mentioned in the Bible tells us that their support for Jesus was unusual and therefore given special recognition. This does not mean you must be prejudiced and biased towards the rich and powerful. What it means is that you must give honour to whom honour is due.

*Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.*

*Romans 13:7*

2. Study The Peculiarities Of Different Groups. *There are vast differences between men and women. These must be appreciated by anyone who wants to minister to them. There are also vast differences between older and younger women. The vision of younger women is marriage, husbands and children. The disillusionment of older women is often marriage, husbands and sometimes children. I have found that older women have fewer delusions about what marriage and husbands can offer. They are more inclined to the service of God than younger women. That is why the Bible says that older women should teach younger women.*

3. Respect The Differences That Exist Between Different Groups Of People. *Do not despise the peculiarities or weaknesses of the group. Very generally speaking, women are more interested in things like chatting, shopping and clothes whilst men are more interested in their jobs, money, cars, sex, etc. You cannot have a successful women's ministry if you despise women's God given traits. You must respect them and celebrate womanhood.*

4. Develop Teachings That Are Specific To That Group. *For instance, T.D. Jakes has shown a lot of understanding for women's needs. That is why he is a successful women's minister. He has developed teachings and written books specifically for women.*

5. Develop A Strong Influence Over Leaders. *Every pastor must develop a strong teaching ministry towards leaders. There are pastors who do not know what to tell their leaders. I enjoy teaching my leaders. The more I teach leaders, the more influence I have because each leader has a sphere of authority.*

# 8

## WATCH OUT FOR DISCONTENTMENT AND DEAL WITH IT DECISIVELY

*Discontentment will scatter your followers. Everyone who loses an election loses it because people are no longer content with your leadership. To be content means to be satisfied, gratified, appeased and delighted with something. Monitor the level of contentment of your followers at all times. To be content also means to be thrilled, tickled, bewitched, captivated, charmed and enraptured with what you have. I want to work with people who are thrilled, captivated, charmed and enraptured by their job with me in the ministry.*

Discontentment is an evil spirit that needs to be dealt with. You cannot lead people who are not thrilled, satisfied and delighted to be with you. No circumstance is perfect. Contentment is a product of the heart and not a product of one's circumstances. I know people who do not have much but are very happy.

## **The Single Greatest Manifestation Of Discontentment**

*The single greatest manifestation of discontentment is comparison. "...but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise." (2 Corinthians 10:12).*

*Whenever people focus on what others have, they become discontent. In the story below, the master had promised good wages to his workers. Initially, they did not complain about the salary because they thought it was fair. At the end of the day, however, new workers were employed who were given the same wages.*

**For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.**

**And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.**

**And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace,**

**And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way.**

**Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.**

**And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?**

**They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatso-**

ever is right, that shall ye receive.

So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny.

And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house,

Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny?

Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good?

**Matthew 20:1-15**

*Suddenly, discontentment reared its ugly head. The original team of workers were no longer happy with their wages. Many people are content with what they have until they look next door to see what someone else has. I am happy with what God has given me. I do not have what Benny Hinn, Oral Roberts or T.D. Jakes have but I am content with what God has given me. If I start to compare myself with some of these people I may begin to think that I am inadequate. If you start to compare yourself with someone else you will degenerate into discontentment. You become a complainer, a doubter and an ungrateful person.*

*Be a wise leader and detect this canker as soon as it shows up. Your followers are not equal and it is not possible to reward everyone with the same package. As soon as your followers begin to grumble and complain, like Moses, you may lose control and your mission may fail.*

## **Three Ways To Deal With Discontentment**

*1. Give good salaries and wages and be confident that people are getting something good. If people are generally not receiving enough remuneration, they have a genuine cause to be discontent. Within the limits of your context, give people a good remuneration. Those who follow you must not only be hopeful for the future, they must be satisfied now. If you are the manager of a company, ask yourself whether your workers are happy in the now. It is nice to have flowery promises for the future but what about now? Jesus not only promised blessings for the future He offered contentment and satisfaction now!*

***Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that have left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospels, BUT HE SHALL RECEIVE AN HUNDREDFOLD NOW IN THIS TIME, houses, brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; AND IN THE WORLD TO COME ETERNAL LIFE.***

**Mark 10:28**

*There were houses and prosperity for the now and there*



*was eternal life for the future. If you want to be a successful manager, offer something now and have a promise for the future. That was the strategy of Jesus. Thank God for the promises of the future. But people want something now as well!*

2. Teach about contentment. *Teaching the Word of God fights the deception that comes from satan. Teaching will always heal the curable traces of discontentment in your organization.*

**And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.**

**1 Timothy 6:8**

**Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.**

**Hebrews 13:5**

3. Recognize incurable discontentment and dismiss those affected..

**Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.**

**Psalms 1:1**

There are some people who love money so much that nothing you do for them will ever be satisfactory. “He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loveth abundance with increase...” (Ecclesiastes 5:10). Such people receive high salaries and more benefits but do not show any gratitude.

*When they receive an extra bonus or gift, they just make some unintelligible remark and say, “I’ll take it like that!” In other words, it’s not good enough but I’ll manage!*

*I once had some employees who were constantly grumbling about their salaries. I discerned that they were suffering from incurable discontentment. One day I called them up and said to them, "I think you people are not happy with your salaries."*

*I asked my administrator to sort out a nice settlement package for them and sent them off. After some months of being in the secular labour market, one of them came back to me and said, "I now realize that when I was with you, I had one of the best jobs in the country." I was glad that this revelation had finally come. Some people are cured of their discontentment only after experiencing the realities of life.*

# 9

## **WASTE NO TIME ON CRITICAL PEOPLE AND CRITICISM**

### **Twenty Things Every Leader Should Know About Criticism and Critical People**

1. A critical person is someone who sees nothing good in what you do. *How can those who criticized Jesus not see His powerful teaching and miracles? A critical person sees nothing good in whatever you do. That is how opposition political parties behave. No matter what, they see nothing good in the ruling party.*

2. *Critical people are often frustrated people who have failed in life.* Frustration creates bitterness. Bitterness is then manifest by criticism.

3. Critical people are often disappointed and disillusioned in their personal lives. *Do not forget to ask a few questions about the one who is criticizing you most. You will be amazed to find that he or she is an immoral, lying and stealing individual.*

4. Critical people are often people who build their lives by destroying others. *These people have not succeeded at anything. All they try to do is to pull down everyone to their level of non-*

*achievement.*

5. *Critical people do not often live long.* The Bible is very clear on this principle. If you love life, keep your mouth from saying the wrong things. “For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile:” (1 Peter 3:10).

6. *Critical people often have psycho-social problems.* Such people are often rejected, unloved people who have not had the love of a father or mother. Their criticism is often a cry for attention.

7. *Jesus did not answer His critics.* Jesus responded to the hunger and thirst of the multitudes and not to the hatred of His enemies. “And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod’s jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time. And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.” (Luke 23:7-10).

8. *Criticism is part of the ministry.* There is nothing like ministry without criticism. Jesus was perfect. If he was criticized, accused and murdered what do you think will happen to someone like you who is not perfect?

9. *It is not possible to minister without accusation.* It is part of the package. Jesus promised rewards with persecution. “But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;

and in the world to come eternal life.” (Mark 10:30).

10. *Someone said, “Criticism is the death gargle of a non-achiever.”* Think about that!

11. *I am yet to meet a critical individual who is a good person.* Criticism seems to be a symptom of many other evils stored within an individual. It is people who are defiled and unbelieving who see impurities in everything. “Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.” (Titus 1:15).

12. *Critical people are often trying to lure you into an argument or a debate.* Do not be deceived. Satan wants your emotions to be worked up because of unbelievable accusations and criticisms.

13. *Critical people are often trying to trap you through your words.* Critics are full of suspicion. They suspect you of all sorts of evils. They want further evidence to justify their suspicions.

14. *You can learn something from your critics.* Your friends are not likely to point out your mistakes. Your enemies are more likely to magnify your shortcomings in an attempt to bring you down. It is worth taking note of what they say, so that you can make the necessary adjustments.

15. *Enemies do not give “constructive” criticism.* Your enemy is not trying to build up (construct) your life. How can he give you anything “constructive”? It is not wrong to label everything that comes from your enemy as destructive. Decide to pick wisdom and direction from this dangerous criticism without being contaminated.

16. *Refuse to listen to certain criticisms because they are arrows of accusation intended to injure your heart. Keep your heart with all diligence for out of it are the issues of life.*

17. *Critical people are often ignorant.* Much criticism is based on incomplete information. Many critical people are ignoramuses.

18. *Critical people are often inexperienced.* Much criticism comes from the mouths of men of straw. These are men of no substance. They have neither knowledge nor experience.

19. *Critical people minister poison which spreads to those who hear it.* The people who criticize you, often hate you deeply. They want others to hate you as well

20. *Your response to every criticism should be, "Full stop and back to you!"* This is my children's advice to you.

# 10

## TREAT PEOPLE AS EQUALS BUT MAKE THE DIFFERENCES CLEAR

*A good leader must strive to let people feel important. The reality is that you are the leader, so you are different.*

### Five Ways To Make Everyone Around You Feel Important

1. Mingle with all kinds of people. *Jesus mingled with thieves (Two thieves at the cross), tax collectors (Matthew), fisherman (Peter), foreigners (The Syro-Phoenician woman), demonised people (Mary Magdalene), madmen (The madman of Gadara), priests (Nicodemus) and noblemen (Joseph of Arimathea). There was no strata of society where Jesus did not interact freely. Do not restrict yourself to one group of the society.*

2. Do not call or describe your staff and subordinates as servants. *“Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.” (John 15:15). Nobody likes to be called a servant even if that is the case. Jesus specifically said that He did not call his disciples servants.*

3. Describe your staff, subordinates and junior pastors as your friends. *“Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.”*

(John 15:14). I enjoy the friendship of the people who work for me. If I did not have them I would be very lonely.

4. Describe the people who work for you as your family. *“But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.” (Matthew 12:48-50). This is one thing I have done all my life. I have never seen my pastors or workers as employees but as family. I actually hate being called “boss”. Let their family and personal problems be your personal problems! Create a family spirit in your organization. It is a hundred times better than a formal, stiff organization.*

5. Tell your pastors or juniors about yourself and your plans. *“...but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.” (John 15:15b). This is one thing that draws people close.*

## **Six Ways To Make The Differences Clear**

1. Teach them. *Jesus taught His disciples all the time. When you teach someone you establish the authority to lead them. The authority to lead is found in the ability to feed.*

2. Send them. *Jesus sent His disciples to buy food. “(For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.)” (John 4:8). Every time you send someone you establish the chain of command. You emphasize the chain of command that exists within the structure.*



3. Bless them. *Pray for your followers and bless them. There is a faithful saying that the lesser is blessed of the greater. "And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better." (Hebrews 7:7).*

4. Say who you are. *Jesus spoke of Himself confidently. He said that he was the way, the truth and the life. He said that he was the door. He said he was the good shepherd. There are times I have had to declare that I am the leader and founder of my little church. It is important for people to know that you know who you are.*

5. Don't be afraid of being different. *Jesus rode on a donkey whilst all His disciples walked. Garments were strewn on the floor for Him to walk on. "And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon. And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strowed them in the way." (Matthew 21:7,8). Accept privileges that are exclusively yours. When you refuse to accept your privileges, you create anomalies and disorder. The Bible calls this an evil and an error (mistake) that emanates from the ruler. "There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler: Folly is set in great dignity, and the rich sit in low place. I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth." (Ecclesiastes 10:5-7).*

6. Allow yourself to be honoured. *Jesus allowed himself to be honoured by Mary. He permitted the expensive gift that was poured on His feet. "Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment." (John 12:3).*

# 11

## FAMILIARITY IS A LEADERSHIP EMERGENCY. DEAL WITH IT URGENTLY.

### Twenty Things Every Leader Should Know About Familiarity

1. Familiarity is the disease that kills the ministry of a prophet. *“But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.” (Mark 6:4).*

2. *It was the most powerful antagonist to the anointing on Jesus’ ministry.* “And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.” (Mark 6:5).

3. Familiarity is a product of frequent interaction with a leader. *“...From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom*

*is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.” (Mark 6:2,3).*

4. Familiarity is a product of much knowledge of a leader. *This is why every leader should maintain some degree of privacy and mystique. “And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.” (Mark 6:5).*

5. *Familiarity incubates contempt and disrespect. Jesus’ hometown were angered at His preaching. They were not neutral. They were outraged and thought that Jesus should be silenced. “And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong.” (Luke 4:28,29).*

6. *Friendship incubates familiarity. Jesus’ friendship with Peter created a problem of familiarity. Jesus asked Peter his opinion about His ministry. “He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.” (Matthew 16:15-17). Peter thought he had the right to say things he did not even understand.*

7. *Promotion incubates familiarity. Jesus promoted Peter to be the head of the church. “And I say also unto thee, That thou*

*art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.” (Matthew 16:18). Sometimes when people are elevated a little they feel that they are equal to their seniors and teachers. This is unfortunate.*

8. Familiarity is detected when subordinates make comments about certain things. *This is presumptuous. The fact that your leader has discussed personal things does not mean that you should step out of order.*

9. Familiarity is detected when a subordinate attempts to correct his leader. *Peter began to feel extra free. He thought that he could now correct Jesus. “Then Peter took him, and BEGAN TO REBUKE him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.” (Matthew 16:22). Although a leader needs his fair share of correction, the subordinate is not qualified to do this.*

10. Familiarity is detected when a follower attempts to direct his leader. *Peter began to make pronouncements about the ministry of Jesus. Peter thought that his friendship with Christ gave him the authority to direct and to correct Jesus. He thought that his conversation about people’s opinions of Christ made him an opinion holder. Perhaps he thought that Jesus needed his input.*

11. Be quick to detect subtle indications of familiarity. *Jesus was very quick to notice that Peter was out of order.*

*I once came into my office and there was a junior pastor holding a meeting with some other pastors. He was sitting in my chair behind my desk and everyone else was sitting around him. He was teaching them something just as if I was conducting*

*the meeting. As soon as I saw him, I knew that something was wrong. I immediately said to him, "Never sit on that chair again. Never sit behind that desk again!" Then I told everyone, "If I am not here, no one should ever sit behind my desk or on my chair."*

*12. In unambiguous terms, bring down to size every follower who is too familiar. Suddenly, Jesus was transformed from a kind and gentle Jesus into a Jesus of steel. He rebuked His close friend and associate in the harshest possible way. He called Peter "satan"! Think about that! Peter was brought down to size instantaneously.*

*13. Address and confront familiarity anywhere you find it. There are times I feel familiarity when I am preaching. I address it and make everyone aware of that evil spirit.*

*14. Yawning is a distinctive sign of familiarity. Preachers and teachers must watch out for yawning, especially when the yawns come at the beginning of the message. Watch out for "early yawners", they are usually suffering from familiarity.*

*15. Like Jesus, every leader should avoid the places where familiarity has taken root. After Jesus detected a spirit of familiarity in Nazareth, He moved His headquarters to Capernaum. "And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days." (Luke 4:31).*

*16. Every leader should spend more time where he is celebrated and welcomed with joy and excitement. Like Jesus, every leader should avoid the places where familiarity has taken root.*

*17. Make clear distinctions between the leaders and the followers*

to prevent familiarity. *Jesus slept in the boat whilst His disciples rowed and worked hard. “Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth. But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.” (Luke 8:22,23). Jesus rode on a donkey whilst His disciples walked. Jesus did not hire twelve donkeys so that they could all ride.*

18. Draw boundaries so that you will ensure some level of privacy. *Privacy drives away familiarity. If everyone knows everything about you, do not be surprised that they will be so familiar.*

19. Break the monotony. Introduce new ideas. Monotony incubates familiarity. *Repetitiveness, dullness and uniformity are the perfect context for familiarity. The same sermons in the same way from the same person at the same time have a way of incubating familiarity. When the people wanted Jesus to come and preach in the same way, He refused to enter their monotonous pattern and decided to go to the next city. He knew that they would soon be yawning at him so He decided to travel. It is good to have annual programs but at times it is necessary to break the monotony.*

**And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.**

**And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.**

**And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.**

**Mark 1:37-39**

20. Don't always do what people are expecting you to do. *The same people who impress upon you to do what you have been doing all the time. It is because people know what you are going to do that they become familiar. Remember: too much knowledge incubates familiarity. Sometimes a prayer meeting or worship session instead of the expected sermon will help to break the familiarity. Those who pressurize you to conduct expected programs, are the same ones who will start yawning when you preach.*

# 12

## **IDENTIFY THE DIFFERENT TYPES OF EMPLOYEES IN YOUR ORGANIZATION**

*There are different types of people who will work under a leader. It is important to identify the real differences that exist.*

### **Five Types Of Employees Every Leader Has To Deal With**

1. Employees who prefer resting to working. *God worked for six days and rested for one day. That means that it is better to work than to rest. Any employee who prefers resting to working, has not found his God given task.*

2. Employees who are not prepared to do anything extra or new. *Such employees are not valuable, they want to do what they have always done. They don't want change.*

3. Workers who are prepared to do any job. *Such people are valuable. They are prepared to learn. They want to advance. They want to please you.*

4. Results producing employee. *One of the most valuable things in an employee is his ability to produce results.*



5. Workers who are consumed and obsessed with their work. *This is the highest kind of worker. Value them and pay them highly.*

## **Seven Things Every Leader Should Teach His Employee**

1. Teach every employee to write instructions down as you speak.

2. Teach your employees to repeat their instructions and ask questions about the instructions you have given them.

3. Teach them to call you, talk to you and consult you frequently.

4. Teach them to be ready to change jobs and accept their new responsibilities.

5. Teach them to dress formally whilst at work. *Have you not noticed that the wealthiest organizations, such as banks, instruct their employees to dress very formally?*

6. Teach them to solve problems they encounter in the course of their duties. *Instead of reporting problems, they should report how they solved those problems!*

7. Teach them to think about their work whilst at home. *Someone who thinks about his work whilst at home is both consumed and obsessed by his job. Such people read books about their career. They spend their money and time in an effort to be better prepared for their task.*

## **How To Be Consumed With Your Work**

1. Know that you will only succeed with things that consume your whole being.
2. Find the job for which you are not conscious of time. *That is your God given task.*
3. Continue you working in your mind, even whilst at home.
4. Buy and read books about your work.
5. Have only friends who are into your kind of work. *This will mean that even your leisure times relate to your work.*
6. Spend money to be better trained and prepared for your work.

# 13

## ***LIVE BY THE LOGICAL LAWS OF TEAMWORK***

### **Fourteen Laws Of Teamwork**

1. Everybody in the ministry team should know what you are trying to do. *When people understand what you are trying to do, it helps them to flow in the vision.*
2. Everyone in the ministry team must know what he is expected to do. *This allows you to know who to blame when things go wrong and who to praise when things work out.*
3. Everyone in the ministry team must know what every other member of the ministry team is supposed to be doing. *That is why you must have meetings with individuals and then meet them in a group so that others would know what is going on.*
4. Everyone must have a complete section in which he has full control. *Delegate people to do things. Give them control over the section you have delegated to them.*
5. Give a lot of praise and recognition to your ministry team members in public. *If you want somebody to repeat something good, praise him for that thing.*

6. Give criticism and rebuke to your people in private. *If you want to correct somebody, do not do so in front of their subordinates. It will weaken their position of authority in the sight of their subordinates.*

7. As a ministry team member my criticism must be constructive.

8. As a ministry team leader accept responsibility for everything and anything that goes wrong. *Take the blame and share the glory.*

9. Do not complain about or condemn your team members.

10. Decide always to give advice on how to do things better.

11. Treat everybody as very important. *When you see someone who doesn't look important, be nice to them. They may not look important but treat them important.*

12. Reposition and relocate people until they are in the place they function best.

13. Give people jobs according to their personalities. *Some people are light-hearted and merry, others are moody and strict. There is a job that suits everyone.*

14. Forgive and overlook the mistakes of team members.

# 14

## DEVELOP THE ART OF KEEPING PEOPLE TOGETHER

### Five Keys To Keeping People Together

1. Have a strong desire to have everyone together. Fight to prevent the loss of even one person. Jesus' aim was to lose none of the people God had given Him.

*Pastoring a church is the art of keeping people together. At many points in the life of a church, there are situations that have the potential of dividing people. You must develop the art of keeping people together. What is the key to uniting people? You must believe that the people must be kept together. If you have a "you can go to hell if you want to" attitude, many people are going to drop out of your team.*

### *Moses Kept People Together*

*Now the children of Reuben and the children of Gad had a very great multitude of cattle: and when they saw the*

*land of Jazer, and the land of Gilead, that, behold, was a place for cattle;*

*Wherefore, said they, If we have found grace in thy sight, let this land be given unto thy servants for a possession, and bring us not over Jordan.*

*And Moses said unto them, If ye will do this thing, If ye will go armed before the Lord to war,*

*And will go all of you armed over Jordan before the Lord, until he hath driven out his enemies from before him, ...this land shall be your possession before the Lord.*

## **Numbers 32:1,5,20-22**

*Moses came across a delicate situation. Some of the tribes of Israel didn't want to cross the River Jordan. They wanted to stay where the grass was good for their cattle, meanwhile, there was a war to fight. They had been together up until this time and the nation Israel was about to split up into two parts. God gave Moses the wisdom to keep Israel united.*

*Moses could have cursed those tribes and could have told them to go to hell. He could have told them that they were damned. But he made it possible for them to have their dreamland and at the same time remain a part of Israel.*

## **2. Love all the people God gives you.**

*Another key is to cherish and love people genuinely. When you love somebody genuinely, you do not easily want to part with the person. A leader must have real love for people. People will stay where they feel they are genuinely loved. Even if there is a reason for your followers to separate, your love for all the groups will make them stay together.*

3. Use the wisdom of God to handle delicate situations.

*Then came there two women, that were harlots, unto the king, and stood before him.*

*And the one woman said, O my lord, I and this woman dwell in one house; and I was delivered of a child with her in the house.*

*And it came to pass the third day after that I was delivered, that this woman was delivered also: and we were together; there was no stranger with us in the house, save we two in the house.*

*And this woman's child died in the night; because she overlaid it.*

*And she arose at midnight, and took my son from beside me, while thine handmaid slept, and laid it in her bosom, and laid her dead child in my bosom.*

*And when I rose in the morning to give my child suck, behold, it was dead: but when I had considered it in the morning, behold, it was not my son, which I did bear.*

*And the other woman said, Nay; but the living is my son, and the dead is thy son. And this said, No; but the dead is thy son, and the living is my son. Thus they spake before the king.*

*Then said the king, The one saith, This is my son that liveth, and thy son is the dead: and the other saith, Nay; but thy son is the dead, and my son is the living.*

*And the king said, Bring me a sword. And they brought a sword before the king.*

*And the king said, Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one, and half to the other.*

*Then spake the woman whose the living child was unto the king, for her bowels yearned upon her son, and she said,*

*O my lord, give her the living child, and in no wise slay it. But the other said, Let it be neither mine nor thine, but divide it.*

*Then the king answered and said, Give her the living child, and in no wise slay it: she is the mother thereof.*

*And all Israel heard of the judgment which the king had judged; and they feared the king: for they saw that the wisdom of God was in him, to do judgment.*

**1 Kings 3:16-28**

*King Solomon faced a delicate situation. Whose side was he on? Many times, people want to say that the leader supports this person or the other. In marriage counselling sessions, I have often been accused of being on either the side of the wives or the husbands. People want to say that you are on this side or the other. It takes the wisdom of God to handle delicate situations. Marriage is a delicate thing. Handle marital crises carefully and the couples in your church will stay together. A true leader is going to have his ability to handle delicate situations tested. If you fail, your people will not stay together.*

#### **4. Bring Peace Between People.**

*Most of the leaders of this world are engaged in settling conflicts. The reality is that human beings have so many conflicts and wars between each other that there is constantly no peace. Anyone who is a leader will need to learn the art of peacemaking.*

**Follow peace will all men...**

**Hebrews 12:14**



*Have you not noticed that many presidents wish to be the ones who brought peace between warring factions? Successive American presidents have longed to be the ones to bring peace to the Middle East. They take famous photographs standing between sworn enemies. These pictures are important to them as they testify about their ability to lead. Anyone who is able to bring peace to this world has leadership abilities. Are you a leader? Do you help to bring peace between enemies? Do you fuel hatred and strife? A leader does not bring more confusion he brings peace.*

#### 5. Be at peace with others.

*Some people are constantly at war. They pick quarrels with almost anyone they interact with. I know some pastor's wives who have driven away many people from their husband's churches. You cannot lead people with whom you constantly fight. You may be wondering why nobody is following you. How can people follow someone who keeps stabbing them in the back? Would you follow someone who turns around every few minutes and throws a stone at you? Certainly not!*

*Do you desire to be a leader? Then develop the art of being at peace with those around you. Do not constantly threaten them. Do not frighten them with curses.*

*I was once invited to visit with a man of God. I did not want to go. I had seen that man curse people many times. I thought to myself, "Perhaps he will curse me today." I did not want to be around a man who effortlessly threw curses around.*

*The art of leadership is the art of being at peace with those around you. Do not be disturbed with other people's*

*success. Do not fight them because they have something you do not have. Be content with such things as you have. Accept other people's success and do not fight them.*

*What is the key to being at peace with others? Accept them as they are. Do not try to change everyone around you. We are only human and we have our mistakes.*

# 15

## **FIGHT ONLY BATTLES YOU CAN WIN**

*Have I need of mad men, that ye have brought this fellow to play the mad man in my presence? shall this fellow come into my house? And David arose, and fled that day for fear of Saul, and went to Achish the king of Gath.*

*And the servants of Achish said unto him, Is not this David the king of the land? did they not sing one to another of him in dances, saying, Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands?*

*And David laid up these words in his heart, and was sore afraid of Achish the king of Gath.*

*And he changed his behaviour before them, and feigned himself mad in their hands, and scrabbled on the doors of the gate, and let his spittle fall down upon his beard.*

*Then said Achish unto his servants, Lo, ye see the man is mad: wherefore then have ye brought him to me?*

*Have I need of mad men, that ye have brought this fellow to play the mad man in my presence? shall this fellow come into my house?*

*1 Samuel 21:10-15*

*In this story, David realized that he was not in the position to fight the king. He changed his behaviour and pretended to be mad. He even pretended to join the side of the Philistines. A real leader does not engage in battles he cannot win. Jesus*

*Himself taught that you must count the cost before you go to war. I have observed pastors engage in building projects that they can never finish. All they are doing is to fight a battle they cannot win.*

Failure breeds failure. Success breeds success. Each failure you chalk, demoralizes your followers. You must avoid getting into a “failure” situation as much as you would avoid a snake.

A real leader needs to know which case should go to court. You should not bother fighting certain things in court. I personally know people who have committed crimes against my church and me. I even have evidence to that effect, but I have decided not to fight them legally. Why is this? I know when I will not win a fight!

*Why waste your time playing a match in which the referee is a player against you? Every wise leader should avoid a match in which the referee and the linesmen are openly for the other team! Whenever you are about to score, they will whistle, “off-side”. Whenever they are about to score, the whistle will be blown for a penalty against you. The fact is that you lost the match before it even started. You may even be scored a record 100-0 and enter the Guinness Book of Records for your efforts.*

*When the seed of disloyalty enters the heart of a betrayer, it is often a waste of time trying to change his mind. Have you ever wondered why Jesus never counselled Judas Iscariot? It was not worth the time!*

*Whenever somebody hands in a resignation, I often ask no questions. Why waste your time trying to change someone who has made up his mind? I do not want the person to stay on longer anyway. Sometimes they want to leave in a month's time, but I help them to leave immediately.*

*Are you a leader? Pick your battles carefully and win every time!*

# 16

## WORK HARDER THAN ALL THOSE AROUND YOU

*To succeed as a leader you will have to work harder than all those around you. If you think that being a leader means enjoying more and more nice things you are in for a rude shock. If you think being a leader means to is to relax as a potbellied ruler you will discover that it is not so!*

*A true leader is someone who works harder than everyone around him. All though I am the head of a large church, and I have many people under me, I often work much harder than all those I lead. Leadership is hard work. Prepare your mind for hard work! A pastor must pray more than his followers. He must be more diligent than anyone else. He often puts in more hours than his followers. Notice how Jesus worked harder than His followers. He prayed whilst they slept!*

*And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.*

*And HE COMETH UNTO THE DISCIPLES, AND FINDETH THEM ASLEEP, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?*

**Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the**

**spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.**

*And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.*

*And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.*

*Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.*

**Matthew 26:39-41,43,45**

Notice how Jesus prayed whilst His disciples slept. He was working harder than His followers. Being the leader, He understood what was at stake. That night He put in more than everyone else.

True leaders are often left alone by their followers and workers as they plod on through the night, putting in more and more effort.

There are many people who do not understand why top leaders are paid far more than their subordinates. Many unlearned people rebel against this reality. They do not know that successful leaders are actually working harder than everyone else. There are even certain diseases like ulcers, heart attacks, heart illness, high blood pressure that are associated with top executives. Their work schedules actually give rise to many stress related illnesses. Often, the privileges of top leaders just cushion the effect of their stressful work lives. Dear leader, welcome to the world of hard work.

# 17

## CONTEMPLATE, REFLECT, BE THOUGHTFUL AND CONSIDER THE THINGS YOU SEE AROUND YOU

*SO I RETURNED, AND CONSIDERED all the oppressions that are done under the sun: and behold the tears of such as were oppressed, and they had no comforter; and on the side of their oppressors there was power; but they had no comforter.*

*Wherefore I praised the dead which are already dead more than the living which are yet alive.*

*Yea, better is he than both they, which hath not yet been, who hath not seen the evil work that is done under the sun.*

*AGAIN, I CONSIDERED ALL travail, and every right work, that for this a man is envied of his neighbour. This is also vanity and vexation of spirit.*

*The fool foldeth his hands together, and eateth his own flesh.*

*Better is an handful with quietness, than both the hands full with travail and vexation of spirit.*

*THEN I RETURNED, AND I SAW VANITY under the sun.*

*There is one alone, and there is not a second; yea, he hath neither child nor brother: yet is there no end of all his*



*labour; neither is his eye satisfied with riches; neither saith he, For whom do I labour, and bereave my soul of good? This is also vanity, yea, it is a sore travail.*

**Ecclesiastes 4:1-8**

***WHEN I APPLIED MINE HEART TO KNOW WISDOM, and to see the business that is done upon the earth: (for also there is that neither day nor night seeth sleep with his eyes:)***

***THEN I BEHELD ALL THE WORK OF GOD, that a man cannot find out the work that is done under the sun: because though a man labour to seek it out, yet he shall not find it; yea farther; though a wise man think to know it, yet shall he not be able to find it.***

**Ecclesiastes 8:16,17**

***FOR ALL THIS I CONSIDERED IN MY HEART even to declare all this, that the righteous, and the wise, and their works, are in the hand of God: no man knoweth either love or hatred by all that is before them.***

**Ecclesiastes 9:1**

*King Solomon, a political leader of his day, wrote these scriptures. You will notice the phrase “and I considered”. You will also notice the phrase “I applied my heart to wisdom”. Do you consider yourself to be a real leader? It is time to start turning things over in your mind. Be a deep thinker.*

*Consider the happenings around you. As you consider, you will receive wisdom. That wisdom will help you to be a better leader. Consider why some people are successful. Analyse why some people fail.*

*Think about makes others victorious. A true leader is a deep thinker. I reflected on why certain people became disloyal. That is what gave rise to my book on Loyalty and Disloyalty. As I ponder over many issues, I receive revelation that becomes the basis for my teachings.*

## **The Brain Seller**

*I remember the story of a man who went into a store to buy some brains. There were four different brains on sale. The salesperson was on hand to help the customer.*

*The customer asked, "I would like to buy the best brains you have."*

*The salesperson showed the customer what he had in store.*

*He said, "These are the brains from a nation that invented airplanes, rockets, and satellites."*

*He continued, "These next ones are from a nation that invented televisions, videos, telephones, radios and stereo systems."*

*He went on, "This third set of brains comes from a nation that has developed beautiful cities, roads, bridges, trains, airports, tunnels, etc."*

*He then showed the fourth set of brains. He continued, "This last set of brains are from a nation which has invented nothing and built nothing for itself. This nation even has foreigners coming from outside to build roads and toilets.*

*"I see," he said, "How much are they anyway?"*

*The salesman replied, "The first three brains are affordable, but the fourth set of brains is very expensive."*

*"Why is that? Why should they be so expensive when they have not been used to accomplish anything?"*

*"Oh, that is simple," the salesman replied, "Those brains*

*are fresh, unused and full of potential. Because they have not been used for anything, all the potential is still within.”*

*This unfortunate story tells us how important it is to use the brains God has given us. No matter how spiritual you are, God still expects us to use our brains. A great leader is someone who contemplates, reflects, ponders and deliberates over issues. Thinking is not a non-spiritual activity. It is a God given privilege to have the large brains we have. Did you know that human beings have the largest and most developed brains of all creation? Think about the size of a bird’s head. How small their brains must be. Are you not glad that God has given you something bigger? Every great leader uses this gift – his brains!*

# 18

## **USE SYMPTOMS AND SIGNS TO GUIDE YOU**

***Behold that which I have seen: it is good and comely for one to eat and to drink, and to enjoy the good of all his labour that he taketh under the sun all the days of his life, which God giveth him: for it is his portion.***

*Every man also to whom God hath given riches and wealth, and hath given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labour; this is the gift of God.*

**Ecclesiastes 5:18,19**

*You will notice the phrase “behold that which I have seen”. King Solomon often spoke about things that he noticed.*

*Perhaps my medical background has made me sensitive to the concept of symptoms and signs. Symptoms and signs reveal hidden things. They tell you about what is not obvious.*

### ***Seven Things You Can Use Symptoms And Signs To Detect***

1. *Use symptoms and signs to detect disloyalty.* In my book, *Loyalty and Disloyalty*, I share about several signs of disloyalty. Betrayal is something that does not announce itself. You must look

for the signs. If you fail to see the signs that leaders are supposed to notice, you will be at the mercy of traitors.

*2. Use symptoms and signs to detect familiarity. You can detect familiarity by noticing little changes in people's attitude. Their comments, disinterest and yawns at meetings are all important indicators.*

*3. Use symptoms and signs to detect backsliding. In my book, Backsliding, I share about twenty-five symptoms of backsliding. If you use these symptoms, you will be able to detect backsliding in its early stages.*

*4. Use symptoms and signs to detect unforgiveness. Many people claim to have forgiven others. In reality, they are full of bitterness. In my book, Forgiveness Made Easy, I outline the signs of lingering unforgiveness.*

*5. Use symptoms and signs to supervise employees. You will not always be present to see if people are working well or not. I use certain indicators to supervise the people who work for me. Accomplishing targets within a deadline is the most important indicator for me.*

*6. Use symptoms and signs to uncover future leaders. Paul did this. In 1 Timothy 3, he outlined the signs that Timothy was to look for in potential leaders.*

*7. Use symptoms and signs to detect the call of God on people's lives. I think that the greatest sign of the call of God is the desire for ministry. I always look out for people who have a desire to work for God.*

*Dear leader, keep your eyes open and see the things that others do not. Often when I see my church members, I know when something is wrong. Why is that? Because I am a leader. I use symptoms and signs.*

# 19

## **CONTROL THE PEOPLE YOU LEAD BY THE POWER OF TEACHING**

*Do you consider yourself to be a leader? I advise you to study the art of communicating, teaching and preaching. Even a businessman needs to make his subordinates understand what he is trying to achieve. You see, people relate with you on the basis of your words.*

*Solomon was a king but he taught the people. He knew that his control of the people would be through his teaching.*

***And moreover, because the preacher [King Solomon] was wise, he still taught the people knowledge; yea, he gave good heed, and sought out, and set in order many problems.***

**Ecclesiastes 12:9**

*Teaching is the art of shaping people into what you want. People are not easy to lead. Everyone comes around with his own opinion and his own set of ideas. Teaching moulds the people into what you want. Through the power of teaching you can get people to do almost anything. Without the power of teaching, you would hardly be able to lead anyone anywhere.*

**A bishop then MUST be... apt to teach;**

**1 Timothy 3:2**

*The authority to lead people is found in your ability to teach them. A leader must be able to impart information in a simple and easy to understand style. Even if your office is not that of a teacher, you must learn how to teach.*

## **How I Led My People Into the Miracle Ministry**

*When I began operating in the miracle ministry, I realized that many of the pastors were not flowing with me. It was something new. Without even knowing what I was doing, I launched into a series of teachings on the power of the Holy Spirit. I taught about the anointing! I taught about healing! I taught about why miracles were necessary! These teachings helped tremendously. Today, the whole church is ever ready for a miracle session.*

*If you want to lead people along a certain road, you often have to teach them first. King Solomon was wise, that is why he taught them knowledge. Are you a wise leader? Teach your people knowledge.*



# 20

## ***BE A LOYAL LEADER***

### **Five People You Must Be Loyal To**

***Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.***

**1 Corinthians 4:2**

*One of the cardinal qualifications for a leader is loyalty. You must be loyal to your God, your church, your spouse and your friends. A leader must also learn to be loyal to the people who follow him. When it is time for your followers to be rewarded, be faithful and let the rewards happen.*

1. Be loyal to the people who have laboured for you. *Do not withhold the blessings of those who have laboured with you. When one of your followers is in trouble, show your loyalty. Your followers are watching you closely. They will do what they see. If you do not betray them in time of their difficulty, they will not betray you.*
2. Be loyal to your superiors. *A leader must be loyal to his superiors. When David had the opportunity to kill Saul, he did not! He was loyal to the king. He did not execute his own father.*

***Then said Abishai to David, God hath delivered thine enemy into thine hand this day: now therefore let me smite***

*him, I pray thee, with the spear even to the earth at once, and I will not smite him the second time.*

*And David said to Abishai, Destroy him not: for who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?*

*David said furthermore, As the Lord liveth, the Lord shall smite him; or his day shall come to die; or he shall descend into battle, and perish.*

*The Lord forbid that I should stretch forth mine hand against the Lord's anointed: but, I pray thee, take thou now the spear that is at his bolster, and the cruse of water, and let us go.*

**1 Samuel 26:8-11**

*Many years later, David himself made a mistake. He murdered one of his soldiers called Uriah. David could have lost his life through that mistake. Many of his leaders could have revolted. However, this did not happen. His men were loyal to the king's authority. They refused to kill the Lord's anointed because they had learnt it by example.*

3. Be loyal to your friends. A leader must be loyal to his friends. When David became the king, he realized that his position was a privileged one. When he was established, he asked for a way to show kindness to an old friend.

**Now there was a man of Benjamin, whose name was Kish, the son of Abiel, the son of Zeror, the son of Bechorath, the son of Aphiah, a Benjamite, a mighty man of power.**

**1 Samuel 9:1**

*These acts of loyalty to friends teach others about the true character of their leader. A good character is attractive.*

*People are more inclined to follow someone with a good heart.*

4. Be loyal to your spouse. *A leader must be loyal to his spouse. Because marriage is such a difficult thing for many people, anyone whose marriage works is hailed as a natural leader. You become a natural leader in society because your domestic affairs are under control. Loyalty to your spouse involves self-control and Christian love. Everyone would like to have a leader with self-control and love.*

*A bishop then must be blameless, the HUSBAND OF ONE WIFE...*

*1 Timothy 3:2*

5. Be loyal to your vision. *A leader must be loyal to his vision. Nobody wants to follow someone who is unpredictable. Many years ago, I declared my interest in soul winning and establishing people in Christ. I am still moving with the same vision. Much water has passed under the bridge but the vision is still the same – a soul is a soul and is precious to God. He may be a beggar, a lawyer or a doctor – a soul is a soul and is precious to God. She may be a groundnut seller, a prostitute or a nurse – a soul is a soul and is precious to God.*

*Keep the same vision. The Bible teaches that you should not associate with people who are prone to sudden mutations and sharp turns. It is dangerous to sit in a car when the driver constantly makes sudden turns.*

**My son, fear thou the Lord and the king: and meddle not with them that are given to change:**

**Proverbs 24:21**

*Are you a leader? Be a faithful, stable, constant and loyal person. You will have a large following.*

# 21

## ***OVERCOME HATRED AND OP- POSITION***

### **Six Things Every Christian Should Know About Opposition**

1. If you cannot handle opposition, you cannot be a leader. *Every time I have embarked on the road of leadership, it has been met with stiff opposition. If you cannot handle the enemies who are destined to oppose you, you cannot be a great leader. Every great leader has many enemies!*
2. The greater the leader, the greater the hatred and opposition. *Consider the life of Elijah. He was hated by the king and by the king's wife. There was a death warrant out for his life. Elijah was hated and hunted because of his ministry.*

**And he said, What have I sinned, that thou wouldst deliver thy servant into the hand of Ahab, to slay me?**

**As the Lord thy God liveth, THERE IS NO NATION OR KINGDOM, WHITHER MY LORD HATH NOT SENT TO SEEK THEE: and when they said, He is not there; he took an oath of the kingdom and nation, that they found thee not.**

**And now thou sayest, Go, tell thy lord, Behold, Elijah is here.**

**1 Kings 18:9-11**

*We all know that Elijah was one of the greatest prophets. The greater you are in leadership, the more you will be hated and hunted. Human nature cannot stand the success of another colleague. If you are not prepared for hatred and opposition, please resign from your leadership position immediately. If everybody speaks well of you, you are probably a hypocrite.*

**Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.**

**Luke 6:26**

3. Every new step of leadership results in fresh arrows of hatred and opposition. *Every step of strong leadership encounters real antagonism. When I began my church, I was called every name you can think of. Since Jesus Himself was accused of using the power of Beelzebub, I consider it a privilege to be called anything derogatory for His sake. If you do not want to be criticized, then you cannot be a leader. When Nehemiah ventured out to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem, you would have thought that everyone would have been happy. But Sanballat and Tobiah rose up to oppose him.*

**But when Sanballat the Horonite, and Tobiah the servant, the Ammonite, and Geshem the Arabian, heard it, they laughed us to scorn, and despised us, and said, What is this thing that ye do? will ye rebel against the king?**

**Nehemiah 2:19**

4. Opposition often comes in the form of plausible accusations. *When David spoke of killing Goliath, his brothers reacted angrily and accused him of pride and naughtiness. Isn't it amazing that good people are often given the most wicked labels?*

**And Eliab his eldest brother heard when he spake unto the men; and Eliab's anger was kindled against David, and he said, Why camest thou down hither? and with whom has thou left those few sheep in the wilderness? I KNOW THY PRIDE, AND THE NAUGHTINESS OF THINE HEART; for thou art come down that thou mightest see the battle.**

**1 Samuel 17:28**

*David had to handle the hatred of his own brothers and then the hatred of his father Saul. Hatred and opposition are part of leadership.*

5. Develop a hard forehead for opposition. *“Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the LORD.” (Jeremiah 1:8). Do not be distracted or deterred by opposition. If the least opposition is able to stop you then you have very poor leadership school. “Behold, I have made thy face strong against their faces, and thy forehead strong against their foreheads. As an adamant harder than*

*flint have I made thy forehead: fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.” (Ezekiel 3:8,9).*

6. Opposition is often a sign that you are in the will of God. *Rejoice, there is good news. Satan would not attack a dead piece of wood. You are now a threat to satan, that is why he is attacking you. “Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.” (2 Timothy 3:12).*



# 22

## ***BE FLEXIBLE, RIGIDITY IS COSTLY!***

**To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**

**1 Corinthians 9:22**

A true leader exhibits flexibility. Being flexible does not mean that you compromise in things you believe in. A leader must not be rigid. An old rigid tree will be broken, but a young supple tree can be bent over. Paul said that he became all things to all men so that he may save them all. Are you prepared to do anything to achieve good results? There are times that you may have to vary your dressing to flow with the people around. You are not always right, you know!

*In certain cultures, people are not punctual. When you say the program starts at six o'clock, they will leave their homes at six and be there for seven. If you are very rigid with your timing, you may end up preaching to empty chairs and closing your service as the majority of people walk in.*

*A pastor must be flexible with ignorant baby sheep. Sometimes sheep will ask you to counsel them about things you have just preached about. The message is very clear but they still want you to talk. There are times you have to be flexible and accommodate these sheep. Without being flexible you will*

*not be able to flow in a miracle service where the Holy Spirit has the liberty. If you really want to keep your service to two hours, you may miss certain moves of the Spirit.*

***A leader tries new things.*** Try new ways of evangelism. Be open to methods that you did not invent. Listen to young people who have fresh ideas. Do not rigidly think that God only speaks through a grey-haired sixty-year-old prophet. Flexibility will allow you to receive from a twenty-year-old anointed youth.

*Are you a leader? Then you must be flexible and open to new ideas.*

# 23

## RELATE WITH ALL KINDS OF PEOPLE INCLUDING PEOPLE WHO ARE NOT YOUR “TYPE”

*A leader is someone who is trying to get people to follow him. It seems to me that leaders sometimes forget that they are supposed to have followers. If you are a leader, you must make sure that you have people following you. Otherwise, you are not a leader. You must realize that your “type” of person is a limited species upon this earth. You are not likely to find many people in your age group, with your background, colour, accent, etc. If you want to succeed as a leader you must realize very early that you need to be able to relate with all kinds of people, especially people who are not like you.*

**And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God hath showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.**

**Acts 10:28**

*Peter was so rigid in his understanding of leadership that he restricted his ministry to a small group of Jews. But God had a bigger plan for him. God wanted him to reach many other people. As you read this book, I sense that God wants to*

*give you a wider scope of ministry. Do not be myopic. There are more people who are not like you than are people like you.*

*My father is from Ghana and my mother is from Switzerland. I was born in England but I have lived in Ghana all my life. My colour is neither Black nor White. When I was growing up, most of my friends had European parents or a mixture of White and Black. This was because my mother was Swiss and therefore had many European friends.*

*My father was an unusual man. He loved classical music and played bridge and owned racehorses. Because of this, many of his friends were not Ghanaian. Many of his friends were British, Indians, Lebanese, etc. As I grew up my hobbies were table tennis, squash, horse riding and swimming. I can assure you that there are very few people in the world who have the same background that I do. Not because I am special, but because this is an unusual combination of culture and circumstances.*

*If I have been raised up to be a leader, you tell me how many people will have a similar background to what I have just shared with you? Not many! To become a leader of many people I must relate with people who do not have my background. Many of my friends have had a very different background. But I relate with them naturally and easily.*

*If you are a pastor and you have a poor educational background, rise up and relate with all kinds of people, including rich people. You will definitely need some rich people in your church. Do not drive away all the educated people because of your lack of education. You can educate yourself!*

*Do you consider yourself to be a leader? Ask yourself, "What type of person am I? What type of person am I not? Make a decision to relate with every type of person.*

**To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**

**And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.**

**1 Corinthians 9:22,23**

# 24

## RELATE WITH INDIVIDUALS AND RELATE WITH THE CROWD

**There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.**

**Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.**

***Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:***

***But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.***

***The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.***

**John 4:7,9,13-15**

*Jesus was somebody who handled great crowds. He had a team of pastors He was training. Jesus also had a busy schedule. But when He met the woman of Samaria, he took a little time and spoke to her as an individual. A leader is someone who knows how to relate with individuals. Jesus did not know whether this woman was rich or poor. He just treated her as a*

*human being who needed His help.*

*Every human being is a complex composition of spirit, soul and body. Every human being has his fears, mistakes and successes in the background. Jesus spoke to a woman with a whole lot of problems. He was able to help her. If God has called you to be a leader, you must help individuals with needs. Do not treat a human being as a mere number. Anyone who treats his members as “just one of the masses” will soon discover that he loses their support.*

*Jesus started His ministry fully aware that He was going to relate with poor people. He was going to minister to the broken hearted and to people that were bound. Dear leader, remember that each individual needs special attention.*

**And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.**

**John 6:10**

*Jesus knew how to handle large groups of people as well as individuals. When you are handling a crowd, you must know how to behave. You must dress properly and speak wisely. Many people in the crowd want to know what the truth is. A good leader transmits appropriate information to the crowd.*

## **Keys to Relating with the Crowd**

1. Give them accurate and timely information. *Do not tell them that you will raise their salaries when you will not.*

2. Do not make useless promises. *People get tired of vain promises.*
3. Announce as much good news as you can. *If a new branch has started, announce it. If a miracle has taken place, tell the people. The people will not know until you tell them. Good news creates a good feeling in the crowd. Every wise government spends a lot of money informing the general population about what they want them to know. That is how they are able to keep the masses in check. Good news encourages everyone. That is how to control the crowds. Bad news discourages the followers.*
4. Do not speak down at the people. *People like to feel respected. Even the tone of your voice can indicate whether you respect the people or not! As you sow love and respect you will reap admiration and many “following” hearts.*



# 25

## DON'T BE SURPRISED BY INGRATITUDE

*Every leader comes face to face with ingratitude. People are not grateful for the services you render to them. It will not take you long to discover this. Many years ago, I found out that people whom I loved could turn around and hurt me. Men that I had trained did not remember that they had been helped. However, I have continued to believe in people and to trust people. I have no choice. If I begin to retaliate because of ingratitude, I will lose my position.*

**Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?**

**John 10:32**

*Jesus experienced ingratitude. He was killed by an ungrateful mob of Jews. After ministering for twenty years, I have seen pastors being run out of town. That is why the constitution of my church does not give anyone the right to throw me out under any circumstances. I have seen it before and I know that if human nature is allowed to run its course, my end will be no better than my Lord's. Jesus was murdered for His good deeds. He was exchanged for an armed robber. But he never responded to the evil spirit of ingratitude.*

*Do not look to people for gratitude. A leader looks to*

*God for rewards.*

**Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive OF THE LORD, whether he be bond or free.**

**Ephesians 6:8**

*The scripture teaches that your rewards depend on God and not the people you helped. God is the only one who can reward you adequately. Do not expect much from people, expect your rewards from God.*

*Many years ago I stopped expecting people to commend me after I finished preaching. I do not care whether people commend me or not! I am not expecting appreciation from men. My duty is to preach from the Bible. I have done my duty. When I decided not to look for man's approval, I felt a sense of liberty. I was free from men and accountable to the Lord.*

# 26

## ***ALLOW PEOPLE TO KNOW YOU SO THEY CAN TRUST YOU AND FOLLOW YOU***

**That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life;**

**(For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)**

**1 John 1:1,2**

*Let the people know that you are real! Everybody will readily follow a genuine leader.*

*Why did Jesus come into this world? He came so that we would know Him and trust Him. That's why He allowed us to hear Him, see Him and touch Him. Does anyone have the chance to hear you, see you or handle you? Are you a mysterious superman who has no faults? Openness produces a great following.*

*Are you a leader? Then you must allow people to know you as you really are. Nobody wants to follow a mystery. A mystery speaks of the unknown. A mysterious person smacks*

*of something foreboding.*

*Who wants to follow a mysterious person into a dark valley where something bad may happen to him? Let me tell you an important secret about leadership. **The more open you are, the more people will readily follow your leadership.** I did not say that the more perfect you are the more people will follow you. Everyone knows that his neighbour is not perfect. It is no secret that there is no perfect person on the earth. Someone who is open and honest about his weaknesses is more likely to have a following. If you are a pastor, let the people know that you are real! Everybody will readily follow a genuine leader.*

# 27

## ACKNOWLEDGE THE GIFTS OF OTHERS

**But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;**

**Galatians 2:7**

*Peter acknowledged that the ministry to the Gentiles was clearly in the hands of the apostle Paul.*

*Can you acknowledge that God has given something to someone else? If you can than you are a leader. A leader is someone who is able to acknowledge the special grace on another person's life. My library is made up of books of other ministers. I have the books of every pastor in my city. I acknowledge that God is using other people apart from me. I want to learn what they know. I privately and publicly acknowledge that they are doing great things for the Lord.*

*Instead of acknowledging the gifts in others, pastors often find themselves criticizing and maligning one another.*

*Years ago, I realized that there were many people I could not reach. Many people cannot relate to the way I preach. That is why God has raised up other ministers. There are also many people who cannot relate to the way others preach. That is*

*why they joined my church. I am often amused as I observe how sparingly some ministers acknowledge my gift. They fear to acknowledge someone else's gift.*

Peter acknowledged Paul's ministry to the Gentiles. Paul also acknowledged Peter's ministry to the Jews. You must recognize what God recognized and honour what God has honoured. That is true leadership!

# 28

## ***INFLUENCE PEOPLE BY EX-AMPLE***

**Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared;**

**Hebrews 5:7**

**But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.**

**Acts 6:4**

*You may wonder why I have quoted the above scriptures. What is the correlation between them? The first one speaks about Jesus' prayer life whilst he was on earth. The second one speaks of Peter's prayer life after Jesus left. Jesus taught His disciples to pray by example. Peter was influenced by Jesus' prayer life.*

### **Listen to What They Say But Don't Do What They Do**

Many years ago, I heard a man advising me to listen to what

the priest said but not to follow his example. How strange! It is very difficult to follow somebody's words and not his example. There was an old Chinese proverb printed in the physiology laboratory in my former medical school.

*It said, "I hear and I forget, I see and I remember, I do and I understand." This proverb tells us all the power of influencing people through what they see. You never forget what you see. Did you know that you only retain about eleven percent of what you hear?*

Jesus did not only teach about prayer. He acted prayer. He lived prayer. *That is why Peter was so determined not to be distracted from his prayer life. Many ministers today do not know the importance of prayer. They have never lived with someone who prayed. They have never seen it acted out. Remember that your example is more important than your words.*

*Dear friend, do you want to be a leader? Please remember that your example is more important than your words.*



# 29

## GET ANGRY SOMETIMES

*And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves,*

*And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.*

**Matthew 21:12,13**

*If you are a leader, you will become happy with the things that make God happy. You will also become angry with the things that make God angry. You see, Jesus got angry when He saw the evil that was being perpetrated by backslidden worshippers. They had converted the church into a business centre.*

*Most people are only capable of natural fleshly anger. But the Bible speaks of anger that is different. That is what I call holy anger.*

**Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:**

**Ephesians 4:26**

*In this scripture, Christians are actually instructed to get*

*angry sometimes. The important thing is not to sin whilst you are angry. Holy anger is the anger that rises within you against the devil, sin and wickedness in the world. Holy anger is the anger that rises against injustice and oppression.*

*When holy anger comes upon you, you are expected to take certain decisions. Just as Jesus threw out the moneychangers from the temple, there is a time to throw certain people out of your organizations. Many businesses and companies fail because they fail to act appropriately in righteous anger. Leaders must know how to operate in righteous biblical anger.*

<sup>1</sup> Foxe's Book of Martyrs, p. 206

<sup>2</sup> Foxe's Book of Martyrs, pp 207-208

<sup>3</sup> Foxe's Book of Martyrs, pp 210-213

# Solomonic Success

Dag Heward-Mills



*DAG'S TAPES & PUBLICATIONS*

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.



A Lighthouse Chapel Production

ISBN 9988-7798-8-7

**Copyright © 1999 Dag Heward-Mills**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

# ***Contents***

Total Success .....	1
Obey Your Father's Instructions .....	13
The Secret of Building the Temple of God .....	19
The Secret of Seeking After Righteousness .....	23
The Secret of Building Your Own House .....	26
The Secret of Using Your Mind .....	31

## **DEDICATION**

**I dedicate this book to my friend and brother,  
*Hassib Ayache.***

**Thank you for your friendship and support.  
May God give you Solomonic Success!**



***For additional information on Bishop Dag Heward-Mills'  
books, tapes and videos write to the following address:***

***DgTP  
P.O.Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana - West Africa***



# ***Chapter One***

## ***Total Success***

*For the Lord God is a sun and shield: the Lord will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.*

*Psalms 84:11*

The Bible says that the Lord is a sun and a shield. This means that the same God who gives you sunshine, gives you shade. All that God is trying to tell us is that He is everything to us. Getting to know the Lord will bring us into a totally successful life.

The Lord will give grace and glory. **That means that God will give you undeserved help.** When the Lord gives you glory, it means you will become more beautiful. He will make you a nice and blessed person.

**Success is not success unless it is total success.** If you only have spiritual blessings but do not have any physical breakthroughs, then you are not really successful. If you have many physical blessings but do not have spiritual blessings, you are not enjoying true success.

The Bible says that God is a sun and a shield. That means God can be everything to us. One of the great truths of all time is that we can learn from those ahead of us. We can learn the ministry from those who are ahead in the ministry. Learn success from successful people.

One person I believe was very successful was Solomon. We need to study Solomon's secrets of success. Solomon attained the greatest wisdom ever known to mankind. He also became a world famous leader. He was so rich that he made history. He was the richest man that ever lived. Solomon's wisdom and riches combined to make him a total success. Let us explore some of the features of Solomon's success.

### • **FOOD** •

Firstly, notice what his household ate on a daily basis.

*And Solomon's provision for one day was thirty measures of fine flour, and threescore measures of meal, TEN FAT OXEN and TWENTY OXEN out of the pastures, and an HUNDRED SHEEP, beside harts, and roebucks, and fallowdeer, and fatted fowl.*

*1 Kings 4:22*

Many of us in Ghana struggle to put meat on our plates. Yet, Solomon killed thirty oxen and a hundred sheep everyday! Remember that there were no refrigerators in those days, so they probably had to eat everything! Solomon must have had many mouths to feed.

There are many people in Ghana who, not by choice,

eat their food without meat or fish. When Solomonic success enters your life, you will have enough meat for your stew. I see you having Solomonic success!

• **SAFETY** •

*For he had dominion over all the region on this side the river, from Tiphseh even to Azzah, over all the kings on this side of the river: and HE HAD PEACE ON ALL SIDES round about him.*

*1 Kings 4:24*

Under Solomon's leadership, there was peace on every side. Not only did Solomon have enough to eat but he also had peace. That is true success! So many people want both happiness and peace. Some people live in colossal-sized mansions and have loads of money, but do not have peace. They drive in the most luxurious cars but they don't have peace. They jet set all over the world, but they still don't have any peace.

*And Judah and Israel DWELT SAFELY, EVERY MAN UNDER HIS VINE and under his fig tree, from Dan even to Beer-Sheba, all the days of Solomon.*

*1 Kings 4:25*

Another feature of Solomonic success was that everyone lived in security. Everyone was able to dwell under his own fig tree in security. **Under Solomon's reign, there was no fear that someone would arrest and confiscate your fig tree.** There was no Confiscating Assets Committee! There were no arbitrary seizures of cars and

properties. The Bible says that they dwelt safely in the days of Solomon.

## **Security Attracts Investment**

The reason why the western world invests only “peanuts” in some countries is that they know that their investments (vines and fig trees) are not safe from arbitrary takeovers and confiscation. **Little investment occurs in regions where legal agreements are not respected.** Under the reign of Solomon, the rule of law was established. People built houses and established themselves securely without fear of persecution.

There are some countries where it is virtually a crime to be successful or wealthy. You are hated and intimidated just because you have planted a fig tree. This was not the case in Solomon’s day. True success goes hand-in-hand with security and the rule of law.

In the days of King Solomon, soldiers did not go around looting shops and harassing wealthy people. They did not strip women naked and cheat the public. The Bible says that they dwelt safely under their fig and vine trees and nobody was afraid of anything.

**Look at most African countries. Who can dwell there in safety? Who can invest there and be sure of his investment?** It is no wonder that the wealth of this planet gravitates towards places where people can dwell in safety under their vine trees.

## Freedom and Justice?

It is interesting to note that the motto for Ghana's independence is "Freedom and Justice". But do we really have freedom and justice? Everyone knows that successful people can only flourish in a country where freedom and justice is present.

I remember many years ago when armed officers surrounded my father in his office. They had been sent to apprehend him. Can you believe that these people were arresting a civilian over a matter concerning an electricity bill? The matter was unresolved and still being debated in the courts.

Commands had come from "invisible" powers to arrest him. He was humiliated and thrown into a prison cell like a common criminal. The power that did not respect the law, had set aside legitimate court proceedings and had taken the law into its own hand. My father was humiliated and disgraced because there was no safety in the land. The courts were subject to the whims and fancies of powerful dictators who did not respect the law.

**When I saw my father lying on the floor of the prison cell amongst criminals, I marveled at the lack of safety for anyone.** These same powers, which were in control of the media, continued to embarrass my father by filming him in jail and showing it twice on national television news. After that, they took a photograph of him combing his hair in the police cells and published it in the national daily newspaper.

What was his crime? Why was the government intentionally embarrassing one of the nation's honorable and wealthy citizens? Is it a crime to be wealthy? Is it safe to dwell in your own country? The law meant nothing to the "invisible" powers of the day. The courts and their decisions were set aside as one would set aside a dead dog. It is no wonder that my father fell ill and died shortly after this!

True success involves the peace and safety of a nation and *all* its citizens. When people break the law, the right thing to do is to prosecute them. However, in nations where politicians control the law, you cannot expect justice to prevail unless you are on the "right side of the fence".

**Democracy is not only the vote of the majority, but also the protection of the minorities.** Those of us who live in developing countries must pray that Solomonic peace and safety will one day be part of our nations.

I sometimes wonder at the appeals of certain government officials for businessmen to invest in the country. If there can be an announcement one day that, "All those who have two million cedis and above should report to the nearest police station for interrogation," who will put his money into the bank? Who will invest in the country?

*And Judah and Israel DWELT SAFELY, EVERY MAN UNDER HIS VINE and UNDER HIS FIG TREE...*

*1 Kings 4:25*

Our church once signed a contract with a government agency. We were led to invest a lot of money into a property, thinking that the agreement was safe. However, we were

awoken to the rude shock of our walls being broken down by an “invisible” power. The same invisible power was at work again. The laws were set aside and the agreements were shoved away. This is not safety and peace.

Let’s have Solomonic success! Solomonic success means that we will plant our fig trees and dwell under them in safety.

• *CARS* •

*And Solomon gathered together chariots and horsemen: and he had a thousand and four hundred chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen, whom he bestowed in the cities for chariots, and with the king at Jerusalem.*

*1 Kings 10:26*

Solomon had one thousand four hundred *cars*. In some countries, if you have a car, a special investigative branch may hunt you down. Nevertheless, hear me today— God wants to give you many cars! He wants you to drive to church. **Do not set yourself against nice and prosperous things. If you don’t have something, don’t fight it!** There are many people who have had to swallow their words because of things they said in their times of poverty.

Some nations have killed their leaders at various times, just for owning a house and having more than two cars. Today, those who killed others for driving nice cars are flying gliders, riding horses, driving expensive cars, walking on thick American carpets and jet-setting all over the world.

There is nothing wrong with walking on a nice carpet. But if you persecuted people years ago for their success,

it becomes difficult for you to enjoy prosperity in the day of your success.

**If you want to be successful one day, applaud and encourage success.** One day, you will also be successful. Solomon had many chariots. I see God blessing you with many cars!

## Crabology

When a man works hard, he must be rewarded for his labor. If his hard work and wisdom have led him to have a thousand cars, why are you so angry with him? **Don't be a crab! Only crabs try to pull others down.**

## Musical Chairs

When I was going to get married, my father told me that I would have to work very hard to get to where he was. He told me how he had no chairs in his home when he initially married. There were only two chairs in their sitting room. Whenever there was a visitor he and my mother would play "musical chairs". Each time one came around, the other would get up and pretend to be doing something else.

You see, because there were only two chairs, three people could not sit down at a time. Many people who have something today have struggled for years to acquire them.

Do not fight rich people! If Ghana is to be rich, then we cannot drive away wealth and success. We should not frighten away affluent people. We should encourage them

by being a law-abiding and agreement-respecting people



and government.

Do you think Solomon ate thirty oxen and a hundred sheep on his own? Of course not! Many people were eating the oxen and the sheep with him. Remember that they had no refrigerators in those days. Everything had to be eaten on the same day!

One rich person creates jobs and blessings for many others. Allow people to be blessed. Allow them to go as high as they can. You must accept the reality that some people will be excessively rich like Solomon and others will not be so rich. **The presence of one wealthy person creates wealth for many others.** People are different! Some have the ability to make money against all odds. People must be allowed to be themselves!

## • WISDOM AND STRATEGIES •

Let's talk about wisdom.

*And God gave Solomon wisdom and understanding exceeding much, and largeness of heart, even as the sand that is on the sea shore. And Solomon's wisdom excelled the wisdom of all the children of the east country, and all the wisdom of Egypt.*

*1 Kings 4:29-30*

Solomon was endowed with supernatural wisdom from above. It was recorded that he was wiser than all men. In addition to all of his financial blessings, he had the wisdom of God. The Bible states that he spoke three thousand proverbs.

*And he spake three thousand proverbs: and his songs were a thousand and five.*

*1 Kings 4:32*

### **• A GOOD INCOME •**

Notice how much gold Solomon acquired each year. Solomon had a very good salary. His yearly income was about nineteen million, three hundred and seventy thousand US dollars. This income is more than the earnings of some of the largest gold mines in the world today!

*Now the weight of gold that came to Solomon in one year was six hundred threescore and six talents of gold.*

*1 Kings 10:14*

### **• SOLOMON'S DECOR •**

*And twelve lions stood there on the one side and on the other upon the six steps: there was not the like made in any kingdom. And all king Solomon's drinking vessels were of gold, and all the vessels of the house of the forest of Lebanon were of pure gold; none were of silver: it was nothing accounted of in the days of Solomon.*

*1 Kings 10:20,21*

The Bible records that there were twelve lions that stood on either side of his steps. Everything in Solomon's house was made out of gold. Even his plates and cups were gold. Under Solomonic success, silver was not regarded as precious – it was too common! Decide to live in a nice house. Nice things are not evil things. God will bless you with

nice things as you obtain Solomonic wisdom.

## • SOLOMON'S PETS •

*For the king had at sea a navy of Tharshish with the navy of Hiram: once in three years came the navy of Tharshish, bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and APES, AND PEACOCKS.*

*1 Kings 10:22*

Solomon did not bother to play with dogs; that was too ordinary! He had peacocks strutting all over his garden. The Bible tells us that Solomon exceeded all the kings in the earth for riches and for wisdom. The whole earth gathered at Solomon's feet to hear the wisdom that he had.

As people gathered, they brought him gifts and riches. Is it not paradoxical? A rich man was being given more gifts. *When you make yourself a poor person, you drive away gifts and blessings.*

*So king Solomon exceeded all the kings of the earth for riches and for wisdom. And all the earth sought to Solomon, to hear his wisdom, which God had put in his heart. And they brought every man his present, vessels of silver, and vessels of gold, and garments, and armour, and spices, horses, and mules, a rate year by year.*

*1 Kings 10:23-25*

*And the king made silver to be in Jerusalem as stones, and cedars made he to be as the sycamore trees that are in the vale, for abundance.*

*1 Kings 10:27*

King Solomon was so successful that he made silver to become like stones and cedars to become like sycamore trees. All of these blessings came from God. They did not come from the devil. Do not believe the lie that wealth is evil. **Wealth is neutral!** It can either be used for good things or bad things. I believe God can give you Solomonic success today! From now, you will never be poor anymore! From now, you will rise-up in wisdom, wealth and in success!

Join me as we discover what principles Solomon used to take him to these heights of success.

## ***Chapter Two***

### ***Obey Your Father's Instructions***

It is easy to blame someone else for your situation. Human beings commonly point their fingers at the nearest scapegoat in sight. Adam said it was the woman who caused him to sin. Eve said the serpent was to blame for the problem.

Many Black people say that it is White people who are to blame for their condition. Third world countries blame Europe for colonizing them. They claim that colonization is the cause of all of Africa's problems. European countries are trying to keep away African immigrants because they feel these people are destroying their economies. **I think we should begin to blame *ourselves* for *our* situation.**

When we take responsibility for our situation, we are better able to help ourselves. Let us take responsibility for our own successes or failures. You must believe that *you* are the cause of *your* own success and failure.

Look at what other successful people did, follow them and you will be successful! If you were to work a bit harder,

perhaps things would get better. If you stop blaming your relatives in the village, witches in your hometown and the curses in your family, you will progress. Perhaps if you were to adopt the strategies of Solomon, you may experience his type of success.

One of Solomon's secrets was to obey his father's instructions. King David, Solomon's father left him several important instructions as he lay dying on his bed. Solomon obeyed all of them!

*Children, OBEY YOUR PARENTS in the Lord: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise; That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.*

*Ephesians 6:1-3*

If you obey your father, it will be well with you. If you do not obey your father and mother, it will not be well with you! It is as simple as that! Solomon's kingship was established because he took his father's words seriously and obeyed each instruction to the letter. Solomon would never have become what he became if he had ignored his father's instructions.

## **Different Types of Fathers**

God gives every human being fathers. You can have a father after the flesh, which is your biological father. You can also have a father-in-law: your spouse's father. Your father-in-law can be a blessing to you if he is a good person. Moses was blessed tremendously by Jethro, his father-in-

law.

You can have a spiritual father; someone who brought you to Christ and established you in the Lord. Another important type of father is a father-in-ministry. That is someone who brings you up and helps you to be established in the ministry. All these types of fathers are important to us.

It is important to understand the principle of honoring fathers and mothers. Many church leaders have walked out into a spiritual abyss by violating these simple principles. Some ministers disappear into oblivion by dishonoring fathers that have been set in the land.

Before King David died, he called his son Solomon to his bedside and gave him some instructions. As Solomon looked upon his dying father, perhaps many thoughts ran through his mind. The man lying on the bed was someone who had made many mistakes in his life. He had committed adultery with Bethsheba and had disgraced the nation. He had murdered one of his own soldiers. David's children had been involved in the rape and murder of each other.

In his latter days, David had not been able to keep his family together. It was this same ailing father, who was giving instructions to Solomon. Yet Solomon obeyed his father! Because of that obedience, Solomon prospered to the point where silver became like stones to him.

## **A Father's Instructions**

The first instruction that was given to Solomon was to *be strong* and to behave like *a man*.

*I go the way of all the earth: be thou strong  
therefore, and shew thyself a man;*

*1 Kings 2:2*

Because I am a leader, I understand the importance of that instruction. Without strength, you cannot be a good leader. A church needs a strong leader to move it forward. Democracy and numerous committees are not helpful when you need strong leadership.

Solomon went ahead and eliminated his half-brother Adonijah, who had earlier tried to take the throne from him. The first act of strength that Solomon performed was to eliminate all possible traitors and wicked elements in his midst.

Some of you are too weak to get rid of that bad man in your life. You must get rid of that bad girl. She shouldn't be there. **As long as certain people are a part of your life, you will not prosper.** Temptations come through people. They do not fly in a vacuum. If you do not get rid of certain people in your life, you will have countless problems.

You need strength to obey the voice of the Lord. When God told me to be a pastor, it took a lot of strength to forge ahead into God's will. No one supported or helped me. **When I started out in ministry, I found myself surrounded by people who didn't believe in me.** I had to get rid of the scoffers in my life and I did just that!

I remember telling one gentleman, "From today, you are no longer part of this church."

I continued, "Do not come to this church anymore. Your services are not needed!"

This brother was taken aback, he wanted to stay on in



the church. He wanted to continue betraying me. I knew he was disloyal to me so I decided to get rid of him. It was not an easy decision to tell a friend – *go away and stay away!* But it was a very necessary step for my own survival. No one can prosper if he has disloyal scorners around him. You need an environment of encouragement and peace.

Another instruction Solomon had from his father was to deal with Joab. Joab was someone who had disobeyed David on several occasions. David asked Solomon eliminate Joab.

*...let not his hoar head go down to the grave in peace.*

*1 Kings 2:6*

When the opportunity presented itself, Solomon executed Joab. David also asked Solomon to deal with Shimei.

*...thou hast with thee Shimei... hold him not guiltless...*

*1 Kings 2:8,9*

Shimei cursed King David when he was running away from Absalom, his son. Solomon dealt with him as well. **Life is too short not to learn from your fathers.** You need to believe what they are telling you. Solomon did not waste his life discovering what evil would come to him through Joab and Shimei. He just believed what his father said and executed them.

You will notice that after Solomon fulfilled his father's instructions, the kingdom of Israel became established under his rule.

*And THE KINGDOM WAS ESTABLISHED in  
the hand of Solomon.*

*1 Kings 2:46*

Although Solomon thought that he was just obeying his father's instructions, he was actually stabilizing the nation without even knowing it! Obey your father's instructions, even when you don't understand them. You will unknowingly bring a blessing upon your life.

**A sweet spiritual blessing follows a man who honors a father.** It cannot be explained logically. It is a spiritual law that has been set in place for thousands of years. Take this secret and apply it to your life. Don't fight it because you cannot! Flow with it and you will come into Solomonic success!

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***The Secret of Building the Temple of God***

The next important secret in Solomon's life was the building of the temple. Many generations have come and gone, but you still hear the phrase 'Solomon's temple'. Solomon was the one who built a beautiful temple for Jehovah. There was no temple like the one he built. His father David could not build the temple because of the many wars he had to fight. **It is not possible to build anything unless you have peace and stability.**

Notice the countries in the so-called developed world. Do you think that you would ever hear on the news, that the Prime Minister of Britain, Mr. Tony Blair has been overthrown in a coup d'état? Do you think that you would ever hear that a corporal has arrested Mr. Tony Blair and put him under house arrest? Do you think that you would ever hear that President Bill Clinton has been overthrown by a sergeant and has been placed in custody? It is very unlikely. The stability and peace that western nations enjoy is helping them to build their cities and to develop in prosperity.

## Blessed in His Old Age

**One of the secrets to prolonging your days on this earth is to be involved in the building of the house of God.** Some years ago I noticed a man who was really blessed of God. The man had lived to a ripe old age and had many children and grandchildren. In his old age, he was rich and in good health. Most people at that age would be flat broke! Most of the people I know in that age group depend on their children for survival. But this man did not depend on his children at all. Some of his children even depended on him.

I asked the Lord, “Why is this man blessed?” The Lord showed me that this was a person very much involved in the building of the church. He was somebody who had spent a lot of his personal money building the church. The Spirit of God whispered to me, **“The people who involve themselves in building the church, whether spiritually or physically have a special grace upon their lives.”**

Do you remember the centurion who needed a miracle for his servant? The people told Jesus that the man deserved a miracle because he had built them a synagogue.

*And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That HE WAS WORTHY for whom he should do this: For he loveth our nation, and HE HATH BUILT US A SYNAGOGUE.*

*Luke 7:4,5*

They said, “This man is worthy because he built us a synagogue.” Good things from Jesus were about to flow into this man’s life because he had built a church.

Years ago, I heard a great man of God ministering at the sod cutting of a church in my city. This man of God made a statement that I will never forget. He told the congregation, **“Build God’s house, and God will build a house for you.”** I have never forgotten those words. Build a house of stability and safety for God’s people and God will make your dwelling secure.

## **They Locked the Doors**

**When a church does not have a building, it is greatly limited in ministry.** You will reap security for your life if you provide stability for the church. When our church used to meet in a canteen, there was no end to the harassment we suffered from the authorities. Sometimes, immediately after the service, I would receive a letter saying, “You are to meet the authorities of the Ghana Medical School on Monday morning at eight a.m. prompt.”

Once we arrived at church and found out that the security officer had decided to lock the doors and keep us out of the building. We had to have our church service outside the canteen. We were at the mercy of wicked and unreasonable people. When you provide God’s church with security, stability and safety, God will become your refuge.

God will build a house for you and give you security. **I have noticed that those who participate in building the temple of God are blessed.** I am always grateful for the people that God gave me to help build the Lighthouse Cathedral. We would probably have disappeared into obscurity by now if we didn’t have our church building.

By now, we would have been hidden in a classroom somewhere.

I have watched people give their life savings and their entire salaries to the work of God. I have also lived to see God blessing each and every one of these people. Today, some people only give a few coins towards a church project. They don't know what they are missing. **Those who have helped prolong the church's life, will have their own lives prolonged. Those who cause a church to be wealthy will reap wealth in their lives.**

In Bible times, people gave up lands and properties for the building of the church and they were blessed for doing so. This is one of Solomon's keys to success. He built a house for the Lord. Glue yourself to your church and see the church building become completed. Support the project until it is fully paid for! Attach yourself and invest in the church spiritually. Help to build a larger church. God will reward you as you build His house.

*The day is coming, saith the Lord, when you will no longer share a room with six other people. You will live in your own house. The day is coming, saith the Lord, when you will no longer use the toilet with fourteen strange people who you do not know. The day is coming, saith the Lord, when I will put a roof over your head and you will know no lack or want.*

*For I the Lord will perform it. All things shall be added, because you have sought to build my kingdom.*

# **Chapter Four**

## **The Secret of Seeking After Righteousness**

I want you to notice something in Solomon's prayer.

*In Gibeon the Lord appeared to Solomon in a dream by night: and God said, Ask what I shall give thee... Give therefore thy servant an understanding heart to judge thy people, that I may discern between good and bad: for who is able to judge this thy so great a people?*

*1 Kings 3:5,9*

Solomon was having a prayer time and asked the Lord to give him an understanding heart to discern between good and bad. The Bible teaches us that his prayer pleased God. The Bible tells us that God said, "Because you didn't ask for riches or long life, but have asked for understanding, I'm going to give you wisdom. In addition, I'm going to bless you with fantastic riches which you didn't ask for."

*Behold, I have done according to thy words: lo, I have given thee a WISE AND AN UNDERSTANDING HEART... And I have also given thee that which thou hast not asked, both RICHES, AND HONOUR...*

*1 Kings 3:12,13*

Solomon had the chance of a lifetime. He had the opportunity to ask God for anything he wanted. The Lord was impressed by Solomon's desire to seek for wisdom in order to be able to rule well. Let's face it! How many of us really seek for righteousness and wisdom from God? The Bible says in Matthew 6:33, **"But Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you."**

There are lay people who look at me and say, "Oh, it's okay for you to be in full-time ministry; you come from a rich family."

"You don't have anything to lose," they say, "Even if you don't work, your father will give you money."

I often smile and say nothing. I realize that these people do not even believe that I genuinely chose between secular riches and God's work. I know in my heart, that that was the choice I made. **I decided to build God's house instead of my own life. If God has blessed me because of that, I do not apologize for the blessings of God.** I give Him the glory.

I challenge you to seek after righteousness as Solomon did. It may not seem to be the most direct route to prosperity and riches. But that is the route that God has set. You cannot be wiser than God. Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness!

Decide to live a holy life. Pay the price and live for God. As you take up your cross to follow Him, the angels of heaven will take note. The kingdom of heaven will acknowledge that you are on the right road. You will be



rewarded with the things that all men are seeking for. They will be added to your life. You will experience prosperity without chasing after it!

# **Chapter Five**

## ***The Secret of Building Your Own House***

One of the secrets of success in this life is to decide to build your own house. Many people think that it is only fantastically rich people who build houses. That is not true! Solomon built a house for himself and I know that it contributed greatly to his success. I advise people who want to prosper to build houses. If you want to be a millionaire, I will say to you, “Build a house.” If you already have a home, I will advise you to build another home.

I have many prospective millionaires in my church. The first instruction I give them is: *build a house and never stop having building projects for the rest of your life.*

*But Solomon WAS BUILDING HIS OWN HOUSE THIRTEEN YEARS, and he finished all his house.*

*1 Kings 7:1*

Solomon was a very wise man. One of the things wisdom made him do was to build his own house. A builder is a wise man.

**There are two types of people. Those that accumulate**

**wealth and those that spend their wealth. Which one of these will you be?** Both of these people receive an inflow of money and riches.

One group accumulates this wealth wisely by building houses and investing in real estate. This group is often not outwardly impressive. The other group spends the wealth, generally having a good time. Such people impress everyone by flying all over the world, driving expensive cars and wearing designer clothing.

When all is said and done, the home builders often end up genuinely wealthy and capable of giving effortlessly to any worthy project. On the other hand, the “non-builders” who were not prepared to sacrifice to build often end up broke.

Do not forget this little secret. Be like Solomon and build something for yourself. **A building or property is a type of saving. It appreciates in value everyday. It represents the accumulation of all your wealth.**

It took Solomon thirteen years to build his own house. Many people are in a hurry to arrive at a place of success. Solomon was a determined man. He eventually completed his own house after thirteen long years.

I believe that money is not the essential element to building a house. I believe the key to building a house is wisdom.

*THROUGH WISDOM IS AN HOUSE  
BUILDED; and by understanding it is established:*

*Proverbs 24:3*

Don't let the devil deceive you into thinking that you cannot build a house. Wisdom is something you can ask for from God.

*IF ANY OF YOU LACK WISDOM, let him ASK OF GOD, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.*

*James 1:5*

## **Two Types of People**

There are two types of people in the world, builders and users. Builders erect and construct things in their lifetime. Users simply enjoy the facilities that have been created by others.

There are two types of governments: building governments and using governments. The history of Ghana has revealed that the government of Dr. Kwame Nkrumah, Ghana's first president, built many things. He built the Akosombo Dam which created the world's largest man-made lake. He built schools, universities, roads, harbors, etc. Some governments built nothing. They just use what others have built.

There are two types of pastors: "building pastors" and "user pastors". "Building pastors" build church buildings, schools, hospitals, etc. "User pastors" just preach to their congregations without building any chapels for the ministry.

Archbishop Benson Idahosa was someone I admired because he built so many structures for the kingdom of

God. Decide to be a builder! **Being a builder makes you a more substantial person.** Instead of using all of your money to impress people with new cars, build a house! When you die your clothes and your cars may be outmoded but your buildings will not be!

I remember when my father died, we assembled in Court to hear the reading of his will. The important aspects of his will related to the buildings that he had built whilst he was alive. There are people who build apartments in their stomachs. They buy all the expensive clothes from the best shops. They have so many pairs of shoes that there is no space anywhere to keep them.

I am not against nice clothes or nice cars. I have many nice things. I am trying to help you to become truly wealthy in the process of time. I want you to be an accumulator of true wealth through buildings. Let your mind mature. Become wiser about the realities of life. Life is more than eating, drinking and making merry – for you may not die tomorrow! You may live for many years and need the accumulated wealth of your better years!

**A wise person sacrifices to build something!** What is the use of a hundred suits, a hundred dresses and a hundred pairs of shoes? I usually have one pair of shoes that I wear until they are worn out.

**I have discovered that an individual either chooses to be a builder or a user in his lifetime.** Because I know that buildings make a person or ministry more substantial, our church has invested in many church buildings and properties. That is one of the secrets that has moved us forward.

I have decided to be someone who builds. It is not easy to build. It takes sacrifice and commitment. That is why many people do not build or own anything, although they could afford to. There are many people who earn a lot of money but don't do anything with it. A lot of money passes through their hands. One day they will ask, "*What did I use all that money for?*"

Solomon built both the temple and his house. Decide against being a tenant forever. Let your first project be a house or an apartment. Many people who have taken my advice on this subject have thanked me profusely after completing their buildings. **Look around and you will notice that those who are wealthy and established later in life have all built houses!**

I see you building a house in your lifetime! Become an accumulator of wealth! I see God lifting you from the oppression of different landlords! I see you rising from a user to a builder! Walk on, prosper and enjoy Solomonic success!

# *Chapter Six*

## *The Secret of Using Your Mind*

Did you know that the difference between human beings and most animals is the size of their brains? It is the size of the brain and the use of the mind that distinguishes human beings from animals. Those who have a mind can think, reason and rule. **Those who use their minds rule over those who don't.** A person who does not use his mind is no different from a person who does not have one!

When God created us, He blessed us with the ability to think and to reason. When you become born-again, it does not mean that you should not use your mind anymore. **A common mistake of spiritual Christians is that they stop using their minds!**

I am a spiritual person, but I believe in using my mind. The fact that I am born-again does not mean that I do not think anymore.

When I was in secondary school, most of the Scripture Union leaders did not pass their exams. It was as though when you became spiritual and prayerful, the mind stopped working. This is a fallacy. **There are two types of**

## **Christians: those who use their minds and those whose minds are on vacation!**

If you are going to cross a major highway, you do not close your eyes and say, “Lord, when I hear your voice, I will begin to cross the road.” That is nonsense! God expects you to use your eyes and mind to make the right decision. If you stop using your mind, you are insulting God.

**The ability to use our minds is what makes us different from animals.** The reason why we can catch lions and put them in cages is because we have a superior mind. The reason why we can trap poisonous snakes and wild tigers is that our mind gives us the upper hand over these animals.

**Using your mind fully will give you the upper hand in life.** Making full use of your intellectual capabilities will give you the upper hand in this life.

It has been proved that all ethnic groups of the human race, have equally sized and equally capable brains. **That means that all human beings are equal in their thinking ability and in intelligence.** That is why there are equally capable White and Black heart surgeons. That is why there are equally capable airline pilots and scientists in all nations.

But it is a fact of history that some races have gained superiority over others. Some nations have even captured and dominated others for years. Today, in a very civilized world, many nations are economically enslaved to other nations. The world is made up of rich and wealthy nations which rule and dominate the poor and undeveloped ones.



## The Thinker Controls the Non-Thinker

I have found that when a group of people become too emotional and spiritual, they often do not use their minds fully. People who use their minds fully usually dominate people who don't. **You control a person when you think more than he thinks.** Have you not noticed that, men are often more calculating and logical than women are? Women are often more emotional than rational. Is it not true that, generally speaking, men rule over women?

## Wisdom is Essential

I believe in prayer. I believe in fasting. I believe in the Holy Spirit and I believe in the supernatural. This does not make me shut my mind down. Solomon asked for wisdom. He was planning to use his mind!

The Bible teaches us that wisdom will promote us. The Bible tells us that wisdom will cause us to come to an honorable end. The Bible says with all your getting, get wisdom.

*Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding. Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her.*

*Proverbs 4:7,8*

People who have used the mind that God gave them are ruling over those who have not used the gift of the mind. Some people use their brain to invent airplanes, cars and ships. Those who invent airplanes are the rich nations.

Those who just buy and use these things are not as wealthy. Those who have made the great inventions are ruling the rest of us.

America dominates the world. There is hardly an invention, from cars to computers to spacecraft, that doesn't come from there. Way down in a country like Ghana, the American dollar is used as a financial yardstick for most transactions. On the contrary, the Ghanaian cedi however, is hardly known anywhere in the world.

### **The Lagoon god Says, “No!”**

Many times, development and progress in underdeveloped countries are stifled by emotional and spiritual reasons. When a lagoon should be developed into a tourist resort, the people oppose it in the name of spiritual reasons.

The lagoon god does not like to be disturbed. The lagoon god says, “No,” and therefore there will be no development. When foreign investors come to develop certain portions of land, the ancestors (the dead) do not like it because their resting place is being disturbed and it will invoke curses.

### **The gods Say, “No!”**

I once visited a beautiful lake in Ghana. The people living near this lake used logs, instead of boats, to cross the lake. Apparently, the gods do not like certain types of vessels on the lake!

As I watched my own people paddling on logs, I asked myself whether we were in the Stone Age or in the twentieth

century. I chatted with some of the villagers and asked them how they took the sick to the hospital. They described how a pregnant woman is strapped to two logs and paddled across several kilometers of a pitch-black lake. One man looked at me and said, “We have a very hard life here.”

I marveled as I realized how far back human beings could be when the mind is not allowed to function in a logical, sagacious, discerning and rational manner. When we allow spiritual and emotional factors to lead at the expense of common sense, we can only expect a hard life. God gave us the gift of the mind. He also gave us emotions and a soul. You are supposed to use all these components of your being.

As you travel around the world you will realize one thing – educated people are in-charge everywhere. Education develops the mind. **Those who are educated are those who have developed one of God’s greatest gifts to man – the mind.**

The human mind is more complicated than any computer. It is a supernatural gift from God. He expects us to think and to reason. God expects us to develop and to use this great gift of the mind! The Bible says that the wise man sees the evil ahead and keeps himself, but the simple passes on and is punished. Simplicity cannot help us in this modern day and age.

## Fetish Priest or Science?

I sometimes watch African soccer teams. They carry fetish priests and Juju men to the football fields to ensure that they win the matches. Some goalkeepers place special charms within the goalposts to prevent the ball from entering. During the half-time break, the “Juju” man gives assurances, chants and casts more spells and charms over the players.

Meanwhile, their western and European counterparts are receiving scientifically formulated intravenous infusions in their changing room. They are enhancing their performance by scientific means. Is it a wonder to you that those who use these scientific methods have more consistent and favorable results? How many African teams have even participated in the finals of the World Cup? Which African team has ever won the World Cup, in spite of all the fetish and charms invoked?

*Then said I, WISDOM IS BETTER THAN STRENGTH: nevertheless the poor man's wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard.*

*Ecclesiastes 9:16*

The Bible teaches that wisdom is better than strength. You may have a lot of brute strength like a lion. However, the one who is using his mind is going to rule over you. The Bible says, “Wisdom is better than strength.” When you stop using your mind, you lower yourself. People who are using their minds will rule over you and dominate. **No matter how spiritual you are, your mind is a gift from God and you must use it!**

## The gods Despised High-rises

I remember when some foreign investors wanted to develop some high rise buildings in a section of the city. The people of the area had an opportunity to receive a major financial input for progress. However, the gods and ancestors were against the idea of the development because it disturbed their resting-place.

Culture is a good thing! But when it goes against all forms of progress, we must ask ourselves whether that tradition should not be abolished. A country like Japan is said to have over six million gods. However, it seems to me that the gods of Japan have not opposed the sound and rational development in their country. In fact, I wouldn't be surprised if the gods of Japan encouraged development!

I am not against culture and tradition. In fact, I am a strong believer in the rich culture and tradition of Africa. But I am against poverty, backwardness and the lack of education. I'm sure it's the same with you.

If you want to get married, you have to use your mind. You cannot just say that the Spirit is leading you to marry. Of course, you must follow the leading of the Spirit, but you are expected to use your mind. What is the background of your proposed wife? Do you really know her?

*Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding. Exalt her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to honour, when thou dost embrace her.*

*Proverbs 4:7,8*

## Will You Marry the Three of Us?

I remember the story of how three sisters approached a brother who was graduating from a Bible school. Unknown to each other, each of the three ladies had approached the brother and told him that God had spoken to them about getting married to him.

How could the Spirit of God have told three different girls to marry one brother on the same day? We have to use our minds as well as our spiritual faculties. One without the other makes us defective.

## The Wisdom of God

The reason why many Charismatic and Pentecostal churches are not respected is because we are so spiritual that we leave our minds out of important decisions. **The finances of the church are not managed by using anointing oil. They are administered by using sound financial and accounting principles.** A pastor may be highly anointed with miracles but when it comes to matters of land, law, property and finances the mind and education must come into play.

Did you know that Solomon did not have as much military strength as his father David? David was a fighter and was known for winning wars. But look at Solomon. He had more peace than his father did. **How did Solomon establish himself in peace and stability?** He just made friends with all his neighbors and had many allies. Solomon had far more peace in his day than David his father. *Wisdom was once again proving to be better than strength.*

*And Solomon made affinity with Pharaoh king*

*of Egypt...*

*1 Kings 3:1*

*And the Lord gave Solomon wisdom, as he promised him: and there was peace between Hiram and Solomon; and they two made a league together.*

*1 Kings 5:12*

In the passage below, Solomon used the wisdom of God in ruling the nation. He developed internal stability by using the wisdom of God. The use of his mind was giving him the upper hand. He was becoming more famous than even his father David.

*Then the king answered and said, Give her the living child, and in no wise slay it: she is the mother thereof. And all Israel heard of the judgment which the king had judged; and they feared the king: for they saw that THE WISDOM OF GOD WAS IN HIM, TO DO JUDGMENT.*

*1 Kings 3:27,28*

The name of the Church is often dragged through the mud. I believe in deliverance. I believe in the power of healing. I believe in miracles. But I also believe in using the wisdom of God.

I believe that pastors must be well educated in order to be sound ministers of the gospel. Wisdom is still the principal thing and we need to use the mind if we are to experience Solomonic success.

Parents, push your children as far as they can go in education. They will one-day thank you because you  
h e l p e d

them to develop their minds. They will experience Solomonic success because they will have used their minds just as Solomon did.

I believe very strongly in the power of the Holy Spirit. I believe in the anointing. If you were to visit any of our miracle services, you would see the power of God at work. We have a flow of the Spirit of God and we experience all kinds of manifestations. People fall under the power, people laugh in the Holy Ghost and people cry.

Many people shake and tremble under the anointing and power of the Spirit. Sometimes entire sections of the congregation are slain in the Spirit as the power of God moves like a wave through them. I speak in tongues more than I speak in English. I spend hours waiting on the Lord in prayer and fasting. However, none of these have made me send my mind away on a holiday. My mind was given to me by God and I intend to use it.

My mind needs to be alert in order for me to take important decisions that concern the administration and smooth running of my ministry. I have heard the Holy Spirit speaking to me in my heart many times. I believe in what He tells me and I obey Him. But my mind is still alert and active. I try to understand and reason out every commandment that the Lord gives me.

Most Christians are either so emotional or spiritual that they have no use of their minds. Others are so logical and rational that the Spirit of God cannot move in their lives and churches.

**The key here is to balance the Spirit with wisdom.**

That is the will of God. Every Christian leader must



learn to achieve a balance between the power and the wisdom.

*But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, CHRIST the POWER of God, and the WISDOM of God.*

*1 Corinthians 1:24*

I have highlighted the words: *Christ, Power* and *Wisdom*. That is what I want you to get as you read this book. Christ Jesus is not only power to us. He is *power* and *wisdom*.

When you are able to effectively combine the power and the wisdom, you will begin to experience Solomonic Success. Remember, one without the other is not enough.

If you are a pastor, do not rely solely on spiritual direction, remember that pastors are supposed to use their minds as well. If you use your mind, God will lift you up in ministry.

I recently noticed a church which was meeting in somebody's house in an exclusive and quiet residential neighborhood. Although I was about one hundred meters away, I could hear everything that was being said in the service. The prayer, the worship and the praise was so loud and offensive that no one on the entire street could concentrate as long as they were shouting through their microphones.

Although there were just a few people there, they were using a public address system meant for large halls and hundreds of people. I thought to myself, "Very soon this church will be shut down by the neighbors or the police."

I remembered what Jesus said, “Be wise as serpents.” What is the wisdom of a serpent? **The wisdom of a serpent is the ability to function without unduly attracting the enemy’s attention.** Snakes are everywhere. All of us would kill the next snake we see! Such is the enmity between human beings and serpents! Yet snakes flourish and are abounding all round us. How do they do this? By wisdom!

I believe in that church and its pastor. But a little application of wisdom, would certainly help that church. On the other hand, there are churches which are so focused on the intellect that the Spirit of God is cut off.

Dear Christian friend, it is time for you to rise into prominence and success. Success is not reserved for unbelievers. It is your portion. Apply these principles and God will bless you!

# **The Beast of Prodigality**

Dag Heward-Mills

**Parchment House**

Unless otherwise stated, all scripture quotations are taken from the *KING JAMES VERSION* of the Bible.

## **Parchment House**

ISBN 9988-7797-2-0

**Copyright © 2001 Parchment House**  
**3rd Edition**

All rights reserved under international copyright law. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

## **PREFACE**

In Revelations 13:1, apostle John said, I SAW A BEAST. In Revelation 13:11, Apostle John went on to say , I SAW ANOTHER BEAST...

I also see a beast! The beast of Prodigality. A beast that is destroying and wasting the lives of Christians today. This beast is even misguiding some ministers today. In Lighthouse Cathedral, we have a pet name for this beast. We call it the 'ORANGU'.

This book is dedicated to the estinguishing of this fierce and treacherous beast called the 'ORANGU'.

After teaching on the subject Frugality, the Lord stired me up to teach on what I call prodigality. This is somewhat the opposite of frugality.

Being a pastor for the past ten years has given me many experiences. I have watched business men rise from the dust and become millionaires. But I have also seen many people endowed with opportunities waste their lives away.

I have seen some ministers waste their ministry and their lives. Some have insisted to be the heart where they were intended to be the kidney!

Others have chosen to be the arm where they should have been the leg. This is indeed a very vile syndrome.

The paradox about God is simply this: He knows the right thing but will not force us to do anything.

I feel it's my responsibility to share with the rest of the Body of Christ some facts about this incredible syndrome. I pray that it will be a blessing to you - especially to bishops, pastors and business men.

## ***DEDICATION***

**I dedicate this book to all Bishops,  
General Overseers and loyal Pastors of the wonderful  
Charismatic denominations that God has raised up.**

**I also dedicate this book to the extermination of the  
wild and dangerous beast of Prodigality- the ‘Orangu’!**

# ***Contents***

Prodigal Living .....	1
Prodigal Spirits .....	9
The Spirit Of Beleyahal .....	12
The Spirit Of Greed .....	15
The Spirit Of Evil Independence .....	18
The Spirit Of Foolishness .....	22
The Spirit Of Selfishness .....	25
The Spirit Of A Wild Goose Chase .....	30
The Spirit Of Ungratefulness .....	33
Road To Prodigality .....	38
Give No Place .....	43

For additional information on Dag Heward-Mills' books, tapes and videos write to these addresses:

In Africa:

*Parchment House  
P.O. Box 114  
Korle-Bu, Accra  
Ghana-West Africa*

Rest of the world:

*Lighthouse Chapel International  
P.O. Box 3706  
London NW 2 1YJ*

Website:

*[www.lighthousechapel.org](http://www.lighthousechapel.org)*

Parchment House



Let us begin to analyze the behaviour of this prodigal boy. Let us try to understand why he did what he did.

You can have prodigal sons, prodigal businessmen, prodigal wives, prodigal Christians and even prodigal pastors. The list is endless.

The prodigal tag can be fixed on anyone who misuses money, opportunities and resources, as though they were in endless supply.

**In all cases, prodigal people do not seem to realize what they have. They seem to walk away from very good opportunities, and simply waste the blessings of life.**

**Sometimes when people are near something great they don't value it.**

You may have a good church, a good pastor, a good mother, a good father, or a good job. Do you realize how blessed you are?

Someone may be in a good church, with a good pastor who feeds him with the Word of God. The pastor trains him to pray, sing, and generally brings him up in ministry.

**However such a person may turn against the very people who helped him. And he walks away from golden opportunities.**

What makes people behave in this way? Why did the prodigal boy walk away from his golden position, opportunities, and riches?

Why did he walk away from a bright future? **Why?**

**I believe he was influenced by the devil.**

I believe evil spirits influenced him to waste away his life.

**Demons are real, and they make people do evil things.**

A man who was driving at 120 miles an hour towards a cliff was advised to stop. He rather decided to go faster towards his own death. As a bystander the only reason that I could give for his behaviour, was that he was under the influence of something — perhaps alcohol or drugs.

In the same way, when someone is under the influence of evil spirits, he often does not heed advice but will continue in his sin.

I believe this boy was influenced by evil spirits to do the things he did.

**This is the *only* explanation to his almost senseless behaviour.**

In medicine, there are many diseases which we call *idiopathic*. This means that they have an unknown cause. Many of these diseases with unknown causes are actually caused by evil spirits.

**I believe there are at least seven evil spirits which influence people to behave in a prodigal way.**

They may be sons, businessmen, church members, pastors, wives or husbands. But they can all be exposed to these spirits.

Join me now as we begin a detailed study of the seven prodigal spirits.

Let us begin to analyze the behaviour of this prodigal boy. Let us try to understand why he did what he did.

You can have prodigal sons, prodigal businessmen, prodigal wives, prodigal Christians and even prodigal pastors. The list is endless.

The prodigal tag can be fixed on anyone who misuses money, opportunities and resources, as though they were in endless supply.

**In all cases, prodigal people do not seem to realize what they have. They seem to walk away from very good opportunities, and simply waste the blessings of life.**

**Sometimes when people are near something great they don't value it.**

You may have a good church, a good pastor, a good mother, a good father, or a good job. Do you realize how blessed you are?

Someone may be in a good church, with a good pastor who feeds him with the Word of God. The pastor trains him to pray, sing, and generally brings him up in ministry.

**However such a person may turn against the very people who helped him. And he walks away from golden opportunities.**

What makes people behave in this way? Why did the prodigal boy walk away from his golden position, opportunities, and riches?

Why did he walk away from a bright future? **Why?**

**I believe he was influenced by the devil.**

I believe evil spirits influenced him to waste away his life.

**Demons are real, and they make people do evil things.**

A man who was driving at 120 miles an hour towards a cliff was advised to stop. He rather decided to go faster towards his own death. As a bystander the only reason that I could give for his behaviour, was that he was under the influence of something — perhaps alcohol or drugs.

In the same way, when someone is under the influence of evil spirits, he often does not heed advice but will continue in his sin.

I believe this boy was influenced by evil spirits to do the things he did.

**This is the *only* explanation to his almost senseless behaviour.**

In medicine, there are many diseases which we call *idiopathic*. This means that they have an unknown cause. Many of these diseases with unknown causes are actually caused by evil spirits.

**I believe there are at least seven evil spirits which influence people to behave in a prodigal way.**

They may be sons, businessmen, church members, pastors, wives or husbands. But they can all be exposed to these spirits.

Join me now as we begin a detailed study of the seven prodigal spirits.

## ***Chapter Three***

# ***The Spirit of Beleyahal***

**Beleyahal comes from a Hebrew word which means useless, worthless, good-for-nothing, valueless, cheap or vile.**

This is an evil spirit in the world which makes you good-for-nothing, valueless and cheap.

**By the time the devil finished with the prodigal son, he was destitute. He had to feed with pigs — animals which were considered unclean in Israel.**

Sometimes God elevates a man and blesses him with a good business and lots of money.

But when he becomes successful in life, he decides *not* to serve the Lord. He rather spends his time and resources on women, food and extravagant living. In the end he loses all his wealth and becomes worthless!

**The beleyahal spirit makes you worthless.**

I spoke to someone who had once been rich, but had wasted his wealth. He told me he would be unable to account for the money God had blessed him with.

He said, “I earned a lot of money some years ago, but I spent it all on restaurants, discos and girls.”

As he was speaking I realised how penniless he had become. **The devil had led him on a journey to waste his riches.**

Oh, how he wished he could have that opportunity to earn so much money again!

**It is this same spirit of Beleyahal that leads a young lady to have sexual affairs with so many men.**

After she has slept with Kuku, Yoofi, Fiifi, and all the other men, no ‘proper’ person would want to marry her. She has now become cheap and valueless.

**Nobody wants a cheap thing which everybody has played around with.**

It is the spirit of *beleyahal* which makes you go to bed with a pot-bellied unbeliever after he has bought a pair of shoes for you!



It is this same spirit of uselessness that causes you to exchange your purity for a Chinese dinner. Dear sister, you are worth more than a portion of Chinese springrolls. Don't be cheap!

**Don't allow the spirit of *beleyahal* to make you cheap and valueless!**

## ***Chapter Four***

# ***The Spirit Of Greed***

*He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver...*

*Eccl.5:10.*

This is the attitude of the greedy person.

**He is never satisfied with what he has.**

A greedy person will often stretch out his hands to take something that does not belong to him.

Look at what happened to Gehazi, the servant of Elisha the Prophet. His master refused to receive money from a healed captain of the host of the King of Syria.

But out of greed, Gehazi went ahead, lied to him and took the money for himself. **By this, Gehazi had disgraced Elisha's ministry forever.** Elisha cursed him and his seed forever, so Gehazi ended up with leprosy (2 Kgs 5:27).

Perhaps he was in line to become the most anointed man of God after Elisha.

**I am certain that in the book of Kings there would have been more chapters written about the works of Gehazi, but they were never written.**

**Greed destroyed his ministry and his entire life.**

The spirit of greed can cause you to waste your life away.

Some people are not heads. But they want to be heads. They look with greed at the things their superiors in ministry have. They look with greedy eyes at the cars and houses which their bosses have!

Other people's greed goes even further than that. **They do not only want what you have, but actually want to be you!**

I was speaking one night to a pastor who had experienced the rebellion of several *greedy* junior pastors at the same time.

He told me that in his opinion there were some pastors who would never be satisfied, no matter what they were offered or given. He complained bitterly about some of these greedy pastors, whom he said were even earning more money than himself.

He went on to say that such people would not even be satisfied if he gave them his *own* wife.

**He said such people are so greedy that they actually want nothing but to replace you.**

**They want to be you!**

**Don't desire to be anybody. Be yourself!**

If you work with somebody, be content. Don't be greedy! You won't get to the top in a day. The only job that starts from the top is grave digging!

My experience tells me that it is not easy to prosper in this life. It is a long, long road to the prosperity we all hope for. **Impatience and greed will only destroy your chances.**

The Bible says, "Beware of covetousness." The prodigal boy had everything at home. Indeed, in his time of need he testified that even his father's servants had more than enough to eat at home. But, because he was not satisfied with all his blessings, **he stretched out his hand in the spirit of greed to take what was not yet his.**

Do you have the spirit of greed?

Please, deliver yourself !

## ***Chapter Five***

# ***The Spirit of Evil Independence***

**I believe in independence. But not every kind of independence is good.**

Some independence is acquired in the wrong way and with the wrong motive.

Independence becomes evil when it has the following characteristics:

1. Acquired at the wrong time.
2. Acquired in the wrong way.
3. Acquired out of hurt, bitterness and hatred.

4. Acquired out of rebellion against authority.
5. Acquired with the wrong motive.

Paul was independent. He said he consulted no one. He said,

*“For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it... I conferred not with flesh and blood...”*

*Gal. 1:12, 16.*

Paul is telling us here that as far as his ministry is concerned, he is independent of all men.

Timothy however, was not independent. Paul wrote to Timothy and told him exactly what to do and exactly what to preach. When you read the book of Timothy you will realize that it is full of instructions from Paul.

**In ministry, Timothy was dependent on Paul.**

Independence when it is of God is a beautiful thing. But when it is not of God, it leads to destruction.

**Many so-called independent churches acquired what I call evil independence.**

Some pastors who have gone independent when God did not send them, are finding out that it is not as simple as it looks.

I remember one rebellious pastor who left his home church breathing threats and curses. He boasted, “Give me six months, and I will show you all about church growth!” He spoke of all the great things he would do.

**However as the years went by, like the prodigal boy, he found out that life and ministry are more complex than they look!**

The spirit of evil independence is the spirit that leads a person to independence — but in an evil way.

Independence is a good thing if it is inspired and engineered by God — and directed by God.

Some of the independence of Africa was born out of rebellion. In Ghana we said we had the right to manage or mismanage our affairs. And that is exactly what we have done. We have virtually mismanaged our affairs for the last forty years!

After forty years of independence, we are still going around in circles. There has been no substantial improvement in our roads, health care, economy, education and other sectors.

Dear friend, apart from God's way, there is no other way. You can do it your way and not prosper, in spite of all your efforts.

I know that evil independence looks quick, flashy and instantly successful.

The Bible compares two builders. One built his house on the rock while the other built his on the sand. After sometime it looked as though the one who built his house on the sand was far ahead of the other.

Before you could say, "Jack Robinson", his house was at the *roofing* stage. Everyone in the community was impressed by the 'latest man on the scene'.

**But one day, the storm blew, and the house on the rock stood solid as ever. But the cheap one on the sand came crashing down, destroyed beyond repair.**

There are so many people walking in their own ways. They think that they are too old and too intelligent to be advised.

*Better is a poor and a wise child than an old and foolish king, who will no more be admonished.*

*Eccl. 4:13.*

They are doomed if they don't heed God's Word and walk in godly counsel. The spirit of evil independence is spurring them on to their destruction.

*There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.*

*Prov. 14:12, 16:25.*

Do you have the spirit of evil independence?



## **Chapter Six**

# ***The Spirit of Foolishness***

*Reprove not a scorner lest he hate thee...*

*Prov. 9:8.*

*He that reproveth a scorner getteth to himself  
shame.*

*Prov. 9:7.*

The cardinal sign of the spirit of foolishness is in the response of the foolish person to wisdom: **He gets angry when he's advised.**

## **A fool's reaction to advice will give him away.**

In fact, the fool will hate you for giving him sound advice. This is the spirit of foolishness.

*... fools despise wisdom and instruction.*

*Prov. 1:7.*

Being a pastor, I have learnt not to advise certain people in my church. Any attempt to counsel them will be misinterpreted.

There are also many parents who can no longer counsel their children, because the spirit of foolishness is embedded in the children.

I would not be surprised if many people spoke to the prodigal boy. Perhaps, his father spoke to him. His mother and brother may also have counselled him. But he was foolish and refused to listen.

Uncles and aunties were called in. Pastors spoke. Bishops added their voice. But to no avail!

## **The spirit of foolishness makes you deaf to advice and counsel.**

A married woman became extremely familiar with another man. Her husband and another relative advised her not to get too close to this other man.

She got so angry with this relative, and has hated this person to this day. Fools get angry when they are advised.

She insisted that she was not having any extra-marital affairs. But her husband suspected foul play.

When she was confronted again concerning the paternity of one of her children, she got even more outraged.

**You see, what was happening was that, someone was making the mistake of advising a fool.**

After several years however, she admitted that she had unfortunately had an affair with this man. She went on to confess that one of her children was actually the child of this other man.

Everyone was shocked! Remember, this woman became very angry when she was advised.

*But ye have set at nought all my counsel, and would none of my reproof.*

*Prov. 1:25.*

The spirit of foolishness makes you hate advice. It makes you hate your counsellor.

Do you have feelings of resentment towards your pastors? Do you get angry with your parents when they are advising you?

Then perhaps you have the spirit of foolishness!

## ***Chapter Seven***

# ***The Spirit of Selfishness***

**A selfish person does not care what anybody else thinks or feels. He is only concerned about himself.**

Can you imagine the disgrace that came to the prodigal boy's father? Friends would have asked him, "We hear your child is feeding with pigs across the ocean. Is it true?"

In our modern world, he would have received many faxes and phone calls. But the young boy did not care what anybody thought.

This selfish attitude is everywhere. In church, I have seen people who turned against me to go on their own way. I even blessed some of them as they left!

But they did not leave quietly. They spread false stories about the church and caused a lot of problems.

Such people do not care about whatever happens to the church that nurtured them. Though they benefited from the church for years, they now destroy what they helped to build.

*For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a TRANSGRESSOR!*

*Gal. 2:18.*

These selfish people now prevent others from benefiting from what they benefitted from over the years.

*Seemeth it a small thing...to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures?..*

*Eze. 34:18.*

How can you eat up all the good pasture and then tread on the rest of it?

**What are the others going to eat?** Don't be selfish!

Is it a small thing for you to drink of the clear waters and after that *excrete* into the rest of it?

**What are the others going to drink?**

There are people who have drank from the pulpit of a church for several years. When they decide to leave the church, they rather cause a stir in the church and say so many things that damage the reputation of the church and it's pastor.

When such selfish people leave the church, the rest of the congregation becomes confused: they cannot tell if they are in a good church or not — or whether they have a good pastor.

Woe to you if you act in this selfish manner.

Everybody grew up somewhere. I grew up in different groups. I belonged to a group called Calvary Road Incorporated.

I learnt a lot of my ministry skills from this group, and I am grateful to them for this.

Now I don't belong to that group anymore. But the fact that I don't belong there anymore, does not mean I should destroy them.

It is the pasture from which I grew up!

It is the water from which I drank!

Is it a small thing then, for me to eat of a pasture and after that trample it down, so that nobody else can benefit from it?

Is it a small thing to drink of the waters and after wards urinate in it — so that nobody else can benefit from it?

**That is exactly what people do when they say evil things about the places they came from.**

Has somebody been a father to you and nurtured you in the ministry? Then remember that you are not the only one! Others are going to be nurtured by this same man of God.

**Don't urinate in the water you just drank out of.**

If you want to leave — please just leave. Go quietly and pray for blessings. In Ghana we have a saying: **“You don’t point at your father’s house with your left hand.”**

There are other Christians who take certain things for granted and live carelessly, **regardless of the effect on other people.**

*Let not then your good be evil spoken of.*

*Rom 14:16.*

You have to think about other people and not just yourself.

One day I spoke to a Christian brother and sister who were living together. I asked them if they were married. They told me they were not. Now, they may not have been committing fornication (which is highly improbable). But what would their next door neighbour think, seeing them living together but unmarried?

If you are not married but live together, people will still see you attending ‘Goobley-gob’ Charismatic Church International. And they will say, “All these Charismatic churches are full of hypocrites.”

You are giving your church a bad name. And you are giving other churches a bad name.

The selfish person is not concerned about trampling upon the testimony of Christ and the church. He will make up every possible excuse.

**You must care what people think, especially if you are giving the wrong impression.**

It is a spirit of selfishness when we don't care what happens to the next person.

Do you have a spirit of selfishness?



## ***Chapter Eight***

# ***The Spirit of A Wild Goose Chase***

A goose is a web-footed bird, larger than a duck and smaller than a swan. Geese are difficult to catch.

(The next time you see a goose, try catching it!)

**To go on a wild goose chase, is to run after elusive things.**

People are searching, looking for something to satisfy them. Anyone who drinks of the pleasures of this world will never satisfied!

Jesus said:

*He that drinketh of this water shall thirst again; but he drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst again.*

*John 4:13.*

What are you searching for?

Students think that if only they can pass their exams, they will be alright. They can then have good jobs with fat salaries. Those who are not married are thinking of how to get a fiancée or ‘beloved’ and how to prepare for their wedding.

Those who are working are also burdened with getting more money, buying a car, building a house — the list is endless.

At every stage in life, people are not satisfied with what they have. So they think that reaching another level in life is the only way to satisfaction. **But the goal post keeps shifting.** The Bible teaches us that the goal posts of life keep shifting!

*When goods are increased, they are increased that eat them: What good is there to the owners thereof?*

*Eccl. 5:11.*

The prodigal boy was looking for something to satisfy himself. He went after prostitutes! He travelled! He changed home and environment — **a truly wild goose chase.**

There are people who are dancing their lives away but are still not satisfied.

**The hunger in your heart cannot be filled by anything in this world. It is only Christ who can give you true happiness.**

The Bible says

*...to fear God and to keep his commandments: this is the whole duty of man.*

*Eccl. 12:13.*

I once met a homosexual, and was very surprised, because I was not used to this kind of thing in our part of the world. I interviewed him. I wanted to know why a person would behave in this manner.

He told me that he had had so many different girl friends. He said girls (females) no longer appealed to him. He told me his new interest was in men.

My question is, when men no longer satisfy him what will he do? Will he switch to animals? He chased after elusive things, and therefore never got satisfied.

*Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not?*

*Isaiah 55:2.*

Are you chasing elusive things? Only Christ can satisfy you.

## ***Chapter Nine***

# ***The Spirit of Ungratefulness***

Many people are ungrateful for what they have.

They do not value God. They do not value the church, the pastors, or their teachers.

**They do not value anybody who helps them.**

It's only a few people who remember, and are grateful for what was done for them.

A pastor can sacrifice the best part of his life for his congregation. He can take time off to pray for them, counsel them, and nurture them with the Word. He will give all of his time to them — at the expense of his family.

However, it's amazing that many people don't value what the pastor does for them. They easily forget the sacrifice he made on their behalf.

Jesus knew that we could easily forget the price he paid on the cross, so he instituted the Lord's Supper.

The Lord's Supper is intended to remind us of the true founder of the Christian church.

Other people could easily overshadow Christ if we allow it. The pastor is not the hero of the church, Christ *is*!

At weddings, I administer communion to the bride and groom. Why do I do this? In that moment of their great joy, I want us all to remember that the marriage was made possible by Christ our Saviour.

**I want us to remember Christ and be grateful to him!**

When you listen to the response to the toast by some bridegrooms, you realize they are more grateful to other people for their marriage than to God.

He is grateful to the one who connected him to the bride. But friend, the greatest connector is Jesus.

Let's be grateful to Him! One result of ungratefulness is that it opens the door to all sorts of plagues.

*Whoso rewardeth evil for good, evil shall not depart from out of his house.*

*Prov. 17:13.*

Many people don't appreciate what somebody did to get them to where they are.

As a father, I now understand what my parents went through for many years in order to give me a sound education. I have to wake up early each morning to take my children to school. As I do this, I begin to comprehend the inconveniences my parents went through on my behalf.

If I refuse to show gratitude after all these sacrifices, I will be inviting curses on my life.

**You should always remember never to repay evil to somebody who has been good to you — be it your pastor, mother, father, stepmother, stepfather, or whoever.**

Jeremiah was one of the men of God in Biblical times who suffered at the hands of ungrateful people. In the 20th chapter of Jeremiah, he asked a soul-searching question:

*Shall evil be recompensed for good?*

*Jer. 18:20a.*

He complained to God that his church members had dug a pit for his soul. He was reminding God that as a pastor he had interceded many times for them.

*Remember that I stood before thee to speak good for them and to turn away thy wrath from them.*

*Jer. 18:20b.*

✌️⚔️♦️♣️□️ ♦️🌀♦️ 🌀♣️ ♠️♦️◊️♣️☪️ ♦️🌀♣️○📖

*Therefore deliver up their children... And pour out their blood... Let a cry be heard from their houses...*

*Forgive not their iniquities... Shall evil be recompensed for good?*

*Jer. 18:20-21.*

The Bible makes it clear that curses follow ungratefulness.

Politically, people are ungrateful. I sometimes wonder about the lives of politicians, because people are generally ungrateful to them.

At least in the ministry, God will reward us in heaven. The reward for many politicians is ungratefulness. That is why it is called a *thankless* job.

Many of the roads in Ghana are in terrible condition. There is a city in Ghana (whose name begins with a 'K') which has had many of its roads asphalted. The roads in that city are in even better condition than those in the capital.

However, the people in that city say that, even if the roads were to be made of terrazo, they would still *not* support or appreciate the government!

**People are generally ungrateful.**

Some children grow up to insult and mistreat their parents. Whether your mother is a prostitute or not, she is still your mother. Whether your father is a criminal or not he is still your father!

Respect them and be grateful to them for at least bringing you into this world.

All ministers of the gospel should know that people are generally ungrateful.

**You would be naïve to think that people (generally speaking) will appreciate your efforts.**

Jesus knew it! He experienced it!

One time, following an attempted murder — Jesus asked the angry crowd:

*...Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; FOR WHICH OF THESE WORKS DO YE STONE ME?*

*John 10:32.*

The people were going to stone Jesus for doing good.

May God help us never to be ungrateful.

**Ask yourself— am I an ungrateful person?**



## ***Chapter Ten***

# ***The Road To Prodigality***

There are two cardinal mistakes which lead us into prodigality. Anybody who makes these mistakes will definitely waste his life away. I want to share these mistakes with you now:

### **1. THE MISTAKE OF SEPARATION**

*... and took his journey into a FAR country and there wasted his substance with riotous living.*

*Luke 15:13.*

**The first mistake that leads to wasteful living is separation from God or fellowship.**

The prodigal son knew that he could never waste his life away at home. He had to separate himself from the rest of the family, so that he could be on his own. Then he could do whatever he wanted to do.

I have lived with people who once worshipped and served the Lord. Today, some of them fight against God. This happened because they were separated from fellowship.

I remember going to counsel a backsliding brother. He took a cigarette, lighted it and began smoking right in front of me. When I attempted to restrain him he replied that his intention was to make me see him smoking.

Then he showed me a picture of a scantily dressed girl lying on him.

When I picked the Bible to talk to him he said, "Wait a minute. I know which verses you will quote at this time." And he quoted the scriptures one after the other.

You see, there are certain sins a Christian can never commit when he is in fellowship with the brethren. Before he commits them he must go away, separating himself from God and the church.

The prodigal son had to 'journey into a far country'. He did not just go to *any* country, but a *far* country, where there was no way any member of his family could communicate with him. There was no telephone, no fax, no airmail.

He was far away, where nobody could see him, and nobody knew him.

Some people deliberately move from church to church in order to be where their history or background is not known.

That is why the devil would like to keep you from coming to church.

**Since I became a Christian, I have always been afraid to be alone, that is, to stay away from the fellowship of the brethren.**

I went to England to visit an uncle after my ‘O’levels. He had great plans for me to live in England. His intention was for me to continue my education and become a Medical Doctor in England. He even sent me to a local school to get me acquainted with the system.

But I decided not to stay in England, because I was then a new convert. I did not know of any vibrant ‘born again’ church there. Moreover, I did not know any Christians I could fellowship with.

I believe that it was a crucial turning point in my life. That was an important crossroad in my walk with God. If I had stayed on in that spiritually dry place, I would probably have backslidden by now.

But some people would grab it thinking it was a major breakthrough for them. They would claim God had opened a door for them.

*Chief, God does not lead you to backslide!!*

*For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul...*

*Matt 16:26.*

When you are separated, you will not hear the voice of God or the right advice anymore. Instead, you will be exposed to all sorts of evil thoughts.

**This could be the reason why so many branch pastors rebel and become prodigal — separation.** Separation from sweet communion with other level-headed ministers. I try to have a lot of interaction with all the pastors. Fellowship will keep us all in touch.

David said,

*...that I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the Lord and to inquire in his temple.*

*Psalm 27:4.*

When you come constantly to the house of the Lord, you will see the beauty of the Lord. This will prevent you from living a wasteful life of sin.

## 2. BAD COMPANY

*...thy son... which has devoured thy living WITH HARLOTS...*

*Luke 15:25.*

The prodigal boy did not waste his money alone. There were harlots to help him do so.

**There will always be bad company to help you do bad things.** When you are in a group, you have so much false confidence. You think every one is just like you.

This boy was surrounded by prostitutes who sucked all the money out of him, till he became penniless.

One translation of the Bible says, **“Bad company ruins good morals.”** Another translation also says

*...evil company corrupts good habits.*

*1Cor 15:33.*

A born again Christian should make friends with Christians. There are too many Christians whose friends are people of the world — people who don't believe in the things that they believe in.

**You must know that your friends affect you more than your church does.**

You go to church two or three times in a week. But you see and communicate with your friends all through the week.

Bad company will cause you to waste your life away. The prodigal boy wasted all his life by keeping company with bad people.

Dear friend, what company do you keep? Who are your friends?

## ***Chapter Eleven***

# ***Give No Place***

Dear friend, in conclusion God is saying, don't waste your life away. Do not be ignorant of the devil's devices.

Beware of the seven evil spirits of prodigality.

Resist the spirit of Beleyahal.

Give no place to the sprit of greed.

Bind the spirit of foolishness.

Cast out the spirit of evil independence.

Overcome the spirit of selfishness.

Do not yield to the spirit of a wild goose chase.

Defeat the spirit of ungratefulness.

You have one life and you cannot afford to waste it.

Friend — **PRODIGALITY IS NOT FOR YOU!**